

Accessions

155.108

Shelf No.

G.3752. 4

Barton Library. Vol. 2



Thomas Pennant Barton.

Boston Public Library.

Received. May. 1873.

Not to be taken from the Library!

THE
PROGRESSES, &c.
OF
KING JAMES THE FIRST.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

VOL. II.

CORRIGENDA IN THE SECOND VOLUME.

Page 38, line 4 of note ¹, for the read their; line 5, for Archer read Archee.—P. 44, note ³, for 3s. read 13s.—P. 58, note, line 7, delete comma from “the Elizabeth Jonas.”—P. 60, note, for 51 read 43, 96.—P. 72, line 1, the Pageant of the Queen of Sheba was at Whitehall, not Theobalds.—P. 95, note ¹, line 2, read bought.—P. 108, delete note ¹⁰, and read “George Goring, afterward Earl of Norwich, of whom in vol. III. p. 256.”—P. 122, in note ⁷, for elder read next; and “He married the widow of Sir George Villiers, mother of the first Duke,” &c.—P. 123, note ³, line 6, for “when it does not appear,” read June 28, 1622 (see vol. III. p. 770).—P. 124, note ⁴, delete “July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 215),” and read “in 1596;” the Sir Richard Weston knighted in 1603 being a different person (see vol. III. p. 774): note ⁸, for 1625 read 1624.—P. 142, note ¹, for Collection read Collect.—P. 145, note ¹, line 10, for 1615 read 1613.—P. 152, note ³, read “Jane, youngest daughter of Sir Michael Stanhope, of Shelford, sister to the first Lord Stanhope of Harington;” note ⁴, is entirely wrong, as it applies to Lady Compton’s mother-in-law; Lady Compton in 1607 was Elizabeth Spencer, see vol. I. p. 159; so also is note ⁵, — read, Susanna, wife of Sir William Fielding, afterwards Earl of Denbigh (see vol. III. p. 688).—P. 161, line 9, read “Chrismas Eve’s eve;” note ¹, delete 1609, and refer to pp. 200, 414.—P. 174, see note ⁹ corrected in 349.—P. 175, line 18, for James read Ralph.—P. 176, note ³, line 4, for 1622 read 1611-12 (see p. 438).—P. 186, last line, the Scotch Nobleman at Oxford was Lord Dirletoun, afterward Earl of Kellie.—P. 190, note ⁵, for 1608-9 read 1610-11.—P. 191, note ⁵, for 1610 read 1609.—P. 199, note ⁴, col. 2, line 11, for “and ask’d” read “I ask’d.”—P. 209, note ³, for Robert read William.—P. 211, note ⁷, delete the words “Of his son see when knighted Feb. 4, 1610;” Sir Edward Peyto in p. 407 being of an entirely different family.—P. 217, note ³, read “till 1623.”—P. 263, the statue on the Gateway at Salisbury mentioned in note ³, represents not James, but Charles the First.—P. 286, note ³, for eighty read seventy.—P. 288, note ³, line 3, for 1612 read 1613; and last line, for “with him,” read in 1778 with Charles the ninth who enjoyed them.—P. 309, note ³, for 326, 327, read 334, 344; note ⁴, for “the great heiress” read “Anne, fifth daughter” (see a note, but which is misapplied, in p. 152; and for Duke read Earl of Dorset.—P. 332, for the references in note ³, which relate to the Earl of

Cumberland’s brother and predecessor, read “See vol. III. p. 391.”—P. 333. The note on Lord Herbert is incorrect; the person who bore that title in 1610 was Henry, afterwards Marq. of Worcester (see vol. I. p. 258).—P. 334, note ⁴, delete “and — 141)”; note ⁹, read Brydges’s Peerage, vol. II. p. 603.—P. 341, note ⁶, for grandson read nephew.—P. 342, notes, line 3, for under December 1613 read in p. 609.—P. 343, note ³, delete the words “had been knighted in 1599, which apply to the first Visc. Falkland.”—P. 349, line 4 of note, for Henry read Thomas.—P. 361, delete note ⁶, which is incorrect, and read “Afterwards Viscount Falkland;” (see vol. III. p. 466).—P. 393, note, read “is born of ignorance.”—P. 416, line 3, for Lake read Lisle.—P. 422, note ¹, line 8, delete the word “harm.”—P. 425, for the last line of note ⁴, read “The title is now enjoyed by his descendant in the sixth degree, Sir John the present and eleventh Baronet.”—P. 429, note ¹, for “second” read “fourth.”—P. 430, line 3 of note, for Thomas read Robert.—P. 432, note ⁶; the first Baronet was named Gilbert, and grandson of Sir Gilbert the subject of this note.—P. 439, note ¹, line 9, for Baronet read Baron.—P. 442, last line, for £.40 read 40s.—P. 445, line 6 of note ¹, for son read grandson.—P. 454, note ³, for 10 read 16.—P. 457, line 2, for Walter read Anthony.—P. 465, line 11, for September read October.—P. 471, line penult. for Thomas read George.—P. 476, notes, line 6, for Dr. read Mr.—P. 477, line 17, read “with divers.”—P. 492, note 3, for visited read knighted (see p. 462*).—P. 507, see what is said of Maxwell corrected in vol. III. p. 544.—P. 512, line 13, for Academy read Society.—P. 536, note, line 9, for this read his; line 12, read Frankendal.—P. 539, line 2 of note, read fitted.—P. 547, note ³, line 2, for £.100 read 100s.—P. 589, for “and the Appendix” read p. *128.—P. 602, line 2 of note, for Robert read William; line 4, for £.50 read 50s.—P. 629, note 7, line 10, for three read five (see vol. III. pp. 850, 970); line 11, for 1609-10 read 1610-11.—P. 667, delete note ³, and read “Afterward Earl of Warwick.”—P. 675, note ³, for Windsor read Walsingham.—P. 697, line 6 of note ³, for Derbyshire read Denbighshire.—P. 705, line 5, for Northamptonshire read Northumberland (see vol. III. p. 281).—P. 706, note 7, for £.40 read 40s.—P. 714, first line of note, for eight read ten.—P. 725, line 5 of note ³, for 1614 read 1615.—P. 755, delete note ³, and read Culford (see vol. III. p. 525).



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2012 with funding from
Boston Public Library



DRESS OF THE NINE MASQUERS AT LORD HAY'S MARRIAGE,
January 6, 1606-7.

"The shape of their habit the picture before discovers; the stuffe was of carnation satton, layed thicke with broad silver lace, their helmets being of the same stuffe." See page 117.

THE
PROCESSES,
PROCESSIONS, AND MAGNIFICENT FESTIVITIES,
OF
KING JAMES THE FIRST,
HIS ROYAL CONSORT, FAMILY, AND COURT,

COLLECTED FROM

Original Manuscripts, Scarce Pamphlets, Corporation Records, Parochial Registers, &c. &c.

COMPRISING

FORTY MASQUES AND ENTERTAINMENTS; TEN CIVIC PAGEANTS;

NUMEROUS ORIGINAL LETTERS;

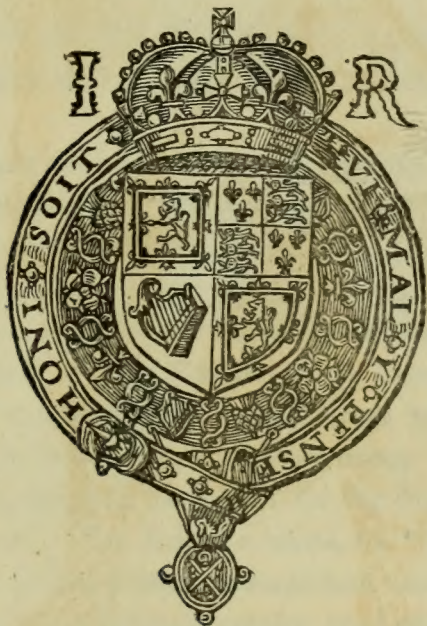
AND ANNOTATED LISTS OF THE PEERS, BARONETS, AND KNIGHTS, WHO RECEIVED THOSE

HONOURS DURING THE REIGN OF KING JAMES.

Illustrated with Notes, Historical, Topographical, Biographical, and Bibliographical.

By JOHN NICHOLS, F.S.A. LOND. EDINB. & PERTH.

VOLUME II.



LONDON: PRINTED BY AND FOR J. B. NICHOLS,
PRINTER TO THE SOCIETY OF ANTIQUARIES,
25, PARLIAMENT STREET.

1828.

G3752
4
v.2

THE

PROCESSIONS AND MAGNIFICENT FESTIVITIES

155,108

May, 1873

KING CHARLES THE FIRST

HIS ROYAL HIGHNESS VANDER AND CO.

PRINTED BY

JOHN WILKINS, 15, ABchurch Lane, London, E.C.

TO BE HAD OF

THE DIRECTOR AND MANAGER, THE GREAT EASTERN

RAILWAY COMPANY, LIMITED, LONDON.

THE GREAT EASTERN RAILWAY COMPANY, LIMITED, LONDON.

THE GREAT EASTERN RAILWAY COMPANY, LIMITED, LONDON.

THE GREAT EASTERN RAILWAY COMPANY, LIMITED, LONDON.

THE GREAT EASTERN RAILWAY COMPANY, LIMITED, LONDON.

TO BE HAD OF



LONDON: PRINTED BY AND FOR J. B. MURRAY

PRINTED TO THE ORDER OF THE DIRECTOR

OF THE GREAT EASTERN RAILWAY

1873

HYMENÆI;

OR,

THE SOLEMNITIES OF MASQUE AND BARRIERS,

Magnificently performed on the Eleventh and Twelfth Nights from Christmas, at Court: to the auspicious celebrating of the Marriage-union between ROBERT Earle of ESSEX and the Lady FRANCES, second daughter of the most noble Earle of SUFFOLKE¹, 1605-6. The Author B. J.

“ Jam veniet Virgo, jam dicetur Hymenæus.”

It is a noble and just advantage that the things subjected to understanding have of those which are objected to sense; that the one sort are but momentary, and merely taking; the other impressing and lasting: else the glory of all these solemnities had perished like a blaze, and gone out, in the beholder's eyes. So short-lived are the bodies of all things, in comparison of their souls. And though bodies oftentimes have the ill-luck to be sensually preferred, they find after-

¹ Such is the Title of the first Edition of this Masque in 4to.—In the Folio, 1616, it is barely called “HYMENÆI; or the Solemnities of Masque and Barriers at a Marriage.” Upon which Chetwood remarks, “What reason our author had for not being more particular in the title of this Masque, neither when nor for whom it was performed, we cannot conceive; but we have, with some little search, found out it was ordered by the Court, for the celebration of the nuptials between the Palsgrave and the Princess Elizabeth.” “This Masque, by the description, was very magnificent, and the reader may find the expence of the machinery, &c. set down in the cost of that Prince's marriage,” Life of Jonson, p. 41.—Chetwood's labour was thrown away. Had he fortunately met with the 4to edition of this Masque, [as he might easily have done, for the British Museum contains one,] he would have found all his doubts removed. The Author's reason for “not being more particular” is now sufficiently apparent. The Marriage was a most inauspicious one, and terminated in shame and guilt. With respect to the Masque of which Chetwood speaks, (and which was written six [eight] years after the present,) he might have learned from the official papers, that it was called the Lords' Masque. It was not written by Jonson, but by Campion, and published by him in 4to, 1613. It is of very rare occurrence, but I have been favoured with it from the valuable collection of Mr. Dent. GIFFORD.

The Masque of Campion, of which I have a transcript from a copy in the collection of Mr. Rhodes, of Lyon's Inn, will be introduced under the proper date of 1613-14. N.

wards the good fortune (when souls live) to be utterly forgotten. This it is hath made the most Royal Princes, and greatest persons (who are commonly the personaters of these actions) not only studious of riches and magnificence in the outward celebration or shew, which rightly becomes them; but curious after the most high and hearty inventions, to furnish the inward parts; and those grounded upon antiquity and solid learning: which though their voice be taught to sound to present occasions, their sense or doth or should always lay hold on more removed mysteries. And howsoever some may squeamishly cry out, that all endeavour of learning and sharpness in these transitory devices, especially where it steps beyond their little, or (let me not wrong them) no brain at all, is superfluous: I am contented, these fastidious stomachs should leave my full tables, and enjoy at home their clean empty trenchers, fittest for such airy tastes; where perhaps a few Italian herbs, picked up and made into a sallad, may find sweeter acceptance than all the most nourishing and sound meats of the world.

For these men's palates, let not me answer, O Muses. It is not my fault, if I fill them out nectar, and they run to metheglin.

Vaticana bibant, si delectentur.

All the courtesy I can do them, is to cry again:

Prætereant, si quid non facit ad stomachum.

As I will from the thought of them, to my better subject.

On the night of the Masques (which were two, one of Men, the other of Women) the scene being drawn, there was first discovered an altar; upon which was inscribed, in letters of gold,

Joni Oimæ Mimæ.

UNIONI

SACR¹.

To this altar entered five Pages, attired in white, bearing five tapers of virgin-wax²; behind them, one representing a Bridegroom: his hair short, and bound with party-coloured ribands and gold twist: his garments purple and

¹ Mystically implying that both it, the place, and all the succeeding ceremonies, were sacred to marriage, or union; over which Juno was president: to whom there was the like altar erected at Rome, as she was called Jugo Juno in the street, which thence was named Jugarius. See Fest.; and at which altar, the rite was to join the married pair with bands of silk, in sign of future concord.

² Those were the *Quinque Cerei*, which Plutarch in his *Quæst. Roman.* mentions to be used in nuptials.

white'. On the other hand, entered Hymen (the God of Marriage) in a saffron-colour'd robe², his under vestures white, his socks yellow, a yellow veil of silk on his left arm, his head crowned with roses and marjoram³, in his right hand a torch of pine-tree⁴.

After him a youth attired in white⁵, bearing another light of white thorn; under his arm, a little wicker flasket shut: behind him two others in white, the one bearing a distaff, the other a spindle. Betwixt these a personated bride, supported, her hair flowing and loose, sprinkled with gray; on her head a garland of roses, like a turret; her garments white: and on her back a wether's fleece hanging down: her zone, or girdle about her waist of white wool, fastened with the Herculean knot.

In the midst went the Auspices⁶; after them, two that sung, in several coloured silks. Of which one bare the water, the other fire; last of all the

¹ The dressing of the Bridegroom (with the ancients) was chiefly noted in that, *Quod tonderetur. Juv. Sat. 6.* Jamque à tonsore magistro Pectoris. And Lucan, lib. 2, where he makes Cato negligent of the ceremonies in marriage, saith, *Ille nec horrificam sancto dimovit ab ore Cæsariem.*

² It is to this that Milton alludes:

Then let Hymen oft appear
In saffron robe, &c. G.

³ See how he is called out, by Catullus in *Nup. Jul. et Manl.* *Cinge tempora floribus Sauve olentis amaraci, &c.*

⁴ For so I preserve the reading there in *Catul.* *Pineam quate tædam*, rather than to change it *Spineam*; and moved by the authority of Virgil in *Ciri.* where he says, *Pronuba nec castos incendit pinus amores.* And Ovid, *Fast. lib. 2.* *Expectet puros pinea tæda dies.* Though I deny not, there was also *spinea tæda*, &c. which Pliny calls *Nuptiarum facibus auspicatissimam*, *Nat. Hist. lib. 16, cap. 18*, and whereof Sextus Pompeius Festus hath left so particular testimony. For which see the following note.

⁵ This (by the ancients) was called *Camillus*, quasi minister (for so that signified in the *Hetrurian* tongue) and was one of the three, which by *Sex. Pompeius* were said to be *Patrini et Matrini, Pueri prætextati tres, qui nubentem deducunt: unus, qui facem præfert ex spina alba. Duo qui tenent nubentem.* To which confer that of *Varro, lib. 6, de lingua Lat. dicitur in nuptiis camillus, qui cumerum fert.* As also that of *Festus, lib. 3.* *Cumerum vocabant antiqui vas quoddam quod opertum in nuptiis ferebant, in quo erant nubentis utensilia, quod et camillum dicebant: eo quod sacrorum ministrum κάμλλον appellabant.*

⁶ Auspices were those that handfasted the married couple; that wished them good-luck; that took care for the dowry; and heard them confess that they came together for the cause of children. *Juven. Sat. 10.* *Veniet cum signatoribus auspex.* And *Lucan, lib. 2.* *Junguntur taciti, contentique auspice Bruto.* They are also styled, *Pronubi, Proxenetæ, Paranymphe.*

Musicians¹, diversly attired, all crowned with roses; and with this Song began:

*Bid all profane away;
None here may stay
To view our mysteries,
But who themselves have been,
Or will in time be seen,
The self-same sacrifice.
For Union, Mistress of these rites,
Will be observed with eyes,
As simple as her nights.*

Cho. *Fly then all profane away,
Fly far off as hath the day;
Night her curtain doth display,
And this is Hymen's holy-day.*

[*The Song being ended, HYMEN presented himself foremost,
and after some sign of admiration, began to speak.*

HYMEN. What more than usual light,
Throughout the place extended,
Makes Juno's fame so bright!
Is there some greater deity descended?
Or reign, on Earth, those Powers
So rich, as with their beams
Grace Union more than ours;
And bound her influence in their happier streams?
'Tis so: this same is he,
The King, and Priest of Peace:
And that his Empress, she,
That sits so crowned with her own increase!
O you, whose better blisses
Have proved the strict embrace
Of Union, with chaste kisses,
And seen it flow so in your happy race;
That know, how well it binds
The fighting seeds of things,
Wins natures, sexes, minds,
And every discord in true music brings:

¹ The custom of music at nuptials is clear in all antiquity. Ter. Adel. act 5. Verum hoc mihi moræ est, Tibicina et Hymenæum qui cantent. And Claud. in epithal. Ducant pervigiles carmina tibiæ, &c.

Sit now propitious aids,
 To rites so duly prized;
 And view two noble maids,
 Of different sex, to Union sacrificed.
 In honour of that blest estate,
 Which all good minds should celebrate.

[*Here out of a Microcosm or Globe, figuring a Man, with a kind of contentious music issued forth the first Masque, of eight men, whose names, as they were then marshalled by couples, I have heraldry enough to set down.*

LORD WILLOUGHBY¹,
 LORD WALDEN²,
 SIR JAMES HAY³,
 EARL OF MONTGOMERY⁴,

SIR THOMAS HOWARD⁵,
 SIR THOMAS SOMERSET⁶,
 EARL OF ARUNDELL⁷,
 SIR JOHN ASHLY⁸.

¹ Lord Willoughby was a performer in the Masque on St. John's-day 1603; see vol. I. p. 471.

² Theophilus, eldest son of the Earl of Suffolk, [of whom see vol. I. p. 38.] He married Elizabeth, daughter of the Earl of Dunbar, and died 1640. This Nobleman was called up to the House of Peers in his father's life-time (1603) by the title of Lord Howard of Walden.

³ Son of Sir James Hay, of Kingask. He came into England in the suite of James, by whom he was greatly esteemed, and successively created Baron Sowle, Viscount Doncaster, and, finally, Earl of Carlisle. He continued a Favourite in this and the following Reign; and died in 1636, having received more grants, and spent more money, than any man of that age. "He married," Lord Clarendon says, "a beautiful young Lady, daughter to the Earl of Northumberland." G.

⁴ Sir Philip Herbert; of whom see vol. I. p. 221. ⁵ See vol. I. p. 478. ⁶ See vol. I. p. 478.

⁷ Thomas Howard, son of that Earl of Arundel who died in the Tower, 1595, and grandson of Thomas Duke of Norfolk, beheaded on account of his connexion with Mary Queen of Scots. He is called the young Earl of Arundel by Mr. Chamberlaine, at this period, and if the dates in Collins's Peerage may be trusted, he could not be more than sixteen. When he married I know not, but in 1607, when he was little more than eighteen, James stood godfather to his first son. It is therefore possible, and indeed probable, that the Countess of Arundel, who performed in the Masque of Beauty (in 1607-8), was the wife, and not the mother, of this Nobleman. She was the daughter of Alithea Talbot, third daughter of Gilbert Earl of Shrewsbury. With respect to Lord Arundel, he was one of the brightest characters of the Court. We are indebted to him for the Arundel marbles. G.—See vol. I. p. 87. N.

⁸ Unknown to me: but probably Sir John Cooper, who married Anne, daughter and sole heir of Sir Antony Ashley (a famous soldier under Elizabeth), and who, with the immense property, might also enjoy the name of his father-in-law. Sir John was the father of Antony Ashley Cooper, first Earl of Shaftsbury. G.—The performer in this Masque was more probably Sir John Astley, of Maidstone in Kent, son of John Astley, Esq. Master of Queen Elizabeth's Jewels. Sir John was of the band of Gentlemen Pensioners to that Queen, and was knighted by her Successor at the Charterhouse, May 11, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 116). He was afterwards Master of the Revels both to King James and King Charles the First, and of the Privy-chamber to the latter. He died Jan. 26, 1639, and was buried in Maidstone Church, to which he gave "a large silver flagon to the use of the altar."

Hasted's History of Kent. N.

[*These represented the four Humours¹ and four Affections, all gloriously attired, distinguished only by their several ensigns and colours; and, dancing out on the stage, in their return at the end of their dance, drew all their swords, offered to encompass the altar, and disturb the ceremonies. At which HYMEN, troubled, spake:*

HYMEN. Save, save the virgins; keep your hallow'd lights
Untouch'd; and with their flame defend our rites.
The four untemper'd Humours are broke out,
And, with their wild Affections, go about
To ravish all religion. If there be
A power, like Reason, left in that huge body
Or little world of man, from whence these came,
Look forth, and with thy bright and numerous flame²
Instruct their darkness, make them know, and see,
In wronging these, they have rebell'd 'gainst thee.

[*Hereat, REASON, seated on the top of the globe, as in the brain, or highest part of man, figured in a venerable personage, her hair white, and trailing to her waist, crowned with light, her garments blue, and semined with stars, girded unto her with a white band filled with arithmetical figures, in one hand bearing a lamp, in the other a bright sword, descended, and spake:*

REASON. Forbear your rude attempt; what ignorance
Could yield you so profane, as to advance

¹ That they were personated in men hath already come under some grammatical exception. But there is more than grammar to release it. For, besides that *humores* and *affectus* are both masculine in *genere*, not one of the *specials*, but in some language is known by a masculine word. Again, when their influences are common to both sexes, and more generally impetuous in the male, I see not why they should not so be more properly presented. And, for the allegory, though here it be very clear, and such as might well escape a candle, yet because there are some must complain of darkness, that have but thick eyes, I am contented to hold them this light. First, as in natural bodies so likewise in minds, there is no disease or distemperature, but is caused either by some abounding humour, or perverse affection; after the same manner, in politic bodies (where order, ceremony, state, reverence, devotion, are parts of the mind) by the difference or predominant will of what we metaphorically call humours and affections, all things are troubled and confused. These, therefore, were tropically brought in, before marriage, as disturbers of that mystical body, and the rites, which were soul unto it; that afterwards, in marriage, being dutifully tempered by her power, they might more fully celebrate the happiness of such as live in that sweet union, to the harmonious laws of nature and reason. G.

² Alluding to that opinion of Pythagoras, who held all reason, all knowledge, all discourse of the soul to be mere number. See Plut. de Plac. Phil.

One thought in act against these mysteries?
 Are Union's¹ orgies of so slender price?
 She that makes souls with bodies mix in love,
 Contracts the world in one, and therein Jove;
 In spring and end of all things²: yet, most strange,
 Herself nor suffers spring, nor end, nor change.
 No wonder they were you, that were so bold;
 For none but Humours and Affections would
 Have dared so rash a venture. You will say
 It was your zeal that gave your powers the sway;
 And urge the masqued and disguised pretence
 Of saving blood, and succouring innocence:
 So want of knowledge still begetteth jars,
 When humorous earthlings will control the stars.
 Inform yourselves, with safer reverence,
 To these mysterious rites, whose mystic sense,
 Reason, which all things, but itself, confounds,
 Shall clear unto you from the authentic grounds.

[*At this the Humours and Affections sheathed their swords, and retired amazed to the side of the stage, while HYMEN began to rank the persons and order the ceremonies: and REASON proceeded to speak:*

REASON. The Pair, which do each other side,
 Though yet some space doth them divide
 This happy night must both make one;
 Blest sacrifice to Union.
 Nor is this altar but a sign
 Of one more soft, and more divine.
 The genial bed³, where Hymen keeps
 The solemn orgies, void of sleeps:
 And wildest Cupid, waking, hovers
 With adoration 'twixt the lovers.
 The tead of white and blooming thorn,
 In token of increase, is born:
 As also, with the ominous light⁴,
 To fright all malice from the night.

¹ *Oἷμα*, with the Greeks, value the same that *ceremoniæ* with the Latins; and imply all sorts of rites: howsoever (abusively) that have been made particular to Bacchus. See Serv. to that of Virg. *Æneid* 4. *Qualis commotis excita sacris Thyas.* ² Macrob. in *Som. Scip.* lib. 1.

³ Properly that which was made ready for the new-married Bride, and was called *Genialis*, à *generandis liberis*. Serv. in 6 *Æn.*

⁴ See Ovid, *Fast.* lib. 6. "Sic fatus, spinam, quâ tristes pellere posset
 A foribus noxas, hæc erat alba, dedit."

Like are the fire and water set¹;
 That, ev'n as moisture, mixt with heat,
 Helps every natural birth to life;
 So, for their race, join man and wife.
 The blushing veil² shews shamefac'dness
 The ingenuous virgin should profess
 At meeting with the man; her hair,
 That flow so liberal³, and so fair,
 Is shed with grey, to intimate,
 She entereth to a matron's state,
 For which those utensils⁴ are born.
 And, that she should not labour scorn,
 Herself a snowy fleece⁵ doth wear,
 And these her rock and spindle bear⁶,
 To shew that nothing which is good
 Gives check unto the highest blood.
 The zone of wool⁷ about her waist,
 Which, in contrary circles cast,
 Doth meet in one strong knot⁸, that binds,
 Tells you, so should all married minds.
 And lastly, these five waxen lights
 Imply perfection in the rites:
 For five⁹ the special number is,
 Whence hallow'd Union claims her bliss.
 As being all the sum that grows
 From the united strength of those
 Which male and female numbers we¹⁰
 Do style, and are first two and three.
 Which joined thus, you cannot sever
 In equal parts, but one will ever
 Remain as common; so we see
 The binding force of Unity:
 For which alone the peaceful gods
 In number always love the odds;
 And even parts as much despise,
 Since out of them all discords rise.

¹ Plutar. in Quæst. Rom. and Var. lib. 4, de linguâ Lat.

² Plin. Nat. Hist. lib. 21, cap. 8.

³ Pomp. Fest. Briss. Hotto. de Rit. Nup.

⁴ Var. lib. 6, de linguâ Lat. and Fest. in Frag.

⁵ Fest. ib.

⁶ Plutar. in Quæst. Rom. et in Romul.

⁷ Plin. Nat. Hist. lib. 8, cap. 48.

⁸ That was Nodus Herculeanus, which the husband at night untied, in sign of good fortune, that he might be happy in propagation of issue, as Hercules was, who left seventy children. See Fest. in voce Cingulâ.

⁹ Plutarch in Quæst. Rom.

¹⁰ See Mart. Capel. lib. 6, de Nupt. Phil. et Mor. in numero Pentade.

[*Here the upper part of the scene, which was all of clouds, and made artificially to swell and ride like the rack, began to open; and the air clearing, in the top thereof was discovered JUNO¹, sitting in a chair, supported by two beautiful peacocks²; her attire rich, and like a Queen³, a white diadem⁴ on her head, from whence descended a veil, and that bound with a fascia of several colour'd silks⁵, set with all sorts of jewels, and raised in the top with lilies and roses⁶: in her right hand she held a sceptre, in the other a timbrel, at her golden feet the hide of a lion⁷ was placed: round about her sat the spirits of the air in several colours, making music: above her the region of fire, with a continual motion, was seen to whirl circularly, and JUPITER, standing in the top (figuring the Heaven) brandishing his thunder: beneath her the rainbow, IRIS, and on the two sides, eight Ladies attired richly and alike; in the most celestial colours, who represented her powers, as the Governess of Marriage⁸, and made the second Masque. All which, upon the discovery, REASON made narration of.*

REASON. And see where Juno, whose great name
Is Unio, in the anagram,
Displays her glittering state and chair,
As she enlightened all the air!
Hark how the charming tunes do beat
In sacred concords 'bout her seat!

¹ With the Greeks, Juno was interpreted to be the air itself. And so Macr. de Som. Scipio. l. 1. c. 17. calls her. Mar. Cap. surnames her Æria, of reigning there.

² They were sacred to Juno, in respect of their colours and temper, so like the air. Ovid. de Arte Amand. Laudatas ostendit aves Junonia pennas. And Met. lib. 2.

“Habili Saturnia curru
Ingreditur liquidum pavonibus Æthera pictis.”

³ She was called Regina Juno with the Latins, because she was soror et conjux Jovis, deorum et hominum regis.

⁴ Read Apul. describing her, in his 10th of the Ass.

⁵ After the manner of the antique bend, the varied colours implying the several mutations of the air, as showers, dews, serenity, force of winds, clouds, tempest, snow, hail, lightning, thunder, all which had their noises signified in her timbrel: the faculty of causing these being ascribed to her by Virg. Æneid. lib. 4. where he makes her say,

“His ego nigrantem commista grandine nimbum
Desuper infundam, et tonitru cœlum omne ciebo.”

⁶ Lilies were sacred to Juno, as being made white with her milk that fell upon the earth, when Jove took Hercules away, whom by stealth he had laid to her breast: the rose was also called Junonia.

⁷ So she was figured at Argos, as a step-mother, insulting on the spoils of her two privigni, Bacchus and Hercules.

⁸ See Virg. Æneid. lib. 4. Junoni ante omnes cui vincla jugalia curæ: and in another place, Dant signum prima et Tellus et Pronuba Juno: and Ovid. in Phil. Epist. Junonemque terris quæ præsidet alma Maritis.

And lo! to grace what these intend,
 Eight of her noblest Powers descend ¹,
 Which are enstyled her faculties ²,
 That govern nuptial mysteries;
 And wear those masques before their faces,
 Lest dazzling mortals with their graces,
 As they approach them, all mankind
 Should be, like Cupid, stricken blind.
 These Order waits for, on the ground,
 To keep, that you should not confound
 Their measured steps, which only move
 About the harmonious sphere of love.

[*Their descent was made in two great clouds, that put forth themselves severally, and, with one measure of time, were seen to stoop, and fall gently down upon the Earth. The manner of their habits came after some statues of JUNO, no less airy than glorious. The dressings of their heads, rare; so likewise of their feet: and all full of splendor, sovereignty, and riches. Whilst they were descending, this Song was sung at the altar:*

*These, these are they,
 Whom humour and affection must obey;
 Who come to deck the genial bower,
 And bring with them the grateful Hour
 That crowns such meetings, and excites
 The married pair to fresh delights:
 As courtings, kissings, coyings, oaths, and vows,
 Soft whisperings, embracements, all the joys
 And melting toys,
 That chaster love allows.*

Cho.

Haste, haste, for Hesperus his head down bows.

[*This Song ended, they danced forth in pairs, and each pair with a varied and noble grace, to a rare and full music of twelve lutes, led on by ORDER, the servant of REASON, who was there rather a person of ceremony than use. His under garment was blue, his upper white, and painted full of arithmetical and geometrical figures; his hair and beard long, a star on his forehead, and in his hand a geometrical staff: to whom, after the dance REASON, spake:*

¹ The folio does not give their names; but the 4to supplies the defect. "The names of the eight Ladies as they were ordered (to the most conspicuous shew) in their dances, by the rule of their statures, were the Countess of Montgomery, Lady Knolles, Mistress A. Sackville, Lady Berkley, Lady Dorothy Hastings, Lady Blanch Somerset, Countess of Bedford, Countess of Rutland." G.

² They were all eight called by particular surnames of Juno, ascribed to her for some peculiar property in marriage, as somewhere after is more fitly declared.

REASON. Convey them, Order, to their places,
 And rank them so, in several traces,
 As they may set their mixed powers
 Unto the music of the Hours;
 And these, by joining with them, know
 In better temper how to flow:
 Whilst I, from their abstracted names,
 Report the virtues of the dames.
 First, Curis¹ comes to deck the bride's fair tress,
 Care of the ointments Unxia² doth profess.
 Juga³, her office to make one of twain:
 Gamelia⁴ sees that they should so remain.
 Fair Iterduca⁵ leads the bride her way;
 And Domiduca⁶ home her steps doth stay:

¹ This surname Juno received of the Sabines; from them the Romans gave it her: of the spear, which (in the Sabine tongue) was called *curis*, and was that which they named *hasta celibaris*, which had stuck in the body of a slain sword-player, and wherewith the bride's head was drest, whereof Fest. in voce celibar. gives these reasons: Ut quemadmodum illa conjuncta fuerit cum corpore gladiatoris, sic ipsa cum viro sit; vel quia matronæ Junonis curitis in tutelâ sit, quæ ita appellabatur à ferenda hasta; vel quòd fortes viros genituras ominetur; vel quod nuptiali jure imperio viri subjicitur nubens, quia hasta summa armorum, et imperii est, &c. To most of which Plutarch, in his *Quæst. Rom.* consents, but adds a better in Romul. That when they divided the bride's hair with the point of the spear, σύμβολον εἶναι τοῦ μετὰ μάχης καὶ πολεμικῶς τὸν πρῶτον γάμον γένεσθαι, it noted their first nuptials (with the Sabines) were contracted by force, and as with enemies. Howsoever, that it was a custom, with them, this of Ovid. *Fast. lib. 2.* confirms. *Comat virgineas hasta recurva comas.*

² For the surname of Unxia, we have Mart. Capel. his testimony, *De Nup. Phil. et Mercu. lib. 2.* quòd unctionibus præest: as also Servius, libro quarto *Æneid.* where they both report it a fashion with the Romans, that before the new-married brides entered the houses of their husbands, they adorned the posts of the gates with woollen tawdries, or fillets, and anointed them with oils, or the fat of wolves and boars; being superstitiously possess that such ointments had the virtue of expelling evils from the family: and that thence were they called *Uxores*, quasi *Unxores*.

³ She was named Juga, propter Jugum, (as Servius says,) for the yoke which was imposed, in matrimony, on those that were married, or (with Sex. Pomp. Fest.) quòd Juges sunt ejusdem Jugi Pares, unde et Conjuges, or in respect of the altar (which I have declared before) sacred to Juno, in Vico Jugario.

⁴ As she was Gamelia, in sacrificing to her, they took away the gall, and threw it behind the altar; intimating, that (after marriage) there should be known no bitterness, nor hatred between the joined couple, which might divide or separate them. See Plutarch. *Connub. Præ.* This rite I have somewhere following touched at.

⁵ The title of Iterduca she had amongst them, quòd ad sponsi ædes sponsas comitabatur, or was a protectress of their journey. Mart. Capel. *de Nupt. Philol. et Mercur. libro secundo.*

⁶ The like of Domiduca, quòd ad optatas domus duceret. Mart. *ibid.*

Cinxia¹ the maid, quit of her zone, defends.
 Telia², for Hymen, perfects all, and ends.

[*By this time the Ladies were paired with the Men, and the whole sixteen ranked forth, in order to dance; and were with this Song provoked:*

*Now, now, begin to set
 Your spirits in active heat;
 And, since your hands are met,
 Instruct your nimble feet,
 In motions swift and meet,
 The happy ground to beat;*

Cho. *Whilst all this roof doth ring,
 And each discording string,
 With every varied voice,
 In union doth rejoice.*

[*Here they danced forth a most neat and curious measure, full of subtilty and device; which was so excellently performed, as it seemed to take away that spirit from the invention, which the invention gave to it: and left it doubtful, whether the forms flowed more perfectly from the author's brain, or their feet. The strains were all notably different, some of them formed into letters, very signifyng to the name of the Bridegroom, and ended in the manner of a chain, linking hands: to which this was spoken:*

REASON. Such was the golden chain³ let down from Heaven;
 And not those links more even,

¹ Cinxia, the same author gives unto her, as the defendress of maids, when they had put off their girdle, in the bridal chamber; to which Festus, Cinxiæ Junonis nomen sanctum habebatur in nuptiis, quòd initio conjugis solutio erat cinguli, quo nova nupta erat cincta. And Arnobius, a man most learned in their ceremonies, lib. 3. advers. Gent. saith, Uctionibus superest Unxia. Cingulorum Cinxia replicationi.

² Telia signifies *Perfecta*, or, as some translate it, *Perfectrix*; with Jul. Pol. lib. 3. Onomast. ἡρα τέλεια values Juno! Præses Nuptiarum: who saith, the attribute depends of τέλει, which (with the ancients) signified marriage, and thence were they called τέλει, that entered into that state. Servius interprets it the same with Gamelia Æneid. 4. ad verb. Et Junone secunda. But it implies much more, as including the faculty, too, mature and perfect. See the Greek Scholiast on Pind. Nem. in Hym. ad Thyæum Uliæ filium Argi. τέλειος δὲ ὁ γάμος διὰ τὸ κατασκευάζειν τὴν τελειότητα τοῦ βίου; that is, Nuptials are therefore called τέλει, because they affect perfection of life, and do note that maturity which should be in matrimony. For before nuptials, she is called Juno παρθένος, that is, Virgo; after nuptials, τέλεια, which is, Adulta or Perfecta.

³ Mentioned by Homer, Ilia. θ, which many have interpreted diversely, all allegorically. Pla. in Thæteto, understands it to be the Sun, which, while he circles the world in his course, all things are safe and preserved: others vary it. Macrobian (to whose interpretation I am specially affected in my

Than these: so sweetly temper'd, so combined
 By union and refined.
 Here no contention, envy, grief, deceit,
 Fear, jealousy have weight;
 But all is peace, and love, and faith, and bliss:
 What harmony like this?
 The gall behind the altar quite is thrown;
 This sacrifice hath none.
 Now no affections rage, nor humours swell;
 But all composed dwell.
 O Juno, Hymen, Hymen, Juno! who
 Can merit with you two?
 Without your presence, Venus can do nought,
 Save what with shame is bought;
 No father can himself a parent show,
 Nor any house with prosperous issue grow,
 O then, what deities will dare
 With Hymen, or with Juno to compare?

[This Speech being ended, they dissolved: and all took forth other persons (men and women) to dance other measures, galliards, and corantos: the whilst this Song importuned them to a fit remembrance of the time.]

*Think, yet, how night doth waste,
 How much of time is past,
 What more than winged haste
 Your selves would take,
 If you were but to taste
 The joy the night doth cast
 (O might it ever last)
 On this bright virgin, and her happy make.*

[Their dances yet lasting, they were the second time importuned by speech.]

REASON. See, see! the bright Idalian¹ star,
 That lighteth lovers to their war,

allusion) considers it thus: in Som. Scip. libr. 1 cap. 14. Ergo cum ex summo Deo mens, ex mente anima sit; anima vero et condit, et vita compleat omnia quæ sequuntur, cunctaque hic unus fulgor illuminet, et in universis appareat, ut in multis speculis, per ordinem positus, vultus unus: cumque omnia continuis successionibus se sequantur, degenerantia per ordinem ad imum meandi: inveniatur pressius intuenti à summo Deo usque ad ultimam rerum faciem una mutuis se vinculis religans, et nusquam interrupta connexio. Et hæc est Homeri Catena aurea, quam pendere de cælo in terras Deum jussisse commemorat. To which strength and evenness of connexion, I have not absurdly likened this uniting of Humours and Affections by the sacred powers of marriage.

¹ Stella Veneris, or Venus, which when it goes before the Sun, is called Phosphorus or Lucifer;

Complains that you her influence lose;
While thus the night-sports you abuse.

HYMEN. The longing bridegroom¹, in the porch,
Shews you again the bated torch;
And thrice hath Juno² mixt her air
With fire, to summon your repair.

REASON. See, now she clean withdraws her light;
And, as you should, gives place to Night,
That spreads her broad and blackest wing
Upon the world, and comes to bring
A³ thousand several-colour'd Loves,
Some like Sparrows, some like Doves,
That hop about the nuptial-room,
And fluttering there, against you come,
Warm the chaste bower, which Cypria⁴ strows,
With many a lily, many a rose.

HYMEN. Haste, therefore, haste, and call, away!
The gentle Night is prest to pay
The usury of long delights,
She owes to these protracted rites.

[*At this, the whole scene being drawn again, and all covered with clouds, as a night, they left off their intermixed dances, and returned to their first places; where, as they were but beginning to move, this Song, the third time, urged them:*

*O know to end, as to begin,
A minute's loss in love is sin.
These humours will the night out-wear
In their own pastimes here;*

when it follows, Hesperus or Noctifer (as Cat. translates it.) See Cic. 2. de Nat. Deor. Mar. Cap. de Nup. Phil. et Mer. l. 8. The nature of this star Pythagoras first found out: and the present office Claud. expresseth in Fescen. Atollens thalamis Idalium jubar Dilectus Veneri nascitur Hesperus.

¹ It was a custom for the man to stand there, expecting the approach of his bride. See Hotto de Rit. Nupt.

² Alluding to that of Virg. Æneid. 4. Prima et Tellus, et Pronuba Juno,
Dant signum: fulsere ignes, et conscius æther
Connubii, &c.

³ Stat. in Epit. Fulcra, torosque deæ, tenerum premit agmen Amorum. And Claud. in Epith. Pen-nati passim pueri, quo quemque vocavit Umbra, jacent. Both which proved the ancients feigned many Cupids. Read also, Prop. eleg. 29. l. 2.

⁴ Venus is so induced by Stat. Claud. and others, to celebrate nuptials.

*You do our rites much wrong,
In seeking to prolong
These outward pleasures:
The night hath other treasures
Than these, though long conceal'd,
Ere day to be reveal'd.
Then, know to end, as to begin;
A minute's loss in love is sin.*

[*Here they danced their last dances, full of excellent delight and change, and, in their latter strain, fell into a fair orb or circle; REASON standing in the midst, and speaking.*

REASON. Here stay, and let your sports be crown'd:
The perfect'st figure is the round.
Nor fell you in it by adventure,
When Reason was your guide and centre.
This, this that beauteous¹ ceston is
Of lovers many-colour'd bliss.
Come, Hymen, make an inner ring,
And let the sacrificers sing;
Chear up the faint and trembling bride,
That quakes to touch her bridegroom's side:
Tell her what Juno is to Jove,
The same shall she be to her love;
His wife: which we do rather measure
A² name of dignity than pleasure.
Up, youths! hold up your lights in air,
And shake abroad³ their flaming hair.
Now move united, and in gait,
As you, in pairs, do front the state,
With grateful honours thank his Grace
That hath so glorified the place:
And as, in circle, you depart
Link'd hand in hand; so, heart in heart,
May all those bodies still remain
Whom he with so much sacred pain

¹ Venus's girdle, mentioned by Homer, *Ili.* ξ, which was feigned to be variously wrought with the needle, and in it woven love, desire, sweetness, soft parley, gracefulness, persuasion, and all the powers of Venus.

² See the words of Ælius Verus in Spartian.

³ So Cat. in *Nupt. Jul. et Manlii* hath it. *Viden' ut faces splendidas quatiunt comas?* and by and after, *aureas quatiunt comas.*

No less hath bound within his realms
 Than they are with the Ocean's streams.
 Long may his Union find increase,
 As he, to ours, hath deign'd his peace!

[*With this, to a soft strain of music, they paced once about, in their ring, every pair making their honours as they came before the State: and then dissolving, went down in couples, led on by HYMEN, the bride, and auspices following, as to the nuptial bower. After them, the musicians with this Song:*

*Glad time is at its point arrived,
 For which love's hopes were so long lived.
 Lead, Hymen, lead away;
 And let no object stay,
 Nor banquets, but sweet kisses,
 The turtles from their blisses.
 'Tis¹ Cupid calls to arm;
 And this his last alarm.*

[*Of this Song, then, only one staff was sung; but because I made it both in form and matter to emulate that kind of poem, which was called Epithalamium², and by the ancients used to be sung when the bride was led into her chamber, I have here set it down whole, and do heartily forgive their ignorance whom it chanceth not to please. Hoping that Nemo doctus me jubeat Thalassionem verbis dicere non Thalassionis.*

EPITHALAMION.

Glad time is at his point arrived,
 For which love's hopes were so long lived.
 Lead, Hymen, lead away;
 And let no object stay,
 Nor banquets, but sweet kisses,
 The turtles from their blisses.
 'Tis Cupid calls to arm;
 And this his last alarm.

¹ This poem had for the most part versum intercalarem, or carmen amœbæum: yet that not always one, but oftentimes varied, and sometimes neglected in the same song, as in ours you shall find observed.

² It had the name à Thalamo: dictum est autem θάλαμος cubiculum Nuptiale primo suo significatu, παρὰ τὸ θάλειν ἄμα, quod est simul genialem vitam agere. Scal. in Poet.

Shrink not, soft virgin, you will love
 Anon, what you so fear to prove.
 This is no killing war,
 To which you pressed are;
 But fair and gentle strife,
 Which lovers call their life.
 'Tis Cupid cries, to arm;
 And this his last alarm.

Help, youths and virgins, help to sing
 The prize, which Hymen here doth bring.
 And did so lately rap¹
 From forth the mother's lap,
 To place her by that side
 Where she must long abide.
 On Hymen, Hymen call,
 This night is Hymen's all.

See! Hesperus is yet in view.
 What star can so deserve of you?
 Whose light doth still adorn
 Your bride, that, ere the morn,
 Shall far more perfect be,
 And rise as bright as he;
 When², like to him, her name
 Is changed, but not her flame.

Haste, tender Lady, and adventure;
 The covetous house would have you enter,
 That it might wealthy be,
 And you her Mistress³ see:
 Haste your own good to meet;
 And⁴ lift your golden feet

¹ The bride was always feigned to be ravished "ex gremio matris:" or (if she were wanting) "ex proximâ necessitudine," because that had succeeded well to Romulus, who, by force, gat wives for him and his, from the Sabines. See Festus; and that of Catullus, "Qui rapis teneram ad virum virginem."

² When he is Phosphorus; yet the same star, as I have noted before.

³ At the entrance of the bride, the custom was to give her the keys, to signify that she was absolutely mistress of the place, and the whole disposition of the family at her care. Fest.

⁴ This was also another rite: that she might not touch the threshold as she entered, but was lifted over it. Servius saith, because it was sacred to Vesta. Plut. in Quæst. Rom. remembers divers causes. But that, which I take to come nearest the truth, was only the avoiding of sorcerous drugs, used by witches to be buried under that place, to the destroying of marriage amity, or the power of generation. See Alexand. in Genialibus, and Christ. Landus upon Catullus.

Above the threshold high,
With prosperous augury.

Now, youths, let go your pretty arms;
The place within chants other charms.

Whole showers of roses flow:
And violets seem to grow,
Strew'd in the chamber there,
As Venus' mead it were.
On Hymen, Hymen call,
This night is Hymen's all.

Good matrons, that so well are known
To aged husbands of your own,
Place you our bride to night;
And ¹ snatch away the light:
That ² she not hide it dead
Beneath her spouse's bed;
Nor ² he reserve the same
To help the funeral flame.

So! now you may admit him in;
The act he covets is no sin,
But chaste and holy love
Which Hymen doth approve:
Without whose hallowing fires
All aims are base desires.
On Hymen, Hymen call,
This night is Hymen's all.

Now, free from vulgar spite or noise,
May you enjoy your mutual joys;
Now, you no fear controls,
But lips may mingle souls;
And soft embraces bind
To each the other's mind,
Which may no power untie,
Till one or both must die!

And look, before you yield to slumber,
That your delights be drawn past number;
Joys, got with strife, increase.
Affect no sleepy peace;

¹ For this, look Fest. in voce *Rapi*.

² Quo utroque mors propinqua alterius ultrius captari putatur. Fest. ib.

But keep the bride's fair eyes
Awake with her own cries,
Which are but maiden fears:
And kisses dry such tears.

Then coin them 'twixt your lips so sweet,
And let not cockles closer meet;
Nor may your murmuring loves
Be drown'd by Cypris'¹ doves:
Let ivy not so bind
As when your arms are twined:
That you may both ere day,
Rise perfect every way.

And, Juno, whose great powers protect
The marriage-bed with good effect,
The labour of this night
Bless thou, for future light:
And thou, thy happy charge,
Glad Genius², enlarge;
That they may both, ere day,
Rise perfect, every way.

And Venus³, thou with timely seed,
Which may their after-comforts breed,
Inform the gentle womb;
Nor let it prove a tomb:
But, ere ten moons be wasted,
The birth, by Cynthia hasted.
So may they both, ere day,
Rise perfect every way.

And, when the babe to light is shown⁴,
Let it be like each parent known;

¹ A frequent surname of Venus, not of the place, as Cypria: but quodd parere faciat, ἡ τὸ κυεῖν παρεχούσα, Theoph. Phurnut. and the grammarians upon Homer, see them.

² Deus Naturæ, sive gignendi. And is the same in the male, as Juno in the female. Hence "Genialis Lectus, qui nuptiis sternitur, in honorem Genii." Fest. "Genius meus, quia me genuit."

³ She hath this faculty given her by all the ancients. See Hom. Iliad. θ. Lucret. in prim. Virg. in 2. Georg. &c.

⁴ This Epithalamium is an imitation of Catullus's poem upon the marriage of Julia and Manlius: the sentiments in general are Jonson's, though the above verses are evidently borrowed from the Latin:

Sit suo similis patri
Manlio, et facile in sciis
Noscitur ab omnibus,

Much of the father's face,
 More of the mother's grace ;
 And either grandsire's spirit,
 And fame let it inherit.
 That men may bless th' embraces,
 That joined two such races.

Cease, youths and virgins, you have done ;
 Shut fast the door : and as they soon
 To their perfection haste,
 So may their ardours last.
 So either's strength out-live
 All loss that age can give :
 And, though full years be told,
 Their forms grow slowly old.

Hitherto extended the first night's solemnity, whose grace in the execution left not where to add unto it with wishing ; I mean (nor do I court them) in those that sustained the nobler parts. Such was the exquisite performance, as, beside the pomp, splendor, or what we may call apparelling of such presentments, that alone (had all else been absent) was of power to surprize with delight, and steal away the spectators from themselves. Nor was there wanting whatsoever might give to the furniture or complement ; either in riches, or strangeness of the habits, delicacy of dances, magnificence of the scene, or divine rapture of music. Only the envy was, that it lasted not still, or, now it is past, cannot by imagination, much less description, be recovered to a part of that spirit it had in the gliding by.

Yet, that I may not utterly defraud the reader of his hope, I am drawn to give it those brief touches, which leave behind some shadow of what it was : and first of the attires.

That of the Lords had part of it, for the fashion, taken from the antique

*Et pudicitiam suæ
 Matris indicet ore.* WHALLEY.

The couplet, as Whalley observes, may be borrowed from the Latin ; or—from the “prayer of every gossip” from the days of Inachus to the present.—But had the commentator not a word of praise for this chaste and beautiful gem ? Surely when he pronounced it to be imitated from the Latin, he might have added, without much suspicion of undue partiality to the author, that nothing so purely classical, so sprightly and yet so simply elegant, was, at the period of its appearance, to be found among the poetic treasures of this country, either in the closet or on the stage. G.

Greek statues, mixed with some modern additions: which made it both graceful and strange. On their heads they wore Persic crowns, that were with scrolls of gold plate turned outward, and wreathed about with a carnation and silver net-lawn; the one of which hung carelessly on the left shoulder; the other was tricked up before, in several degrees of folds between the plaits, and set with rich jewels and great pearl. Their bodies were of carnation cloth of silver, richly wrought, and cut to express the naked, in manner of the Greek thorax; girt under the breasts with a broad belt of cloth of gold, embroidered, and fastened before with jewels; their labels were of white cloth of silver, laced, and wrought curiously between, suitable to the upper half of their sleeves; whose nether parts, with their bases, were of watchet cloth of silver, cheveroned all over with lace. Their mantles were of several coloured silks, distinguishing their qualities, as they were coupled in pairs; the first, sky-colour; the second, pearl-colour; the third, flame-colour; the fourth, tawny; and these cut in leaves, which were subtly tacked up and embroidered with O's¹, and between every rank of leaves a broad silver lace. They were fastened on the right shoulder, and fell compass down the back in gracious folds, and were again tied with a round knot to the fastening of their swords. Upon their legs they wore silver greaves, answering in work to their labels. And these were their accoutrements.

The Ladies attire was wholly new for the invention, and full of glory; as having in it the most true impression of a celestial figure: the upper part of white cloth of silver, wrought with Juno's birds and fruits; a loose under garment, full gathered, of carnation, striped with silver, and parted with a golden zone. Beneath that, another flowing garment of watchet cloth of silver, laced with gold; through all which, though they were round and swelling, there yet appeared some touch of their delicate lineaments, preserving the sweetness of proportion, and expressing itself beyond expression. The attire of their heads did answer, if

¹ An heraldic term for a kind of spangles. The word occurs in *Parthenissa Sacra*, 1633. "The purple canopy of the earth, powderd over and beset with silver O'es." And Sir Simon D'Ewes, in his *Journal of Queen Elizabeth's Parliaments*, p. 65, mentions a patent for "making spangles and O'es of gold." It is impossible to pass over this and what immediately follows, without calling the attention of the reader to the richness, elegance, and matchless vigour of Jonson's prose. By the commentators on Shakspeare he is never mentioned but as a hard, jejune, barbarous, and obscure writer; and under this character is handed down to us the great master of the English language, whose style is replete with beauties of every description, and in whose luminous prose (for to this the observation is now confined) may be found almost every epithet which has lent grace, and every variety of expression which has added manliness and precision to our tongue for the last two centuries. G.

not exceed: their hair being carelessly (but yet with more art than if more affected) bound under the circle of a rare and rich coronet, adorned with all variety and choice of jewels; from the top of which flowed a transparent veil, down to the ground; whose verge, returning up, was fastened to either side in most sprightly manner. Their shoes were azure and gold, set with rubies and diamonds; so were all their garments; and every part abounding in ornament.

No less to be admired, for the grace and greatness was the whole machine of the spectacle from whence they came: the first part of which was a ΜΙΚΡΟ-ΚΟΣΜΟΣ or globe, filled with countries, and those gilded; where the sea was exprest, heightened with silver waves. This stood, or rather hung (for no axle was seen to support it) and turning softly, discovered the first Masque (as we have before, but too runningly, declared) which was of the men, sitting in fair composition, within a mine of several metals; to which the lights were so placed as no one was seen; but seemed as if only Reason, with the splendor of her crown, illumined the whole grot.

On the sides of this, which began the other part, were placed two great statues, feigned of gold, one of Atlas, the other of Hercules, in varied postures, bearing up the clouds, which were of relievo, embossed and translucent¹ as naturals; to these a cortine² of painted clouds joined, which reached to the utmost roof of the hall; and, suddenly opening, revealed the three regions of air; in the highest of which sat Juno, in a glorious throne of gold, circled with comets and fiery meteors, engendered in that hot and dry region; her feet reaching to the lowest; where was made a rainbow, and within it musicians seated, figuring airy spirits, their habits various, and resembling the several colours caused in that part of the air by reflection. The midst was all of dark and condensed clouds, as being the proper place where rain, hail, and other watery meteors are made; out of which two concave clouds from the rest thrust forth themselves (in nature of those Nimbi, wherein, by Homer, Virgil, &c. the Gods are feigned to descend), and these carried the eight Ladies over the heads of the two terms³; who, as the

¹ *Translucent* wave occurs in *Comus*. This word, says Warton, I always thought to be first used by Milton, till I found it in Brathwaite, 1615. Warton might have found it ten years before where Milton himself found it, together with most of the beautiful and expressive epithets which he has used with such exquisite taste in his *Masques*. G.

² *Curtain*; the meaning of this word has been so concealed by its antiquated spelling, that it has escaped the modernization that the surrounding language has experienced in the late editions of Jonson. N.

³ Atlas and Hercules, the figures mentioned before.

engine moved, seemed also to bow themselves (by virtue of their shadows) and discharge their shoulders of their glorious burden; when having set them on the earth, both they and the clouds gathered themselves up again, with some rapture of the beholders.

But that, which (as above in place, so in the beauty) was most taking in the spectacle, was the sphere of fire, in the top of all, encompassing the air, and imitated with such art and industry, as the spectators might discern the motion (all the time the shews lasted) without any mover; and that so swift as no eye could distinguish any colour of the light, but might form to itself five hundred several hues out of the translucent body of the air, objected betwixt it and them.

And this was crowned with a statue of Jupiter the Thunderer.

“The design and act of all which, together with the device of their habits, belong properly to the merit and reputation of Master Inigo Jones¹, whom I take modest occasion, in this fit place, to remember, lest his own worth might accuse me of an ignorant neglect from my silence. And here, that no man's deservings complain of injustice (though I should have done it timelier, I acknowledge,) I do for honour's sake, and the pledge of our friendship, name Master Alphonso Ferrabosco², a man planted by himself in that divine sphere, and mastering all the spirits of music. To whose judicial care, and as absolute performance, were committed all those difficulties both of song and otherwise. Wherein, what his merit made to the soul of our invention would ask to be exprest in tunes no less ravishing than his.—Virtuous friend, take well this abrupt testimony and think whose it is. It cannot be flattery, in me, who never did it to great ones, and less than love and truth it is not, where it is done out of knowledge.

“The Dancers were both made and taught by Master Thomas Giles³, and cannot be more approved than they did themselves. Nor do I want the will but the skill to commend subtilties, of which the sphere, wherein they were acted, is best able to judge. What was my part, the faults here, as well as the virtues must speak.

“Mutare dominum nec potest liber notus⁴.”

¹ “Of Master Inigo Jones,” see before, in vol. I. pp. 481, 558.—In Mr. D'Israeli's Essay on “Court Masques,” [of which see vol. I. p. 502,] are some ingenious remarks on the particular Masque now before us; in which he observes, that, “as no Masque-writer equalled Jonson, so no Machinist rivalled Inigo Jones; I have sometimes caught a groan from some unfortunate Poet, whose brightest fancies were spoilt by the bungling Machinist.” N.

² Who will be more fully noticed in a future page under the year 1607-8. N.

³ “Master Thomas Giles” was, in 1610, a servant to Prince Henry under the title of “Teacher to dance,” with an annual salary of £50. N.

⁴ These sentences between inverted commas are from the old 4to; they were omitted in the folio editions.

THE BARRIERS.

“The names of the Combatants,” says Jonson in the Quarto Edition, “as they were given to me, both in Order and Orthography, are these :

On the side of TRUTH.

DUKE OF LENNOX¹.
 LORD EFFINGHAM².
 LORD WALDEN³.
 LORD MOUNTEAGLE⁴.
 SIR THOMAS SOMERSET⁵.
 SIR CHARLES HOWARD⁶.
 SIR JOHN GRAY⁷.
 SIR THOMAS MONSON⁸.
 SIR JOHN LEIGH⁹.
 SIR ROBERT MANSELL¹⁰.
 SIR EDWARD HOWARD¹¹.
 SIR HENRY GOODYERE¹².
 SIR ROGER DALISON¹³.
 SIR FRANCIS HOWARD¹⁴.
 SIR LEWIS MANSELL¹⁵.
 MASTER GAUTERET¹⁶.

On the side of OPINION.

EARL OF SUSSEX¹⁷.
 LORD WILLOUGHBY¹⁸.
 LORD GERRARD¹⁹.
 SIR ROBERT CAREY²⁰.
 SIR OLIVER CROMWELL²¹.
 SIR WILLIAM HERBERT²².
 SIR ROBERT DRURY²³.
 SIR WILLIAM WOODHOUSE²⁴.
 SIR CAREY REYNOLDS²⁵.
 SIR RICHARD HOGHTON²⁶.
 SIR WILLIAM CONSTABLE²⁷.
 SIR THOMAS GERRARD²⁸.
 SIR ROBERT KILLEGREW²⁹.
 SIR THOMAS BADGER³⁰.
 SIR THOMAS DUTTON³¹.
 MASTER DIGBIE³².”

¹ Of whom see before, vol. I. p. 36.

² William, eldest son of Charles first Earl of Nottingham. He was summoned to Parliament as Baron Effingham in his father's life-time; but died (before his father) in 1615, leaving Elizabeth his sole daughter and heir, who was married to John Lord Mordaunt, afterwards Earl of Peterborough. Lady Effingham has been noticed in vol. I. p. 489, as a Performer in the “Masque of Blackness.”

³ Of whom see before, p. 5.

⁴ See vol. I. p. 579.

⁵ Ibid. p. 478.

⁶ Fourth son of Thomas first Earl of Suffolk.

⁷ Knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1591.

⁸ Sir Thomas Monson was the elder brother of Sir William, the celebrated Admiral; and of Sir Robert, knighted July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 213, where for “son of the famous Admiral Sir John,” read “younger brother of the famous Admiral Sir William,” and for “that county” read “the City of Lincoln”). Sir Thomas, who was the eldest son, succeeded to his father's estates, was elected M. P. for Great Grimsby, Lincolnshire, in 1585, 1586, and 1588; was knighted in 1588; and returned M. P. for Lincoln in 1597. In 1605 he accompanied the Court to Oxford (see vol. I. p. 556), when (according to Wood) he was Master of the Armory and Master Falconer to the King. On June 29, 1611, he was created a Baronet, being the 27th. He was afterwards twice brought to trial on suspicion of being concerned in the poisoning of Sir Thomas Overbury; but, his innocence clearly appearing, he was acquitted. He was a person of fine breeding, and a great lover of music, in which he excelled. He died in 1641 at an advanced age, having amused his latter years, during the civil troubles, by writing a book, by way of advice to his grandson, entitled, “An Essay on Afflictions,” printed in 1661-2 with another he had written concerning Adoration, Fasting, and Prayer.—

ON the next Night, whose solemnity was of BARRIERS (all mention of the former being utterly removed and taken away), there appeared, at the lower end of the Hall, a mist made of delicate perfumes; out of which (a battle being See further in Brydges's Peerage, vol. VII. p. 239.—His second son, William, was created Viscount Castlemain in Ireland by Charles I.; but he was one of the Regicides. The present Lord Monson is descended from his eldest son John.

⁹ So many occur of this name, that it is not easy to say who this was.

¹⁰ Knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1596. He was of the family seated at Margam, Glamorganshire, afterwards advanced to a Baronetcy and Peerage.

¹¹ Seventh son of Thomas Earl of Suffolk; Knight of the Bath 1616; created Baron Howard, of Escrick in Yorkshire, a Lordship which came from his mother, as heir to her uncle, Thomas Lord Knevit, of Escrick; of whom see vol. I. p. 582. He died in 1675.—His son stands recorded in history for his evidence against Lord Russell and Algernon Sydney. The title became extinct in 1694.

¹² Knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1599. This worthy Knight will be further noticed in some future page.

¹³ Of whom see vol. I. p. 91, when knighted, April 23, 1603.

¹⁴ See vol. I. p. 440.

¹⁵ Son of Sir Thomas, who was created a Baronet May 22, 1611, and whom he succeeded in 1626. He died in 1638.

¹⁶ Who this was does not appear.

¹⁷ Robert Ratcliffe succeeded his father as Earl of Sussex in 1593. He had been sent to Scotland in 1594 by Queen Elizabeth to stand in her stead as godfather to Prince Henry, and in 1597 he went with Robert Earl of Essex to Cadiz. In 1621 he was made K. G. He was twice married, but died, in Clerkenwell, without surviving issue, Sept. 22, 1629.—Of Queen Elizabeth's Visits to this Nobleman's father see her "Progresses," vol. I. p. 290.

¹⁸ Robert Lord Willoughby of Eresby, afterwards Earl of Lindsey; of whom vol. I. pp. 471, 477.

¹⁹ Thomas Lord Gerard was son and heir of Sir Gilbert Gerard, of Gray's Inn, Attorney General and Master of the Rolls in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth. He was created Baron Gerard, of Gerard's Bromley in Staffordshire, by King James, in 1603. He was twice married; and dying in 1618 was buried at Ashley in Staffordshire. The title became extinct in 1711 with Digby, fifth Lord.

²⁰ Of whom see vol. I. pp. 34, 471.

²¹ Ibid. pp. 98, 223.

²² Afterwards Baron Powis; of whom see vol. I. p. 223, when created K. B. July 24, 1603.

²³ See an ample account of Sir Robert Drury in vol. I. p. 221, when knighted, July 23, 1603.

²⁴ Sir William Woodhouse was knighted in 1591. It does not appear that he was any relation of the Baronet of that name.

²⁵ Knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1599. His family afterwards attained the degree of Baronet.

²⁶ Who will be noticed when created a Baronet in 1611. Of his son Sir Gilbert, see vol. I. p. 454.

²⁷ Sir William Constable was knighted by the Earl of Essex in Ireland in 1599. He was created a Baronet June 22, 1611, and on that occasion will be further noticed.

²⁸ Of whom see vol. I. p. 84.

²⁹ I have not elsewhere met with this Knight.

³⁰ Sir Thomas Badger was a Performer in the Masque on St. John's-day 1604-5 (see vol. I. p. 471).

³¹ Sir Thomas Dutton had been knighted July 23, 1603. (See vol. I. p. 214.) He was of Dutton in Cheshire, Sheriff of that county in 1611, and died in 1614, aged 46.—Ormerod's Cheshire, I. 481.

³² "Master Digby" was soon after knighted, and subsequently became Earl of Bristol (see p. 36). He again occurs in *Campion's Masque*, under the year 1606-7.

sounded under the stage) did seem to break forth two Ladies¹, the one representing TRUTH, the other OPINION; but both so alike attired as they could by no note be distinguished. The colour of their garments was blue, their socks white; they were crowned with wreaths of palm, and in their hand each of them sustained a palm-bough.

These, after the mist was vanished, began to examine each other curiously with their eyes, and approaching the State, the one expostulated the other in this manner:

TRUTH. Who art thou, thus that imitat'st my grace,
In steps, in habit, and resembled face?

OPINION. Grave Time² and Industry my Parents are;
My name is Truth, who, through these sounds of war,
Which figure the wise mind's discursive sight,
In mists by Nature wrapt, salute the light.

TRUTH. I am that Truth, thou some illusive spright;
Whom to my likeness, the black Sorceress Night
Hath of these dry and empty fumes created.

OPINION. Best herald of thine own birth, well related!
Put me and mine to proof of words and facts,
In any question this fair hour exacts.

TRUTH. I challenge thee, and fit this time of love,
With this position, which Truth comes to prove;
That the most honour'd state of Man and Wife
Doth far exceed the insociate Virgin-life.

OPINION. I take the adverse part; and she that best
Defends her side, be Truth by all confest.

TRUTH. It is confirm'd. With what an equal brow
To Truth³, Opinion's confident! and how,

¹ Jonson is truly classical in all decorations and accompaniments of his Masques. Here he has introduced a circumstance familiar to the Roman Theatres, in which mists or showers of perfumes were frequently raised. Pliny observes—"crocum, vino mire congruere, præcipue dulci, tritum ad theatra replendæ." lib. 31. c. 17. And both Ovid and Propertius speak of the practice as common in their days. The voluptuous Sir Epicure has a similar allusion.

" My mists
I'll have of *perfume*, vapour'd 'bout the room
To lose ourselves in." G.

² Truth is feigned to be the daughter of Saturn; who indeed, with the ancients, was no other than Time, and so his name alludes, Κρόνος. Plut. in Quæst. To which confer the Greek Adage, ἀγῆ δὲ πρὸς Φῶς τὴν ἀλήθειαν χρόνος.

³ Hippocrates in a certain epistle to Philopœm. describeth her, "Mulierem, quæ non mala videatur, sed audacior aspectu et concitator." To which Cesare Ripa, in his Iconolog. alludeth in these words, "Faccia, ne bella, ne dispiacevole," &c.

Like Truth, her habit shews to sensual eyes !
 But whosoe'er thou be, in this disguise,
 Clear Truth, anon, shall strip thee to the heart ;
 And shew how mere phantastical thou art.

Know, then, the first production of things
 Required two; from mere one nothing springs:
 Without that knot, the theme thou gloriest in,
 (Th' unprofitable Virgin) had not been.
 The golden tree of Marriage first began
 In Paradise, and bore the fruit of Man;
 On whose sweet branches Angels sat and sung,
 And from whose firm root all Society sprung.
 Love (whose strong virtue wrapt Heaven's soul in Earth,
 And made a woman glory in his birth)
 In Marriage opens his inflamed breast ;
 And, lest in him Nature should stifled rest,
 His genial fire about the world he darts ;
 Which lips with lips combines, and hearts with hearts.
 Marriage Love's object is ; at whose bright eyes
 He lights his torches, and calls them his skies.
 For her he wings his shoulders ; and doth fly
 To her white bosom, as his sanctuary :
 In which no lustful finger can profane him,
 Nor any earth with black eclipses wane him.
 She makes him smile in sorrows, and doth stand
 'Twixt him and all wants, with her silver hand.
 In her soft locks his tender feet are tied ;
 And in his fetters he takes worthy pride.
 And, as Geometricians have approved,
 That lines and superficies are not moved
 By their own forces, but do follow still
 Their bodies' motions ; so the self-lov'd will
 Of Man or Woman should not rule in them,
 But each with other wear the anadem¹.
 Mirrors, though deck'd with diamonds, are nought worth,
 If the like forms of things they set not forth ;
 So Men or Women are worth nothing neither,
 If either's eyes and hearts present not either.

OPINION. Untouch'd Virginity, laugh out ; to see
 Freedom in fetters plac'd, and urg'd 'gainst thee.
 What griefs lie groaning on the nuptial bed !
 What dull society ! in what sheets of lead
 Tumble and toss the restless married pair,
 Each, oft, offended, with the other's air ?

¹ The crown, or wreath. The word frequently occurs in Jonson. G.

From whence springs all-devouring Avarice,
 But from the cares which out of wedlock rise?
 And, where there is in life's best-temper'd fires
 An end, set in itself to all desires,
 A settled quiet, freedom never check'd;
 How far are married lives from this effect?
 Euripus¹, that bears ships in all their pride,
 'Gainst roughest winds, with violence of his tide,
 And ebbs and flows seven times in every day,
 Toils not more turbulent or fierce than they.
 And then what rules husbands prescribe their wives!
 In their eyes' circles they must bound their lives.
 The Moon, when farthest from the Sun she shines,
 Is most refulgent; nearest, most declines:
 But your poor Wives far off must never roam,
 But waste their beauties near their Lords at home!
 And when their Lords range out, at home must hide,
 [Most] like to begg'd monopolies, all their pride.
 When their Lords list to feed a serious fit,
 They must be serious; when to shew their wit
 In jests and laughter, they must laugh and jest;
 When they wake, wake; and when they rest, must rest.
 And to their wives men give such narrow scopes,
 As if they meant to make them walk on ropes;
 No Tumblers bide more peril of their necks
 In all their tricks, than Wives in Husbands' checks.
 Where Virgins, in their sweet and peaceful state,
 Have all things perfect; spin their own free fate;
 Depend on no proud second; are their own
 Centre and circle; now, and always one.
 To whose example we do still hear nam'd
 One God, one nature, and but one world fram'd,
 One Sun, one Moon, one element of Fire,
 So of the rest;—one King, that doth inspire
 Soul to all bodies, in their Royal sphere.

TRUTH.

And where is Marriage more declar'd than there?
 Is there a band more strict than that doth tie
 The soul and body in such unity?
 Subjects to Sovereigns? doth one mind display
 In th' one's obedience and the other's sway;
 Believe it, Marriage suffers no compare,
 When both estates are valued as they are.

¹ A narrow sea, between Aulis, a port of Bœotia, and the isle Eubœa. See Pomp. Mela, lib. 2.

The Virgin were a strange and stubborn thing,
Would longer stay a Virgin, than to bring
Herself fit use and profit in a make.

OPINION. How she doth err, and the whole Heaven mistake !
Look, how a flower that close in closes grows¹,
Hid from rude cattle, bruised with no ploughs,
Which th' air doth stroke², sun strengthen, showers shoot higher,
It many Youths, and many Maids desire;
The same, when cropt by cruel hand 'tis wither'd,
No Youths at all, no Maidens have desir'd :
So a Virgin, while untouch'd she doth remain,
Is dear to hers: but, when with body's stain
Her chaster flower is lost, she leaves to appear
Or sweet to Young Men, or to Maidens dear.
That conquest then may crown me in this war,
Virgins, O Virgins, fly from Hymen far.

TRUTH. Virgins, O Virgins, to sweet Hymen yield ;
For, as a lone Vine, in a naked field,

¹ Catullus has again furnished our Poet with this and the following speech ; I could wish he had consulted the ear a little more in the flow of his numbers, that the translation, if possible, might have equalled the delicacy and sweetness of the original ; but the closeness of the version must atone for the want of grace.

“ Ut flos in septis secretus nascitur hortis,
Ignotus pecori, nulli convulsus aratro,
Quem mulcent auræ, firmat sol, educat imber,
Multi illum pueri, multæ optavere puellæ :
Idem quum tenui captus defloruit ungui,
Nulli illum pueri, nullæ optavere puellæ :
Sic virgo dum intacta manet, dum cara suis est ;
Quum castum amisit polluto corpore florem,
Nec pueris jucunda manet, nec cara puellis.

The comparison that follows in the speech of Truth, is also as close a copy from the Latin, and is there put into the mouth of the young men. W.

² *i. e.* sooth, encourage, flatter, &c. Jonson frequently uses this word as the translation of *mulceo*. These speeches, it should be observed, are merely introductory to the Tilting ; and seem to aim at nothing more than maintaining a plain contest in plain language. As one of the opponents is Truth, and the other pretends to be Truth, Jonson evidently thought it consistent with the character of the speakers to forego all the graces of invention, and all the ornaments of poetry.

It is fit to observe, (to the credit of Hurd's candour,) that in his feeble and parasitical endeavours to sacrifice the reputation of Jonson, to Milton, Pope, and every Poet who happens to come in his way, that he has produced the speech of Opinion just noticed, as a general specimen of his most elaborate attempts at translation ! “ It is (he says) but one instance of a thousand ;” and he appears to enjoy, by anticipation, the marvellous “ entertainment” which he supposes the quotation will afford his friend, Mason. G.

Never extols her branches, never bears
 Ripe grapes, but with a headlong heaviness wears
 Her tender body, and her highest sprout
 Is quickly level'd with her fading root;
 By whom no Husbandmen, no Youths will dwell;
 But, if by fortune, she be married well
 To the Elm her Husband, many Husbandmen
 And many Youths inhabit by her, then:
 So whilst a Virgin doth, untouch'd, abide,
 All unmanured, she grows old with her pride;
 But when to equal wedlock, in fit time,
 Her fortune, and endeavour lets her climb,
 Dear to her love, and parents she is held.
 Virgins, O Virgins, to sweet Hymen yield.

OPINION. These are but words; hast thou a Knight will try,
 By stroke of arms, the simple verity?

TRUTH. To that high proof I would have dared thee.
 I'll straight fetch Champions for the Bride and me.

OPINION. The like will I do for Virginitie.

Here, they both descended the Hall, where at the lower end, a march being sounded with drums and fifes, there entered (led forth by the Earl of Nottingham, who was Lord High Constable for that night, and the Earl of Worcester, Earl Marshal) sixteen Knights armed with pikes and swords; their plumes and colours carnation and white; all richly accoutred, and making their honours to the State¹ as they marched by in pairs, were all ranked on one side of the Hall. They placed sixteen others like accoutred for riches and arms, only that their colours were varied to watchet and white; who were by the same Earls led up, and passing in like manner, by the State, placed on the opposite side.

By this time, the Bar being brought up, TRUTH proceeded.

TRUTH. Now join; and if this varied trial fail,
 To make my truth in Wedlock's praise prevail,
 I will retire, and in more power appear,
 To cease this strife, and make our question clear.

Whereat OPINION, insulting, followed her with this Speech.

OPINION. Ay, do: it were not safe thou shouldst abide;
 This speaks thy name, with shame to quit thy side.

Here the Champions on both sides addrest themselves for fight, first single; after, three to three; and performed it with that alacrity and vigour, as if Mars himself had been to triumph before Venus, and invented a new Masque.

¹ Where James and his Queen sat. *State* has been already noticed, as the raised platform on which the Royal seats were placed under a canopy. G.

When on a sudden, (the last six having scarcely ended) a striking light seemed to fill all the Hall, and out of it an ANGEL, or Messenger of Glory, appearing.

ANGEL. Princes, attend a tale of height, and wonder ;
 Truth is descended in a second thunder,
 And now will greet you, with judicial state,
 To grace the nuptial part in this debate ;
 And end with reconciled hands these wars.
 Upon her head she wears a crown of stars,
 Through which her orient hair waves to her waste,
 By which believing mortals hold her fast,
 And in those golden cords are carried even,
 Till with her breath she blows them up to Heaven.
 She wears a robe enchas'd with eagles' eyes,
 To signify her sight in mysteries :
 Upon each shoulder sits a milk-white dove,
 And at her feet do witty serpents move :
 Her spacious arms do reach from East to West,
 And you may see her heart shine through her breast.
 Her right hand holds a Sun¹ with burning rays,
 He left a curious bunch of golden keys,
 With which Heaven's gates she locketh and displays.
 A crystal mirror hangeth at her breast,
 By which men's consciences are search'd and drest :
 On her coach-wheels Hypocrisy lies rack'd ;
 And squint-eyed Slander, with Vain-glory back'd.
 Her bright eyes burn to dust, in which shines Fate :
 An angel ushers her triumphant gait,
 Whilst with her fingers fans of stars she twists,
 And with them beats back Error, clad in mists.
 Eternal Unity behind her shines,
 That fire and water, earth and air combines.
 Her voice is like a trumpet loud and shrill,
 Which bids all sounds in Earth and Heaven be still.

¹ Milton is greatly indebted to this magnificent portraiture of 'Truth, although his commentators cannot find it out. Mr. Bowles runs to a Spanish proverb, and Mr. Warton to Dante. These precious discoveries are carefully treasured up in every Edition of this great Poet. But, indeed, nothing can be more amusing than the mode in which Jonson is treated in general. The *Arcades*, with the exception of three trifling songs, is made up of the speech of the Genius. Upon which Warton remarks that "in the *King's Entertainment*, the Genius speaks, somewhat in Milton's manner, &c." In Milton's manner ! If the Reader will turn to the passage (Jonson's Works, vol. VI. p. 438) he will find that Jonson speaks in his *own* manner. In whose manner Milton (who was not then born) speaks, is another question. And Mr. Todd "has been induced (he says) to make large extracts from a MS Masque by Marston, that the reader may comprehend the nature of those Entertainments." (*Arcades*, 134.) This is the more kind and considerate, as nothing on this head is to be found elsewhere. G.

And see! descended from her chariot now,
In this related pomp she visits you.

Enter TRUTH.

TRUTH. Honour to all that honour Nuptials,
To whose fair lot, in justice, now it falls,
That this my counterfeit be here disclos'd,
Who, for Virginity, hath herself oppos'd.
Nor, though my brightness do undo her charms,
Let these her Knights think that their equal arms
Are wrong'd therein: for Valour wins applause,
That dares but to maintain the weaker cause.
And Princes, see, 'tis mere Opinion
That in Truth's forced robe for Truth hath gone!
Her gaudy colours, piec'd with many folds,
Shew what uncertainties she ever holds:
Vanish, adulterate Truth! and never dare
With proud Maids' praise, to press where Nuptials are.
And, Champions, since you see the truth I held,
To sacred Hymen, reconciled, yield:
Nor (so to yield) think it the least despight:
"It is a conquest to submit to right."

This Royal Judge of our contention
Will prop, I know, what I have undergone;
To whose right sacred Highness I resign,
Low at his feet, this starry crown of mine,
To shew his rule and judgment is divine;
These doves to him I consecrate withal,
To note his innocence, without spot or gall;
These serpents, for his wisdom: and these rays,
To shew his piercing splendor: these bright keys
Designing power to ope the ported skies,
And speak their glories to his subjects' eyes.
Lastly, this heart, with which all hearts be true:
And truth in him make treason ever rue.

*With this they were led forth, hand in hand, reconciled,
as in triumph. And thus the Solemnities ended.*

"Vivite concordēs, et nostrum discite munus."



The following Letter from Mr. John Pory¹ to Sir Robert Cotton, dated Jan. . . ., 1605-6, is preserved in the Cotton MSS.

“ Ever since your departure I have been very unfit to learn any thing, because my hearing (which Aristotle calls *Sensus Eruditionis*) hath, by an accidental cold, been almost taken from me; which makes me very unsociable, and to keep within doors; yet not in such a retired fashion but that I have seen the Mask on Sunday, and the Barriers on Monday night. The bridegroom carried himself so gravely and gracefully as if he were of his father’s age. He had greater gifts given him than my Lord of Montgomery had; his plate being valued at £.3000, and his jewels, money, and other gifts at £.1000 more. But to return to the Mask; both Inigo, Ben, and the Actors, men and women, did their parts with great commendation. The concert or soul of the Mask was *Hymen* bringing in a bride, and *Juno*, Pronuba’s priest, a bridegroom, proclaiming that these two should be sacrificed to Nuptial Union². And here the Poet made an apostrophe to the Union of the Kingdoms. But before the sacrifice could be performed, Ben Jonson turned the globe of the earth, standing behind the altar, and within the concave sat the eight men-Maskers representing the four Humours and the four Affections, who leapt forth to disturb the sacrifice to Union. But, amidst their fury, Reason, that sat above them all, crowned with burning tapers, came down and silenced them. These eight, together with Reason their modetrass, mounted above their heads, sat somewhat like the Ladies in the scallop-shell the last year³. About the Globe of Earth hovered a middle region of clouds, in the centre whereof stood a grand concert of musicians, and upon the cantons or horns sat the Ladies, four at one corner and four at another, who descended upon

¹ Sir Robert, like most of the great men of his time, when absent from Court, had a Correspondent (generally some Secretary) there, who furnished them with regular accounts of the various occurrences of the day. Sir Robert was fortunate in his informant. Pory is mentioned with great respect by Hackluyt. He had travelled much, and seen a good deal of Courts and public affairs. He was also an excellent scholar. As he was a Member of Parliament, he must have been a person of some property. G.

² Mr. Gifford, who in his *Life of Jonson* has given some extracts from this Letter, observes that the preceding Masque was celebrated with extraordinary magnificence; and that “the Poet has entered with some complacency into the richness and variety of this exhibition, which seems to have astonished the beholders; he drops a word too in justification of the strict regard to the pure models of antiquity, after which he usually constructed his fables. We have other evidence than the Poet’s for this splendid display;” alluding to Mr. Pory’s Letter. N.

³ See in the *Masque of Blackness*, vol. I. p. 481.

the stage, not after the stale, downright perpendicular fashion, like a bucket into a well, but came gently sloping down. These eight, after the sacrifice was ended, represented the eight nuptial powers of Juno Pronuba, who came down to confirm the union. The men were clad in crimson, and the women in white. They had every one a white plume of the richest hern's feathers, and were so rich in jewels upon their heads as was most glorious. I think they hired and borrowed all the principal jewels and ropes of pearls both in Court and City. The Spanish Ambassador seemed but poor to the meanest of them. They danced all the variety of dances both severally and *promiscuè*; and then the women and men, as namely, the Prince, who danced with as great perfection and as settled a majesty as could be devised, the Spanish Ambassador, the Archduke's Ambassador, the Duke, &c. And the men gleaned out of the Queen, the bride, and the greatest of the Ladies. The second night the Barriers were also well performed by sixteen against sixteen, the Duke of Lennox being chieftain on one side, and my Lord of Sussex on the other.

"But to leave the sports, and fall to more serious matters. On Friday last the old Venetian Leiger Molino presented to the King and Prince a new Leiger called Justiniano. I say to the Prince, because they delivered a letter from the Seignory to him as well as to the King. They came to the Court in thirteen coaches. They were apparelled in black gowns, lined with the richest fur of all others, black fox.

JO. PORY¹."

January 22, the Parliament again assembled, and sat till the 27th of May².

Prince Henry's Letter to the King, dated "Richmond," Jan. 23, 1605-6:

"Sir; Your Majestie comaunded me to wryte to you when any fitt occasion were offred, and now hearing that upon the death of the Archbishop of Yorke, there are many sutars for preferment, I have taken the boldnesse to be a suter also for my Master. Not because I doubt that your Majestie is unmyndfull of your promesse made at Hampton Court, that if he should stay so long as till the Archbishop were dead, he should have the Deanry of Durham, but to shew the desyre I have to doe good to my Master. I have learned, among other good lessons, this out of Pibrac:

"Tu ne scaurois d'assez ample salaire
Recompenser celui, qui t'a soigné
En ton enfance, et qui t'a enseigné
A bien parler, et sur tout à bien faire.

¹ Julius, C. III. fol. 35; Birch MSS. 4176.

² When it was prorogued to the 18th of November. See p. 49.

“And I know perfytely that my master’s hope these two yeeres past hath rested altogether upon the expectation of this Deanry¹; and so hoping that your Majestie will both accept of my humble sute, and excuse my boldnesse, I kisse your Majestie’s hands. Your Majestie’s most dutifull and obedient sone, HENRY.”

January 23d, Sir Nicholas de Molin, the Venetian Ambassador, was knighted at Whitehall²; and, about that time, Sir Francis Kettelby³, of Leicestershire.

On the 27th, “the chiefe traytors were tried at Westminster Hall, where there were two new clozets erected for Ambassadors, and other most noble personages to sit privately and observe their tryals⁴.” Sir Everard Digby alone pleaded guilty, notwithstanding the various confessions the other Conspirators had made. They were all, however, convicted.

On the 30th, Sir Everard Digby, Robert Winter, Graunt, and Bates were “drawne, hanged, and quartered at the West end of St. Paule-church, when all but Graunt died very penitent.” Sir Everard Digby was particularly so.

On the 31st, Thomas Winter, Rookewoode, Keys, and Fawkes were executed in the same manner in the Parliament-yard at Westminster. “Fawkes at his death was more penitent than any of the rest, and besought all Catholiques never to attempt any such bloody act, being a course which God did never favour nor

¹ The Prince’s recommendation was successful; and his Tutor, Dr. Adam Newton, was installed Dean of Durham Sept. 27, 1606. April 2, 1620, being wealthy, he was advanced to the dignity of a Baronet. After taking upon him his secular honours he renounced his ecclesiastical preferments. He died Sept. 13, 1629, at Charlton in Kent, where his tomb is thus inscribed: “D. Katherinæ Puckering M. S. Katherinæ Newton, D. Johannis Puckering, Angliæ procancellarii, sive magni sigilli custodis, natarum minimæ, sed matronali virtutum choro, modestiâ, probitate, pudicitiâ, nulli fœminarum secundæ, D. Adamus Neutonus illustrissimo Walliæ principi Henrico primitus studiis, dein ab epistolis secretis, eoque præmatura morte prærepto, excellentissimo principi Carolo fratri ab ærario, vir integerrimus lectissimæ fœminæ, et maritus amantissimus carissimæ conjugii monumentum hoc P. C. ipse in eodem sarcophoro, sicut animo destinavit, brevi condiendus. Dominus Adamus Newtonus prenominatus, aliquot jam annis post confecionem epitaphii supra scripti (quod ipse, superstes et plenæ salutis compos, dilectissimæ conjugii defunctæ composuerat) a Jacobo rege in baronettum creatus, posteaque a rege Carolo in secretarium concilii, in Walliæ limitibus constabiliti cooptatus, sub isto eodem monumento, sicut ipse annuerat, executorum piâ curâ conditus jacet, beatam resurrectionem per Christum Redemptorem suum lætè expectans. Corpus ejus fato concessit 13 die mensis Januarii, anno Domini 1629 (animâ diu antea in cœlis versante) liberis, quinque, uno nempe virilis, cæteris fœminei sexus, post se relictis.” To the family coat armour were added two ostrich feathers, in saltire, an augmentation as servant to the Prince of Wales.

² Doubtless on taking leave; see p. 34. He attended the King to Oxford. See vol. I. p. 548.

³ I do not recollect meeting with this Gentleman’s name in Leicestershire. ⁴ Howes’ Chronicle.

prosper. Keys in obstinacie cohered much with Graunt. They all craved testimonie that they died Romaine Catholiques. Their quarters were placed over London Gates, and their heads upon the Bridge¹."

February 2, Sir William Tate², of Northamptonshire, and Sir Robert Pursell³, of Shropshire, were knighted at Whitehall.

On the 16th, Sir Timothy Hutton⁴, of Yorkshire, was knighted at Whitehall; as were about the same time Sir John Throckmorton, of Lincolnshire; and Sir John Digby⁵, of Coleshill, Warwickshire.

"The 4th of March was famous in nothing more than bear and bull-baiting at Court, and the death of Sir Edward Fitton⁶."

¹ Howes' Chronicle.

² Sir William Tate had been Sheriff of Northamptonshire in 1603. He married Elizabeth, daughter and co-heir of Edward last Lord Zouch. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. IX. p. 465.

³ Sir Robert Pursell, or Purslow, of Sidbury, was Sheriff of Shropshire in 1608.

⁴ Sir Timothy Hutton was the eldest son of Archbishop Hutton that reached man's estate. He resided at Marsk in Yorkshire, and was Sheriff of that County in 1607. He was also Alderman of Richmond, Yorkshire. He died in 1629, and has, in St. Mary's Church, Richmond, a remarkable monument, representing effigies of himself, wife, and twelve children. It is engraved, and the inscriptions are given, in the Gentleman's Magazine for June 1824. Sir Timothy's brother, Sir Thomas, knighted when the King was at Bree Castle, August 6, 1617, will be noticed under that date.

⁵ Third son of Sir George Digby (who had been knighted by the Earl of Leicester for his bravery at the memorable battle of Zutphen) by Abigail, daughter of Sir Arthur Haveningham, Knight Banneret. Sir John Digby was knighted at Theobalds in 1605; created Baron Digby of Sherborne, Dorset, in 1618; and Earl of Bristol in 1622. He was a Nobleman of fine talents, and was five times employed on Embassies to foreign Princes. In 1624 he had a difference with the Duke of Buckingham, when they mutually impeached each other; from thence he lived retired till the breaking out of the Civil War, in which he at first sided with the Parliament, but afterwards went over to the King, and at last retired into France, where he died in 1652, after having lost his estate. Walpole mentions him in his "Catalogue of Noble Authors;" observing, that "he was not supple enough for a Court, but by far too haughty for popularity. He would have been a suitable Minister for Austrian phlegm, or a proper patriot in a Diet which would have been content to proceed by remonstrance and memorial. His son George, the second Earl of Bristol, is also noticed by Walpole as an Author, and as a singular person whose life was one contradiction. "He wrote against Popery, and embraced it. He was a zealous opposer of the Court and a sacrifice for it, was conscientiously converted in the midst of his prosecution of Lord Strafford, and was most unconscientiously a prosecutor of Lord Clarendon. With great parts, he always hurt himself and his friends. With romantic bravery, he was always an unsuccessfull Commander. He spoke for the Test Act though a Roman Catholic; and addicted himself to Astrology on the birth-day of true Philosophy."

⁶ Sir Edward Hoby to Sir Thomas Edmondes. Birch's MSS. 4176.

On the 11th of March, Sir Henry Neville thus writes to Mr. Winwood:

“ We are in some expectation of a creation¹ of four Barons; *viz.* the Lord Chief Justice [Gaudy]; Mr. Attorney [Coke], who is designed Chief Justice of the Common Pleas in Gaudy’s room; Sir John Fortescue; and Sir Thomas Knivet, whose Wife hath the charge of Lady Mary, and who was himself a fortunate instrument to discover the Powder².—Our Grandees at Court continue the same; only my Lord of Dunbar is gone into Scotland, and hath already put away some of his officers, and intends to put away the rest, as it is thought with a purpose to retire wholly, *an hoc saties ceperint cum omnia exceperint, an illos cum omnia tribuerint*³.”

On the 18th, Sir Henry Moody⁴, of Wiltshire, was knighted at Whitehall.

On the 20th, Mr. Anthony Wingfield thus addresses the Earl of Shrewsbury:

“ I must humbly intreate yower Ho. to receave in good parte this homely English epigram hereunder written of the contented Peere⁵; not so wittily framed as Sir Peter Evers could have done, and manie others more happely endewed that waie then myself, but proceeding from an earnest zeale to decypher playnlie the true meaning and sence of his worshipfull contentment.”

Some part of the month of March was passed by the King at Woking in Surrey, where at that time was an ancient mansion belonging to the Crown⁶,

¹ Neither of these Creations at that time took place. Sir Edward Coke succeeded Gaudy as Chief Justice of the Common Pleas June 30; Sir Thomas Knivet, of whom see vol. I. p. 582, was made a Baron July 4, 1607; and Sir John Fortescue, who was Chancellor of the Exchequer, died Dec. 23, 1607.

² See vol. I. p. 582.

³ Winwood’s Memorials, vol. II. p. 198.

⁴ Sir Henry Moody, of Garesdon, was Sheriff of Wiltshire in 1618.

⁵ “ This contented Peer was probably the Earl of Salisbury, whose extensive purchases and inclosures in Hertfordshire caused some murmurs about this time.”

“ The Peere content, but not contented Peere,
Sayth still content, but never is content;
For, search the wyde world over farr and neare,
None lyke this Peere to filthy lucre bent.
Content, he sayth, but yow must thus expound him,
Content to buy his neybor’s lands that bound him.” Lodge, III. 304.

⁶ Woking, or Oking, was formerly a Royal Palace. “ When Henry VIII. became possessed of it by the death of his grandmother, he sometimes used it as a Summer retreat. ‘ In the middle of September 1515, he came to his maner of Okyng, and thether came to him the Archebishop of Yorke, whom he hartily welcommed and shewed him great pleasures:’ and it was during their retirement at this place, that ‘ a letter was brought to the Archebishop from Rome, certifying him howe he was elected to be a Cardinall.’ Edward VI. was once at least here: whether Mary was ever here we know not. Nor is it certain that Elizabeth made use of it: and yet her frequent visits to Sir John Wolley, her

which James frequently visited for the enjoyment of Field Sports in that neighbourhood; and where he occasionally indulged in Bacchanalian Revels¹.

A remarkable event, which occurred during the Visit in 1605-6, is thus recorded by Howes:

"Satterday, the 22d of March, about halfe an howre before seven a clocke in the morning, was suddenly spread throughout the Court and the Cittie of London, for certaine newes that the King was slaine at Oking, which is about twenty miles Westward from London, and the same newes helde firme untill past nine a clock, in which space the Court being sore frighted², as well the great Lords as Latin Secretary, who lived at Pirford in this neighbourhood, make it very probable that she was sometimes here." Manning's and Bray's Surrey, vol. I. p. 122.—"Hoe, or rather Hough Bridge-place, is situated on a rivulet, which, passing the town on the North runs into the Wey a little below. The mansion originally erected on this spot (which was taken down by John Walter, Esq.) consisted of two large courts, and is supposed to have been the work of Sir Edward Zouch, who had a grant of the manor in 18 James I. the capital mansion, already spoken of, having probably gone to decay. At this place Sir Edward is said to have frequently entertained that Prince on his excursions hither from the Palace at Oatlands, and a tradition prevails in that neighbourhood, that the turret, still remaining on the hill a little to the Northward of the house, was erected for the sole purpose of pointing out the way across the heaths, by means of a light placed on the top of it, to messengers and others who had occasion to repair hither to the King : y night." Ibid. p. 129.

¹ The account which Sir Anthony Weldon gives in his Court of King James, exhibits a curious scene of James's amusements. "After the King supped, he would come forth to see pastimes and fooleries; in which Sir Edward Zouch, Sir George Goring, and Sir John Finit, were the cheife and Master Fools, (and surely the fooling got them more than any other's wisdom) sometimes presenting David Droman and Archer Armstrong, the King's foole, on the back of other fools, to tilt one another, till they fell together by the eares: sometimes they performed antick-dances. But Sir John Millicent, (who was never known before) was commended for notable fooling; and was indeed the best *extempory foole* of them all."

² Wilson's account of the confusion and dismay which took place on the occasion is given in strong language: "A rumour was spread (by what strange means unknown) that the King was stabbed at Okingham, twenty miles from London, where he was hunting, with a poysoned knife. The Court at Whitehall, the Parliament, and City took the alarm; mustering up their old fears, every man standing at gaze, as if some new prodigy had seized them; such a terror had this late monstrous intended mischief imprinted in the spirits of the people, that they took fire from every little train of rumour, and were ready to grapple with their own destruction before it came. In the midst of this agony, there came assurance of the King's safety, which he was enforced to divulge by Proclamation, to re-establish the people. The Spanish Ambassador gave Sir Lewis Lewknor, Master of Ceremonies, a chain of gold of good value, for bringing him the news of the King's safety, which presently resounded in the Court, and it was thought he was so bountiful, either out of terror, being afraid of the people in this confusion, because it was rumoured, that the King of Spain was a fomentor of

others, speedily shutt the Court-gates with double guard in all places, and thereupon London did the like; the Lord Mayor gave forthwith precepts unto the wardes to leavie trained souldiers, and they to repaire unto their knowne London Captaines. Syr W. Wade, Leiutenant of the Tower, somoned his hamlets, drew his bridge, shut close his prisoners, charged divers peeces of great ordnaunce, tooke all the keyes from all inferior officers, being well prepared in all poynts to stand uppon his guard, by reason for two howers space and more the newes grewe more and more, that not onely the King was slaine, but with him, in his defence, the Earle of Mountgomery, Syr John Ramsay, and Syr James Hay, which treason, some sayd, was performed by English Jesuits, some by Scotts in woman's apparell, and others sayd by Spanyards and Frenchmen. Most reports agreed that the King was stabd with an envenomed knife, which bitter newes was more greevius unto all sorts of people then can well be here expressed, great weeping and lamentation both in old and younge, rich and poore, mayds and wives¹. The Counsell, uppon extraordinary expedition having true knowledge of his Majestie's saffetie, to quiet the people's distracted minds, made present Proclamation as followeth:

"Where a seditious rumor hath beene raised this morning, that some ill accident should be befallen our person, and thereupon the people thereabouts have beene raysed in armes by direction from Constable to Constable, but with uncertaine knowledge from whom the first ground should bee raysed, or by what warrant, which we hold to be done purposely by some tumultuous spirrits, to draw the Plot; or, out of a desire to vindicate his Master's honour, and take the odium from him; for he had been solicited by divers Jesuits, together with these Conspirators, to invade England. The principal of which Jesuits, called Henry Garnet (Provincial of the Order in England) was arraigned at Guildhall the twentieth of March 1605-6, and executed at the West-end of St. Paul's soon after."

¹ The following Epigram, addressed to the King by Ben Jonson, was occasioned by this rumour; "from which it appears that Jonson had not exaggerated the common feeling, which was the more alive, as the story came so quickly upon the dismay of the Gunpowder Plot." G.

That we thy loss might know, and thou our love,
Great Heaven did well to give ill fame free wing;
Which though it did but panic terror prove,
And far beneath least pause of such a King;
Yet give thy jealous subjects leave to doubt,
Who this thy scape from rumour gratulate,
No less than if from peril; and devout,
Do beg thy care unto thy after state.
For we, that have our eyes still in our ears,
Look not upon our dangers, but our fears.

our subjects together in armes, to what intent we know not, untill further examination may make it manifest; We doe hereby make it knowne unto all our loving subjects, that, God be thanked, wee remaine in good and perfect health. And doe require them to conteyne themselves from assemblies, or gathering together in armes or in conventicles: assuring themselves, that after due examination of this seditious rumor, we will make knowne to them the authors and intent thereof. And whosoever shall not obey this our commandement, we shall hold them for seditious, and breakers of our peace. And do commaunde all our Lieutenants, Deputie Lieutenants, Justices of Peace, Maiors, Sheriffes, and all other our Officers, Ministers, and loving subjects, to doe their duties in containing our people within their due obedience, and to advertise us, or our Privie Counsell, of all disturbers thereof.

“ Given at our Pallace of Westminster, the two and twentieth day of March in 1605, and in the third yeere of our Reigne of Great Britaine.

“ This was proclaymed at the Court-gate a little past nine of the clocke, and in Cheapside at eleven of the clock, by which time London's universall feare and greefe was halfe abated.

“ The aforesaid terrible rumor came to the Commons House of Parliament somewhat beefore eight of the clocke and continued untill towards tenne, in which space, the whole Assembly being mightily perplexed, sent every halfe quarter of an houre unto the Earle of Salisbury and others of the Counsel to be truely ascertayned, and for almost two houres space they received newes that the King was stabd, smothered in his bed, and shot with a pistoll as he was riding.

“ At the heavie hearing whereof the whole House beganne seriously to debate what was then best for them to do; some saide let us rise and go hence for our better safety, least we bee sodainely surprised, &c. Some saide one thing and some another, but in briefe it was agreed that they shoulde sitte still in their accustomed peaceable manner, untill the truth were knowne, least their sudden rising should add more terror both to Courte, Citty, and Country, continually sending Gentlemenne of the House, for almost two houres space, to learne newes, by which time a speciall swifte messenger sent by the Lords, brought certaine knowledge of the King's perfect health and safety, who untill then had not heard of any rumor of treason, and that his Majesty would come to White Hall about two or three a clock, and that afternoone the Prince, the Counsell, with other Lords

and Burgesses, met the Kinge about Knightsbridge, and thousands of people flocking that way, ravished with joy to beehoulde the Kinge.

“Also that afternoone, the Lord Maior and Aldermenne went to Court, where the Recorder, in all humble and hearty manner, signified unto his Highnesse the deepe sorrow that his subjects sustained by the late flying news, and the unconceaveable joy they now possest uppon the assurance of his Majestie’s safety, &c. unto whom the Kinge cheerefully returned all princely thankes and knowledgment of their singuler love and loyalty, assuring them his Royall merrit shoulde ever equall their zeale and duty.

“Whilest the terror of this terrible newes lasted, wherewith all sorts of people were sore frightened, the Courte-gates being aforesayde strongly kept and strongly guarded, the Queen, the Prince, and the Lords of the Counsell, and sundry other Lordes and Gentlemenne being then assembled at White Hall, and beeing all exceedingly amazed and full of sorrow, both in their harts and eyes, so soone as certaine news came from the King unto them, that hee was well and onward of his way towards London, they receaving new spirits, thought fit that the Ambassadors of forraine Princes, resident in this Realme, should be made speedy partakers of this most happy newes of his Majestie’s safety. Thereuppon they sent Sir Lewis Lewkenor, Master of the Ceremonies, willing him instantly to advertise them al of this comfortable tidings, and therewithall commanded him to take order with the common Magistrates to see their houses and persons secured, for there was good cause; which the Knight performed very speedily and discretely, and as he reported this newes unto Don Pedro de Cunigo, of the familie of the Dukes of Beiar, the Ambassador of Spayne, hee was almost ravished with suddaine joy, and gave unto Sir Lewis Lewkenor a very great chayne of gold of a large value¹.”

The Earl of Kent, writing to the Earl of Shrewsbury, from Wrest, March 25, says,

“I received yesterday your honourable and frendly lines by John Sibley, whereby it pleased your Lordship to advertize me of the untruthe of those reportes and bruits spread abroad of so horrible a treason against his Majestie’s precious life. Theis false bruits, as your Lo. doth well note, came very speedily, not onely to your Honors of the Privie Councill at the Corte, and so to London, but also into theis parts, and, not onlike, into a great parte of the Kingdome. All the other daye, beinge Sondaye, we here knew nothinge certainly to the contrary

¹ Howes’ Chronicle.

but that the worst might be feared by that which wee heard ; but the greater feare and astonishment this sudden fearefull rumor hath evry where generally occasioned, the more singuler comfort and joye will nowe redound to evrie true-harted subject by the contrary true report of his Majestie's safetie, for which they shall have so just cause to sound forth God's praise, together with instant prayer for his Highnes' longe, happie, and prosperous raigne over us. Shortly after the receipt of your Lo.' letters I received also his Majestie's Proclamation, publishing the same joyfull newes ; which I thought fitt to send forthwith to Bedford to be there presently proclaymed, if before it were not. Thus, my good Lo. (havige nothings but most hartie thanks to returne, as first to God, so next to your Lordship, whose honorable care and kindnes hath bene in such speedie and ample manner to make me partaker of this so happie and wellcome newes,) with my kindest and most frendly salutacions to your Lordship and my honorable good La. wishinge allwayes to both your Honors all honors and happines, to your greatest joye and comfort, I take my leave, comittinge your Honors to God Almighty's protection, resting ever, your Lordship's most assured true frend and lovinge brother,

H. KENT¹."

The best comment on this false alarm, will be found in the following Letter from Mr. Chamberlain to Mr. Winwood, written a fortnight afterwards :

"In my last I told you the beginning but not the full end of that false alarm of the King's loss, for it spread far and near, and could not be countermanded in the country in three or four days, insomuch that there was feign to be a Proclamation to restraîne assemblies and seditious rumours. At his coming to town the same day, the whole Court went to meet him : the Parliament sent Sir Maurice Berkeley, with four Knights more, to wellcome him. The Speaker with his Mace went beyond the Park-Corner to bring him in; and the Lord Mayor and his Brethren went to him *after supper* to congratulate his safety². To all which he made severall harangues, as likewise to the people's acclamations the next day when he went to the Sermon, telling them that ' he took these demonstrations more kindly than if they had won a battle for him. 'That a better King they might have, but a more loving and careful one for their good, they could not ; that these signes were the more wellcome to him, for that Foreign Ambassadors might see the vanity of those reports that were spread abroad in other countries, of mislike and distaste between him and his people.' But amongst all these

¹ Lodge, vol. III. p. 305.

² The Ringers at St. Margaret's, Westminster, were paid 3s. "when the King came from Woking."

mutuall rejoycings Sir Lewis Lewknor had the more feeling comfort, being presented by the Spanish Ambassador with a chaine of six-score pound for bringing the good news, and for the care he seemed to have of him!

“*The King's day*¹ passed with the ordinary solemnities. The Bishop of Gloucester² preached at Paul's Cross, and the Bishop of Rochester³ to the Parliament at Westminster. The Tilting was performed very barely, and their equipage poor and penurious, saving the Earls of Pembroke and Montgomery, that was both rich and dainty. There was more expected for devise and cost (at least) at the hands of the Duke of Lenox, and the young Earle of Arundell for the maiden-head of their running. It were hard to tell you who ran best, where scant so many did well; but the Earle of Montgomery, for a young beginner, did extraordinary.

“Garnet the Jesuit was arraigned at Guildhall the 28th of the last month, before the Lord Mayor, the Lord Admirall, Lord Chamberlaine, Worcester, Salisbury, Northampton, Cheif Justice, and other Commissioners. *The King was present, but unseen*, as likewise diverse Ladys. It lasted long, from eight in the morning till seven at night⁴.”

Free Gifts in the third year of the King's Reign 1605-6.

	£.	David Jenkins - - -	£.100
To George Zadwasky ⁵ -	100	George Hay, out of the profits	
David Fenwick - - -	200	of transporting iron ordnance	1662
David Moises and William Rider, out of Green-wax -	2000	William Shaa, out of fines in the King's Bench - -	800
Sir James Creighton and Sir George Howme ⁶ , junior, out of Green-wax - - -	2000	Robert Browme, out of goods confiscated - - -	2000
John Gib, out of Recusants' lands and goods - - -	3000	Mrs. Jane Dromond ⁷ - - -	2200
		Adam Newton ⁸ , the Prince's Tutor	2000
		Doctor Martin ⁹ - - -	100

¹ The 24th of March, the day of the King's accession.

² Dr. Thomas Ravis.

³ Dr. William Barlow.

⁴ For the particulars of the Trial, see Winwood's Memorials, vol. II. p. 205.

⁵ Who had been “sent with horses out of Poland.”

⁶ Sir George Howme, of Wedderburn, ancestor to the Earl of Marchmont. He died in Nov. 1616.

⁷ Afterwards Lady Roxborough, of whose marriage see under the year 1613-14.

⁸ Of whom see before, in vol. I. pp. 146, 499, 304; and in this Volume, p. 35.

⁹ Henry Martin, LL. D. an eminent Civilian; of whom see vol. I. p. 94.

	£.		£.
Arthur Mills ¹ - - -	100	Monsieur Ottoman - - -	66
Sir John Ramsay ² - - -	400	Sir James Murray ⁵ - - -	100
Samuel Rickpatrick - - -	400	Marian Hipburne - - -	100
John Nesmith - - -	66	Sir Richard Weston ⁶ - - -	200
Gilbert Primrose ³ - - -	66	Michael Borstade - - -	337
Sir Melker Levens - - -	150	Lord Howme ⁷ , for his interest	
The Duke of Holst ⁴ - - -	1000	in the manor of Hartington,	
Alice Dennice - - -	100	Derby, formerly granted to him	6000
Sir William Steward - - -	600		
Dorothy Steward - - -	200	The total sum	<u>£.126,047</u>

On the 27th of March, an Indenture was entered into, between the King of one party, and twenty-four of his Counsellors on the other, for "declining in two schedules such diadems, coronets, circlets, collers, borders, jewels, and ornaments as his Majestie thought fit to be united and annexed to the Crowne, to be perfected by provision and authority of Parliament." This indenture is printed in Rymer⁸;

¹ It does not appear what office Mr. Arthur Mills held; in 1599 we find him staying at Dover, with my Lord Cobham's coach, to bring to London Lewis Vereken, the First Secretary in the Low Countries (Sidney Papers, vol. II. p. 167); in 1600 he, with 100 Gentlemen of Kent, performed the same service to M. Le Chatt, Governor of Dieppe (ibid. pp. 180, 181). In 1607-8 his "sonne was hanged for desperately killing a man." (Lodge, vol. III. p. 342.)

² Afterwards Lord Haddington, of whom see before, in vol. I. pp. 426, 499; and hereafter, on his marriage, in 1607-8.

³ Gilbert Primrose had been appointed Serjeant Surgeon to the King by Writ of Privy Seal in May 1603, see vol. I. p. 151. He had the annual fee of £.26. 3s. 4d.

⁴ The Queen's Brother; see vol. I. pp. 466, 499.

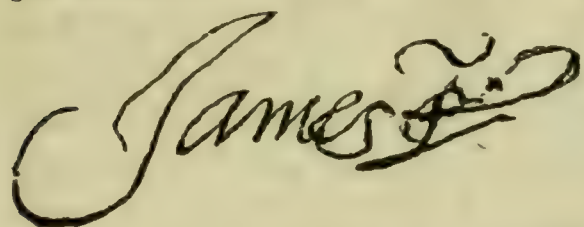
⁵ Sir James Murray was sixth son of Sir Charles Murray, of Cockpool. He had been knighted in August 1603, see vol. I. p. 246. Being the eldest surviving son, he was served heir to his father Nov. 16, 1605. In 1610 he was one of the Gentlemen of the Privy-chamber in Ordinary to Prince Henry. Dying in 1620 without male issue, he was succeeded by his next brother, the seventh son, who was created a Baronet by Charles the First, but he dying in 1636, without issue, the family estates became the property of the eighth son, Sir John Murray, afterwards Earl of Annandale.

⁶ Of whom see hereafter, under the Free Gifts of 1606-7.

⁷ Afterwards Earl of Dunbar; of whom see vol. I. p. 426. "This Gentleman, who was a person of great prudence, and highly trusted by James at his Accession, is said to have made a private agreement with Cecil for the division of the King's favour, relinquishing to that Minister all concern in those high matters which suited his busy and ambitious turn, and reserving to himself the right of holding any courtly employments, or pecuniary advantages, which his master might think fit to bestow on him." L.

⁸ Vol. XVI. p. 641.

and is followed by only one schedule, which is here subjoined, as forming a proper sequel to the several New Year's Gifts, &c. in "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses."



The Imperiall Diadem and Crowne, and other Roiall and Princely ornaments and Jewells to be indyvidually and inseparably for ever hereafter annexed to the Kingdome of this Realme.

Imprimis, the Imperiall Crowne of this Realme, of gould, the border garnished with seaven ballaces, eight saphiers, five pointed diamonds, twenty rubies (two of them being crased¹), nineteen pearles; and one of the crosses of the same Crown garnished with a great sapphire, an emoralde crased, four ballaces and nyne pearles not all of one sort.

Item, upon the left side of the same cross a flower-de-luce set with the image of a Kinge with a great ballace whole and a less ballace, a pointed diamonde, three pearles, a collet² with a saphier, fowre course ballaces, a fayre litle emoralde, a lozenged diamonde like a harte [heart], a ruby and nine pearles.

Item, next that another flower-de-luce set with a St. George, two ballaces, a pointed diamond, three pearls, a collet with a saphier and nine-and-twenty pearls.

Item, next that another crosse with a large round saphier, fower ballaces, nyne pearls, a collet with a saphier.

Item, next that another flower-de-luce set with an image of our Lady and her Child, two ballaces, a pointed diamond, three pearls and a saphier, and fouer-and-twenty pearls, whereof one pearl seeming to be two pearls.

Item, next that another crosse with two saphiers, fowre ballaces, and nyne pearls.

Item, next that another flower-de-luce set with an image of a King, two ballaces, a

saphier, a pointed diamond, three pearles and with twenty pearles.

Item, next that another cross set with a course saphier, foure ballaces, nyne pearles, and a saphier loope.

Item, next that another flowre-de-luce set with an image of a King with two ballaces, a small pointed diamond, three pearles, and a saphier with two-and-twenty pearls.

Item, on the diadome above, twelve pointed diamonds, some better then the other, three triangled diamonds, three table diamonds, and fowre-and-twenty pearles, two in a troche; with a cappe of purple velvet lyned with black satton, poiz together 98 ounces.

Item, a Crown Imperiall of gould, set about the nether border with nyne pointed diamonds, and betwene every diamond a knot of pearl, set by five pearles in a knot; in the upper border eight rock-rubies and twenty round pearles; the foure arches being set each of them with a table diamond, a table ruby, an emerald; and uppon two of the arches eighteen pearls, and uppon the other two arches seventeen pearles; and betweene every arch a great ballace sett in a collett of gould, and uppon the toppe a very great ballace pierced, and a little crossé of goulde upon the toppe, enamelled blewe.

Item, a Coronett gould, set about the nether border with foure blewe sapphires,

¹ Crased, i. e. broken, or injured. Nares.

² The collet was the setting surrounding the stone.

one emerald, fyve roses of diamondes, and foureteene round pearles; and about the upper border set with three blew saphirs, three ballaces, and sixe quarters of pearles, every quarter having in the midst a small pointed diamonde.

Item, a Circlet of gould, set with a great ballace rubie, eight table diamonds, nyne emeraldes, thirty-six rocke-rubyes, and fifty-six rounde pearles.

Item, one Circlet new made for the Queen, containing in the midst eight fair diamonds of divers fashions, eight fair rubies, eight emeraldes, and eight saphiers; garnished with two-and-thirty small diamonds, two-and-thirty small rubyes, and threescore and fowre pearles fixed; and on each border two-and-thirty small diamondes, and two-and-thirty small rubies; now remayning with the Queene.

Item, a Coller of gould, containing thirteene great ballaces, and thirteene peeces of gould with thirteen cinques¹ of pearle between them.

Item, a Coller of gould, containing fowreteene great table diamondes and two other much bigger, being in number sixteen, and fowreteene quarters of greates pearles.

Item, a Coller of gould, containing eight fayre pointed diamondes and one table diamonde with letters of P. and M.² having to each of them a pearle pendaunt.

Item, a Coller of gould, with eight great rock-rubyes, and one great pointed diamond in the midst, and twenty great pearles set in twoes with one long pearle pendaunt.

Item, one Coller of gould, containing fowreteene knots with gould, set with seaven fayre diamonds and fowreteene litle rubyes, with thirteen pearles pendaunt, whereof one in the midst is great.

Item, one Coller of two joyntes, set with six table diamondes, seaven rocke-rubyes, seven emeraldes, and eighteen knots of pearle, two pearles in a knot.

Item, one Coller of gould, set with tenne

saphires in collets of gould and tenne knots of round pearle, every knot containing fowreteen pearles.

Item, one Coller of gould, set with fowreteen emeralds in collets of gould, and fourteen knots of round pearles, in every knot nyne pearles.

Item, one Coller of gould, set with nine very great ballaces in collets of gould, and ten knots of pearls, every knot containing sixteen round pearls.

Item, one Coller of gould dyvided into two braunches, containing in the same ten table diamonds, one bigger then the rest, and ten rubyes, eight being rock-rubyes and two table-rubyes, and six-and-thirty round pearles in twoes.

Item, one rich Coller of gould, containing ten fayre table-diamondes, one pointed diamonde in the midst, twelve peeces of gouldsmithes' works, wrought like fryers' knots, and set with fowrescore-and-twelve pearls with a flower of gould, three in a fayre table diamond, and three pearles pendant, two fayre and the other meane.

Item, a short Coller of gould, having three great diamonds, three fayre rubyes, and three great emeraldes, with twenty pearles set in twoes, of gouldsmithes' worke.

Item, a Flower, with a very great table-diamonde set in gould; called **THE MIRROR**.

Item, a fayre Flower, with three great ballaces in the midst, a great pointed diamonde, and three great pearles fixed, with a faire great pearl pendant, called **THE BRETHREN**.

Item, the Lord Cobham's pearle.

Item, a jewell of gould, being the great diamond of Portogale.

Item, a square table diamond, wanting a corner, taken in the Carrick.

Item, a long diamonde, found at Hampton Court, in the chardge of Sir Thomas Knyvet.

Item, a fayr great blew saphire without foyle, and a long pearl pendant.

Item, a great and riche jewell of gould,

¹ Clusters of five.

² The initials of Philip and Mary.

called the MIRROR OF GREAT BRITTAINE, containing one very faire table-diamond, one very faire table-rubie, two other large diamonds cut lozengwise, the one of them called the stone of the letter H OF SCOTLAND, garnished with small diamonds, two round pearles fixed, and one fayre diamonde cut in fawcetts, bought of Samney.

Item, one fayre jewell, like a feather of gould, contayning a fayre table-diamond in the middest, and fyve-and-twenty diamondes of divers forms made of sondrous other jewells.

Item, one jewell of gould of the letter J, haveing one fayre long diamond in the middest, two great ballaces rubies, and one small triangle diamond on the toppe."

March 29, being Good Friday, we find the King at Greenwich, where Dr. Lancelot Andrews¹, then Bishop of Chichester, preached² before his Majesty.

On Easter-day, the 6th of April, the King had returned to Whitehall, where Bishop Andrews³ again preached before him.

April 9, the Company of Apothecaries was incorporated by King James with that of the Grocers', which not answering their expectation, they were separated, and the Apothecaries, by letters patent of the said King, 6 December 1617, were incorporated by the appellation of the Master, Wardens, and Society of the Art and Mystery of Apothecaries of the City of London, at which time the masters or shop-keepers of the trade, within this City and suburbs, only amounted to one hundred and four.

"April 24, Don John de Mendosa, Marquesse of Saint Jermayn, Captayne Generall of Portugall, accompanied with Don John Blasco de Aragon, of the Counsell of Millayne, with others, arrived at London, from the King of Spayne, to congratulate the King of England's happy deliverance from the late pretended treason by gunpowder. He brought a present from the Queene of Spaine unto the

¹ Of whom see vol. I. p. 589. The anecdote respecting his preaching is told by Aubrey, in his *Lives of Eminent Men*, preserved in the Ashmolean Museum, and printed with "Letters of Eminent Persons," in two volumes 8vo, 1813, from originals in the Bodleian and Ashmolean Museums. It is impossible to say to what Sermon of the Bishop's it applies, but probably it does to an early one, for no "Scotish Lord" would find fault with him after he was far advanced in his Majesty's favour. It is as follows: "He had not that smooth way of oratory as now. It was a shrewd and severe animadversion of a Scotish Lord, who, when King James asked him how he liked Bishop Andrews's Sermon, sayd, that he was learned, but he did play with his text as a jackanapes does, who takes up a thing and tosses and playes with it, and then he takes up another and playes a little with it. Here's a pretty thing and there's a pretty thing!"

² This Sermon is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the third on the Passion; see vol. I. p. 590.

³ The Sermon is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons" the first on the Resurrection. The text is from Romans, c. vi. v. 9, 10, 11.

Queene of England, *viz.* a robe of murry satten imbroydered all over with amber leather, and upon the leather, in every seame and skyrt twice imbroydered about with gold, the fore part whereof was adorned with eight-and forty tagges, three inches long, of beaten gold, hollow within and filled with ambergreece; two large chaynes of ambergreece; two karkanets of ambergreece; a velvet cappe with gold buttons curiously enamelled like the tagges, a gyrdell suteable to the buttons;—every of these severally inclosed in an ovall box of gold. These were presented alltogether in a large vessell of gold, in forme of a bason. Hee came to London uppon Thursday; had audience uppon Saturday; the next day the Kinge feasted them all very Royally; upon Munday hee delivered his presents, and returned uppon Wednesday¹.”

May 14, the King knighted Sir John Wynn², of Carnarvonshire, at Whitehall; and in the same week Sir Thomas Brook³, of Northamptonshire, at Theobalds; Sir Henry Peyton⁴, of Suffolk, at Royston; and Sir William Lisle, of the Isle of Wight, at Whitehall.

The Ringers of St. Margaret's, Westminster, were paid 2*s.* 6*d.* for ringing, on the 16th, when the King and Queen went to Greenwich,

“Tewsdays the 20th, at Windsor, were enstalled Knights of the Garter, Robert Earl of Salisbury, who set forward from his house in the Strand, being almost as honourably accompanied, and with as great trayne of Lordes, Knights, Gentlemen, and Officers of the Court, with others, besides his peculiar servants, very richly attired and bravely mounted, as was the King when he rid in state thorough London; and the Lord Thomas Howard Viscount Bindon, being also very honorably accompanied and attended⁵.”

On the 23d, Sir George Marbury⁶, of Lincolnshire, and Sir Roger Mostyn⁷, of Flint, were knighted at Greenwich.

¹ Howes.

² Sir John Wynne, of Gwydir in Carnarvonshire, descended from Owen Gwineth, Prince of North Wales, was created a Baronet, June 29, 1611. “He was a sober discreet man, addicted to reading, and an encourager of Learning; and collected from chronicles and records a History of his Family.” This was published by the Hon. Daines Barrington.

³ Sir Thomas Brook, of Great Ockley, was Sheriff of Northamptonshire in 1616.

⁴ Sir Henry Peyton was, in 1610, a Gentleman of the Privy Chamber to Prince Henry.

⁵ Howes.

⁶ One of this family, Sir Edward, has been noticed in vol. I. p. 217.

⁷ Second (but eldest surviving) son of Sir Thomas Mostyn, who in the beginning of King James's Reign, had been appointed one of his Majesty's Council established for the Principality of Wales and the Marches. Mr. Pennant, in his “History of Whiteford and Holywell,” gives some interesting

May 25, Sir Henry Middleton, of Cheshire, was knighted at Greenwich.

On the 27th, the Ringers at St. Margaret's, Westminster, were paid 2s. 6d. "when the King came to the Parliament House, being the last day of the Parliament¹."

In the Works of William Drummond of Hawthornden, is the following curious "Challenge of the Knights Errant," dated Greenwich, June 1, 1606:

"To the Right Honourable the Earl of ———.

"Knowing the delight your Lordship was wont to take in the sports of Court, whether as Beholder or Actor; I thought I should not importune your Honour in sending you the Challenge of the Errant Knights, proclaimed with sound of trumpet before the Palace-gate of Greenwich.

"To all honourable Men of Arms and Knights Adventurers of hereditary note and exemplary nobleness, that for most maintainable actions do weild their swords or lances in the quest of glory.

"Right, brave, and chevalrous; wheresoever through the world we Four Knights Errant, denominated of the *Fortunate Island*, servants of the Destinies, awaken your sleeping courages with *Mavortial* greetings: Know ye that our Sovereign Lady and Mistriss, Mother of the Fates and Empress of high achievements, revolving of late the Adamantine leafs of her eternal volumes, and finding in them that the triumphal times were now at hand, wherein the marvellous adventures of the *Lucent Pillar* should be revealed to the wonder of times and men, (as *Merlin*, Secretary to the most inward designs, did long since prophecy,) hath therefore (most deeply weighing with herself how necessary it is that sound opinions should prepare the way to so unheard of a marvel) been pleased to command us her voluntary, but ever most humble votaries, solemnly to publish and maintain, by all the allowed ways of knightly arguing, these four indisputable propositions following: 1. That in service of Ladies no Knight hath free-will. 2. That it is Beauty maintaineth the world in Valour. 3. That no fair Lady was ever false. 4. That none can be perfectly wise but Lovers. Against which, or any of which, if any of you shall dare to argue at point of launce and sword in honorable lists before rarest beauty and best judgments: then again know particulars of the Mostyns and their family residence; in which, amongst other fine portraits, are two full-lengths of this Sir Roger and his wife, Mary, daughter of the famous Sir John Wynne, of Gwydir. The portraits are well described by Mr. Pennant. Sir Roger died August 18, 1642, aged 78. Thomas, the eldest of eight sons, having died before him, his grandson Roger was created a Baronet in 1660; of whose family is another curious picture.

¹ Which was then prorogued to the 7th of November; see before, p. 34.

you, that we the said Four Champions shall, by the high sufferance of Heaven and virtue of our knightly valour, be ready, at the valley of Mirefleure, constantly to answer and make perfect our imposed undertakings against all such of you as shall within fourty days after the first publick intimation of our universal challenge, arrive to attend the glorious issue of the thrice famous adventure of the *Lucent Pillar*, in which prizes are reserved and ordained (by the happy fate of our Country and Crown) for three several succeeding days of trial at Tilt, Tourney, and at Barriers. The Maintainers of the four positions are,

The Earl of Lenox the first.

The Earl of Pembroke the third.

The Earl of Arundel the second.

The Earl of Montgomery the fourth.

“The King of Denmark is expected here daily, for whose entertainment this challenge appeareth to be given forth; who, if his courage answer his fame, will not be an idle on-looker to such pastimes, which I would wish your Lordship to see, at least *in speculo constellato*.”

On the 4th of June, Sir Henry Neville thus writes to Mr. Winwood¹:

“Upon Sunday last there were divers merchants and merchants’ wives at the Court, and made grievous complaint unto the King, the one of their servants, and the other of their husbands imprisoned and put to the gallies in Spaine, and of much injustice and oppression done there to our Nation, besides some particular contumely to the King personally; the like complaint was made before the Lords. I hear it hath moved much, and this I will assure you, that the Kingdom generally wishes this peace broken, but *Jacobus Pacificus* I believe will scarce incline to that side. We are in dayly expectation of the King of Denmark’s arrivall and the Queen’s delivery, charges that we have little need of. I suppose you hear that my Lord Ereskin and Sir John Ramsey are made Viscounts, and the latter hath a £.1000 land given to him to support the title; so the King’s land, enclosed to all other, is only open to them; yet there is an expectation of some promotions at the christening of the Queen’s Child. Other news the Court affords not, unless I should write you of the admirable pastime lately taken up of hunting or daring [doring] of dotterells² and other of that nature, which I think you can well be without.”

¹ Winwood’s Memorials, vol. II. p. 217.

² A dotterel, as we are informed by Archdeacon Nares, is “a bird said to be so foolishly fond of imitation as to suffer itself to be caught while intent upon mimicking the actions of the fowler. Drayton describes the action of the dotterel very minutely:

“The dotterel, which we think a very dainty dish,
Whose taking makes such sport, as no man more can wish,

On the 8th, being Whitsunday, the King was at Greenwich, when Bishop Andrews preached before him¹.

On the 19th of June, Sir Thomas Dale, of Surrey, was knighted at Richmond; and, about the same time, Sir John Burlacy at Greenwich.

The following Letter, dated "Greenwich June 28," is preserved by Drummond:

"It was not in my default, but of the matter itself, that I wrote unto your Lordship the event of the Challenge of the Errant Knights. [See p. 49.] A Gentleman told me he heard of it in the Court of France. It is answered, but in words, yet well to this purpose:

"To the Errant Knights of the *Fortunate Islands*, Servant-men to the Destinies, awaking our ever-awake courages with their *Mavortial* greetings:

"Most tonitruous astonishing Chevaliers; Re-know ye, that we of hereditary and fee-simple blood, and undegenerating valour to *Doucel del Phæbus*, *Amadis de Gaul*, *Palmerin de Oliva*, and *Ascuper le Hüge*, rather by the bonds of your challenge than by the show of your meanings, have echoed in the vault of our understanding the volley of your desires; and do allow you this for answer. We confidently entertain your challenge with your circumstance proposed already, seeing the event in the cause; for old defended virtue of women is expired; and men, overcome with women, are made less than themselves, and far inferior to the valour of uneffeminate Knights. We are sorry that any in the shape or apparel of valour, should either be so short of experience, or so unable to bring to their wills their knowledges, as to undertake the long forsaken cause of a sex, that have spent all their virtue, which is sullied by falsehood, to the abuse of their

For as you creep, or cower, or lie, or stoop, or go,
So, marking you with care, the apish bird doth do;
And acting every thing, doth never mark the net,
Till he be in the snare which men have for him set.

Polyolbion, Song 25, p. 1164.

Hence it was currently used for a silly-fellow, a dupe:

E. Our Dotterel then is caught. B. He is, and just
As dotterels use to be: the Lady first
Advanc'd toward him, stretch'd forth her wing, and he
Met her with all expressions.

Old Couple, Old Plays, X. p. 483.

Dotterel is there the name of one of the persons, and evidently given to mark his character. A *dor* is a *drone* or *beetle*. Dorrying the dotterel therefore means making a fool of a person, or outwitting him. Ben Jonson, in his *Bartholomew Fair*, calls the cheating of Cokes by this phrase, "Here he comes, whistle; be this sport called dorrying the dottrel." Further examples of the use of both these words singly may be found in Archdeacon Nares's Glossary. But, after all, it is not quite evident what the Court pastime was; its name might have travelled from the play-house.

¹ The Sermon is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons, the first "of the sending of the Holy Ghost," The text is from the Acts, c. II. v. 1, 2, 3, 4.

own defenders; at the first their minds drew wrath and judgment, and now their bodies draw passion into a blind adventure. Wherefore we deny your assertions, being assured of these truths which tread down your fancies; and these ours, in peace and pity, we offer to your second considerations; which, otherwise, if you believe not, will prove themselves masters of you and yours. 1. That a man at the years of discretion hath his love in his own hand. 2. That Beauty melteth Valour, and maketh the tongue far readier than the sword. 3. That fairest Ladies are falsest, having fairest occasions. 4. That to love and to be wise, were ever two men's parts. Against you, armed with the truth of these, we shall come with sharp arguments, not doubting to beat falsehood into her darkness, unable to endure the beams of the *Lucent Pillar*; the mystery whereof, &c. vaunt we honour. Expect us therefore, if your rash heat consume not before performance.

"The King, not without laughter, can see, read the Challenge, and put the Noblemen Defenders in expectation to be answered. But the Answerers have not appeared."

"The Lady Sophia, [fourth] daughter to our Sovereine Lord the Kinge, was borne at Greenewitch¹ uppon Sunday, June 22, at three a clocke in the morning; and dyed the next day, and uppon Thursday following, was very solemnly conveyed by barge covered with blacke velvet, accompanied with three other barges covered with black cloth, unto the Chappell Royall in Westminster, and was there entered by Dr. Barlow, L. Bishoppe of Rochester, where were present all the great Lords of the Counsell, with the Heralds and the cheefe Officers of the Court²."

¹ The Ringers at St. Margaret's, were paid 2s. 6d. for ringing "on the birth of the King's Child."

² Howes.—The Princess Sophia was buried near Queen Elizabeth, under a small neat monument, with the representation of an infant in its cradle. — Mr. Lodge has preserved the following Copy of a Privy Seal for the Tomb: "James, by the grace of God, King of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. to the Tre'r and Under-tr'er of our Exchequer for the tyme beeing, greeting. Whereas we have appointed a tombe to be made and erected within our Collegiate Church of St. Peter in Westminster for our late deare daughter the Lady Sophia, and have comitted the care and charge to see the same perfected to our right trusty and wel-beloved cousin and Councillor the Earle of Salisbury, whoe hath accordingly made a contract for that worke with Maximilian Poutrain, alias Coult, as by article of agreement betwene our said cousin and him in that behalf made may playnely appeare; we will and comand you, that out of our treasure in the receipt of our Exchequer ye cause be delivered and paid to the said Maximilian Poutrain, or other employed in that worke, such somes of money, and at such tyme or tymes, as our said cousin of Salisbury shall signify unto yow, so as the same exceede not in the whole the some of one hundred and forty pounds, for the full payment and discharge of the finishing and erecting the said tombe, according to the above menc'oned articles of agreement: and this our lettre shalbe your sufficient

July 13, Sir Thomas Wingfield was knighted at Greenwich; and on the 15th, Sir Henry Baker, of Kent, and Sir Arthur Harris¹, of Essex, at Oatlands.

The following Letter, from Greenwich, July 18, is preserved by Drummond:

“My Lord; After many reports and long expecting, the King of Denmark is come hither; the King of Great Britain (for so I must now, for distinction of two Kings in one Island, call him) the 16th day of this month, being at Otlands, was assured of his Brother's arrival, from which he came in all haste to Greenwich, from whence, the next day, with the Prince and such of his Nobility as were present, he passed in the Parliament-barge to Gravesend, where he was welcomed by the King of Denmark, and banquetted in his ships magnificently. The afternoon they came by the tide up the River, which had never more eyes upon it than then; and no wonder, for since the coming of the Emperor to Henry VIII. it had never borne two Kings². The King would always have his guest take the right hand, go every where before him; for that he said he must be absolutely obeyed in his own country. He is a man of a goodly person, of stature in no extremes; in face so like his sister, that he who hath seen the one may paint in his fancy the other. He was apparelled in his entry in black cut out on cloath of silver; about his hat he wore a band of gold, wrought in form of a crown, and set with precious stones. His first way was to see his sister (who since the death of her daughter Sophia did keep her chamber); the next by the gardens to his lodging, which was in the house of the Tilt-yard, where the King bore him company at supper.”

warrant and discharge in this behalfe. Geven under our Privy Seale at our Pallace of Westm'r the seaventeenth day of March, in the fourth yeare of our raigne of England, France, and Ireland, and of Scotland the fortith.”—The Sculptor had very lately assumed the latter name, and appears to have disused the former soon after; see *Anecdotes of Painting*, vol. I. p. 283; and vol. II. p. 39. He was distinguished by the title of the King's Master Sculptor, and had, as such, a salary of £.8 a year. L.

¹ Sir Arthur Harris was Sheriff of Essex in 1625.

² In a Letter from the Earl of Salisbury to Mr. Winwood, dated July 19, that Noblemen gives a long account of the discovery of a Conspiracy, which had been formed by some Jesuits, for assassinating the King; and the plan determined on was, “that a brave spirited man with a good horse and a pistoll, may do it when his Majesty is hunting at Royston, and ride a good way after in a day and a night.”—To unravel all the conspiracies with which this Reign abounded, would too much extend the present work, intended principally to record events of a more pleasant complexion.—Lord Salisbury adds, “For the occurrences, the King of Denmark arrived yesterday at Greenwich, being met first by the King and the Prince below Gravesend. It is thought his abode here will be about forty days.” *Winwood's Memorials*, vol. II. p. 247.

THE MOST ROYALL AND HONOURABLE ENTERTAINMENT
OF THE MOST FAMOUS AND RENOWMED¹
KING CHRISTIERN² THE FOURTH, KING OF DENMARKE;

Who, with a Fleete of gallant Ships, arrived on Thursday the 17th day of July 1606, in Tylbury-Hope, neere Gravesend. With a Relation of his Meeting by our Royall King, the Prince, and Nobles of our Realme; the pleasures sundry times shewed for his gracious welcome, and most famous and admirable Entertainment at THEOBALDS. With the Royall Passage, on Thursday the 31st of July, through the City of LONDON, and honorable Shewes there presented them, and maner of their passing³. By H. R[oberts].

¹ *Renowned* for *renowned* was customary with our elder writers, the word being derived from the French *renommé*. See Mr. Todd's edition of Spenser, vol. II. p. 178.

² After the King's ascent to the English Throne and deliverance from the Gunpowder Plot, he obtained a considerable subsidy from Parliament, and expended most of it in the sumptuous Entertainments given to his Danish Brother-in-law, which are here detailed with sufficient particularity by Maister Henry Robarts; who professes to have been an attendant on these courtly festivities, and appears from his dedication to the "Farewell," &c. to have held some employment relating to Irish affairs. More minutiae, however, concerning the failure of an allegorical representation which took place at Theobalds may be seen in Sir John Harington's Letter in p. 72.

³ "At London, printed for H. R. and are to be sold by William Barley, dwelling in Gratioustreete, neare Leaden Hall-gate, 1606."

The King of Denmark's Visit was commemorated in various contemporary publications; and particularly in the following articles, which appear in the Entries at Stationers' Hall.

1. July 25. "Honor Triumphant; or the Peares' Challenge by Armes to be defended against all Comers. Also the Monarchies meeting on the King of Denmarke's Welcome into England."

2. July 29. "Great Brytaine's kind Welcome to her dear Brethren the Danes."

3. "Cæsaris superscriptio; sive conciuncula coram duobus potentissimis regibus Jacobo Britanniae et Christiano Daniæ; à Doctore Thomâ Playfero."

4. July 30. "The Prince of Denmark's Entertainment at Tilberrie Hope by the King, &c."

5. August 8. "The King of Denmark's Welcome into England, &c." — A copy of this Tract, 28 pages, is among the quarto pamphlets in the British Museum, (1606—1621); and, in different words, contains the substance of what is related by Robarts.

6. August 19. "England's Farewell to Christian the Fourthe, King of Denmarke, with a relation of sundre Showes and sev'all pastymes p'nted to his Majestie, as well at Courte the fifthe of Auguste as in other places since his honorable passage through the Cytie of London." [See hereafter.]

To the Right Worshipfull and most worthy favourer of all vertues, Sir Thomas Smith, Knight, all increase of worship in this life, and after death the joyes eternall.

Right Worshipful ; As I was, in the time of your worshipfull Father, for many great favours bounden, so have I ever devoted myselfe and all my abilitie to your Worship, and all the rest of his worshipfull Progenie; amongst all which, yourselfe, whose vertues God hath regarded and the Prince worthily respected, I have in my cheefest thoughts sought to acknowledge my dutie, and to manifest my zeale to that worshipfull House from whence you proceed. And albeit, to mine owne knowledge, you have beene a spectator of those things wherewith I now make bolde to present you, yet thereby I have thought to manifest my love, and humbly beseech you that you vouchsafe the acceptance thereof; (the rather) for that it concerneth the honours done by our King unto his most deere beloved Brother; all which yourselfe being better acquainted with than many others, that by fostering it your honoured name shall be had in acceptance, with many thousands of this Realme, whose desires are great to heare the truth of al these honourable entertainments given and received. Thus, humbly recommending myself unto your Worship's favour, and humbly craving pardon for my presumption, I cease from your further trouble, and rest in all humble duty at your service.

Ready for ever to be commanded.

HEN. ROBARTS.

The Royall, rare, and most honourable Intertainment of the famous King, CHRISTIERNE the Fourth, King of Denmarke, &c. since his Arrivall on Shore.

When it pleased God to place the Imperiall Crown of this most blessed and famous Kingdome on the head of our most glorious and renowned Sovereigne King James, it was not a little admired amongst the Commons of this Land, the honors done his Highnesse by the most Christian Kings and Princes, who by their Ambassadors, as from France, Spaine, Italy, Denmarke, Holland, and others, not onely presented their honourable loves and joy for his happinesse therein, but desiring peace with his people and state, with love in all honour to be continued amongst them and their Nations.

Their honourable and Christian request his Highnesse with all honor embraced, with such Kingly conditions, love, and fame, to him and his subjects, as all the

Kings and Potentates of the World may admire, and his owne people joy in such honoured peace; for thereby have our marchants sure and safe trafficke to all nations, and they to our land, where they trade at their pleasures. Since when, divers Nations, which with good regard of those blessings God hath endued this Realme withall, and the troubles of their owne countries, preferring their quiet above their native countrey, wealth, and friends, have left their home-borne regions, and placed themselves here with their families; where they live free from those dangers they were subject unto, under the government of a most religious and honourable King, injoying their wealth without feare; and, resting in all tranquillitie of minde and security of their estates, praise God for his excellent Majestie, that so carefully tendereth their lives and safeties as his own people's.

Peace and happy tranquillitie with so many countries being established, and his Majestie enjoying the blessing of the most high God that placed him; Ambassadors from State to State oftentimes passed, whereby the Kings from farre received joyfull tidings of his Royall Governement, health, and welfare; and his Majestie likewise, from them and their Kingdomes, the affinitie of blood and desire of true brotherly-love to be continued; which love is the true loadestone that draweth friends, and moveth the heart to desire the company which they most honour and esteeme off, as we have read of many famous examples of all Estates, as well Princes as others. But in man's memory hath not beene heard, nor (hearing) with more rejoycing seene, so rare and most excellent a simpathe of true and honourable love, as is most apparent by that most Royall King Christian, of Denmarke; who, nothing regarding the dangers of the seas, nor any other accidents, albeit he did oftentimes heare of the gracious and happy estates of our dread Sovereigne King James, his Royall and most esteemed Princely Sister Queen Anne, Prince Henry, and their Royall Issue; that such is his great desire and Kingly affection, that no report whatsoever could satisfy his Kingly minde, but in person adventured to be partaker of their most Royall presence, and to participate with them and their Majesticall Companies, wherein no doubt a most honourable and true combined Royall minde is expressed. For which honourable intention his ships of great strength were prepared, and two pinnases; the Admirall, wherein his owne person came, being a most huge ship, is esteemed of 1500 tunnes; which ship is so adorned with rich gold and very excellent workemanship, as many thousands, upon report thereof, of purpose have gone to Gravesend, where she doth ryde, to view her. Besides the beautie and riches of

this great ship, she is appointed with the most huge ordinance, men, and victualls, fit for so Kingly a presence. The rest likewise, accordingly complete, all riche in ordinance, men, and munition. The Kingly Attendants of his person, and all others of his traine, furnished in apparell very rich and most beautifull, every one in his estate and place; his Counsell and chiefe men, very decent after their countrey fashion, richly decked in silke with gold and silver lace, jewels, and chains of rare estimation. His Pages and Garde of his person, in blew velvet laide with silver lace for their best sute, and one sute for to exchange of other silke; whitish couloured hattes, with bands embrodered; most of them, either white or blew stockings; his trumpetors in white satten dublets, blew velvet hose trimd with silke and silver lace, watched¹ cloakes guarded with sundry colours, and white hattes with blew silke and gold bands embrodered; his Common Garde of souldiers with muskets furnished very riche, white fustian dublets, watched hoase with white and blew lace, loose cassockes², large and faire, like our footmen's coates, with white and blew lace, hattes with bands suted like; and all his common souldiers in cassocks and hoase of watched colour; the Maister and his Mates, Gunners, and Chiefe Officers, being very riche in their apparell; his trunckes and other provision for carriage, covered with redde velvet, trimmed with blew silke and golde lace; his sumpter-cloths³ and coverings to cover his lading, of redde velvet with blew silke and gold lace, all made after English fashion.

For the government of his followers of all sorts, according to his Kingly pleasure, he ordained a Marshal, who had Under-Marshals many, with great charge from his Majestie, that if any man of his company should be drunke, or otherwise to abuse himselfe in any maner towards Englishmen, or his own followers, to be punished sharply; such is the Royall care and honor of his Excellencie, which is duely executed. All things being ready for the voyage, which with great care of all his officers was accomplished; after a most honourable order taken for government of the Kingdome in his absence, the winde serving fitly, and a heavie parting of the Queene, his honoured and most gracious Mother, with the states and chiefe of the land, with tears of sorrow plentifully shed of his loving subjects, and their hearty prayers zealouslie made to God for the prosperous successe of his Majestie at sea; and happy arrivall to his desirous porte, he bad them all farewell, leaving them to their charge, and betooke his Royall person to the mercy of God, that guideth Heaven, and Earth, Seas, and in all dangers protecteth His people; and, by

¹ Watchet, i. e. blue.² Horsemen's great-coats³ Horse-cloths.

God's providence, who sendeth the winds at His pleasure, after some more than ordinary expecting of our dread Sovereign and his people for his comming, his Royall fleete had sight of our land, and in safety entred the same, bearing up the River of Thames, beholding, and with great pleasure admiring, the sweet and pleasant shew and fertility of the land, not desiring to land to recreate his excellent person, untill the King's Majestie our Sovereigne came: but applied with his shipping so high as Tilbury Hope, a roade some two or three miles distant from Gravesend, a port-towne in the county of Kent; where, some small way off the roade, more nere the town, they came to anchor; hereof our gracious King being by poasts advertised, having his barges ready, who, being a King replenished with all Kingly curtesie, well considering of those great travails his Kingly Brother had undergone to see his Highnesse, the Queene, and their honourable Progeny; without long stay, this Mirrour of all Honour, King James, accompanied with the Prince, his Counsell, and many of the Nobility of the land, with great store of Courtiers which gave their attendance, took their barges towards Tilbury, where the King in his ship attended his Kingly Company; the Denmarks looking earnestly now for the comming of the King with his Companie. When they came sayre with the town's end at Gravesend, they from the shippes discried the barges, and gave notice thereof to the King; and presently, at the command of the Lord Admirall of the Fleet, the company was by the boatswains' whistles called up, and in all the gallant manner that might be, each man in his livery, making a gallant shew and noyse of trumpets after the sea manner, and meeting of the friends. The tacklings, toppes, and every part of the shippe, were so replenished with men, that hardly might you decerne the ropes, or see the shippe's sides¹. The King, arriving at the shippe's sides, was intertained most gra-

¹ Phineas Pett, one of the Master Shipwrights to King James I. had orders to prepare the ships for this Royal Visit: "The 17th of July 1606, his Majesty the noble King of Denmark arrived in England; against whose coming, being but only supposed two months before, I received private directions from the Lord High Admiral, and some of the principal officers, to have all the ships put into a comely readiness, which accordingly was performed in a decent and war-like manner, as if they had been prepared for sea. But, upon news of his arrival, they were all rigged and furnished with other ordnance; and a great preparation was made on board the Elizabeth, Jonas, and the Bear, for entertaining the King, Queen, and Prince, and all other States and Nobles; wherein I confess I strove extraordinarily to express my service for the honour of the Kingdom; but, by reason the time limited was short, and the business great, we laboured night and day to effect it; which accordingly was done, to the great honour of our Sovereign King and Master, and the no less admiration of all strangers that were eye-witnesses of the same." Harl. MSS. 6279.—See vol. I. p. 425.

ciously by the Denmarke King to his shippe, with the Prince, Nobles, and Gentlemen of his traine; which, by King James, the Prince, and Nobles, was againe requited with Kingly embracings, and most honourable entertainment to this country.

Like honourable favours and great welcomes were made his followers by the Counsell of England, and theirs, to the great joy of all the beholders. One houre and something more being spent with great delight aboard the shippe, these famous Kings joyed in each other's company, the tide serving, they set forward to the Court.

The two Kings and the Prince in his barge were placed; and the Noblemen of England courteously entertained into their companies the Noblemen and best of the King of Denmark's traine. The barges falling off from the shippe, after they had rowed some small way, the Admirall discharged such a thundering peale of ordinance, whereof many are cannonees of brasse, as the smoake dimmed the skies, and their noyse was heard a farre way off; after her, the Vice and Reere-admiral, and so all the rest; which made a long peale, every shippe taking his turne very orderly in exceeding good sort. By this time they came to the Blockehouses situat neere Gravesend, who followed in discharging their ordinance in like manner, with such industry and care as was very well commended and highly praysed of both Kings and their companies. This honourable welcome given and received, they passe the River till they came to Greenwich, where the Royal Court of England lay. All the way passing, the Royall King of Denmarke, with many loving favours, shewed his heart's joy in imbracing the noble and most honourable Prince Henry. Being now on our English land, a more kinde welcome was againe begun to all the strangers. To behold the multitudes of people which came to see them was admirable; especially having so small knowledge of the King's arrivall. In Royall manner they entered the Court of Greenwich, where our gracious Queene Anne lay, unto whom you need not doubt but this happy tidings and Kingly Brother's company was most pleasing and joyfull; as appeared at their most Royall and Kingly meeting of these most great Princes, Brother and Sister; whose travails he holdeth for pleasure, and therein taketh great comfort, injoying the sight and welfare of so high and mighty a Princesse as his deare Sister Queen Anne, and so toward and happye issue of their loynes as were present, that in them and their presence no Monarch of the earth might thinke a more happier contentment.

This night, being Friday at night, and the 18th day of July, the Royall Kings reposed themselves in the Court; and Satterday all day and night, with great welcomes and joy of either of them.

On Sunday the 20th day, King James, accompanied with his Brother of Denmarke, and Nobility of both Kingdomes, verie rich in their Court-like attire, the King being in English fashion, went to the Chappell, where they heard a learned Sermon, preached by the Reverend Father the Bishop of Rochester¹. By all the way as they passed and returned, the Royall King, with admiration, gave great and honourable regard to the multitude of people there present; the honorable state and gallant managing of the Nobility and Courtiers, with the rare companie of Gentlemen Pensioners, and the Garde in their riche coates, as hee wondered highly at that rare and most high service and sumptuous attendance.

The time of dinner being come, the Garde of our King, appointed to give their attendance on the Gentlemen Sewer, carryed up his Kingly vyands, where wanted not any thing that could possibly be gotten, with wine and beere plentifull, all served up in most honourable manner, with the noyse and excellent musike of drummes and trumpets; which mooved his Highnesse to much delight. This Myrror of esteemed grace and honor, King James, the glory of all Christendome for receiving Forraine Estates, so entertained this puisant King his Brother, in person accompaning him, in all Royall pleasures delighting him, and most plentifully feasting him, as shall never be rased out of memory, so long as the world shall have any being; but the chronicles of these two united and famous nations, to the end of all ages ensuing, shall record the honours given and received between these two most famous and Royall Brothers, Kings of England and Denmarke. The dinner finished, and the first Sunday after his coming to the Court, innumerable was the number of Citizens of London, as well of the better sort and gentrie as the commons, and other adjoyning parishes and townes, which flocked thether to see the persons of these two beloved and famous Kings; the sight of which people might cause the greatest Prince in the world to admire them; and in their admiration to rejoyce in so faire and pleasant a sight of so many well-demeaned people, but more in their true loves to them; both of which was the cause of their coming thether.

This Sunday spent in God's praises and their comfort, on Munday in the forenoone, being the 21st of July, these gracious Kinges, accompanied with our

¹ Dr. Barlow, who has lately been mentioned in p. 51; and who will be noticed under September this year. The Sermon he preached on this occasion was published soon after, and a copy is in the Bodleian Library.—The text is from the Acts, c. xx. v. 28, and applied to their Majesties; "Take heed therefore unto yourselves, and to all the flock over the which the Holy Ghost hath made you overseers to feed the Church of God," &c.

Royall Prince, and manye honorable persons moste richly mounted on steedes of great prise, and furniture fayre, hunted in the Parke at Greenewich, and killed two buckes. After noone, their High Estates went to Eltham, a house of his Majestie's some two miles distant from the Court, where in the parke they hunted with great pleasure, and killed three buckes on horsebacke, being followed with many companies of people, which in their loves came to see them; whereof a greate many not used to followe such pleasures as hunting, especially being on foot, thought not on their paines; but, in joy of their hearts (which no doubt was pleasing unto them), they endeavoured with all their power to follow after their horses, as never wearied in the view of so Royall Company¹, thinking themselves most happy (of many other) to behold so rare and excellent a sight, two Kings

¹ In the mean time a magnificent collection of Pearls was prepared for the King's use, as appears by the following curious document, preserved at Beaumanor, Leicestershire, among the Papers of Sir William Herrick, the King's Jeweller; of whom see before, in vol. I. p. 504:

PEARLS for KING JAMES, July 22, 1606.

Delivered unto Mr. Brodericke, his Highnes' Imbroderer, for his Majestie's use, these perles, viz.

							£.	s.	d.
'Twentie ounces of fringed p'les of one sort, for the furniture of the King's Majesties									
sadle, att 50s. the oz.	-	-	-	-	-	-	50	0	0
Item, 14 oz. di. of strong p'les, somewhat lesse, att 60s. the oz.	-	-	-	-	-	-	29	0	0
Item, in faire interneat p'les 9 oz. 3 quarters, att £.4 the oz. comes to	-	-	-	-	-	-	39	0	0
Item, in oz. p'les of a bigger sort, 9 oz. les 2 dwt. att £.4 the ounce	-	-	-	-	-	-	35	16	0
Item, in big' seed p'les 11 oz. 8 dwt. att 25s. the oz.	-	-	-	-	-	-	14	7	6
Item, 2 oz. att foure pounds the oz.	-	-	-	-	-	-	8	0	0
Item, in flatt button p'les 3 oz. qr. att £.13. 13s. 4d. the oz.	-	-	-	-	-	-	21	13	4
In smale round p'les 1 oz. 6 dwt.	-	-	-	-	-	-	10	4	0
Item, in smale round p'les more, of a lesser sort, 4 oz. les 2 dwt. of £.4 the oz.	-	-	-	-	-	-	15	16	0
							£.223	16	10

And in faire round p'les for the panes of his Majestie's hose 320;
which he brought into another reckoning.

WILL'AM BRODRICKE.

PEARLS for the KING's Saddles.

These Parcelles of Pearles following, receaved by me William Brodrick, his Majestie's Imbroderer, of Sir John Spilman, Knight, and Jeweller to his Highnes, for the furnishing of the want in the finishing of the saddles and furniture made of the foote-cloth, viz.

Imprimis, 16 oz. qr. of small stronge rag pearles.

It'm, 31 oz. 18 dwt. and halfe of bigger rag pearles.

It'm, 10 oz. and halfe of rag poudring pearles.

It'm, 3 oz. 3 qr. and halfe of bigger poudring pearles.

It'm, 14 oz. 9 dwt. of greater poudring pearles.

It'm, 532 greate bull'on pearles.

WILL'AM BRODRICKE.

and a Prince; and surely, in the opinion of many, their Royal persons might take great care to heare their continual cries to God for His blessing, and to preserve them, their states and dignities, from all mallice and traytors' practises for ever. The sun growing neare to his place of rest, their pleasures finished and they returned themselves to the Court, all the way pacing easilye, that the people might the better obtaine their desires in beholding of them.

This first daye's pleasure with great delight finished, they reposed themselves¹ until Thursday the 24th of July; at which time, the morning beeing fayre, everye man in his place gave their attendance. The barges wayted for their Majestyes, which about 11 of the clocke came abourd them, accompanied with his brother the King and Prince, and were rowed to Blackwall, where their coaches with their traine attended their comming, with such multitudes of people as were not to be numbred. At the landing there of his Highness, the merchants' shippes which anchored in the roade there discharged such a peale of ordinance as gave greate contentment to that Royall companye. There hence they set forwardes the way that leadeth to Stratford, and so to Theobals, twelve miles distant from London, a famous and most delightfull house of the Right Honourable Earle of Salisburie, all the way met with great Companye of people, which saluted them and prayed for their happiness, but moste especially untill they came three or foure miles from London; all which way was so replenished with men and women of good sorte, some on foote, some on horsebacke, and some in coaches, that there was hardlye way left for their Royall companie to passe them; such is the love of this Nation to the King and his lovers and friendes; and in their love, their desires so great to beholde their delights, that no paine (whatsoever) but they esteeme as pleasure to enjoy it, especiall ye to beholde so honourable and heavenly sight, two anoynted Kinges and so Royall a Prince, whom God in His greate mercie evermore preserve and keepe from all trayterous practises and other evils. Amen.

Before these Royall Persons came neere the house of Theobals, there was strewed in the highwayes abundance of leaves coloured greene, cut like oaken leaves, on every one of which was written, in large Romaine letters of golde, "WELCOME, WELCOME;" which beeing presented to their Majesties, they praysed the device, and found their welcomes as great to them and theirs as was spoken of.

¹ On the 23d, Sir John Jolles, an Alderman of London, and at that time one of the Sheriffs, was knighted at Greenwich. He was Lord Mayor in 1615.

At this moste beautifull house, after their welcomes given by this most bountifull Earle, Patrone of that famous place, they spent there their times foure nights and days, where they received many great delights in hunting in the Chaces and Parkes neere adjoyning, where they killed store of deere with great pleasure. Some other times they spent in viewing the admirable pleasures that place affordeth; beholding in great delight the sweet groaves, gardens, and walkes, which with such rare workmanship is so beautified, and for varyetie so exceedeth, that time stealeth too fast away for the beholders, especiallye where judiciall eyes dooth take pleasures therein; so rich, rare, and of such exquisite perfection is that place, that a man may fayle in describing the same, but cannot suddainly be wearyed with manye times viewing and re-viewing thereof¹.

On Sunday they rest from their pleasures, giving the honour of that day to Him that sanctified the same, and hearing learned Sermons.

Amongst all the thinges which were to be noted at this honourable place, during these two Royall Kinges' stay, this I may not overpasse.

The house being twelve miles off from the Citie of London, notwithstanding the distance of the places, the great aboundance of people which came from London to see these two Royall Kings and Prince were so many, that a man may wonder at, but not certainly reporte; the highwayes hither day nor night never free for multitudes of people going and comming in such greate companies, that all the townes and villages adjoyning were so replenished with people, that there was not lodging to bee had for many commers thether, nor victualls for their moneyes, whereof many of good sort complained, and might have fasted had they not beene provided for in that honorable house. Such was the bountie of this noble Earle in his large allowance to all Officers for that time, that beefe, breade, beere, wine, and other vyandes, was not denyed to any that were either acquainted in the house with the Officers, or anye their friends which would seek it, as many found to their great comfort, and honor of the honorable Patron of that house.

The foure dayes appointed for the stay of this Royall Companye there brought to end with many delights and pleasures, to God's glorie and their Graces' good contentment.

On Munday, being the 28th of July, after dinner, they leave that place, retourn-
ing gracious thanks to this worthie Earle for their cheere and pleasures; which

¹ See Ben Jonson's share of these Entertainments in p. 70.

being truly considered of, may deservedly bee spoken off in all honour in the Courtes of the mightiest Potentates; as the strangers, partakers of both pleasures and cheere, to their great honors do applaud, and for ever will commend in all places, the renowned Earle and his most kinde and Royall Entertainment they received at this famous house of Theobals by his bountie.

The same night they returned againe to Blackwall, and from thence to Greenwich, where our gracious Queene Anne (the heart's delight of these two Royall Kings) kept her Court, unto whose gracious and moste loving companie they were welcome; where, to the protection of the God of all glory and peace, we leave them, Who ever defend them and all theirs.

Thus have I brought to end the first welcome and arival of this famous stranger King, with his beginning of progresse; to God's glorie, their great pleasure, and content of many thousands, whose desires were enriched with beholding their persons.

At this Palace of Greenwich they repose themselves untill Thursday, which was the 31st of July, and the day appointed for their comming through the Citty, where they spent the time in solacing themselves with her gracious Majesty, the Prince and Nobles of his Court. About two of the clocke in the afternoon, the tide serving them to goe to London, these Two Royall Kinges, accompanied with the Prince, and honourable Privie Counsell, the Lordes and Estates of the Land, and a moste worthy company of Knightes and Esquires, the Kinge's barges giving their attendance, their Royall persons came aboorde, and were rowed towards London. By the way, as they passed, they were saluted with great peales of ordnance from the Merchants' Ships which ridde in the Thames. The gunners of them so carefully applyed their busines, that they were highly commended for their care; and their owners, which had charge thereof, had thereby great commendations.

With these delights, and other musicall noyse of drums and trumpets, they passed on untill they came to the Tower Wharffe, where those moste gracious Kinges and Royall Prince landed. There they made no long stay; but, as sudainely as the Traine could bee marshalled according to their auncient manner, they set forwards, where the Kinges was entertained by that worthy Magistrate Sir Leonard Holliday¹, Lord Maior of the honorable Cittie of London, who delivered the sword unto his Highness, who graciously received it, and then proceeded.

¹ Of whose Triumphal Inauguration into that high and important office, see vol. I. pp. 564—576.

The Marshals of the Cittie first, who had, with great care and deserved commendations for their travailes, from the morning verie early rid up and downe the Cittie, carefully overseeing the multitudes of people which came to be partakers of these Royal sights; who, by the straight commaundement received from the Lord Maior and Aldermen for the people's safeties, that no harme might befall any of the Companies, so highly, and with such great regard, did they apply themselves in placing and governing them, that thereby much harme was prevented, which might otherwise have happened by the unruly multitude, as is oftentimes seene at such times and places.

The Marshals had allowed for their attendance 12 men suted in yellow fustian, with ash-coloured hats, red bands, and red scarfes, and each a tip-staffe in their hands.

Next them two Trumpetters of his Majestie's; after whome followed the Knight-marshal's men of his Highnesse Houshold, a famous and most worthie Knight, Sir Thomas Vavasour¹. These his followers were all suited in clay-collour cloakes, streamed with silver-lace, white doublets and greene hose with white hattes, the bandes rowled white and greene, and guarded in the brimme with greene silk; of this company were twenty-three persons.

Then followed the Messengers, in their coates very richly embrodered, to the number of fourteene; then a Harrold of Armes; after whome followed his Majestie's Trumpetters, led by their Serjeant in a cloake of carnation velvet, bearing the silver mace of his office, and the rest of his company to the number of 14 in their liverie coates, verrie rich and well mounted.

Then follows the King of Denmarke's Drume, riding upon a horse, with two drums one on each side of the horse's necke, whereon hee strooke two little mallets of wood, a thing verie admirable to the common sort, and much admired.

Then follow the Denmarke Kinge's Trumpeters, beeing eleven in all, decently attyred after our English fashion, in cloakes of watched, guarded with blacke and striped white; blew velvet hose, and white satten doublets trimmed with silver lace; white hattes, with bandes embrodered with gold.

¹ Of Haslewood Hall, Yorkshire.—This Gentleman, who had gallantly distinguished himself in the Naval service, particularly in an action against the Spaniards in 1592; was knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1597; appointed Knight Marshal of the Household by King James in 1603; and, in 1611, one of the Judges of the Marshal's Court then newly erected within the verge of the Court, Sir Francis Bacon being the other. He was made a Baronet by King Charles October 24, 1628; but, not long after, being accused of Recusancy, he was fined £.150 a year to the King; which he did not long survive, being dead (as appears in Dugdale's Warwickshire, p. 178) before December 1631. Ham House, Petersham, was first built by Sir Thomas.

With this Companie, the Kinge's Guardes begane to come forward; which marched souldier-like by the sides of the Trainee (for a time) to keepe the way.

After them, more Harroldes in their rich coates; then the Kinge's Gentlemen and Courtiers, being most gallantly mounted, and rich in their apparell.

Then a troope of most gallant Knightes, of whose riches a number may admyre; of whom many of them wore strange fethers of rich and great esteem, which they called "The Birdes of Paradice."

These passing on, follow the Knightes of the Bathe, so richly garnished both in apparell, riche jewelles, with gallant horses, and costly furniture, that all the Princes of the world may admire to heare thereof; but more, to see most exceeding richnesse and most gallant personages of them.

Then follow more Harroldes; the Worshipfull Deane of his Majestie's Chappell¹, and one other with him.

Then Barrons, and the Nobilitie of Englande of the younger sort, very rich, and well attended upon.

The Maisters of his honorable Court of Requestes.

Then the Sargiants at Armes, with their riche maces, in number nine.

The Reverent Lord Archbyshop of Canterburie² his Grace, the Lord Byshop of London³, and others.

Then the right honourable the Earle of Salisburie, and other Earles, both of the Counsell, and others; amongst whom were placed in great honour the Lordes and chiefest of the Denmarke Kinge's Nobilitie and Counsell, who wore the most part of them rich jewels on their left breastes; all men of great gravitie, and seemely personages.

Then came the right honorable Earle of Nottingham, Lord High Admirall of Englande, who carried the sword; and, betweene two other two, the Lord Mayre of London, who carryed a mace.

Then came the most gracious Prince Henrie, whose sweete and most majesticall grace and favour the whole Company with due honour to his Grace did applaude, and pray for his most gracious Father, and all theirs, in all health to continue.

Then follow these two famous Honours of Estate and Majestie the two KINGES, our dread Soveraigne, and his beloved Brother, Christiane the Fourth, King of

¹ Dr. James Montague, afterwards Bishop, first of Bath and Wells, and thence translated to Winchester; of whom see before, in vol. I. p. 313.

² Dr. Richard Bancroft.

³ Dr. Richard Vaughan.

Denmarke; who, regarding more the true love of their Nation then gorgeous apparell, whereof they have plentie, yet in their pleasures they contented themselves in plaine suites to be attyred; but rich in jewels, themselves not farre unlike, and their horses neere-couloured and suited. About whom on the sides marched divers of the Denmarke Guarde, suited in watched coates and hose, souldier-like, laced with white and blew lace; whitish hattes, with blew bandes, and guilt halbards.

These Two most famous Brother Kinges, ryding in such love, and in Majestie so surpassing, did so joy the heartes of their subjectes, that the whole world may admire; yea, such was the honour of this day in London, and exceeding joy to beholde these Two famous Kinges, and their unitie, as will, while they have any beeing, never be rased out of memorie.

These Royall Kinges passed, after them followed the right honorable Earle of Worcester, one of his Privie Counsell, and Maister of the Horse.

After whom followed his Majestie's Gentlemen Pensioners, who made a most honorable and great shew, such was their riches both of men and horse; amongst all which their rich scarfes and fethers, which made a glorious shew, were to be admyred. Which were thus suited; their fethers yellow and redde, their scarffes very large, laced with faire gold lace at each end.

Next to them the Kinge of Denmarke's Guarde, marching three and three, souldier-like; after whom came our gracious King's Guarde, in their rich coates, to the number of 180, or thereabouts; whose comely personages, and seemelienesse in apparell, doth so amaze the minde of all strangers coming into this land, as they be admired at in all Christian Kinges' countries, for their persons, civill government, and kinde entertainment of straungers.

The Traine, thus marching as I have described, rid on til they came to Cheap-side. Al the way as these two famous Kinges passed from the Tower-hill, stood the Companies of London, in their lyverie-gownes and hoodes; for whom there was places double-rayled, which was hanged with blew broad-cloth, and the rayles garnished with auncients¹ very richly guylt with the Kinge's Armes of England; the auncients of silke of each Hall, with streamers and pendants of their armes,

¹ An "auncient" was a standard, or flag. Thus Shakspeare, 1 Hen. IV. act iv. sc. 2:

"Ten times more dishonourably ragged than an old-faced ancient."

Skinner says, the word is only a corruption of *ensign*. It was sometimes used for the Officer now so called.

and severall Fellowships, the better to be knowen. The windowes and pent-houses rickly decked with arrace, and other costly hanginges.

With great admiration passed these famous Kinges till they came to Cheapside, viewing the numbers of people which stood in windowes, the streetes, and other places; shewing lovely and gracious acceptance of their loves, by their favourable countenance. In their passing at the Great Conduit in Cheapside, was made with greene boughes a very artificiall arboure, which was garnished with all sortes of delightfull fruites. In this arbour was placed most sweete musicke, which greatly delighted the hearers, and no doubt pleased his Majestie¹.

At the Little Conduit, as they proceeded, there was erected a most stately Pageant, such as for their rare device and beautie was and is to be admired, and hath seldome been seene; a matter of such state and rare edifice, in so short a time to be accomplished, the workmen and plotters thereof having not past twelve dayes of respite after their first warning.

Heere these most famous Princes and most admired Kinges stayed, beholding the Devices and rarenesse of the same; unto whom were delivered (in the name of the Lord Mayre and his Brethren the Aldermen, which stood neere them in their scarlet gownes, and all the Commons of the Citie,) a most pleasing Speach²; which ended, the Kinges gave the Citie thankes, and proceeded till they came to Paule's Church-yard; where, at the Schoole of the worshipfull Companie of Mearcers, called *Paule's Schoole*, there were other delightfull Speeches delivered; to which they graciously harkened, and honorably accepted.

Then rode they on, without stay, to Fleete Conduit, which was garnished sweetly (on the toppe was placed delightfull musicke); and were presented with other Speeches, which were graciously accepted.

When they came to Saint Dunstan's Church, they were presented with a noyse of cornets, which shewed their cunning to be excellent, and very pleasing to both their Majesties.

Heere-hence they proceeded to Temple-barre; where his Majestie, and his Brother King, giving many thankes to the Lord Mayre and Citizens, for their great charge and paines, delivered the sword to the Lord Mayre; and rode

¹ This "arboure," says Howes, was intended for the "bower of the Muses." See further particulars of these Entertainments from that author, in some subsequent pages.

² By Sir Henry Montague, Recorder of London; of whom see before, in vol. I. pp. 208, 360; and hereafter, p. 87; and again under the date of October 29, 1607.

on their way to Somerset House¹; where they reposed themselves that night, and to their gracious farther pleasures.

The Lord Mayre, returning, was mette by the Sheriffes and Aldermen of the Cittie, who accompanied him to his house.

Thus finished this daye's worke, to God's glorie, their Highness great delight; which the Omnipotent Giver of all grace, and Preserver of His, ever encrease and protect them and all their Royall Progenie, from all detestable practises in this world; and in the last, Heaven be their inheritance. Amen, Amen.

¹ "In the Reign of King James I. Somerset House became, *ipso facto*, a Royal residence on the part of the Queen, and even changed its name; and it appears that her Majesty repaired it, at her own charge, for the reception of her Brother, Christian IV. King of Denmark, who visited England, in 1606, from which time it is said that the Queen affected to call it *Denmark House*. Here at least her Majesty kept her Court; which was celebrated for its gaiety, whereof the King occasionally partook. Her Courtiers often appeared in Masquerade, not a little favourable to the intriguing spirit of the time, and the Queen herself does not seem to have escaped all censure. The Visit of the King of Denmark was very flattering to King James, who was glad of the company of a stranger, to whom he might display his wit and magnificence, which last was carried to so great an excess, that, on this occasion, added to another visit which immediately followed from the Prince de Vaudemont, son of the Duke of Lorrain, his Majesty consumed nearly the whole of a Subsidy of four hundred and fifty-three thousand pound lately granted by the Parliament for the necessary and urgent demands of his Household. At this time the King maintained three distinct Courts, at an incredible expence: his own, at Whitehall; the Queen's, at Somerset House; and Prince Henry's, at St. James's; all upon large establishments. His Danish Majesty liked his reception so well in the year 1606, that, unsolicited and unexpectedly, he repeated his visit in 1614, when King James lavished away about fifty thousand pounds in excessive feasting, &c. which he had obtained from his subjects under the specious title of a Benevolence. On both these occasions the two Monarchs were guilty of great intemperance; the Dane being addicted to drunkenness, to which James had not the least objection. To this Christian added several indelicate traits of manners to the Ladies about the Court, and particularly in his indecent behaviour to the wife of the High Admiral, the Countess of Nottingham, who resented it in a very spirited manner to the Danish Ambassador, in a letter which is preserved in Dr. Harris's Life of King James. Such of these scenes as are on record lay for the most part at Theobalds, though the same writers who mention them leave sufficient insinuations to suspect that some of them were repeated at Somerset House.

"Dr. Fuller tells us that, on the first visit of the King of Denmark in 1606, it was ordered by King James himself, that Somerset House should be thenceforth called Denmark House in honour of his Brother-in-law; and goes so far as to add, that the name was confirmed by the King's Proclamation. On the other hand, Arthur Wilson, though he seldom, if ever, gives this house any other title than 'The Queen's Palace in the Strand,' says, under the year 1610, that her Majesty affected to call her Palace Denmark House, in compliment to her Brother; but that this appellation obtained chiefly by courtesy among the Queen's domesticks and dependents." Pegge's Curialia, Part IV. p. 63.

BEN JONSON'S ACCOUNT of the ENTERTAINMENT of the TWO KINGS of
GREAT BRITAIN and DENMARK at THEOBALDS, July 24, 1606¹.

[*The Kings being entered the Inner Court; above, over the porch, sat three Hours upon clouds, as at the ports of Heaven²; crowned with several flowers, of which one bore a sun-dial; the other, a clock; the third, an hour-glass; signifying, as by their names, Law, Justice, Peace; and for those faculties chosen to gratulate their coming with this Speech.*

Enter, O long'd-for Princes, bless the bowers,
And us, the three, by you made happy, Hours:
We that include all time, yet never knew
Minute like this, or object like to you.
Two Kings, the world's prime honours, whose access
Shews either's greatness, yet makes neither less:
Vouchsafe your thousand Welcomes in this shower;
The Master vows, not Sybil's leaves were truer³.

Expressed to the King of Denmark, thus:

Qui colit has ædeis, ingentia gaudia adumbrans,
Cernendo Reges pace coire pares,
Nos tempestivas ad limina collocat Horas,
Quòd bona sub nobis omnia proveniant.
Unum ad lætitiæ cumulum tristatur abesse,
Quòd nequeat signis lætitiâ exprimere;
Sed, quia res solùm ingentes hac parte laborant,
Utcunque expressam credidit esse satis.
At, quod non potuit dominus, supplevit abundè
Fronoso tellus munere facta loquax.
Eccos quam grati veniant, quos terra salutat!
Verior his foliis nulla Sybilla fuit.

¹ "The Royal Brothers rode together to Theobalds in Hertfordshire, where the Earl of Salisbury, for four days together, feasted them and all their Train according to their estates and dignities, shewing them many signs of love, duty, and heartie welcome." HOWES.

"This Visit was a political misfortune. The arrival of his Danish Majesty was the signal for
———heavy-headed revel East and West.

The Danes brought with them their habitual propensity to drinking, and James and his Courtiers complimented the strangers by partaking of their debaucheries." GIFFORD.

² The Greek names of the *Hours*, were *Eunomie*, *Dice*, and *Irene*, the English of which the Poet has given us above. They are said (by Hesiod) to be the daughters of Jupiter and Themis; their station was at the gates of Heaven: and therefore our author, consonant to poetic story, hath placed them over the porch of the house. WHALLEY.

³ This alludes to the shower of oaken-leaves inscribed, "WELCOME, WELCOME," mentioned in p. 62; as does the first epigram. N.

The inscriptions on the walls were,

DATE VENIAM SUBITIS.

DEBENTUR QUÆ SUNT, QUÆQUE FUTURA.

Epigrams hung up:

Ad Reges Serenissimos.

Sæpe Theobaldæ (sortis bonitate beatæ)
 Excepere suos sub pia tecta deos;
 Haud simul at geminos; sed enim potuisse negabant,
 Nec fas est tales posse putare duos.
 Fortunata antehac, sed nunc domus undique fœlix,
 At dominus quanto (si licet usque) magis!
 Et licet, ô Magni, foliis si fident istis,
 Queis Horæ summam contribuere fidem.

Ad Serenissimum JACOBUM.

Miraris, cur hospitio te accepimus Horæ,
 Cujus ad obsequium non satis Annus erat?
 Nempe quod adveniant ingentia gaudia rarò;
 Et quando adveniant, vix datur Hora frui.

Ad Serenissimum CHRISTIANUM.

Miraris, cur hospitio te accepimus Horæ,
 Quas Solis famulas Græcia docta vocat?
 Talis ab adventu vestro lux fulsit in ædeis,
 Ut dominus Solem crederet esse novum.

Others, at their departure:

Ad Serenissimum JACOBUM.

Hospitio qui te cepit, famulantibus Horis,
 Cedere abhinc, nulla concomitante, sinit;
 Nempe omneis Horas veniendi duxit amicas,
 Sed discedendi nulla Minuta probat.

Ad Serenissimum CHRISTIANUM.

Te veniente, novo domus hæc frondebat amictu;
 Te discessuro, non prout ante viret;
 Nempe, sub accessu Solis, novus incipit annus,
 Et, sub discessu, squalida sævit hyems.

¹ These Epigrams, which have the wit without the point of Martial, and which approach to the manner of the Greek anthologies, are very creditable to the talents and learning of our author. He was indeed the best Latin Poet we then possessed, and few of his Contemporaries on the Continent wrote Latin verse with more taste or elegance. Of Owen's Epigrams, which were little better than strings of puns, Jonson always spoke with contempt. G.

The Entertainment at Theobalds is thus described by Sir John Harington, in a Letter to Mr. Secretary Barlow :

“ My good Friend ; In compliance with your asking, now shall you accept my poor accounte of rich doings. I came here a day or two before the Danish King came ; and, from the day he did come until this time, I have been well nigh overwhelmed with carousal and sports of all kinds. The sports began each day in such a manner, and such sorte, as well nigh persuaded me of Mahomet’s Paradise. We had women, and indeed wine too, of such plenty, as would have astonished each sober beholder¹. Our feasts were magnificent ; and the two Royal Guests did most lovingly entertain each other at table. I think the Dane hath strangely wrought in our good English Nobles, for those whom I never could get to taste good liquor now follow the fashion, and wallow in brutish delights. The Ladies abandon their sobriety, and are seen to roll about in intoxication. In good sooth, the Parliament did kindly to provide his Majestie so seasonably with money ; for there hath ben no lack of good livinge, shewes, sightes, and banquettings, from morn to eve.

“ One day a great feast was held ; and, after dinner the representation of Solomon his Temple and the coming of the Queen of Sheba was made, or (as I may better say) was meant to have been made, before their Majesties, by Device of the Earl of Salisbury and others. But, alas ! as all earthly thinges do fail to poor mortals in enjoyment, so did prove our presentment thereof. The Lady who did play the Queene’s part, did carry most precious gifts to both their Majesties ; but, forgetting the stepps arising to the canopy, overset her casket into his Danish Majestie’s lap, and fell at his feet, though I rather think it was in his face. Much was the hurry and confusion. Cloths and napkins were at hand, to make all clean. His Majestie then got up, and would dance with the Queen of Sheba ; but he fell down, and humbled himself before her, and was carried to an inner chamber and laid on a bed of state ; which was not a little defiled with the presents of the Queen, which had been bestowed on his garments ; such as wine, cream, jelly, beverage, cakes, spices, and other good matters.

¹ Sir Edward Peyton, in his History of the Stuarts, makes a very sottish report of King Christian ; and says, that King James got so drunk with him at Theobalds, he was obliged to be carried to bed. Howell likewise (sect. VI. letter 2) describes an Entertainment given by the same Danish Monarch in 1632, at Rhensburgh, where the King, after giving thirty-five toasts, was carried away in his chair ; and most of the Officers of the Court were so drunk, that they could not rise till late the next day. PARK.

“The Entertainment and show went forward, and most of the Presenters went backward, or fell down; wine did so occupy their upper chambers. Now did appear, in rich dress, Hope, Faith, and Charity; Hope did assay to speak, but wine rendered her endeavours so feeble that she withdrew, and hoped the King would excuse her brevity. Faith was then all alone, for I am certain she was not joyned with Good Works, and left the Court in a staggering condition. Charity came to the King’s feet, and seemed to cover the multitude of sins her sisters had committed; in some sorte she made obeysance and brought giftes, but said she would return home again, as there was no gift which Heaven had not already given his Majesty. She then returned to Hope and Faith, who were both sick and spewing in the lower hall. Next came Victory, in bright armour, and presented a rich sword to the King, who did not accept it, but put it by with his hand; and, by a strange medley of versification, did endeavour to make suit to the King. But Victory did not triumph long; for, after much lamentable utterance, she was led away like a silly captive, and laid to sleep in the outer steps of the anti-chamber. Now did Peace make entry, and strive to get foremoste to the King; but I grieve to tell how great wrath she did discover unto those of her Attendants; and, much contrary to her semblance, most rudely made war with her olive branch, and laid on the pates of those who did oppose her coming.

“I have much marvelled at these strange Pageantries¹, and they do bring to my remembrance what passed of this sort in our Queen’s days; of which I was sometime an humble Presenter and Assistant²: but I never did see such lack of good order, discretion, and sobriety as I have now done.

¹ The following Letter, dated “Greenwich August 3,” and addressed to his Noble Friend by the nameless Writer of those already printed in pp. 49—54, is copied from the Works of Drummond:

“There is nothing to be heard at Court but sounding of trumpets, hautboys, musick, revellings, and comedies. The last of this July the two Kings rode in state through London, where the inside of the houses seemed to be turned out, stately Pageants being erected in sundry parts: that of Cheapside was of Neptune on a Hippocampus, with his Tritons and Næreides, and Apollo, who set down in a chair, delivered a Speech to them; that at the Fleet was in form of a pastoral; a Shepherd, standing by a shady fountain with his Shepherdess, conjured her now by her oath to give place to his affection, since she had promised to do so, when there should be two Kings in one Kingdom peaceably. The next day in the morning, the King of Denmark went in a coach with some Lords accompanied to the Tower, which welcomed him with huge thunder of cannons, and where he discharged a piece of ordinance himself, mounted also the top of Paules, and visited tombs of Westminster. They are now come back to Greenwich for the churching of the Queen.

² This allusion of Sir John Harington, I believe, is applicable rather to the accustomed general Entertainments given to the Queen, than to any single one in particular.

"I have passed much time in seeing the Royal sports of hunting and hawking, where the manners were such as made me devise the beasts were pursuing the sober creation, and not man in quest of exercise or food.

"I will now, in good sooth, declare to you, who will not blab, that the Gunpowder fright is got out of all our heads, and we are going on, hereabouts, as if the devil was contriving every man should blow up himself, by wild riot, excess, and devastation of time and temperance. The great Ladies do go well-masked, and indeed it be the only show of their modesty, to conceal their countenance; but, alack they meet with such countenance to uphold their strange doings, that I marvel not at ought that happens.

"The Lord of the mansion¹ is overwhelmed in preparations at Theobalds, and doth marvelously please both Kings, with good meat, good drink, and good Speeches. I do often say (but not aloud) that the Danes have again conquered the Britains, for I see no man, or woman either, that can now command himself or herself.

"I wish I was at home: *O Rus! quando te aspiciam?* And I will, before the Prince Vaudemont cometh.

"I hear the uniting the Kingdoms is now at hand²; when the Parliament is held more will be done in this matter. Bacon³ is to manage all the affair, as who can better do these state-jobs. My cosin, Lord Harington of Exton, doth much fatigue himself with the Royal charge of the Princess Elizabeth; and, midst all the foolery of these times, hath much labour to preserve his own wisdom and sobriety. If you would wish to see howe folly dothe grow, come up quickly; otherwise, stay where you are, and meditate on the future mischiefs of those our posterity, who shall learn the good lessons and examples helde forth in these days.—I hope to see you at the Bathe, and see the gambols you can perform in the hot waters, very speedily; and shall reste your assured friend in all quiet enjoyments and hearty good affections.

JOHN HARINGTON."

¹ The Earl of Salisbury.

² "March 31, 1607, the King makes Speeches to both Houses of Parliament concerning the Union of the Two Kingdoms." Camden's Annals.

³ Sir Francis Bacon was appointed Solicitor General, July 25, 1607; Attorney General, Oct. 17, 1613; Lord Keeper, March 7, 1616-17; and Lord Chancellor (being then Lord Verulam) Jan. 4, 1617-18. He was created Viscount St. Alban's, Jan. 27, 1620-1; but, on the 3d of May 1621, was removed from his high office of Chancellor.

ENGLAND'S FAREVVELL

TO

CHRISTIAN THE FOURTH, FAMOUS KING OF DENMARKE.

With a relation of such Shews and severall pastimes presented to his Maiestie, as well at Court the fift day of August last past, as in other places since his honorable Passage thorow the Citie of London. The most honorable Entertainement of his Highnesse aboard his Majestie's ships in the roade of Gyllyngame neere the Citie of Rochester in Kent; with the King's Entertainement aboard the Denmarke Ships at Gravesend: as also their honorable leave-taking and farewell, setting sayle from Gravesend on Munday night, the eleventh of August 1606. By H. Roberts¹.

To the Right Worshipfull Sir John Jolles, Knight, Alderman, and Sheriffe of the Citie of London, Henry Roberts, your Worship's true devoted, wisheth all increase of worship in this world, and after this life the joyes eternall.

Right worshipfull; Long since in those imployments I had for the Irish affayres, in the time of our most dread and gracious Soveraigne deceased, and ever sithence, I sought opportunitie to make some shewe of my zeale unto you, but Time never favoring the expectation of my desired thought, I was enforced to keepe silent my love's intention. Yet now having some occasion, through these great and most honorable favours shewed unto the gracious and renowned King of Denmarke at his being heere, by our famous King, Nobilitie, and States of our land, whereof many have beene eye-witnesses neere this honorable Citie: yet considering that many thousands, which desired to see the same, have beene debarred of their contentments therein, and having bestowed my time and charge, in noting from time to time, what hath been done in all honor to welcome this renowned King in severall places, and sundry honorable pastimes (no doubt to the eternall honor of his Maiestie and this land), I have emboldened myselfe to publish the same under your Worship's protection, and beseech you of your accustomed clemencie so to accept it, as it is faithfully intended; so shall I bind myselfe ever to your service, and in all duty rest your Worship's ever to be commanded,

H. ROBERTS.

¹ Printed at London, for William Welby, 1606 (4to, three sheets).

ENGLAND'S FAREWELL.

THAT there is no greater comfort to man then perfit love to be maintained one with the other, there is few or none but, having Christian charity, can testifie: for besides the prescript rule of God which commaundeth wee love one another, it bringeth such contentment to the minde, that there can be no jewell of so rare and high esteeme as the perfit love of friends. How many great Potentates have in their inwarde thoughts preferred the love of some especiall one in their pleasures to solace with, and in their counsels to participate with in all passions both of body and minde, to be as a second selfe!

Such is the effect of love, that many have hazarded life, and whatever the earth did affoord them, in theyr love to make it knowne. Some for theyr countrie's love have dyed, some for their friend, and many by adventring honor of theyr houses, by the force of their love.

If such be the touchstone of that vertue, and so highly ought to be regarded, how may all Christians ioy therein, that have or do participate of the same? And how may we admire, in this iron age, wherein so many vices abound, to behold the amitie of neighbour with neighbour, nation with nation, and friend with friend? Where, by the contrary, no torment on earth may be comparable to the inward griefs that hart endureth, where envy hath domination. And truly is it sayd and written of that horrible sinne, by whom and through whom many great outrages have beene attempted and done. And dayly we have seene the subject attempting the death of their Soveraigne, the sonne, the father, the husband, the wife, and many times the wives their husbands. This hel-hound envy, begotten by the divell, where it once fostereth, never giveth over his hoste, untill hee hath brought him to confusion, of which wee have too many examples. God graunt, wee, that professe Christ Jesus in one simpathy of hart and minde, may abolish that hag, and truly embrace that heavenly commandement, to love one another; and that we all, subjects of this peaceable and most gracious Soveraigne King James, may be so united in love to our Maker and duetie to his Majestie, that the devill never have power to cause us to forget the one or the other.

But that, seeing his Excellency is the true touch of love, not onely to us his home-borne people, but unto all Christian Nations, whatever they bee that seeke his favour or comfort, a father to the stranger and a carefull maintainer of peace

for his people, a true Jonathan to his David, a holy anoynted of the Lord, in this most Royall King, oh let us all true subjects note, and noting, imprint in our hearts, the rare and most honorable love of his Majestie shewed to the person of his Royall Brother King of Denmarke, betweene whose loves there may be no comparison. The one, love caused to commit his Kingly person to the adventure of feares and enemies, to see his joy, the comfort of his Royall Estate, our gracious Sovereigne the Queen's Majestie and their Royall Issue; whose love, with brotherly love hath beene so joyfully accepted of their Highnesse, as never hath beene seene in this land the like. Yea, such a surpassing joy may it ever bee amongst us, that wee can never thinke, speake, or write too much thereof.

Oh rare love! oh Kingly and Royall president for all people to note, what hath happened since the sixteenth of July now last past, the day of this famous King of Denmark's first arrivall in Tilbery Hope, where he was entertayned, and brought from his ship with his chiefe delight our dread Sovereigne and the Prince, lovingly welcomed by the Queene and States, and joyfully receyved by all their subjects, who with duty and zeale, made it knowne in all the best manner so short time would give leave; yet such it was, as his Princely minde was much delighted in the same, and no doubt doth applaude this honorable Citie, both for beawtie, wealth, and pleasure; a most excellent note and honorable appearance of his gracious acceptance of their loves shewed, may be gathered by his sodaine and silent comming againe in person to view the state of this Citie, and rare monuments thereof, who having seene it the last of July in all Royaltie, the Citizens in their rich attyre, the houses garnished, and such multitudes of people of all estates, in this manner ensuing came to view it.

The next day being Friday, and the first of August, this Royall King, knowing the zeale and love of our Nation, whose loyaltie he neede not distrust, accompanied with the Earles of Nottingham, Sussex, and others, in their coaches, came to St. Paule's Church, where he walked and viewed the same, and from thence to the top of the steeple, where he tooke much delight to behold the beautious scituation of London, the pleasant gardens and fields adjoyning, the richnes of the Thames, so furnished with ships of great countenance and worth as he graciously applauded the excellency thereof. But amongst all other things he admired most, when the Noblemen accompanying him did report the being of a horse upon that place, comming up such a way of great danger and so hie, that he tooke very good notice thereof, and wonderfully did admire the same.

From thence he tooke his coach with his Company and passed on to the Exchange, viewing the beauty of Cheapside and the riches of the inhabitants, the Goldsmiths, Mercers, and other wealthy trades, all the way setting their commodities to sale; a sight which may delight any Prince in the world to behold.

To grace this Royall Exchange, so named by our late Royal Queene, his Grace walked round about the pawn above, and viewed with great pleasure the same. Then came hee to the Marchants' walkes beneath, where it was told his Highnesse the maner of our Marchants and the houres of their meetings, where from all countreys there was dayly newes to be heard by one meanes or other. Here they make great exchanges of their marchandize, make their traffike to forraign countreies, ship their men for service, so that their greatest affayres were every day twice there effected.

There-hence proceede they by Cornehill, Gracious-streete¹, and Fanchurch, to the Tower of London, where our gracious Sovereigne, his deare esteemed Brother, King James, met his Highnesse, and with Kingly welcomes entertayned him, and in his owne person conducted him to the offices of the Jewell-house, Wardrobe, of the Ordinance, Mint, and other places, where to their Kingly presence in the Jewell-house were presented the most rare and richest jewels and beawtifull plate, so that he might well wonder thereat, but cannot truly prayse or estimate the value thereof by many thousands of pounds.

The like in the Wardrobe, whereof, for robes beset with stones of great price, faire and precious pearle, and gold, were such, as no King in the world might compare; besides the rich furniture of hangings, cloathes of estate, cushions, chaires, and Kingly furniture for his palaces, as may cause much admiration, and bring great content to the beholders.

But passing then on to the Office of the Ordinance, he well viewed the warlike provision of the great Ordinance, which at an houre is ready for any service to be commaunded. Over every peece the ladles and sponges hang to lade them withall: and the traces and collers for the horses to draw them away when they shall neede to serve.

The Armory and store of small shot so well maintained and kept, the numbers ready fitted of all sorts of muskets, calivers, petronels, dags, and other serviceable weapons, as pikes, halbards, targets, sheelds of sundry fashions, for varietie, anti-quitie of the things, and the relating of their uses, did make him with greate and honorable admiration to behold them all very well, and commend them.

¹ See a note in vol. I. p. 345.

These rare, rich, and most admirable pleasant sights overgone, their Majesties ascend to the Mint, which they viewed, and from thence to the Lyons, and other wilde beasts there kept and maintained for his Highnesses pleasures and pastimes, all Kingly delights, and such varietie, as I thinke the world cannot bring in one countrey more store, as it hath bin noted by many great travellers who have seene the greatest Courts of the world.

From this place, as they went to take their barges, the King of Denmarke walked a turne or two upon the Tower Wharfe, viewing the rich and forcible ordinance there placed, whereof there was no small store as his Majestie might well remember by the honorable peale was made him the day before, at their setting forwards from the Tower to goe through the Citie.

When their pleasures were well delighted with these shewes, the tide serving to shoote the bridge, they tooke their barges and were rowed to his Majestie's house, Whitehall. At their going from the Wharfe, an honorable peale of great ordinance was discharged, the Officers using great diligence and foresight, and the gunners applying themselves very paynefully for the performance thereof, the time being so short as truely they did all deserve great commendations.

This day brought with honor to end, they reposed themselves this night, and, in the morning very earely, being Saturday, they hunted in the Parke of Saint James, and killed a bucke. Then passed they on to Hyde Parke, where they hunted with great delight, spending the rest of the forenoone in following their pastime, and about the time of dinner returned, and there dined; and about foure of the clocke, their barges being by commaundement ready at the Privy-stayres, they went by water to Greenewitch.

The next day, being Sunday, her Majesty was churched, to the great joy of all the beholders, the two Kings being present at that time, where they heard a learned Sermon. This day they solace in their private delites, the Kingly Brothers, the Queene, the Prince, and Nobles of both Realmes, shewing by all the meanes they can, their loves; by variety of delight, to beguile time, and bid them welcome.

On Munday, the fourth day of August, the Queene, who had not beene partaker of any of their Kingly sports, accompanied their Royall persons, and the Prince, who were attended by the Nobility and gallant Courtyers, at which time their sport was to run at the ring; in following which they spend that afternoone,

where sundry of the young Noblemen proved their skill at that exercise, but none exceld his Majesty and the Denmarke King, at whose good successe the Queene was very much delighted, and tooke great pleasure therein.

The next day, being the solemne observation of his Majestie's Thanksgiving for freeing his Highnesse from the treacherous practises of the Gowryes, the forenoone of that day they spent in thankfulness to God, whereof his Majestie hath a most religious and zealous care¹. The afternoone, for their delight, were the beares and bulls brought, in which sport some time was spent, but made the shorter by reason of the honorable exercise of tilting; the Lords and Courtiers being readie armed, upon notice given them, repayred to the Tilt-yard, every one with his severall device, most gallantly mounted and richly armed.

To honor this Royall presence the more, the King of Denmark, armed very rich, and mounted on a most stately courser, came to the Tilt, and ran eight courses, the first foure with the Lord of Effingham, who brake their staves most gallantly, three a peece, and foyled the other. Then the noble and most toward Earl of Arundell ranne with his Majestie of Denmarke, and brake three staves apeece, to the great joy of all the beholders. Then followed the rest of the Tilters as they were appoynted, so gallantly behaving themselves, as was both honorable and delightfull to that most gracious and Royall Companie. Night growing upon them, they were enforced to give over their sport; where, taking their humble leaves of the two Kings, the Queene, and Prince, they left the Tilt-yard; and, being unarmed, returned to Court, where, besides former graces and favours shewed them by all their Royall persons, they received many thanks, and so spent the rest of the evening in other delightfull sport, till time of night called them to rest.

At this honorable exercise, the toward and most hopefull Prince shewed himselfe in his armour, being gallantly mounted, and as powerfull as any, though that his youth denyed strength. For this day's exercise, all the masters of defence and professors thereof, were summoned with their weapons to shew their skill, that the King of Denmarke might see the manner of our fight, and

¹ On this day Bishop Andrews preached before the Kings at Greenwich. This Sermon was afterwards printed with one preached by Bp. Andrews on the same occasion in 1610. The title of the two is as follows: "Two Sermons preached before the King's Majestie; the one at Greenwich, the fifth of August 1606, the King of Denmarke then being here; the other at Holdenby the fifth of August last, 1610; by the Bishop of Chichester, his Majestie's Almoner."

the varietie of weapons practised for men's defence, as well in private quarrels as their countrie's service; but the time overslipt, the challenger fences, when they had marched with their drums and ancients about the Tilt-yard, departed.

The next morning, the King of Denmarke being desirous to see some of their practise, they which were readie in the towne, having warning to give their attendance, in the morning early repaired to the Tilt-yard, and there, in presence of the two Kings, many of the Nobilitie and Courtiers shewed both manhood and skill, wherein the Kings tooke great pleasures, and gave them Kingly thanks and favors. This sport was made more short by reason of the Kinges going from Court to see our King's houses neerest London, and to hunt in their parkes. After they had broken their fastes, they set forward with their traynes to Richmonde; there that night they hunted and lay; and the next day dyned at Hampton Court, and there hunted and killed deare, with great pleasures; and surely the King of Denmarke was very much delighted with the gallantnesse of these Royall Pallaces of his Majestie; as did appeare by his earnest noting of them, and often recounting of their pastimes and pleasures.

From thence they proceeded to Windsore; where he was entertayned by the King most Royally. Heere was presented unto him the Knights of Windsore; beeing all goodly Gentlemen, and such as had served Queene Elizabeth in her warres; and, for service done, preferred in their latter yeares to this place of rest, and are called by name of *King James' Knightes of Windsore*. These goodly auncient Gentlemen, beeing in their roabes of purple and scarlet, with the Garter and Sainct George's Crosse upon them. Which goodly and charitable manner, when the King of Denmarke was possest withall, and the order of their first foundation and continuance, the King highly commended the founder, and in charitie wisht the successors to the worlde's end, might continue so honorable an action as that: whereof, by God's grace, there is no doubt; his Majestie from his first comming, having so graciously and most bountifully shewed his zeale to that honourable action by augmenting their portions which were possest of those places.

Long did they not make stay in Windsore, by reason that the time began to shorten for the King of Denmark's departure; wherefore after some time spent in hunting, they made their return to the Court at Greenwich, where her Majestie lay; and on Fryday, the eight of August, there arived, and so rested till Monday following.

The next morning then, being Saterdag the 9th of August, the tyde serving fit for their purpose, this gracious and Royal King of Denmark, being now to take his farewell of those he helde in esteeme, with great curtesie, and many thanks to those of the Counsell and Nobilitie which stayed from following the King, hee gave them a Princely and most loving farewell; and so of many others of honour and worship, with many rich and bountifull rewardes to the Officers of the Kinge's Householde and Guards. Which done, the barges giving their attendance, these two Royall Kinges, the Queene, and Prince Henrie, came aborde them; and were rowed by all industerous means downe the River Thames so low as Northfleete, or there aboutes; where they had their Trayne attending, and their coaches; so passed they on the way to Rochester, leaving the way to Gravesend, all the way followed with such numbers of people, as well from London as other places, that it was to be wondered at.

Time hath brought them neare the Citie of Rochester, where they are met with the Mayor and Bretheren of the Citie, who with reverence delivered his Mace unto his Majestie; which graciously did accept the same, and re-delivered it to the Mayor, willing him to keepe it, and to use it with justice as before. Which done, the Mayor taking his foote-cloth-horse, which was ready, and rode on before his Majestie, bearing the Mace before him throughout the Cittie to the house of the Right Worshipfull Sir Peter Bucke, Knight, one of his Highnes' Officers of the Navie; which house was the lodging of the King of Denmarke, whom our King there left to his repose, and returned himselfe to the house of the Reverend Byshop of Rochester, Doctor Barlow; and the Queene and Prince to their lodgings, which were all severall.

The next day, being Sunday, which holy appoynted day of the Lord their Majesties came to the Cathedral Church of the Colledge, where they heard a most learned Sermon by a reverend grave and learned Doctor ¹.

The Sermon ended, the dinners prepared aborde the shippes, and their boats and barges attending them, they sette forwardes to the water side, where every Officer in his place served: the Right Honourable Earle of Nottingham, Lord High Admyrall, being present, Sir Robert Mansell, Sir John Trevor, and others.

The King had a note delivered to him, contayning the names of every shippe, what burden they were, and what munition and men they had; which note his Highnes observed, and viewed every shippe as they rowed along, keeping their

¹ Dr. Parry; see hereafter, p. 91.

way untill they came to the shippe prepared for them to dine; which shippe was perfumed with sweete and pleasaunt perfume, and hanged with cloth of golde all the sides within: wherein three chaires of Estate were placed for the two Kinges and Queene.

The dinner was furnished with all kinds of daintie provision, in such abundant manner that the King of Denmarke marveyled where such store of meate should be dressed: and to see the manner of it, his Majestie tooke occasion, after dinner, to goe upon a spacious gallarie made upon lighters betweene the two Royall shippes, the Elizabeth Jonas and the White Beare, neere which two shippes ridde a great hulke, which was furnished with ovens for baked meates; and had in it three faire ranges to roast with; all which his Majestie in person saw; and thorowout that shippe, went from place to place, noting every roome.

The time passing away, the Kinges tooke their barges, accompanied with the Queene, Prince, and Noblemen, and rowed on towards Chatham, where they had sight of all the shippes; which were rich in ancientes, pendants, flagges, and streamers: and withall, so furnished with goodly men, as might joy their Majesties to beholde; all which made so glorious a show, that might well amaze the minde of a man to thinke on, being a friende; but terrifie the heart of the proudest enemy to see it. When their Majesties had viewed the whole fleete, they were rowed to the shore; where on a hill, very convenient, they might overlooke the whole navie, there was ordayned places for them. When being seated, and the word given, every shippe, in their due course, discharged orderly their whole ordinaunce in such order and forme, the one shippe after the other, as was greatly pleasing to their Majesties, and gayned great credite to the gunners, performers of the service. The great shot then discharged was two thousand three hundred, besides the health at dinner, which was begun with shot and answered. This welcome most honorably performed, the Kinges gave the Lord High Admyrall and the Officers thanks for their paines and care taken herein, and returned to Rochester to their lodgings. That evening, the Gunners of the Navie shewed very excellent and rare fire-workes.

The next morning, being Monday, and the 11th of August, the Kings, the Queene, and Prince, with their Traynes, set forward towards Gravesend, by the way so followed with people as was wonderfull, and did make the Trayne of Courtiers admire: yea, such was the multitude of people, Londoners and others, which came to Rochester, that thousands could get no lodgings or meate for their money.

The time hath brought these Royall Persons neere to the towne of Gravesend, where the Port-reeve of the towne, with his Brethren, in very decent manner, presented themselves to his Majestie, and offered his office unto his Highnesse, which graciously accepted the same, and delivered it againe unto him.

So passed their Majesties forwards to the water's side; at whose comming they were saluted with a mightie peale of ordinaunce from the King of Denmark's Admyrall, and so from all the reste of his fleete; who, having finished, the two Block-houses of Tylberie and Gravesend began; and thundered such a volye of shot, as was highly to be commended.

Aborde the Royall shippe of the Denmarke King, are these Princes gone; where a most heartie welcome they receave, and great cheare. The ordinaunce often discharging upon healthes to all friends; which ordinaunce was answered by our two Block-houses in such order as desarves commendations.

After dinner, the Gunners of the King of Denmark's shippes shewed their rare devises of fire-workes; the beautie of which was not to be seene by reason of the brightnesse of the Sunne, which dimmed the same.

Dinner ended, and the tyde (which stayeth not) serving to goe for London, our gracious King and Queene having brought his Kingly Brother to his owne shipp, from whence he brought him, after many kind adues given on every side, as well by the Princes as their Noble Trayne, they commende his Majestie to God's protection, and heartily wish his safetie in his owne countrey: which solemne farewells accomplished, the King, Queene, and Prince, tooke their barges, to come for the Court, leaving the King of Denmarke to God's pleasure and favor of the windes; who sent after them, a token of Princely love, in the thundering noyse of all the ordinaunce from all his shippes.

These Royall Companies parted, as you have hearde, the King of Denmarke tooke order for rewards to be given to all Officers of his Majestie's Householde; which, as it is sayd, was most bountifull; and for other places aborde the shippes, to the Maisters like rewardes¹.—Thus have I recounted, in two severall Pamphlets, the whole Discourse and Royall Entertainment of this most Royall King; whose pleasures and great welcomes in all places no Prince but may admire.

And most worthely was the love of all men bestowed on his Highnesse, for all courtesie and loving favoures [that] might be expected from a King of his magnificence, was not wanting in him, as his gracious countenance shewed in all places.

¹ These presents are enumerated by Mr. Pory in p. 93.

Besides which, it hath very seldome or never been seene, so many straungers togeather in this lande, so well governed, and so kindly used. Such was his Princely care of them and our Nation, for breeding of quarrells by any of his people, that of all other vices their charge was to keepe them from beeing druncke; and withall, inflicted upon them a hevy punishment for any that should offende contrary to his commandement; for the execution of this his Majestie's pleasure herein, hee appoynted a Marshall, who had divers men, as Officers under him, to have a vigilant care over them, which with all diligence performed the same; and such as they found druncke were brought to a house appoynted for their prison, where their thumbes were chayned togeather, and nayled by it to a post; where they remayned till some suit was made for their deliverie, and hartie repentance for their faults; the due execution whereof kept them in such awe, that you should seldome after the first weeke see any of them out of order¹.

A comfortable hearing it is to all Christians to see so vile a sinne reformed. God graunt us all to follow like examples of well-doinges; preserve our dread Sovereigne Lord King James, the Queene, the Prince, and all the rest of their Royall Issue; and sende this famous Kingly Brother a faire winde, and a safe and pleasant passage to his desired port. Amen.

Howes, the Continuator of Stow's Chronicle, furnishes some additional particulars relative to the preceding Royal Visit:

“ King James, upon long tarrying of the King of Denmark, rested very doubtfull of his comming by reason of the Sommer was so far spent, yet nevertheless, upon hope that he would come, kept continuall skowts at sea and land, to give intelligence of their first approch; and, upon the first newes, sent instantly to salute the King and all his Trayne, with all kindnesse and Kingly welcome, the Duke of Lenox, the Earle of Rutland, with others; but it was past eleven of the clocke uppon Thursday night before the Lords could come to Gravesend, where the Danes lay at anchor. The Lords were desirous to have gone aboard the Admirall, but the Captayne of the shippe tolde them they might not come aboard, for that the watch was sette, and the King asleepe, whom nowe they durst not wake, being so late, but prayed their Lordships to have patience untill the

¹ These precautions were most necessary, if we may credit the written testimonials of Sir John Harington, Sir Edward Peyton, and Howell the Historiographer.—See before, p. 72.

morning; in the meane space he would signifie unto the King his Maister, the singular care and kindnesse of the King of Great Britaine, and their Honors' great paines; and then the Lordes returned.

“ The next morning, King James with Prince Henry, the Duke of Lenox, the Lord Admirall, the Lord Chamberlaine, the Earles of Rutland, Pembroke, Mountgomery, with others, the Lord Mounteagle, the L. Compton, and divers other Barons, went by barge from Greenwich to Gravesend; and when the K. of Denmarke beheld them neere unto his ship, he went to descend to entertaine them, but perceiving the narrownes of the stayres woulde not permit two at once eyther to ascend or descend, he stayed in his ship, and with all Princely courtesie entertained the Nobilitie as they came aboard, taking every man by the hand and kissed the Prince; and when the Kings met they embraced each other. Then the King of Denmarke led the King of Great Britaine into the cabin, which was very beautious, and placed him uppon the upper hand, giving him precedence all the while they were aboard, which kindnesse King James performed unto Christianus in all places wheresoever they mette during his abode in England; both Kings dyned in the cabin, and the Lords, with others, were very honorably feasted in another roome. They rested themselves awhile; and, after supper, King James brought his Brother of Denmarke unto his lodging, which was within the garden on the Tilt-yard side. The next morning they rode a hunting into Eltham Parke, and the morrow after, being Sundaie, King James feasted King Christianus and all his Trayne: the Two Kings and the Prince dyned at one table, and their Counsellors at another, placing a Dane first and then a Briton, throughout the table, &c.

“ By this time King James understood that his Brother, by reason of his late comming as aforesayd, meant not to stay so long, nor to visite so many parts of the Kingdome as hee purposed when hee first prepared to come for England; gave forthwith order to the Lorde Maior of London to prepare the Cittie against Thursday se'nnight following, and to make such trophies and devices as the time would permit, and that the grave Cittizens should sit in their accustomed state and order, in their liveries, as is used at coronation of Princes; which they very dutifully performed.

“ As the King of Great Britaine in his Princely kindnes gave precedence to the King of Denmarke, so likewise did the Nobilitie and others, according to their place, gave the upper hand to the Danish Counsellors and Officers. The King of Denmarke's Pentioners rode on horsebacke, but his Guard went on foote, hav-

ing nowe omitted the carrying of their muskets, and marched with gilded halberds, which King James had caused to be given them.

“The Recorder of London¹ presented the King of Denmarke with a fayre cup of gold, who with as great kindnesse accepted it. Then the Pageant, after it had ceased her melodious harmonie, beganne to expresse the purpose thereof, *viz.* Divine Concord, as sent from Heaven, descended in a cloud from the toppe unto the middle stage; and, with a lowd voyce, spake an excellent Speech in Latine, purporting their heartie welcome, with the heavenly happines of peace and unitie amongst Christian Princes, &c.; but, through the distemperature of the unrulie multitude, the Kings could not well heare it, although they enclined their eares very seriously thereunto.

“After they were come to Whitehall in the evening, they were entertained with fire-workes upon the water.

“The next morning, King Christianus and Prince Henry, with others of both Nations, went unto the Abbey of Westminster², and into the Chappell Royall of Henry the Seaventh, to behold the monuments, against whose comming the image of Queene Elizabeth and certaine other images of former Kings and Queenes, were newly beautified, amended, and adorned with Royall vestures, but he tooke most notice of St. Edward’s shrine, and therewithall admired the whole architecture and fabrication. After dinner the King, being accompanied with the Lord Admirall, the Lord Chamberlayne, and others, went by coach unto Paul’s Church, and into the quyer, and other Chappels therein. And then the King and the Lord Chamberlayne, with some others, ascended the top of the steeple, and when he had survayed the Cittie, hee helde his foote still whilest Edward Soper, keeper of the steeple, with his knife cutte the length and breadth thereof in the lead; and for a lasting remembrance thereof, the said Soper, within few dayes after, made the King’s charecter in gilded copper, and fixed it in the midst of the print of the King’s foote, which was no sooner done, but some rustie mindes of this yron age, thinking all gold that glistred, with violent instruments attempted to steale it. From thence the King rode to the Royall Exchange, and walked twice about the upper pawne, observing the riches and beauty thereof; and when he had walked twice about below also in the Marchants’ walke, hee sate downe upon the long bench at the East side, and behelde the manner of the building.

¹ Sir Henry Montague. See before, p. 68; and hereafter.

² The Ringers at St. Margaret’s, Westminster, were paid 2s. 6d. “when the King of Denmark came to the Abbey on the first of August.”

Then tooke coach, and with the foresayd Lords went to the Tower of London, and survayed all the offices and munition, and having walked a while up and downe, hee ascended the White Tower, commonly called Julius Cæsar's Tower, where himselfe discharged a peece of ordinance, and being descended, Sir William Wade, Lieutenant of the Tower, entertayned him and his chiefe attendants with a very Royall banquet, and the rest of their Trayne were likewise very honorably banquetted in another roome, which kindnesse the King very graciously accepted; and then returned to Whitehall, where King James expected his comming, and uppon Saterday they went both to Greenewich, to the Churching of the Queene, which was solemnized the next day, being the third of August.

"From this tyme the King of Denmarke, during his abode in England, in his daylie exercises, used eyther to hunt, hawke, play at tennis, see wrestling, or the manly play of the English fencers¹, six of the best being selected, and played three against three with foysls at sundry weapons, according to the manner of fight: there was also the like play betweene a skilful Scot and a Germaine; or running at Ring or Tilt; he ranne at Tilt against the Duke of Lenox, the Earles of Arondell and Southampton, and the Lord Compton; or else in ryding to see the King's pleasant parkes and stately houses within twentie myle of London; and upon Thursdaie, the 7th of August, hee was enstalled Knight of the Garter at Windsore, and in his robes of order he did his beysance at the altar, and the next day all his Privie Counsellors were very solemnely and honorablie feasted by the Earle of Rutland at Detford, where both Kinges were expected, but it was late before they returned from Windsore.

"Sunday the tenth of August, both the Kings, the Queene, Prince Henry, with all their Counsellors, Chiefe Officers, and Attendants, were most sumptuously feasted at Chatham in the Elsabeth Jonas, which gallant ship was won-

¹ The following Letter, dated "Greenwich, August 6," is copied from Drummond, [see pp. 49. 53. 73. 90].

"The 5th of August, being a solemn day kept by his Majesty, was honoured with Martial pastimes, where the King of Denmark, for gracing of the solemnity, would be an actor. The Tilters were all in plain armor, except Christianus, who, mounted on a dapple-gray, had his armour sky-coloured, spangled with some gold; he wore in his helm a bunch of blew and white feathers, as the rest of his company. He broke some staves with a marvellous grace, and great applause of the people. The declining of the sun ended this day's sport. The next day, early in the morning, he was invited to see a show of fencers in the Privy Gardens, where it was a wonder to see how foolishly ambitious those fellows were, if they could, to have killed one another; for they would have most willingly taken the buttons off the foils, as their swords differed not much from common ones. But this sport was interrupted by a great rain."

drously adorned with cloth of golde, and in the halfe decke a rich chayre of Estate. After dinner they went from that ship to the White Beare upon a bridge, above twelve score yards long, made of firre masts, rayled in on eyther side, which floted upon the water, and was so broad as foure men might easily walke together; at the midle of this bridge was a great hoye, which they called the Kitchen, wherein the diet for that day was dressed, and when the Kings and the rest were gone past the Wind-mill-hills, then the gallies, ships, and Castle discharged their ordenaunce to the number of almost twelve hundreth shot.

“The next day, being Monday, King James, Queene Anne, Prince Henry, with certaine other Brytaine Princes and Peeres, about ten a clocke in the fore noone, went a boord the King of Denmarke’s greatest shippe, commonly called the Admirall, riding at anchor before Gravesend, which was a gallant shippe of a very hie and narrow building, the beakhead, the stearne, and her three galleries, were fairely gilded, the wast and halfe decke adorned with arras and other rich ornaments, wherein the said Princes were very Royally feasted, and as they sat at Banquet, greeting each other with kindnes and pledges of continuing amity and heart’s desire of lasting health, the same was straight wayes knowne by sound of drumme and trumpet, and the cannons lowdest voyce beginning ever first in the Admyrall, seconded by the English block-houses, then followed the Vice-Admirall, and after her the other six Denmarke ships, ending alwaies in the smallest.

“About foure a clocke, when the Banquet was ended, and the said Princes fully performed all Kingly complements, K. James began to take his leave to depart, but his Brother being loth to leave his Royall presence so soone, having prepared against that time, for their entertainment, an ingenious device of his owne upon the water floting neere unto them, and would therefore have had the King, Queene, and Prince, with the great assembly, stayed untill the evening to have seene the rarenes of his invention, but when he saw the King of Great Brytaine and his Trayne ready to depart, notwithstanding the brightnes of the sonne, hee caused fire to bee put unto it, and whilst that device continued, there were certaine Danes in an other barge that blew up strange and extraordinary lofty rockets into the ayre. The Device of wild fire was in Pageant-wise, betweene foure round pillers uppon a lighter framed, where the seven deadly sinnes in their lively colours, shape, and characters, sate chained fast, and for their wickednesse bound to endure eternall punishment, and over their heads in the midst of them, uppon the top of a pinnacle was a fierce lion cowchaunt, signifying sudden vengeance, holding in his

teeth the loose ende of the chaine, which compassed them about, and from the lyon's mouth the fire first did issue forth, and from thence, without any confusion or further ayde, by degrees and distinct proportion, descended into all parts, making sundry sorts of sounds, with loftie rocketts and fire flakes mounting in the ayre, and great number of thunder crackes like peales of ordinance, and for the space of more then a quarter of an hower the foreseid images sate burning in Etnae's flame resembling hell's endles torments prepared for such offenders, but in the end they were consumed, and so were the foure greate wooden pillers, one after an other, being wel nigh three yeards in square distance from the rest, this nocturnall pastime of pleasant variable fire-workes lasted about halfe an hower, and only was disgraced by too much light, wanting Egypt's darknes to have made it bright. Upon the Wednesday following, the King, with his eight shippes, went a little lower, and the next day after, being Thursday, he set sayle, and with favorable winds returned home in eight dayes¹.

"The King of Denmarke gave many gifts and rewards, as chaynes, jewells, bruches, and such like, besides twenty thousand markes in money unto such as either did him service or courtesey. This Christianus the Fourth is son to Phrederick the second of that name, King of Denmarke; his Mother's name was Sophia, of very famous memory. Hee was borne the twelfe of Aprill, one thousand five hundreth seventy-seven, and succeeded his Father in the yeere one thousand five hundreth eighty-and-eyght, and married Anne Catherine, the daughter of Joachim Phredericke, Marques of Brandenburg. His Sister Anne, daughter of the forenamed Phredericke and Sophia, was borne the twelfe of February one thousand five hundred seventy-foure, and married unto James the Sixt, in the yeere one thousand five hundreth and nintie, then King of Scotts, now King of Great Brittain, Fraunce, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c."

¹ The following Letter, dated "Greenwich, Aug. 12," is copied from Drummond's Works [see p. 88]:

"None of our pleasures are lasting; they, as all humane things, have their end. The King of Denmark, the 9th of this month, taking his leave of his Sister and his Majesty, (who with tears in their eyes returned) went towards his ships to Gravesend. He was presented with a sword and some excellent horses: he liberally rewarded such of the King's servants as were appointed to attend him; left a general commendation in this island of his virtues, which is much beholden unto him for honouring it with his presence. For although sundry have thought it dangerous that Princes should see other; yet in the meeting of two such Kings, what peril could the most politick judgment foresee? They were not jealous of one another's estate or worth, each of them wishing double happiness to his Brother. Their Kingdoms lay not together, whereby they might have been instigated by avarice or ambition. They met Brothers; and departed more than brother-friends."

The King of Denmark's Entertainment is thus further illustrated by Mr. John Pory¹, in a Letter to Sir Robert Cotton, dated August 12:

"Sir, On Sunday the Kings, Queen, and Prince, lying the night before in the Bishop's Palace at Rochester, had a Latine² Sermon in the Cathedral Church, preached by Dr. Parry, who delivered so good matter with so good a grace as their Majesties were very well pleased to hear him. His text was, "*Fac judicium, et videbis faciem Domini*³." The Sermon ended, they took their barges at Rochester Bridge, and so row for the space of two miles along the gallies, ships, and pinnaces, viewing them as they lay, till they came against Upnor Castle. There they mounted the Elizabeth-Jonas, in which their dinner was provided. This ship was joined by a bridge founded upon mastes, and railed upon each side, being 200 feet long, to the Beare, which was fitted in all pointes for the entertainment of the Danish Lordes and others. Between both Royal ships lay a hulke, which served for a kitchen to both. In the Elizabeth, the Great-chamber, being part of the upper-deck abaft the main-mast, contained a long table for my Lord Chamberlen and other of our English Lordes; the same deck, before the main-mast, had a table for the Ladies. From whence, up a payer of stayers, ther was a passage unto the orelope, where was a faire tente sett up, lined and hanged in the inside with silkes and cloth of gold; at the upper end whereof, under a rich cloth of Estate, sate the two Kinges, the Queen, and Prince at dinner. Some

¹ Of whom see before, p. 33.

² The Discourse being in Latin, like a *Concio ad Clerum*, might be in compliment to his Majesty of Denmark, who probably would not have understood a word of the Sermon had it been delivered in the vulgar tongue. Watch and *be sober*, or rather the latter words, would have been an apt text, though the preacher might have in vain harangued upon it; for, notwithstanding it was the Lord's-day, there is a tradition that the two Monarchs after dinner tried the strength of their head-pieces, "in draining down draughts of Rhenish" and of other wines; and that, as Hamlet says, both "might be cleped drunkards." Rev. S. DENNE.—Bishop Andrews's Sermon, noticed in p. 80, is in Latin.

³ This Sermon was published soon after, entitled, "*Concio de Regno Dei*, in Matth. vi. 33." Lond. 1606, 4to. Dr. Parry appears to have excelled in Latin discourses, for he was selected to preach "a Latin Sermon, three quarters of an houre long," before the King at Oxford in 1605; see vol. I. p. 532. Some biographical particulars of him are there given. "He was reputed," says Wood, "by all of his time an able Divine, well read in the Fathers, a thro' paced Disputant, and so eloquent a Preacher, that King James always professed he seldom heard a better." On the present occasion he obtained something more than professions; for, according to the same author, "the King of Denmark gave him a very rich ring."

hower after they had dined, they took coach at Upnor Castle, on the shore towards Gravesend; and having gone some three quarters of a mile, they made a stand upon a windmill-hill, whence they might perfectly view all the whole navy. Then began the gallies next the bridge to discharge, and after them all the pinnaces and ships in order as they lay, to the number of 1008 great shott. This thunder made such musique in the King of Denmark's eares, as he told the King, if he had spent half his Kingdom in a Banquet, he could not have contented him so well; and farther, that in requital, he gave himself and his hart to do the King, as long as he lived, all friendly offices both in word and deed. Whereunto the King answered, "That never man was to him so welcome as the King of Denmark; nor ever should any—till he came againe."

"Yesterday, being Munday morning, between seven and eight of the clock, the King of Denmark returned to his fleet lying at Gravesend, to make all things ready against the King and Queen should come aboard. About eleven they ascended the Admiral of Denmark, and not above 50 persons were admitted on board. At every health, there were from the ships of Denmark, and the Fortes, some three or four skore great shott discharged; and of these thundering vollies there were between 40 and 50. You would have thought that Jupiter had bene invited. About four of the clocke in the afternoone, the King of Denmark presented to the King a beautifull and well-contrived fire-work (it stood upon a lighter), being in forme of a square conduit or cube with four pillars answering the four corners. Upon the top of this cube stood a lyon with a chain in his hande, which fettered eight capital Vices that sate underneath, upon the angles and sides of this cube or area. This fire-work was appropriated to the month of July, the lyon representing him in the Zodiack, as by these verses written about him in golden letters you may perceive:

" Ecce Leo, summi genuinus solis alumnus,
Injiciens noxîs ferrea vinc'la malis;
Te docet injectis vitium compescere frænis,
Scilicet inde viri mens generosa liquet."

"To the Vices in particular were ascribed these Epigrams:

IRACUNDIA.	Ora tument, oculique rubent, præcordia fervent; Hei mihi! dum præceps in mea damna feror.
DESIDIA.	Pectus iners, semperque sequax ignobilis otî, Utibilem nulli me facit esse bono.

LUXURIA.	Fama, valetudo, res, et mens conscia recti, Ut pereant prava libido facit.
FALLACIA.	Ut frontem mihi larva tegit, sic subdola mentem Lingua; fides verbis ne sit habenda meis.
INVIDIA.	Cor mihi fortunis aliorum marcet opimis, Exercetque animum debita pœna meum.
SUPERBIA.	Haud ipsa mihi nota satis sum; meque et mea magni ¹ Cum stolidis faciam, cætera despicio.
INJUSTITIA.	Quid leges, quid jura vetent, nil curo, nec æquum Quid fiet; arbitrii lex mihi sola placet.
GULA.	Pinguis aqualiculus mihi turgent, mentis acumen Hebet; paupertas dum mea tecta petat.

“ This firework very methodically, one part after another, continued burning and cracking for the space of three quarters of an hower. Which being consumed, the Kinges, with teares in their eyes, took their leaves.

“ The Guiftes that the King hath bestowed upon the King of Denmark, were, a sword and hanger valued at £.17,000. Item, a cup of £.5000. Item, to the King of Denmarke's Councill, plate to the value of £.2000. Item, to his Gentlemen, chains of gold to the same value. And to the inferior Danes, £.1000 in money².

“ The King of Denmark in the Guifts hath not bene inferior; for he hath given in Court 30,000 dollers, *viz.* to the Household beneath the staires 15,000 dollars; to the Officers above the stayers 10,000; and to the Querry or Stabler 5000 dollars. Besides, to every of the Kinge's and Queen's Bed-chamber, he hath given jewels of great value.

“ On the Queen he hath bestowed his picture richly set with jewels; and on the Prince, his Vice-admiral and best fighting ship, being with all her furniture not less worth than £.25,000, and a rapier and hanger valued at 20,000 markes. Besides which, he hath bestowed liberally upon the Navy, &c.

“ To attend upon his Majesty upon his way homeward, Sir Robert Mansell is appointed with the Vanguard and the Moon.

Your most devoted; Jo. PORY³.”

¹ This verse appears to have been defectively copied.

² Among the Free-Gifts for 1606-7 is this item, “ Rewards to the King of Denmark's servants £.1235.”

³ Cotton Library, Julius, C. III. 45. Birch's MSS. 4176.

The following Documents, now first printed, are extracted from the valuable and well-preserved Records of the City of London :

“ At a Common Council, 17 July 1606, an Act was passed, for appointing a Committee, to consider of the charge for preparation against the passage of the King and the King of Denmark through the City ; that the streets should be prepared in the best and most beautiful manner ; and one Pageant prepared and placed in some meet and convenient place within the City.”

On the 21st, the following Precept was issued, by the Lord Mayor, to the several Livery Companies :

“ For the better bewtefyinge of Streets and Laines within this Cittie, against the Passage of the King's most Excellent Majestie and the Kinge of Denmarke, their Nobillity and Traynes, from the Towre to Westminster, through this Cittie: Theis are, in his Majestie's name, straightly to charge and comaund you, that, all excuses and delayes sett aparte, you have and provide your Rayles in a readynes for the Liveries of your Company to stand in, and to bee sett upp in the Streets, against Wednesday the 30th daie of this present month of July at the furthest ; and likewise that your said Rayles against that tyme be hunge with blew asuer Cloth, and garnished with Banners and Streames in the most bewtifullest manner that may bee, as formerlye in like Solempnities hath beene accustomed ; and that you likewise provide Six Wiffers at the least to everye Score of Livery, well apparelled, with white staves in their hands, to stand with their backs to the Common Rayles over against your Companie's Rayles, for the better and quiet orderinge of the Streets through which their Majesties shall passe. Whereof see you faile not at your uttermost perill. This 21st of July 1606. SEBRIGHT.”

“ At a Common Council, July 23, an Act was passed for levying £.1000, to be paid by the several Companies, for the finishing of the Shews against the King's Passage through the City.

“ July 28, Precepts were issued to the Aldermen of the Wards through which the Procession would pass on the 31st day of that month, for them to see the houses hanged with tapestry, silk, and such or the like rich ornaments, for the honor and credit of the City.

“ Precepts were also issued, prohibiting the ringing of Bells till seven o'clock in the evening ; for that the noise may be offensive, and hinder their Majesties hearing such Speeches as should be delivered unto them.”

“Court of Aldermen, July 31, a Cup of Gold with a cover, weighing 62 ounces and a half and half a quarter, at £.3. 10s. the ounce, ordered to be given this day to the King of Denmark at his Passage through the City.”

On the 17th of August, Sir Thomas Glover, Ambassador to Turkey, and Sir Reynold Argall¹, of Essex, were knighted at Hampton Court; as was Sir Thomas Jordain, about the same time, at Windsor.

In this month, the King visited Dr. Bilson, Bishop of Winchester, at Farnham Castle, where he knighted Sir George Erskine; and on the 30th we find his Majesty on a Visit to Henry Wriothesley, Earl of Southampton, at Beaulieu Abbey²; where he knighted Sir John Leigh, of the Isle of Wight.

In September, on his return to Hampton Court, he also knighted Sir William Oglander³, of the Isle of Wight; and Sir George Philpot⁴, of Hampshire.

¹ The Argalls were possessed for several generations of the manor of Walthamstow-Bedyk or Low-Hall. Sir Reginald, in 1600, brought the Rectorial manor at Walthamstow. See Lysons's *Environs*. Another of this family, Sir Samuel, was knighted June 26, 1622.

² Beaulieu, situated in a bottom, is defended on every side by high grounds covered with wood, and washed by a meandering stream, which winds through it. The beauties of this estuary are well developed in Mr. Gilpin's *Forest Scenery*. The river is stocked with plenty of fish, and is navigable from its mouth to the town by ships of sixty tons burthen, and fringed quite to the edge of the water with most beautiful hanging woods. The town itself has little claim to attention. The remains of the superb Abbey (the burial-place of Queen Eleanor, Mother of King John) are on the opposite side of the river, to the North-east of the town; a communication with which is formed by an old wooden bridge. The ancient stone wall that formerly encircled the buildings of the Abbey, and which exists in many spots almost entire, though thickly mantled with ivy, measures in circumference about a mile and a quarter. Few vestiges of this once affluent and considerable Monastery are now to be discerned, and such as remain are in so ruinous a state that it is difficult to discover their pristine designation. Henry Earl of Southampton inherited the manor of Beaulieu from his father, who had purchased it from King Henry VIII. after the general Dissolution of Religious Houses. In the Reign of William III. it became the property of Ralph Lord (afterwards Duke of) Montague, who married the heiress of the Wriothesleys; and by inter-marriages has now descended to the Duke of Buccleugh. The circumference of the Manor is 28 miles, and the annual revenue amounts to between 4 and £.5000.—The King was so pleased with his reception at Beaulieu, and the entertainment of sporting on the New Forest, that on the 20th of February following he granted to the Earl of Southampton, by letters patent, divers privileges and franchises, in several manors, and particularly in that of Beaulieu; and he again visited that place in 1609, 1619, and 1623.

³ Sir William Oglander, of Nunwell, was at this time the Sheriff of Hampshire.—His son, Sir John, will be noticed when knighted December 22, 1615.—His grandson, William, was created a Baronet, Dec. 12, 1665.—Of this family, seated at Parnham, Dorset, see *Hutchins's History of that County*, 2d edit. vol. I. p. 450.

⁴ Sir George Philpot was Sheriff of Hampshire in 1631.

On the 11, Lord Lisle thus writes from Hampton Court to the Earl of Shrewsbury:

“ Heer is expected every day the Count of Vaudemont, yongest son to the Duke of Lorraine, whoe, according to the list which is delivered, hath as greate a traine as the King of Denmarke browght on shore with him. There was consultation if the King showld defray him; but at the last it was concluded that hee will not.

“ Divers of the Scottish Ministers, which were sent for, are at London; but, mee thincks, the opinion of the Conference with them grows somewhat colde; neither, for owght I can heare, yf they bee called unto it, will they say much³.

“ The King goes this morning, and the Queen with him, to end his summer hunting at Windsor; and I thincke it will bee Fryday before they bee heer again. My Lord of Salisbury, God be praised, is well recovered; yet I thincke will not see the King till hee come hether againe.

“ My Lord Chamberlen is well, and; and so be all the great-ones¹.”

At this time four eminent Divines were selected to preach before his Majesty, “ for the reduction of the two Melvills, and other Presbyterian Scots, to a right understanding of the Church of England².” The Scots had arrived in London the beginning of September, and had warning given them to attend at Hampton Court on the 20th. The Preachers, were Dr. William Barlow, the Bishop of Rochester³; Dr. Lancelot Andrews, lately promoted to the Bishopric of Chichester⁴; Dr. John King, the Dean of Christ Church, afterwards Bishop of London⁵; and Dr. John Buckeridge⁶, who succeeded Dr. Barlow in the

³ “ The King was now attempting, but with less ceremony, to establish that sort of agreement between the Churches of Scotland and England which the English Puritans, on their part, had found it convenient, for the present, to seem satisfied with after the famous Conference at Hampton Court.” L.

¹ Lodge, vol. III. p. 309.

² Wood’s *Athenæ*, by Bliss, vol. II. col. 507.

³ William Barlow was descended from an ancient Lancashire family. He was of St. John’s and Trinity Colleges, Cambridge, and being D. D. of that University, was incorporated at Oxford in 1601. He became Prebendary of Westminster in that year; Dean of Chester in 1603; Bishop of Rochester in 1605; of Lincoln in 1608; and died in 1613. He was author of several works. Further particulars of his life may be found in Wood’s *Fasti*, vol. I. col. 294. — He has before occurred in this volume, p. 43.

⁴ Who has, and will, continually come under our notice; see particularly in vol. I. p. 589.

⁵ Of Dr. King, who contributed to entertain the King at Oxford, see vol. I. p. 532.

⁶ John Buckeridge was educated at Merchant Taylors’ School and St. John’s College, Oxford. He became Chaplain to Robert Earl of Essex, and afterwards to Archbishop Whitgift. He was preferred successively to a Prebend of Hereford; a Prebend of Rochester; the Archdeaconry of Northampton 1604; and the Vicarage of St. Giles, Cripplegate, the same year. About that time he was made a

Bishopric of Rochester¹ (as he had Dr. Andrews in the vicarage of St. Giles, Cripplegate).

Bishop Barlow² preached on the 21st, "On the Antiquity and Superiority of Bishops."—On the 22nd, the first audience was given.

Dr. Buckeridge³ preached on the 23rd. "In the performance of this service," says Wood, "he took for his text these words of the Apostle; 'Let every soul be subject to the Higher Powers,' &c. Rom. xiii. 1. In canvassing whereof, he fell upon the point of the King's Supremacy in Causes Ecclesiastical; which he handled (as the most Rev. Archdeacon Spotswood, who was present at the Sermon, has informed us more of him⁴) both soundly and learnedly, to the satisfaction of all the hearers, only it grieved the Scotch Ministers to hear the Pope and Presbytery so often equalled in their opposition to Sovereign Princes," &c.⁵

Dr. King⁶ ("the King of Preachers") preached next, "He took for his theme Canticles, viii. 11, and thereupon discoursing of the office of Presbyters did prove Lay Elders to have no place or office in the Church."

Bishop Andrews⁷ on the 28th, "On the Right and Power of calling Assemblies."

"This course," observes Spotswood, "the King took, as conceiving that some of the Ministers should be moved by power of reason to quit their opinions, and give place to the truth; but," he justly adds, "that seldome happeneth where the minde is prepossessed with prejudice either against person or matter."

Chaplain to the King; President of St. John's College, Oxford, in 1605; Canon of Windsor 1606; Bishop of Rochester 1611; Ely 1627-8; and died in 1631. His tract "De potestate Papæ in Rebus Temporalibus" was in great estimation at that time. See further in Wood's Ath. (by Bliss, II. 506.)

¹ Not immediately; Dr. Richard Neile intervening, from 1608 to 1611.

² These Sermons were all printed in 1606. Dr. Barlow's at Oxford, 4to. A copy is in the Bodleian Library, two in the Middle Temple Library, and a fourth, *carente titulo*, in that of Sion College (O. xii. 6.) The text is from Acts, xx. 28.

³ Dr. Buckeridge's Sermon was printed at London, 1606, 4to. Copies are to be found in the Bodleian (4to. M. 25, Th.), Sion College (O. xii. 6.), and Middle Temple Library (Miscell. Tracts, vol. XCI.)

⁴ Archbishop Spotswood has given a full account of these proceedings, and the Conference in particular, in his History of the Church of Scotland.

⁵ Wood's Athenæ, *ut supra*.

⁶ Dr. King's Sermon was printed at Oxford, 1606, 4to. A copy is in the Library of Sion College.

⁷ Dr. Andrews's Sermon, which was intituled, "On the Right and Power of calling of Assemblies," was printed at London, 1606, 4to.—A copy of this edition is in the British Museum, and another in the Middle Temple Library, bound with Bp. Barlow's and Bp. Buckeridge's. It is re-printed in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons." The text is from Numbers, x. 1, 2. "Then God spake unto Moses, Make thee two trumpets of silver, of one peece shalt thou make them (or they shall be for thee) to assemble (or call together) the congregation, and to remove the campe."

Thus, after two audiences before the Scottish Counsel, "for after this they were no more admitted to his Majestie's presence," they returned to Scotland, no good end having been answered by their journey.

"September 23, Frauncis Prince of Vawdemont, third son to Charles Duke of Lorraine, arrived in London, with seven Earles, tenne Barons, fortie Gentlemen of quallitie, and sixscore common persons; all the Lordes and Gentlemen were very brave and cumlie in their apparell, and as civill in their behaviour¹."

On the 24th, Rowland Whyte thus writes, from Hampton Court, to the Earl of Shrewsbury:

"The lost stag was fownd, and bravely killed, and his heade brought in great pomp to the Privy-chamber, which hath made an end of all displeasure with houndes and huntsmen. The Duke of Curland dined with the King yesterday in the Privy-chamber; and yesterday Dr. Buckeridge preached before the King, and proved by Scripture and history, with many excellent examples, the supremacy of the King, and that in all ages the authority of Kinges governed and ruled all Presbiters and Clergy. At this Sermon were all the Puritanes of Scotland that were here. Twice the Bushops and Ministers of Scotland have had conference before the King, but no English Counsailor, nor English Bushop, or Minister, or any other Englishman, was admitted; only the Dean of the Chappell² was by his Majesty specially comanded to be by. Yt seemes, for aught can be preached or said unto them, that they are the same *opiniastre* in their humors. This night the Earle of Vawdemont wilbe here, with his crew, *plus clinquam que le soleile*: The King's Majesty defraies the charge; a diet of 200 dishes is apointed to be served all the while he abides here. Upon Thursday come senight the King will go to Roiston and Huntingdon for 20 dayes. Some hope that this E. Vawdemont will away before; some others believe he will go along to hunt with the King. The christening of the King of France's children is very privately performed, without any maner of ceremony, at Fountainbleau: the Lords, but specially the great Ladies of France, are sorry it was not publique, for they wold have had there richnes appeare which was provided for them³.

¹ Howes.

² Dr. Mountague.

³ "The French King, the 23d of October, with great pomp and solemnitie christened his three legitimate children, viz. his son Lewes, the Dolphin of Fraunce, being full five yeares of age, unto whom Pope Paule the First was godfather, and his two daughters, both of them being younger then their brother the Dolphin, and were both baptised before him; their names are Christine and Elizabeth." Howes.

“The Court will be great to-night. Your two worthy daughters, Arundell and Pembroke, are here in Court to grace the Court; they are well, and live here in great honor, to your Lordship’s great comfort. My Lord of Salisbury is very well, which I know your Ho. wilbe verie glad to heare of. The Lady Rawleigh was here; kneeled to the King; but his Majesty passed by her in silence¹.”

“September 25, the Prince of Vawdemount and the Noblemen and Gentlemen that came with him, all went by coach to the King at Hampton Court, where, for fourteen days’ space, they were all very Royally entertained and feasted, and rode a hawking and hunting with the King to divers places, and then returned. Charles Duke of Lorraine hath two other sonnes, *viz.* Henry Marques Dupont, and Charles Cardinal of Ments and Strasbrogh; he hath also foure daughters, being all cosens-germaine to our Sovereigne Lord the King by the Mother’s side, and the said Dukedome of Lorraine is a free and absolute estate, and was of auncient time a famous Kingdome, then called Austrasie, but through long wars with the Kings and Emperors it was reduced unto a Dukedome, and made a limbe of the Empire, as Monsiur Bernard de Girard, Seigneur de Hayllan, strongly affirmeth in his booke called the Estate of Fraunce, folio 248, 249, 250, &c. This most noble and renowned Dukedome of Lorraine, lieth betweene Fraunce and Germany, bordering upon the Reyne².”

“While King James was making a Progress³ in September and October this year, extremely out of humour with the sky for not raining, and thereby weakening the scent of his dogs, the Prince resided at Richmond, where the French Ambassador, who had been obliged to quit London on account of the Plague, and could not follow the King because he made so little stay in any place, was a frequent Attendant at his Highness’s Court⁴.”

On the 4th of October, Rowland Whyte, in a Letter to the Earl of Shrewsbury, says, “At Hampton Court, in the Queen’s Presence-chamber, there was dawncing: the King, Queen, Prince, and Vawdemont, were by. My Lady Pembroke was taken out by a French Cavagliero to dance a corrante: her La. tooke out our noble Prince. At last it came to a galliard: the Prince tooke out my Lady Pembroke, and she the Earle of Perth: no Lady there did dawnce neare soe well as she did that day; soe she carried away the glory, and it was given her

¹ Lodge, vol. III. p. 311.

² Howes.

³ The King does not appear to have been absent in any regular Progress; probably only a hunting excursion at Royston, Newmarket, and other short distances.

⁴ Birch’s Life of Prince Henry, p. 74.

by the King, Queen, and others. Vawdemont dawnsed; the Queen dawnsed; Lady Essex, Lady Knolles, Lady Levingston, the Maides. The King is now at Roiston; continewes there a moneth. Vawdemont will take his leave on Tuesday, and soe away. The Sicknes increased in London this weeke 56; God cease it, if it be His will! I forgott to signifie that, for all our learned Sermons, the Presbiteriall Ministers of Scotland are *plus endurciés* in their opinions¹."

The Ringers at St. Margaret's were paid 2s. 6d. "when the King came from Hampton Court."

At Newmarket, October 17, the King knighted Sir Nicholas Hayes, of Hampshire; on the 18th, Sir William Hewet², of London; on the 19th, Sir Thomas Plater³ and Sir Edward Lewknor⁴, both of Suffolk.—Sir Henry Cheney, of Cambridgeshire, and another Sir John Leigh⁵, were soon after knighted at Royston.

On the 1st of November, Sir Edward Torbock⁶, of Lancashire, was knighted at Whitehall; on the 5th, Sir John Grey⁷, and Sir William Wright of Suffolk.

The 5th of November was this year first celebrated as the Anniversary of the Gunpowder Treason. The King attended Divine Service at Whitehall, and Bp. Andrews there preached before him on the 118th Psalm, verses 23 and 24. "This is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes. This is the day which the Lord hath made, let us rejoyce and be glad in it⁸."

On the 13th, Sir Nicholas Prideaux⁹, of Cornwall, was knighted at Rich-

¹ Lodge, vol. III. p. 316.

² Probably the nephew of Sir W. Hewet, Lord Mayor in 1582, in whose will is this item: "To my nephews, Henry and William Huet, son of my brother Thomas Huet, my mansion and dwelling in Philpot-lane in London."—It was this Lord Mayor to whom Sir Edward Osborne, the founder of the family of the Duke of Leeds, was first apprentice and afterwards son-in-law, marrying Sir William's only daughter and child, whom he had preserved from a watery grave. See Brydges's Peerage, I. 253.

³ Sir Thomas Plater, or Playters, of Sotterley, was Sheriff of Suffolk in 1605, and was created a Baronet August 13, 1623. He died in June 1638.

⁴ Another so named was knighted at Newmarket March 4, 1607-8. One of the two was Sheriff of Suffolk in 1617. Another of the family, Sir Robert, was knighted (at Whitehall) Jan. 25, 1607-8.

⁵ See p. 95.

⁶ Of Torbock. Of this family, see Gregson's Fragments of Lancashire, p. 231.

⁷ Sir John Grey was the eldest son of Henry first Lord Grey of Groby, and elder brother of Sir Ambrose, noticed in vol. I. p. 589. He died, *in vita patris*, and was buried Oct. 7, 1611, at Broughton Astley, c. Leicester. His son Henry succeeded his grandfather as Lord Grey of Groby 1614, and was created Earl of Stamford 1628. See their pedigree in Nichols's Leicestershire, III. 682—684.

⁸ The Sermon is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the first "of the Gunpowder Treason."

⁹ Sir Nicholas Prideaux was of Padstow, died in 1627, and has a monument in the Church there.

mond; and on the 22d, Sir Robert Lovet¹, of Buckinghamshire, was knighted at Whitehall.—On the 28th, the Ringers at St. Margaret's were paid 2s. 6d. "for ringing when the King came to the Parliament-house."

In the beginning of December, we find the King on a Visit at Enfield (probably to Lord William Howard²); where, on the 5th, he knighted Sir John Flaming³, of Denbighshire; and on the 6th, Sir Isaac Sydley⁴, of Kent.

On the 11th, Sir George Fulwood⁵, of Derbyshire, and Sir Anthony Hungerford, of Gloucestershire, were knighted at Whitehall; at the same place, on the 15th, Sir William Button, of London; and on the 23d, Sir Thomas Palmer⁶, of Kent.

¹ Sir Robert Lovet, of Liscombe, was Sheriff of Bucks in 1610, and died in 1643. This family, still residing where it was at the time of the Domesday Survey, was honoured with a Baronetcy in 1781 in the person of Sir Jonathan Lovet. See Betham's *Baronetage*, vol. IV. p. 87.

² Eldest son of Charles Howard, Earl of Nottingham, and Lord High Admiral. He was summoned by writ to several Parliaments; but died, before his father, in 1615.

³ When the King slept at Enfield, he was probably accommodated at Elsyng Hall, otherwise called Enfield House. This house is said to have been built by the celebrated John Tiptoft, Earl of Worcester. Thomas Earl of Rutland having succeeded to the manor of Worcesters, in 1540 gave it, together with a capital mansion called Elsyng Hall, to Henry the Eighth. The manor was granted either by Elizabeth or James to the Earl of Salisbury; but the house remained the property of the Crown, and was let to Lord William Howard. A view and description of this mansion are given in "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. I. p. 101.—A brick building covered with tiles, situate on the Chace, was certainly occasionally used by King Charles as a hunting seat; as appears by the Survey of 1650, which describes the King's lodging-chamber.—From its contiguity to Theobalds, Enfield Chace was doubtless frequently visited by King James. Part of it, 335 acres in extent, the Royal Huntsman laid into Theobalds Park. For this he gave to the parish of Enfield £500 with which the parish purchased land, to be applied to the use of the poor and other parochial purposes. This is called, "King James's Charity." The King also granted to the parish the site of the market-place and the profits of the market, which is now discontinued. Part of the Chace he inclosed was in Edmonton parish, and with it a spot of ground on which an ancient fair (known by the name of "Bush Fair") had been held from time immemorial. For this fair, however, he otherwise provided (see Robinson's *History of Edmonton*, p. 7). In the latter years of his life, the King appears to have kept some anniversary at Enfield, since we find him there on the 23d of September in 1616, 1617, 1624, and probably in other years.

⁴ Sir Isaac Sydley, of Great Chart, Kent, was of a "family of very good antiquity" in that county, and cousin-german to Sir William, noticed in vol. I. p. 569; they were both created Baronets, Sir William in 1611, Sir Isaac in 1621.

⁵ Sir George Fulwood was Sheriff of Derbyshire in 1611.

⁶ Son of Sir Thomas Palmer, of Wingham, (knighted July 23, 1603, see vol. I. p. 211); and grandson of the first Baronet, to whose title and estate he succeeded in 1625. He died in 1656.

In December Sir John Harington wrote the following Letter to Prince Henry¹:

"Most noble and honoured Sir; I here sende by my servant such matter as your Highness did covet to see, in regard to Bishop Gardener of Winchester, which I shall some time more largely treat of and lay at your feet². I may truly say, this Prelate did persecute me before I was born; for my father was by his command imprisoned in the Tower for eleven months, for only carrying a letter to the Princess Elizabeth; and my mother was taken from her presence, and obliged to dwell with Mr. Topcliff, as an heretic. My poor father did send many petitions to the Bishop, but in vain, as he expended one thousand pounds to get his liberty. Nor had they any comfort but their consciences to beguile this affliction, and the sweet wordes and sweeter deeds of their mistress and fellow-prisoner. But, not to rail only, I will inform your Highness what old Sir Matthew Arundel was wont to say, touching these times—'that Bonner was more to blame than Gardener, who used to call him ass, and other scurvy names, for dealing so cruelly by honest men.' I was moved to say so much against this judgment, that Sir Matthew said, my father ought to have lain in prison much longer, for sending such a saucy sonnet to Gardener: in truth it was not over civil, but after fair words ill taken, such deeds are not foul; and, considering those unrefined times, the Poetry³ is not badly conceived; as your Highness may judge in due season, when I bring it before you; and here have sent no ill-written letter to beg mercy of the Bishop, of which my father gave me copies, with many others in his own justification. In humble consideration of your Highness' favour and countenance, I remain, to all commande,

JOHN HARINGTON."

On Christmas-day, the King attended Divine Service at Whitehall, where Bishop Andrews, now decidedly the King's favourite Preacher, discoursed on Esaias, ix. 6⁴.

¹ Enclosing a letter of John Harington, Esq. to Bishop Gardiner, printed in "*Nugæ Antiquæ*," I. 63. The date of the letter here printed was altered by Mr. Park from 1609 to 1606, "in consequence of its internal testimony that the former date was erroneous. Perhaps the last figure was reversed."

² Alluding to the "*Briefe View of the State of the Church*," written by Sir John Harington in 1607, and printed in the second volume of Park's *Nugæ Antiquæ*.

³ This Poetry is printed in the *Life of Bishop Gardiner*, see the "*Briefe View, &c.*" Park's *Nugæ Antiquæ*, vol. II. p. 70. A specimen of the first stanzas, strongly expressive of the different lights in which Gardiner was viewed by different parties, was inserted in Andrews's *Continuation of Dr. Henry's History*, vol. I. p. 441. "When Gardiner first recommended persecution," says the Historian, "he thought that a few striking examples would cause a general recantation; but when he found his error, he left the weight of cruelty on the willing shoulders of Bonner, who was wont to say, 'Let me once lay hold of these heretics, and if they escape me, God do so and more to Bonner!'"

⁴ The Sermon is printed in the Bishop's "*XCVI Sermons*," the second on the Nativity.

On the 3d of January 1606-7, Sir George Fitzwilliams, of Lincolnshire, was knighted; and on the 6th, the marriage was solemnized between Lord James Hay and Anna, sole daughter and heir of Edward Lord Denny¹.

On the celebration of these nuptials, a curious Sermon was preached before the King at Whitehall, by Robert Wilkinson², intituled, "The Merchant Royal."

¹ Of this Nobleman see vol. I. p. 104.—The marriage of his daughter took place under the immediate favour and countenance of the King, with whom Sir James Hay (see before, p. 5) had long been in high favour. He was a Gentleman of the Privy-chamber; and was not only knighted, but obtained a grant of the name and title of Lord Hay, with precedence next to the Barons of England, though no place or vote in Parliament. In 1610 he was appointed Comptroller of Scotland; June 29, 1615, he was advanced to the dignity of a Peer of the Realm, by the title of Baron Hay of Sawley, in Yorkshire, without any solemn investiture (being the first that was ever so created); the Lawyers then declaring, that the delivery of the letters patent was sufficient without any ceremony. In 1608 he had a Free Gift from the King of £.11,500 "out of estalled debts and salaries due to his Majesty;" and £.3000 more in 1611. And among the "Fees and Annuities" in 1617, is a payment "to Edward Lord Denny and James Lord Hay, for keeping Chinckford-walk, on Waltham Forest, 6*d.* by the day; and for keeping the Game of Pheasants there 4*d.* by the day; and for keeping half of New-lodge Walk, 2*d.* by the day; in all, *per annum* £.18. 5*s.*" In 1617 Lord Hay was made one of the Privy Council; and in November following married his second wife, Lucy, the youngest and very beautiful daughter of Henry Earl of Northumberland. In 1618 he was raised to the dignity of Viscount Doncaster; and in 1622 to that of Earl of Carlisle. In 1619 and 1622 he was sent Ambassador into Germany and France, where he lived in such splendour that he impaired his estate, as he did otherwise by his remarkable hospitality. He was also Knight of the Garter, and first Gentleman of the Bed-chamber to King Charles I.—Osborne, speaking of Lord Hay, says, "It is known he did bestow more trimming in the varnish of a waistcoat carcase, than any of his Master's ancestors did in cloathing themselves and their own families." In the representation of characters and things, two different sides may generally be exhibited, the one black, the other white. Osborne never fails to exhibit only the dark side. Writers who act more ingenuously exhibit both.—"Observations on the Life of James Hay, Earl of Carlisle, are given at some length by Lloyd, in his 'State Worthies;' and he had the honour of being characterized by Lord Clarendon with perspicuous skill and apparent impartiality."—At his death, in 1636, he left James Earl of Carlisle his only son and heir (by his first wife) who was a great sufferer in the cause of King Charles I.

² Chaplain to Prince Henry, and author of "A Paire of Sermons preached to a Paire of peereles and succeeding Princes (*viz.* Henry and Charles), by Rob. Wilkinson, 1614, Lond." 4to. Speaking of several Wilkinsons, Wood says, "sure I am, one Rob. Wilkinson, who applying his study to divinity, proceeded in that faculty (at Cambridge I think), was Rector of St. Olave's in Southwark, and a Publisher of several sermons, as the Oxford Catalogue will tell you. He died in the year 1617." Wood's Fasti, (new edit.) vol. I. p. 354.—Among his sermons in the Bodleian Catalogue is, "The Merchant Royal," published in 1607, 4to. The text is Prov. xxxi. 14, "She is like the Merchant's ships; she bringeth her food from afar."

On that festive occasion also was produced an elegant Masque by Campion¹; whose description of it shall here be given.

¹ The little that is known of Campion is to be gleaned from Anthony Wood; who, in his "Fasti," under the "Incorporations" of 1624, mentioning Thomas Campion, M. A. informs us that, "One of both of his names was an admired Poet and Musician [Physician] in the Reign of King James I. and had the honour to be named by the learned Camden, with Spencer, Sidney, Drayton, and other the chief of our English Poets. In the Oxford Catalogue you may see the titles of some of his books, and among them "Songs of Mourning, bewailing the untimely death of Prince Henry; worded by Thomas Campion, and set forth to bee sung with one voyce to the lute or violl by John Coprario, 1613." Thomas Campion the Poet I take to be too soon for Thomas Campion M. A. of Cambridge."—To this Dr. Bliss adds, "Thomas Campion the Poet was certainly educated at Cambridge, and is supposed by Mr. Haslewood to be the Thomas Campion, of London, Gentleman, who made his will, dated October 29th, 1621, which was proved on his decease in the Consistory Court of Canterbury January 1623. See Ancient Critical Essays upon English Poets and Poesy, 1815, vol. II. p. 13.—Two of Campion's publications of a similar nature to that here given will be re-printed hereafter under their regular dates. "A Relation of the late Royall Entertainment given by the Right Honorable the Lord Knowles, at Cawsome House neere Redding, to our most gracious Queene, Queene Anne, in her Progresse toward the Bathe upon the seven and eight-and-twentie dayes of Aprill 1613," 4to.—"The Description of a Maske; presented in the Banqueting-roome at Whitehall, on Saint Stephen's Night last, at the Marriage of the Right Honourable the Earl of Somerset and the Right Noble the Lady Frances Howard, 1614," 4to. His other Works are, "Epigrammatum Libri II. Umbra. Elegiarum Liber unus, 1619," 12mo. "A New Way of Making Foure Parts in counter-point, by a most familiar and infallible rule. Secondly, a necessary Discourse of Keyes and their proper Closes. Thirdly, the allowed Passages of all Concords, perfect or imperfect, are declared. Also, by way of Preface, the Nature of the Scale is expressed, with a briefe Method teaching to Sing. Printed by T. S. for John Browne", n. d. Svo. Re-printed as "The Art of Setting or Composing Musick in Parts," at the end of Playford's Introduction, 1660; as also the Art of Descant, &c. 1674, Svo, and again without date. In addition to these pieces Campion was Author of a small tract now very rare, "Observations in the Art of English Poesie," Svo, Lond. 1602, re-printed 1815. This gave rise to Daniel's Defence of Rhyme, 1603. Campion's object was to prove that the English tongue was capable of admitting as many various measures as the Greek and Latin, and to explode what he terms "the childish titilation of riming." A specimen of this is given by Dr. Bliss in the "Fasti."—The miscellaneous poems by Campion, that are known, consist of "A Hymne in praise of Neptune, sung by Amphitryte Thamesis, and other Sea Nymphes, in Graye's Inn Maske, at the Court, 1594," (see this printed in "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. III. pp. 309, *et seq.*) and three other Poems inserted in Davison's Poetical Rhapsodie, 1602; three pieces highly poetical, written about that period, first printed by Sir Egerton Brydges, in the "Excerpta Tudoriana, 1814," Svo; commendatory verses, before the "Ayres, by Alfonso Ferrabosco, 1609," Svo; Barnaby Barnes's "Foure Bookes of Offices, Lond. 1606," fol.; and "A Briefe Discourse of the true (but neglected) use of Charact'ring the Degrees by their Perfection, Imperfection, and Diminution, in measurable Musicke, by Thomas Ravenscroft, 1614," 4to. There is also a Song by him, re-printed by Mr. Haslewood, from the "Logonomia Anglica, conscripta ab Alexandro Gill, 1621," 4to.

THE DESCRIPTION OF
A MASKE¹ PRESENTED BEFORE THE KINGE'S MAJESTIE AT WHITEHALL,
ON TWELFTH NIGHT LAST,
IN HONOUR OF THE LORD HAYES AND HIS BRIDE,

Daughter and Heire to the Honourable Lord DENNYE; their Marriage having
been the same day at Court solemnized.

To this, by occasion, other small Poemes are adjoyned.
Invented and set forth by THOMAS CAMPION, Doctor of Phisicke².

To the most puissant and gracious JAMES, KING of GREAT BRITAIN.

The disunited Scithians, when they fought,
To gather strength by parties and combine
That perfect league of friends, which once being wrought,
No turne of Time or Fortune could untwine;
This rite they held: a massie bowl was brought,
And every right arme shot his severall blood
Into the mazar, till 'twas fully fraught;
Their having stird it to an equall floud,
They quaft to th' Union, which till death should last,
In spite of private foe or forraine feare;
And, this bloud-sacrament being knowne t' have past,
Their names grew dreadfull to all far and neere.
O then, great Monarch, with how wise a care
Do you these bloods divided mixe in one,
And with like consanguinities prepare
The high and ever-living Union
'Tweene Scots and English; who can wonder then
If he, that marries Kingdoms, marries Men?

AN EPIGRAM.

Merlin, the great King Arthur being slaine,
Foretould that he should come to life againe;
And long time after wield Great Brittain's State,
More powerfull ten-fould and more fortunate.
Prophet, 'tis true, and well we find the same,
Save only that thou didst mistake the name.

¹ "London: Imprinted by John Windet for John Brown, and are to be sold at his shop in S. Dunstone's Churchyard in Fleet-street, 1607." [Entered at Stationers' Hall, Jan. 26.] Of this Masque, "of which," says Mr. D'Israeli, "Collectors know the rarity," I have never met with more than two copies; one in the British Museum, the other in the library of Mr. Rhodes, of Lyon's Inn.

On the back of the title is a copper-plate engraving representing the whole-length figure of one of the characters in the Masque, described in p. 117.

Ad invictissimum serenissimumque JACOBUM Magnæ Britanniae Regem.

Angliæ, et unanimis Scotiæ pater anne maritus
 Sis dubito ; an neuter, Rex, vel uterque simul :
 Uxores pariter binas sibi jungat ut unus,
 Credimus hoc, ipso te prohibente nephas¹ ?
 Atque maritali natas violare parentem
 Complexu, quis non cogitat esse scelus ?
 At tibi divinis successibus utraque nubit,
 Una tamen conjux, conjugis unus amor.
 Connubium o mirum ! binas qui ducere et unam
 Possis ; tu solus, o IACOBÉ, potes !
 Divisas leniter terras componis in unam,
 Atque unam eternam nomine, reque facis ;
 Natisque, et nuptis, pater et vir factus, utrisque
 Unitis conjux vèrè et amore parens.

To the Right Noble and Vertuous THEOPHILUS HOWARD, Lorde of WALDEN,
 Sonne and Heire to the Right Honorable the Earle of SUFFOLKE.

If to be sprong of high and Princely blood,
 If to inherite vertue, honour, grace,
 If to be great in all things, and yet good,
 If to be facill, yet t' have power and place,
 If to be just and bountifull, may get
 The love of men, you right may chalenge it.
 The course of forraine manners far and wide,
 The Courts, the Countries, Citties, Townes, and State,
 The blossome of youre springing youth hath tried,
 Honour'd in every place and fortunate ;
 Which now grown fairer doth adorne our Court,
 With Princelie revelling and timely sport.
 But if the admired vertues of your youth
 Breede such despairing to my daunted Muse,
 That it can scarcely utter naked truth ;
 How shall it mount as ravisht spirits use,
 Under the burden of your riper dayes,
 Or hope to reach the so far-distant bayes ?
 My slender Muse shall yet my love expresse,
 And by the faire Thames' side of you shee'll sing ;
 The double streames shall beare his willing verse,
 Far hence with murmur of their ebbe and spring.
 But if you favour her light tunes, ere long
 Shee'll strive to raise you with a loftier song.

¹ Scilicet nefas. N.

To the Right Vertuous and Honorable the Lord and Lady HAYES.

Should I presume to separate you now,
That were so lately joyn'de by holy vow?
For whome this golden dreame, which I report,
Begot so many waking eyes at Court;
And for whose grace so many Nobles chang'd
Their names and habites, from themselves estrang'd.
Accept together, and together view,
This little worke, which all belongs to you,
And live together many blessed dayes
To propagate the honour'd name of HAYES.

EPIGRAMMA.

Hæredem (ut spes est) pariet nova nupta Scot' Anglum,
Quem gignet posthac ille, Britannus erit;
Sic nova posteritas ex regnis orta duobus,
Utrunque egregios nobilitabit avos.

THE DESCRIPTION OF A MASKE, &c.

As in battailes, so in all other actions that are to bee reported, the first and most necessary part is the description of the place, with his [its] oportunities and properties, whether they be naturall or artificiall. The Great Hall, wherein the Maske was presented, received this division and order: the upper part where the cloth and chaire of State were plac't, had scaffoldes and seates on eyther side continued to the skreene; right before it was made a partition for the dauncing place; on the right hand whereof were consorted ten Musitions, with basse and mean lutes, a bandora, a double sack-bote, and an harpsichord, with two treble violins; on the other side, somewhat neerer the skreene, were plac't nine violins and three lutes, and to answeere both the consorts (as it were in a triangle) sixe cornets and sixe chappell-voyses¹ were seated almost right against them, in a place raised higher in respect of the pearcing sound of those instruments. Eighteen foot from the skreen, another stage was raised higher by a yearde than that which was prepared for dancing. This higher stage was all enclosed with a double vale [veil], so artificially painted, that it seemed as if darke cloudes had hung before it; within that shrowde was concealed a greene valley with greene trees round about it, and in the midst of them nine golden trees of fifteene foote high,

¹ It was customary for the children of St. Paul's and the Chapel Royal, to attend public places, and not only recite speeches, but perform plays. See a long note on this subject in "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses, vol. I. pp. 487—489.

with armes and braunches very glorious to behold; from the which grove toward the State was made a broade descent to the dancing place, just in the midst of it; on either hand were two ascents like the sides of two hilles drest with shrubbes and trees; that on the right hand leading to the bower of Flora; the other to the house of Night; which bowre and house were plac't opposite at either end of the skreene, and betweene them both, was raised a hill hanging like a cliffe over the grove belowe; and on the top of it a goodly large tree was set, supposed to be the tree of Diana; behind the which, toward the window, was a small descent with another spreading hill that climed up to the toppe of the window, with many trees on the height of it, whereby those that played on the hoboyes at the King's entrance into the hill were shadowed. The bowre of Flora was very spacious, garnisht with all kinds of flowers and flower-branches with lights in them. The house of Night ample and stately, with blacke pillors, whereon many starres of gold were fixt; within it, when it was emptie, appeared nothing but cloudes and starres, and on the top of it stood three turrets underpropt with small blacke starred pillers, the middlemost being highest and greatest, the other two of equall proportion: about it were plac't on wyer, artificial battes and owles continually moving; with many other inventions, the which for brevitie's sake I passe by with silence. Thus much for the place; and now from thence let us come to the persons.

The Maskers' ¹ Names were these, whom both for order and honour I mention in the first place.

1. LORD WALDEN².
2. SIR THOMAS HOWARD³.
3. SIR HENRY CAREY⁴.
4. SIR RICHARD PRESTON⁵.
5. SIR JOHN ASHLEY⁶.

6. SIR THOMAS JARRET⁷.
7. SIR JOHN DIGBY⁸.
8. SIR THOMAS BADGER⁹.
9. MAISTER GORINGE¹⁰.

¹ Of these Masquers, the first, second, fifth, seventh, and eighth had been engaged in the last Court Masque (that of Hymen by Ben Jonson) and accompanying Barriers; see before, pp. 5, 24, 25.

² Of whom see before, p. 5.

³ See also p. 5.

⁴ Joint "Master of the Jewel-house" with his father Sir Edward. They had together a fee of £.50 *per annum*. Sir Henry had been knighted in Ireland in 1599. He occurs in a list of Low Country Captains (Cott. MS. Titus, C. VII.)

⁵ "Gentleman of the King's Privie-chamber." He was made a Knight of the Bath at the Coronation (see vol. I. p. 223), and was afterwards Lord Dingwall.

⁶ Of whom see also p. 5.

⁷ "Pentioner."

⁸ "One of the King's Carvers;" see before, pp. 25, 36. ⁹ "Master of the King's Harriers." See p. 25.

¹⁰ Probably William, son and heir of William Goring, Esq. of Burton in Sussex; and who was created a Baronet May 14, 1692.

Their number, Nine, the best and amplest of numbers, for as in musicke seven notes containe all varietie, the eight being in nature the same with the first, so in numbring after the ninth we begin againe, the tenth being as it were the diappason in arithmetick. The number of Nine is formed by the Muses and Worthies, and it is of all the most apt for change and diversitie of proportion. The chiefe habit which the Maskers did use is set forth to your view in the first leaf¹. They presented in their fayned persons the Knights of Apollo, who is the father of heat and youth, and consequently of amorous affections.

The Speakers were in number Foure.

FLORA, the Queene of Flowers, attired in a changeable taffetie gowne, with a large vale embrodered with flowers, a crowne of flowers, and white buskins painted with flowers.

ZEPHYRUS, in a white loose robe of sky-coloured taffatie, with a mantle of white silke propt with wyre, still waving behind him as he moved; on his head he wore a wreath of palme deckt with primmeroses and violets, the hayre of his head and beard were flaxen, and his buskins white and painted with flowers.

NIGHT, in a close robe of blacke silke and gold, a black mantle embrodered with starres, a crown of starres on her head, her haire blacke and spangled with gold, her face blacke, her buskins blacke, and painted with starres, in her hand she bore a blacke wand wreathed with gold.

HESPERUS, in a close robe of a deep crimson taffatie, mingled with skye-colour, and over that a large loose robe of a lighter crimson taffatie, on his head he wore a wreathed band of gold, with a starre in the front thereof, his haire and beard red, and buskins yellow.

These are the principall persons that beare sway in this invention; others that are but secunders to these, I will describe in their proper place, discoursing the Maske in order as it was performed.

As soone as the King was entred the Great Hall, the hoboyes (out of the wood on the top of the hill) entertained the time till his Majestie and his Trayne were placed, and then after a little expectation the consort of ten began to play an ayre, at the sound wherof the vale on the right hand was withdrawne, and the ascent of the hill with the bower of Flora were discovered, where Flora and Zepherus

¹ See p. 105.

were busily plucking flowers from the bower, and throwing them into two baskets which two Silvans held, who were attired in changeable taffatie with wreaths of flowers on their heads. As soone as the baskets were filled they came downe in this order, first Zepherus and Flora, then the two Silvans with baskets, after them four Silvans in greene taffatie and wreathes, two bearing meane lutes, the third a base lute, and the fourth a deepe bandora.

As sone as they came to the discent toward the dauncing place, the consort of tenne ceas't and the foure Silvans play'd the same ayre, to which Zepherus and the other two Silvans did sing these words in a base, tenor, and treble voyce; and, going up and downe as they sung, they strowed flowers all about the place:

SONG.

*Now hath Flora robb'd her bowers
To befrend this place with flowers,
Strowe about, strowe about,
The skye rayn'd never kindlyer showers.
Flowers with bridalls well agree,
Fresh as Brides and Bridegroomes be.
Strowe aboute, strowe aboute,
And mix them with fit melodie.
Earth hath no Princelier flowers
Then Roses white and roses red,
But they must still be mingled.
And as a Rose new pluckt from Venus' throne,
So doth a Bride her Bridegroome's bed adorne.*

*Divers divers flowers affect,
For some private deare respect;
Strowe about, strowe aboute,
Let every one his own protect.
But hee's none of Flora's friend,
That will not the Rose commend.
Strow about, strow about,
Let Princes Princely flowers defend.
Roses, the garden's pride,
Are flowers for love and flowers for Kinges;
In Courts desired, and weddings.
And as a Rose in Venus' bosome worne,
So doth a Bridegroome his Bride's bed adorne.*

[The Musique ceaseth, and FLORA speaks.

FLORA. Flowers and good wishes Flora doth present,
 Sweete flowers, the ceremonious ornament
 Of maiden marriage, Beautie figuring,
 And blooming Youth, which though we carles [careless] fling
 About this sacred place, let none prophane
 Thinke that these fruits from common hils are ta'ne,
 Or vulgar vallies which do subject lie,
 To Winter's wrath and cold Mortalitie.
 But these are hallowed and immortall flowers,
 With Flora's hands gathered from Flora's bowres;
 Such are her presents, endles as her love,
 And such for ever may this night's joy prove!

ZEPHYRUS¹. For ever endles may this night's joy prove!
 So eccoes Zephyrus, the friend of Love;
 Whose aide Venus implores when she doth bring
 Into the naked worlde the green-leav'd Spring.
 When of the Sunne's warme beames the nets we weave
 That can the stubborn'st heart with love deceive.
 That Queene of beauty and desire, by me
 Breaths gently forth this bridall prophecie;
 Faithfull and fruitfull shall these bed-mates prove,
 Blest in their fortunes, honoured in their love.

FLORA. All grace this night, and Silvans so must you,
 Offring your mariage song with changes new.

[The Song in form of a Dialogue.

Can. *Who is the happier of the two,
 A maide or wife?*

Ten. *Which is more to be desired,
 Peace or strife?*

Can. *What strife can be where two are one?
 Or what delight to pine alone?*

Bas. *None such true freindes, none so sweet life,
 As that betweene the man and wife.*

Ten. *A maide is free, a wife is tyed,*

Can. *No maide but fain would be a Bride.*

¹ "The Western wind, of all the most mild and pleasant; who, with Venus the Queene of Love, is said to bring in the Spring, when naturall heate and appetite reviveth, and the glad earth begins to be beautified with flowers."

Ten. *Why live so many single then?
Tis not, I hope, for want of men?*

Can. *The bow and arrow both may fit,
And yet 'tis hard the marke to hit.*

Bas. *He levels faire, that by his side
Laies at night his lovely Bride.*

Cho. *Sing Io, Hymen! Io, Io, Hymen!*

This Song being ended, the whole vale is sodainly drawne, the grove and trees of gold, and the hill with Diana's tree, are at once discovered. NIGHT appears in her house with her Nine Houres, appparelled in large robes of black taffatie, painted thick with starres, their haire long, blacke and spangled with gold; on their heads coronets of starres, and their faces blacke; every Houre bore in his hand a blacke torch, painted with starres and lighted. NIGHT presently descending from her house, spake as followeth:

NIGHT. Vanish, darke vales, let night in glory shine,
As she doth burn in rage; come leave our shrine,
You black-hair'd Hours, and guide us with your lights,
Flora hath wakened wide our drowsy sprights¹.
See where she triumphs, see her flowers are throwne,
And all about the seeds of malice sowne;
Despightfull Flora, is't not enough of griefe,
That Cynthia's robb'd, but thou must grace the theefe?
Or didst not here Night's soveraigne Queen² complaine,
Hymen had stolne a Nymph out of her traine;
And matcht her here, plighted henceforth to be
Love's friend, and stranger to virginity?
And mak'st thou sport for this?

FLORA. Bee mild, sterne Night,
Flora doth honour Cynthia, and her right;
Virginity is a voluntary powre,
Free from constraint, even like an untoucht flower;
Meete to be gathered when 'tis thoroughly blowne.
The Nymph was Cynthia's while she was her owne;
But now another claimes in her a right,
By fate reserv'd thereto, and wise foresight.

ZEPHYRUS. Can Cynthia one kind Virgin's losse bemone?
How, if perhaps she brings her tenne for one?
Or can shee misse one in so full a traine?
Your Goddess doth of too much store complaine.

¹ Spirits; see a note in vol. I. p. 434.

² "Diana, the Moone and Queene of Virginity, is saide to be Régent and Emprise of Night, and is therefore by Night defended as in her quarrel for the losse of the Bride her Virgin."

If all her Nymphes would ask advise of me,
There should be fewer Virgins then there be.
Nature ordain'd not Man to live alone,
Where there are two, a Woman should be one.

NIGHT. Thou breath'st sweet poison, wanton Zephyrus,
But Cynthia must not be deluded thus;
Her holy forrests are by theeves profan'd,
Her Virgins frighted; and, loe! where they stand
That late were Phœbus' Knights, turn'd now to trees,
By Cynthia's vengeance for their injuries;
In seeking to seduce her Nymphes with love,
Here they are fixt, and neuer may remove,
But by Diane's power that strucke them here.
Apollo's love to them doth yet appeare,
In that his beames hath guilt them as they grow,
To make their miserie yeeld the greater show.
But they shall tremble when sad Night doth speake,
And at her stormy words their boughs shall breake.

Toward the end of this Speech, HESPERUS begins to descend to the house of NIGHT, and by that time the Speech was finisht he was readie to speak.

HESPERUS. Hayle, reverend angrie Night! haile, Queene of Flowers!
Mild-sprited Zephyrus, haile, Silvans and Howers!
Hesperus¹ brings peace, cease then your needlesse jarres;
Here, in this little firmament of starres,
Cynthia is now by Phœbus pacified,
And well content her Nymph is made a Bride.
Since the faire Match was by that Phœbus grac't,
Which in this happie Western Ile is plac't;
As he in Heaven, one lampe enlightning all,
That under his benigne aspect doth fall.
Deepe Oracles he speakes, and he alone
For Artes and Wisedome's meete for Phœbus' Throne;
The Nymph is honour'd, and Diana pleas'd;
Night, be you then, and your blacke Howers appeas'd,
And friendly listen what your Queene by me
Farther commaunds, let this my credence be,
View it, and know it for the highest gemme,
That hung on her Imperiall diadem.

NIGHT. I know, and honour it, lovely Hesperus.
Speake then your message, both are welcome to us.

¹ "Hesperus, the Evening Starre, foreshews that the wisht marriage-night is at hand, and for that cause is supposed to be the friend of Bridegroomes and Brides."

HESPERUS. Your Sovereigne, from the vertuous gem she sends,
 Bids you take power to re-transforme the frends
 Of Phœbus, metamorphos'd here to trees;
 And give them straight the shapes which they did leese;
 This is her pleasure.

NIGHT. Hesperus, I obey;
 Night needs must yeeld when Phœbus gets the day!

FLORA. Honour'd be Cynthia for this generous deede!

ZEPHYRUS. Pity growes only from celestiall seede.

NIGHT. If all seeme glad, why should we onely lowre?
 Since t' express gladnes we have now most power.
 Frolick, grac't captives, we present you here
 This glasse, wherein your liberties appeare.
 Cynthia is pacified, and now blithe Night
 Begins to shake off melancholy quite.

ZEPHYRUS. Who should grace mirth and revels but the Night?
 Next Love, she should be Goddess of Delight.

NIGHT. 'Tis now a time when, Zephyrus, all with dauncing
 Honor me, above Day my state advancing;
 I'le now be frolicke; all is full of harte,
 And ev'n these trees for joy shall beare a part;
 Zephyrus, they shall dance!

ZEPHYRUS. Daunce! Goddess, how?

NIGHT. Seemes that so full of strangenes to you now?
 Did not the Thracian harpe long since the same?
 And (if we rip the ould records of fame,)
 Did not Amphion's lyre the deafe stones call.
 When they came dancing to the Theban wall?
 Can musicke then not joye? joy mountaines moves;
 And why not trees? joy's powerful, when it loves.
 Could the religious oake speake oracle
 Like to the Gods? and the tree wounded tell
 T'Æneas his sad storie? have trees therefore
 The instruments of speech and hearing, more
 Than th'ave of pacing? and to whom but Night
 Belong enchantments? who can more affright
 The eye with magick wonders? Night alone
 Is fit for miracles; and this shall be one
 Apt for this nuptiall dauncing jollitie;
 Earth, then, be soft and passable, to free

These fettered roots! joy, trees, the time drawes neere,
 When in your better formes you shall appeare:
 Dauncing and musicke must prepare the way;
 Ther's little tedious time in such delay.

This spoken, the foure Silvans played on their instruments the first straine of this Song following; and in the repetition thereof the voices fell in with the instrumentes, which were thus divided; a treble and a base were placed neere his Majestie, and another treble and base neere the grove, that the words of the Song might be heard of all, because the trees of gould instantly at the first sound of their voices began to move and dance according to the measure of the time which the musitians kept in singing, and the nature of the wordes which they delivered:

*Move now with measured sound,
 You charmed grove of gold;
 Trace forth the sacred ground
 That shall your formes unfold.*

*Diana and the starry Night, for your Apollo's sake,
 Endue your Silvan shapes with powre this strange delight to make;
 Much joy must needs the place betide where trees for gladnesse move,
 A fairer sight was nere beheld, or more expressing love.*

*Yet neerer Phæbus' throne,
 Mete on your winding waies,
 Your brydall mirth make knowne,
 In your high-graced HAYES.*

*Let Hymen lead your sliding rounds, and guide them with his light,
 While we do 'Io! Hymen' sing, in honour of this night;
 Joyne three by three, for so the night by triple spel decrees,
 Now to release Apollo's Knights from these enchanted trees.*

This dancing Song being ended, the goulden trees stood in rankes three by three, and NIGHT ascended up to the grove and spake thus, touching the first three severally with her wand.

NIGHT. By virtue of this wand, and touch divine,
 These silvan shadows back to Earth resign,
 Your native formes resume with habit faire,
 While solemn musick shall enchant the aire.

Presently the Silvans, with their foure instruments, and five voices, began to play and sing together the Song following; at the beginning whereof that part of the stage whereon the first three trees stode began to yeeld, and the three

formost trees gently to sincke¹; and this was effected by an ingin plac't under the stage. When the trees had sunke a yarde, they cleft in three parts, and the Maskers appeared out of the tops of them; the trees were sodainly conveyed away, and the first three Maskers were raised again by the ingin. They appeared then in a false habit, yet very faire, and in forme not much unlike their principall and true robe; it was made of greene taffatie cut into leaves, and layed upon cloth of silver, and their hats were suitable to the same:

SONGE OF TRANSFORMATION.

*Night and Diana charge,
And the Earth obeyes;
Opening large
Her secret waies,
While Apollo's charmed men
Their formes receive againe,
Give gracious Phæbus honour then;
And so fall downe, and rest behinde the traine,
Give gracious Phæbus honour then.*

And so fall, &c.

When those wordes were sung, the three Maskers made an honour to the King; and so, falling backe, the other six trees, three by three, came forward, and when they were in their appointed places, NIGHT spake againe thus:

NIGHT. Thus can Celestials worke on human fate,
Transforme, and forme, as they do love or hate;
Like touch and change receive; the Gods agree
The best of numbers is contained in three.

[The Song of Transformation againe; NIGHT and DIANA, &c.]

Then NIGHT toucht the second three trees, and the stage suncke with them as before; and in breefe the second three did in all points as the first. Then NIGHT spake againe:

NIGHT. The last and third of nine touch, magick wand,
And give them back their formes at Night's command'

NIGHT toucht the third three trees, and the same charme of NIGHT and DIANA was sung the third time, the last three trees were transformed, and the Maskers raised; when presently the first Musique began his full chorus.

*Againe this song revive and sound it hie,
Long live Apollo, Brittaines glorious eye.*

¹ "Either by the simplicity, negligence, or conspiracy of the painter, the passing away of the trees was somewhat hazarded, the patterne of them the same day having been shown with much admiration, and the nine trees being left unsett together even to the same night."—See a note in p. 23.

This Chorus was in a manner of an eccho, seconded by the cornets, then by the consort of ten, then by the consort of twelve, and by a double Chorus of voices standing on either side, the one against the other, bearing five voices a-peece, and sometimes every Chorus was heard severally, sometime mixt, but in the end altogether; which kinde of harmony, so distinguisht by the place, and by the severall nature of instruments, and changeable conveyance of the Song, and performed by so many excellent masters as were actors in that musicke (their number in all amounting to fortie-two voyces and instruments) could not but yeeld great satisfaction to the hearers. While this Chorus was repeated twice over, the Nine Maskers, in their greene habitts, solemnly descended to the dauncing place, in such order as they were to begin their daunce, and as soone as the Chorus ended, the violins, or consort of twelve, began to play the second new daunce, which was taken in forme of an eccho by the cornets, and then catcht in like manner by the consort of ten; sometime they mingled two musickes together, sometime plaid all at once, which kind of ecchoing musicke rarely became their Silvan attire, and was so truely mixed together, that no daunce could ever bee better grac't then that, as (in such distraction of musicke) it was performed by the Maskers. After this daunce NIGHT descended from the grove, and addreste her Speech to the Maskers, as followeth:

NIGHT. Phœbus is pleased, and all rejoyce to see
 His servants from their golden prison free.
 But yet, since Cinthia has so freendly smilde,
 And to your tree-borne Knights is reconcil'd,
 First, ere you any more worke undertake,
 About her tree solemne procession make,
 Diana's tree, the tree of Chastitie,
 That plac't alone on yonder hill you see;
 These green-leav'd robes, wherein disguised you made
 Stelths to her Nymphes through the thicke forrest's shade,
 There to the Goddesses offer thankfully,
 That she may not in vain appeased be.
 The Night shall guide you, and her Howres attend you,
 That no ill eyes or spirits shall offend you.

At the end of this Speech NIGHT began to leade the way alone; and after her an Houre with his torche; and after the Houre a Masker; and so in order, one by one, a Torch-bearer and a Masker, they march on towards DIANA'S tree. When the Masker came by the house of NIGHT, every one by his Houre received his helmet, and had his false robe pluckt off, and bearing it in his hand, with a low honour offred it at the tree of Chastitie; and so, in his glorious habit, with his Houre before him, marcht to the bowre of FLORA. The shape of their habit the picture before discovers; the stuffe was of carnation satten, layed thicke with broad silver lace, their helmets beeing made of the

same stuffe. So through the bowre of FLORA they came, where they joynd two Torch-bearers and two Maskers; and, when they past downe to the grove, the Houtes parted on either side, and made way betweene them for the Maskers, who descended to the dauncing place in such order as they were to begin their third new dance. All this time of procession the sixe cornets and sixe chapel-voices sung a solemne motet of sixe parts made upon these wordes:

With spotles mindes now mount we to the tree

Of single Chastitie.

The roote is Temperance grounded deepe,

Which the coldiew'ct earth doth steepe;

Water it desires alone,

Other drinke it thirsts for none.

Therewith the sober branches it doth feede,

Which though they fruitlesse be;

Yet comely leaves they breede

To beautifie the tree.

Cynthia protectresse is, and for her sake

We this grave procession make;

Chast eies and eares, pure hearts and voices,

Are graces wherein Phœbe most rejoyces.

The motet beeing ended, the violins began the third new dance, which was lively performed by the Maskers; after which they tooke forth the Ladies and danc't the measures with them, which being finisht, the Maskers brought the Ladies back againe to their places; and HESPERUS, with the rest descended from the grove into the dauncing place, and spake to the Maskers as followeth:

HESPERUS. Knights of Apollo! proude of your new birth,
Pursue your triumphs still with joy and mirth;
Your changed fortunes, and redeemed estate,
Hesperus to your Soveraigne will relate;
'Tis now high time he were from hence retir'd,
Th'ould Bridall Friend, that ushers Night desir'd
Through the dimme evening shades, then taking flight
Gives place and honour to the Nuptiall Night.
I, that wish't Evening-starre, must now make way
To Hymen's rights [rites], much wrong'd by my delay.
But on Night's princely state you ought t'attend,
And t'honour your new-reconciled friend.

NIGHT. Hesperus, since you with concord come, ev'n so
'Tis meet that you with concord hence should go;
Then joyne you, that in voice and art excell,
To give this Starre a musicall farewell.

[*A Dialogue of four voices; two bases and two trebles.*

1. *Of all the starres which is the kindest
To a loving Bride?*
2. *Hesperus when in the West,
He doth the day from Night divide.*
1. *What message can be more respected
Then that which tells wish't joyes shall be effected?*
2. *Do not Brides watch the evening starre?*
1. *O they can discerne it farre.*
2. *Love Bridegroom's revele;*
1. *But for fashion.* 2. *And why?*
1. *Ther hinder wisht occasion.*
2. *Longing hearts and new delights,
Love short dayes, and long nights.*

Chorus. *Hesperus, since you all starres excell.
In bridall kindness, kindly farewell, farewell.*

While these wordes of the Chorus "kindly farewell, farewell," were in singing often repeated, HESPERUS tooke his leave severally of NIGHT, FLORA, and ZEPHYRUS, the Flowers and Silvans, and so, while the Chorus was sung over the second time, hee was got up to the grove, where, turning againe to the singers, and they to him, HESPERUS tooke a second farewell of them, and so past away by the house of NIGHT. Then NIGHT spake these two lines, and therewith all retired to the grove where they stode before.

NIGHT. *Come, Flora, let us now withdraw our traine,
That th' eclipts revels maie shine forth againe,*

Now the Maskers began their lighter daunces as currantoes, levaltas, and galliards, wherein when they had spent as much time as they thought fit, NIGHT spake thus from the grove, and in her Speech descended a little into the dauncing place.

NIGHT. *Here stay; Night leaden-eied and sprighted growes,
And her late Houres begin to hang their browes;
Hymen long since the Bridall bed hath drest,
And longs to bring the turtles to their nest.
Then with one quick dance sound up your delight,
And with one song wee'le bid you all good-night.*

At the end of these words the violins began the fourth new dance, which was excellently discharged by the Maskers, and it ended with a light change of musicke and mesure. After the dance followed this Dialogue of two voices, a base and tenor, sung by a SILVAN and an HOWRE:

*Tenor. SILVAN. Tell me, gentle Howre of Night,
Wherein dost thou most delight?*

Bass. HOWRE. Not in sleep. SILVAN. Wherein then?

HOWRE. In the frolicke vew of men.

SILVAN. Lovest thou musicke? HOWRE. O, 'tis sweet.

SILVAN. What's dauncing? HOWRE. Ev'n the mirth of feet.

SILVAN. Joy you in fairies and in elves?

*HOWRE. We are of that sort ourselves;
But, Silvan, say, why do you love
Onely to frequent the grove?*

*SILVAN. Life is fullest of content,
Where delight is innocent.*

*HOWRE. Pleasure must varie, not be long;
Come then, let's close, and end our Song.*

*Chorus. Yet ere we vanish from this Princely sight,
Let us bid Phœbus and his States good-night.*

This Chorus was performed with severall ecchoes of Musicke and voices, in manner as the great Chorus before; at the end whereof, the Maskers putting off their visards and helmets, made a low honour to the King, and attended his Majestie to the banquetting place.

TO THE READER.

Neither buskin now nor bayes
Challenge I; a Ladie's praise
Shall content my proudest hope,
Their applause was all my scope;
And to their shrines properly
Revels dedicated be,
Whose soft eares none ought to pierce
But with smooth and gentle verse.

Let the Tragick Poeme swell,
Raysing raging feendes from hell;
And let Epicke Dactils range
Swelling seas and countries strange;
Little roome small things contains,
Easy praise quites easy paines;
Suffer those, whose brows do sweat,
To gaine honour by the great.

It's enough, if men me name
A retailer of such fame.

EPIGRAMMA.

Quid tu te numeris immisces? anne Medentem
Metra cathedratum ludicra scripta decent?
Musicus et Medicus, celebris quoque, Phœbe, Poeta et;
Et lepor ægrotos arte rogante juvat.
Crede mihi, doctum qui carmen non sapit, idem
Non habit ingenium, nec genium Medici.

In the Original Edition here follow Five Songs, with the Musical Notes thus introduced: "Those Songes were used in the Maske; whereof the first Two Ayres were made by M. CAMPION; the third and last by M. LUPO¹; the fourth by M. THO. GILES²; and though the last Three Ayres were devised onely for Dauncing, yet they are here set forth with words that they may be sung to the lute or violl."

Song 1. Now hath Flora, &c. [p. 110.]

Song 2. Move now with measur'd, &c. [p. 115.]

Song 3.

*Shewes and Nightly Revels, signes of Joy and Peace,
Fill Royall Britaine's Court; while cruell warre farre off doth rage, for ever
hence exiled;
Faire and Princely branches with strong armes encrease;
From that deepe rooted tree, whose sacred strength and glory forren malice
hath beguiled.*

*Our devided Kingdomes now in frendly kindred meet,
And old debate to love and kindnes turns, our power with double force uniting;
Truly reconciled, griefe appeares at last more sweet
Both to ourselves and faithful Friends, our undermining foes affrighting.*

Song 4.

*Triumph now with joy and mirth!
The God of Peace hath blest our land;
We enjoy the fruites of Earth
Through favour of His bounteous hand.
We through His most loving grace
A King and Kingly Seed beholde;
Like a sun with lesser stars,
Or carefull shepheard to his fold.
Triumph then, and yeelde Him praise,
That gives us blest and joyfull dayes.*

Song 5.

*Time, that leads the fatall round,
Hath made his center in our ground,
With swelling seas embraced;
And there at one stay he rests,
And with the Fates keepes holy feasts
With pomp and pasture graced.
Light Cupids there and Venus sweetly singes,
With heavenly notes tun'd to sound of silver strings;
Their Songs are all of joy, no signe of sorrow there,
But all as stars glittering faire and blithe appeare.*

¹ Not noticed by Sir John Hawkins.

² Of whom see before, p. 23.

January 20, Sir John Millisent¹, of Cambridgeshire, was knighted at Royston; and between the 8th of February and the 4th of March, the following Knights were made at Whitehall:

Sir John Ryves², of Dorsetshire.

Sir Thomas Bowles, of Lancashire.

Sir James Altham³, of London.

Sir Thomas Panton⁶, of Denbighshire.

Sir William Pole⁴, of Devonshire.

Sir Thomas Compton⁷, of Warwicksh.

Sir Henry Oxenden⁵, of Kent.

Sir William Fielding, of Warwicksh.

Sir John Nichols.

And at Royston, soon after, Sir Robert Tirrell⁸, of Essex; Sir Roger Mellisent⁹, of Cambridgeshire; and Sir George Fitz-Jeffrey.

Sunday, February 11, the King attended Divine Service at Whitehall Chapel, where the Rev. Richard Meredith¹⁰, one of his Majesty's Chaplains, preached¹¹.

¹ Of Barham. See Lysons's *Cambridgeshire*, p. 320. See below, of another Knight of this family.

² Sir John Ryves, of Damory Court and Ranston, was High Sheriff of Dorsetshire in 1605. See a pedigree of the family in *Hutchins's History of that County*, vol. III. p. 236.

³ Another of the same name was knighted in the following March. One of them was of Writtle, Essex, and died Feb. 21, 1616-17.

⁴ Sir William Pole was "that famous Devonshire Antiquary," of whom and whose works so much is said by Prince in his "*Worthies*." He was of Exeter College, Oxford; and became a Member of the Middle Temple, where in 1560 he was Autumn Reader, and in 1561 Double Reader (of which office see Prince). In that year a grand Christmas was kept in the Inner Temple, at which Sir William personated the Chief Justice of the Common Pleas. (See Queen Elizabeth's "*Progresses*," vol. I. p. 131.) In 1564 he was chosen Treasurer. In Devonshire he resided first at Colcombe, where he built a house, and afterwards at Shute (both houses were pulled down in the Civil War); was a Justice of Peace, High Sheriff in 1603, and died in 1635. A long account of his antiquarian MSS. may be seen in Prince; part of them were published in 1791 under the title of "*Collections towards a Description of the County of Devon*," from the Autograph in the possession of Sir William's descendant, Sir John William de la Pole, Bart. of Shute. Sir William's son John was the first Baronet, so created in 1628.

⁵ Another of this family, Sir John, was knighted in the following November. See hereafter.

⁶ Sir Tho. Panton was in 1610 a Gentleman Extraordinary of the Privy Chamber to Prince Henry.

⁷ Sir Thomas Compton was second son of Henry first Baron Compton, and elder brother to William first Earl of Northampton. He married the widow of the first, and mother of the second, Duke of Buckingham. See *Brydges's Peerage*, vol. I. p. 234.

⁸ A Sir Thomas Tyrrell was soon after knighted at Royston; see p. 125.

⁹ Sir R. Millisent, of Barham, was Sheriff of the counties of Cambridge and Huntingdon in 1610.

¹⁰ Richard Meredith, B. D. of New College, Oxford, and Fellow in 1578. He became Dean of Wells 1607; died August 15, 1621; and was buried in Wells Cathedral. See *Wood's Fasti*, vol. I. col. 317.

¹¹ These two discourses were published in 1606, under the title of, "*Two Sermons preached before his Majesty in his Chapel at Whitehall, the one the 11th of Feb. the other one the 25th of the same month, by Richard Meredith, one of his Majesty's Chaplains in Ordinary, Lond. 1606*," 4to.

On Sunday, February 25, the King again heard Mr. Meredith at Whitehall.

On Tuesday the 5th of March, Bishop Andrews preached¹ on Luke, xvi. 25, before the Court at Richmond, but the King does not appear to have been present.

On the 24th, it being the Anniversary of the King's Accession; his Majesty attended Divine Service at Whitehall; and Bishop Andrews there preached before him, on Judges xvii. 6. "In those dayes there was no King in Israel, but every man did that which was good in his owne eyes²."

Free Gifts in the Fourth Year of the King's Reign, 1606-7.

To Mr. John Murray ³ , of the	£.	Richard Brasse ⁵	-	-	-	£.100
Bed-chamber, out of Recu-		Patrick Morton	-	-	-	200
sants' lands and goods	- 2000	More to John Murray	-	-	-	100
Sir James Sandilands, out of		To the Earle of Essex ⁶	-	-	-	761
Recusants	- - - 1500	The Earl of Errol ⁷	-	-	-	1000
Robert Walker ⁴	- - - 100	Levine Stallenge	-	-	-	200

¹ The Sermon is printed in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the fifth preached in Lent.

² This Sermon is printed in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," among those "preached on sundry occasions," p. 115.

³ Master John Murray, eighth and youngest son of Sir Charles Murray, of Cockpool, was early brought, by the Earl of Morton, to Court, where his accomplishments made him noticed, and he was appointed one of the Gentlemen of the Bed-chamber, and Master of the Horse to King James VI. who conferred on him the honour of Knighthood. He accompanied the King to London as one of the Gentlemen of the Privy-chamber; and he stood very high in the King's favour. By his Majesty's bounty, Sir John acquired an extensive landed property. He was created (when it does not appear) Viscount Annand, and Lord Murray of Lochmaben; and advanced to the dignity of Earl of Annandale March 13, 1624-5. His Lordship continued in favour with King Charles the First, succeeded his brother Sir Richard (of whom, and his elder brother James, see p. 44) in the old family estate of Cockpool 1636, and died at London in September 1640. See further in Wood's Douglas, vol. I. p. 69.

⁴ Robert Walker was Serjeant of the King's hounds, with a salary of £.50 *per annum*.

⁵ Richard Brasse was Yeoman of the King's hounds, also with a salary of £.50.

⁶ Robert Devereux, third Earl of Essex of that family. This sum was given him on his ill-fated marriage recently celebrated by a Masque at Court (see pp. 1—32). He was restored, on the accession of James, to his father's forfeited honors, was an intimate friend of Prince Henry (see vol. I. p. 528), and was with the King at Oxford in 1605; when he was created M. A. (see that volume, p. 555). His life, as the zealous leader of the Parliamentary Army, is well known. He died Sept. 14, 1646, leaving no surviving issue.

⁷ Of whom see vol. I. p. 499; he had a similar sum in 1604-5.

The Earl of Rutland ¹ his own	£.	David Spence, and others	-	£.240
arrears of rent due	- -	Alice Dennis ⁷	- - -	100
The Lord Lindores ²	500	To the Earl of Clanricard ⁸ , out		
Sir James Sandilands, more	- 150	of John Daniel's lands	-	2000
Samuel Rickpatrick ³	- - 400	John M. Kime, out of goods		
Sir Richard Weston ⁴	- - 300	confiscated	- - -	200
To Sir John Ramsay ⁵	- - 900			
Rewards to the King of Denmark's servants ⁶	- - 1235			
				<u>£.14,210</u>

¹ Roger fifth Earl of Rutland, whom the King visited at Belvoir Castle, April 22, 1603. A short memoir of him is given in vol. I. p. 91.

² The Hon. Sir Patrick Leslie, second son of Andrew fifth Earl of Rothes, was high in favour with King James VI. who conferred on him the honour of knighthood, and appointed him one of the Gentlemen of his Bed-chamber. He was commendator of Lindores. According to the first Edition of Douglas's Peerage, he was created a Lord of Parliament, by the title of Lord Lindores, to him and his heirs male whatever, Dec. 25, 1600. In the discussion in the House of Lords 1793, respecting the votes given by Lord Lindores at the general election 1790, it was contended on the one side, that Patrick the commendator was Lord Lindores; and on the other, that it was the commendator's eldest son Patrick, who was first Lord Lindores. Wood's Douglas, vol. II. p. 120.

³ This person had received a similar sum in 1604-5 (see p. 44).

⁴ Sir Richard Weston, of Roxwell, Essex, was born in 1577; and was knighted July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 215). He early in life impaired his estate to improve himself with public accomplishments, and his merits recommended him so strongly to Royal favour, that he was sent Ambassador in 1619 with Sir Edward Conway, to make up the differences between the Emperor and the Elector Palatine, and the next year was despatched to Brussels on the same business. He was made Chancellor and Under Treasurer of the Exchequer in 1620, and Treasurer during the King's pleasure in 1624; Baron Weston, of Neyland, Essex, in 1628; constituted Treasurer of England the same year; Knight of the Garter in 1630; Captain of the Isle of Wight 1630-1; and Earl of Portland 1632-3. He died March 13, 1634-5, and was buried in Winchester Cathedral. See Morant's Essex, II. 71.

⁵ See p. 44.

⁶ See p. 93. ⁷ This female had also received £.100 the preceding year (see p. 43).

⁸ Richard de Burgh, descended from Charles the Great, King of France, in 1601 succeeded his father Ulrick as fourth Earl of Clanricarde in Ireland. April 3, 1625, he was created Baron Somerhill and Viscount Tonbridge in England; Aug. 13, 1628, Earl of St. Alban's; and Baron Imanny and Viscount Galway (Irish honours). He died Nov. 12, 1635. All his titles but the Earldom became extinct with his son Ulrick in 1657, who had also been created Marquess Clanricarde, for his services against the Irish rebels. The Marquisate was in 1789 again conferred on Henry 12th Earl.

A Note of the Yearely Charges of the Wardrobe¹, 1606-7.

The certaine Yearely Charge of the Warderobe, as neare as it can be collected.				£.	s.	d.
For the Watch Liveryes for the Gards	-	-	-	336	0	0
For the Maundie	-	-	-	244	0	0
For the velvet for the Gards' Coats	-	-	-	520	0	0
For his Majestie's fine Linnine, for his Shirts, Sheets, and other uses	-	-	-	1360	0	0
Liveryes and Roabes	-	-	-	231	8	10
The Lord Chamberlane's Fee	-	-	-	16	0	0
Fees and Wages to the Master and Officers of the Warderobes	-	-	-	150	2	6
To the Footemen and Littermen	-	-	-	383	0	0
The Arras-men and Taylors, for Stuf and Workemanship	-	-	-	940	0	0
The Parson's ² Wages	-	-	-	2	0	0
The necessarie Expences of the Warderobe	-	-	-	13	9	0
				£.7246 0 4		

The uncertaine Yearely Charges of the Warderobe.

His Majestie's Gifts by comãdement.

The Stable Warrants.

The Warrants for Beds and Warderobe stuf, as hangings, carpets, &c.

The Generall Warrant, wherin is allowed all extraordinary services, reparacõns, and necessities, for his Majestie's Howsis and Chappells, and many other services therin contayned.

Fyne Holland, for Sheets and other necessarie uses for the Prince, and for the Duke of Yorke. Pallwt Sheets for the Gentlemen, Groomes, and Pages of his Majestie's Bed-chamb^r and Privie-chamb^r, as also for the Prince's Servants.

On the 30th of March, Sir Francis Russell³, of Bedfordshire, and Sir Robert Butler⁴, of Hertfordshire, were knighted at Whitehall.

¹ From a MS. in the possession of William Herrick, Esq. of Beaumanor Park.

² This article is wondrous strange; and is most probably an error in the transcript.—There is certainly a material mistake either in the items or in the sum total.

³ Sir Francis Russell was the only son of Sir William Russell, Governor of Flushing, created Lord Russell of Thornhaugh, July 21, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 205). He succeeded to his father's title in 1613, and to that of his cousin Edward in 1627, when he became the fourth Earl of Bedford. He was the principal undertaker in draining those fens, since called the Bedford Levels. He died, at the beginning of the Civil troubles, in 1641. Clarendon gives him the character of great moderation, though a principal assertor of the Liberty of the Subject. See further in Brydges's Peerage, I. pp. 279, *et seq.*

⁴ Sir Robert Butler resided at "a large quadrangular pile of brick" called Watton Woodhall in the parish of Watton-at-Stone. He was elder brother of Sir Henry, noticed in vol. I. p. 112. He was

On the 5th of April, it being Easter day, the King attended Divine Service at his Chapel at Whitehall, and there heard Bishop Andrews preach on 1 Cor. xv. 20¹.

In the following week the King was at Royston, where he knighted Sir Thomas Tyrrell. He was afterwards at Newmarket, where, on the 16th, before his departure, he knighted Sir Edward and Sir John Vere, both of Essex; on his return to Royston the same day, Sir John Gibson², of Yorkshire; and soon after the following Knights were made at Whitehall:

Sir Thomas Chichley ³ , of Cambridge-	Sir George Heneage ⁵ , of Lincolnshire.
shire.	Sir George Wandesford, of Yorkshire.

Sir Dudley Digges ⁴ , of Kent.	Sir Edward Gostwick ⁶ , of Bedfordshire.
---	---

May 8, "Prince Joinville, brother to the Duke of Guise, came into England⁷."

Sheriff of Hertfordshire in 1611; died without male issue in Dec. 1622; and was buried at Watton. Of the family, see Clutterbuck's Herts, vol. II. p. 474.

¹ The discourse is among the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the second on the Resurrection.

² Sir John Gibson was Sheriff of Yorkshire in 1630.

³ The Chicheleys were seated at Wimpole, and were possessed of large estates in Cambridgeshire; see Lysons's *Magna Britannia*. Sir Thomas was Sheriff of that County in 1637.

⁴ Sir Dudley Digges, of Chilham, Kent, was born 1583, was of University College, Oxford, B. A. in 1601, and afterwards studied for the Law. After his knighthood, having lived retired till 1618, he was then sent Ambassador to the Czar, and in 1620 to Holland. He was elected M. P. in 1621, when he made himself so conspicuous for his opposition to the Court, as to be ranked among those whom the King called "ill-tempered spirits." He was also M. P. in 1626 and 1628, and with Sir John Eliot he was manager of the impeachment of the Duke of Buckingham. Indeed he appeared of such consequence in his Parliamentary proceedings, that the Court tempted him over to their side. He had a reversionary grant of the office of Master of the Rolls in 1630, and became possessed of it in 1636, on the death of Sir Julius Cæsar. His name is now best known by some of his literary performances, particularly his "Complete Ambassador." Of these see Chalmers's *Biog. Dict.* where others of this learned family, his grandfather, his father, and son, are fully recorded. Sir Dudley's death was considered a public calamity; it happened March 18, 1638-9, and he lies buried in Chilham Church. A monument which he erected there to his wife is engraved in the *Gent. Mag.* for September 1800, where is a curious account of the state of the bodies in the family vault, some in a surprising state of preservation. Hair of a dark auburn colour was then remaining on Sir Dudley's skull.

⁵ Sir George Heneage, of Hainton, was Sheriff of Lincolnshire in 1628.

⁶ Sir Edward Gostwick was of an ancient family settled at Willington, Beds. as early as 1209. His father, William, was created a Baronet Nov. 25, 1612 (under which date he will be noticed), and Sir Edward succeeded him in 1615. He died Sept. 20, 1630, aged 42, and "had sepulture with his ancestors" in Willington Church, where is a mural monument with kneeling effigies of him and his wife, and seven children below; the epitaphs are printed in Collins's *Baronetage*, 1720, vol. I. p. 366.

⁷ Camden's *Annals of James I.* Of the Prince, see p. 128.

On the 9th of May, the following Entry is made at Stationers' Hall: "A booke called 'Luctæ Jacobi; or a Bonfire for his Majesty's double Delivery, viz. in Perth, August 5, 1600; and in Brittain, November 5, 1605."

At Whitehall, on the 14th, the King knighted Sir Charles Egerton; and on the 22d, our King obtained from the Earl of Salisbury, the mansion of Theobalds¹; and gave to that Nobleman², in exchange, the Manor and Palace of Hatfield. This was a desirable acquisition to the King, from its contiguity to Enfield Chace. The day was celebrated with festivity; and the Muse of Ben Jonson³ was put in requisition.

¹ Norden, in his Survey of Hertfordshire, speaks of "Thebauldes as a most stately house erected from the first foundation, by the Rt. Hon. Syr Will. Cecyl, Kt. Lord Theasorer of England. To speake of the state and beauty thereof at large, as it deserveth, for curious buildings, delightful walkes, and pleasant conceits within and without, and other things very glorious and ellegant to be seene, would challenge a greate portion of this little treatise; and therefore, leaste I should come short of that due commendation that it deserveth, I leave it, as indeed it is, a Princely seate." James appears to have been sensible of its beauties; he exchanged the manor of Hatfield for Theobalds. As Salisbury was a wary man, it is probable he was no loser by the bargain. The Court in which Jonson's verses were "sung or said" is described in a survey made in 1650, preserved in the Augmentation Office, "as a quadrangle of 110 feet square, on the South of which were the Queen's Chapel (with windows of stained-glass), her Presence-chamber, Privy-chamber, Bed-chamber, and Coffee-chamber. The Prince's lodgings were on the North side; on the East side was a cloister, over which was the green-gallery 109 feet by 12, excellently well painted round with the several shires in England, and the armes of the Noblemen and Gentlemen in the same. Over this gallery was a leaded walk, looking eastward towards the dial-court and the highway,) on which were two lofty arches of bricke of no small ornament to the house, and rendering it comely and pleasant to all that passed by." The greater part of this mansion was destroyed by order of the Parliament the year after this survey was made, (1651) and every vestige was removed in 1765. GIFFORD.—Several particulars respecting Theobalds may be found in the "Progresses of Queen Elizabeth;" see also in Lysons's Environs, vol. IV. p. 157.

² In Weldon's Court of King James, Cecil is said "to have made so good an exchange that he sold his house for fifty years purchase, and that so cunningly, as hardly to be discerned but by a curious sight"—which, of course, this wretched scribbler possessed. The fact is, that he got Hatfield Chase in exchange, a manor of little value to the King, as it was then a mere waste or common. Cecil inclosed it to the ruin of his popularity, but the ultimate advantage of the country, and raised upon it a structure which, says Camden, "for situation, contrivance, prospects, and other necessities fit for a complete seat, gives way to few in England." With respect to Theobalds, James seems to have had an early predilection for it. Here he resided some time before his Coronation; here, as we have seen, he entertained his Royal Guest, here he frequently retired from the cares of State, and here he closed his mortal career on the 27th March 1625. G.

³ The Editors of Weldon term this Entertainment one of the most ingenious of Jonson's Masques. It is certainly an ingenious little piece; but they cannot have gone far in our Poet, who speak of it in such terms." G.

AN ENTERTAINMENT of KING JAMES and QUEEN ANNE, at THEOBALDS, when the House was delivered up, with the possession, to the Queen, by the Earl of Salisbury, the 22d of May 1607; the Prince Janville¹, Brother to the Duke of Guise, being then present. By BEN JONSON.

The King and Queen, with the Princes of Wales and Lorrain, and the Nobility, being entered into the gallery; after dinner there was seen nothing but a traverse of white across the room, which suddenly drawn, was discovered a gloomy obscure place, hung all with black silks, and in it only one light, which the GENIUS of the house held, sadly attired; his cornucopiæ ready to fall out of his hand, his garland drooping on his head, his eyes fixed on the ground; when, out of his pensive posture, after some little pause, he brake, and began.

GENIUS. Let not your glories darken, to behold
 The place, and me, her Genius here, so sad;
 Who, by bold rumour, have been lately told,
 That I must change the loved lord I had;
 And he, now in the twilight of sere age²,
 Begin to seek a habitation new;
 And all his fortunes, and himself, engage
 Unto a seat his fathers never knew;
 And I, uncertain what I must endure,
 Since all the ends of destiny are obscure.

MERCURY. [*From behind the darkness.*]
 Despair not, Genius, thou shalt know thy fate.

¹ The Prince Joinville was Charles de Lorraine, eldest son of Henry de Lorraine, first Duke of the branch of Guise and Chevreuse, surnamed Bald-pate; he was born the 20th of August 1571. He was arrested with many others on the day of the execution of Blois, and confined in the Castle of Tours, whence he escaped in 1591. He was received at Paris with loud acclamations of joy by the populace, who, it is said by L'Advocat, would have elected him King, but for the jealousy of the Duke de Mayence, his uncle. It was this Prince who slew with his own hand the brave St. Pol. He submitted to Henry IV. in 1594, and obtained the government of Provence; afterwards he was employed by Louis XIII. but the Cardinal de Richelieu, fearing the power of the house of Guise, obliged him to quit France. Charles retired into Provence, and died at Cuna in the Siennois, September 30, 1640, leaving a numerous family by his wife, Henrietta Catharine de Joyeuse. GILCHRIST.

² "The Earl of Salisbury was now in his forty-fourth year; somewhat early for 'the twilight of sere age:' but his constitution was broken by labour, and he died of a complication of disorders about five years after this period." G.

And withal, the black vanishing, was discovered a glorious place, figuring the Lararium or seat of the Household Gods, where both the Lares and Penates were painted in copper colour; erected with columns and architrave, frieze and cornice, in which were placed divers diaphanal glasses, filled with several waters that shewed like so many stones of orient and transparent hues. Within, as farther off, in landscape, were seen clouds riding; and in one corner, a boy figuring Good Event, attired in white, hovering in the air, with wings displayed, having nothing seen to sustain him by all the time the shew lasted. At the other corner, a MERCURY descended in a flying posture, with his caduceus in his hand, who spake to the three Parcae that sate low in a grate with an iron roof, the one holding the rock, the other the spindle, and the third the sheers, with a book of adamant lying before them. But first the GENIUS, surprized by wonder, urged this doubt.

GENIUS [*aside.*] What sight is this, so strange and full of state?
The son of Maia, making his descent
Unto the Fates, and met with good event¹.

MERCURY. Daughters of Night and Secrecy, attend;
You that draw out the chain of Destiny,
Upon whose threads both lives and times depend,
And all the periods of mortality;
The will of Jove is, that you straight do look
The change and fate unto this house decreed;
And, speaking from your adamantine book,
Unto the Genius of the place it read:
That he may know, and knowing bless his lot,
That such a grace beyond his hopes hath got.

CLOTHO [*reads.*] When underneath thy roof is seen
The greatest King, the fairest Queen;
With Princes an unmatched pair;
One, hope of all the earth, their heir;
The other styled of Lorraine
Their blood, and sprung from Charlemaine;
When all these glories jointly shine,
And fill thee with a heat divine;
And these reflected, do beget
A splendent sun, shall never set,
But here shine fixed, to affright
All after-hopes of following Night.
Then, Genius, is thy period come,
To change thy Lord; thus Fates do doom.

¹ i. e. by good luck; not "Good Event" personified, as Mr. Gifford makes it. N.

- GENIUS. But is my Patron with this lot content,
So to desert his Father's Monument?
Or is it gain, or else necessity,
Or will to raise a house of better fame,
That makes him shut forth his posterity
Out of his patrimony, with his name?
- MERCURY. Nor gain, nor need; much less a vain desire
To frame new roofs or build his dwelling higher;
He hath with mortar busied been too much,
That his affections should continue such.
- GENIUS. Do men take joy in pleasures, not t'enjoy?
Or doth their business all their likings spend?
Have they more pleasure in a tedious way,
Than to repose them at their journey's end?
- MERCURY. Genius, obey, and not expostulate;
It is your virtue; and such powers as you,
Should make religion of offending Fate,
Whose dooms are just, and whose designs are true.
- LACHESIS. The person, for whose Royal sake
Thou must a change so happy make,
Is he that governs with a smile
This lesser World, this greatest Isle.
His Lady's servant thou must be;
Whose second would great Nature see,
Or Fortune, after all their pain,
They might despair to make again.
- ATROPOS. She is the grace of all that are;
And like ELIZA, now a star,
Unto her crown, and lasting praise,
Thy humbler walls at first did raise,
By virtue of her best aspect;
So shall BEL-ANNA them protect.
And this is all the Fates can say;
Which first believe, and then obey.
- GENIUS. Mourn'd I before? Could I commit a sin
So much 'gainst kind, or knowledge, to protract
A joy, to which I should have ravished been,
And never shall be happy 'till I act?
Vouchsafe, fair Queen, my Patron's zeal in me,
Who fly with fervour, as my fate demands,
To yield these keys; and wish that you could see
My heart as open to you, as my hands;

There might you read my faith, my thoughts—but, oh!

My joys, like waves, each other overcome;

And gladness drowns, where it begins to flow.—

Some greater powers speak out, for mine are dumb!

At this was the place filled with rare and choice music, to which was heard the following Song, delivered by an excellent voice, and the burden maintained by the whole Quire.

O blessed change!

And no less glad than strange!

Where we that lose have won;

And, for a Beam, enjoy a Sun.

Was ever bliss

More full or clear than this!

The present month of May

Ne'er look'd so fresh as doth this day.

Chorus.

Chorus.

*So little sparks become great fires, So gentle winds breed happy springs,
And high rewards crown low desires. And duty thrives by breath of Kings.*

At Whitehall, on the 24th of May, the King knighted Sir John Bowyer; on the 27th, Sir John Keyes, of Yorkshire, and Sir Richard Conquest¹, of Bedfordshire; on the 28th, Sir William Dyllon², of Devonshire, and Sir Charles Wrenne, of Yorkshire; and on the 30th, Sir Henry Legh, of Middlesex.

On the 3d of June, the Ringers at St. Margaret's, Westminster, were paid 2s. 6d. "when the King came from Greenwich."

On the 4th, the King knighted at Whitehall Sir John Stanhope³, of Derbyshire; on the 7th, Sir Christopher Harris⁴, of Devonshire; on the 11th, Sir George Sayer⁵, of Stanway, Essex.

¹ Most probably of the family seated at Houghton Conquest. King James had before knighted two Sir Richard Conquests, see vol. I. pp. 188, 219; one of whom entertained his Majesty at Houghton Conquest for five days in 1605 (see vol. I. p. 520).

² The family of Dillon was seated at Chimwell, in the parish of Bratton Fleming. Their ancient seat is now a farm-house. Of the family, see Lysons's Devonshire, p. cxcii.

³ Sir John Stanhope was the second son of Sir John Stanhope, knighted "upon the way to Belvoyr Castle," April 22, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 90), and younger brother to Sir Philip, knighted Dec. 16, 1605 (see vol. I. p. 589). He was seated at Elvaston, was elected M. P. for Derbyshire in 1620 and 1626, and for Leicester town in 1628. He was Sheriff of Derbyshire in 1629, and died in 1638. He has a marble monument in Elvaston Church, with his effigies. His great-grandson William was, in 1742, created Viscount Petersham and Earl of Harington, and his grandson, Charles, at present bears those titles. See further in Brydges's Peerage, vol. IV. p. 284.

⁴ The Harrises were a spreading family in Devonshire. On the branch seated at Hayne a Baronetcy was conferred in 1673, but it became extinct in 1683. See Lysons's Devonshire, *sæpissimè*.

⁵ Of the Sayers, and their estates in Essex, see Morant, vol. II. p. 194.

Sir John Watts¹, Lord Mayor of London, entertained the King, at Clothworkers' Hall, with a splendid dinner, of which Howes gives the following account:

"Friday, the 12th of June, his Majestie, being attended with divers Lords of the Privie Counsel, and others, came privately unto the Maier's house and dined with him, as hee hadde appointed the day before; and after dinner Sir John Watts, Lord Maier, presented his Highnes with a purse of gold, which hee very graciously accepted, and signified therewithall, as hee did in like manner whilst hee sate at dinner, his most especiall love and care of the Cittie of London, with her Majestrates and Cittizens. And when the King was ready to departe, the Lorde Maier humblie besought his Majestie, of his most especiall grace and favour to the Cittie in generall, and to that Societie in perticuler, that hee would be pleased to be free of the Clothworkers, which hee also very graciously accepted; then the Kinge descended the dining-chamber, and went into Clothworkers' Hall, the Lorde Maier bearing the sword as hee did before, after hee hadde presented it unto his Majestie at his first comming, and by the Kinge delivered him backe againe; and beeing entred into the Hall, hee was receaved by the Master and Wardens, and Assistants of that Company, in very grave and comlie manner, unto whome the Kinge gave good respecte and kind speeches, and according to their humble generall request, it pleased the Kinge to dignifie the Cittie and that Societie, and beeing in the open Hall he asked who was Maister of the Company; and the Lord Maier answered, Syr William Stone², unto whome the King sayed, 'Wilt thou make me free of the Clothworkers?' 'Yea,' quoth the Master, 'and thinke myselfe a happie man that I live to see this day;' then the King saied, 'Stone, give me thy hand, and now I am a Clothworker;' and after that hee walked into the garden, and into the great parlour, the Lord Maier bearing the sword before him; and whilst hee sate there, the Earles of Shrewesburie and Cumberland, beeing both free of that Company, presented his Majestie with bread and wine; the King rose up, and sayde then, 'now I drinke unto all my good Brethren the Clothworkers; and I pray God to blesse them all, and all good clothwearers. And for prooffe of our especiall favour to this fraternitie, and for their encrease of mutuall amitie, I doe here give unto this Company two brace of buckes yearely for ever, against the time of the election of the Maister and Wardens of this Societie;' then the Lord Mayor, the Maister, the Wardens, and Assistants, humblie thanked his Majestie for those high favours done to that Company; and, having kissed his hand, the King departed. At this time also there were divers Noblemenne and Gentlemen made free of the Clothworkers."

¹ Of whom see vol. I. p. 234.

² Noticed in vol. I. p. 439.

The North end of Clothworkers' Hall is adorned with gilt carved figures of King James and King Charles the First, as large as life, in their robes, and the Regalia; and under them are the following inscriptions:

Under King James:

"Statuæ Serenissimorum Regium JACOBI et CAROLI Primi, anno MDCLXVI, horribili quæ tunc accidit conflagratione, in cineres redactæ erant."

Under King Charles I.:

"Anno MDCLXIX è Cineribus resuscitatæ;

D'no Roberto Knightley, Eqû Aurat' Magistro;

Gulielmo Hillersdon, Bryano Bentham, Joh'e Smith, et Joh'e Ward Gardianis."

In the Binding-room is a fine Print of King James, painted by C. Johnson, engraved by R. White, 1606. It is thus inscribed:

"JACOBUS, D. G. Angliæ, Scotiæ, et Hiber. Rex,

Fidei Defensor, Primus Magnæ Britanniæ Monarcha."

Under the Print is the following record of his Majesty's Visit¹:

"Memorandum, that the 12th day of June, anno Domini 1607, the High and Mighty Prince JAMES, by the grace of God of Great Britain, France, and Ireland King, Defender of the Faith, &c.; attended on by the Duke of Lenox, and divers others, Earls, Barons, Knights, and Gentlemen; repaired unto his City of London, unto the house of Sir John Watts, Lord Mayor of the said City; where his Highness and all his attendants were joyfully received and Royally feasted. At which time the said Lord Mayor being free of the Company of Clothworkers, and Sir William Stone, Knt. Master of the said Company, and the Wardens and divers of the Assistants of the said Company being there present, became humble suitors to his Majesty, that he would be pleased to honor the said Company of Clothworkers by vouchsafing to be free thereof; to the which his Highness (being informed that some of his Predecessors, Kings of England, had heretofore vouchsafed to be free of some other of the Companys of the said City,) graciously condescended; and thereupon his Highness, at the humble motion of the said Lord Mayor and Sir William Stone, was pleased to repair unto the Common Hall of the said Company of Clothworkers, adjoining unto the house of the said Lord Mayor; and then and there being seated in a chair of green velvet, in the presence of the said Duke of Lenox, and the other Earls, Barons, Knights, and Gentlemen attending on him, and of the said Lord Mayor, Sir William Stone, the Wardens and others of the said Company, kneeling before him, and of divers others, his

¹ Charles the Second was entertained at this Hall in 1663.

Highness was pleased openly to publish that he would from thenceforth be a free Brother of the said Company of Clothworkers; and his Majesty was then also pleased to drink to the said Lord Mayor, Sir William Stone, and the rest of the said Company, by the name of his good Bretheren the Clothworkers, praying to God to bless all good Clothworkers and all good cloth-wearers. Whereupon the said Lord Mayor, Sir William Stone, and the rest of the Company, in token of the great joy and thankfulness, kissed his Majesty's Royal hands; and the said Sir William Stone, and the Wardens of the said Company, with all humility and reverence then and there admitted his Majesty into the Brotherhood of the said Company, and also caused his Highness' name to be registered in their Book as a free Brother of the said Company; with the which his Highness was very well pleased, and of his Princely bounty then and there gave unto the said Company two brace of bucks yearly for ever. For the perpetual memory of which honor vouchsafed unto the said Company by his Highness, it was enacted and decreed by the Master, Wardens, and Assistants of the said Company, that the same should be recorded and registered in a fair table, to remain in the Common Hall of the said Company for ever."

On the 19th of June, the King knighted at Whitehall Sir Henry Mildmay¹, of Essex; and on the 26th, before his departure for Richmond, Sir William Mews, of the Isle of Wight; and Sir George Dalton, of Westmoreland.

On his arrival at Richmond the same day, Sir Francis Freeman, of Northamptonshire, received the honour of knighthood. At the same place, on the 28th, the celebrated Sir Ralph Winwood², afterwards Secretary of State, was knighted previously to being sent Ambassador to Holland jointly with Sir Richard Spencer.

¹ Sir Henry Mildmay was Master of the Jewel-house both to King James and Charles. He was M. P. for Harwich in 1605, Westbury in 1606, and Walden in several Parliaments of Charles. The estate of Wanstead was conferred on him by King James; but afterwards, because he was one of the Regicides, his estates were forfeited to the Crown. He survived the Restoration. (See Morant's Essex, vol. I p. 30.)—The family of Mildmay, of great consequence in Essex, and originally seated at Moulsham Hall (see our vol. I. p. 216), had in King James's time spread itself into nine distinct branches, each possessed of considerable estates in the county. See Morant, vol. II. p. 4.

² Sir Ralph was son of Lewis Winwood, Secretary to Charles Brandon, Duke of Suffolk; and was born about 1565 at Aynho, Northamptonshire. He was of St. John's and Magdalen Colleges, Oxon.; and Proctor of that University in 1592. He afterwards travelled on the Continent, "and returned a very accomplished gentleman." In 1599 he attended Sir Henry Neville, Ambassador to France, as his Secretary; and, in Sir Henry's absence, was appointed Resident at Paris; whence he was recalled in 1602-3, and sent to Holland, whither he went Ambassador also in 1607, and again in 1609, to deliver the King's remonstrance against Vorstius, the Arminian. He was afterwards a Master of Re-

June 29, the King knighted Sir John Pettus¹, of Norwich, at Whitehall.

On the third of July, the King repaid to the Citizens of London £.60,000, which they had lent to Queen Elizabeth on the 3d of February 1599.

On the fourth, the Ringers at St. Margaret's, were paid 2s. 6d. "when the King came to Whitehall;" and on the 5th he there knighted Sir John Dodridge², of London, on his becoming the King's Principal Serjeant at Law; and also

Sir Christopher Pickering, of Yorksh. Sir John Wylde³, of Kent.

Sir Henry Franklin, of Cumberland. Sir George St. Paule⁴, of Surrey.

A few days after the following Knights were made at Greenwich:

Sir John Rowse⁵, of Worcestershire. Sir Jervis Price, of Wales.

Sir George Dowglas⁶, of Scotland. Sir Vincent Corbet⁷, of Shropshire.

Sir John Butler, of Bedfordshire.

quests, with a fee of £.50 a year. In 1614 he was made Secretary of State, with a fee of £.100 a year, in which office he continued till his death on Oct. 27, 1617. He was buried in St. Bartholemew the Less. Lloyd, in his "State Worthies," says, "he was a gentleman well-seen in most affairs, but most expert in matters of trade and war." His papers were published, in 1725, under the title of "Memorials of State," by Edmund Sawyer, Esq. Master in Chancery, in 3 vols. folio; from which the present publication has derived many interesting particulars. See farther in Chalmers's Biog. Dict.

¹ Sir John Pettus died April 9, 1613. An annual sermon is preached at Norwich Cathedral in the beginning of August, in commemoration of a benefaction which he left to the preachers there. His son Augustine was knighted at Royston in December 1611, and his grandson Thomas was created a Baronet in 1641.

² This was the eminent Judge. He was of a Devonshire family, born at Barnstaple in 1555, and of Exeter College, Oxford. He was Lent Reader at the Inner Temple in 1602; and became Serjeant at Law Jan. 20, 1603-4, when he was appointed Serjeant to Prince Henry; Solicitor General 1605; King's Principal Serjeant 1607; and Judge of the King's Bench 1613. He died in 1628, aged 73; and was buried in Exeter Cathedral. He was one of the Members of the original Society of Antiquaries (see the *Archæologia*, vol. I. p. ix.). Of his various works on the Law, and farther particulars of his life, see Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.

³ Of St. Martin's Hill, Canterbury. He died in 1635; and was buried in the Cathedral. Of his family and estates, see Hasted, vol. III. p. 12.

⁴ Sir George St. Paule, of Snarford, Lincolnshire, had been Sheriff of that county in 1588. He was created a Baronet June 29, 1611; but the title became extinct with him.

⁵ Sir John Rowse was Sheriff of Worcestershire in 1610.

⁶ A MS. list of King James's Knights, *penès me*, says this Knight was made at "Wandesford, July 9," and the next at Whitehall on the same day.

⁷ Sir Vincent Corbet, of Morton Corbet, was created a Baronet Jan. 29, 1641. The widow of Sir Vincent, his son, was in 1679 created for life Viscountess Corbet of Linchlade.

The King seems to have been so well pleased with his Entertainment at Cloth-workers' Hall, that he readily accepted an invitation to dine with the Merchant Taylors' Company at their noble Hall in Threadneedle Street on the day fixed for the Election of Master and Wardens. Dr. John Buckeridge¹, the President of St. John's College, Oxford, was appointed to preach a sermon², and Mr. William Hayne, the Head Master of Merchant Taylors' School, was desired to train some of his boys to welcome his Majesty. And thus would the School have borne a distinguished part in the business of the day. But Sir John Swinnerton³, or some one else who had the ear of the Court of the Company, suggested to them that the Schoolmaster and Scholars, not being acquainted with the kind of Entertainments likely to please Royalty⁴, it would be better to contract with Ben Jonson for "a speechie, musique, and other inventions;" which was done accordingly⁵.

The following is extracted from the Minutes of the Court of the Company :

"Whereas the Company are informed that the King's moast excellent Majesty, with our gracious Queen and the noble Prince, and divers honourable Lords and others, determyne to dyne at our Hall on th'elecc'on of M'r and Wardens; therefore this meeting was appointed to advise and consult howe every thinge may be performed for the reputac'on and creditt of the Company, and to give his Majesty best lykeing and contentment, &c. &c. And Sir John Swynnerton is entreated to conferr with Mr. Beniamyn Johnson, the Poet, about a Speech to be made to welcome his Majesty, and for Musique and other inventions, which may give liking and delight to his Majesty; by reason that the Company doubt that their Schole-master and Schollers be not acquainted with suche kind of Entertagnements."

¹ Of whom see before, p. 96.

² Minutes of the Court of Merchant Taylors' Company, July 16, 1607.

³ Of Sir John Swinnerton, Citizen and Merchant Taylor of London, see vol. I. pp. 113, 234; and hereafter under the year 1612.

⁴ It appears strange, and not very creditable to the school, that the scholars could not be at all brought forward on this occasion, since we find those of St. Paul's School were on every appropriate opportunity. See vol. I. p. 367; and this Volume, p. 68. They, to be sure, were more liable to be called upon for such efforts, since most public processions passed their school.

⁵ Dr. Wilson's History of Merchant Taylors' School, p. 171.

The following particulars are also taken from the Company's Records:

"At the upper end of the Hall there was set a chair of Estate, where his Majesty sat and viewed the Hall; and a very proper child, well spoken, being clothed like an Angel of gladness¹, with a taper of frankincense burning in his hand, delivered a short Speech, containing 18 verses², devised by Mr. Ben Jon-

¹ Probably a Chorister, and perhaps in his surplice; see before, p. 107; and hereafter, p. 139.

² The following "delightful Song" is copied from "The Crown Garland of Golden Roses gathered out of England's Royal Garden. Set forth in many Pleasant new Songs and Sonnets; with new Additions never before imprinted. London, 1692."

"A delightful Song of the Four famous Feasts of England; one of them ordained by King Henry the Seventh to the honour of Merchant Taylors; shewing how seven Kings having been free of that Company, and how lastly it was graced with the renowned [Prince] Henry of Great Britain.

"To the tune of Treton's Toy.

"England is a Kingdom of all the world admired,
More stateliness in pleasures can no way be desired,
The Court is full of bravery, the City stored with wealth,
The Law preserveth unity, the Country keepeth health;
Yet no like pomp and glory our chronicles record,
As four great Feasts of England do orderly afford;
All others be but dinners called, or banquets of good sort,
And none but four be named Feasts, which I do here report:

Saint George's Feast the first of all maintained is by Kings,
Where much renown and royalty thereof now daily rings;
Princes came from foreign lands to be Saint George's Knights,
The golden Garter thus is worn by sundry worthy wights;
Saint George our English Champion, in most delightfull sort,
Is celebrated year by year in England's Royall Court;
The King, with all his Noble Train, in good and rich array,
Still glorifies the Festival of great Saint George's Day.

The honoured Mayor of London the second Feast ordains,
By which the worthy Citizens much commendations gains;
For Lords and Judges of the Land, and Knights of good request,
To Guildhall come to countenance Lord Mayor of London's Feast.

Also the Serjeants of the Law another Feast affords,
With grace and honour glorified by England's noble Lords;
And this we call the Serjeants' Feast, a third in name and place:
But yet there is a fourth likewise deserves a gallant grace.

The Merchant Taylors' Company, the fellowship of fame,
To London's lasting dignity lives honour'd with the same;
A gift King Henry the Seventh gave, kept once in three years still,
When gold and gowns be to poor men given by King Henrie's will;
Full many a good fat buck he sent, the fairest and the best
The King's large forest can afford, to grace this worthy Feast,
A Feast that makes the number just, and last account of four;
Therefore let England thus record of Feasts there be no more.

Then let all London Companies, so highly in renown,
Give Merchant Taylors name and fame to wear the laurell crown!

son, which pleased his Majesty marvelously well; and upon either side of the Hall, in the windows near the upper end, were galleries or seats, made for music, in either of which were seven singular choice musicians playing on their lutes, and in the ship, which did hang aloft in the Hall, three rare men, and very skilful, who song to his Majesty; and over the King, sonnetts and loude musique, wherein it is to be remembered, that the multitude and noyse was so great, that the lutes nor songs could hardly be heard or understood, and then his Majesty went up into the King's chamber, where he dined alone at a table which was provided only for his Majesty and the Queen (but the Queen came not), in which chamber were placed a very rich pair of organs, whereupon Mr. John

For seven of England's Royal Kings thereof have all been free,
And with their loves and favours grac'd this worthy Company.
King Richard once the Second nam'd, unhappy in his fall,
Of all his race of Royal Kings was Freeman first of all;
Bullingbrook, fourth Henry, next by order him succeeds,
To glorifie this Brotherhood by many Princely deeds;
Fifth Henry, which so valiantly deserved fame in France,
Became free of this Company, fair London to advance;
Sixth Henry, the next in reign, though luckless in his dayes,
Of Merchant Taylors' Freeman was, to their eternal praise;
Fourth Edward, that most worthy King, belov'd of great and small,
Also performed a Freeman's love to this renowned Hall;
Third Richard, which by cruelty brought England many woes,
Unto this worthy Company no little favour shews:
But richest favour yet at last proceeded from a King,
Whose Kingdom round about the world in Princes' ears doth ring,
King Henry, whom we call the Seventh, made them the greatest grac'd;
Because in Merchant Taylors' Hall his picture now stands plac'd;
Their Charter was his Princely gift maintained to this day,
He added Marchant to the name of Taylors, as some say,
So Merchant Taylors they be call'd, his Royal love was so,
No London Company the like estate of Kings can show!

From time to time we thus behold the Merchant Taylors' glory,
Of whose renown the Muse's pen may make a lasting story;
This love of Kings begot such love of our now Royal Prince,
(For greater love than this to them was ne'r before nor since,)
It pleased so his Princely mind in meek kind courtesie,
To be a friendly Freeman made of this brave Company.
O! London, then in heart rejoyce, and Merchant Taylors sing
Forth praises of this gentle Prince, the son of our good King;
To tell the welcome to the world, he then in London had,
Might fill us full of pleasant joyes, and make our hearts full glad.
His triumphs, where performed and done, long lasting will remain,
And Chronicles report aright the order of it plain."

To this poetical list of Regal Freemen may be added the names of Charles the First and James the Second. Of foreign Potentates are enumerated, on a large tablet in the Hall, Charles Lodowicke, Prince Elector of Bavaria, 1645, Alexander Emperor of Russia, and Frederick King of Prussia, 1814.

Bull, Doctor of Music¹, and a Brother of this Company, did play all the dinner-time; and Mr. Nathaniel Gyles, Master of the Children of the King's Chapel, together with Dr. Montague, Bishop of Bath and Wells, and Dean of his Majesty's Chapel; Lenard Davis, Sub-dean; and divers synging-men, Robert Stone, William Byrde, Richard Granwell, Crie. Sharpe, Edmund Browne, Thos. Woodson, Henrie Eveseede, Robert Allison, Jo. Hewlett, Richard Plumley, Thos. Goold, William Laws, Elway Bevin, and Orlando Gibbons, Gen. extraordinary², and the Children of the said Chapel, did sing melodious songs at the said dinner; after all which his Majesty came down to the Great Hall, and, sitting in his chair of Estate, did hear a melodious song of farewell, by the three rare men in the shippe, being appparelled in watchet silk, like seamen; which song so pleased his Majesty, that he caused the same to be sung three times over.

“ Dr. Bull and Mr. Nathaniel Gyles admitted into the livery of this Company. Also at this Court the Company have accepted and taken Mr. John Bull, Doctor of Musique, and a Brother of this Company, into the clothing and livery of this Company. Also, they have accepted and taken Mr. Nathaniel Gyles, who hath his grace to be Doctor of Musique, and is Master of the Children of the King's Chapell, into the freedom of this Society, and into the clothing and livery

¹ John Bull, descended from a family of that name in Somersetshire, was born about 1563. He was admitted Batchelor of Musick at Oxford in 1586; and in 1592 was created Doctor at Cambridge. In 1591 he became organist of the Queen's Chapel in the room of Blithman, under whom he had been bred, and in whose epitaph (given by Stow from the Church of St. Nicholas Olave, Queenhithe, which was burned down in the fire of London) are the following lines:

“ Whose passing skill in Musick's art
A scholar left behinde,
John Bull by name, his master's veine
Expressing in each kinde.”

Upon the establishment of Gresham College, Bull (at the recommendation of the Queen) was chosen first Professor of Music. In 1601 his health was so impaired, that, unable to do his duty, he was allowed a deputy while abroad, and in 1607 he wholly resigned. It appears that music began to decline very much in the beginning of the reign of James the First; so that several Masters, through want of Court Patrons, dedicated their works to one another; this possibly induced Dr. Bull again to leave England. In 1613 he went into the Netherlands, where in the same year he was admitted into the service of the Archduke; in consequence of which, he was discharged from the King's Chapel. Wood says he died at Hamburgh, others say at Lubeck, about 1622. His Portrait is in the Music School, Oxford. It is engraved in Hawkins's *History of Music*, vol. III. p. 318, and more faithfully in Clark's “*History of God Save the King*.”

² See a list of these Gentlemen in December 1604 in Hawkins's *Music*, vol. IV. p. 12. Some are more fully noticed in that work.—Of Orlando Gibbons (afterwards Mus. D.) there is a portrait.

of the same; and it is ordered that they shall be placed in the lyvery next unto the Assistant; and note, that the livery hoods were put upon their shoulders, but neither of them sworn; and the Company are contented to shew their favour unto them for their paynes when the King and Prince dined at their Hall, and their love and kindness in bestowing the musique which was performed by them, their associates, and children, in the King's-chamber gratis; whereas the Musicians in the Great Hall exacted unreasonable sums of the Company for the same, and therefore the Company mean not that this calling of Mr. Dr. Bull and Mr. Nathaniel Gyles into the lyvery hath any burthen or charge unto them further than shall stand with their own good-liking."

The following account of this Entertainment is given by Howes:

"Thursday the 16th of July, his Majestie and Prince Henry being accompanied and attended with very many of the Nobilitie, and other honourable personages, came in private manner to Merchant Tayllors' Hall to dinner (the Queene being also expected), where they were very Royally and joyfully feasted and enter-tayned, with great and pleasant varietie of musique of voices and instruments, and ingenious Speeches, being the feast-day of the Marchant Tayllors for the election of their Master and Wardens. Against the comming of the King, the Lord Maior¹ gave his attendance there, and at the Hall-gate presented his Majestie with the sword, who presently gave it him againe, who bore it before the King into the upper large dining-roome, aunciently called the King's-chamber; and a while after, the Lord Maior with license returned to his owne house with his owne sword borne before him, after hee was past the Hall-gates; and in the same manner hee returned after dinner, and attended untill the King departed.

"Whilest the King sate at dinner, the Maister, the Wardens, with divers Aldermen, and the Recorder of London², all of them being free of that Societie, came unto the King, and in behalfe of the whole Companie, humbly thanked his Majesty, that thus it pleased him to grace their Fraternitie with his Royall Presence, and therewithall the Maister presented him with a purse of golde, and the Clarke of the Hall [Richard Langley] shewed him a role, wherein was registered the names of seaven Kinges, one Queene, seaventeene Princes and Dukes, two Duchesses, one Archbyshoppe, one-and-thirtie Earles, five Countesses, one Vis-

¹ Sir John Watts, Citizen and Clothworker (see p. 132), was then Lord Mayor. The Sheriffs were William Wathall and John Leman.

² Sir Henry Montague; see p. 155.

count, fourteene Byshoppes, sixtie-and-sixe Barons, two Ladies, seaven Abbots, seaven Priors, and one Sub-prior, omitting a great number of Knights, Esquires, &c. who hadde beene free of that Companie, which his Majestie very graciously accepted, and sayed, 'that he himself was free of another Companie, yet he would so much grace the Company of Marchant Taylors, that the Prince his eldest sonne should be free thereof, and that hee would see and bee a witnesse, when the garland should bee put on his head.' Then they all descended into the Great Hall, where the Prince dynded, and in like manner when they hadde saluted him with cheerful welcome; then the Maister presented him also with a purse of golde, and the Clarke of the Companie delivered his Highnesse the like robe, which hee also as graciously accepted, and sayd, 'not onely himselfe woulde bee free of the Marchant Taylors, but therewithall commaunded one of his Gentle-menne and the Clearke to goe to all the Lords there present, and require all of them that loved him, and were not free of other Companies, to be free of his Companie;' whereupon all these Lordes¹, with humble thankes to his Highnes, accepted the freedome.

"The King, during this and the election of the new Maister and Wardens, stooode in a newe window made for that purpose; and, with a gracious Kingly aspect, behelde all their cerimonies; and being descended into the Hall to depart, his Majestie and the Prince were then again presented with like musique of voyces and instruments, and Speeches, as at the first entrance. The musique consisted of 12 lutes, equally divided, six and six, in a window on either side the Hall, and in the ayre betweene them were a gallant shippe triumphant, wherein were three rare menne like saylors, being eminent for voice and skill, who in

¹ The following are the names of those companions of the Prince on this occasion, taken from the before-mentioned inscription in Merchant Taylors' Hall; Lodowick Duke of Lennox; Charles Earl of Nottingham; Thomas Earl of Suffolk; Thomas Earl of Arundel; Henry Earl of Oxford; Edward Earl of Worcester; Robert Earl of Essex; Henry Earl of Northampton; Robert Earl of Salisbury; Philip Earl of Montgomery; William Earl of Pembroke; James Earl of Perth; John Lord in Godshalckor; William Lord Cranborn; William Lord Eure; John Lord Hunsdon; Knolles Lord Knolles; James Lord Hay; Sanker Lord Sanker; William Lord Burghley. — The "Lord Godshalckor" was one of the Ambassadors from the Low Countries, who is called by the Continuator of Stow's Survey, "John Berke, Lord in Godshalk Cort, Counsellor of Dort." His Fellow Ambassadors, "Sir John de Maldere, Knight, Lord of Heyes, &c. and Chancellor of Zealand; and Sir Noel de Caron, Knight, Lord of Schoonwel, Ambassador Ledger from the States," also accepted their freedom; as did "Dr. Montague, Dean of the Chapel, and Adam Newton, Dean of Durham, and the Prince's Tutor."

their several songs were assisted and seconded by the cunning lutanist. There was also in the Hall, the musique of the City; and in the upper-chamber the Children of his Majestie's Chappell song a Grace¹ at the King's table, and also whilest the King sat at dinner, John Bull, Doctor of Musique, one of the Organists of his Majestie's Chappell Royal, and free of the Merchant Taylors', being in a Citizen's gown, cappe, and hood, plaied most excellent melody upon a small pair of organs, placed there for that purpose onely, concerning the bountie of this feast, and plentie of all things, as well for pleasant Princely entertainments of the King, the Prince, the Nobility, and the rest, where were many brave Courtiers and other Gallants, as were most rare and excellent. The Company of Merchant Taylors also after that gave very kind respect, with full and honourable reward, unto every man, according to their highest measure of desert, that did them any service or kindness, either by voice or instruments, making of speeches, or setting of songs, or otherwise."

It appears, by the following extract from the Records of this very loyal² Company, that great precaution and care was taken, before his Majesty's Visit, in proceedings somewhat similar to those which discovered the Powder Plot;

"Also our Master and Wardens are intreated to cause discreet men to make special serch in and about the house and Hall, and all the rooms adjoining, to prevent all villany and danger, from all which we do most humbly beseech Almighty God to bless and defend his Majesty. God save the King³!"

¹ This probably was "Non nobis, Domine," as no other musical grace was at that time known. William Byrde, noticed in p. 139, was the Composer of this grace, the words of which are to be found in the first Collection of the Gunpowder Treason day; "from this unnatural Conspiracy, not our merit, but thy mercy; not our foresight, but thy providence delivered us; and therefore, Not unto us, not unto us, O Lord, but unto thy name be ascribed all honour and glory." This is the first time on record of grace being sung, and there appears little doubt that "Non nobis, Domine" was composed for, and used as a grace on this occasion, for no Clergyman, when called on to say grace, would select such words except on such an occasion.

² The wish of the Merchant Taylors to perpetuate their gratitude for his Majesty's deliverance from the Gunpowder Treason should not pass unnoticed; "Whereas it pleased Almighty God most mercifully to preserve the King's Majesty and the whole State from the late pernicious Gunpowder Treason, it is agreed, that the 5th day of November shall for ever be kept halliday; and so, by order, the whole livery are required to resort to Paules to a sermon."—The loyalty of the Merchant Taylors' Company in Charles the First's time compelled them to part with their Irish estates; and so far did they carry their zeal, that they sold their silver "and-irons" from their venerated hearth in their livery-parlour.

³ An octavo volume by Mr. Clark, Gentleman of his Majesty's Chapels Royal, &c. was published in 1822, called "An Account of the National Anthem entitled God save the King." In this work

And they thus determined to welcome their Royal Guests: "At this Court it is agreed, that the Steward shall make provision of 3 rich purses and of cclbs. in fair gould, wherof one hundred pounds to be to the King, and 50 pounds to the Queene, and 50 pounds to the Prince; and if the Queene do not come, then that 50 pounds to be saved."

On the 19th of July, the Ringers at St. Margaret's, Westminster, were paid 2s. 6d. "when the King and Queen removed;" and on the same day Sir Edward Waldegrave, of Norfolk¹, was knighted at Greenwich.

By patent dated Whitehall, July 19, Sir Alexander Stewart, of Garlies, (afterward Earl of Galloway,) was first created a Peer of Scotland, by the title of Lord Stewart of Garlies, to him and his heirs male succeeding to that estate².

On the 20th, the King went to Oatlands, and there knighted Sir Thomas Norton³, of Kent; and Sir Edward Denny, of the Isle of Wight.

On the 26th, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus from London to Sir D. Carleton:

"The King went hence yesterday [Sunday] in the afternoon, which old Courtiers say is *contra usum Sarum*, and the Puritans think it a matter of no good example. The States [Ambassadors] took their leave yesterday, and they shall be presented with chains of 5 or 600 crowns apeice. They are supped this day by the Merchant Adventurers at Mercers' Chapel, and the last week by the Sheriff. But their best entertainment was at Merchant-tailors' Feast on Thursday, where they met the King, and were placed next the Prince, with many other extraordinary favours. The Queen was not there, though she was assuredly Mr. Clark endeavoured to prove, from the records of the Merchant-tailors' Company and other sources, that the National Anthem was written by Ben Jonson, and the Music composed by Dr. Bull, for this occasion. This has, however, been since completely refuted; see the Gentleman's Magazine, vol. XCV. i. 206; vol. XCVI. ii. 440.

¹ The lineal ancestor of the Earls Waldegrave. He had been M. P. for Sudbury in Suffolk in 1584. Though upwards of seventy years of age at the breaking out of the Civil War, he joined the Royal party, and behaved so worthily as commander of a regiment of horse, as to be rewarded with a Baronetcy Aug. 1, 1643. He lost two sons in the cause, and suffered in his estate to the value of £50,000. See further of his services in Collins's Peerage, by Brydges, vol. IV. p. 241. His great-grandson Henry, the fourth Baronet, was created Baron Waldegrave of Chewton in 1685-6. He was father of the first Earl, whose great-grandson John-James, is the present and sixth Earl, and tenth Baronet.

² See vol. III. p. 906.

³ Sir Thomas Norton, of Northwood in Milton, was Sheriff of Kent in 1618.

looked for; neither can there be any other reason imagined of her failing but their presence. They have not yet seen her, neither can get access, though they have sought it more than once.

"On Friday [July 16], the Earl of Arundel's son¹ was christened in the Chapel at Court, the King and Lord Chamberlain [the Earl of Salisbury], being Godfathers, with the Lady Arbella, in the name of the old Countess of Shrewsbury²."

On the fifth of August, the Anniversary of the Gowry Conspiracy³, we find

¹ This was the Earl's eldest son, by the Countess Alethea, third daughter and coheiress of Gilbert seventh Earl of Shrewsbury. He was christened James, after his Royal Sponsor; was styled by courtesy Lord Maltravers; was made K. B. Nov. 3, 1616, on the creation of Charles Prince of Wales (see vol. III. p. 219); but he died unmarried, when on his travels, at Ghent in Flanders, "to the unspeakable grief of his parents, being of great and notable hopes."

² In Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 96, is a curious letter from the Earl of Arundel to his grandmother the Countess of Shrewsbury, respecting the Christening of his son, saying how that "as soon as ever God of His greate goodness had blessed us with a sonne, wee all resolved to have bin sutors unto your Ladyship that you would vouchsafe to have bin his Godmother. But it hath pleased the Queene's Majestie (oute of her especiall favor) to interpose hir selfe, farre contrary to our expectation (seeing it hath *never* till this time beene seene or knowne that *the Kinge's Majestie and the Queene have Christened any child together*), which must at this time stay the proceedinge in our firste desire; unlesse eyther the unusualnes in like cases, or some other accident, may divert the Queene from her intente, which if it doe happne, then wee will advertise your Ladyship thereof by poaste, and will goe forward in oure humble suite." The Queene did afterwards recede from her intention, probably for the reasons assigned by the Earl, and the Countess was Sponsor to her great-grandson, by her proxy the Lady Arbella, as mentioned above. Her Majesty was, however, still regarded as the future Godmother, when, eleven days after the date of the former letter, the Countess of Shrewsbury wrote thus to the Dowager: "My duty most humbly remembered, with like humbel thanks for your Ladyship's fayre and well wrought armen, which God willing I will keepe as a great juel both in respect of your Ladyship, and of her from whom your Ladyship had it. Ther can nothing be wrought in metall with more life. Yesterday the Queen removed to her howes at Thebales, and of Friday com seven nightes, the King, *the Queen*, and my Lord Chamberlain [Earl of Salisbury] doth, God willing, cresin the letell infant at Arandall Howes; the Cresining must be at Whithall. My Lord of Arandall is at Thebals, which my Lord of Salesbury doth no other wayes youse as his own then my Lord Lumley hath daune Nonesuch, sence his exchang with the Queene, which your Ladyship will imagine wil gretly lesen both his care and his charge. The ermen was as well brought up as was possibell. It shall li by my daughter of Arandall the day of the Cresning, but no longer." Hunter's Hallamshire, p. 96.

³ There was entered at Stationers' Hall, July 28 this year, "*Hilaria*; or the Triumphant Feast for the 5th of August."

the King at Romsey¹, where Bishop Andrews preached before his Majesty a Sermon suited to the day, on 2 Sam. xviii. 32²: "And Cushi answered, The enemies of my Lord the King, and all that rise against thee to doe thee hurte, be as that younge man is."

On the 10th of August, John Stewart, Master of Orkney, (and afterward Earl of Carrick), was first created a Scottish Peer, by the title of Lord Kincleven³.

On the same day our Monarch was at Beaulieu, the seat of Henry Wriothesley, third Earl of Southampton⁴; and on the 20th, he was at Salisbury⁵, where, on that day he knighted Sir Edward Duke, of Kent⁶; Sir Thomas Jarvis, of Hampshire; and Sir Bowyer Worsley, of the Isle of Wight; on the 26th, Sir Edmond Uvedall, of Wiltshire; and on the 29th, Sir Edward Estcourt, of Salisbury, and Sir Gabriel Pile, of Wiltshire.

It is also highly probable that the King was this summer in the Isle of Wight, and was there entertained at Nunwell, the seat of Sir William Oglander⁷.

No apology, I apprehend, is necessary for the introduction under this its

¹ He was probably then lodging at Broadlands near that town; of two subsequent visits to which mansion see vol. III. pp. 98, 904. His Majesty's host there appears to have been Edward St. Barbe, Esq. who, being previously of Ashington in Somersetshire, married Frances, daughter and heiress of William Fleming, Esq. of Broadlands, who died in 1606. Edward was great-grandfather of the first Baronet; see vol. III. p. 98.

² This discourse is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the first "of the Conspiracie of the Gowries."

³ Of this Nobleman see vol. I. p. 196. His titles are supposed to have expired at his death.

⁴ Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. XVI. p. 663. Of Beaulieu see before, p. 95.

⁵ I have not been able to obtain any further information respecting this or the King's subsequent Visits, from the records of the Corporation, although they have been obligingly consulted; but some extracts from them respecting the King's first reception in 1603 will be found in the Appendix, vol. III. p. 1059.

⁶ He possessed the manor of Cosington in Aylesford. See Hasted's *History of Kent*, vol. II. p. 173.

⁷ On the 22d of June, Mr. William Knyveton had written to the Countess Dowager of Shrewsbury, that "His Majestie intends a Progresse into the Ile of Wight, but the Jests [Gests] are not yet sett downe. Yt is sayd he will goe within these fourteen or fifteen dayes to Theobalds, and lye there some little tyme, and then begin the Progresse." Hunter's *Hallamshire*, p. 95.—Of Sir William Oglander see before in the present volume, p. 95. Tradition gives Nunwell the honour of entertaining both King James and Queen Elizabeth.

proper date, of a Masque by Marston¹ at Ashby Castle², as forming another “specimen of that species of dramatic composition, the performance of which was then so fashionable at Court and at the private houses of the Nobility:”

¹ John Marston (of whom but few particulars are on record) was, says Wood, a Student of Corpus Christi College, Oxford. He afterwards, according to Dugdale's *Origines*, was entered of the Middle Temple, where he was Lecturer in 1592. He wrote eight plays (enumerated in the *Biographia Dramatica*), one of which, “*The Malcontent*,” he dedicated to Ben Jonson, but he appears to have been afterwards himself *mal-content* with that Poet. The Play in question was re-published by Mr. Dodsley, in his “*Collection*,” vol. IV. The time of Marston's death is unknown; he was living in 1633. He has been characterized as a chaste and pure writer, avoiding all that obscenity, ribaldry, and scurrility, which too many of the playwrights of that time made the basis of their wit; so that, as Langbaine says, “whatsoever even in the spring of his years he presented upon the private and public theatre, in his autumn and declining age he needed not to be ashamed of.”

² Ashby Castle is classical in English History; and the Families of Hastings and Stanley furnish many of its brightest Heroes and Statesmen.—The Queen there visited George the fourth Earl of Huntingdon in 1603 (see vol. I. p. 170); and his grandson Henry, the fifth Earl, had the honour of entertaining the King there in 1617, on his return from Scotland (see vol. III. p. 421). — King Charles the First was also an inmate at Ashby Castle for some days previous to the attack on Leicester. It still remains majestic in its noble ruins.



THE LORDE¹ AND LADYE² HUNTINGDON'S ENTERTAINEMENT
OF THEIR RIGHT NOBLE MOTHER ALICE³, COUNTESSE DOWAGER OF DARBY,
the firste Nighte of her Honor's Arrivall at the House of Ashby⁴.

"To the Right Noble Ladye ALICE Countess Dowager of DARBY.

"Madam, If my slight Muse may suit your noble merit,
My hopes are crown'd, and I shall cheere my spirit;
But if my weake quill droopes or seems unfitt,
'Tis not your want of worth, but mine of witt.

"The servant of your honor'd vertues,

JOHN MARSTON.

¹ This Nobleman, eldest son of Francis Lord Hastings, was born at Exton in Rutland, where his baptism is recorded in the Parish Register in the following curious manner: "1586. Mr. Henry Hastings, son and heir of Mr. Francis Hastings, was born on St. Mark's even, April 24, between the hours of ten and eleven of the clock at night, *Sign. Sagit. secund. die plenilunii, Marte intrato die precedente*; and was christened May 17." From this entry may be inferred the prevalence at the period of the now exploded doctrines of Astrology.—He succeeded his grandfather as fifth Earl of Huntingdon Dec. 30, 1604; and soon after obtained a Royal grant of the office of Chief Forester of Leicester Forest. Of his New-year's Gift to the King, 1604-5, see vol. I. p. 471. In 1608 he was appointed Lord Lieutenant of Leicestershire. In 1612 he carried the Sword of State before the King into Leicester, and entertained him there at "the Lord's House," three days. In 1615 he was again appointed Lord Lieutenant of the Counties of Leicester and Rutland; Custos Rotulorum for Leicestershire; Steward of the Duchy of Lancaster; and Master of the Royal Hart-hounds. In 1614 he again entertained the King at "the Lord's House" in Leicester, and again in 1617 at Ashby. He died Nov. 14, 1643. This Nobleman's hospitality may be estimated from the liberal Regulations of his Household, preserved at large in "the History of Leicestershire," vol. III. pp. 594—599. In the Town Hall, Leicester, is a portrait of his Lordship, representing him in his robes, collar, and ribbon of the Garter (with a black cap, large and pointed beard.) His right hand bears a white wand, and above the figure is a pannel inscribed with a list of his numerous gifts to the Corporation. There is an oval print of him by Hollar. See many farther particulars of this illustrious Nobleman in the History of Leicestershire, and in Bell's "Huntingdon Peerage," pp. 100—118.

² Lady Huntingdon was Elizabeth, youngest of the three daughters and co-heirs of Ferdinando Stanley, Earl of Derby, "a worthy Lady," says Burton, "descended of Royal blood, and adorned with all the beauteous ornaments of nature and honourable parts." She died Jan. 20, 1633, in the White Friars, London. Her funeral sermon was published with her portrait engraved by J. Payne; Granger mentions another print of her by Marshall.

³ Alice, Lady Huntingdon's mother, was the sixth and youngest daughter of Sir John Spencer of Althorp, and widow of Ferdinando fifth Earl of Derby, who died in 1595. She was, at this time, the wife of Lord Keeper Egerton, who had married her in 1600 and died in 1617. She died Jan. 26, 1635-6; and is buried at Harefield under a superb monument, engraved in Lysons's *Middlesex*, p. 108. She had the honour of being celebrated both by Spenser and Milton; and Harington wrote an epigram to her praise.—She performed in Ben Jonson's *Masque of Blackness* in 1604-5; and *Beauty* in 1607-8. See vol. I. pp. 195, 488; and hereafter, p. 175.

⁴ First printed by the Rev. H. J. Todd, from a MS in the collection of the Duke of Bridgewater.—There is no date to the Duke's MS.; but the Speech in pp. 146—148 is dated August 1607.

“When hir Ladishipp approached the Parke corner, a full noise of cornetts winded; and when she entered into the Parke, the treeble cornetts reported one to another, as giveinge warninge of her Honor’s neerer approach; when presently hir eye was saluted with an antique gate, sodenly erected; uppon did hang many silver scroles with this word in them, *Tantum uni*. Uppon the batlements three gilt shields in diamond-figure, impaled on the top with three coronetts purfled with Gould, and severally inscribed with silver words, in the first, *Venisti tandem*; in the second, *Nostra sera*; in the third, *et sola voluptas*. Over these, upon a half sphere, stood embossed an antique figure guilt; the sleight towers to his gate, raysed for show, were sett out with batlements, shields, and coronets sutable to the rest. Nere the gate an old Inchantresse in crimson velvet, with pale face, blacke haire, and dislyking countenance, affronted her Ladishipp, and thus rudely saluted her:

“Woman, Lady, Princess, Nymphe, or Goddesses,
 For more you are not, and you seeme no lesse;
 Stay, attempt not passage through this port,
 Here the pale Lord of Sadness kepes his Court,
 Rough-visag’d Saturne, on whose bloudles chekes,
 Dull Melancholie sitts, whoe straightly sekes
 To sease on all that enter through this gate.
 Grant gracious listning, and I shall relate
 The meanes, the manner, and of all the sense,
 Whilst your faire eye enforceth eloquence.
 There was a tyme, and since that time the sun
 Hath yet not through the signes of Heaven run;
 When the heghe Sylvan, whoe commands these woods,
 And his bright Nymphe, fairer then Queen of Floods;
 With most impatient longings hop’d to view
 Her face, to whome ther harts’ deer’s zeale was due.
 Youth-joys to love, swete light unto the blind,
 Beauty to Virgins, or what witt can fynd
 Most dearly wished, was not so much desir’d,
 As she to them; O my dull soul is fired
 To tell their longings, but yt is a piece
 That would orelade the famous tongues of Greece;
 Yet long they hop’d, till Rumor struck Hope dead,
 And showed their wishes were but flattered.
 For scarce her chariot cut the easie earth,
 And journeyed on, when Winter with cold breath
 Crosseth her way, her borrowed haire did shine
 With glittering isickles all christaline;

Her browes were perewig'd with softer snow,
Her russet mantle, fring'd with ice below,
Sate closer on her back; she thus came forth,
Ushered with tempests of the frosty North;
And seeing her, she thought she sure had seene
The swete-breath'd Flora, the bright Somer's Queene.
So full of cherefull grace she did appeare,
That Winter feared her face re-called the yere,
And first untimely spring'd to cease [seize] her right,
Whereat with anger and malicious spight
She vows revenge; streight with tempestuous wings,
From Taurus, Alpes, and Caucasus she flings
Ther covering of, and here ther thick fur spread,
The patient earth was almost smothered.
Up Boreas mounts, and doth so strongly blow
Athwart her way hughe drifts of blinding snow;
That, mountaine-like, att last heapes rose so high,
Man's sight might doubt whither Heaven or Earth were skye.
Hereat she turned back, and left her way,
(Necessity all mortalls must obey;)
Which was no sooner voic'd and hither flown,
It sads but to think what grieve was shown;
Which to augment, (mishap nere single falls,)
The God of Sadness and of Funeralls,
Of heavie pensiveness and discontent,
Cold and dull Saturne hither straight was sent.
Myself, Merimna, who do wait uppon
Pale Melancholie and Desolation,
Usher'd him in, when streight we strongly sease
All this sad house, and vowed no means should ease
These heavie bands which pensive Saturne tyed,
Till with wisht grace this house was beautified.
Pace then no further, for vouchsafe to know,
'Till her approach here can no comfort grow;
'Tis onely one can ther sad bondage breake,
Whose worth I may admire, not dare to speak;
She's so compleat, that her much honored state,
Gives Fortune Virtue, makes Virtue fortunate.
As one in whome three rare mixt virtues set,
Sene seldome joyned, Fortune, Beauty, Witt;
To this choice Lady and to her dere State
All hearts do open, as alone this gate;

She, only drives away dull Saturne hence,
 She whome to praise I neede her eloquence¹!

"This Speach thus ended, presently Saturne yssued from forth the porte, and curiously behoulding the Countesse, spake thus:

"Peace! stay, it is, it is, it is even shee,
 Hayle happye honours of Nobilitye!
 Did ever Saturn see, or nere see such?
 What should I style you? &c.

Sweete glories of your sex, know that your eyes
 Make milde the roughest planet of the skies.
 Even wee, the Lorde that sitts on ebon throanes,
 Circled with sighes and discontented groanes,
 Are forc'd at your faire presence to relent,
 At your approach all Saturn's force is spent.—
 Hence, solitary Beldam, sinke to nighte,
 I give up all to joye, and to delight.
 And now passe on, all-happye-making Dame," &c.

"Then passed the whole troupe to the house, untill the Countesse hadd mounted the staires to the greate chamber; on the top of which, Merimna, having chaunged hir habitt all to white, mett her, and, whilst a consort softly played, spake thus: "Madam,

"See what a chaunge the spiritt of your eyes
 Hath wrought in us," &c.

"After which "the Countesse passed on to hir chamber." Then follows "the Masque, presented by four Knights and four Gentlemen, &c. The forme was thus: At the approach of the Countesse into the greate chamber, the hoboyes played untill the roome was marshaled; which once ordered, a travers slyded away; presently a cloud was seen move up and downe almost to the topp of the greate chamber, upon which Cynthia was discovered ryding; her habitt was blewe satten, fairely embroidered with starres and cloudes; who, looking down and earnestly survaying the Ladies, spake thus:

"Are not we Cynthia? and shall earthe displaye
 Brighter than us, and force untimely daye?
 What daring flames beame such illustrious light,
 Inforcing darkness from the claime of night?

¹ This Speech is copied from a MS in the British Museum, Bibl. Sloan. 848, p. 9. The other Speeches are not entire, being only so much as is printed in Mr. Todd's Milton.

Upp, Aryadne, thie cleare beauty rouse,
Thou Northern crowne," &c.

"In the midst of this Speech, Ariadne rose from the bottom of the roome, mounted upon a cloud, which waved up untill it came nere Cynthia; where resting, Ariadne spake thus:

"Can our chaste Queene, searching Apollo's sister,
Not know those stars that in yon valley glister?
Is virtue strange to Heaven," &c.

"After many more compliments to the Ladies, Cynthia replies—

"Let's visite them, and slyde from our aboade,
Who loves not virtue, leaves to be a God.
Sound, spheares, spreade your harmonious breath,
When Mortalls shine in worth, Gods grace the Earth."

"The cloudes descend, whilst softe musique soundeth. Cynthia and Ariadne dismount from their clouds, and, pacing up to the Ladies, Cynthia, perceaving Ariadne wanting hir crowne of starrs, speaks thus:

"But where is Ariadne's wreath of starrs,
Her eight pure fiers that studd with golden barrs
Her shyning browes? Hath sweet-toung'd Mercury
Advanc'd his sonnes to station of the skye,
And throan'd them in thy wreath? &c.

ARIADNE. "Queene of chaste dew, they will not be confyn'd,
Or fyx themselves where Mercury assynde;
But every night, uppon a forrest side,
On which an eagle percheth, they abide,
And honor her," &c.

CYNTHIA. "Tell them thei err, and say that wee, the Queene
Of night's pale lampes, have now the substance seene,
Whose shadowe they adore. Goe, bring those eight
At mighty Cynthia's summons, &c.

"Presently Ariadne sings this short call,

*"Musique and gentle night,
Beauty, youthes' cheefe delighte,
Pleasures all full invite
Your due attendance to this glorious roome,
Then, yf you have or witt or vertue, come,
Ah, come! Ah, come!"*

“ Suddenly, upon this Songe, the cornets were winded, and the travers that was drawn before the Masquers sanke downe. The whole shewe presently appeereth, which presented itself in this figure: the whole body of it seemed to be the syde of a steepely assending wood, on the top of which, in a fayre oak, sat a goulden eagle, under whose wings satt in eight severall thrones the eight Masquers, with wisards like starres, their helmes like Mercurye’s, with the addition of fayre plumes of carnation and white, their antique doublets and other furniture sutable to those colours, the place full of shields, lights, and Pages all in blew satten robes, imbrodered with starres. The Masquers, thus discovered, sat still untill Ariadne pronounced this invocation, at which thei descended:

“ Mercurian issue, sonnes of sonne of Jove,
By the Cyllenian rodd, and by the love
Devotely chaste you vow Pasithea,
Descende, &c.

And O, yf ever you were worthe the grace
Of viewing Majesty in mortall’s face;
Yf ere to perfect worth you vow’d hart’s duty,
Shew spiritt worth your virtues and their beuty.”

“ The violins upon this played a new measure, in which the Masquers danced; and ceasing, Cynthia spake:

“ Stay a little, and now breath yee,
Whilst theis Ladies grace bequeath yee,
Then mixe faire handes, &c.
Cynthia charmes hence what may displease yee.

From Ladies that are rudely coy,
Barring their loves from modest joy,
From ignorant silence, and proud lookes,
From those that answer out of bookes,
From those that hate our chast delight,
I blesse the fortune of each starry Knight.
From gallants who still court with oathes,
From those whose only grace is cloathes,
From bumbast stockings, vile legg-makers¹.
From beardes and great tobacco-takers,

¹ Marston here seems to sneer at the spindle-shanked gentry of those days; who probably stuffed out their stockings with cotton in order to exhibit a good leg. To bombast or bumbast was, in this sense, a common expression; see Reed’s Old Plays, vol. III. p. 441.—“ Is this sattin doublet to be

I blesse the fortune of each starry Dame.
 Singe, that my charme may be more stronge;
 The Goddes are bounde by verse and songe."

THE SONGE.

" *Audacious nighte makes bold the lippe,
 Now all court chaster pleasure,
 Whilst to Apollo's harp you trippe,
 And tread the gracing measure.
 Now meete, now breake, then fayne a warlike salley,
 So Cynthia sports, and so the Godes may dalley,*" &c.

" During this Song, the Masquers presented their sheelds, and took forth their Ladyes to daunce, &c. After they had daunced many measures, galliards, corantos, and lavaltoes, the night being much spent, whilst the Masquers prepared themselves for their departing measure, Cynthia spake thus :

" Now, pleasing, rest; for, see, the Nighte
 (Wherein pale Cynthia claimes her right,)
 Is almost spent; the Morning growes,
 The rose and violet she strowes
 Upon the high cœlestiall floore,
 'Gainst Phœbus rise from's parramore.
 The Faeries, that my shades pursue,
 And bath their feete in my colde dew,
 Now leave their ringletts and be quiett,
 Lest my brother's eye shoulde spy it.
 Then now let every gracious starr
 Avoide at sound of Phœbus' carr;
 Into your proper place retyre,
 With bosoms full of beautie's fier;
 Hence must slide the Queene of Floodes,
 For day beginnes to gilde the woodes:
 Then whilst we singe, though you departe,
 I'le sweare that heere you leave your harte."

bombasted with broken meat?" that is, stuffed out. See also Steevens's Shakspeare, ed. 1793, vol. VIII. p. 418, where the following passage is exhibited from Stubbs's *Anatomie of Abuses*, 1595: "The doublettes were so hard-quilted, stuffed, *bombasted*, and sewed, as they could neither work, nor yet very well play, in them." TODD.—The word bombast originally meant only cotton, from the low Latin *bombax*, Italian *bombace*, or German *baumbast*.—Stubbs, in the same book that Mr. Steevens quotes, thus uses the substantive. He speaks of doublets, "stuffed with four, five, or sixe pounce of bombast at least."

After this, a Shepherd sings "a passionate ditty att my Lady's departure;" he then presents the Countess with a scarf, and adds:

*"Farewell! farewell! Joy, love, peace, health,
In you long dwell, with our farewell!—farewell!"*

"So the Countess passed on until she came through the little park, where Niobe presented hir with a cabinet, and so departed."

There is a loose sheet in the copy of the Masque, on which are written fourteen stanzas, of six and four verses, each stanza being appropriated to a different Lady, and exhibiting a complimentary address to Lady Derby (not copied by Mr. Todd). The first is a stanza of thanks from the Countess herself.

There is no direction in what part of the Masque these verses were to be spoken.

The Speakers are in the following order:

LADY DERBY.	MRS. GRESLEY ⁶ .
LADY HUNTINGDON.	MRS. PACKINGTON.
LADY HUNSDON ¹ .	MRS. K. FISCHER.
LADY BERKELEY ² .	MRS. SAYCHOVERELL ⁷ .
LADY STANHOPE ³ .	MRS. M. FISCHER.
LADY COMPTON ⁴ .	MRS. DAVERS.
LADY FIELDING ⁵ .	MRS. EGERTON.

¹ Sister to Lady Derby, being Elizabeth, second daughter of Sir John Spenser of Althorpe; and a learned Lady.—Of her husband, who died Sept. 9, 1603; see vol. I. pp. 260, 262.

² Elizabeth, second daughter of Sir Michael Stanhope, of Sudbury, Suffolk; married first to Sir Roger Townshend, of Raynham, Norfolk; and, secondly, March 10, 1597, to Henry 11th Lord Berkeley. She died Jan. 3, 1617-18.

³ Margaret, daughter and coheir of Henry M^cWilliams, of Stanborne, Essex, Esq. Of her husband, John, first Lord Stanhope, of Harington, uncle to Lady Berkeley, see vol. I. p. 277.

⁴ Another Sister of Lady Derby, Anne, the fifth daughter of Sir John Spenser, married first to William Stanley, Lord Monteagle, afterwards to William Lord Compton (of whom see vol. p. 477) and lastly to Robert Sackville, Earl of Dorset. To this, Lady Spenser dedicated his "Mother Hubbard's Tale." Lord Compton's first wife had been Frances, the Earl of Huntingdon's sister; who died in 1574. She was mother of William, the first Earl of Northampton, of whom see vol. I. p. 477; and of Sir Thomas Compton, noticed in p. 122.

⁵ Another daughter of Sir Michael Stanhope, married to George Fielding, afterwards Earl of Desmond.

⁶ Susanna, daughter of Sir Humphrey Ferrars, of Tamworth Castle, and wife of Sir George Gresley, Knt. of Drakelow, created a Baronet in 1611.

⁷ Probably Elizabeth, wife of Jacinth Sacheverell, Esq. of Morley, and daughter of Sir Richard Harpur, of Littleover.

On the 8th of September, the King had returned from his Western Progress to Windsor; where on that day he knighted Sir Edward Tyrrell¹; and on the 10th, the Ringers at St. Margaret's were paid 2s. 6d. "for ringing when the King came to Westminster."

On the 16th, died the Lady Mary, daughter² to our Sovereigne Lord the King, and was solemnly entered at Westminster³.

The same day the Earl of Worcester writes as follows to the Earl of Shrewsbury, respecting the regulations for the Funeral:

"My Lord, Dowghting lest my warrant wyll not bee sufficient to the Wardrobe for sutch necessaryes as is fitting for the wrapping up of the deceased Lady I thought good to intreat your assistance to see this bearer provided thereof, the rather in regard neyther my Lord Chamberlayn⁴ nor Sir Roger Aston⁵ are present here. My Lord Lyle and my Lord Carew and myself were to attend the Queen this morning; but she presupposed what our newes would bee, therefore desired that the King myght be made aquainted with all, and that wee would go to Stanwell⁶ to see the Lady opened, being extremely desierouse to knowe the certeyn cause of her deathe. I sent her word that I had alreedy written to your Lordship of her departure, and dowghted not but that you would find some meanes to have yt imparted to the King, and to know his pleasure touching the Funerall; wherof her Majestie is desierouse that some charge may bee bestowed⁷."

¹ See pp. 122, 126.

² She was the King's third daughter, and nearly two years and a half old. Her birth is recorded in vol. I. p. 505; and the great preparations for that event are mentioned in pp. 499, 500.

³ Howes.

⁴ The Earl of Suffolk; see vol. I. pp. 38, 204, 581.

⁵ Who was Master of the Wardrobe; see vol. I. pp. 34, 271, 449. Sir Roger's monument in Cranford church is beautifully engraved in Lysons's Middlesex Parishes. It represents kneeling effigies of the Knight, his two wives, and five daughters; and contains the patent of his office as Gentleman of the Bed-chamber, enclosed in conformity to his own directions, as appears by his epitaph. He died May 23, 1612, at his house of office as Master of the Robes. See farther in Lysons, p. 22.

⁶ Where Lord and Lady Knyvett, who had charge of the Princess, resided.—Lord Knyvett has been noticed in vol. I. p. 583; and this Volume, p. 37.—He has a monument in Stanwell Church with kneeling effigies of himself and Lady. A view of it is engraved in the Gentleman's Magazine for April 1794.—Lady Knyvett was Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Rowland Hayward, Alderman of London, and widow of Richard Warren, Esq. of Essex. She died in King-street, Westminster, little more than a month after her husband.

⁷ Lodge's Illustrations, vol. III. p. 323.

On the 17th of September, Rowland Whyte writes as follows to the Earl of Shrewsbury :

“The King’s Majesty hath beene here at Tibbolles and Wanstead¹ since his return from the Western Progress, and removes not hence till Munday to Whitehall, and Tuesday to Hampton Court, where the Queene is. The Lords have had leave to play these ten daies, and ar gon every one to his own home; only my Lord Salisbury is sometymes here, and at Hatfield. The Lady Mary died yesterday at Stanwell, the Lord Knyvett’s house. She had a burning fever for 23 daies, and a continuall rhewme fell to her lunges, and putrified there, which she had not strength to voyd. The King takes her death as a wise Prince should doe. My Lord of Salisbury is gon this morning to Hampton Court, to comfort the Queen’s Majestie.

“The Turke² had audience at Winsor; he had no busines but compliment. Here is one of the Lantgrave Von Hesse’s brothers, and also a brother of the Duke of Luxembrooke’s, both gon to Chestun Parke with the King this morning³.”

On the 18th, the Earl of Salisbury writes word to the Earl of Shrewsbury, that “the Ladie Marie shalbe buried on Wedsenday, but without any solemnitie nor funerall. I desire my Lady [Salisbury] may know that I wish her all happines; and that you do tell her that I perceave some Ladies are more resolute against crosses than she wold be; for my Mistress [the Queen] takes this losse naturally, but, I assure you, now it is irrevocable, she and the King both dygest it very well and wisely⁴.”

On the 23rd, the King knighted Sir Thomas Darrel at Theobalds.

Towards the end of the month he removed to Royston, where, on the 27th, he knighted Sir Henry Lovell, of Essex; on the 5th of October, Sir Fabian Levens⁵, of Hampton Court; and on the 7th, Sir John Constable⁶, of Yorkshire.

¹ Lysons’s *Environs*, vol. IV. p. 235.—Of Wanstead House, and its various Owners, see the “Progresses of Queen Elizabeth,” vol. II. pp. 94. 223. It escheated to the Crown in 1606, on the death of Charles Blount, Earl of Devonshire; and was afterwards granted by King James to his favourite Villiers.

² Mustapha, the Turkish Agent; of whom see p. 157.

³ Lodge, vol. III. p. 324.

⁴ Ibid. p. 327.—The Royal Children lived so separated from their Parents, that we cannot be surprised at any paucity of affection.

⁵ See another Knight of this name in the roll of Free-gifts for 1605-6, p. 44.

⁶ The family of Constable (which took its name from the office of Constable of Chester), spread widely in the North. Two baronetcies were conferred on different branches; in 1611 on Sir William, of Flamburgh; in 1641 on Sir Philip, of Everingham, both in Yorkshire. See Wotton’s *Baronetage*, 1741, vol. II. p. 322.

"October 12," says Camden in his Annals, "the Banqueting-house at Whitehall is new built¹."—On this subject Howes writes as follows: "The last yeare the King pulled downe the old, rotten, sleight-builded Banqueting-house at Whitehall, and new builded the same this yeare very strong and statelie, being every way larger then the first². There were also many faire lodgings new builded and encreased³."

On the 15th, "The Tragedie of Pope Alexander the Sixth, as it was played before his Majestie," was entered at Stationers' Hall.

On Lord Mayor's day, the 29th, "at his Majestie's entrance into the Citye," the following Speech was made to him by Sir Henry Montague⁴ the Recorder, on presenting to him Sir Henry Rowe⁵ as Lord Mayor:

"Magno, Maximo Britanniae Regi.

"It was in custome amonge the Romans, most High, most Mighty, that such

¹ "In the time of James I. Whitehall was in a most ruinous state. He determined to re-build it in a very princely manner, and worthy of the residence of the Monarchs of the British Empire. He began with pulling down the Banqueting-rooms built by Elizabeth. That which bears the name at present was begun in 1619, from a design of Inigo Jones, in his purest manner; and executed by Nicholas Stone, Master Mason and Architect to the King; it was finished in two years, and cost seventeen thousand pounds, but was only a small part of a vast plan, left unexecuted by reason of the unhappy times which succeeded. Little did James think that he was erecting a pile from which his Son was to step from the Throne to the scaffold.—An extract from Walpole will shew the small pay of this great Architect: 'To Inigo Jones, Surveyor of the King's Works, done about the King's houses, 8s. 4d. per diem, and £.46 per ann. for house-rent, a clerk, and other incidental expences.'" Pennant's London, p. 87.—The Earl of Pembroke's MS Notes, in his copy of Jones's Stonehenge, tell a different story. His Lordship affirms that "Iniquity Jones," as he terms him, had £.16,000 a year for keeping the King's houses in repair. It is probable that some disagreement had arisen between the Earl and the Architect, when the latter was employed at Wilton. See Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting, vol. II. p. 271.

² The cieling of what is now Whitehall Chapel was painted on canvas by Sir Peter Paul Rubens, assisted, it is said, by his scholar Jordaens. He had £.3000 for his work. The paintings represent, by allegory, the Entrance, Inauguration, and Coronation of James I. They were repaired about 25 years ago, by Cipriani, who, says Pennant, received £.2000 for his trouble.—Accurate measurements of the Banqueting-house are printed in Malcolm's London (vol. IV. p. 272), from a Bagford MS in the British Museum.

³ Among the Pictures at Kensington Palace is a whole-length Portrait of King James by Vansomer, in which the Monarch is represented in one of the State-apartments at Whitehall, from which through a window is seen the new building, the Banqueting-house. There is also a whole-length Portrait, by the same Artist, of Queen Anne of Denmark with a fan. At Windsor Castle likewise are Portraits of James and his Queen by Vansomer.

⁴ See pp. 68, 87.

⁵ Sir Henry Rowe (or Roe, as the name was sometimes written) had been Sheriff of London and

Officers as themselves and Provinces had well governed, should with triumphall ornaments enter the Citie; a recompenc of their payns, and to others an encouragement. With us it lykwise hath been observed, that the Mayor of London and his Brethren should solemnly, that is once a year, passe from the Cittie to the Court; and ther from the Kingly Oracle receiv the guerdon of demerits; an honour much more transcendent than that of the Romanes, by how much more the judgement of a wise and vigilant Prince outstrips the opinion and showtes of the giddy Multitude. Other triumphall arches they neither desire nor neede, save the serenitie of your Princely browes; for, *Quæ saxo struuntur, si posterorum judicium in odium vertit, pro sepulchris spernuntur*¹.

“ This skarlett, by your Majestie’s indulgence, is the roabe wharin they triumph, or rather blush that they cannot doe your Majestie that servic wich with all alacritye they desier and owe. And now, my Lord, this is the sixt stage of your most happie and clement Raigne, and this the sixt honourable personage I unworthy hav presented your Majestie all in a *roe*; of whom I have to trouble my Leige with than with the rest no more; seing every yeare we have rather other men than other manners; only this, that his memorable father² somtimes bore the same offic, so fertill hath this familie allwayes bin of good Cittizens; and that, as others his foregoers hav employed their laudable servic against the Plague and Infection, so this Gentellman hath with much vigor and industry against the cold and famin; whereof notwithstanding the former mortalyty in such a populous Cytty (wich, as all things ells in the sunshine of your Majesty, dayly grows), numbers of people must hav miscarried; but that the benignitye of

Middlesex in 1597; knighted, with the other Aldermen, July 7, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 234); was now, as his father had been before him, Lord Mayor; and died in 1612. He resided at Shacklewell. To Hackney Church in 1614 his son Sir Henry added a family-chapel, in which he erected a monument to his father, and near which his grandfather’s was. Sir Henry’s was of black and veined marble, representing between Corinthian pillars kneeling effigies of the Knight, his wife, three sons and three daughters. Of the Rowe monuments, and a view of the family-seat at Higham Hall in the parish of Walthamstow, four plates were engraved in 1752 at the expence of Edward Rowe Mores, Esq. in whose History of Tunstall see much on the family. The estates of the Rowes passed by marriage to the Marquis of Downshire.

¹ Tacitus.

² Sir Thomas Rowe was Sheriff of London and Middlesex in 1560, and Lord Mayor in 1568. He died in 1570. An extract from his will, giving curious directions for his funeral, is printed in Lysons’s Environs, II. 465—7. His monument in Hackney church represented kneeling figures of himself and wife. Of his charities to many of the public Companies, see Maitland, p. 257; he was himself a Merchant Taylor.

God, the fortune of your Majestye, and the modesty of the people, by his equall and exemplary Goverment, the sam occurred¹. Tiberius adorned Rufus, but a common soldier, with a civic Garland, for having gained one Cittizen of Rome; and this Gentellman, whose providence hath preserved many, your Majesty hath graced, out of foresight and judgment, with the honor of Knighthood, and laid on his shoulder your two-edged sword, whereof on the one sits Death and Disgrac, on the other Lyf and Honor. This is the pattent of his good servic, which, long since sealed, comes now by your Majesty's benignity to be read and published.

"Wherewith he humbly delivereth the sword into your Emperiall hand, wich with fear and zeal he doth humbly kisse, with the rest of thes Gentellmen his Brethren; Gentellmen, I say, not of your Privy or Bed-chamber, but of the Great, and, as I may so call it, the Presence [Chamber] of your Kingdom. And though, by reason of their necessary attendanc, thos others be oftner in your Majesty's eye, they no whit dout but they are as oft and alwaies in your Princely mind²."

On the 6th of November, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Thomas Estcourt³, of Gloucestershire.

On the 7th, Rowland Whyte writes as follows, from Court, to the Earl of Shrewsbury⁴: "I saw at Court the Lady Tirrconell; she kissed the King's hand. A sweeter or a more wel-favoured face you never saw. The King wondred that her husband left so faire a face behynd him. Upon Monday come senight his Majestie goes to Newmarkett for a moneth.

"The great pasties your Honor sent up grace the hungry tables at Court. My Lady [Shrewsbury] bestowed two upon my Lord Lisle, where now and then I looke upon them.

"The Turke⁵ and the Prince of Moldavia are now going away."

¹ *i. e.* prevented; the word was formerly used in that sense. Johnson calls it a Latinism.

² Cotton MS. Julius, C. XI. fol. 78.

³ Sir Thomas Estcourt, of Lasborough, was this year Sheriff of Gloucestershire.

⁴ Lodge, vol. III. p. 329.

⁵ Mr. Ellis's valuable publication of "Original Letters concerning English History" (first given to the world in August 1824, whilst this sheet was passing through the press,) enables me to give a literary portrait of the Turkish Agent, from a Letter addressed to Sir Edward Hoby: "For the person of this Mustapha, he seemes to me and others that have visited him, a man of a goodly presence and a gallant spirit, sociable, affable, and full of intertainment to all comers, and one who to give the better content to those who come to see him, is content to dispense with some of his Turkish fashions; and to accustome himselfe to ours. For being invited to accompany Sir Thomas Low, Governor of the Company, to diner, I saw Mustapha sitt in a chayer at the bourde's ende, and drink a solemne

November 17, the King was at Hampton Court, and there knighted Sir William Danvers, of Wiltshire; and on that day, in a letter dated "Arundell House,"

helth to the King of Great Brittain and the Grand Signor. He hath bene two yeares in his journey, having accompanied Monsr. de Brebis, the French Ambassador, through Natolia, Armenia, Soria, Palæstina, Ægypt, and Barbary as far as Algier, where indeed they stayed seven moneths, and where the French Ambassador, by his meanes, was in good hope to have obtained of the King there and Murat-Rey the Coral-fishing upon the Coast of Algier, which was flatly denyed him. With this denyal they went both for Marsellis, where Monsr. de Brebis, for the courtesies he had received at this man's hand in so long a journey, promised he would make the King his Master acquainted with the worthiness of this man and with his message, and then would come and fetch him. But there Mustapha attended six months, and heard neither by word nor letter from Monsr. de Brebis. Hereupon he wrote to the French King that he had the Grand Signor's letter, and that he hoped he would not denye him the lawe of nations, but would graunt him accesse and audience as the Grand Signor used to do to the Ambassadors of all Christian Princes. The French King wrote an answer persuading him to returne back, and sending him a present of 1000 crownes. Which present he refused, and did still peremptorily demand audience and his charges to be defrayed, which in the end was granted him. His errand to the French King was for the release of 150 Turkes chained to the gallies at Marsellis, the greater part wherof Count Maurice released out of Spinola's gallies at the winning of Schluse. He saith he brought with him from Algier 80 French captives, wherof four were circumcised, and delivered them up freely at Marsellis, and yet in seven moneths abroad there he could not get one Turke released. Many other things he reporteth of the perfidy of the French Nation, and saith, he liketh neither their fashion nor dyet, their meat being so larded with hog's flesh as he could not eat of it. During his abroad there the King allowed him 15 crownes a day, and in fine dissuaded him, as did also our Ambassador, from coming hither. But all in vaine; and so he got a passe from Sir George Carew, and would not land at Dover till he had indented with Sir Thomas Waller that he should be defrayed during his abroad. He is come but slenderly attended, with some dozen of Turkes, wherof three only are civilly appareld, the rest looking like the Ambassadors that came to Joshua with old shooes and threed-bare apparel. For his owne person he hath many changes of garments very rich, and several turbants, and hath brought with him either for presents or for a pledge in time of necessity, twenty-nine pieces of cloth of gold and silver, valued at 1000 markes. His employments, he saith, have been five times to Venice, once into Persia, once into Tartary, twice into France, and now the first of his Nation that ever came into England. Besides, he saith, he was, some eight years ago, Treasurer of the Warres to Sinan Bassa, when Raab alias Saverin was won from the Christians, and when Mr. Barton, our Ambassador, was in the army. He had the charge there (believe him who list) of 3600 camels laden within checkins, 40,000 upon a camel, which being cast up do amount to 144 millions of checkins, which is almost 50 millions of poundes sterling. As concerning his message mentioned in the letter of Murat-Reyes, he saith, ther is much talke at Constantinople and Marsellis of English Pirats in the Levant seas; but he saith that in all his long journey he could meet but with one; nor could he hear of any more, but of French and Italian Corsares as many as were haired in his bearde. This one English Pirate, being, as I take it, one Captaine Warde, and, combined with the Turkes, he met at Alger; wher the French Ambassador requested Murat-Reyes to moove Ward

the Earl of Arundel writes to the Earl of Shrewsbury, that "my Lord Hadington's¹ weddinge with my Lorde of Sussex his daughter is at Shroftide, at the Courte²."

On the 24th, Sir John Wood writes thus, "from Charing Crosse," to the Earl of Shrewsbury: "The Parliament, as your Honor knowed, is prorogued untill the tenth of Februarie next. His Majestie, about eight days since, went to Newmarket; and yt ys thought will follow his disports there till yt be nere Christmas ere he retourneth³."

From Newmarket, on the 29th, Sir George Chaworth⁴ corresponds as follows with the Earl of Shrewsbury:

to be favourable to the French. 'I favourable to the French?' (quoth he). I tell you if I should meet mine own father at sea I would robb him, and sell him when I had done.' Then Mustapha asked him whether he would command any service into England for the procuring of his pardon, he answered that he would never see England againe, but would be buried in the sea. Mustapha desires to be dispatched, and to returne home not by the way of France, but by sea; but he will hardly gett his audience till the King comes to Salisbury. His table stands the Merchants in some £.4 a day." On this Letter, Mr. Ellis remarks: "The visit of the first Turkish Ambassador to England presents a picture worth preserving. The panic which had seized on Europe at the close approach of the Ottoman power in the fifteenth century, fixed a jealousy which was not very quickly removed. Above a Century elapsed before any of the Powers in this part of Europe could be persuaded to send a Minister to the Turk; and near a century and a half before his accredited Agents were received at their Courts. The Turkey Company was established in this country in 1579, after Amurath the Third, upon a treaty between William Harborne and Mustapha Beg, a Turkish Bassa, had granted to the English Merchants the same freedom of traffic through his empire as was at that time enjoyed by the French, the Venetians, the Polonians, and the Germans. It was probably upon this occasion that the thought of sending an Ambassador to the Porte from England was first entertained. — The caution with which the proposal was considered will appear from a paper, preserved among the Lansdowne MSS, evidently written about the middle of Lord Burghley's administration, and printed by Mr. Ellis.—Harborne remained as Agent at Constantinople, partly for the English Government and partly for the Merchants, till about 1591, when he was succeeded as Ambassador by Mr. Edward Barton, and he, in 1601, by Mr. Henry Lello, who remained at Constantinople at least till 1605.—The Turk, however, had no Minister or Agent, during all this time, resident in England. A Letter from Mr. Thomas Wilson to Sir Thomas Parry the English Minister in France, dated from the Court at Greenwich, June 12, 1603, has this passage in it respecting King James the First, whose prejudice, it appears, for some time revolted even at the thought of corresponding with Turkey. "For matters of Turkey and Russe, and those barbarous Princes," the writer says, "I think we are like to have some change. The King made great difficulty to sign the Letters to the latter, and to the former denied absolutely ever to do it; saying, that for Merchants' causes he would not do things unfitting a Christian Prince. Yet haply he will be brought to it in time."

¹ Sir John Ramsay; see p. 44.

² Lodge, vol. III. p. 331.

³ Ibid. p. 333.

⁴ Sir George (afterwards Viscount) Chaworth, has been briefly noticed in vol. I. p. 515, when

"I heard the King this daye saye that of late in Venice there was a practise of a preest discovered, which was to blowe upp, by a trayne of poulder, Pietro Paulo¹, his books and him; but that yt was discovered by a stranger passenger, that tooke exceptions to see a lyght in a vault at that tyme of nyght; which strange discoverye makes me doubt of the substance.—The King is indifferently well pleased with his hunting; and, which is to me as great newes as ease, ys not so earnest, without all intermission or respect of wether, be yt hott or could, drye or moyst, to goe to his hunting and hauking as he was; for, though he be as earnest, being at yt as he was, yet ys he more apt to take hould of a lett, and a reasonable wynd will blowe him to, and keepe him at mawe all daye. I seldom or never, except uppon an extraordinarye cause, have knowne a greater Court of Gentlemen then nowe is; but all of them cannot appease and satisfye the King why a fayre whyte jer-faulkon of his lately flewe awaye, and cannot be heard of againe! But the Court will lessen for a season within these two dayes, for that my Lord Hadington, and all his favorytes, followers, and parakells, goe shortly to Huntingdon, to a match of hunting that he there hath against my Lord of Shefeeld's horse.—And well maye he afford to lose such a match; yea, better then so poore a man as I to be at cost to trayne and dyet my horse to win one; by reson that (as I conseve yt) his losing is wining; for he had a good and a gra-tious makar in this terrestrial globe; for he that made him saved and delivered him out of the merchants' books; yea, yf I heard truth, he being £.10,000 deepe lately. But, good Lord, yt was well bestowed of him, and the King could doe no lesse for him, he being to match so well² as to my Lord of Sussex' daughter, which makes a Mayde of Honor weare willowe, and keepe her Christmas in the country³!"

On the King's return from Newmarket, he knighted, at Whitehall, Sir James Oxenford and Sir Thomas Wilford, both of Kent; and at Theobalds, Sir John Colvile, and Sir Ralph Shelton, both of Norfolk.

knighted May 29, 1605. He was sent on an Embassy of condolence to the Archduchess Clara Eugenia, on the death of her husband, the Archduke Albert. "He seems to have wanted neither understanding, education, nor politeness." See Lodge, vol. III. p. 337.

¹ "The famous Father Paulo, Author of the "History of the Council of Trent," &c. He had engaged very warmly on the side of the Venetians in their late contest with the Pope, of which he published an account, written with freedom enough to exasperate the whole body of the Monks against him." L.

² See vol. I. pp. 426, 499; this volume pp. 44, 124; and the Free-gifts of 1608, 1609, 1611, 1614, 1615, 1616. The total amount of the Free-gifts to this Nobleman amount to £31,300!

³ Lodge, vol. III. p. 335.

At Whitehall, on the 20th of December, were knighted Sir William Hamond, of Kent, and Sir Robert Cook, of London; at Hampton Court, on the 23rd, Sir John Thompson, of Kent; Sir Charles Bray, of Oxfordshire; and at Whitehall, on the evening of the 24th, Sir Robert Carr¹, "*Scotus*."

On Thursday, being Christmas-day, the King attended Divine Service at Whitehall, and there heard Bishop Andrews preach on 1 Tim. iii. 16².

From "Whitehall, this Christmas-day," the Earl of Pembroke writes to the Earl of Shrewsbury: "These Hollidays have brought us some rest, as wellcome as to scooleboys, for till Chrismas Eeve's wee have bene in perpetuall motion; and, as soon as 'Twelve Tide is past, we shall begin our *voyage* agayne, I am affrayd³."

Prince Henry's annual gift to the King his Father, on the first day⁴ of the new year 1607-8, was a Latin Thesis, no copy of which occurs; but the letter accompanying it is still extant⁵. In it he observes, that it was now seven years since he had begun to pay his duty to his Majesty at the opening of every new year by some literary offering; and that now, after so long a pursuit of his studies, somewhat of a more important kind might justly be expected from him; not to disappoint such an expectation, he was desirous to try what the smallness of his genius would permit him to do, in confirming, according to the rules of art, a

¹ Of this handsome young Scotchman, who was the same day sworn into the office of Gentleman of the Bed-chamber, and soon became the prime Favourite at Court, and eventually Earl of Somerset, see further under the years 1609, 1611, and 1614.

² This Discourse is among the Prelate's "XCVI Sermons," the third on the Nativity.

³ Lodge, vol. III. p. 337.

⁴ On the same day Sir Henry Wotton, Ambassador at Venice, wrote from thence to the Prince, that having had occasion, on account of his Majesty's service (wherein his Highness's was always included), to dispatch home the honest Captain [Pinner], the bearer of that letter, he had presumed by him, with the remembrance of his own hearty zeal, to present to his Highness a poor New-year's gift. "Our Lord Jesus," continues he, "bless you with many happy years, and make your Highness a Defender of His Faith, which is the chiefest of your hereditary titles. And so, humbly kissing your sweet and Princely hand, I rest your Highness's long devoted servant." Birch's Prince Henry, p. 99.

⁵ "Rex serenissime et amantissime Pater; Septimus agitur annus, ex quo cœpi primum ineuntis anni kalendis serenissimam Majestatem tuam literario aliquo munere salutare. Nunc continuatis tot annorum circa studia laboribus, quemadmodum majoris operæ quidpiam à me merito expectari posse videtur, ut expectationi huic non desim, tentare volui, quid in Menandri poetæ vetustissimi sententiâ ex artis præceptis confirmandâ mei tenuitas ingenii permetteret. Argumentum ejusmodi est, à quo industriæ in dicendo aut acuminis in disserendo magnam laudem non spero; certè pietatis et obsequii non mediocre testimonium, præsertim a patre amantissimo et benignissimo, impetraturum me non despero." Birch's Life of Prince Henry, pp. 98, 418.

sentence of that very ancient poet Menander. That the subject indeed was of such a nature, that he could not hope for any great commendation of elaborateness in the expression, or acuteness in the reasoning; but that he did not despair of having it received as a testimony of his piety and obedience, especially by a most loving and most benign Father.

On the 5th of January Mr. Chamberlaine to Sir D. Carleton writes as follows:

“The Masque goes forward at Court for Twelfth-day, tho’ I doubt the New Room¹ will be scant ready. All the Holidays there were Plays; but with so little concourse of strangers, that they say they wanted company. The King was very earnest to have one on Christmas-night; tho’, as I take it, he and the Prince received that day; but the Lords told him it was not the fashion. Which answer pleased him not a whit; but said, ‘What do you tell me of the fashion? I will make it a fashion.’ Yesterday he dined in the Presence in great pomp, with two rich cupboards of plate, the one gold, the other that of the House of Burgundy pawned to Queen Elizabeth by the States of Brabant, and hath seldom been seen abroad, being exceeding massy, fair, and sumptuous. I could learn no reason of this extraordinary bravery, but that he would shew himself in glory to certain Scots that were never here before, as they say there be many lately come, and that the Court is full of new and strange faces. Yesterday there were to be shewn certain rare fire-works contrived by a Dane, two Dutchmen, and Sir Thomas Challoner, in concert².”

January 7, Sir William Powell, of Wales, was knighted at Whitehall.

On the 8th, we again find Mr. Chamberlaine writing to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“We had great hope to have you here this day; and then I would not have given my part of the Masque for many of their places that shall be present; for I presume that you and your Lady would find easily passage, being so befriended. For the shew is put off till Sunday, by reason all things are not ready. Whatsoever the devise may be, and what success they may have in their dancing, yet you should be sure to have seen great riches in jewels, when one Lady, and that under a Baroness, is said to be furnished for better than a hundred thousand pounds; and the Lady Arabella goes beyond her, and the Queen must not come behind.—On the Twelfth-eve there was great golden play at Court. No Gamester admitted that brought not £.300 at least. Montgomery played the King’s money, and won him £.750, which he had for his labour. The Lord Montegle

¹ The Banqueting House; see p. 155.

² Birch’s MSS. 4173.

lost the Queen £.400. Sir Robert Cary, for the Prince, £.300; and the Earl Salisbury £.300; the Lord Buckhurst £.500; *et sic de cæteris*. So that I heard of no winner but the King and Sir Francis Wolley¹, who got above £.800. The King went a hawking-journey yesterday to Theobalds, and returns to-morrow.

“Above Westminster the Thames is quite frozen over²; and the Archbishop came from Lambeth, on Twelfth-day, over the ice to Court. Many fanciful experiments are daily put in practice; as certain youths burnt a gallon of wine upon the ice, and made all the passengers partakers. But the best is, of an honest woman (they say) that had a great longing to encrease her family on the Thames.”

The Queen’s grand “Masque of Beauty,” having been, as Mr. Chamberlaine informs us, deferred from Twelfth-night till the following Sunday night, it was (however improper as it may now appear) then performed, as follows:

¹ Of whom see vol. I. p. 251.

² The following particulars of this remarkable Frost are given by Howes: “The eight of December began a hard Frost, which continewed seven dayes, and then thawed gentlie five dayes space; and the two-and-twentieth of the same moneth the Frost beganne againe very violentlie, so as within foure daies many persons did walke halfeway over the Thamies upon the ice; and, by the thirtieth of December, the multitude at everie ebb and half-floud passed over the Thamis in divers places; and, although the vyolence of the Frost abated now and then, yet it held from the third of Januarie unto the fifteenth of the same, so as many sett uppe boothes and standings of sundry things to sel upon the ice; and some shott at pricks and plaied at bowles, with other exercises of pleasure, upon the ice. From the four-and-twentieth of January unto the thirtieth of the same, the Frost was most violent, and the next morning it beganne to thaw; and the first of February the ice begin to breake, by little and little, and the next day in the after-noone all the huge rockes and over-spreading ice was either quite dissolved or suncke, so as then there remained no manner of signe of frost. And although this great Frost continewed, of and on, by the space of seven weekes, yet the ice was not so dellicat, smooth, and even, and pleasant, as was that great Frost in the yeere 1564, by reason that Frost helde firme from the beginning unto the ending, but this did not so. This Frost did brake downe and spoiled many faire bridges, and destroyed much wild foule, especially water-fowle and smale byrds; and much fish perrished, as wel in the sea as in fresh waters, and were found dead upon the shore in divers parts of this Land. This Frost destroyed much herbage in gardens, especially hartichokes and rosemary. This Frost was more grievous in France then in England. The Russians, Norways, and other nations of the North, upon the certain knowledge of this Frost, laughed the French and English to scorne, saying, ‘how foolishly and shamefully you complain of one poore six-weekes’ colde, which happeneth not in your countries but once in fiftie yeeres, when we in fiftie yeeres’ space have seldom lesse frost then five moneths continually everie yeere, and with more extremitie.’ This Frost was also very violent in Ireland.”—A tract published at this time, entitled, “Great Frost, Cold Doings in London, except it be at the Lotterie;” with a frontispeice, was sold in Mr. Nassau’s Library, February 23, 1824; and purchased by Mr. Triphook for £.1. 14s.

THE QUEEN'S SECOND¹ MASQUE

WHICH WAS OF

BEAUTY,

Presented in the Court at Whitehall, on the 14th of January 1607-8, the
Sunday-night after Twelfth-night.

By BEN JONSON.

“Two years being now past, that her Majesty had intermitted these delights, and the third almost come, it was her Highness's pleasure again to glorify the Court, and command that I should think on some fit presentment, which should answer the former, still keeping them the same persons, the daughters of Niger, but their beauties varied, according to promise, and their time of absence excused, with four more added to their number.

To which limits when I had apted my invention, and being to bring news of them from the sea, I induced Boreas, one of the winds, as my fittest messenger; presenting him thus:

In a robe of russet and white mixt, full and bagg'd; his hair and beard rough and horrid; his wings gray, and full of snow and icicles; his mantle borne from him with wires, and in severall puffs; his feet ending in serpents' tails²; and in his hand a leafless branch laden with icicles.

But before, in the midst of the Hall, to keep the state of the feast and season, I had placed January³ in a throne of silver; his robe of ash-colour, long, fringed with silver; a white mantle; his wings white, and his buskins; in his hand a laurel-bough; upon his head an anademe of laurel, fronted with the sign Aquarius, and the character; who, as Boreas blustered forth, discovered himself.

BOREAS. Which, among these, is Albion, Neptune's Son?

JANUARIUS. What ignorance dares make that question?
Would any ask, who Mars were in the Wars,
Or which is Hesperus among the Stars?

¹ The Queen's first Masque was that of *Blackness*, presented in 1604-5, printed in vol. I. pp. 479—489. They were published together in 1608, 4to, and entered at Stationers' Hall April 21, under the title of “The Characters of Two Royal Masques invented by Ben Jonson.”—Of Mr. Garrick's copy, now in the British Museum, see vol. I. p. 479. N.

² So Pausanias, in *Eliacis*, reports him to have, as he was carved in *arcu Cipselli*.

³ See *Iconolog.* di Cesare Ripa.

Of the bright Planets, which is Sol? or can
A doubt arise, 'mong Creatures, which is Man?
Behold, whose eyes do dart Promethean fire
Throughout this All; whose precepts do inspire
The rest with duty; yet, commanding, chear;
And are obeyed more with love than fear.

BOREAS. What Power art thou, that thus informest me?

JANUARIUS. Dost thou not know me? I too well know thee
By thy rude voice¹, that doth so hoarsely blow;
Thy hair, thy beard, thy wings, o'er-hill'd with snow²,
Thy serpent-feet, to be that rough North-wind,
Boreas, that to my reign art still unkind.
I am the Prince of Months, call'd January;
Because by me, Janus³, the year doth vary,
Shutting up wars, proclaiming peace, and feasts,
Freedom, and triumphs; making Kings his guests.

BOREAS. To thee then, thus, and by thee to that King,
That doth thee present honours, do I bring
Present remembrance of twelve Æthiop dames;
Who, guided hither by the Moon's bright flames,
To see his brighter light, were to the sea
Enjoin'd again, and (thence assign'd a day
For their return) were in the waves to leave
Their BLACKNESS and true BEAUTY to receive.

JANUARIUS. Which they received, but broke their day; and yet
Have not return'd a look of grace for it,
Shewing a coarse and most unfit neglect.
Twice have I come in pomp here, to expect
Their presence; twice deluded, have been fain
With other rites⁴ my feasts to entertain;
And now the third time, turn'd about the year,
Since they were look'd for, and yet are not here!

BOREAS. It was nor will, nor sloth, that caus'd their stay;
For they were all prepared by their day,

¹ Ovid Metam. lib. 6. near the end see,

————— horridus ira,

Quæ solita est illi nimiumque domestica vento, &c.

² *i. e.* covered over with snow; the spelling is varied, but it is the same with the Saxon word *hele*.

WHAL.—It is scarcely worth dispute; but surely Jonson uses the word in its common acceptation. G.

³ See the offices and power of Janus, Ovid, Fast. 1.

⁴ Two marriages, the one of the Earl of Essex, 1605-6 (see p. 1); another of Lord Hay, 1606-7 (see p. 105).

And, with Religion, forward on their way;
 When Proteus¹, the gray prophet of the sea,
 Met them, and made report, how other four
 Of their black kind (whereof their sire had store)
 Faithful to that great wonder, so late done
 Upon their sisters, by bright Albion;
 Had followed them to seek Britannia forth,
 And there to hope like favour, as like worth.
 Which Night envied, as done in her despite²,
 And, mad to see an Æthiop washed white,
 Thought to prevent in these; lest men should deem
 Her colour, if thus chang'd, of small esteem.
 And so, by malice, and her magic, tost
 The Nymphs at sea, as they were almost lost,
 Till, on an Island, they by chance arriv'd,
 That floated in the Main³; where, yet, she had gyv'd
 Them so, in chains of Darkness, as no might
 Should loose them hence, but their chang'd Sisters' sight.
 Whereat the Twelve, in piety mov'd, and kind,
 Straight put themselves in act, the place to find;
 Which was the Night's sole trust they so will do,
 That she with labour might confound them too.
 For ever since with error hath she held
 Them wand'ring in the ocean, and so quell'd
 Their hopes beneath their toil, as (desperate now
 Of any least success unto their vow;
 Nor knowing to return to express the grace,
 Wherewith they labour to this Prince, and place)
 One of them meeting me at sea, did pray,
 That for the love of my Orithya⁴,
 Whose very name did heat my frosty breast,
 And made me shake my snow-fill'd wings and crest,
 To bear this sad report I would be won,
 And frame their just excuse; which here I've done.

JANUARIUS. Would thou hadst not begun, unlucky Wind,
 That never yet blew'st goodness to mankind;

¹ Read his description, with Vir. Geor. 4. "Est in Carpathio Neptuni gurgite vates, Cæruleus Proteus."

² Because they were before of her complexion.

³ To give authority to this part of our fiction, Pliny hath a chapter, 95 of second book of Nat. Hist. "de insulis fluctuantibus." Et Cardanus, lib. 1. *de rerum vari.* et cap. 7. reports one to be in his time known, in the lake of Lomond in Scotland; to let pass that of Delos, &c.

⁴ The daughter of Erectheus, King of Athens, whom Boreas ravished away into Thrace, as she was playing with other virgins by the flood Ilissus: or (as some will) by the fountain Cephissus.

But with thy bitter, and too piercing breath,
Strik'st horrors through the air as sharp as death¹.

Here a second Wind came in, VULTURNUS, in a blue-coloured robe and mantle, puffed as the former, but somewhat sweeter; his face black, and on his head a red sun², shewing he came from the East; his wings of several colours, his buskins white, and wrought with gold.

VULTURNUS. All horrors vanish, and all name of death,
Be all things here as calm as is my breath.
A gentler wind, Vulturnus, brings you news
The Isle is found, and that the Nymphs now use
Their rest and joy. The Night's black charms are flown;
For, being made unto their goddess known,
Bright Æthiopia, the silver Moon,
As she was Hecate³, she brake them soon
And now by virtue of their light and grace,
The glorious Isle, wherein they rest, takes place
Of all the earth for beauty⁴. There, their Queen
Hath raised them a throne, that still is seen
To turn unto the motion of the world;
Wherein they sit, and are, like Heaven, whirl'd
About the earth; whilst, to them contrary,
(Following those noble torches of the sky,)
A world of little Loves and chaste Desires,
Do light their beauties with still-moving fires.
And who to Heaven's consent can better move,
Than those that are so like it, Beauty and Love?
Hither, as to their new Elysium,
The spirits of the antique Greeks are come,
Poets and Singers, Linus, Orpheus, all
That have excell'd in knowledge musical⁵;
Where, set in arbors made of myrtle and gold,
They live, again, these beauties to behold.

¹ The violence of Boreas Ovid excellently describes in the place above quoted:

“Hâc nubila pello,
Hâc freta concutio, nodosaque robora verto,
Induroque nives, et terras grandine pulso.

² According to that of Virgil, ——— “Denuntiat igneus Euros.”

³ She is called *Φωσφορος* 'Εχαΐη, by Euripides in his *Helena*, which is *Lucifera*, to which name we here presently allude.

⁴ For the more full and clear understanding of that which follows, have recourse to the succeeding pages, where the scene presents itself.

⁵ So Terence and the ancients called Poesy “*artem musicam*.”

And thence in flowery mazes walking forth,
 Sing hymns in celebration of their worth.
 Whilst, to their songs, two fountains flow, one hight
 Of Lasting Youth, the other Chaste Delight,
 That at the closes, from their bottoms spring,
 And strike the air to echo what they sing.
 But why do I describe what all must see?
 By this time near the coast they floating be;
 For so their virtuous goddess, the chaste Moon,
 Told them the fate of th' island should, and soon
 Would fix itself unto thy continent,
 As being the place, by destiny fore-meant,
 Where they should flow forth, drest in her attires;
 And that the influence of those holy fires,
 First rapt from hence, being multiplied upon
 The other four, should make their beauties one.
 Which now expect to see, great Neptune's son,
 And love the miracle which thyself hast done.

Here a curtain was drawn, in which the Night was painted, and the scene discovered, which (because the former was marine, and these, yet of necessity, to come from the sea) I devised, should be an island floating on a calm water. In the midst thereof was a seat of State, called the Throne of Beauty, erected, divided into eight squares, and distinguished by so many Ionic pilasters. In these squares, the sixteen Masquers were placed by couples; behind them, in the centre of the throne, was a tralucent pillar, shining with several coloured lights that reflected on their backs. From the top of which pillar went several arches to the pilasters that sustained the roof of the throne, which was likewise adorned with lights and garlands; and between the pilasters, in front, little Cupids in flying posture, waving of wreaths and lights, bore up the cornice; over which were placed eight figures, representing the Elements of Beauty; which advanced upon the Ionic, and, being females, had the Corinthian order.

The first was SPLENDOR, in a robe of flame-colour, naked-breasted; her bright hair loose flowing: she was drawn in a circle of clouds, her face and body breaking through, and in her hand a branch, with two roses¹, a white and a red.

The next to her was SERENITAS, in a garment of bright sky-colour, a long tress, and waved with a veil of divers colours, such as the golden sky sometimes shews; upon her head a clear and fair sun shining, with rays of gold striking down to

¹ The rose is called elegantly by Achilles Tatius, lib. 2. φυῶν ἀγλαισμα, "the splendor of plants," and is everywhere taken for the hieroglyphic of Splendor.

the feet of the figure. In her hand a crystal¹, cut with several angles, and shadowed with divers colours, as caused by refraction.

The third, GERMINATIO, in green, with a zone of gold about her waist, crowned with myrtle, her hair likewise flowing, but not of so bright a colour; in her hand, a branch of myrtle². Her socks of green and gold.

The fourth was LÆTITIA, in a vesture of divers colours, and all sorts of flowers embroidered thereon; her socks so fitted. A garland of flowers³ in her hand, her eyes turning up, and smiling, her hair flowing and stuck with flowers.

The fifth, TEMPERIES, in a garment of gold, silver, and colours, weaved; in one hand she held a burning steel⁴, in the other an urn with water. On her head a garland of flowers, corn, vine-leaves, and olive-branches interwoven. Her socks as her garment.

The sixth, VENUSTAS, in a silver robe, with a thin subtile veil over her hair and it; pearl⁵ about her neck and forehead. Her socks wrought with pearl. In her hand she bore several coloured lilies⁶.

The seventh was DIGNITAS, in a dressing of state, the hair bound up with fillets of gold, the garments rich and set with jewels and gold; likewise her buskins; and in her hand a golden rod⁷.

The eighth, PERFECTIO, in a vesture of pure gold, a wreath of gold upon her head. About her body the Zodiac⁸, with the Signs; in her hand a compass of gold, drawing a circle.

On the top of all the throne (as being made out of all these) stood HARMONIA, a personage, whose dressing had something of all the others, and had her robe

¹ As this of Serenity, applying to the Optics' reason of the rainbow, and the Mythologists' making her the daughter of Electra.

² So Horace, lib. I. od. 4. makes it the ensign of the Spring. "Nunc decet aut viridi nitidum caput impedire myrto, Aut flore, terræ quem ferunt solutæ," &c.

³ They are every where the tokens of Gladness, at all feasts and sports.

⁴ The sign of Temperature, as also her garland mixed of the four Seasons.

⁵ Pearls with the ancients were the special hieroglyphics of Loveliness; in quibus nitor tantum et lævor expectabantur.

⁶ So was the lily, of which the most delicate city of the Persians was called *Susæ*; signifying that kind of flower, in their tongue.

⁷ The sign of Honour and Dignity.

⁸ Both that and the compass are known ensigns of Perfection.

painted full of figures. Her head was compass'd with a crown of gold, having in it seven jewels equally set¹. In her hand a lyra, whereon she rested.

This was the ornament of the Throne. The ascent to which, consisting of six steps, was covered with a multitude of Cupids² (chosen out of the best and most ingenious Youth of the Kingdom, noble and others) that were the Torch-bearers; and all armed with bows, quivers, wings, and other ensigns of Love. On the sides of the Throne were curious and elegant arbors appointed; and behind, in the back-part of the isle, a grove of grown trees laden with golden fruit, which other little Cupids plucked, and threw at each other; whilst on the ground leverets³ picked up the bruised apples, and left them half eaten. The ground-plat of the whole was a subtle indented maze; and in the two foremost angles were two fountains that ran continually, the one Hebe's⁴, the other Hedone's⁵; in the arbors were placed the Musicians, who represented the shades of the old Poets, and were attired in a priest-like habit of crimson and purple, with laurel garlands.

The colours of the Masquers were varied; the one half in orange-tawny and silver, the other in sea-green and silver. The bodies and short skirts on white and gold to both.

The habit and dressing for the fashion was most curious, and so exceeding in riches, as the throne whereon they sat seem'd to be a mine of light, struck from their jewels and their garments.

This throne, as the whole island moved forward on the water, had a circular motion of its own, imitating that which we call *motum mundi*, from the East to the West, or the right to the left side. For so Hom. *Iliad*. μ, understands by δειξίᾱ, *Orientalia Mundi*; by ἀριστερά, *Occidentalia*. The steps, whereon the Cupids sat, had a motion contrary, with analogy *ad motum planetarum*, from the West to the East; both which turned with their several lights. And with these three varied motions, at once, the whole scene shot itself to the land.

Above which, the Moon was seen in a silver chariot, drawn by Virgins, to ride in the clouds, and hold them greater light; with the sign Scorpio, and the character, placed before her.

¹ She is so described in *Iconolog.* di Cesare Ripa; his reason of seven jewels in the crown alludes to Pythagoras's comment, with *Macr. lib. 2. Som. Scip.* of the seven planets and their spheres.

² The introducing of many Cupids wants not defence with the best and most received of the Ancients, besides Propertius, Statius, Claudian, Sidonius, Apollonius, especially Philostratus, in *Icone Amoris*, whom I have particularly followed in this description.

³ They were the notes of Loveliness, and sacred to Venus. See Philostratus in that place mentioned.

⁴ Of Youth.

⁵ Of Pleasure.

The order of this scene was carefully and ingeniously disposed ; and as happily put in act (for the motions) by the King's Master Carpenter. The Painters, I must needs say (not to belie them), lent small colour to any, to attribute much of the spirit of these things to their pencils. But that must not be imputed a crime, either to the invention or design.

Here the loud Music ceased ; and the Musicians, which were placed in the arbors, came forth through the mazes to the other land ; singing this full Song, iterated in the closes by two Echoes, rising out of the fountains.

*When Love at first did move
From out of Chaos¹, brightened
So was the world, and lightened,
As now.*

1 Echo. *As now !*

2 Echo. *As now !*

*Yield Night, then to the light,
As BLACKNESS hath to BEAUTY ;
Which is but the same duty.
It was for Beauty² that the world was made,
And, where she reigns, Love's lights admit no shade³.*

1 Echo. *Love's lights admit no shade,*

2 Echo. *Admit no shade.*

Which ended, Vulturnus, the Wind, spake to the river Thamesis, that lay along between the shores, leaning upon his urn that flow'd with water, and crowned with flowers ; with a blue cloth-of-silver robe about him ; and was personated by Master Thomas Giles⁴, who made the dances.

VULTURNUS. Rise, aged Thames, and by the hand
Receive these Nymphs within the land.
And in those curious squares and rounds,
Wherewith thou flow'st betwixt the grounds
Of fruitful Kent, and Essex fair,
That lends the garlands for thy hair,

So he is feigned by Orpheus, to have appeared first of all the gods, awakened by Clotho ; and is therefore called Phanes both by him and Lactantius.

¹ An agreeing opinion, both with divines and philosophers, that the great Artificer, in love with His own idea, did therefore frame the world.

² Alluding to the name of Himerus, and his signification in the name, which is *Desiderium post aspectum* ; and more than *Eros*, which is only *Cupido, ex aspectu amare*.

⁴ Of whom see p. 23.

Instruct their silver feet to tread¹,
 Whilst we again, to sea are fled.

With which the Winds departed; and the River received them into the land by couples and fours, their Cupids coming before them.

These dancing forth a most curious dance, full of excellent device and change, ended it in the figure of a diamond; and so, standing still, were by the Musicians with a second Song, sung by a loud Tenor, celebrated.

*So Beauty on the waters stood,
 When Love had sever'd earth from flood²!
 So when he parted air from fire,
 He did with concord all inspire!
 And then a motion he them taught,
 That elder than himself was thought.
 Which thought was, yet, the child of earth³,
 For Love is elder than his birth.*

The Song ended, they danced forth their second dance, more subtle and full of change than the former; and so exquisitely performed, as the King's Majesty (incited first by his own liking, to that which all others there present wished) required them both again, after some time of dancing with the Lords. Which time to give them respite was intermitted with a Song; first, by a voice, in this manner:

*If all these Cupids now were blind,
 As is their wanton Brother⁴;
 Or Play should put it in their mind
 To shoot at one another.
 What pretty battle they would make,
 If they their object should mistake,
 And each one wound his Mother!*

Which was seconded by another Treble thus:

*It was no policy of Court,
 Albe' the place was charmed;*

¹ Warton seemed inclined to compliment Milton with the introduction of this expression, when Mr. Bowles (the keen detector of Jonson's plagiarisms, vol. IV. p. 39) informed him that *silver-footed* was to be found in Brown's *Pastorals* (1619);—"perhaps," subjoins the former, "for the *first time* in English poetry." It had previously occurred in twenty places in Jonson! G.

² As, in the Creation, he is said by the ancients to have done.

³ That is, born since the World, and out of those duller apprehensions that did not think he was before.

⁴ I make these different from him, which they feign *cæcum Cupidinem*, or *petulantem*, as I express beneath in the third Song, these being chaste Loves that attend a more divine beauty than that of Love's common Parent.

*To let, in earnest or in sport,
 So many Loves in, armed.
 For say, the dames should with their eyes
 Upon the hearts here mean surprize;
 Were not the men like harmed?*

To which a Tenor answered.

*Yes, were the Loves or false or straying,
 Or beauties not their beauty weighing;
 But here no such deceit is mix'd,
 Their flames are pure, their eyes are fixed;
 They do not war with different darts,
 But strike a music of like hearts.*

After which Songs they danced galliards and corantos; and with those excellent graces, that the music appointed to celebrate them, shewed it could be silent no longer; but, by the first Tenor, admired them thus:

SONG.

*Had those that dwelt in error foul,
 And hold that women have no soul¹,
 But seen these move; they would have then
 Said, Women were the souls of Men!
 So they do move each heart and eye,
 With the world's soul, true harmony².*

Here they danced a third most elegant and curious dance, and not to be described again by any art but that of their own footing, which ending in the figure that was to produce the fourth; JANUARY from his state saluted them thus:

JANUARIUS. Your grace is great, as is your beauty, Dames;
 Enough my feasts have proved your thankful flames.
 Now use your seat; that seat which was, before,
 Thought straying, uncertain, floating to each shore,
 And to whose having every clime laid claim³,
 Each land and nation urged as the aim
 Of their ambition, Beauty's perfect throne,
 Now made peculiar to this place alone;
 That by impulsion of your destinies,
 And his attractive beams that lights these skies.
 Who, though with th' ocean compass'd, never wets
 His hair therein, nor wears a beam that sets!

¹ There hath been such a profane paradox published.

² The Platonicks' opinion. See also Macrobius, lib. 1. and 2. Som. Scipionis.

³ For what country is it thinks not her own beauty fairest, yet?

Long may his light adorn these happy rites,
As I renew them ; and your gracious sights
Enjoy that happiness, e'en to envy, as when
Beauty at large brake forth, and conquer'd men !

*At which they danced their last dance into their Throne again ; and, that turning,
the scene closed with this full Song :*

*Still turn and imitate the Heaven
In motion swift and even ;
And as his planets go,
Your brighter lights do so ;
May youth and pleasure ever flow.
But let your state, the while,
Be fixed as the isle.*

Chorus.

*So all that see your beauties' sphere,
May know the Elysian fields are here.*

1 Echo. *The Elysian fields are here.*

2 Echo. *Elysian fields are here.*

The Persons who were received on Land by the River God were,

THE QUEEN.

LADY ARBELLA¹.

COUNTESS OF ARUNDEL².

COUNTESS OF DERBY³.

COUNTESS OF BEDFORD⁴.

COUNTESS OF MONTGOMERY⁵.

LADY ELIZABETH GUILDFORD⁶.

LADY KATHERINE PETRE⁷.

LADY ANNE WINTER⁸.

LADY WINDSOR⁹.

LADY ANNE CLIFFORD¹⁰.

LADY MARY NEVILLE¹¹.

LADY ELIZABETH HATTON¹².

LADY ELIZABETH GARRARD¹³.

LADY CHICHESTER¹⁴.

LADY WALSINGHAM¹⁵.

¹ Of this beautiful and accomplished Lady, see vol. I. p. 263. N.

² See pp. 5, 143.

³ See p. 145.

⁴ See vol. I. pp. 174, 488.

⁵ Ibid. p. 489.

⁶ Eldest daughter of Edward fourth Earl of Worcester, and wife of Sir Henry Guildford, of Hemsted-place in Kent. N.

⁷ Sister to Lady Guilford, second daughter of the Earl of Worcester, and wife of William second Lord Petre. She died October 31, 1624, aged 48. G.

⁸ Another sister, the third daughter of the Earl of Worcester, and wife of Sir Edward Winter, of Lydney, Gloucestershire. G.

⁹ Anne, daughter and co-heir of Sir Thomas Rivet, of Chipenham, Cambridgeshire, and the widow of Henry fifth Lord Windsor (who died in 1605). N.

¹⁰ Only daughter and heir of George Clifford, Earl of Cumberland, who is so prominent a character in the "Progresses of Queen Elizabeth." From the memoirs of this Lady, written by herself, some extracts have been given in vol. I. pp. 78, 111, 173, 189, 195. She married, in 1608-9, Richard

On the 15th of February, we find the King at Theobalds, where he knighted Sir Francis Clark, of Surrey; at Whitehall, on the 24th, Sir Edward Fisher, of Berkshire¹; on the 25th, Sir Edward Lewkner, of Suffolk.

On the 26th, Rowland Whyte thus writes from Whitehall to the Earl of Shrewsbury: "The King is newlie gon to Tibbolles for six daies. The Spanish Ambassador has invited the fifteen Ladies that were of the Queen's Maske, to dinner upon Thursday next; and they are to bring with them whom they please, without limitacion. The great Maske intended for my Lord Hadington's mariage is now the only thing thought upon at Court; by five English, Lord Arundell, Lord Pembroke, Lord Montgomery, Lord Theophilus Haward, and Sir Robert Rich; and by seven Scottes, the Duke of Lenox, D'Aubigny, Hay, Master of Mar (yong Erskine) Sanker, and Kenedie². Yt will cost them about £.300 a man³."—On the 29th, he adds, "The Masque [of Beauty] was as well performed as ever any was; and for the device of it, with the Speeches and Verses, I had sent it your Lordship ere this, if I could have gotten those of Ben Jonson. But no sooner had he made an end of these, but that he undertook a new charge for the Masque that is to be at the Viscount Hadington's Mariage⁴."

On the first of February the King knighted Sir James Delavall⁵, of Northumberland, at Whitehall.

third Earl of Dorset, and in 1630 Philip Earl of Pembroke and Montgomery, whom she out-lived many years, dying March 22, 1675, aged 87. The English Court, or, to go further, the English Nation never possessed a nobler character than this celebrated Lady. A spirited sketch of her History is given by Dr. Whitaker in his History of Craven. N.

¹¹ Wife of Henry seventh Lord Abergavenny, daughter of the Earl of Dorset, Lord Treasurer. G.

¹² Fourth daughter of Thomas Cecil first Earl of Exeter, and widow of Sir William Hatton. This beautiful creature afterwards married Sir Edward Coke;—a strange match, and which seems to have afforded more amusement to the by-standers than comfort to the parties concerned. G.—See vol. I. p. 195.

¹³ Wife of Thomas Lord Gerard (of whom see p. 25); she died 1613. N.

¹⁴ Frances, second daughter of Lord Harington, married to Sir Robert Chichester, of Rawleigh, Devon, Knight of the Bath. This Lady died in 1615, and was buried, as the record says, with "much solempnitie in the parrishe Church of Pylton." N.

¹⁵ See vol. I. p. 489. N.

¹ He held the manor of Edwinstone in Ashbury from 1598 to 1626. See Lysons's Berks, p. 236.

² Notes on these performers will be found in the Masque, p. 186.

³ Lodge, vol. III. p. 343.

⁴ Unpublished Talbot Papers.

⁵ Sir Ralph Delavall, of Seaton, was High Sheriff of Northumberland in the years 1604, 1608, and 1621. A baronetcy, now extinct, was conferred on the family, June 29, 1660.

The DESCRIPTION of the MASQUE¹, with the Nuptial Songs, at the Lord Viscount HADINGTON's² Marriage at Court, on Shrove Tuesday at night; celebrating the happy Marriage of JOHN Lord RAMSEY, Viscount HADINGTON, with the Lady ELIZABETH RATCLIFFE, daughter to the Right Honourable ROBERT Earl of SUSSEX.
By BEN JONSON.

“Acceleret partu decimum bona Cynthia mensem.”

THE worthy custom of honouring worthy marriages with these noble solemnities, hath of late years advanced itself frequently with us; to the reputation no less of our Court than Nobles; expressing besides (through the difficulties of expense and travel, with the cheerfulness of undertaking) a most real affection in the personaters, to those, for whose sake they would sustain these persons. It behoves then us, that are trusted with a part of their honour in these celebrations, to do nothing in them beneath the dignity of either. With this proposed part of judgment, I adventure to give that abroad, which in my first conception I intended honourably fit; and, though it hath labour'd since under censure, I, that know truth to be always of one stature, and so like a rule, as who bends it the least way, must needs do an injury to the right, cannot but smile at their tyrannous ignorance, that will offer to slight me (in these things being an artificer), and give themselves a peremptory license to judge, who have never touched so much as to the bark, or utter shell of any knowledge. But their daring dwell with them. They have found a place to pour out their follies; and I a seat to sleep out the passage.

The scene to this Masque was a high, steep, red cliff, advancing itself into the clouds, figuring the place, from whence (as I have been, not fabulously, informed) the honourable family of the Radcliffs first took their name, *a clivo rubro*, and is to be written with that orthography; as I have observed out of Master Cam-

¹ Published in 4to, 1608. A copy is among Mr. Garrick's Plays in the British Museum.

² An account of Lord Haddington's defence of the King against the Gowries, and his subsequent rewards, has been given in vol. I. p. 426. He was greatly beloved by the King, of which he continued to receive many substantial proofs (see many enumerated in p. 160). Having, however, in March, 1622, struck another favourite, Philip Earl of Montgomery, on the race-course at Croydon, he was forbid the Court. James recalled him sometime afterwards, and in 1620, created him Baron of Kingston-upon-Thames, and Earl of Holderness. The bride, whom Arthur Wilson calls “one of the prime beauties of the Kingdom,” did not live to enjoy this last honour. She died of the small-pox, and Bishop Corbett wrote an “Elegia” on the occasion, strangely compounded, as the fashion then was, of wit and woe. She was “girl'd and boy'd,” he says; but none of her offspring seem to have long survived her. G.

den, in his mention of the Earls of Sussex. This cliff was also a note of height, greatness, and antiquity. Before which, on the two sides, were erected two pilasters, charged with spoils and trophies of Love and his Mother, consecrate to marriage; amongst which were old and young persons figured, bound with roses, the wedding garments, rocks and spindles, hearts transfix'd with arrows, others flaming, virgins' girdles, garlands, and worlds of such like; all wrought round and bold; and over head two personages, Triumph and Victory, in flying postures, and twice so big as the life, in place of the arch, and holding a garland of myrtle for the key. All which, with the pillars, seemed to be of burnished gold, and embossed out of the metal. Beyond the cliff was seen nothing but clouds, thick and obscure; till on the sudden, with a solemn music, a bright sky breaking forth, there were discovered, first, two doves¹; then two swans¹ with silver geers, drawing forth a triumphant chariot; in which Venus sat, crowned with her star; and beneath her the three Graces or Charites, Aglaia, Thalia, Enphrosyne, all attired according to their antique figures. These, from their chariot, alighted on the top of the cliff, and descending by certain abrupt and winding passages, Venus having left her star only flaming in her seat, came to the earth, the Graces throwing garlands all the way, and began to speak.

VENUS. It is no common cause, ye will conceive,
My lovely Graces, makes your Goddess leave
Her state in Heaven to night to visit earth.
Love late is fled away, my eldest birth,
Cupid, whom I did joy to call my son;
And, whom long absent, Venus is undone.
Spy, if you can, his footsteps on this green;
For here, as I am told, he late hath been,
With divers of his Brethren², lending light
From their best flames, to gild a glorious night;
Which I not grudge at, being done for her,
Whose honours to mine own I still prefer.
But he not yet returning, I'm in fear,
Some gentle Grace, or innocent Beauty here,
Be taken with him; or he hath surprised
A second Psyche, and lives here disguised.

¹ Both doves and swans were sacred to this Goddess, and as well with one as the other her chariot is induced by Ovid, lib. 10 and 11 Metamor.

² Alluding to the Loves (the Torch-bearers) in the Queen's Masque before (see p. 1).

Find ye no track of his stray'd feet?

1 GRACE. Not I.

2 GRACE. Nor I.

3 GRACE. Nor I.

VENUS. Stay, Nymphs, we then will try
A nearer way. Look all these Ladies' eyes,
And see if there he not concealed lies;
Or in their bosoms, 'twixt their swelling breasts;
The wag affects to make himself such nests.
Perchance he hath got some simple heart, to hide
His subtle shape in; I will have him cried,
And all his virtues told! that, when they'd know
What spright he is, she soon may let him go,
That guards him now; and think herself right blest,
To be so timely rid of such a guest.
Begin, soft Graces, and proclaim reward
To her that brings him in. Speak to be heard.

1 GRACE. Beauties, have ye seen this toy¹,
Called Love, a little boy²,
Almost naked, wanton, blind;
Cruel now, and then as kind?
If he be amongst ye, say?
He is Venus' runaway.

2 GRACE. She that will but now discover
Where the winged wag doth hover,
Shall to-night receive a kiss,
How or where herself would wish;
But, who brings him to his Mother,
Shall have that kiss, and another.

3 GRACE. He hath marks about him plenty;
You shall know him among twenty.
All his body is a fire,
And his breath a flame entire,
That, being shot like lightning in,
Wounds the heart, but not the skin.

¹ This description of Cupid is from the *Ερως Δραπέτης* of Moschus; some additions are made to it by Jonson, but in the spirit of the original.

Δραπέτης εμὸς ἐστὶν ὁ μανυῖας γερασ εἴει.
Μισθὸς τοι το Φιλαμα το Κυπριδὸς· ἢν δ' ἀγαγῆς νιν,
Οὐ γυμνον το Φιλαμα, τι δ', ὡ ξενε, καὶ πλεον εἴεις. Mosch. Idyl. 1. WHALLEY.

The same Poem had been imitated by Tasso, in his *Amor Fugitivo*. G.

² In this Love, I express Cupid, as he is, *Veneris filius*, and owner of the following qualities, ascribed him by the later Poets.

- 1 GRACE. At his sight the Sun hath turn'd¹,
 Neptune in the waters burn'd ;
 Hell hath felt a greater heat²;
 Jove himself forsook his seat ;
 From the centre to the sky,
 Are his trophies reared high³.
- 2 GRACE. Wings he hath, which though ye clip,
 He will leap from lip to lip,
 Over liver, lights, and heart,
 But not stay in any part ;
 And, if chance his arrow misses,
 He will shoot himself in kisses.
- 3 GRACE. He doth bear a golden bow,
 And a quiver hanging low,
 Full of arrows, that outbrave
 Dian's shafts ; where, if he have
 Any head more sharp than other,
 With that first he strikes his Mother.
- 1 GRACE. Still the fairest are his fuel.
 When his days are to be cruel,
 Lovers' hearts are all his food ;
 And his baths their warmest blood ;
 Nought but wounds his hand doth season,
 And he hates none like to Reason.
- 2 GRACE. Trust him not ; his words, though sweet,
 Seldom with his heart do meet.
 All his practice is deceit ;
 Every gift it is a bait ;
 Not a kiss but poison bears ;
 And most treason in his tears.
- 3 GRACE. Idle minutes are his reign ;
 Then the straggler makes his gain,
 By presenting maids with toys,
 And would have ye think them joys ;
 'Tis the ambition of the elf,
 To have all childish as himself.

¹ See Lucian, Dial. Deor.

² And Claudian in *raptu Proserpinæ*.

³ Such was the power ascribed him by all the Ancients ; whereof there is extant an elegant Greek epigram. Phil. Poë. wherein he makes all the other deities despoiled by him of their ensigns ; Jove of his thunder, Phœbus of his arrows, Hercules of his club, &c.

1 GRACE. If by these ye please to know him,
Beauties, be not nice, but show him.

2 GRACE. Though ye had a will to hide him,
Now, we hope, ye'll not abide him.

3 GRACE. Since you hear his falser play¹;
And that he's Venus' runaway.

At this, from behind the trophies, CUPID discovered himself, and came forth armed; attended with twelve boys most antickly attired, that represented the Sports and pretty Lightnesses that accompany Love², under the titles of Joci and Risus; and are said to wait on VENUS, as she is Præfect of Marriage.

CUPID. Come, my little jocund Sports,
Come away; the time now sorts
With your pastime; this same night
Is Cupid's day. Advance your light.
With your revel fill the room,
That our triumphs be not dumb.

Wherewith they fell into a subtle capricious dance, to as odd a music, each of them bearing two torches, and nodding with their antick faces, with other variety of ridiculous gesture, which gave much occasion of mirth and delight to the spectators. The dance ended, CUPID went forward.

CUPID. Well done, Anticks! now my bow,
And my quiver bear to show;
That these beauties, here, may know,
By what arms this feat was done,
That hath so much honor won
Unto Venus and her Son.

¹ i. e. his false play. I should not have noticed so trite an expression, had not the Bishop of Dro-more mistaken the meaning, and, in consequence of it, modernized, that is, corrupted the verse, as he was something too prone to do. He reads

Since ye hear *this falser's* play!

Yet Percy has very great merit; and, by a singular chance, his only defect as an Antiquary, want of accuracy, has led to the most beneficial consequences. Had he published his Ancient Poems in their genuine state, they would have passed unnoticed; but by fitting them in some measure to the ignorance of the times, by variations and additions which were always poetical, and sometimes tasteful, he continued to allure readers, who discovered at length, that these neglected pieces had sufficient strength and feeling in them to justify a little rudeness and simplicity, and that they might be trusted, on better acquaintance, to their inherent and unsophisticated claims on the attention of every lover of Truth and Nature. G.

² Which Horace consents to, Car. lib. 1. ode 2,

——— "Erycina ridens,
Quam Jocus circum volat, et Cupido."

*At which his Mother apprehended him; and circling him
in with the Graces, began to demand:*

VENUS. What feat, what honour is it that ye boast,
My little straggler? I had given you lost,
With all your games, here.

CUPID. Mother!

VENUS. Yes, sir, she.

What might your glorious cause of triumph be?
Have you shot Minerva or the Thespian dames¹?
Heat aged Ops again² with youthful flames?
Or have you made the colder Moon to visit
Once more a sheepecote? Say, what conquest is it
Can make you hope such a renown to win?
Is there a second Hercules brought to spin?
Or, for some new disguise, leaves Jove his thunder?

CUPID. Nor that, nor those, and yet no less a wonder³—

[He espies Hymen.]

Which to tell I may not stay;
Hymen's presence bids away;
'Tis, already, at his night,
He can give you further light.
You, my Sports, may here abide,
Till I call to light the Bride.

[Slips from her.]

Enter HYMEN.

HYMEN. Venus, is this a time to quit your car?
To stoop to earth, to leave alone your star,
Without your influence, and, on such a night⁴,
Which should be crown'd with your most cheering sight?
As you were ignorant of what were done
By Cupid's hand, your all-triumphing Son,
Look on this State; and if you yet not know,
What crown there shines, whose sceptre here doth grow;

¹ She urges these as miracles, because Pallas and the Muses are most contrary to Cupid. See Luc. Dial. Ven. et Cupid.

² Rhea, the mother of the Gods, whom Lucian, in that place makes to have fallen frantically in love by Cupid's means with Atys. So of the Moon, with Endymion, Hercules, &c.

³ Here Hymen, the God of Marriage, entered; and was so induced here, as you have him described in my *Hymenæi* (see p. 3).

⁴ When she is *nuptiis præfecta*, with Juno, Suadela, Diana, and Jupiter himself. Paus. in *Messe-niac. et Plut. in Problem.*

Think on thy loved Æneas¹, and what name,
 Maro, the golden trumpet of his fame,
 Gave him, read thou in this. A Prince that draws
 By example, more than others do by laws;
 That is so just to his great act and thought,
 To do, not what Kings may, but what Kings ought.
 Who, out of piety, unto Peace is vow'd,
 To spare his subjects, yet to quell the proud;
 And dares esteem it the first fortitude,
 To have his passions, foes at home, subdued.
 That was reserv'd, until the Parcæ spun
 Their whitest wool; and then his thread begun,
 Which thread, when treason would have burst², a soul
 To-day renown'd, and added to my roll,
 Opposed; and, by that act, to his name did bring
 The honour to be saver³ of his King.
 This King, whose worth, if Gods for virtue love,
 Should Venus with the same affections move,
 As her Æneas; and no less endear
 Her love to his safety, than when she did cheer,
 After a tempest⁴, long-afflicted Troy,
 Upon the Lybian shore; and brought them joy.

VENUS. I love, and know his virtues, and do boast
 Mine own renown, when I renown him most.
 My Cupid's absence I forgive, and praise,
 That me to such a present grace could raise.
 His Champion shall, hereafter, be my care;
 But speak his Bride, and what her virtues are.

HYMEN. She is a noble Virgin, styled, the Maid
 Of the Red-cliff, and hath her dowry weigh'd
 No less in virtue, blood, and form, than gold;
 Thence, where my pillar's rear'd, you may behold,

¹ Æneas, the son of Venus, Virgil makes throughout the most exquisite pattern of piety, justice, prudence, and all other Princely virtues, with whom (in way of that excellence) I confer my Sovereign, applying in his description of his own word usurped of that Poet, "Parcere subjectis, et debellare superbos."

² In that monstrous Conspiracy of Earl Gowry.

³ ————— "Titulo tunc crescere posses,
 Nunc per te titulus."

⁴ Virg. Æneid. lib. i.

Fill'd with Love's trophies, doth she take her name.
 Those pillars did uxorious Vulcan frame¹,
 Against this day, and underneath that hill,
 He, and his Cyclopes, are forging still
 Some strange and curious piece, to adorn the night,
 And give these sacred Nuptials greater light.

Here VULCAN presented himself, as overhearing HYMEN, attired in a cassock girt to him, with bare arms, his hair and beard rough; his hat of blue, and ending in a cone; in his hand a hammer and tongs, as coming from the forge.

VULCAN. Which I have done; the best of all my life;
 And have my end, if it but please my wife,
 And she commend it, to the labour'd worth.
 Cleave, solid rock! and bring the wonder forth.

At which, with a loud and full music, the cliff parted in the midst, and discovered an illustrious concave, filled with an ample and glistering light, in which an artificial Sphere was made of silver, eighteen foot in the diameter, that turned perpetually; the coluri were heightened with gold; so were the arctic and antarctic circles, the tropics, the equinoctial, the meridian, and horizon; only the Zodiac was of pure gold; in which the Masquers, under the characters of the Twelve Signs, were placed, answering them in number; whose offices, with the whole frame, as it turned, VULCAN went forward to describe.

It is a Sphere, I've formed round and even,
 In due proportion to the Sphere of Heaven,
 With all his lines and circles; that compose
 The perfect'st form, and aptly to disclose
 The heaven of marriage, which I title it;
 Within whose Zodiac, I have made to sit,
 In order of the Signs, Twelve sacred Powers,
 That are presiding at all Nuptial hours:

The first, Aries' place, respecteth pride
 Of youth and beauty, graces in the bride.

In Taurus, he loves strength and manliness,
 The virtues which the Bridegroom should profess.

¹ The ancient Poets, whensoever they would intend any thing to be done with great mastery or excellent art, made Vulcan the artificer, as Hom. Il. 2. in the forging of Achilles's armour, and Virg. for Æneas, Æneid 8. He is also said to be the God of Fire and Light; sometime taken for the purest beam; and by Orph. in Hym. celebrated for the sun and moon. But more especially by Eurip. in Troad. he is made *Facifer in Nuptiis*. Which present office we give him here, as being *Calor Naturæ* and *Præses Luminis*. See Plat. in Cratyl. For his description, read Pausanias in Eliacis.

In Gemini, that noble power is shown,
 That twins their hearts, and doth of two make one.
 In Cancer, he that bids the wife give way
 With backward yielding to her husband's sway.
 In Leo, he that doth instil the heat
 Into the man; which from the following seat
 Is temper'd so, as he that looks from thence
 Sees yet they keep a Virgin innocence.
 In Libra's room, rules he that doth supply
 All happy beds with sweet equality.
 The Scorpion's place he fills, that makes the jars
 And stings in wedlock, little strifes and wars:
 Which he, in th' Archer's throne, doth soon remove,
 By making, with his shafts, new wounds of love.
 And those the follower with more heat inspires,
 As in the Goat the Sun renews his fires.
 In wet Aquarius' stead, reigns he that showers
 Fertility upon the genial bowers.
 Last, in the Fish's place, sits he, doth say,
 In married joys all should be dumb as they.
 And this hath Vulcan for his Venus done,
 To grace the chaster triumph of her Son.

VENUS. And for this gift, will I to Heaven return,
 And vow for ever, that my lamp shall burn
 With pure and chastest fire; or never shine¹,
 But when it mixeth with thy sphere and mine.

Here VENUS returned to the chariot with the Graces; while VULCAN, calling out the Priests of HYMEN, who were the Musicians, was interrupted by PYRACMON².

VULCAN. Sing then, ye Priests.

PYRACMON. Stay, Vulcan, shall not these
 Come forth and dance?

VULCAN. Yes, my Pyracmon, please

¹ As Catullus hath it in nup. Jul. et Manl. without Hymen, which is marriage, "Nil potest Venus, fama quod bona comprobet," &c.

² One of the Cyclops, of whom, with the other two, Brontes and Steropes, see Virg. *Æneid*.

"Ferrum exercebant vasto Cyclopes in antro,
 Brontesque, Steropesque, et nudus membra Pyracmon," &c.

The eyes of these spectators with our art ¹.

PYRACMON. Come here then, Brontes, bear a Cyclop's part,
And Steropes, both with your sledges stand,
And strike a time unto them as they land;
And, as they forwards come, still guide their paces,
In musical and sweet-proportion'd graces;
While I upon the work and frame attend,
And Hymen's Priests forth, at their seasons, send
To chaunt their hymns; and make this square admire
Our great artificer, the God of Fire.

Here the Musicians, attired in yellow, with wreaths of marjoram, and veils like Hymen's Priests, sung the first staff of the following Epithalamion; which, because it was sung in pieces between the dances, shewed to be so many several Songs; but was made to be read an entire Poem. After the Song, they came forth (descending in an oblique motion) from the Zodiac, and danced their first dance; then music interposed, (but varied with voices, only keeping the same chorus,) they danced their second dance. So after, their third and fourth dances, which were all full of elegancy and curious device. And thus it ended. The two latter were made by Master Thomas Giles², the two first by Master Hier. Herne³; who, in the persons of the two Cyclopes, beat a time to them with their hammers.

The tunes were Master Alphonso Ferrabosco's⁴. The device and act of the scene Master Inigo Jones's⁵, with addition of the Trophies.

For the invention of the whole, and the verses, *assertor qui dicat esse meos, imponet plagiaro pudorem*.

The attire of the Masquers throughout was most graceful and noble; partaking of the best both ancient and later figure. The colours carnation and silver,

¹ As when Homer, Iliad. 2, makes Thetis, for her son Achilles, to visit Vulcan's house, he feigns that Vulcan had made twenty tripods, or stools with golden wheels, to move of themselves miraculously, and go out and return fitly. To which the invention of our dance alludes, and is in the Poet a most elegant place, and worthy the tenth reading. ² See p. 23, 171.

³ Jerome Herne was in 1610 one of Prince Henry's Musicians, with a salary of £.20. N.

⁴ Son of an eminent Musician of the same name (of whom see Hawkins's History of Music, vol. III. p. 315). "Jonson," says Mr. Gifford, "appears to have had an extraordinary regard and affection for this eminent Composer. He delights to mention him on all occasions; and in the Masque of Hymen, hurried away by his feelings, he interrupts the strain of applause in which he was describing Alphonso's exertions, with a genuine burst of tenderness." See p. 23.—Jonson addressed two epigrams (130, 1) to him on a book of "Ayres," which he published in folio, 1609. See Gifford's Jonson, VIII. 237. N.

⁵ See pp. 23, 171; and hereafter, in the Masque of Queens in 1608-9. N.

enriched both with embroidery and lace. The dressing of their heads, feathers and jewels; and so excellently ordered to the rest of the habit, as all would suffer under any description, after the shew.

Their performance of all, so magnificent and illustrious, that nothing can add to the seal of it, but the subscription of their names¹:

THE DUKE OF LENOX ² .	LORD WALDEN ⁷ .
EARL OF ARUNDELL ³ .	LORD HAY ⁸ .
EARL OF PEMBROKE ⁴ .	LORD SANKRE ⁹ .
EARL OF MONTGOMERY ⁵ .	SIR ROBERT RICHE ¹⁰ .
LORD D'AUBIGNY ⁶ .	SIR JOHN KENNETHIE ¹¹ .
MASTER ERSKINE ¹² .	

¹ The greater number of these Masquers had before made their appearance in that character; the Earls of Arundel and Montgomery, Lord Walden, and Lord Hay, at the Marriage of the Earl of Essex; the Duke of Lennox and Lord Walden at the accompanying Barriers; Lord Pembroke at his brother's Marriage; and Lord Walden again at Lord Hay's. The latter was the most "lusty Reveller." N.

² See p. 24.

³ See p. 5.

⁴ Of whose life, and in particular his introduction at Court, see vol. I. p. 254; and also pp. 194, 221. He was a Performer in the undiscovered Masque on the Marriage of his brother, the Earl of Montgomery, in 1603-4 (ibid. p. 471); and was with the King at Oxford in 1605 (ibid. p. 555). N.

⁵ See vol. I. pp. 510, 555; and this Volume, p. 5.

⁶ Esme, younger brother of the Duke of Lennox, whom he succeeded in 1623. He married Catherine, the only daughter of Sir Gervase Clifton. He was warmly attached to our Poet, who has an Epigram (127) addressed to him, full of respect and gratitude. G.

⁷ See pp. 5, 24, 108.

⁸ See p. 5.

⁹ Robert, sixth Lord Crichton of Sanquhar. This Nobleman, in an angry trial of skill with John Turner, a fencing-master, was deprived of an eye. The loss, which he confessedly brought upon himself, seems to have rankled in his mind; and in May 1612 he hired two Scotchmen, Gray and Carlisle, to murder the unfortunate Swordsman. For this atrocious act he was tried at the bar of the King's Bench in Westminster, and sentenced to be hanged. Great interest was made for his pardon by the Archbishop and others, but in vain; and he was hung, June 29, in a gibbet erected in Great Palace Yard, before the Gates of Westminster Hall. Wood's Douglas, vol. I. p. 480. N.

¹⁰ Of whom see vol. I. p. 223; when created K. B. at the Coronation.

¹¹ Who succeeded his uncle John as sixth Earl of Cassilis in 1615. He was a man of great honour and integrity, and endowed with many excellent qualities. He adhered strongly to Charles I. and, in 1651, was one of the Commissioners sent to Charles II. then at Breda, upon which his Majesty came to Scotland, and was crowned at Scoon. Even after the battle of Worcester, he could never be persuaded to make the smallest concession to the Protector. N.

¹² Henry Erskine, eldest son of John seventh Earl of Mar; afterwards K. B. and eighth Earl of Mar; and of whom see under the year 1610. He is called "young Erskine, Master of Mar," by Mr. Whyte in p. 175; and is probably the "Scotch Nobleman" who was with the King at Oxford; see vol. I. p. 555. N.

EPITHALAMION.

Up, Youths and Virgins, up, and praise
 The God, whose nights outshine his days ;
 Hymen, whose hallowed rites
 Could never boast of brighter lights ;
 Whose bands pass liberty.

Two of your troop, that with the morn were free,
 Are now waged to his war.
 And what they are,
 If you'll perfection see,
 Yourselves must be.

Shine, Hesperus, shine forth, thou wished star !

What joy or honours can compare
 With holy nuptials, when they are
 Made out of equal parts
 Of years, of states, of hands, of hearts !
 When in the happy choice,

The Spouse and Spoused have the foremost voice !
 Such, glad of Hymen's war,
 Live what they are,
 And long perfection see ;
 And such ours be.

Shine, Hesperus, shine forth, thou wished star !

The solemn state of this one night
 Were fit to last an age's light ;
 But there are rites behind
 Have less of state, but more of kind ;
 Love's wealthy crop of kisses,
 And fruitful harvest of his Mother's blisses.
 Sound then to Hymen's war ;
 That what these are,
 Who will perfection see,
 May haste to be.

Shine, Hesperus, shine forth, thou wished star !

Love's commonwealth consists of toys ;
 His council are those antic boys,
 Games, Laughter, Sports, Delights,
 That triumph with him on these nights ;
 To whom we must give way,
 For now their reign begins, and lasts till day.
 They sweeten Hymen's war,
 And, in that jar,

Make all, that married be,
 Perfection see.
 Shine, Hesperus, shine forth, thou wished star!
 Why stays the Bridegroom to invade
 Her, that would be a Matron made?
 Good-night, whilst yet we may
 Good-night to you a Virgin say;
 'To-morrow rise the same
 Your Mother is¹, and use a nobler name.
 Speed well in Hymen's war,
 That, what you are,
 By your perfection we
 And all may see.
 Shine, Hesperus, shine forth, thou wished star!
 To-night is Venus' vigil kept.
 This night no Bridegroom ever slept;
 And if the fair Bride do,
 The married say, 'tis his fault, too.
 Wake then, and let your lights
 Wake too; for they 'll tell nothing of your nights.
 But, that in Hymen's war,
 You perfect are.
 And such perfection we
 Do pray should be.
 Shine, Hesperus, shine forth, thou wished star!
 That, ere the rosy-finger'd morn
 Behold nine moons, there may be born
 A Babe, t' uphold the fame
 Of Ratcliffe's blood, and Ramsey's name;
 That may, in his great seed,
 Wear the long honours of his father's deed.
 Such fruits of Hymen's war
 Most perfect are;
 And all perfection we
 Wish you should see.
 Shine, Hesperus, shine forth, thou wished star²!

¹ A Wife or Matron; which is a name of more dignity than Virgin. Daniel Heinsius, in *Nup. Ottonis Heurnii*: "Cras matri similis tuæ redibis."

² "However desirable it may be to leave the recognition of the Poet's merits to the taste and discrimination of the reader, it seems almost impossible to pass, in silence, over such pre-eminent marks of genius and study as those before us. Not many pages are numbered since we had the most beautiful little piece of its kind in the English language; and here we have another of the same species, replete with every excellence. The learning of Jonson is prodigious, and the grace, delicacy, and judgment with which he applies it to the embellishment of his subject, cannot be too highly estimated." G.

In a letter dated February 11, Mr. Chamberlaine affords the following interesting particulars of the Marriage: "I can send you no perfect relation of the Marriage, nor Masque on Tuesday; only they say all, but especially the motions, were well performed; as Venus, with her chariot drawn by swans, coming in a cloud to seek her Son; who, with his companions, *Lusus*, *Risus*, and *Jocus*, and four or five wags, were dancing a *matachina*, and acted it very antiquely, before the Twelve Signs, who were the Master-maskers, descended from the Zodiac, and played their parts more gravely, being very gracefully attired. The Bride dined in state, accompanied by the Prince, the young Duke, the Lady Elizabeth, the Countess of Oxford, the Duke of Saxony, and other States, to furnish the table. In the midst of the dinner the King drank a carouse in a cup of gold, which he sent to the Bride, together with a bason and ewer, two livery pots, and three standing cups, all very fair and massy, of silver and gilt, and withall a patent for a pension of £.600 a year out of the Exchequer to the longer liver of them; with this message, that he wished them much comfort all their life, as he received that day he delivered him from the danger of Gowry. Many other great presents there were of plate sent from all sides; but Dunbar's went beyond all, being valued between four and five hundred pounds."

On the same day, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir John Davis¹, of London, and Sir Multon Lambarde², of Kent.

The Prince de Joinville, who had been at the English Court in May and June 1607, and returned to that of France about the end of November following, having sent a present of Arms and Horses to Prince Henry, his Highness returned thanks for them in a Letter dated Feb. 11. "I perceive, my Cousin," says he,

¹ This was the Statesman and Poet, and, in the latter character, "one of the first of his day, but who has been unaccountably neglected, although his style approaches the refinement of modern times." He was of Queen's College, Oxford, and the Middle Temple; appointed Solicitor-general in Ireland in 1603, and Attorney-general soon after, and Judge of the Assize. He had been called to the degree of Serjeant at Law in Trinity Term 1606. Still remaining in Ireland, he was appointed King's Serjeant; in 1612 elected a Member of the Irish Parliament for the county of Fermanagh, and afterwards Speaker. In 1616 he retired from Ireland, and was, in 1620, elected M. P. for Newcastle-under-Line. He died December 7, 1626, aged 56, and was buried in St. Martin's-in-the-Fields. Of his works, and further particulars of his life, see Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.

² Sir Multon Lambarde was son of William Lambarde the Topographer. They were seated at West Combe in East Greenwich. Both father and son had monuments in Greenwich old Church, whence, on its destruction, they were removed by the family to Sevenoaks. Lysons's Environs, IV. 468.

“ that, during your stay in England, you discovered my humour ; since you have sent me a present of the two things which I most delight in, Arms and Horses ¹.”

Feb. 13, Sir William Acklam, and Sir Anthony Hungerford, of Wiltshire, were knighted at Whitehall ; and on the 15th, Sir Henry Contherant, “ *Teutonicus*.”

March 4, the King, at Newmarket, knighted Sir Edward Lewkner ², of Suffolk ; Sir Robert Quarles ³, of Essex ; and Sir Thomas Seckford, of Bedfordshire.

Free Gifts in the Fifth Year of the King's Reign, 1607-8.

To Mr. John Auchmontie, out	£.	Sir Richard Weston ⁶	-	-	£.1700
of Recusants' lands and goods	2000	Peter Vanlore	-	-	1625
Martin and Abraham Harderet ⁴ ,		Thomas Levingstone	-	-	66
out of Recusants' lands and		Dr. Neile ⁷ , Dean of Westminster			200
goods - - - -	3000	Sir Thomas Terringham	-		1000
Alexander Hay ⁵ , out of debts		William Bellenden	-	-	200
due to the King - -	1000	Charles Fortie	-	-	100

¹ Birch's Life of Prince Henry, p. 100.

² See another Knight of this name in p. 175.

³ Sir Robert Quarles resided at Romford, where he owned the Manor of Stewards. He was buried there, Feb. 2, 1638-9. See various particulars of his family (of which was Francis the Poet, and Cup-bearer to the Queen, well known by his Book of Emblems) in Lysons, IV. pp. 178, 188, 199.

⁴ Abraham Harderet was Jeweller to the Queen, and had a yearly salary of £50.

⁵ Of whom see hereafter when knighted, June 13, 1608. He will occur again in the Free-gifts of 1608-9 and 1609-10.

⁶ See before, pp. 44, 124.—In 1609 Sir Richard received a Free-gift of £1,664.

⁷ Richard Neile, D. D. Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge, had been patronized by the Cecils, and Chaplain to Lord Burleigh. He was made Dean of Westminster in 1605, being then Vicar of Cheshunt, and Clerk of the Closet to the King. “ In the beginning of the Reign of King James,” says Dr. Heylin, “ by the power and mediation of Archbishop Bancroft, he was made Clerk of the Closet to that King, that, standing continually at his elbow, he might be ready to perform good offices to the Church and Churchmen. And he discharged his trust so well, that, though he lost the love of some of the Courtiers, (who were too visibly inclined to the Puritan faction,) yet he gained the favour of his Master.” Cyprianus Anglicus, p. 60.—In 1608 he was consecrated Bishop of Rochester ; and it is not unworthy remark, that about this time Laud (afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury) became one of his Chaplains, who, in great measure, owed his subsequent rise to his influence. Dr. Neile was promoted to the Sees of Lichfield and Coventry in 1610 ; Lincoln 1613-14 ; where, in 1617, he had the honour to entertain the King (see hereafter under that year). He was translated to Durham in that year ; to Winchester in 1627 ; and to York in 1631. He died Oct. 31, 1640, aged 78, and was buried in York Cathedral.—His portrait is in St. John's College, Cambridge, and it is finely engraved among Harding's Portraits of the Deans of Westminster.

The Lord Danvers ¹	-	-	£.750	Francis Steward ¹⁰	-	-	£.100
Sir John Lindsey	-	-	100	Sir Edward Grevill ¹¹	-	-	500
John Spence	-	-	40	Sir Roger Aston ¹²	-	-	1500
Dr. Martin ²	-	-	100	The Merchants of the Levant			
Sir Bevis Bulmere ³	-	-	100	seas, for a present to be given			
John Nesmith ⁴	-	-	66	by them to the Grand Signior			
Gilbert Primrose ⁵	-	-	66	for establishing capitulations			
Sir Thomas Edmonds ⁶	-	-	240	of intercourse	-	-	5322
The Earl of Downbarre ⁷	-	-	4106	John Patten, out of Recusants'			
Sir Henry Broncker ⁸	-	-	100	lands, &c.	-	-	200
The Lord Lundoures ⁹	-	-	2500				
							£.20,681

¹ Henry, second son of Sir John Danvers, of Dantsey, Wiltshire, of a family whose ancestor came to England with the Conqueror, and younger brother to Sir Charles Danvers, who suffered with the Earl of Essex. He had been bred to arms from his youth, and greatly distinguished himself by sea and land; so much so, that at 18 he was made a Captain in the Low Countries, and at 21 knighted by Henry IV. of France. He shone as a sea-captain under the Earl of Nottingham; and afterwards served in Ireland. He was created Baron Dantsey in 1603 (see vol. I. p. 205), and restored in blood as heir to his father in 1605. He afterwards was made President of Munster; Governor of the Isle of Guernsey for life in 1610; Earl of Danby in 1625-6; K. G. in 1634. He died unmarried, full of honour, wounds, and days, at his seat, Cornbury Park, Oxfordshire, Jan 20, 1643, aged 70; and lies buried under a noble monument of white marble in Dantsey Church. He was the Founder of the Physic-garden, Oxford, at an expense of £.5000. His brother, Sir John Danvers, was one of the Judges of King Charles.—See Sidney Papers, vol. III. p. 480.

² See before, p. 43.

³ To this person, in 1599, was granted “a impositi'on of sea-coles, paying £.6200 rent for 21 yeares.” Lodge's Illustrations, vol. III. p. 162.—In 1603 he had received the same sum as now for a Free-gift, as “Master Bevis Bullmere,” see vol. I. p. 426; but it does not appear when he was knighted, or what he was. In 1608 he had a Free-gift of £.500.

⁴ Mr. John Nesmith was Surgeon to the King, and attended Prince Henry in his last illness; but he was dead before 1617.

⁵ See before, p. 44.—He had £.200 as a Free-gift in 1610. In 1617 he had yearly salaries of £.26. 13s. 4d. as Serjeant Surgeon to the King; £.40 as Ordinary Surgeon to the King; and £.33. 6s. 8d. as Surgeon to the Prince.

Who was one of the Clerks of the Council. See a short memoir of him in vol. I. p. 156.—In 1617 he received a salary of £.66. 13s. 4d. as “Secretary for the French tongue.”

⁷ See p. 44.—The Earl had several grants from the King, and will occur again more than once.

⁸ A Sir William Broncker will be found in the Free-gifts of 1616-17. ⁹ See p. 124.

¹⁰ This Gentleman had £.220 the next year, and “Sir Francis Steward” had £.200 in 1613.

¹¹ Sir Edward Grevill had £.2000 the next year.

¹² See p. 153.—In 1603 he had received £.2000 (see vol. I. p. 427), as he did again in 1612.

On the 25th, 26th, and 30th of March, were knighted at Whitehall:

Sir John Crompton.	Sir Edward Hussey ² , [of Lincolnsh.]
Sir Stephen Lisures.	Sir Anthony Barker.
Sir William Fytch, of Essex.	Sir Mervyn Touchet, <i>alias</i> Audley ³ .
Sir John Isham ¹ , of Northamptonsh.	Sir James Altham ⁴ .

On the 28th, that being Easter-day, the King attended Divine Service in his Chapel there, and heard a Sermon⁵ from Bishop Andrews, on Mark xvii. 1—7.

In the beginning of April, the King returned to his sports at Newmarket, where on the 8th he knighted Sir Francis Harris.

On the 10th, Prince Henry wrote the following Letter to the King; at once thanking his Royal Father for the permission granted him of hunting, and giving a proof of his improvement in Latin composition:

“Rex serenissime et amantissime Pater; Duæ mihi erant æque justissimæ causæ, propter quas Majestatem vestram scripto salutare citius debueram; una perpetua, ut cultum obsequiumque à me debitum quam officiosissimè testatum facerem; altera recens, ut pro inopinatâ venandi facultate gratias maximas haberem. Sustinui tamen a scribendo manum aliquantisper, dum inseparatæ hujus

¹ Sir John Isham, of Lamport, was Sheriff of Northamptonshire in 1611, “where, acting as Justice of the Peace, he bore a great sway untill the unhappy troubles, being, for his knowledge of the Law and impartial determinations, esteemed an eminent and upright Magistrate.” He was created a Baronet May 30, 1627, and died July 8, 1651, aged 68.

² Sir Edward Hussey, of Honington, was created a Baronet June 29, 1611; was Sheriff of Lincolnshire in 1618 and 1636; and was M. P. for that county during the short Parliament (in 1640). He afterwards took up arms for Charles I. and suffered greatly for his loyalty, being plundered at several times to the value of £.10,000, having his lands sequestered, and being fined £.9000 for his composition. (See Collins’s *Baronetage*, 1720, vol. I. p. 260.) He was also one of those the Parliament required, in 1644, should be removed from his Majesty’s Councils, and restrained from coming within the verge of the Court, &c. He died in 1648.

³ Eldest son of George Lord Audley, who was created in 1617 Earl Castlehaven, but died the same year. Sir Mervyn succeeded to his father’s titles; but, being convicted of certain high crimes, lost his head on Tower-hill, May 14, 1631. See Brydges’s *Peerage*, vol. VI. p. 554.

⁴ A Knight of these names has occurred in p. 122.—One Sir James Altham was a Baron of the Exchequer. His annual salary was £.113. 6s. 8d. He was also a “Justice of Assize in the county of Suffolk,” with a yearly fee of £.12. 6s. 8d.

⁵ It is in the Bishop’s “XCVI Sermons,” the Third “of the Resurrection.”

benignitatis fructum aliquem gustassem, sperans futurum, ut ipsa oblectationis in venando perceptione animum mihi ad gratias alacriorem invenirem: quod quidem mihi usu venisse mehercule agnosco, ideoque quantas maximas animus meus capere potest, à gratias me deberi M. V. jam nunc intelligo. Non quod sim nescius plurima eaque multo majora Majestatis vestræ beneficia in me identidem fuisse collata: verum quemadmodum curæ leves loquuntur, ingentes stupent; et licet ad ingentium beneficiorum memoriam obmutescerem et obstupescerem sæpenumero ea animo recolens, pro leviculo hoc tamen gratitudinem animo conceptam verbis expressam imprimis cupiam. Verum eam non in ore magis quam in mente perpetuo futuram Majestati V. persuasissimum esse scio, sicut ego de pristino suo in me studio atque affectu nihil esse remissuram compertissimum habeo, atque ut id quam diutissime esse posset, Deum Opt. Max. ex animo precor. 4 id. Aprilis ¹."

On the 10th of April, a great, though stolen, match was concluded, announced to the Earl of Shrewsbury in the following Letters; the first of which was sent by the Earl and Countess of Arundel:

"My Lord; Wee could not omitte to advertize your Lordship of an accident that will be soe welcome to you as that our cosin Cavendishe ² hath gotten a good wife, whoe was this Sondag in the morninge married to my Lo. of Kinlos his daughter ³. The matter hath bin soe secretly carried as it was never heard of of

¹ Harl. MSS. 7007.

² This was William, eldest son of William Lord Cavendish, so created May 4, 1605, and afterwards Earl of Devonshire; of whom see vol. I. p. 511.—Having travelled in France and Italy, under the tuition of Mr. Thomas Hobbes, he now married, and was knighted on the 7th of March following. He succeeded his father as Earl of Devonshire in 1625, and died at his house in Bishopsgate-street (where now is Devonshire-square) June 20, 1628, aged 39. He was as conspicuous for his learning as his extravagance. So well did he understand foreign languages, that he was appointed to introduce several foreign Ambassadors to the English Court; and in such expence did he indulge, that, when he was Earl of Devonshire, his house appeared rather like a Prince's Court than a Subject's. See further in Brydges's Peerage, vol. I. p. 324.

³ Christiana, only daughter of Lord Kinloss, so named from being born on Christmas-day. A Life of this excellent Lady, by Thomas Pomfret, was published in 1685. After her Husband's death, she obtained the wardship of their Son; and so well managed his affairs, that though his estate was, at his father's death, encumbered with near thirty law-suits, she went through them all with satisfaction, and by her care and management discharged her husband's vast debt. "She was a Lady of that affability and sweet address, with so great a wit and judgement, as captivated all who con-

any till it was donne; and, for me, I thinke I was the last; for, at my going to Whitehall after dinner, the Queene told me of it, and says that in the morning Jhon Elveston asked her leave to goe to the wedding, which she coule not beleeve till she heard it confirmed by more certainty. The Queene heares that Elveston, and (it is thought) my La. Arbella were the mach-makers¹, and that Elveston hath five or sixe hundred pounce; that the wench is a pretty red-headed wench, and that her porcion is seaven thousand pownde; and that she heares the youth at first refused her; and my Lo. Cavendishe told him Kinlos was well favoured by the Queene, and if he refused it would make him the worse by an hundred thousand pounce; but I am sure the Queene is far from beinge pleased withall nowe it is done. And soe, with oure service to your L. and my La. we rest your Lordship's affectionate son and daughter to comand,

ARUNDELL.

ARUNDELL²."

Mr. John Hercy communicated the news to the Earl as follows:

"This morninge about eight of the clocke, in the Chappell of the Rolls, Mr. William Cavendishe, the Lo. Cavendishe his sonne, was married to the Master of the Rolls his daughter, a younge gentlewoman of 13 yeares of age, or thereabouts. Yesterdaye about noone, as I am enformed, it was concluded betweene theire Lordships whether it sholde be a matche, albeit their Lordships had spent most parte of the forenoone about the same, and likewise some conference two or three dayes before. I dayly endeavored, accordinge to my former letters to your

versed with her; and of such strict virtue and morals that she was an example to her sex." She died Jan. 16, 1674-5. See her *Life*; and many interesting particulars respecting her, in Bishop Kennett's *Memoirs of the Cavendish Family*; in the *History of Leicestershire*, vol. I. p. 288; and in *Brydges's Peerage*, vol. I. p. 326.

¹ Pomfret tells a different story, and says, that this match, into a great and noble English family, was contrived by "the policy of the King to reward Lord Kinloss for his great services in having been a principal instrument of his obtaining the Crown of England." (See vol. I. p. 109). "And for the better grace," says that author, "the King gave her with his own hand, and made her fortune ten thousand pounds, and solicited for a better settlement on them, telling the old Lord Cavendish, after his marriage with a second wife, that his son being matched into a family, for which he was so nearly concerned, he expected, out of that plentiful estate he himself had, such a proportion should be settled, that Sir William might bear up the port of his son, and his Lady the quality of the King's kinswoman; which mediation proved so effectual, that the Lord Cavendish did what the King thought reasonable." The truth appears to be, that all parties were soon reconciled.

² Lodge, vol. III. p. 350.

Lordship, to fynde out what the Lady Cavendishe her suite might be with the Master of the Rolls his Lady; and yeasterdaye, about five in the afternoone, I sorted my self nere where Mr. Loo, and some other of my Lo. Cavendishe his Councell, were in very earnest and private conference about somethinge for this busynes, as it now semeth; and albeit I colde not then fittly come so neare to heare the matter at lardge, yet so neare, unseene, that I heard something to this purpose; for I then perceaved, both by jesture, and also by some speache used by Mr. Loo to the other Counsell, that the Lord Cavendishe was exceedinge earnest to have the busynes which they had in hande to be presently dispatched; whereuppon it was then said by one of the other Councell, that they woulde make the booke reddy very spedily; by the next daye it should be done, if it wold please his Lordship to sett downe the pcells that were to be named therein; aud so desiered Mr Loo to satisfie his Lordship, and alsoe to signifye unto him theire reddynges, with some other words by them used to the like effect, to my seming; alsoe manye tymes I heard them name the somme of fyve hundred pounds for the present mantenaunce (which somme I then conceaved to be meant £.500 *per ann.*), to be assured to somme partie which I cold not come so neare to heare named, for Mr. Loo most comonly did pronounce his words, much like his name, *low*.

“ I heare that the Lo. Cavendishe, presently after the marriage, went to Whitehall, to intreate my La. Arbella to come to the Rolls to the wedding-dynner, and that her Ladyship came accordingly. I also heare that his Lordship sent in like sorte to invite Mr. Henry Cavendishe, but it is saide he went not ¹. ”

On the 17th of April, Sir Edward Barret², of Essex, was knighted at Newmarket.

On the 26th, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Edward Lewes³, of Wales; on the 29th, Sir William Young⁴, of Berkshire; on the 30th, Sir Thomas Hern⁵, of Norfolk; and on the 2nd of May, Sir Thomas Wotton, of Kent.

¹ Lodge, vol. III. p. 351.

² Of Sir Edward Barret, a conspicuous character in the succeeding reign, see Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 585. In 1625 he was created Lord Newburgh; but died without issue in 1644.

³ Sir Edward Lewes was, in 1610, a Gentleman of the Privy-chamber in Ordinary to Prince Henry.

⁴ Sir William Young or Yonge, of Basilden, was Sheriff of Berkshire in 1615.

⁵ Sir Thomas Hern, or one of the same names, knighted July 3, 1609, was Sheriff of Norfolk in 1620.

On the 6th of May, Robert Earl of Salisbury was appointed Lord Treasurer ¹ in the room of Thomas Earl of Dorset, deceased.

Between the 7th and the 15th, were knighted, at Whitehall,
 Sir William Hervey ², of Suffolk. Sir Oliver Pytt, of Surrey.
 Sir William South, of Cambridgeshire. Sir Samuel Payton ⁴, of Kent.
 Sir Francis Swann ³, of Kent. Sir John Stradling ⁵, of Shropshire.

"The 20th of May," says Howes, "at Windsore, were made Knights and Companions of the Garter, George Earl of Dunbar ⁶, Lord High Treasurer of Scotland, and Philip Earl of Montgomery ⁷."

¹ Ben Jonson addressed the following Epigram to the Earl upon this occasion :

"Not glad, like those that have new hopes or suits,
 With thy new Place, bring I these early fruits
 Of Love, and what the Golden Age did hold
 A treasure, Art; contemned in the Age of Gold.
 Nor glad as those that old dependants be,
 To see thy Father's rites new laid on thee;
 Nor glad for fashion; nor to shew a fit
 Of flattery to thy titles; nor of wit.
 But I am glad to see that time survive,
 Where merit is not sepulchred alive;
 Where good men's virtues them to honours bring,
 And not to dangers; when so wise a King
 Contends t' have worth enjoy, from his regard,
 As her own conscience, still the same reward.
 These, noblest CECIL, laboured in my thought,
 Wherein what wonder see thy name hath wrought,
 That whilst I meant but thine to gratulate,
 I've sung the greater fortunes of our State."

The Poet addressed to the same Nobleman two other Epigrams; his 43d and his 63d.—The Earls' rise has been sufficiently noticed in vol. I. pp. 109, 119, 136, 146, 510.

² Afterwards Lord Hervey of Kidbrook; whose mansion at Thurleigh the King visited August 1, 1605; see vol. I. p. 522, where he is fully noticed; but his Knighthood told incorrectly. His daughter Elizabeth married her cousin John Hervey, of Ickworth, Suffolk, ancestor of the Earls of Bristol.

³ Sir William Swann, afterwards a Baronet, was knighted the 13th of the following November.

⁴ Sir Samuel Payton, of Knowlton, was the son of Sir Thomas Payton, knighted May 13, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 120). He was created a Baronet June 29, 1611.—Another branch of this family, seated at Iselham, Cambridgeshire, was also honoured with a Baronetcy the same year.

⁵ Sir John Stradling distinguished himself by his learning, "wrote several things, was a good epigrammatist, and was courted and admired by the learned Camden and others." Having, in 1610, succeeded to St. Donat's Castle, Glamorganshire, he was, in 1611, the fifth in the first roll of Baronets, and in 1620 Sheriff of that county. He published "Beati Pacifici," 1623, and "Divine Poems," dedicated to Charles I. See Collins's Baronetage, 1720, vol. I. p. 35.—The title became extinct in 1738. A view of St. Donat's Castle and Church, with the monumental inscriptions to the Stradlings, is to be found in the Gentleman's Magazine for June 1821.

⁶ Of whom see vol. I. pp. 248, 270; and this Volume, pp. 44, 191.

⁷ See p. 186.

On the 24th, it being Whitsunday, Bishop Andrews preached before the King at Greenwich a Sermon suited to the day ¹; and Sir Thomas Holland ², of Norfolk; Sir Rotheram Willoughby ³; and Sir Anthony Pell were there knighted; as were, between the 27th of May and the 13th of June,

Sir Everard Whitney, of Hereford-	Sir John Brown, of Essex.
shire.	Sir Warham Saint Leger ⁵ , of Kent.
Sir George Goring ⁴ , of Sussex.	Sir Richard Bullar ⁶ , of Cornwall.
Sir Thomas Hawkins, of Kent.	Sir Alexander Hayes ⁷ , <i>Scotus</i> .

On the 14th of June, Sir John Harington, of Kelston, thus describes, to Prince Henry, a remarkable Dog formerly in his possession ⁸:

“May it please your Highnesse to accepte in good sorte what I now offer, as hath been done aforetyme; and I may saie, *I pede fausto*; but havinge goode reason to thinke your Highnesse had goode will and likinge to reade what others have tolde of my rare Dogge, I will even give a brief historie of his good deedes and straunge feats; and herein will I not plaie the curr myselfe, but in good soothe relate what is no more nor lesse than bare veritie. Although I mean not to disparage the deedes of Alexander's Horse ⁹, I will match my Dogge ¹⁰ against him for good carriage; for, if he did not bear a great *Prince* on his backe, I am bold to saie he did often bear the sweet wordes of a greater *Princesse* on his necke.

“I did once relate to your Highnesse after what sorte his tacklinge was, wherewith he did sojourn from my house at the Bathe to Greenwich Palace, and deliver up to the Cowrte there such matters as were entrusted to his care. This

¹ On Acts, ii. 4, in continuation of his last sermon on Whitsunday, preached June 8, 1606 (see p. 51). It is printed in his Sermons, the second “of the sending of the Holy Ghost.”

² Sir Thomas Holland was Sheriff of Norfolk in 1618.

³ The following entry is in the Church-book of Great Marlow, Buckinghamshire: “1613. Item, received for Sir Rotheram Willoughby his grave in the Church, 6s. 8d.”—The family rented the manor of Seymours there, and resided in the manor-house.

⁴ Sir George Goring was in 1610 Gentleman in Ordinary of the Privy-chamber to Prince Henry. Of his “fooleries” see p. 38.

⁵ The family of Saint Leger was of the highest antiquity in Kent. Several took the name of Warham, from a maternal ancestor, brother to the Archbishop of that name. See Hasted's Kent, II. 423.

⁶ Sir Richard Bullar, of Tregaryd, was Sheriff of Cornwall in 1611.

⁷ Sir Alexander Hay was Secretary for Scottish affairs. See the last roll of Free-gifts, p. 190.

⁸ *Nugæ Antiquæ*, edited by Park, vol. I p. 390.

⁹ Bucephalus.

¹⁰ Bungey.

he hathe often done, and come safe to the Bathe, or my house here at Kelstone, with goodly returnes from such Nobilitie as were pleased to emploie him; nor was it ever told our Ladie Queene that this Messenger did ever blab ought concerning his highe truste, as others have done in more special matters. Neither must it be forgotten as how he once was sente with two charges of sack wine from the Bathe to my house by my man Combe; and on his way the cordage did slacken, but my trustie bearer did now bear himselfe so wisely as to covertly hide one flasket in the rushes, and take the other in his teethe to the howse; after whiche he wente forth and returnede with the other parte of his burden to dinner. Hereat your Highnesse may perchance marvell and doubte; but we have livinge testimonie of those who wroughte in the fieldes, and espiede his worke, and nowe live to tell they did muche longe to plaie the dogge, and give stowage to the wine themselves; but they did refraine, and watchede the passinge of this whole businesse.

“ I neede not saie how muche I did once grieve at missinge this Dogge; for, on my journie towards Londonne, some idle pastimers did diverte themselves with huntinge mallards in a ponde, and conveyd him to the Spanish Ambassador's; where (in a happie houre) after six weeks I did heare of him; but suche was the courte he did pay to the Don, that he was no lesse in good likinge there than at home. Nor did the householde listen to my claim or challenge, till I rested my suite on the Dogge's own proofes, and made him performe such feats before the Nobles assembled as put it past doubt that I was his master. I did send him to the hall in the time of dinner, and made him bring thence a pheasant out of the dish, which created much mirth; but much more, when he returned at my commandment to the table and put it again in the same cover. Herewith the companie was well content to allow me my claim, and we bothe were well content to accepte it, and came homewardes. I coud dwell more on this matter, but *jubes renovare dolorem*. I will now saie in what manner he died. As we traveld towardes the Bathe, he leapede on my horse's necke, and was more earneste in fawninge and courtinge my notice, than what I had observed for time backe; and, after my chidinge his disturbinge my passinge forwardes, he gave me some glances of such affection as moved me to cajole him; but alas! he crept suddenly into a thorny brake, and died in a short time.

“ Thus I have strove to rehearse such of his deedes as may suggest much more

to your Highnesse' thought of this Dogge. But, havinge saide so much of him in prose, I will say somewhat to you in verse, as you may finde hereafter at the close of this historie. Now let Ulysses praise his Dogge Argus¹, or Tobit be led by that Dogge² whose name doth not appear; yet could I say such things of my *Bungey* (for so was he styled), as might shame them both, either for good faith, clear wit, or wonderful deedes; to say no more than I have said, of his bearing letters to London and Greenwich, more than an hundred miles. As I doubt not but your Highnesse would love my Dogge, if not my selfe, I have been thus tedious in his storie; and again saie, that of all the Dogges near your father's Courte, not one hath more love, more diligence to please, or less pay for pleasinge, than him I write of; for verily a bone would contente my servante, when some expecte greater matters, or will knavishly find oute a bone of contention. I nowe reste your Highnesse' friend in all service that may suite him, JOHN HARINGTON.

"P. S. The verses above spoken of are in my Book of Epigrams³, in praise of my Dogge Bungey to Momus⁴. And I have an excellent picture, curiously limned, to remaine in my posteritie."

¹ Odyssey, lib. xvii.

² Book of Tobit, chap. v. and xi.

³ See also the engraved Title-page to his Ariosto, and notes on Book xli.

⁴ The two following short Poems are extracted from Sir John Harington's Volume of Epigrams:

1. "Against Momus, in praise of his Dog *Bungey*.
 "Because a witty writer of this time
 Doth make some mention in a pleasant rime
 Of Lepidus, and of his famous Dog,
 Thou, Momus, that dost love to scoffe and cog,
 Prat'st amongst base companions, and giv'st out,
 That unto me herein is meant a flout.
 Hate makes thee blind, Momus, I dare be sworn,
 He meant to me his love, to thee his scorn;
 Put on thy envious spectacles, and see
 Whom doth he scorn therein? the Dog or me?
 The Dog is grac'd, compared with great Banks,
 Both beasts right famous for their pretty pranks;
 Although in this I grant the Dog was worse,
 He only fed my pleasure, not my purse;
 Yet that same Dog, I may say this and boast it,
 He found my purse with gold when I have lost it.
 Now for myself, some fooles (like thee) may judge,
 That at the name of Lepidus I grudge;
 No, sure; so far I think it from disgrace,
 I wisht it cleare to me and to my race.

Lepus or Lepos, I in both have part,
 That in my name I beare, this in mine heart;
 But, Momus, I perswade myself that no man
 Will deigne thee such a name, English or Roman.
 Ile wage a but of sack, the best in Bristo,
 Who calls me Lepid, I will call him Tristo."

2. "To his Wife, for striking her Dog."

"Your little Dog that bark'd as I came by,
 I strake by hap so hard, I made him cry,
 And straight you put your finger in your eye
 And lowring sate, and ask'd the reason why.
 'Love me and love my Dog,' thou didst reply;
 'Love as both should be lov'd.' 'I will,' said I,
 And seal'd it with a kisse. Then by and by
 Clear were the clouds of thy fair frowning skie;
 Thus small events great masteries may try.
 For I by this do at their meaning guesse,
 That beat a whelpe afore a lyonesse!"

On the 19th of June, the King knighted, at Greenwich, Sir Thomas Overbury¹, of Gloucestershire, a name well known to posterity from his infamous murder.

July 8, Mr. Chamberlaine writes as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“On Tuesday I went with the Lady Fanshaw and other good company to visit *Cope Castle*² at Kensington. We had the honour to see all, but touch nothing, not so much as a cherry, which are *charily* preserved for the Queen's coming.

“The *New Burse* at Durham-house goes up apace ; whereat the Citizens, and specially the Exchange-men, begin to grumble, foreseeing that it will be very prejudicial, and mar their market ; and thereupon have made a petition to the Lord Mayor, to provide *ne quid detrimenti Respublica capiat*. This petition, with the reasons, being sent to his Lordship³, doth nothing please him ; but all the answer he makes yet is, that Westminster being the place where he was born and of his abode, he sees not but that he may seek to benefit and beautify it by all the means he can.”

“The Progress holds on toward Northamptonshire, as unwelcome to those parts as rain in harvest ; so as the great ones begin *à remuer mesnage*, and to dislodge ;

¹ Sir Thomas Overbury was an accomplished man and polite Writer, the descendant of an ancient Gloucestershire family. He was of Queen's College, Oxford, and of the Middle Temple. But there he did not stay long, for he travelled in France, and on his return was accounted a very finished Gentleman and well qualified to shine at Court, which, unhappily, was his ambition. Soon after his arrival he contracted an intimacy with the favourite Carr, who found in Sir Thomas a judicious and sincere adviser ; who endeavoured to instil into him the principles of prudence and discretion. And so long as Carr was content to be ruled by Overbury's friendly counsels, he enjoyed, what Hume says is rare, the highest favour of the Prince, without being hated by the people. It is easy therefore to see what attached Carr to Overbury ; and the latter, who could not but perceive the inferiority of the Royal Favourite, appears to have connected himself with him from motives of ambition, which, for a time, he had every prospect of gratifying. It is said that Carr had already obtained such influence over his Sovereign, that he obtained the Knighthood of Sir Thomas. This year also his father was appointed one of the Judges for Wales.—However desirable it might be to avoid the hateful subject, it will be impossible to avoid recurring to the melancholy fate of this ill-requited friend. Of his literary productions see Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.

² Now Holland House ; the manor of Abbot's Kensington was granted to Sir Walter Cope, the Founder, by the Queen. Of that Knight see vol. I. pp. 88, 475.

³ The Earl of Salisbury, by whom this New Exchange was built. In April 1609, it was visited by the King, who named it “ Britain's Burse.” See hereafter under that date.

the Lord Spencer¹ to his daughter Vane² in Kent, and divers other Gentlemen devise other errands other ways!

“ They go this Progress as far as Holmby; and then the Lord Treasurer means to make a step towards Lancashire, to visit his neices Derby³ and Norris⁴. ”

July 9, the Ringers at St. Margaret's were paid 1s. “ when the King came to Westminster. ”

On the 19th, we find⁵ that the King paid a Visit to Alderman Sir John Garrard⁶ at his seat called Lamer, in the parish of Wheathamsted, Hertfordshire, and there bestowed the honour of Knighthood on Sir Henry Goodyere⁷.

We next find the King and Queen at Toddington in Bedfordshire. The noble mansion of the Cheney's at this place had been visited by Queen Elizabeth in 1563 (see her “ Progresses,” vol. I. p. liv); and in 1587, on the death of Henry the first and only Lord Cheney of Toddington, devolved on his widow, the widow of Thomas Lord Wentworth of Nettlestead; and by that Lady, it is probable, their Majesties were entertained.

On the 24th, Mr. Thomas Archer, Rector of Houghton Conquest, and Chaplain to the King, preached before them there⁸.

The King having been slightly indisposed, Prince Henry sent a messenger to his Majesty, upon his recovery, with the following Letter, dated August 1:

“ Please your Majesty; I am glad to hear of your Majesty's recovery, before I understood of your distemper by the heat of the weather. I have sent this

¹ Of whom see vol. I. pp. 175, 176, 205.

² Elizabeth, married to Sir George Fane, of Buston, Kent.

³ Elizabeth, daughter of Anne Countess of Oxford, the Earl of Salisbury's sister, born July 2, 1575, and married at Greenwich, Jan. 26, 1594, to the Earl of Derby. She is called the “ young Countess of Derby ” in vol. I. p. 174. Their Lancashire seat was Newton.

⁴ Bridget, his sister, born April 6, 1584, wife of Lord Norris, of Rycot, (of whom see vol. I. 477).

⁵ MS List of Knights, *penès me*.

⁶ Sir John Garrard was Sheriff of London in 1593; Lord Mayor 1601; died May 7, 1625, aged 79; and was buried in St. Magnus' Church, London Bridge. His son John, afterwards a Baronet, will be noticed when knighted Feb. 26, 1614.

⁷ Nephew of Sir Henry Goodyere, who was a Combatant at the Barriers in 1605-6 (see p. 24). The uncle was seated at Polesworth, and the nephew at Baginton in Warwickshire. The latter was a Gentleman of the Privy-chamber to the King.

⁸ Mr. Archer's Notes, in the Register of Houghton Conquest. See vol. I. p. 520.

bearer of purpose to return word of your Majesty's good health, which I beseech God long to continue; as also to remember my most humble duty. He is likewise to acquaint your Majesty, that Mons. Le Grand hath sent me a horse by a French Gentleman, wherewith I hope your Majesty will be well pleased. The next week I mean to use the benefit of your Majesty's gracious favour of hunting in Waltham Forest, the place appointed as being fittest for the sport being Wansted. In the mean while and after I will employ my time at my book the best I can to your Majesty's satisfaction, whereof hoping your Majesty will rest assured, I kiss most humbly your hands, as

Your Majesty's dutiful and obedient Son, HENRY."

On the same day he wrote likewise to the Queen his Mother, as follows:

"Please your Majesty; I have sent this bearer my servant to kiss, from me, your Majesty's hands, and to certify me at his return of your good health, which (as in duty I am bound) I will earnestly beseech God long to continue. And that being all the service, which in my opinion I am able to perform unto your Majesty, if it shall please you to think me worthy to receive any of your Majesty's commandments, I will be very careful, according to my mean power, to shew my readiness in obeying. Whereof not doubting but your Majesty will rest assured, I kiss again your hands.

"Ever your Majesty's most dutiful and obedient Son, HENRY."

We have been informed by Mr. Chamberlaine (in p. 200) of the King's intended Progress into Northamptonshire; and during the month of August his head-quarters appear to have been at Grafton, the seat of the Earl of Cumberland; where he had ample scope for his favourite amusement in the sports of the field and forest ¹.

¹ Of the King's former Visits to Grafton in 1603 and 1605, see vol. I. pp. 189, 527.

Early in August the following Knights were made at Grafton:

Sir Richard Catchmayd.	Sir Thomas Cheyne ² , Buckinghamsh.
Sir Charles Morden.	Sir William Sanders ³ , Northamptonsh.
Sir Thomas Rotheram ¹ , Bedfordshire.	Sir Thomas Haselrig, of Leicestershire.

On the 4th, the King visited Alderton, the seat of the last-mentioned Gentleman⁴; and there knighted Sir Henry Anderson, of London.

On the 5th, his Majesty was in the morning at Holdenby, a Royal Palace; and it being the Anniversary of the Gowry Conspiracy, Bishop Andrews (who was usually Chaplain on these occasions) preached before him on that subject. His text was from 1 Sam. xxvi. 8, "And David said to Abishai, destroy him not; for who can stretch forth his hand against the Lord's anointed, and be guiltless⁵?"

The King afterwards rode to Bletsoe, the seat of Oliver Lord St. John⁶; whose third and fourth sons, Anthony and Alexander⁷, he there knighted, as also Sir Thomas Tresham, of Newton in Northamptonshire⁸. And in the evening he wrote the following singular Letter⁹ (partly in cypher) to the then newly made Lord Treasurer, Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury (see p. 195):

"MY LITTILL BEAGILL¹⁰; Ye and youre fellowis thaire are so proude nou that ye have gottin the gyding againe of a Feminine Courte in the olde fashon, as I know not hou to deale uith you; ye sitte at youre ease and directis all; the newis

¹ Of Someries, near Luton; where the King was entertained by Sir John Rotheram, July 26, 1605 (see vol. I. p. 519). Farley was but one of several manors possessed by this family, which owed its rise to Thomas Rotheram, Bishop of Lincoln, to whom the manor of Luton was granted in 1477. Remains of the mansion called Someries still exist. See Lysons's Bedfordshire, pp. 108, 110.

² The Cheyne family was seated at Chesham Bois. The Scotch title of Viscount Newhaven was conferred on the family in 1681, but became extinct with the second Viscount.

³ Sir William Sanders, of Welford, was Sheriff of Northamptonshire in 1609.

⁴ Of Sir Thomas Haselrige see vol. I. p. 527, where he appears as Mr. Haselrige, entertaining the Queen. Of the descent of the manor of Alderton to him, see also in that page. The manor-house was built by his father-in-law in 1582. Having fallen into decay, it has long since been partly pulled down; but, by the embattled part which remains, it appears to have been a noble structure.

⁵ This Sermon is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the "Second of the Gowrie Conspiracy."—The Bishop preached before the King at Holdenby also on the fifth of August 1610; see under that date.

⁶ Where also the Queen had spent two days in August 1605; see vol. I. p. 523. In that page both the mansion and its noble owner are noticed.

⁷ Sir Alexander was elected M. P. for Bedford in 1614, 1620, 1623.

⁸ Sheriff of that county in 1610. Of this branch of the family see Bridges's Northamptonshire, vol. II. p. 323. Of the branch seated at Rushton see under the date of April 4, 1612.

⁹ From the original, wholly in the King's autograph, in the British Museum.

¹⁰ This was a familiar, and, in the Royal Huntsman's ideas, an affectionate appellative, by which he constantly addressed the Earl of Salisbury. It is supposed to have originated from his unshapely

from all the pairtis of the uorlde comes to you in youre chamber, the King's owin resolutions dependis upon youre posting dispatches, and quhen ye list ye can (sitting on youre bedde-sydes) uith one call or quhisling in youre fist make him to poste nicte and daye till he come to youre presence. Uell, I know *Suffoke is married*¹, and hath also his handis full nou in harbouring that great littell proude man that comes in his chaire; but for youre pairt, maister 10, quho is wanton and uyfeles [wifeless], I can not but be ialous of youre greatnes with my uyfe; but most of all ame I suspicious of 3, quho is so laitelie fallen in acquaintance uith my uyfe, for besydes that the verrie number of 3 is uell lyked of by ueomen, his face is so amiabill as it is able to intyse, and his fortune hath ever bene to be great with Sho-saintis; but his pairt is foule in this, that, never having taken a uyfe to himself in his youth, he can not nou be content with his graye haire to forbear ane other mannis uyfe. But, for expiation of this sinne, I hoape that ye have all three uith the rest of youre societie taken this daye ane eucharistike cuppe of thankefulnes for the occasion quhiche fell out at a time quhen ye durst not avou me. And heir hath beene this daye kept the Feaste of King James' deliverie at *Saint Jonstoune*², in *Saint Jon's house*. All other maitters I referre to the old knave the bearar's reporte. And so faire ye uell."

August 6³, his Majesty knighted, at Holdenby, Sir Richard Harpur, of Derbyshire⁴; and on that day the following provisions were made at Northampton, in expectation of a Visit from the King and Queen:

figure, and from the intelligence he was enabled to procure by means of the agents he employed in the different Courts of Europe. In the same style James afterwards called the Duke of Buckingham his "dog Steenie," and that Favourite always, in his letters to the King, subscribed himself as such. In the latter case the Queen also used the same language. That these *soubriquets* were well known to the Court, appears from the Earl of Worcester's Letter in vol. I. p. 498.

¹ The Earl had many years been married to the Lady "so famous for her rapacity," who has been noticed in vol. I. p. 488 —She was his Lordship's second wife.

² *St. John's Town* is the ancient name of Perth (the scene of the Gowry Conspiracy), so called from the principal Church.

³ Philpot's Knights; but perhaps on the 5th.

⁴ Brother to Sir John Harpur, noticed in vol. I. p. 88. He resided at Littleover, and was Sheriff of Derbyshire in 1607. (See Collins's *Baronetage*, 1741, vol. II. p. 3.) His nephew, of the same name, was knighted at York, April 14, 1617. Another nephew, Henry, was created a Baronet in 1626. The baronetcy is now extinct, and the family is represented by Lord Crewe; see Lysons's *Derbyshire*, pp. lxiii, 274.

“Orders agreed upon and concluded at an assemblie of Edward Hensman, Maior of the Towne of Northampton, the Aldermen his Brethren, late Maiors of the same Towne, the Baylifs and those that have bene Baylifs, and the Fourtie-eight Burgesses, and the Coñon Councell of the same Towne, assembled in the Guildhall of the same Towne, the 6th daye of August, in the yeares of the Reign of our Souvaigne JAMES, by the grace of God, King of England, &c. the sixth, and of Scotland the twoe-and-fortieth, for and about the meeting and entertaiment of the nowe King's most excellent Majestie and his gracious Queen ANNE, into the Liberties of this Towne, whoe intend their Progress in State Royall upon the fifteenth daye of this instant moneth of August 1608, throughe his Highness' Corporaçon of Northampton, as foloweth :

“Imprimis, yt ys ordered that there shalbe fourthwith provided, at the costes and charges of the Corporaçon, out of the Towne-chamber, twoe faire peices of plate gilded to present, to wit, one to the King's Majestie, and the other to the Quene ; which saide peices of plate shall both of them together, with cases for them, amounte in value neare the sume of fiftie poundes.

“Item, wheare his Majestie intendeth to come into this Corporaçon in Progresse upon the fifteenth of this instant, upon which daye, being a faire-day, coñonly called the first Ladie-daye in harvest, his Majestie intendeth to come into the Corporaçon from the North-gate throughout the Sheep-market ; it ys ordered for his Majestie's more easier passage there, that for that faire-day onelie the Sheep-market shalbe removed into Abington-streate, and shall there be kept for that faire onelie and noe longer.

“Item, yt ys ordered that eñie Householder, from the North-gate throughout the Sheep-market, and from th'ende of the Sheep-market by the Hynde-gate over the Checker or Market-place, and from the Checker against the Woodhill, directlie by the Bell dore, downe to the South-bridge, shall cause their howses to be painted or coloured with colours called white and blacke, upon pain of eñie Householder making defaulte to forfeit a 20s. ; and shall likewise provide sande for eñie one of their dores to spread abroad the streets upon like paine.

“Item, yt ys ordered, that the North-gate, South-gate, Market-crosse, and bothe the Towne-halls, shalbe fourthwith coloured, or caste into colours, at the Towne charges.

“It ys ordered, that the Maior, and Aldermen his Brethren, shall ryde in their skarlet gownes with their best attyre, and with their horses furnished with faire foote-cloths, to meete the King and Quene at the verie beginning of the Liberties.

“ It is also ordered, that all those that have bene Bayliffs of this Towne, and the fourtie-eight Burgesses, shall come and appeare decentlie and comelie attyred in their black suites and faire gownes, before Mr. Maior and his Brethren in the Guildhall of the same Towne, by eight of the clocke in the aforenoone of the fifteenth of this instant, then and there to doe and be ordered as by them shall be prescribed, upon paine of eũie pson making defaulte to forfeite fyve poundes¹. ”

On the 13th of August, Prince Henry's growing affection for the Navy led him to make a visit to the Royal Dock at Woolwich.—“ In the beginning of this month he sent word to Mr. Pett of his intention to come thither at his return out of Essex from the Lord Petre's house, whither he was going in Progress ; and on the Saturday following, the 13th, he took his barge at Blackwall, and came to Woolwich about noon, accompanied only with his own Train. He was received by Mr. Pett on shore at the yard-stairs. On the poop of the Royal Anne were placed trumpets, and an ensign, and on the heads of both the mizens two ensigns. Mr. Pett having paid his compliments to the Prince, and represented how great a satisfaction it would be to all the seamen to perceive his Highness so well affected to the Navy, he conducted the Prince round about the Dock, and so directly aboard the Royal Anne, to the very top of her poop, where he gave a signal to Mr. William Bull, the Master Gunner of England, who stood ready prepared upon a mount, with thirty-one great brass chambers, orderly and distinctly placed, which had been procured from the Tower for that purpose by Mr. Pett, with the assistance of the Master Gunner ; who, upon the signal made, gave fire to the train, and discharged the whole volley with such good order, as was highly satisfactory to the Prince, and the more so, because it was unexpected. When the ordnance ceased firing, Mr. Pett kneeled to his Highness, and requested him to accept this poor sea-entertainment as an unfeigned earnest of duty to him. The Prince returned a most gracious answer, and then ordered Mr. Pett to lead him into all the parts of the ship ; which having viewed with a singular pleasure, he was conducted to the dock-yard, where the keel, stem, and stern of his own ship, which was to be built, lay ready framed. Having examined these with great attention, his Highness caused the length of the keel to be measured ; and

¹ Extracted from the Journal of the Corporation of Northampton ; but, after all this preparation, the King does not appear to have visited the Town on this occasion.

being then desired to walk into the house to rest himself, he readily consented, and found in the parlour a set banquet of sweetmeats and all other fruits which the season yielded, with plenty of wine, rhenish, white, sack, greek, and claret. After he had refreshed himself, and given his hand to kiss to divers Gentlewomen of the town, who were in the room with Mr. Pett's wife, he desired to be conducted to the mount, where the chambers were placed, which were again charged and ranged in their former order with the train made ready. This sight delighted him so much, that he was desirous to have the train fired while he stood by; but at Mr. Pett's entreaty and representation of the danger, he ordered, that at the holding up of his handkerchief in his barge, they should be discharged; which was accordingly done, after his Highness had expressed his satisfaction in the whole entertainment¹."

On the 19th of August, the King knighted, at Grafton, Sir Seymour Knightley², Sir Edward Griffin³, and Sir Lewis Watson⁴, all of Northamptonshire; and Sir Richard Merwood, of Yorkshire.

By the 29th, his Majesty had returned to Windsor, where he knighted Sir Edward Lenthall, Sir Robert and Sir Thomas Lee⁵.

In the beginning of September occurred a memorable quarrel between the Earl of Pembroke and Sir George Wharton⁶, the particulars of which, as related on the 17th of that month by Thomas Coke to the Countess of Shrewsbury, shall be here given, as a specimen of the numerous Court-feuds⁷ of the Reign:

"I do not doubt but your La. hath heard before this what honour my Lo. of

¹ Birch's Life of Prince Henry, p. 110.

² Eldest son of Sir Richard Knightley, of Fawsley, by his second wife, Elizabeth, daughter of Edward Seymour, Duke of Somerset, after whom he was named. Sir Valentine Knightley (see vol. I. pp. 114, 555) was the eldest son of Sir Richard by his first marriage.—Views of the ancient Manor-house and Church at Fawsley are engraved in the Gentleman's Magazine for November 1794.

³ Whose house at Braybrooke the King and Queen visited, August 12, 1605; see vol. I. p. 526.

⁴ Afterwards Lord Rockingham; of whom see vol. I. p. 525.

⁵ Probably Sir Thomas Leigh, of Stoneley, Warwickshire, who was created a Baronet, June 29, 1611; and was grandfather to the first Lord Leigh of Stoneley.

⁶ Of whom see vol. I. p. 223, when created K. B. at the Coronation. "He was slain (observes Mr. Lodge) in a duel upon some trifling punctilio, November 8, in the following year, by his intimate friend, Sir James Stuart, who likewise died of his wounds. This letter bears no favourable testimony either of Sir George's gallantry or his understanding."

⁷ See also vol. I. p. 477, 465; and hereafter, under the date of May 2, 1610.

Pembroke hath got by his discrete and punctuall proceeding in the question betwixt Sir George Wharton and him; yet, for that I have understoode it (by Mr. Morgane and others) particularly, least your La. may have heard it but in generall, I adventure to advertise your La. On Friday was sevenight my Lo. and Sir George, with others, played at cards; where Sir George shewed such choller, as my Lo. of Pembroke tould him, 'Sir George, I have loved you long, and desire still to do so; but, by your maner in playing, you lay it upon me eyther to leave to love you, or to leave to play with you; wherefore, choosing to love you still, I will never play with you more.' The next day they hunted with the King; and my Lo. of Pembroke's page galloping after his Lo., Sir George came up to him, and lashed him over the face with his rod. The boy told his Lo.; who, fynding by strickt examination that the boy had not deserved it, demanded of Sir George why he did stryke his boy; Sir George awnswered he meant nothing towards his Lo. My Lo. sayde he asked not that, but what the cause was why he did stryke the boy? 'I did not stryke him,' awnswered Sir G. 'Then I am satisfyed,' said the Earle. 'God's blood!' sayde Sir G. 'I say it not to satisfy you;' 'but, Sir,' sayde the Earle, 'whoso stryketh my boy without cause shall give me an account of it, and therefore I tell you it was foolishly done of you.' 'You are a foole,' sayd Sir George; 'You lye in your throate,' sayde the Earle. And thus, the D. of Lenox, the Earle of Marre, and others, coming in, this rested, and every one began to gallop away on hunting; and the Earle, being gonn about 6 or 8^{xx}, Sir G. spurred his horse with all speede up to him, which was observed by the E. of Montgomery; who crying, 'Brother, take heede, you will be stricken (neither part having weapon), the Earle instantly receaved him with a sound backward blow over the face, which dryve him almost back upon his horse' croopp. But, company being present, they galloped againe, till in the end the stagg dyed in Bag-shot towne; where Sir G. taking oportunity to wryte, came afterwards to the E. and offered him a paper, protesting theare was nothing in it unfitt for his Lo. to reade. The Earle sayde, 'Sir G. give me no papers heere, where all they see us who know what hath passed, if you meane to do yourselfe right; but tell me, is not the purport of it a chalenge to me?' 'Yes,' said Sir G. 'Well,' said the Earle, this night you shall have answeare, now lett us talke of the ;' and after, calling Sir Jo. Lee unto him, willed him to tell Sir George that that night he should bring him the length of my Lo.' sword. After, being comen home, and divers coming to his chamber, and Sir John (among the rest) onlie

privie to his Lo.' intent, 'O, Sir John,' sayd his Lo. 'you are a comen for the sword which I promised you;' and comanded his page to deliver up the sword which my Lo. of Devonshire gave him; which he receaving as given, went, according to his former direccions, to Sir G., tould him that was the E.' sword; the next morning, being Sunday, the tyme when they would fight; and therefore willed him to withdraw himselfe, and take measure of the sword. 'No,' sayd Sir G. 'it shall not need; I will have no other sword but this by my syde.' 'Advise yourselfe,' sayde Sir John; 'that is shorter than this; and do not think that the E. will take one hayre's breadth of advantage at your hands.' Uppon this Sir G. was first sent for, and after, the Earl and the Kinge's commandement layde uppon them not to stirre; after which Sir G. came to Sir John Lee, and tould him that, if my Lo. would breake the King's commandement, he would do the lyke. Sir John sayde he knew the Earle was very scrupulous of breaking the King's commandements, but yet he would undertake upon his lyfe to bring Sir G. wheare the E. should be, all alone, with that sword by his syde; wheare, if Sir G. would drawe uppon him, his Lo. should eyther defende himselfe, or abide the hazerd; but soone after, Sir G. came to Sir Jo. Lee, and tould him he had receaved another commandement from his Majesty, and resolved to obey the same. After, they were both convented before the LL., and last before the King; and it was, as I heare, required that my Lo. should give him satisfaccion, which his Lo. sayde he would do thus: if Sir G. would confess that he did not intend to have offended him at that time, he would acknowledge that he was sorry that he had stricken him; and thus it ended¹."

Sept. 27, Mr. Chamberlaine thus writes, "from Askot²," to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Queen, before her going out of this County, dined with Sir Henry Lee³ at his *Little Rest*, and gave great countenance, and had long and large discourse with Mrs. Vavasor; and, within a day or two after, sent a very fair jewell valued

¹ Lodge, vol. III. pp. 359—361.

² Ascot is a hamlet in the parish of Wing, Buckinghamshire; where Queen Elizabeth, when Princess, was entertained in 1554 by Sir Robert Dormer. (See her Progresses, vol. I. p. 12.)—His grandson, Sir Robert, knighted in 1591, and the owner of Ascot in 1608, was made a Baronet in 1615; and created Baron Dormer of Wing on the 30th of the same month. He died Nov. 8. 1616.

³ The old Champion of Queen Elizabeth; of whom see much in "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. III. pp. 43, 125.—Where his "*Little Rest*" was does not appear; it is recorded (ibid. p. 128) that he built "four goodly mansions." His housekeeper, Mrs. Vavasor, "the Dulcinea of his old age," is also noticed in the same Volume, p. 46.

above £.100; which favour hath put such new life into the old man, to see his sweet-heart so graced, that he says he will have one fling more at the Court before he die; though he thought he had taken his leave this summer, when he went to present the Prince with an armour that stood him in £.200, and within a year or two will serve his turn, neither in jest nor earnest ¹."

About this time the King knighted, at Hampton Court, Sir William Bodenham; and Sir Philip Fairfax, of Yorkshire; and, at Whitehall, Sir Justin Clarke.

On the 9th of October, the Earl of Salisbury writes to the Earl of Shrewsbury:

"I now beginne to think that my L. Cavendish shold repent his mariadg, the Lo. of Kinloss being like to dy. I was last day attending on the Q. and Pr. where I had the honour to be a wytness of the making of a Christian sowle, of whom I can yet say litle, but that I will pray he may be a more quiet gentelman then his father; in the meane time I assure you that I never saw a goodlier child then the yong Lord ²."

On Sunday the 12th, the King went to Newmarket, and so little was the Sabbath regarded that his Majesty before his journey not only transacted some public business, but had a very angry *rencontre* with Lord Coke, who, "and all of the Judges of the Common Lawe were before his Majestie to answeare some complaynts made by the Civil Lawyers for the generall graunting of Prohibicions³. I heard that the Lo. Coke, amongst other offensive speache, sholde say to his Majesty that his Highness was defended by his Lawes: at which sayinge, with other speache then used by the Lo. Coke, his Majestie was very much offended, and tolde him he spake foolishly, and said that he was not defended by his Lawes, but by God; and so gave the Lo. Coke, in other words, a very sharp reprehension, both for that and other things; and withall told him that Sir Thomas Crompton⁴ was as good a man as Coke, my Lord Coke having then, by way of exception, used some speach against Sir Thomas Crompton. Now, not havinge tyme, and also for that (yt being so long since) I partely thinke your Lordship before this by some other hath heard theirow, I forbear to enforme you of all

¹ Birch's MSS. 4173. ² Lodge's Illustrations, vol. III. p. 363.—Who this was does not appear.

³ "Prohibitions; writs so called, which were issued to forbid proceedings in law suits, upon suggestion that the cognizance of the matter in question belonged to another court. The Civilians disputed the right of the Courts of common law to exercise this authority over them." L.

⁴ Knighted July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 208). He was Vicar-general to the Archbishop of Canterbury, and Chancellor to the Bishop of London; Advocate of Queen Elizabeth and King James; Judge of the High Court of Admiralty; and M. P. for Oxford University in 1603. He died March 4, 1641, aged 72, and was buried in St Gregory by St. Paul's.

that I have heard; but had not my Lo. Treasurer most humbly on his knee used many good words to pacify his Majestie, and to excuse that which had been spoken, it was thought his Highnes wolde have been much more offended¹. In the conclusion, his Majestie, by the meanes of my Lo. Treasurer, was well pacified, and gave a gracious countenance to all the other Judges, and said he wolde mayntayne the Common Lawe. This cause, it is sayd, is agayne to be heard before his Majestie in the weeke before Christmas, at his Highnes' retourne to Whithall²."

On the 28th, Mr. Chamberlaine writes thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"I hear a muttering of a Bill put into the Exchequer or some Court concerning much land that by reason of pretended bastardy in Queen Elizabeth should descend to divers persons. The chief actors named are Lady Arbella, St. Leger³ of the West, and others. If there is any such thing, methinks the whole State should prevent and resent such an indignity. There is a speech likewise, that there is a subsidy or somewhat else due upon every Knight's Fee throughout England in February next, when the Prince comes to fifteen years old, toward making him a Knight. The Queen came to Whitehall the last week; and the King is looked for to-morrow or Monday⁴."

About this time his Majesty knighted at Royston⁵, Sir Francis Heale, of Somersetshire; Sir George Chaworth⁶, of Yorkshire; and Sir John Peyton⁷, of Suffolk.

¹ "Wilson in his history of this year, steps out of his way to vilify the character of Sir Edward Coke, whom he represents as the veriest Court sycophant that ever disgraced the Bench; the truth, on the contrary, is, that his spirit was too independent for the age he lived in, of which the above anecdote, among others, may be fairly admitted as a proof. Indeed he lost the King's favour in 1616, and soon after his place, for too boldly disclosing some free opinions respecting the death of Prince Henry." L.

² Letter from John Hercy to the Earl of Shrewsbury. Lodge, vol. III. p. 364.—On the 8th of the following month Mr. Chamberlaine wrote as follows on the same subject to Sir Dudley Carleton: "The King hath had lately two or three Conferences with the Judges about Prohibitions; as well touching the Clergy and high Commission as the Courts of York and Wales; which Prohibitions he would fain cut off, and stretch his Prerogative to the uttermost. The Judges stand well yet to their tackling;—but *finis coronat opus*." Birch's MSS. 4173.

³ Of this family see p. 197.

⁴ Birch's MSS. 4173.

⁵ Whilst the King was at Royston, in October, he summoned before him James Elphinstone, Lord Balmerinoch, to answer for the high offence noticed in vol. I. p. 108.

⁶ Probably related to Sir George, afterwards Viscount Chaworth, of whom see p. 159.

⁷ Sir John Peyton, of Iselham, Cambridgeshire, was Sheriff of that county and Huntingdon in 1603. He is styled of Suffolk from having an estate at Great Bradley. He was elected M. P. for the county of Huntingdon in 1601 and 1603, and was created a Baronet in 1611. Of his son, see when knighted Feb. 4, 1610.—Of the family, see before p. 196.

On the first of November, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir George Justinianus, the Venetian Ambassador.

On the fifth, the Anniversary of the Gunpowder Treason, the King attended Divine Service at his Chapel¹ in Whitehall, and Dr. John King², Dean of Christ Church, one of his Majesty's Chaplains (and afterwards Bishop of London), preached before him on Psalm xi. 2, 3, 4³.

On the 7th, 10th, and 11th, the King knighted, at Whitehall :
Sir Charles Vaughan, of Herefordshire. Sir Rowland Cotton⁵, of Shropshire.
Sir John Molineux⁴, of Notts. Sir William Swann⁶, of Kent.

On the 26th, the King was at Thetford, nor had he left that place on the second of December⁷.

On the 16th of that month, Mr. Chamberlaine writes to Sir Dudley Carleton :

"I come now from reading a short discourse of Queen Elizabeth's Life, written in Latin⁸ by Sir Francis Bacon. If you have not seen nor heard of it, it is worth

¹ Of the Royal Chapel in Whitehall we know nothing, except that it was the scene of various important ceremonies in James's Reign, such as grand marriages and baptisms. It was burnt, with great part of the Palace, in 1697 ; and its walls are probably now those of the Treasury or a contiguous building. From the time of the Fire it was deserted, and the Banqueting-house converted into a Chapel. Of that building see p. 155.

² Of whom see vol. I. p. 532, and before in this volume, p. 96.—Bishop Andrews was generally the Preacher on this occasion.

³ The Sermon was printed at Oxford in 1608, 4to. A copy exists in the Middle Temple Library.

⁴ Sir John Molineux, of Teversal, was created a Baronet June 29, 1611. "He lived in great splendour, beyond the income of his estate (though large), and was forced to sell part of it." See Collins's Baronetage, 1741, vol. I. p. 151.—Sir Richard Molineux, of an elder branch of the family, seated at Sephton, Lancashire, was the second in the first roll of Baronets, and his son was created Viscount Maryborough in Ireland.

⁵ Sir Rowland Cotton, of Bellaport, was Sheriff of Shropshire in 1616.

⁶ See p. 195.

⁷ This appears from two letters printed in Winwood's Memorials, vol. II. pp. 451, 453 ; one to Sir Richard Spencer and Sir Ralph Winwood ; the other to the States General ; signed by his Majesty at Thetford on those respective dates.

⁸ This is preserved in the British Museum, Harleian MSS. No. 6353, and is intituled "*In felicem Memoriam Elizabethæ Reginae, Angliæ Reginae.*" It consists of 15 closely written small 4to pages ; and seems to be the Original of "*The Felicitie of Queen Elizabeth*" by Sir Francis.—In the same volume is another treatise, intituled, "*Breve Commentarium Temporum sub Regno auspaticissimo Reginae Elizabethæ, omnibus numeris beatissimæ et memoriæ perquam sacræ,*" dedicated "*To the eternal honour of the Mirror of Princes, Queen Elizabeth, of most famous Memorie.*"—The whole is contained in 32 quarto pages closely written, and seems to be only a dedication to Queen Elizabeth

inquiry; and yet, methinks, he doth *languescere* toward the end, and falls from his first pitch; neither dare I warrant that his Latin will abide test or touch¹."

From Thetford the King removed to Royston, and returned to Whitehall on the 20th, when the Ringers at St. Margaret's were paid 2s.

"The next day after his Majestie's retourne from Thetford, being St. Thomas'-day, the King gave Don Ferdinando Gyrone, the Spanish Ambassador (who had arrived some tenn or twelve dayes before), a formal audience in the Presence-chamber, before the Queen, Prince, Duke, and Princess. That audience (as the manner is) passed only in complements. On Tuesday after he had a private audience alone, and the next day his Majestye feasted the three Ambassadors together, that is, Gyrone, Zuniga, and Hoboque²."

"Prince Henry began the New-year with presenting to the King a Latin Oration of considerable length, and upon a subject peculiarly suited to his own rank and sentiments. The main point was to show, that Learning is more necessary to Kings, Princes, and persons in the highest stations than to others; and then to answer what might be alleged on the contrary side of the question³."

On the 2nd, 8th, and 9th of January, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Francis Neale, of Hampshire; Sir Thomas Finch⁴, of Kent; and Sir Robert Brook, of London.

The following are extracts from Mr. Chamberlaine's letters to Sir Dudley Carleton; early in January he writes:

"We have had a dull and heavy Christmas hitherto, like the weather; no manner of delight nor lightsome news; only there were Plays at Court, and the Spanish Ambassadors were feasted there the last of the holy-days."

of a translation of a Life of Jesus Christ, overflowing with praises of the Queen, and some of the principal occurrences of her reign. At the head of it is "Nicolaus Paget," crossed over with a pen.

¹ Birch's MSS. No. 4173.

² Winwood's Memorials, vol. II. p. 472, where the Earl of Salisbury, writing to Sir Charles Cornwallis, gives the conversation that occurred; but being merely political, it is not here transcribed. (The same account is also written by the Earl to Sir Richard Spencer and Sir Ralph Winwood, and is printed *ibid.* p. 471).—Mr. Chamberlaine, in a Letter to Sir Dudley Carleton (Birch's MSS. 4175), gives a similar account of the audience, adding that "it was done in less than half an hour."

³ Birch's Life of Prince Henry, p. 138.

⁴ Eldest son of Sir Moyle Finch, of Eastwell, Kent, made a Baronet July 29, 1611, and whose widow was created Viscountess Maidstone in 1623, and Countess of Winchelsea in 1628. He succeeded to his mother's honours in 1633, and died in less than a year after, November 4, 1634.

On the 10th of December, Mr. Chamberlaine writes thus :

“ Sir Walter Raleigh’s estate is fallen into the King’s hands, by reason of a flaw in the conveyance, who hath bestowed it on Sir Robert Car, who is likewise in speech to marry the Lady Anne Clifford. And though the Lady Raleigh have been an importunate suitor all these holy-days in her husband’s behalf, yet it is past recall ; so that he may say with Job, ‘ Naked came I into the world, and naked shall I go out.’ But, above all, one thing is to be noted, that the error or oversight is said to be so gross, that men do merely ascribe it to God’s own hand that blinded him and his Council.—The King went hence yesterday to Theobalds, and so to Royston ; but no farther at this time, being fallen out of love (they say) with Newmarket and Thetford.

“ The Masque at Court is put off till Candlemas.”

On the 23rd : “ The King is looked for here about the end of the week. He hath erected a new office ; and made Sir Richard Wigmore Marshal of the Field, who is to take order that he be not attended by any but his own followers, nor interrupted nor hindered in his sports by strangers and idle lookers-on.”

On the 1st of February, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Richard Barneby¹, of Northamptonshire ; and Sir John Andrewes, of Gloucestershire ; and on the 2nd, at Whitehall,

Sir Henry Whetnall, of Kent.

Sir John St. John³.

Sir William Webb².

Sir George Hunt⁴, of Suffolk.

On the evening of the latter day was performed “ The Masque of Queens.”

¹ Who in that year succeeded his father, Thomas Barnaby, Esq. in three parts of the manor of Watford, co. Northampton ; which was afterwards purchased by Sir George Clerk Rogers. Bridges, I. 588.

² Sir William Webb was in 1610 “ Esquire to Prince Henry,” with a salary of £.20 and diet.

³ Sir John St. John, of Lydiard Tregoze, was the seventeenth in the first roll of Baronets. He was a nephew of Viscount Grandison, and ancestor of the Viscounts Bolingbroke. In the rebellion, he was zealously attached to the Royal party, and lost three sons in the King’s service.

⁴ Sir George Hunt was High Sheriff of Suffolk in 1609.



THE MASQUE OF QUEENS, CELEBRATED FROM THE HOUSE OF FAME,

By the most absolute in all State and Titles, ANNE, Queen of Great Britain,
with her Ladies, at Whitehall, Feb. 2, 1608-9.

By BEN JONSON.

“Et memorem famam, quæ bene gessit, habet.”

To the glory of our own, and grief of other Nations, my Lord HENRY,
Prince of Great Britain, &c.

SIR,

When it hath been my happiness (as would it were more frequent) but to see your face, and, as passing by, to consider you; I have with as much joy, as I am now far from flattery in professing it, called to mind that doctrine of some great inquisitors in Nature, who hold every Royal and heroic form to partake and draw much to it of the heavenly virtue. For, whether it be that a divine soul, being come into a body, first chooseth a palace for itself; or, being come, doth make it so; or that Nature be ambitious to have her work equal; I know not: but what is lawful for me to understand and speak, that I dare; which is, that both your virtue and your form did deserve your fortune. The one claimed that you should be born a Prince, the other makes that you do become it. And when Necessity, excellent Lord, them other of the Fates, hath so provided, that your form should not more insinuate you to the eyes of men, than your virtue to their minds: it comes near a wonder to think how sweetly that habit flows in you, and with so hourly testimonies, which to all posterity might hold the dignity of examples. Amongst the rest, your favour to letters, and these gentler studies, that go under the title of Humanity, is not the least honour of your wreath. For, if once the worthy professors of these learnings shall come (as heretofore

¹ Published first in 4to 1608-9, when it was entered at Stationers' Hall February 22, under the title of “A Booke called The Masque of Queene's celebrated; done by Benjamin Johnson.” N.

Mr. Gifford remarks that “the Magical part of the *Masque of Queens* will still remain a proof of high poetic powers, of a vigorous and fertile imagination, and of deep and extensive learning, managed with surprising ease, and applied to the purposes of the scene with equal grace and dexterity.”

they were) to be the core of Princes, the crowns their Sovereigns wear will not more adorn their temples; nor their stamps live longer in their medals, than in such subjects' labours. Poetry, my Lord, is not born with every man, nor every day; and in her general right, it is now my minute to thank your Highness, who not only do honour her with your care, but are curious to examine her with your eye, and enquire into her beauties and strengths. Where though it hath proved a work of some difficulty to me, to retrieve the particular authorities (according to your gracious command, and a desire born out of judgement) to those things, which I writ out of fullness of memory of my former readings; yet, now I have overcome it, the reward that meets me is double to one act; which is, that thereby your excellent understanding will not only justify me to your own knowledge, but decline the stiffness of others' original ignorance, already armed to censure. For which singular bounty, if my fate (most excellent Prince, and only delicacy of mankind) shall reserve me to the age of your actions, whether in the camp or the Council-chamber, that I may write, at nights, the deeds of your days; I will then labour to bring forth some work as worthy of your fame, as my ambition therein is of your pardon. By the most true admirer of your Highness's virtues, and most hearty celebrater of them,

BEN JONSON.

IT increasing now to the third time of my being used in these services to her Majesty's Personal Presentations, with the Ladies whom she pleaseth to honour, it was my first and special regard to see that the nobility of the invention should be answerable to the dignity of their persons. For which reason I chose the argument to be, *A celebration of honourable and true Fame bred out of Virtue*; observing that rule of the best artist¹, to suffer no object of delight to pass without his mixture of profit and example. And because her Majesty (best knowing that a principal part of life, in these spectacles, lay in their variety) had commanded me to think on some Dance, or Shew, that might precede hers, and have the place of a foil or false Masque; I was careful to decline, not only from others', but mine own steps in that kind, since the last year² I had an Anti-masque of Boys; and therefore now devised, that twelve Women, in the habit of Hags, or Witches, sustaining the persons of Ignorance, Suspicion, Credulity, &c. the opposites to good Fame, should fill that part; not as a Masque, but a spectacle of strangeness,

¹ Horace, in *Arte Poeticâ*.

² In the Masque at my Lord Hadington's Wedding.—See p. 180.

producing multiplicity of gesture, and not unaptly sorting with the current and whole fall of the Device.

His Majesty, then, being set, and the whole company in full expectation, the part of the scene which first presented itself was un ugly Hell; which, flaming beneath, smoked unto the top of the roof. And in respect all evils are morally from Hell; as also from that observation of Torrentius upon Horace's *Canidia* ¹, "quæ tot instructa venenis, ex Orci faucibus profecta videri possit;" these Witches, with a kind of hollow and infernal music, came forth from thence. First one, then two, and three, and more, till their number encreased to eleven; all differently attired; some with rats on their heads, some on their shoulders; others ointment-pots at their girdles; all with spindles, timbrels, rattles, or other venefical instruments, making a confused noise, with strange gestures. The device of their attire was Master Jones's ², with the invention and architecture of the whole scene and machine. Only I prescribed them their properties of vipers, snakes, bones, herbs, roots, and other ensigns of their magic, out of the authority of ancient and late Writers, wherein the faults are mine, if there be any found; and for that cause I confess them.

These eleven Witches beginning to dance, (which is an usual ceremony ³ at their convents or meetings, where sometimes also they are vizarded and masked,) on the sudden one of them missed their Chief, and interrupted the rest with this Speech.

HAG. Sisters, stay, we want our Dame ⁴;
Call upon her by her name,
And the charm we use to say;
That she quickly anoint ⁵, and come away.

¹ Vide Lævin. Tor. comment. in Hor. Epod. lib. ode 5.

² See p. 185. Jones is not again mentioned by Jonson 1623; till he studied many years in Italy. N.

³ See the King's Majesty's book (our Sovereign) of Demonology, Bodin, Remigius, Delrio, Mal. Malefi. and a world of others in the general; but let us follow particulars.

⁴ Amongst our vulgar witches, the honour of Dame (for so I translate it) is given with a kind of pre-eminence to some special one at their meetings: which Delrio insinuates, Disquis. Mag. lib. 2. quæst. 9, quoting that of Apuleius, lib. de Asino aureo, de quâdam cauponâ, reginâ Sagarum." And adds, "ut scias etiam tum quasdam ab iis hoc titulo honoratas." Which title M. Philipp. Ludwigus, Elich. Dæmonomagix quæst. 10, doth also remember.

⁵ When they are to be transported from place to place, they use to anoint themselves, and sometimes the things they ride on. Beside Apul. testimony, see these later, Remig. Dæmonolatriæ, lib. 1. cap. 14. Delrio, Disquis. Mag. lib. 2. quæst. 16. Bodin, Dæmonoman. lib. 2. c. 14. Barthol. de Spina, quæst. de Strigib. Philippo Ludwigus Elich. quæst. 10. Paracelsus in magn. et occul. Philosophia, teacheth the confection. "Unguentum ex carne recens natorum infantium, in pulmenti forma coc-

1 CHARM. *Dame, dame ! the watch is set ;
Quickly come, we all are met.—
From the lakes, and from the fens¹,
From the rocks, and from the dens,
From the woods, and from the caves,
From the church-yards, from the graves,
From the dungeon, from the tree
That they die on, here are we !*

Comes she not yet ?
Strike another heat.

2 CHARM. *The weather is fair, the wind is good,
Up, Dame, on your horse of wood² ;
Or else tuck up your gray frock,
And saddle your goat³, or your green cock⁴,*

tum, et cum herbis somniferis, quales sunt Papaver, Solanum, Cicutā, &c. And Giov. Baptist. Porta, lib. 2. Mag. Natur. cap. 16.

¹ These places, in their own nature dire and dismal, are reckoned up as the fittest from whence such persons should come, and were notably observed by that excellent Lucan in the description of his Erichtho, lib. 6. To which we may add this corollary out of Agrip. de occult. philosop. lib. 1. c. 48. "Saturno correspondent loca quævis fœtida, tenebrosa, subterranea, religiosa, et funesta, ut cœmeteria, busta, et hominibus deserta habitacula, et vetustate caduca, loca obscura, et horrenda, et solitaria antra, cavernæ, putei : præterea piscinæ, stagna, paludes, et ejusmodi." And in lib. 3. c. 42, speaking of the like, and in lib. 4, about the end, "Aptissima sunt loca plurimum experientia visionum, nocturnarumque incursionum et consimilium phantasmatum, ut cœmeteria, et in quibus fieri solent executiones criminalis judicii, in quibus recentibus annis publicæ strages factæ sunt, vel ubi occisorum cadavera, necdum expiata, nee ritè sepulta, recentioribus annis subhumata sunt."

² Delrio, Disq. Mag. lib. 2. quæst 6. has a story of Triezius of this horse of wood ; but that which our witches call so, is sometimes a broom-staff, sometimes a reed, sometimes a distaff. See Remig. Dæmonol. lib. 2. cap. 14. Bodin. l. 2. cap. 4. &c.

³ The goat is the Devil himself, upon whom they ride often to their solemnity, as appears by their confessions in Rem. and Bodin. ibid. His Majesty also remembers the story of the Devil's appearance to those of Calicut, in that form, Dæmonology, lib. 2. cap. 3.—"Jonson cannot escape the commentators, and his name serves them as a foil upon all occasions. Warburton having incidentally observed that a passage in *Macbeth* was 'intended as a compliment to James.' Steevens subjoins that the truth of history was also perverted for the same purpose ; yet, continues he, 'the flattery of Shakspeare is not more gross than that of Ben Jonson, who has'—done what, does the Reader think ? —'condescended to quote his Majesty's ridiculous book on *Demonology* !' The Reader has here the whole of the Poet's offence ; with respect to 'his Majesty,' his book was not more 'ridiculous' than any of the others quoted on the subject ; and as Jonson collected his authorities merely in obedience to the commands of the Prince, there seems no violent strain of flattery in barely citing the book of his Father for a popular story." G.

⁴ Of the green cock we have no other ground (to confess ingenuously) than a vulgar fable of a

*And make his bridle a bottom of thread,
To roll up how many miles you have rid.
Quickly come away ;
For we all stay.*

Nor yet ! nay, then,
We'll try her agen.

3 CHARM. *The owl is abroad, the bat, and the toad,
And so is the cat-a-mountain,
The ant and the mole sit both in a hole,
And the frog peeps out o' the fountain ;
The dogs they do bay, and the timbrels play,
The spindle¹ is now a turning ;
The moon it is red, and the stars are fled,
But all the sky is a burning ;
The ditch is made², and our nails the spade,
With pictures full, of wax and of wool ;
Their livers I stick, with needles quick ;*

Witch, that with a cock of that colour, and a bottom of blue thread, would transport herself through the air ; and so escaped (at the time of her being brought to execution) from the hand of justice. It was a tale when I went to school ; and somewhat there is like it in Mart. Delr. Disqu. Mag. lib. 2. quæst. 6. of one Zyti, a Bohemian, that, among other his dexterities, " aliquoties equis rhedariis vectum, gallinaceis ad epirrhodium suum alligatis, subsequebatur."

¹ All this is but a periphrasis of the night, in their charm, and their applying themselves to it with their instruments, whereof the spindle in antiquity was the chief ; and beside the testimony of Theocritus, in *Pharmaceutria* (who only used it in amorous affairs) was of special act to the troubling of the moon. To which Martial alludes, lib. 9. ep. 30. " Quæ nunc Thessalico Lunam deducere rhombo," &c. And lib. 12. ep. 57. " Cum secta Colcho Luna vapulat rhombo."

² This rite also of making a ditch with their nails is frequent with our Witches, whereof see Bodinus, Remigius, Delrio, Melleus Mal. Godelman. l. 2. de Lamiis, as also the antiquity of it most lively exprest by Hor. Satyr. 8. lib. 1. where he mentions the pictures, and the blood of a black lamb. All which are yet in use with our modern Witchcraft. *Scalpere terram* (speaking of Canidia and Sagana)

" Unguibus, et pullam divellere mordicus agnam
Cœperunt : cruor in fossum confusus, ut inde
Maneis elicerent animas responsa daturas.
Lanea et effigies erat, altera cerea," &c.

And then, by and by,

" ——— Serpentes atque videres
Infernas errare caneis, Lunamque rubentem,
Ne foret his testis, post magna latere sepulchra."

*There lacks but the blood, to make up the flood.
Quickly, Dame, then bring your part in,
Spur, spur upon little Martin¹,
Merrily, merrily, make him sail,
A worm in his mouth, and a thorn in his tail,
Fire above, and fire below,
With a whip in your hand, to make him go.*

O, now she's come!
Let all be dumb.

*At this the DAME² entered to them, naked-armed, barefooted, her frock tucked,
her hair knotted, and folded with vipers; in her hand a torch made of a dead*

Of this ditch Homer makes mention in Circe's speech to Ulysses, Odyss. K. about the end, Βόθρον ἐρύξει, &c. And Ovid, Metam. lib. 7. in Medea's magic,

"Haud procul egestâ scrobibus tellure duabus
Sacra facit, cultrosque in gutture velleris atri
Conjicit, et patulas perfundit sanguine fossas."

And of the waxen images in Hypsipyle's Epistle to Jason, where he expresseth that mischief also of the needles :

"Devovet absentes, simulacraque cerea fingit;
Et miserum tenues in jecur urget acus."

Bodin. Dæmon. lib. 2. cap. 1. hath (beside the known story of King Duffe out of Hector Boetius) much of the Witches' later practice in that kind, and reports a relation of a French Ambassador's, out of England, of certain pictures of wax, found in a dunghill near Islington, of our late Queen's; which rumour I myself (being then very young) can yet remember to have been current.

¹ Their little Martin is he that calls them to their conventicles, which is done in a human voice; but coming forth, they find him in the shape of a great buck-goat, upon whom they ride to their meetings. Delrio, Disq. Mag. quæst. 16. lib. 2. and Bodin, Dæmon. lib. 2. cap. 4. have both the same relation from Paulus Grillandus, of a Witch. "Adveniente nocte et horâ evocabatur voce quâdam velut humanâ ab ipso Dæmone, quem non vocant Dæmonem, sed Magisterulum, alias Magistrum Martinettum, sive Martinellum: quæ sic evocata, mox sumebat pyxidem unctionis, et linebat corpus suum in quibusdam partibus et membris, quo linito exibat ex domo, et inveniebat Magisterulum suum in formâ hirci illam expectantem apud ostium, super quo mulier equitabat, et applicare solebat fortiter manus ad crineis, et statim hircus ille adscendebat per aerem, et brevissimo tempore deferebat ipsam," &c.

² This Dame I make to bear the person of Ate, or Mischief (for so I interpret it), out of Homer's description of her, Iliad, A. where he makes her swift to hurt mankind, strong, and sound of her feet; and Iliad, T. walking upon mens' heads; in both places using one and the same phrase to signify her power, Βλαπτοῦσ' ἀνθρώπους, *Lædens homines*. I present her barefooted, and her frock tucked, to make her seem more expedite, by Horace's authority, Sat. 8. lib. 1. "Succinctam vadere pallâ Canidiam pedibus nudis, passoque capillo." But for her hair, I rather respect another place of his, Epod. lib.

*man's arm, lighted, girded with a snake. To whom they all did reverence, and she spake, uttering, by way of question, the end wherefore they came*¹.

DAME. Well done, my Hags²! And come we fraught with spite
To overthrow the glory of this night?
Holds our great purpose?

HAGS. Yes.

DAME. But wants there none
Of our just number?

HAGS. Call us one by one,
And then our Dame shall see.

DAME. First then advance³,
My drowsy servant, stupid Ignorance,

ode 5. where she appears "Canidia brevibus implicata viperis Crineis, et incomptum caput." And that of Lucan, lib. 6. speaking of Erichtho's attire,

"Discolor, et vario Furialis cultus amictu
Induitur, vultusque aperitur crine remoto,
Et coma vipereis substringitur horrida sertis."

For her torch, see Remig. lib. 2. cap. 3.

¹ Which if it had been done either before, or otherwise, had not been so natural. For to have made themselves their own decipherers, and each one to have told upon their entrance *what they were, and whither they would*, had been a piteous hearing, and utterly unworthy of any quality of a Poem; wherein a Writer should always trust somewhat to the capacity of the spectator, especially at these Spectacles; where men, beside inquiring eyes, are understood to bring quick ears, and not those sluggish ones of porters and mechanics, that must be bored through at every act with narrations.

² In *Macbeth*, Hecate says to the Witches, "O, well done!" upon which important resemblance, Mr. Steevens thus expatiates. "The *attentive* Reader will observe that, in the *Masque of Queens*, old Ben has exerted his *strongest powers*, to rival the incantation of Shakspeare's" (Middleton's) "Witches, and the final address of Prospero to the ærial spirits under his command." Now let *Macbeth* have been written when it may, Steevens well knew that the *Tempest* was one of Shakspeare's latest Plays; and was not in existence till many years after this period (1608-9); if, therefore, any rivalry be found between the parting speech of Prospero, and the awful invocation of the Dame (p. 228,) the "jealousy" must be attributed, however harshly it may sound, to Shakspeare.—With respect to the invidious comparison elsewhere instituted between the Hecate of Shakspeare and this of Jonson, it is founded on sheer ignorance. The Dame of the latter is not Hecate, but Ate, as he himself expressly calls her. But be she who she may, she is as superior (if the truth must be told) to the Hecate of *Macbeth*, as *Macbeth* is to every other Tragedy. G.

³ In the chaining of these Vices, I make as if one link produced another, and the Dame were born out of them all, so as they might say to her, *Sola tenes scelerum quicquid possedimus omnes*. Nor will it appear much violenced, if their series be considered, when the opposition to all virtue begins out of Ignorance, that Ignorance begets Suspicion (for Knowledge is ever open and charitable), that

Known by thy scaly vesture; and bring on
Thy fearful sister, wild Suspicion,

[*As she names them they come forward.*]

Whose eyes do never sleep; let her knit hands
With quick Credulity, that next her stands,
Who hath but one ear, and that always ope;
Two-faced Falsehood follow in the rope;
And lead on Murmur, with the cheeks deep hung;
She Malice, whetting of her forked tongue;
And Malice Impudence, whose forehead's lost;
Let Impudence lead Slander on, to boast
Her oblique look; and to her subtle side,
Thou, black-mouth'd Execration, stand applied;
Draw to thee Bitterness, whose pores sweat gall;
She flame-ey'd Rage; Rage Mischief.

HAGS.

Here we are all.

DAME. Join now our hearts, we faithful opposites¹
To Fame and Glory. Let not these bright nights
Of honour blaze, thus to offend our eyes;
Shew ourselves truly envious, and let rise

Suspicion, Credulity, as it is a vice; for being a virtue, and free, it is opposite to it; but such as are jealous of themselves, do easily credit any thing of others whom they hate. Out of this Credulity springs Falsehood, which begets Murmur; and that of Murmur presently grows Malice, which begets Impudence; and that Impudence, Slander; that Slander, Execration; Execration, Bitterness; Bitterness, Fury; and Fury, Mischief. Now the personal presentation of them, the authority in poetry is universal. But in the absolute Claudian, there is a particular and eminent place, where the Poet not only produceth such persons, but almost to a like purpose, in *Ruf. lib. 1.* where *Alecto*, envious of the times,

“ ——— infernas ad limina tetra sorores
Concilium deformē vocat, glomerantur in unum
Innumeræ pestes Erebi, quascunque sinistro
Nox genuit fœtu; nutrix Discordia belli,
Imperiosa Fames, leto vicina Senectus,
Impatiensque sui Morbus, Livorque secundis
Anxius, et scisso mœrens velamine Luctus,
Et Timor, et cœco præceps Audacia vultu:

with many others, fit to disturb the world, as ours the night.

¹ Here again, by way of irritation, I make the Dame pursue the purpose of their coming, and discover their natures more largely; which had been nothing, if not done as doing another thing, but *moratio circa vilem patulumque orbem*; than which the Poet cannot know a greater vice; he being that kind of Artificer, to whose work is required so much exactness, as indifferency is not tolerable.

Our wonted rages; do what may beseem
 Such names and natures; Virtue else will deem
 Our powers decreas'd, and think us banish'd Earth,
 No less than Heaven. All her antique birth,
 As Justice, Faith, she will restore; and, bold
 Upon our sloth, retrieve her Age of Gold.
 We must not let our native manners thus
 Corrupt with ease. Ill lives not, but in us.
 I hate to see these fruits of a soft peace,
 And curse the piety gives it such increase.
 Let us disturb it then ¹, and blast the light;
 Mix hell and heaven, and make nature fight
 Within herself; loose the whole hinge of things;
 And cause the ends run back into their springs.

HAGS. What our Dame bids us to do,
 We are ready for.

DAME. Then fall to.
 But first relate me ², what you have sought,
 Where you have been, and what you have brought.

¹ These powers of troubling nature, frequently ascribed to Witches, and challenged by themselves wherever they are induced, by Homer, Ovid, Tibullus, Pet. Arbitrator, Seneca, Lucan, Claudian, to whose authorities I shall refer more anon. For the present, hear Socrat. in Apul. de Asin. aureo, lib. 1. describing Meroe the witch. "Saga et divinipotens cœlum deponere, terram suspendere, fontes durare, monteis diluere, manes sublimare, deos infimare, sidera extinguere, tartarum ipsum illuminare;" and lib. 2. Byrrhena to Lucius, of Pamphile. "Maga primi nominis, et omnis carminis sepulcralis magistra creditur, quæ surculis et lapillis, et id genus frivolis inhalatis, omnem istam lucem mundi sideralis, imis tartari et in vetustum chaos mergit;" as also this latter of Remigius, in his most elegant arguments before his Dæmonolatia. "Quà possit evertere funditus orbem, et maneis superis miscere, hæc unica cura est." And Lucan. "Quarum quicquid non creditur, ars est."

² This is also solemn in their Witchcraft, to be examined, either by the Devil or their Dame, at their meetings, of what mischief they have done; and what they can confer to a future hurt. See M. Philippo Ludwicus Elich. Dæmonomagiæ, lib. quæst. 10. But Remigius, in the very form, lib. 1. Dæmonolat. c. 22. "Quemadmodum solent heri in villicis procuratoribus, cum eorum rationes expendant, segnitiam negligentiamque durius castigare; ita Dæmon, in suis comitiis, quod tempus examinandis cujusque rebus atque actionibus ipse constituit, eos pessimè habere consuevit, qui nihil afferunt quo se nequiores ac flagitiis cumulatiores doceant. Nec cuiquam adeo impune est, si à superiore conventu nullo se scelere novo obstrinxerit; sed semper oportet, qui gratus esse volet in alium, novum aliquod facinus fecisse." And this doth exceedingly solicit them all, at such times, lest they should come unprepared. But we apply this examination of ours to the particular use; whereby, also, we take occasion, not only to express the things (as vapours, liquors, herbs, bones, flesh, blood, fat, and such like, which are called *Media magica*) but the rites of gathering them, and from what

- 1 HAG. I have been all day, looking after ¹
 A raven feeding upon a quarter;
 And, soon, as she turn'd her back to the South,
 I snatch'd the morsel out of her mouth.
- 2 HAG. I have been gathering wolves' hairs,
 The mad dog's foam, and the adder's ears,
 The spurning of a dead man's eyes;
 And all since the evening star did rise.
- 3 HAG. I last night lay all alone
 On the ground, to hear the mandrake groan;
 And pluck'd him up, though he grew full low;
 And, as I had done, the cock did crow.

places, reconciling as near as we can, the practice of Antiquity to the Neoteric, and making it familiar with our popular Witchcraft.

¹ For the gathering pieces of dead flesh, Cornel. Agrip. de occult. Philosoph. lib. 3. cap. 42, and lib. 4. cap. ult. observes that the use was to call up ghosts and spirits, with a fumigation made of that (and bones of carcasses) which I make my Witch here, not to cut herself, but to watch the raven, as Lucan's Erichtho, lib. 6:

"Et quodcunque jacet nudâ tellure cadaver
 Ante feras volucresque sedet; nec carpere membra
 Vult ferro manibusque suis, morsusque luporum
 Expectat siccis raptura à faucibus artus."

As if that piece were sweeter which the wolf had bitten, or the raven had picked, and more effectuous; and to do it at her turning to the South, as with the prediction of a storm. Which, though they be but minutes in ceremony, being observed, make the act more dark and full of horror.

2. "Spuma canum, lupi crines, nodus hyenæ, oculi draconum, serpentis membrana, aspidis aures," are all mentioned by the ancients in witchcraft. And Lucan particularly, lib. 6.

"Huc quicquid fœtu genuit natura sinistro
 Miscetur, non spuma canum, quibus unda timori est,
 Viscera non lyncis, non duræ nodus hyenæ
 Defuit, &c.

And Ovid, Metamorph. lib. 7. reckons up others. But for the spurning of the eyes, let us return to Lucan, in the same book, which piece (as all the rest) is written with an admirable height:

"Ast ubi servantur saxis, quibus intimus humor
 Ducitur, et tractâ durescunt tabe medullæ
 Corpora, tunc omneis avidè desævit in artus,
 Immersitque manus oculis, gaudetque gelatos
 Effodisse orbeis, et siccæ pallida rodit
 Excrementa manus."

3. Pliny, writing of the mandrake, Nat. Hist. l. 25. c. 13. and of the digging it up, bath this ceremony: "Cavent effossuri contrarium ventum, et tribus circulis ante gladio circumscribunt, postea fodiunt ad occasum spectantes." But we have later tradition, that the forcing it up is so fatally dangerous, as the groan kills, and therefore they do it with dogs, which I think but borrowed from Josephus's report of the root Baëras, lib. 7. de Bel. Judaic. Howsoever, it being so principal an

- 4 HAG. And I have been choosing out this scull,
From charnel houses, that were full;
From private grots, and public pits;
And frighted a Sexton out of his wits.
- 5 HAG. Under a cradle I did creep,
By day; and when the child was asleep,
At night, I suck'd the breath; and rose,
And pluck'd the nodding nurse by the nose.
- 6 HAG. I had a dagger; what did I with that?
Kill'd an infant to have his fat.
A piper it got, at a church-ale,
I bade him again blow wind in the tail.

ingredient in their magic, it was fit she should boast, to be the plucker up of it herself. And, that the cock did crow, alludes to a prime circumstance in their work: for they all confess, that nothing is so cross, or baleful to them in their nights, as that the cock should crow before they have done. Which makes that their little masters or martinets, whom I have mentioned before, use this form in dismissing their conventions. "*Eja, facessite properè hinc omnes, nam jam galli canere incipiunt.*" Which I interpret to be, because that bird is the messenger of light, and so, contrary to their acts of darkness. See Remig. *Dæmonolat.* lib. 1. cap. 4. where he quotes that of Apollonius, *de umbrâ Achillis*, Philostr. lib. 4. cap. 5. And Euseb. *Cæsariens. in confutat. contra Hierocl.* 4. *de gallicinio.*

4. I have touched at this before, in my note upon the first, of the use of gathering flesh, bones, and skulls; to which I now bring that piece of Apuleius, lib. 3. *de Asino aureo*, of Pamphile. "*Priusque apparatu solito instruxit feralem officinam, omne genus aromatis, et ignorabiliter laminis literatis, et infœlicium navium durantibus clavis defletorum, sepulorum etiam, cadaverum expositis multis admodum membris, hic nares et digiti, illic carnosi clavi pendentium, alibi trucidatorum servatus cruor, et extorta dentibus ferarum trunca calvaria.*" And, for such places, Lucan makes his Witch to inhabit them, lib. 6. "*Desertaque busta incolit, et tumulos expulsis obtinet umbris.*"

5. For this rite, see Barthol. *de spinâ. Quæst. de Strigibus*, cap. 8. *Mal. Malefica*, tom. 2. where he disputes at large the transformation of Witches to cats, and their sucking both their spirits and the blood, calling them Striges, which Godelman, lib. *de Lamiis*, would have "*à stridore, et avibus fœdis-simis ejusdem nominis,*" which I the rather incline to, out of Ovid's authority, *Fast.* lib. 6. where the Poet ascribes to those birds, the same almost that these do to the Witches,

"Nocte volant, puerosque petunt nutricis egenteis,
Et vitiant cunis corpora rapta suis:
Carpere dicuntur lactentia viscera rostris,
Et plenum poto sanguine gutter habent."

6. Their killing of infants is common, both for confection of their ointment (whereto one ingredient is the fat boiled, as I have shewed before out of Paracelsus and Porta) as also out of a lust to do murder. Sprenger in *Mal. Malefic.* reports that a Witch, a midwife in the diocese of Basil, confessed to have killed above forty infants (ever as they were new born, with pricking them in the brain with a needle), which she had offered to the devil. See the story of the three Witches in *Rem. Dæ-*

- 7 HAG. A murderer, yonder, was hung in chains,
The sun and the wind had shrunk his veins;
I bit off a sinew; I clipp'd his hair,
I brought off his rags that danced in the air.
- 8 HAG. The screech-owl's eggs, and the feathers black,
The blood of the frog, and the bone in his back,
I have been getting; and made of his skin
A purset, to keep Sir Cranion in.
- 9 HAG. And I have been plucking, plants among,
Hemlock, henbane, adder's-tongue,
Night-shade, moon-wort, libbard's-bane;
And twice, by the dogs, was like to be ta'en.

monola. lib. cap. 3, about the end of the chapter. And M. Philippo Ludwigus Elich. Quæst. 8. And that it is no new rite, read the practice of Canidia, Epod. Horat. lib. ode 5, and Lucan, lib. 6, whose admirable verses I can never be weary to transcribe:

"Nec cessant à cæde manus, si sanguine vivo
Est opus, erumpat jugulo qui primus aperto.
Nec refugit cædes, vivum si sacra cruorem
Extaque funereæ poscunt trepidantia mensæ.
Vulnere si ventris, non quâ natura vocabat,
Extrahitur partus calidis ponendus in aris;
Et quoties sævis opus est, et fortibus umbris
Ipsa facit maneis. Hominum mors omnis in usu est."

7. The abuse of dead bodies in their witchcraft, both Porphyrio and Psellus are grave authors of. The one lib. de sacrific. cap. de vero cultu. The other lib. de Dæmo. which Apuleius toucheth too, lib. 2. de Asino aureo. But Remigius, who deals with later persons, and out of their own mouths, Dæmonol. lib. 2. cap. 3. affirms, "Hæc et nostræ ætatis maleficis hominibus moris est facere, præsertim si cujus supplicio affecti cadaver exemplo datum est, et in crucem sublatum. Nam non solum inde sortilegiis suis materiam mutantur: sed et ab ipsis carnificinæ instrumentis, reste, vinculis, palo, ferramentis. Siquidem iis vulgi etiam opinione inesse ad incantationes magicas vim quandam et potestatem." And to this place, I dare not, out of religion to the divine Lucan, but bring his verses from the same book.

"Laqueum nodosque nocenteis
Ore suo rupit, pendentia corpora carpsit,
Abrasitque cruces, percussaque viscera nimbis
Vulsit, et, incoctas admissis sole medullas.
Insertum manibus chalybem nigramque per artus
Stillantis tabi saniem, virusque coactum
Sustulit, et nervo morsus retinente pependit."

8. These are Canidia's furniture, in Horace, Epod. lib. ode 5. "Et uncta turpis ova ranæ sanguine, plumamque nocturnæ strigis." And part of Medea's confection in Ovid, Metamorph. lib. 7. "Strigis infames, ipsis cum carnibus, alas." That of the skin (to make a purse for her fly) was meant ridiculous, to mock the keeping of their familiars.

9. "Cicuta, hyoscyamus, ophioglosson, solanum, martagon, doronicum, aconitum," are the com-

10 HAG. I, from the jaws of a gardener's bitch,
Did snatch these bones, and then leap'd the ditch;
Yet went I back to the house again,
Kill'd the black cat, and here's the brain.

11 HAG. I went to the toad breeds under the wall,
I charm'd him out, and he came at my call;
I scratch'd out the eyes of the owl before,
I tore the bat's wing; what would you have more?

DAME. Yes, I have brought, to help our vows,
Horned poppy, cypress boughs,
The fig-tree wild that grows on tombs,
And juice that from the larch-tree comes,
The basilisk's blood, and the viper's skin;
And now our orgies let's begin.

mon venefical ingredients remembered by Paracelsus, Porta, Agrippa, and others; which I make her to have gathered, as about a castle, church, or some vast building (kept by dogs) among ruins and wild heaps.

10. "Ossa ab ore rapta jejunæ canis," Horace gives Canidia, in the place before quoted. Which *jejunæ*, I rather change to "gardener's," as imagining such persons to keep mastiffs for the defence of their grounds, whither this hag might also go for simples; where, meeting with the bones, and not content with them, she would yet do a domestic hurt in getting the cat's brains; which is another special ingredient; and of so much more efficacy, by how much blacker the cat is, if you will credit Agrippa, Cap. de suffitibus.

11. These also, both by the confessions of Witches, and testimony of Writers, are of principal use in their witchcraft. The toad mentioned in Virg. Georg. lib. 1. "Inventusque canis Bufo." Which by Pliny is called *Rubeta*, Nat. Hist. l. 32. c. 5. and there celebrated for the force in magic. Juvenal toucheth at it twice within my memory, Satire 1, and 6; and of the owl's eyes, see Corn. Agrip. de occult. Philosoph. lib. 1. c. 15. As of the bat's blood and wings there; and in the 25th chapter with Baptista Porta, lib. 2. c. 26.

12. After all their boasted labours, and plenty of materials, as they imagine, I make the Dame not only to add more, but stranger, and out of their means to get, (except the first, *Papaver cornutum*, which I have touched at in the confection,) as "Sepulchris caprificos erutas, et cupressos funebreis," as Horace calls them, where he arms Canidia, Epod. lib. ode 5. Then *Agaricum Laricis*, of which see Porta, lib. 2. de Nat. Mag. against Pliny. And "Basilisci, quem et Saturni sanguinem vocant Venifici, tantasque vires habere ferunt." Cor. Agrip. de occult. Philos. lib. 1. c. 42. With the viper remembered by Lucan, lib. 6. and the skins of serpents.

"Innataque rubris
Æquoribus custos pretiosæ vipera conchæ,
Aut viventis adhuc Lybicæ membrana cerastæ."

And Ovid, lib. 7.

"Nec defuit illis
Squamea ciniphei tenuis membrana chelydri."

*Here the DAME put herself in the midst of them,
and began her following Invocation*¹:

You Fiends and Furies, (if yet any be
Worse than ourselves,) you that have quaked to see
These knots untied², and shrunk, when we have charm'd;
You, that to arm us, have yourselves disarm'd,
And to our powers resign'd your whips and brands,
When we went forth, the scourge of men and lands.
You that have seen me ride, when Hecate
Durst not take chariot; when the boisterous sea,
Without a breath of wind, hath knock'd the sky;
And that hath thunder'd, Jove not knowing why;
When we have set the elements at wars,
Made midnight see the sun, and day the stars;
When the wing'd lightning in the course hath staid;
And swiftest rivers have run back afraid,
To see the corn remove, the groves to range,
Whole places alter, and the seasons change;
When the pale moon, at the first voice down fell
Poison'd, and durst not stay the second spell.
You, that have oft been conscious of these sights;
And thou, three-formed star³, that on these nights
Art only powerful, to whose triple name
Thus we incline, once, twice, and thrice the same;

¹ Wherein she took occasion to boast all the power attributed to Witches by the ancients, of which every Poet (or the most) do give some: Homer to Circe, in the *Odyssey*; Theocritus to Simatha, in *Pharmaceutria*; Virgil to Alpheus, in his *Eclogue*; Ovid to Dipsas, in *Amoris*; to Medea and Circe, in *Metamorphoses*; Tibullus to Saga; Horace to Canidia, Sagana, Veia, Folia; Seneca to Medea, and the nurse, in *Herc. Cete.*; Petr. Arbiter to his Saga, in *Frag.*; and Claudian to Megæra, lib. 1. in *Rufinum*; who takes the habit of a Witch, as they do, and supplies that historical part in the Poem, beside her moral person of a Fury; confirming the same drift in ours.—These invocations are solemn with them, whereof we may see the forms in Ovid, *Metam.* lib. 7. in Seneca (*Trag. Med.*), in Lucan, lib. 6. which of all is the boldest and most horrid, beginning, “Eumenides, Stygiumque nefas, pœnæque nocentum,” &c.

² The untying of their knots is, when they are going to some fatal business; as Sagana is presented by Horace: “Expedita, per totum domum spargens Avernaleis aquas, horret capillis ut marinus asperis echinus, aut currens aper.”

³ Hecate, who is called Trivia, and Triformis, of whom Virgil, *Æneid.* lib. 4. “Tergeminamque Hecaten, tria virginis ora Dianæ.” She was believed to govern in Witchcraft; and is remembered in all their invocations; see Theocr. in *Pharmaceut.* χαίρ' Ἐκάτα δασυπλήτι, and Medea in Senec. “Meis vocata sacris noctium sidus veni, pessimos induta vultus; fronte non unâ minax.” And Erichtho in Lucan, “Persephone, nostræque Hecatis pars ultima,” &c.

If now with rites profane, and foul enough,
 We do invoke thee; darken all this roof,
 With present fogs; exhale earth's rot'nest vapours,
 And strike a blindness through these blazing tapers.
 Come let a murmuring charm resound,
 The whilst we bury¹ all 'n the ground.
 But first, see every foot be bare²;
 And every knee.

HAG.

Yes, Dame, they are.

4 CHARM. *Deep³, O deep we lay thee to sleep;
 We leave thee drink by, if thou chance to be dry;
 Both milk and blood, the dew and the flood.
 We breathe in thy bed, at the foot and the head;
 We cover thee warm, that thou take no harm;
 And when thou dost wake,
 Dame Earth shall quake,
 And the houses shake,
 And her belly shall ake,
 As her back were brake,*

¹ This rite of burying their material is often confessed in Remigius, and described amply in Hor. Sat. 8. lib. 1.

"Utque lupi barbam variæ cum dente colubræ
 Abdiderint furtim terris," &c.

² The ceremony also of baring their feet, is expressed by Ovid, Metamorph. lib. 7. as of their hair:

"Egreditur tectis vestes induta recinctas,
 Nuda pedem, nudos humeris infusa capillos."

And Horace, *ibid.* "Pedibus nudis passoque capillo." And Seneca, in *tragœdiâ Medeæ*, "Tibi more gentis, vinculo solvens comam, secreta nudo nemora lustravi pede."

³ Here they speak, as if they were creating some new feature, which the Devil persuades them to be able to do often, by the pronouncing of words, and pouring out of liquors on the earth. Hear what Agrippa says, *De occul. Phil.* lib. 4, near the end. "In evocationibus umbrarum fumigamus cum sanguine recenti, cum ossibus mortuorum et carne, cum ovis, lacte, melle, oleo, et similibus, quæ aptum medium tribuunt animabus, ad sumenda corpora;" and a little before, "Namque animæ cognitæ mediis, per quæ quondam corporibus suis conjungebantur, per similes vapores, liquores, nidoresque facile alliciuntur." Which doctrine he had from Apuleius, without all doubt or question, who in lib. 3. *de Asino aureo*, publisheth the same. "Tunc decantatis spirantibus fibris litat vario latice; nunc rore fontano, nunc lacte vaccino, nunc melle montano, libat et mulsat. Sic illos capillos in mutuos nexus obditos, atque nodatos, cum multis odoribus dat vivis carbonibus adolendos. Tunc protinus inexpugnabili magicæ disciplinæ protestate, et cœcâ numinum coactorum violentiâ, illa corpora quorum fumabant stridentes capilli, spiritum mutuuntur humanum, et sentiunt, et audiunt, et ambulant; et, quâ nidor suarum ducebat exuviarum, veniunt." All which are mere arts of Satan, when either himself will delude them with a false form, or troubling a dead body, makes them imagine these vanities the means; as, in the ridiculous circumstances that follow, he doth daily.

*Such a birth to make,
As is the blue drake;
Whose form thou shalt take.*

DAME. Never a star yet shot?
Where be the ashes?

HAG. Here in the pot.

DAME. Cast them up¹; and the flint-stone
Over the left shoulder bone,
Into the West.

HAG. It will be best.

5 CHARM. *The sticks are across; there can be no loss,
The sage is rotten, the sulphur is gotten
Up to the sky, that was in the ground.
Follow it then, with our rattles, round;
Under the bramble, over the brier,
A little more heat will set it on fire;
Put it in mind to do it kind,
Flow water and blow wind.
Rouncy is over, Robble is under,
A flash of light, and a clap of thunder,
A storm of rain, another of hail.
We all must home in the egg-shell sail;
The mast is made of a great pin,
The tackle of cobweb, the sail as thin,
And if we go through and not fall in——*

DAME. Stay², all our charms do nothing win

¹ This throwing of ashes and sand, with the flint-stone, cross-sticks, and burying of sage, &c. are all used (and believed by them) to the raising of storm and tempest. See Remig. lib. 1. Dæmon. cap. 25. Nider. Formicari. cap. 4. Bodin. Dæmon. lib. 2. cap. 8. And hear Godelman, lib. 2. cap. 6. "Nam quando Dæmoni grandines ciendi potestatem facit Deus, tum Maleficas instruit; ut quandoque silices post tergum in occidentem versus projiciant, aliquando ut arenam aquæ torrentis in aërem conjiciant, plerumque scopas in aquam intingant, cælumque versus spargunt, vel fossulâ facta et lotio infuso, vel aquâ digitum moveant; subinde in ollâ porcorum pilos bulliant, nonnunquam trabes vel ligna in ripâ transversè collocent, et alia id genus deliramenta efficiant." And when they see the success, they are more confirmed, as if the event followed their working. The like illusion is of their phantasie, in sailing in egg-shells, creeping through augur-holes, and such like, so vulgar in their confessions.

² This stop or interruption shewed the better, by causing that general silence, which made all the following noises, inforced in the next charm, more direful, first imitating that of Lucan.

—————"Miratur Erichtho
Has fatis licuisse moras; irataque morti
Verberat immotum vivo serpente cadaver."

Upon the night; our labour dies,
 Our magic feature will not rise—
 Nor yet the storm! we must repeat
 More direful voices far, and beat
 The ground with vipers, till it sweat.

6 CHARM. *Bark dogs, wolves howl,
 Seas roar, woods roll,
 Clouds crack¹, all be black,
 But the light our charms do make.*

DAME. Not yet! my rage begins to swell;
 Darkness, Devils, Night, and Hell,
 Do not thus delay my spell.
 I call you once, and I call you twice;
 I beat you again, if you stay my thrice:
 Through these crannies where I peep,
 I'll let in the light to see your sleep².
 And all the secrets of your sway
 Shall lie as open to the day,
 As unto me. Still are you deaf?
 Reach me a bough³, that ne'er bare leaf,
 To strike the air; and aconite⁴,
 To hurl upon this glaring light;

¹ And then their barking, howling, hissing, and confusion of noise expressed by the same author, in the same person.

*"Tunc vox Lethæos cunctis pollentior herbis
 Excantare deos, confundit murmura primùm
 Dissona, et humanæ multum discordia linguæ.
 Latratus habet illa canum, gemitusque luporum,
 Quod trepidus bubo, quod strix nocturna queruntur,
 Quod strident ululantque feræ, quod sibilat anguis,
 Exprimit et planctus illisæ cautibus undæ,
 Sylvarumque sonum, fractæque tonitrua nubis.
 Tot rerum vox una fuit."*

See Remigius, too, *Dæmonolat.* lib. 1. cap. 19.

² This is one of their common menaces, when their magic receives the least stop. Hear Erichtho again, *ibid.*

*"Tibi, pessime mundi
 Arbiter, immittam ruptis Titana cavernis,
 Et subito feriere die."*

And a little before to Proserpina:

*"Eloquar immenso terræ sub pondere quæ te
 Contineant, Ennæa dapes," &c.*

³ That withered straight, as it shot out, which is called *ramus feralis* by some, and *tristis* by Seneca, *Trag. Med.*

⁴ A deadly poisonous herb, feigned by Ovid (*Metam.* lib. 7.) to spring out of Cerberus's foam.

A rusty knife¹, to wound mine arm;
 And as it drops I'll speak a charm,
 Shall cleave the ground, as low as lies
 Old shrunk-up Chaos, and let rise,
 Once more, his dark and reeking head,
 To strike the World, and Nature dead,
 Until my magic birth be bred.

7 CHARM. *Black go in, and blacker come out;
 At thy going down we give thee a shout.
 Hoo²!*

*At thy rising again, thou shalt have two,
 And if thou dost what we would have thee do,
 Thou shalt have three, thou shalt have four,
 Thou shalt have ten, thou shalt have a score.
 Hoo! Har! Har! Hoo!*

8 CHARM. *A cloud of pitch, a spur and a switch,
 To haste him away, and a whirlwind play,
 Before and after, with thunder for laughter,
 And storms for joy, of the roaring boy;
 His head of a drake, his tail of a snake.*

9 CHARM. *About, about, and about,
 Till the mist arise, and the lights fly out,
 The images neither be seen nor felt;
 The woollen burn, and the waxen melt;
 Sprinkle your liquors upon the ground,
 And into the air; around, around,
 Around, around,*

Pliny gives it another beginning of name. Nat. Hist. lib. 27. cap. 3. "Nascitur in nudis cautibus, quas aconas vocant, et inde aconitum dixere, nullo juxta ne pulvere quidem nutriente." Howsoever the juice of it is like that liquor which the Devil gives Witches to sprinkle abroad, and do hurt, in the opinion of all the magic masters.

¹ A rusty knife I rather give her than any other, as fittest for such a devilish ceremony, which Seneca might mean by *sacro cultro* in the tragedy, where he arms Medea to the like rite (for any thing I know), "Tibi nudato pectore Mænas, sacro feriam brachia cultro; manet noster sanguis ad aras."

² These shouts and clamours, as also the voice *har, har*, are very particular with them, by the testimony of Bodin, Remigius, Delrio, and M. Phil. Ludwigus Elich. who out of them reports it thus: "Tota turba colluviesque pessima fescenninos in honorem Dæmonum cantat obscœnissimos; hæc canit *Har! Har!* illa, Diabole, Diabole, salta hue, salta illuc; altera, Lude hic, lude illic; alia, Sabaoth, sabaoth, &c. Imo clamoribus, sibilis, ululatibus, popysmis furit, ac debacchatur; pulveribus, vel venenis acceptis, quæ hominibus pecudibusque spargant."

*Around, around,
Till a music sound¹,
And the pace be found²,*

¹ Nor do they want music, and in a strange manner given them by the Devil, if we credit their confessions in Remigius, Dæm. lib. 1. cap. 19. Such as the *Syrhenæan Quires* were, which Athenæus remembers out of Clearchus, Deipnos. lib. 15, where every one sung what he would, without hearkening to his fellow; like the noise of divers oars falling in the water. But be patient of Remigius's relation. "Miris modis illic miscentur, ac turbantur omnia, nec ullâ oratione satis exprimi queat, quàm strepant sonis inconditis, absurdis, ac discrepantibus. Canit hic Dæmon ad tibiam, vel verius ad contum, aut baculum aliquod, quod fortè humi repertum, buccæ seu tibiam admovet. Ille pro lyrâ equi calvarium pulsat, ac digitis concrepat. Alius fuste vel clavâ graviore quercum tundit, unde exauditur sonus, ac boatus veluti tympanorum vehementiùs pulsatorum. Intercinunt raucidè, et composito ad litui morem clangore Dæmones, ipsumque cælum fragosâ aridâque voce feriunt."

² Our author is so great a magic master in this device, and has so well illustrated the design in his own comment, that he has left his editors nothing to add upon the subject. It can only be observed, that all these spectacles were undoubtedly received as true facts, on the authority of the Sovereign then present; who had endeavoured, by his own book of Dæmonology, to unriddle the whole system of witchcraft, and persuade his people into the firm belief of the superstitions and charms said to be practised by Witches at their nightly meetings. WHALLEY.

"Just before this Masque was written, (says Percy, Antient Poetry, vol. III. p. 199,) a parcel of learned Wiseacres, with our British Solomon, James I. at their head, had busied themselves on this subject," &c. That Percy, who ought to have observed some decorum, should copy the miserable cant of the Puritans, and sneer at the understanding of James, under a Scripture name, is to be regretted. If James was so termed by his new subjects, it was not on account of any fancied wisdom in him, but of his pacific nature. He always desired that there might be peace in his days, and he therefore took the title of Rex Pacificus. But instead of *just before* James wrote his Dæmonology ten years before the *Masque of Queens* appeared, and instead of being "at the head," he was at the tail of the writers on this subject. The great misfortune of James was—an insatiate and unkingly curiosity; he always suspected imposture, and would needs search into the truth of every thing himself. He wanted not sagacity, and was complimented with more than he possessed; but this was a misfortune not peculiar to this poor King. His prying disposition undoubtedly led him, at times, into unpleasant and ridiculous situations; but, as he was always in earnest, it sometimes conduced to good. His personal examination of Demoniacs and Witches, for example, led to a renunciation of his belief in witchcraft, &c. "The frequency of the forgery (Fuller says) produced such an alteration at length in the King's judgement, that receding from what he had advanced in his Dæmonology, he grew first diffident of, and then flatly denied, the workings of Witches and Devils, as but falsehoods and delusions." Church History, book x. p. 73. Would that his persecutors had always shewn themselves as open to conviction!

With respect to Jonson, his opinion of the popular creed is well known. There is no more necessity for supposing that he believed in witchcraft, than that he believed in the Gods of Greece and

*To which we may dance,
And our charms advance.*

*At which, with a strange and sudden music, they fell into a magical
dance¹, full of preposterous change and gesticulation².*

In the heat of their dance, on the sudden was heard a sound of loud music, as if many instruments had made one blast; with which not only the Hags themselves, but the hell into which they ran, quite vanished, and the whole face of the scene altered, scarce suffering the memory of such a thing; but in the place of it appeared a glorious and magnificent building, figuring the HOUSE of FAME, in the top of which were discovered the twelve Masquers, sitting upon a throne triumphal, erected in form of a pyramid, and circled with all

Rome. He cites his authorities in both cases; but with no further aim in either than to justify himself as a Poet; except, in the present instance, to gratify Prince Henry, who had laid his command upon him to collect and publish his authorities.

One word more. From the clamour raised against James, it would seem as if the Commentators thought that neither Witches nor laws against them existed before this young Prince (he was but little turned of twenty) published his Dæmonological treatise. But witchcraft had been declared a capital crime in this country ages before his accession to the throne, and his doings in the way of punishment were mere piddling to the wholesale hangings and burnings of the Republicans. The "Godly" drove on at a merry rate, and experienced none of the "compunctious visitings" which so often restrained the hand of James. "In the collection that I have made (says the good Dr. Hutchinson) it is observable that in 103 years from the statute against witchcraft in the 33d of Henry VIII. till 1644 (long after the death of James), when we were in the midst of our Civil Wars, I find but about fifteen executed. But in the sixteen years following, *while the Government was in other hands*, there were an hundred and nine, if not more, condemned and hanged!" Hist. Essay on Witchcraft, p. 68. G.

¹ The manner also of their dancing is confest in Bodin (lib. 2. cap. 4.), and Remigius (lib. 1. cap. 17 and 18). The sum of which M. Phil. Lud. Elich. relates thus, in his Dæmonom. quæst. 10: "Tri-pudiis interdum intersunt facie liberâ et apertâ, interdum obductâ larvâ, linteo, cortice, reticulo, peplo, vel alio velamine, aut farrinario excerniculo involutâ." And a little after, "Omnia fiunt ritu absurdissimo, et ab omni consuetudine hominum alienissimo, dorsis invicem obversis, et in orbem junctis manibus, saltando circumeunt perinde sua jactantes capita, ut qui æstro agitantur." Remigius adds, out of the confession of Sibylla Morelia, "Gyrum semper in lævam progredi." Which Pliny observes in the Priests of Cybele, Nat. Hist. lib. 28. cap. 2, and to be done with great religion. Bodin adds, that they use brooms in their hands, with which we armed our Witches; and here we leave them.

² But most applying to their property; who at their meetings do all things contrary to the custom of men, dancing back to back, and hip to hip, their hands joined, and making their circles backward, to the left-hand, with strange phantastic motions of their heads and bodies. All which were excellently imitated by the maker of the dance, M. Hierome Herne, whose right it is here to be named.—Of that person see p. 185.

store of light. From whom a person by this time descended, in the furniture of Perseus, and expressing Heroic and Masculine Virtue, began to speak.

HEROIC VIRTUE. So should, at Fame's loud sound, and Virtue's sight,
 All dark and envious witchcraft fly the light.
 I¹ did not borrow Hermes' wings, nor ask
 His crooked sword, nor put on Pluto's casque,
 Nor on mine arm advanced with Pallas' shield,
 (By which, my face avers'd, in open field
 I slew the Gorgon) for an empty name;
 When Virtue cut off Terror, he gat Fame.
 And if, when Fame was gotten, Terror died,
 What black Erinnys, or more hellish Pride,
 Durst arm these Hags, now she is grown and great,
 To think they could her glories once defeat?
 I was her parent, and I am her strength.
 Heroic Virtue sinks not under length
 Of years, or ages; but is still the same,
 While he preserves, as when he got good fame.
 My Daughter, then, whose glorious house you see
 Built all of sounding brass, whose columns be
 Men-making Poets, and those well-made Men,
 Whose strife it was to have the happiest pen
 Renown them to an after-life, and not
 With pride to scorn the Muse, and die forgot;
 She that enquireth into all the world,
 And hath about her vaulted palace hurl'd
 All rumours and reports, or true or vain,
 What utmost lands, or deepest seas contain,
 (But only hangs great actions on her file,)
 She, to this lesser world, and greatest Isle²,
 To-night sounds honour, which she would have seen
 In yond' bright bevy, each of them a Queen.
 Eleven of them are of times long gone³;
 Penthesilea, the brave Amazon,
 Swift-foot Camilla, Queen of Volscia,
 Victorious Thomyris, of Scythia,
 Chaste Artemisia, the Carian Dame,
 And fair-hair'd Beronice, Egypt's fame,

¹ The Ancients expressed a brave and masculine virtue in three figures (of Hercules, Perseus, and Bellerophon). Of which we choose that of Perseus, armed as we have described him out of Hesiod, Scut. Herc. See Apollodorus the Grammarian, lib. 2. de Perseo.

² This, if I mistake not, is not the first time Jonson uses this line. N.

³ Jonson afterwards takes occasion to enter into the history of these Dramatis Personæ; see p. 237. N.

Hypsicratea, glory of Asia,
 Candace, Pride of Ethiopia,
 The Britain honour, Voadicea,
 The virtuous Palmyrene, Zenobia,
 The wise and warlike Goth, Amulasanta,
 The bold Valasca of Bohemia;
 These, in their lives, as fortunes, crown'd the choice
 Of womankind, and 'gainst all opposite voice
 Made good to time, had, after death, the claim
 To live eternized in the House of Fame.
 Where hourly hearing (as, what *there* is old?)
 The glories of Bel-Anna so well told,
 Queen of the Ocean; how that she alone
 Possess all virtues, for which one by one
 They were so fam'd; and wanting then a head
 To form that sweet and gracious pyramid
 Wherein they sit, it being the sov'reign place
 Of all that Palace, and reserved to grace
 The worthiest Queen; these, without envy, on her,
 In life, desired that honour to confer,
 Which with the death, no other should enjoy.
 She, this embracing with a virtuous joy,
 Far from self-love, as humbling all her worth,
 To him that gave it, hath again brought forth
 Their names to memory; and means, this night,
 To make them once more visible to light;
 And to that light, from whence her truth of spirit
 Confesseth all the lustre of her merit.
 To you, most Royal and most happy King,
 Of whom Fame's house in every part doth ring
 For every virtue, but can give no increase:
 Not, though her loudest trumpet blaze your peace.
 To you, that cherish every great example
 Contracted in yourself; and being so ample
 A field of honour, cannot but embrace
 A spectacle, so full of love, and grace
 Unto your Court: where every Princely Dame
 Contends to be as bounteous of her fame
 To others, as her life was good to her.
 For, by their lives, they only did confer
 Good on themselves; but, by their fame, to yours,
 And every age, the benefit endures.

Here the Throne wherein they sat, being machina versatilis, suddenly changed;

and in the place of it appeared Fama Bona, as she is described (in *Iconolog. di Cesare Ripa*) attired in white, with white wings, having a collar of gold about her neck, and a heart hanging at it; which Orus Apollo, (in his *Hierogl.*) interprets the note of a Good Fame. In her right-hand she bore a trumpet, in her left an olive-branch; and for her state, it was, as *Virgil*¹ describes her, at the full, her feet on the ground, and her head in the clouds. She, after the music had done, which waited on the turning of the machine, called from thence to HEROIC VIRTUE, and spake this following Speech:

FAME. Virtue, my father and my honour, thou
 That mad'st me good as great; and dar'st avow
 No Fame for thine but what is perfect; aid,
 To-night, the triumphs of thy white-wing'd Maid.
 Do those renowned Queens all utmost rites
 Their states can ask. This is a night of nights!
 In mine own chariots let them, crowned, ride;
 And mine own birds and beasts, in geers applied
 To draw them forth. Unto the first car tie
 Far-sighted eagles, to note Fame's sharp eye;
 Unto the second, griffons, that design
 Swiftmess and strength, two other gifts of mine;
 Unto the last, our lions, that imply
 The top of Graces, State, and Majesty.
 And let those Hags be led as captives, bound
 Before their wheels, whilst I my trumpet sound.

*At which the loud music sounded as before, to
 give the Masquers time of descending.*

And here we cannot but take the opportunity to make some more particular description of their Scene, as also of the Persons they presented; which, though they were disposed rather by chance than election, yet it is my part to justify them all; and then the Lady that will own her presentation, may².

To follow, therefore, the rule of chronology, which I have observed in my verse, the most upward in time was Penthesilea. She was Queen of the Ama-

¹ *Æneid* 4.

² "Knowledge of this kind, was gained at a greater expense of time in those days than in ours; and the Poet might think perhaps that the Ladies would not be unwilling to learn something in this way of the personages whom they presented. To prevent any little heart-burnings on the choice of Queens, the characters, it appears, were distributed by lot; and Jonson either could not or would not appropriate them." G.

zons, and succeeded Otrera, or (as some will) Orithya; she lived and was present at the siege of Troy, on their part, against the Greeks, and (as Justin gives her testimony) “*Inter fortissimos viros, magna ejus virtutis documenta extitêre.*” She is no where named but with the preface of honour and virtue; and is always advanced in the head of the worthiest women. Diodorus Siculus¹ makes her the daughter of Mars. She was honoured in her death to have it the act of Achilles. Of which Propertius² sings this triumph to her beauty,

“*Aurea cui postquam nudavit cassida frontem,
Vicit victorem candida forma virum.*”

Next follows Camilla, Queen of the Volscians, celebrated by Virgil³, than whose verses nothing can be imagined more exquisite, or more honouring the person they describe. They are these, where he reckons up those that came on Turnus's part, against Æneas:

“*Hos super advenit Volscâ de gente Camilla,
Agmen agens equitum, et florentis ære catervas,
Bellatrix. Non illa colo calathisve Minervæ
Fæmineas assueta manus, sed prælia virgo
Dura pati, cursuque pedum prævertere ventos.
Illa vel intactæ segetis per summa volaret
Gramina; nec teneras cursu læsisset aristas:
Vel mare per medium, fluctu suspensa tumentî,
Ferret iter; celereis nec tingeret æquore plantas.*”

And afterwards tells her attire and arms, with the admiration that the spectators had of her. All which, if the Poet created out of himself, without Nature, he did but shew how much so divine a soul could exceed her.

The third lived in the age of Cyrus, the great Persian Monarch, and made him leave to live. Thomyris, Queen of the Scythians, or Massagets; a heroine of a most invincible and unbroken fortitude; who, when Cyrus had invaded her, and taking her only son, (rather by treachery than war, as she objected,) had slain him; not touched with the grief of so great a loss, in the juster comfort she took of a great revenge, pursued not only the occasion and honour of conquering so potent an enemy, with whom fell two hundred thousand soldiers; but (what was right memorable in her victory) left not a messenger surviving of his side to report the massacre. She is remembered both by Herodotus⁴ and Justin⁵, to the great renown and glory of her kind, with this elegy: “*Quod potentissimo*

¹ Hist. lib. 2.

² Lib. 3. eleg. 10.

³ Æneid, lib. 7.

⁴ In Clio.

⁵ Epit. lib. 1

Persarum Monarchæ bello congressa est, ipsumque et vitâ et castris spoliavit, ad justè ulciscendum filii ejus indignissimam mortem."

The fourth was honoured to live in time of Xerxes, and was present at his great expedition into Greece; Artemisia, the Queen of Caria; whose virtue Herodotus¹, not without some wonder, records. That a woman, a Queen, without a husband, her son a ward, and she administering the government, occasioned by no necessity, but a mere excellence of spirit, should embark herself for such a war; and there so to behave her, as Xerxes, beholding her fight, should say: "Viri quidem extiterunt mihi feminæ, feminæ autem viri²." She is no less renowned for her chastity, and love to her husband Mausolus³, whose bones (after he was dead) she preserved in ashes, and drank in wine, making herself the tomb; and yet built to his memory a monument, deserving a place among the seven wonders of the world, which could not be done by less than a wonder of women.

The fifth was the fair-haired daughter of Ptolemæus Philadelphus, by the elder Arsinoë; who, married to her brother Ptolemæus, surnamed Evergetes, was after Queen of Egypt. I find her written both Beronice and Berenice. This Lady, upon an expedition of her new-wedded Lord into Assyria, vowed to Venus, if he returned safe, and conqueror, the offering of her hair; which vow of hers (exactd by the success) she afterward performed. But her father missing it, and therewith displeased, Conon, a Mathematician, who was then in household with Ptolemy, and knew well to flatter him, persuaded the King that it was taken up to Heaven, and made a constellation; shewing him those seven stars *ad caudam Leonis*, which are since called *Coma Beronices*. Which story then presently celebrated by Callimachus in a most elegant Poem, Catullus more elegantly converted; wherein they call her the magnanimous even from a virgin; alluding (as Hyginus⁴ says) to a rescue she made of her father in his flight, and restoring the courage and honour of his army, even to a victory. Their words are,

"Cognoram à parvâ virgine magnanimam⁵."

The sixth, that famous wife of Mithridates, and Queen of Pontus, Hypsiratea, no less an example of virtue than the rest; who so loved her husband, as she was assistant to him in all labours and hazard of the war, in a masculine habit. For which cause (as Valerius Maximus⁶ observes) she departed with the chief

¹ In Polyhymn. ² Herod. in Urania. ³ Val. Max. lib. 4. cap. 6. and A. Gel. lib. 10. cap. 18.

⁴ Astronom. lib. 2. in Leo. ⁵ Catul. de Coma Beronic. ⁶ Lib. 4. cap. 6. de amor. conjug.

ornament of her beauty, "*Tonsis enim capillis, equo se et armis assuefecit, quo faciliùs laboribus et periculis ejus interesset;*" and afterward, in his flight from Pompey, accompanied his misfortune, with a mind and body equally unwearied. She is so solemnly registered by that grave Author, as a notable precedent of marriage, loyalty, and love; virtues that might raise a mean person to equality with a Queen; but a Queen to the state and honour of a deity.

The seventh, that renown of Ethiopia, Candace; from whose excellency the succeeding Queens of that nation were ambitious to be called so. A woman of a most haughty spirit against enemies, and a singular affection to her subjects. I find her celebrated by Dion¹, and Pliny², invading Egypt in the time of Augustus; who, though she were enforced to a peace by his Lieutenant Petronius, doth not the less worthily hold her place here; when every where this elogy remains of her fame: that she was "*Maximi animi mulier, tantique in suos meriti, ut omnes deinceps Æthiopium Reginæ ejus nomine fuerint appellatæ.*" She governed in Meroë.

The eighth, our own honour, Voadicea or Boadicea, by some Bunduica and Bunduca, Queen of the Iceni, a people that inhabited that part of our Island which was called East-Anglia, and comprehended Suffolk, Norfolk, Cambridge, and Huntingdon shires. Since she was born here at home, we will first honour her with a home-born testimony, from the grave and diligent Spenser³;

" ————— Bunduica Britoness,
Bunduica, that victorious Conqueress,
That lifting up her brave heroic thought
'Bove Woman's weakness, with the Romans fought;
Fought, and in field against them thrice prevail'd," &c.

To which, see her Orations in story, made by Tacitus⁴ and Dion⁵; wherein is expressed all magnitude of a spirit, breathing to the liberty and redemption of her country. The latter of whom, doth honest her beside with a particular description: "*Bunduica, Britannica fœmina, orta stirpe Regiâ, quæ non solùm eis cum magnâ dignitate præfuit, sed etiam bellum omne administravit; cujus anima virilis potius quàm muliebris erat.*" And afterwards, "*Fœmina, formâ honestissimâ, vultu severo,*" &c. All which doth weigh the more to her true praise, in coming from the mouths of Romans, and enemies. She lived in the time of Nero.

The ninth, in time, but equal in fame, and (the cause of it) virtue, was the

¹ Hist. Rom. lib. 54.

² Nat. Hist. lib. 6. cap. 29.

³ Ruins of Time.

⁴ Annal. lib. 14.

⁵ Epit. Joan. Xiphilon. in Neronem.

chaste Zenobia, Queen of the Palmyrenes; who, after the death of her husband Odenatus, had the name to be reckoned among the Thirty that usurped the Roman Empire from Galienus. She continued a long and brave war against several Chiefs; and was at length triumphed on by Aurelian; but, *ea specie, ut nihil pompabilius P. Rom. videretur*. Her chastity was such, *ut ne virum suum quidem sciret, nisi tentatis conceptionibus*. She lived in a most Royal manner, and was adored to the custom of the Persians. When she made Orations to her soldiers, she had always her casque on. A woman of a most divine spirit, and incredible beauty. In Trebellius Pollio¹ read the most notable description of a Queen and her, that can be uttered with the dignity of an historian.

The tenth, succeeding, was that learned and heroic Amalasunta, Queen of the Ostrogoths, daughter to Theodoric, that obtained the principality of Ravenna, and almost all Italy. She drove the Burgundians and Almaines out of Liguria, and appeared in her government rather an example than a second. She was the most eloquent of her age, and cunning in all languages of any nation that had commerce with the Roman Empire. It is recorded of her², that “*Sine veneratione eam videret nemo, pro miraculo fuerit ipsam audire loquentem. Tantaque illi in discernendo gravitas, ut criminis convicti, cum plecterentur, nihil sibi acerbum pati viderentur.*”

The eleventh was that brave Bohemian Queen, Valasca, who, for her courage, had the surname of Bold; that to redeem herself and her sex from the tyranny of men, which they lived in, under Primislaus, on a night, and at an hour appointed, led on the women to the slaughter of their barbarous husbands and Lords. And possessing themselves of their horses, arms, treasure, and places of strength, not only ruled the rest, but lived many years after with the liberty and fortitude of Amazons. Celebrated by Raphael Volateranus³, and in an elegant tract of an Italian⁴, in Latin, (who names himself Philalethes, Polytopiensis civis,) “*inter præstantissimas fœminas.*”

The twelfth, and worthy Sovereign of all, I make BEL-ANNA, Royal Queen of the Ocean; of whose dignity and person, the whole scope of the invention doth speak throughout: which to offer you again here, might but prove offence to that sacred modesty, which hears any testimony of others iterated with more delight than her own praise. She being placed above the need of ceremony, and safe in

¹ In Triginta Tyrannos.

² M. Anton. Cocci. Sabel. (out of Cassiod.) Ennead. 7. lib. 2.

³ In Geograph. lib. 2.

⁴ Forcia. Quæst.

her princely virtue, against the good or ill of any witness. The name of Bel-Anna I devised, to honour hers proper by, as adding to it the attribute of Fair; and is kept¹ by me in all my Poems wherein I mention her Majesty with any shadow or figure. Of which, some may come forth with a longer destiny than this age commonly gives to the best births, if but helped to light by her gracious and ripening favour².

But here I discern a possible objection, arising against me; to which I must turn: as, *How I can bring persons of so different ages, to appear properly together? or why (which is more unnatural), with Virgil's Mezentius, I join the living with the dead?* I answer to both these at once. Nothing is more proper; nothing more natural. For these all live, and together, in their fame; and so I present them. Besides, if I would fly to the all-daring power of Poetry, where could I not take sanctuary? or in whose Poem? For other objections, let the looks and noses of Judges hover thick, so they bring the brains; or if they do not, I care not. When I suffered it to go abroad, I departed with my right; and now, so secure an interpreter I am of my chance, that neither praise nor dispraise shall affect me.

There rests only that we give the description we promised of the Scene, which was the house of Fame. The structure and ornament of which (as is profest before) was entirely Master Jones's invention and design³. First, for the lower columns, he chose the statues of the most excellent Poets, as Homer, Virgil, Lucan, &c. as being the substantial supporters of Fame. For the upper, Achilles, Æneas, Cæsar, and those great Heroes, which these Poets had celebrated. All which stood as in massy gold. Between the pillars, underneath, were figured land battles, sea-fights, triumphs, loves, sacrifices, and all magnificent subjects of honour, in brass, and heightened with silver. In which he profest to follow that noble description made by Chaucer of that place. Above were sited the Masquers, over whose heads he devised two eminent figures of Honour and Virtue for the arch. The friezes, both below and above, were filled with several-coloured lights, like emeralds, rubies, sapphires, carbuncles, &c. the reflex of which, with our lights, placed in the concave, upon the Masquers' habits, was full of glory. These habits had in them the excellency of all device and

¹ At first Jonson adopted Oriana as a poetical name for the Queen; see vol. I. pp. 180, 433. N.

² "This 'birth' never came to light. It is evident, however, from other passages, that Jonson had made some progress in a work, intended to celebrate the Ladies of Great Britain. Why it was not completed, or why it never appeared, it is now too late to guess." G.

³ See p. 217.

riches; and were worthily varied, by his invention, to the nations whereof they were Queens. Nor are these alone his due; but divers other accessions to the strangeness and beauty of the spectacle; as the hell, the going about of the chariots, and binding the Witches, the turning machine, with the presentation of Fame. All which I willingly acknowledge for him¹; since it is a virtue planted in good natures, that, what respects they wish to obtain fruitfully from others, they will give ingenuously themselves.



By this time, imagine the Masquers descended; and again mounted into three triumphant chariots, ready to come forth. The first four with eagles, (whereof I gave the reason, as of the rest, in Fame's Speech) their four Torch-bearers attending on the chariots' sides, and four of the Hags bound before them. Then followed the second, drawn by griffons, with their Torch-bearers and four other Hags. Then the last, which was drawn by lions, and more eminent, wherein her Majesty was, and had six Torch-bearers more, peculiar to her, with the like number of Hags. After which, a full triumphant music, singing this Song, while they rode in state about the stage:

*Help, help, all tongues, to celebrate this wonder;
The voice of Fame should be as loud as thunder.
Her house is all of echo made,
Where never dies the sound;
And as her brow the clouds invade,
Her feet do strike the ground.
Sing then Good Fame, that's out of Virtue born;
For who doth Fame neglect, doth Virtue scorn.*

¹ "A man of greater liberality than Jonson, probably, never existed. He speaks of his Associates, not only with candour, but with a warmth of praise, and even of affection, that cannot be surpassed. To Inigo Jones, he shews peculiar kindness; he frequently goes out of his way, and enlarges upon the machinery of his Masques, with an evident view to recommend him to the notice of the Court. And his return for all this, is—to be taxed with "detraction" on all occasions, and to have his name held up by the commentators on our old dramatists, as synonymous with envy, and every hateful and malignant passion. Two-and-twenty years, indeed, after this period, Jonson and Jones fell at variance, and the former, who was then bed-ridden, wrote a series of verses against the latter, more remarkable for caustic wit than poetry. But what is there in the character of Jones to induce any candid mind to believe that the satire was entirely unprovoked on his part, or that the veteran bard was not well-founded in some part of his complaint? Inigo was at least as captious as Ben was warm, and there were faults probably on both sides. Be this as it may, it is but justice to give the Poet credit for the frankness with which he here compliments his Assistants in the Scene." G.

Here they lighted from their chariots, and danced forth their first dance; then a second, immediately following it; both right curious, and full of subtle and excellent changes, and seemed performed with no less spirits, than of those they personated. The first was to the cornets, the second to the violins. After which, they took out the men, and danced the measures; entertaining the time, almost to the space of an hour, with singular variety; when, to give them rest, from the music which attended the chariots, by that most excellent tenor voice, and exact singer, her Majesty's servant, Master Jo. Allin, this ditty was sung:

*When all the ages of the earth
Were crown'd, but in this famous birth;
And that, when they would boast their store
Of worthy Queens, they knew no more;
How happier is that age, can give
A Queen, in whom all they do live!*

After it, succeeded their third dance; than which, a more numerous composition could not be seen; graphically disposed into letters, and honouring the name of the most sweet and ingenious Prince, Charles Duke of York. Wherein, beside that principal grace of perspicuity, the motions were so even and apt, and their expression so just, as, if Mathematicians had lost proportion, they might there have found it. The Author was Master Thomas Giles¹. After this, they danced galliards and corrantos; and then their last dance, no less elegant in the place than the rest; with which they took their chariots again, and triumphing about the stage, had their return to the House of Fame celebrated with this last Song; whose notes (as the former) were the work and honour of my excellent friend, Alfonso Ferrabosco².

*Who, Virtue, can thy power forget,
That sees these live, and triumph yet?
Th' Assyrian pomp, and Persian pride,
Greeks' glory, and the Romans' died;
And who yet imitate
Their noises, tarry the same fate.
Force Greatness all the glorious ways
You can, it soon decays;
But so Good Fame shall never;
Her triumphs, as their causes, are for ever.*

¹ See n. 185.

² Ibid.

To conclude which, I know no worthier way of epilogue, than the celebration of who were the Celebraters¹.

THE QUEEN'S MAJESTY.	THE COUNTESS OF MONTGOMERY.
THE COUNTESS OF ARUNDEL.	THE VISCOUNTESS OF CRANBORNE ⁴ .
THE COUNTESS OF DERBY.	THE LADY ELIZABETH GUILDFORD.
THE COUNTESS OF HUNTINGDON ² .	THE LADY ANNE WINTER.
THE COUNTESS OF BEDFORD.	THE LADY WINDSOR.
THE COUNTESS OF ESSEX ³ .	THE LADY ANNE CLIFFORD.

On the 4th of February, in a Letter to Sir Richard Spencer and Sir Ralph Winwood, the Earl of Salisbury says, "Don Ferdinando Gyrone⁵, after his long lingering here, took his leave, on Tuesday last, of his Majesty at Theobalds, and the next day went from London towards Brussells." — An account of the Conference follows⁶.

On the 7th, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Robert Douglas⁷, of Scotland.

On the 14th, Mr. Chamberlaine writes as follows to Mr. Dudley Carleton:

"The Pope hath written to the French King, complaining that our King mis-useth him continually in table-talk, and calls him Antichrist at every word! Which does so incense his Holiness, that some Papists fear it may drive him to thunder and lighten with excommunication⁸."

¹ All but three of these "Celebraters" had been engaged in the Queen's last Masque (that of Beauty); and are noticed in p. 174. Seven of them (including her Majesty) appeared in Tethys' Festival in June 1610. See hereafter, under that date. N. ² Of the Countess of Huntingdon see p. 145.

³ "This beautiful young creature (for she was not yet seventeen) was the unfortunate and guilty wife of Robert Devereux, Earl of Essex, whose nuptial were celebrated with such splendor at Whitehall, and for whom Jonson composed the *Masque of Hymen*. (See p. 1). She was, at this time, the pride and boast of the English Court. Wilson blames her father for keeping her there during the absence of her husband, and hints that she was too much admired by Prince Henry. At this period, however, nothing had happened to tarnish her name." G.

⁴ Catherine, youngest daughter of Thomas Earl of Suffolk, and sister to Lady Essex. She had been recently married to William Viscount Cranborne, eldest son of the Earl of Salisbury. N.

⁵ See p. 213.

⁶ Winwood's Memorials, vol. II. p. 476.

⁷ Sir Robert Douglas was, in 1610, Master of the Horse to Prince Henry. In May 1609 he was sent to Italy with a letter from Prince Henry to his dear friend Sir John Harington (of whom see vol. I. pp. 478, 528).—Birch's Life of Prince Henry, p. 170. In 1609 he had a Free-gift of £.200; in 1612 of £.2000; in 1615 of £.1000.

⁸ Birch's MSS. 4173.

On the 25th of February, Robert second Earl of Dorset died¹ at Dorset House, near Fleet-street; and two days after, his son Richard third Earl of Dorset married the celebrated Lady Anne Clifford, daughter of the Earl of Cumberland².

On the 3d of March, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir John Danvers, of Gloucestershire; and, on that day, Mr. Chamberlaine, from Whitehall, again writes to his friend Mr. Carleton: "The King comes hither on Saturday, and means not to stir for all this Lent, unless it be two or three days in a week to Hampton Court or Otelands³."

On the 7th, the following Knights were made at Whitehall:

Sir William Cavendish ⁴ , of Derbyshire.	Sir Leventhorp Franck, of Essex.
Sir William Paston, of Norfolk.	Sir Thomas Edolph, of Kent.
Sir Humphrey Baskerville ⁵ , of Herefordshire.	Sir Henry Samborne ⁷ , of Oxfordshire.
	Sir Thomas Awbery ⁸ , of Herefordsh.
Sir William Maynard ⁶ , of Essex.	Sir James Bogg, of Lincolnshire.

On the 22d, Sir George Boston, of London, was knighted there.

Free Gifts in the Sixth Year of the King's Reign, 1608-9.

Lord Hay ⁹ , out of estalled	£.	Sir Bevis Bullmere ¹⁰	-	-	£.500
debts and seizures due to his		Richard Brasse ¹¹	-	-	20
Majesty - - - -	11500	Lord Gordon ¹²	-	-	250

¹ There were three successive Earls of Dorset within twelve months. Thomas Sackville, the Lord Treasurer, and first Earl, died suddenly at the Council Table, April 17, 1608; and his funeral Sermon was preached at Westminster on the 26th of May by his Chaplain, Dr. George Abbot, and afterwards Archbishop of Canterbury. See Brydges's Peerage. ² See p. 175.

³ Birch's MSS. 4173.

⁴ Of whom, and his recent marriage, see p. 192.

⁵ Sir Humphrey Baskerville was Sheriff of Herefordshire in 1610.

⁶ Created a Baronet in 1611; of whom and his father see vol. I. p. 112.

⁷ Sir Henry Samborne was at this time Sheriff of Oxfordshire.

⁸ See another of this family, Sir Samuel, knighted in July 1620.

⁹ See p. 103.

¹⁰ See p. 191.

¹¹ Of whom see p. 123. He occurs again in the Free-gifts of 1610-11.

¹² George Lord Gordon, eldest son of George first Marquis of Huntley, had a Company of Grenadiers in the French service in 1624, carrying with him from Scotland a party of gallant young Gentlemen well appointed. He succeeded his father in 1636, and distinguished himself for his loyalty to Charles the First. Having been appointed his Majesty's Lieutenant in the North, he frequently appeared in arms, but with little success. He twice suffered imprisonment in Edinburgh Castle, and was finally beheaded March 22, 1649. "He suffered with courage, professing his loyalty

John Barkley ¹	-	-	£.60	The Earl Home ⁸	-	-	£.2000
Mr. Francis Steward ²	-	-	220	Sir Robert Melvill ⁹	-	-	2000
Robert Carliell	-	-	100	John Johnson	-	-	100
The poor Watermen of London, for their relief in the great Frost ³	-	-	200	John Norden ¹⁰	-	-	200
John Griffeth	-	-	100	Sir Oliver Cromwell ¹¹ , for relinquishing of his grant of £.200 by the year out of his Majesty's lands	-	-	6000
David and Katherine Jenkins	-	-	100	Sir Edward Grevill ¹² , out of the money raised by composition for assart lands	-	-	2000
The Earl of Perth ⁴	-	-	1000	Sir Henry Guildford ¹³	-	-	68
Lord Obigney ⁵	-	-	375	Rowland Woodward	-	-	60
Henry Gonntrode ⁶	-	-	250	The King of Denmark's Servants, in reward	-	-	148
Viscount Hadington ⁷	-	-	2000				
Daniel Burgrave	-	-	2500				
Paul Starling	-	-	2500				
James Steward	-	-	1500				

to the last, and declaring that he had the charity to forgive those who had condemned him; although, so far from being guilty of treason, they could not convince him to have ever done any thing against the Laws." See Wood's Douglas, vol. I. p. 652.—He had £.1000 as a Free-gift in 1609.

¹ John Barkley was one of the King's Falconers, and received 12*d.* *per diem*, and £.13. 13*s.* 9*d.* *per annum* for his Livery (total £.51. 18*s.* 9*d.*) He was presented with Free-gifts of £.200 in 1610; £.100 in 1611; £.333 in 1614; and £.250 in 1615. ² See p. 191. ³ Of which see p. 163.

⁴ James Drummond, fourth Lord Drummond, passed a considerable time in France, distinguished himself in the Court of King James VI.; attended the Earl of Nottingham, High Admiral of England, on his Embassy to the Court of Spain; and, on his return, was created Earl of Perth, March 4, 1605-6. Dying Dec. 18, 1611, he was buried in the Chapel of Scone, where is a monument to his memory. Wood's Douglas, vol. II. p. 362.

⁵ Of whom see p. 186. — He had £.18,000 the following year; £.2000 in 1612; and £.5000 in 1616. ⁶ This person received £.1300 in 1610. ⁷ See p. 160.

⁸ Of whom see vol. I. p. 35. He received as Free-gifts £.1000 the following year, and £.600 in 1614. ⁹ See vol. I. pp. 427, 499.

¹⁰ This was the "industrious Topographer." He was born in Wiltshire about 1548; admitted of Hart Hall, Oxford, in 1564; and proceeded A. M. in 1573. "He had," says Mr. Chalmers, "patronage, but little else, from the great Burleigh; and in his old age obtained jointly with his son the place of Surveyor to the Prince of Wales. He lived at Fulham and Hendon, and died about 1625." He certainly was one of the Surveyors of the King's lands, and had a yearly fee of £.50.—Of his works see the Biographical Dictionary.

¹¹ The worthy Uncle of Oliver, the Protector; and of whom see vol. I. pp. 98—100. ¹² See p. 191.

¹³ Of Hemstead Hall, Kent; whose father entertained Queen Elizabeth there in 1573 (see her "Progresses," vol. I. p. 334); and who was knighted in 1591. Of his Lady, who performed in the Queen's Masques, see pp. 174, 245, and at Tethys' Festival in June 1610.

On the 30th of March, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Henry Neville¹, of Berkshire; Sir Theodore Newton², of Somersetshire; and Sir John Crook³, of Oxfordshire.

"In the Strand, on the North side of Durham House, stoode an olde long stable, the outward wall wherof, to the street side, was very olde and ruinate, all which was taken downe, and a stately building sodainely erected in the place, by Robert Earle of Salisbury, Lord High Treasurer of England. The first stone of this beautiful building was laid the 10th of June last past, and was fully finished in November following. And upon Tuesday the 10th of April this yeere (1609), many of the upper shoppes were richly furnished with wares; and the next day after that, the King, Queene, and Prince, the Ladie Elizabeth, and the Duke of Yorke, with many great Lordes and chiefe Ladies, came thither, and were there entertayned with pleasant speeches, gifts, and ingenious devices; and then the King gave it a name, and called it *Britain's Burse*⁴."

On the 16th, being Easter Sunday, the King attended Divine Service in his Chapel at Whitehall, and there heard Bishop Andrews on John, xx. 19⁵.

On the 21st and 29th, Sir Thomas Gainsforth, of Surrey; Sir William Erskine, *Scotus*; and Sir Henry Bartlett, of Somersetshire; were knighted at Whitehall.

On the 8th of May, we find the King at Woolwich, presiding at the trial of Phineas Pette the Shipwright, who was accused of insufficiency; and the proceedings of the day are thus related by Pette, in the memoirs of his Life, written by himself⁶:

¹ Probably related to Sir Henry Neville, of Billingbere, noticed in vol. I. p. 197.

² Sir Theodore Newton was Sheriff of Somersetshire in 1618.

³ Probably related to the Judge of that name, of whom see vol. I. p. 158.

⁴ Howes.—See p. 200.

⁵ The Sermon is among the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the Fourth "of the Resurrection."

⁶ There are two MSS. of Mr. Pette's Life, one in the Harleian Collection, vol. 6279, of which Dr. Birch availed himself in his Life of Prince Henry (see vol. I. p. 425; and this Volume, pp. 58, 206); another, from which the Rev. Samuel Denne sent, in 1796, copious extracts to the Society of Antiquaries, which form a principal feature in the twelfth volume of the *Archæologia*. Had I been earlier reminded of this, some extracts which will be found in the Appendix to this Volume, had been inserted in their proper places.—Mr. Denne's extracts are extremely curious; and he separately arranged those regarding the author's own family (who followed the same profession for many generations), and also added some illustrative observations.

“On Monday morning, the 8th of May¹, the Lord Admiral came betimes to Woolwich, attended by Sir Robert Mansell, Sir John Trevor, and others, where his Lordship was met by all those persons who were formerly warned to be there on our part, and his Lordship took those rooms which were fitted for his Majesty. Presently after came the Lord Northampton, attended with all the spiteful crew of his informers, and he took Hugh Lyddiard's house, being Clerk of the Cheque, which was fitted for him, and was there attended with all his rabble. Before his Majesty's coming, Weymouth and his associates pried up and down the yard, belching out nothing but disgraces and deceitful speeches, and base opprobrious terms, being so confident of their wicked ends, as they before had given out that I should be hanged, and the work defaced at the least, which was likely enough to have proved so, had not God put a hook in their nostrils, and, by the justice of the King, caused themselves to fall into the pit they designed for another. The noble Admiral spent the time till his Majesty's coming very quietly and privately,

¹ It would occupy too much space to relate in Mr. Pette's own words the previous proceedings, and the causes of the “malicious practices” of which he so feelingly complains. But Dr. Birch, in his *Life of Prince Henry*, has thus abridged the story: “The Earl of Northampton, who, with the Wardenship of the Cinque Ports, held the post of Lord Privy Seal, conferred upon him in the end of April 1608, had, by the instigation of some persons, who had no great regard either for the Earl of Nottingham, Lord High Admiral, or for some of the principal officers of the Navy in special favour with his Lordship, procured a large commission from the King for the inquiring into all abuses and misdemeanors committed in their several stations, under pretence of reformation, and of saving great sums to his Majesty, expended yearly in the maintenance of his ships. This inquiry was carried on by Sir Peter Bucke, Clerk of the Ships, Thomas Bucke his brother, under clerk to him, Mr. Matthew Baker, and Mr. William Bright, Principal Shipwrights to the King, Hugh Marriott, one of the six Masters, Hugh Lediard, Clerk of the Cheque at Woolwich, Thomas Norris, and one Clifton, a baker, formerly purser of ships in the Navy, with divers others. The persons principally questioned and aimed at were, Sir Robert Mansell, then Treasurer of the Navy, Sir John Trevor, Surveyor, Sir Henry Palmer, Comptroller, Captain Thomas Button, John Legat, Clerk of the Cheque at Chatham, Mr. Phineas Pette, and Sir Thomas Bluther, then Victualler of the Navy. This inquiry, which began in 1608, was prosecuted with such violence and malice, as not only occasioned a great trouble and expence to the persons accused, but likewise brought almost ruin on the navy, and a far greater yearly charge upon his Majesty than had been ever known before. The Lord Admiral, the Earl of Worcester, Master of the Horse, and the Earl of Suffolk, Lord Chamberlain, being appointed by the King to hear the cause of complaint against Mr. Pette, met at Woolwich on the 28th of April 1609; and their report proved very favourable to him. But his Majesty resolving to hear the cause himself, went to Woolwich on Monday May the 8th, attended by the Prince.” Birch's *Prince Henry*, p. 150.

consulting advisedly with those appointed for the business, never so much as taking notice of the base usage of them on the other side.

"All things being in readiness, about eight o'clock his Majesty came in his coach, attended with Prince Henry, and the principal Lords of his Majesty's Counsel. The Lord Northampton met him before he came to the ordinary gate of the yard, and used all the means he could to have led his Majesty through Lyddiard's garden by a back way into his house; but his Majesty told his Lordship, that the Lord Admiral, whom he espied waiting with his train at the ordinary gate of the yard, would justly take exceptions at his so doing, for that it belonged properly there to his Lordship to receive and entertain him; so alighting, the Lord Admiral, after his duty performed, guided his Majesty in the room provided purposely for the business¹, whom I ushered as belonging to my place. After his Majesty had a little reposed, he desired the Lord Admiral to bring him to the sight of the work then in hand; which being done, directing his Majesty to a brow or stage made at the stern of the ship, where he might take a perfect view of the whole ground-work of the frame, being then about half set up, and planked as high as the wrong heads, no foot wailing as yet begun.

"After his Majesty had satisfied himself sufficiently, he returned back to the place again, and there seated himself in the chair under the state, at a little table standing right before him; the Prince and Lords taking their stands on his Majesty's right hand, with the Lord Admiral and all those warned on our part; and the Lord Northampton on the left hand of his Majesty, with all his crew of informers, and others appointed to assist him on his part, of sea-masters and shipwrights of the Thames. These things thus ordered, his Majesty (silence being commanded by his Gentleman Usher) began a very worthy Speech; first, to signify the cause of his coming to that place, and how much it imported the Royal care of a King to take to his personal examination a business of such consequence, as so much concerned the strength and honour of the Kingdom and State, besides the expence of his treasure; then he addressed his Speech to the actors on both sides, to those who were informers, and to those that were defendants, the sub-

¹ "The time drawing near, there were sent from London, at the appointment of the Lord Admiral, hangings to furnish the room where his Majesty was to sit, and the next room to it where he was to withdraw, the one being the common dining-room of the workmen, the other my own dining-room, both which I caused to be hanged and trimmed up with such furniture as was befitting such a presence, with all conveniency the place could any way afford."

stance of his Royal Speech tending to religious exhortation, that none on both sides should either accuse for malice or other pretence, or excuse for love, favour, or other particular respects; for that his Majesty, in the seat of Justice representing God's person, would not be deluded or led by any coloured pretences from understanding the very plain truth of that business which was to be handled; and therefore wished such on both sides, whose conscience accused them either of malicious proceedings, private ends, or partial favour, to give over, and depart before they took the oaths administered to them, threatening severe punishment to those who should be found offenders herein, declaring what danger it was to be perjured before the majesty of God and the King. His Majesty's Speech so effectually delivered to the purpose of the matter in hand, to the admiration of the hearers, commandement was given to call the names of those to be sworn on both sides.

“The names were then specified, the persons were in number,—on the Lord Northampton's side, 14 seamen, eight shipwrights, and two informers. On the other side, 14 seamen, and 13 shipwrights.

“These several persons called and appearing, the form of the oath was read unto them by the Earl of Salisbury, Lord Treasurer, who personated the Clerk of the Session, and the book was presented to them by the Right Honourable Charles Howard, Earl of Nottingham, Lord High Admiral; this and these ceremonies performed, his Majesty willed the Lord Northampton to begin his accusation, and then I was called personally to answer, and kneeled right before his Majesty near the side of the table, the Lord Admiral standing on my right hand, Sir Robert Mansell and Sir John Trevor standing both right behind me. The accusation against me was exhibited by Lord Northampton in writing, containing sundry articles in point of my sufficiency, art, and experience, and in point of my care and honesty in discharge of my duty, in unserviceable materials, to the great detriment of his Majesty's service. His Majesty perceiving the articles to be many, and very intricate to answer each particular, very judiciously contracted the business to three principal heads,—the point of art; the point of sufficiency of materials; and the point of charge;—and to these heads I was commanded to make my answers, and they their accusations. I must confess, that at the first I was so daunted at the majesty of the King, the power of my enemies, and the confused urging of the objections, that I was confounded in myself, till it pleased God, by the help of the Lord Treasurer, and his discreet directions, I was recol-

lected, and recovered my spirits, and so orderly answered to each objection, his Majesty still holding us on both sides to the proportions. Much time was spent in dispute of proportions, comparing my present frame with former precedents, and dimensions for the best ships for length, breadth, depth, floor, and other circumstances; in all which they could not fasten any thing upon me, but reflected to their disgrace and apparant breach of oath, and plain demonstration and expression of combined practice. One point of proportion was mainly insisted upon, and with much violence and eagerness urged on both sides, which was the square of the ship's flat in the midships, they offering constantly upon their oaths that it was full 13 feet, we as constantly insisting that it was 11 feet 8 inches. But, because this difference was long, and could not be tried upon the small plats, his Majesty referred the trial to be made on the great platform, which was purposely framed of planks to the full scale of the ship, where all the lines of the midship bend were drawn, and the square of the flat only described, with their centres, perpendiculars, and sweeps; which trial, because it much concerned the truth or falsity of all the rest, his Majesty would not give trust to any of those who by oath were interested in the same; but made choice of the noble and worthy Knight Sir Thomas Chaloner, the Governor of the Prince his Highness' Household, and of the learned Rev. Mr. Briggs, Reader of Geometry Lecture in Gresham College in London, and Master of Arts, Student in St. John's College, Cambridge, who were to decide the controversy. This thus concluded, we came to the point of charge, to which was answered, that the charge of building this ship should not exceed other ships that had been built in her Majesty's time, I mean Queen Elizabeth of famous and happy memory, allowing proportion for proportion, the garnishing not exceeding theirs. This gave full satisfaction to the point of charge, being the second head propounded.

"It being then almost one o'clock, his Majesty called for his dinner, referring the other points to be handled in the ship after dinner. All this time I sat on my knees¹, baited by the great Lord and his bandogs, sometimes by Baker, some-

¹ "To kneel," remarks Mr. Denne, "so as to rest the muscular part of the body on the heels, is a ceremony used in the East, as expressive of the greatest humiliation, and therefore suitable for a devout worshiper in a solemn act of devotion to his Creator. The propriety of this submissive and servile homage from man to his fellow-creature may, however, be thought very questionable, especially when, from the long continuance of it, it must be productive of much fatigue and pain, as was the case in this instance. But James was in his disposition and conduct more like a despotie Eastern Potentate than the Sovereign of a free people. To dispute what a King might do in the

times by Stevens, Bright, Clay, gaping Weymouth, and sometimes confused by all; and which was worst, his Majesty's countenance still bent upon me; so that I was almost disheartened and out of breath, albeit the Prince's Highness standing near me from time to time encouraged me, as far as he might without offence to his Father, labouring to have me eased by standing up, but his Majesty would not permit it. So soon as his Majesty and the Lords had dined, the King rose, and went into the body of the frame of the ship, to make trial of the goodness of the materials; all the lower futtocks were placed, and many upper futtocks also. The adverse party had chalked with a mark almost half the lower futtocks for red-wood, cross-grained, and merely unserviceable, all which timber his Majesty caused to be dubbed by workmen ready with their tools for that purpose; and, being tried, they were all approved very sound and serviceable; and, touching the cross-grained timber, his Majesty said, very earnestly, 'the cross-grain was in the men, and not in the timber.' His Majesty spent much time in the survey of these things, still opening way to what objections the adverse party could allege, and what answer I could make for my defence. This business performed within board, his Majesty well satisfied in every particular, he openly delivered, that the ship would be too strong, if one third part of the timber were left out, and then began to give a Princely countenance and encouragement, protesting oftentimes, that all this grievous accusation proceeded of nothing but malice. Then his Majesty came without board, and curiously surveyed the planks, the tree-nails, and workmanship, all which gave such satisfaction as still confirmed his opinion of their malicious proceedings. All the while his Majesty was intent upon this search, the Gentlemen forenamed, who were appointed for the trial of the point of the true flat of the floor, were busied in taking the measures from the ship, and bringing them to the platform; and when they found by due trial all lines to be truly set off, they acquainted his Majesty that all things were in readiness. His Majesty, having then received satisfaction of all things about the

height of his power, as he told his Parliament, was as seditious as it was blasphemous to dispute with God. And, though only presiding on the trial of a ship-builder on a charge of insufficiency, he could not forbear reminding his auditors, that he was in the seat of God, as His representative and substitute. Of the kind of homage he imposed upon the presumed delinquent, a contemporary monarch judged very differently, this anecdote being related of Gustavus Adolphus: When the town of Landshut in Bavaria surrendered to him at discretion, the principal inhabitants fell down upon their knees before him on presenting to him the keys of their town. 'Rise, rise,' said he, 'it is your duty to fall upon your knees to God, and not to so frail and feeble a mortal as I am.'

frame, repaired to the platform, attended with the Prince, Lords, and many thousand spectators besides. His Majesty caused the Gentlemen to measure each dimension of breadth and depth for his own satisfaction, and then coming to the point of the square of the floor, whether it were answering their assertion of 13 feet, or agreeable to ours of 11 feet 8 inches. The square of 13 feet was tried from the true centre, and perpendicular, which being applied to the swaps of the mould did differ about 16 inches; at the wronghead the like trial made by our true centre and perpendicular fell as just in our lines as could be possible; which done, his Majesty, with a loud voice, commanded the Measurers to declare publickly the very truth; which, when they had delivered clearly on our side, all the multitude heaved up their hats, and gave a great and loud shout and acclamation. And then the Prince his Highness called with a high voice in these words: 'where be now these perjured fellows, that dare thus abuse his Majesty with these false informations? Do they not worthily deserve hanging?'

"By that time all these things were performed, and his Majesty wonderfully satisfied, and it growing something late, his Majesty returned again into the hall where he formerly sat, and being placed, and the room being filled as full as it could be packed, his Majesty began a most worthy and learned Speech for conclusion of the business, wherein he expressed, with many effectual speeches, what content he received in bestowing his pains that day to so good a purpose. Next, his Majesty addressed himself to the Lord Northampton, for his great care and diligence for searching out such errors in the office of the Admiralty, wherein his Majesty and State were abused, with encouragement for him to go forward with prosecuting his commission, notwithstanding his Lordship had been misinformed by being drawn to question this business. Next directed his Speech to Mr. Baker, Bright, Stevens, and all the rest of the informers, very bitterly reprehending their malicious practices, more to bring to effect their own private ends, than out of any conscionable care of the good of his Majesty's service, or benefit of the State, repining at the preferment I had, and the countenance of his Son the Prince, combining together to disgrace and ruin me; (though otherwise they envied one another, and were at controversy who should be preferred to my business;) with many good exhortations to will them to beware how they did abuse the majesty of God, and himself His Substitute, with malicious informations, in which he could do less than think them perjured, as in the prosecuting of this

whole business was too apparent to himself and all the world; whereby they deserved to be punished severely, if he should censure them as they worthily merited.

“ His Majesty then began to shew me a very pleasing countenance, and turned his Speech to me, willing me not to be discountenanced with those proceedings against me, since he was now sufficiently persuaded of my honesty, integrity, and ability to perform what I had undertaken; advising me not to refuse counsel of my fellow-servants, since it was his service, wherein we ought to join together for his good, and the honour of the State, with many other Princely expressions of his good opinion of me, and readiness not only to give me countenance, but assurance of future favour toward me; and, lastly, he cleared all imputations and aspersions unjustly cast upon the Lord Admiral, with recital of all his honourable service performed to the honour of the State, and his perpetual fame; commending his great wisdom and impartial carriage of himself in this day's trial, wherein he was never observed to give impediment to his Majesty's proceedings, but all furtherance possible, as was both evidently manifest to his Majesty by the great pains he had endured that day, and the noble patience he had given public testimony to all present, who were eye-witnesses; with many other gracious speeches to put new life and power into him, to go on as he had begun, to the perpetual remitting his name and honour. Then giving general thanks to those who had taken pains in that day's business, with protestations of his Princely care in all matters of such consequence, for the safety and honour of the State and Kingdom, he concluded his Speech.

“ Then the noble Admiral, as his Majesty was rising, humbly besought his Majesty to licence him to speak a few words, as well to declare his own innocency concerning these unjust accusations, as to clear me in the point of my insufficiency, and care and honesty to perform the service entrusted to me; to which his honour's request (though it grew now to be late) his Majesty most willingly condescended. The sum of his Lordship's Speech tended to admire and extol his Majesty's justice, great wisdom, and Princely care of the good of the Commonwealth, in that he had refused no pains (as this day's work and honourable assembly could justly witness) to provide, to rectify, and to set streight, to the wonder and admiration of them all, a work of so great consequence, and of such a kind of intricacy as his Majesty had never been accustomed to before, and yet so clearly to examine and try in so short a space, as if he had been only bred and

accustomed to such elements, with many other speeches tending to that purpose. His Lordship then laying his hand upon my head, standing next to him upon his right hand, did there freely offer to pawn all his lands, his honour, and his life, in my behalf, for the performance and finishing of this Royal work ; which being once perfected, if his Majesty (by advice of the best experienced artists and seamen of his Kingdom) should dislike, he would willingly, with the aid of his friends, take off from his Majesty's hands, at his and their proper charge, without any damage to his Majesty. To this Speech his Majesty replied briefly with a gracious acknowledgment of his Princely acceptance of his Lordship's true and faithful service and zeal expressed in that his worthy Speech, of which he had so great assurance as he confidently protested never King could be more happy than himself in the service of such an honourable subject, and therefore there was no need why he should any way engage either himself or his honour in that which his Majesty had by the course of upright justice before the face of God and the world so apparently cleared. This said, his Majesty arose.

“ In passing through the Hall, the Lord Admiral going before, and leading me in his hand, the Lord Thomas Howard, then Lord Chamberlain of the Household, made a motion to his Majesty to lay a charge upon me, that I should not make any quarrel against any person or persons that had that day given information against me, alleging, he knew my stomach to be such as, if I were not contained by his Majesty's commandment, I would call them to account for their doings, whereupon blood might ensue. His Majesty gave ear to what his Lordship advised, gave him thanks for his worthy counsel, and calling me to him before the whole company, I sitting upon my knees, he gave me an especial charge upon my allegiance and life, that I should not quarrel or challenge any person or persons whatsoever, that had that day given information against me, alleging, I had honour sufficient to have been cleared of all questions and objections unjustly charged against me by the equity of my cause and his justice. This Speech concluded, his Majesty hasted to take his coach, which attended at the gate. The noble Lord brought me in his hand to kiss the Royal hand, and take my leave. His Majesty gave me his hand to kiss, with such an expression of Princely favour and encouragement to proceed cheerfully in my business, as did not only infuse new life into me, but also gave great comfort and content to all standers by. Then I presented myself upon my knee to the most noble Prince, my then Master, who, taking me from the ground, did so affectionately express

his joy for my clearing, and the satisfaction that his Father had received that day, that he protested he would not only countenance and comfort me hereafter, but take great care to provide for me and my posterity whilst he lived. I received the like courtesy from all the Lords, who declared their joy for the happy success God gave me in this great deliverance. The great Lord Northampton, seeing the event of this business, and that all things sorted out clear contrary to his expectation, railing bitterly against his informing instruments, took the back way to his coach, and would not so much as take leave of his Majesty, but posted away with no little expression of great discontentment, as did also the rest of their partakers.

“The Lord Admiral attended his Majesty, being never better content in all his life, and returned to Whitehall with the company, it being almost eight o'clock before they went from Woolwich. Sir Robert Mansell, Sir John¹ Trevor, Captain Button, and the rest of my good friends followed, amongst whom was the good old Lady Mrs. Mansell, and Mrs. Button, who had taken the pains to attend the hearing in an inner room all that day. This day, as it was very tedious to me by reason I was to answer all objections, and kneel so long together, so was it a day of jubilee to me, a day never to be forgotten by me nor mine, wherein my good God shewed me wonderful favour and mercy to enable me to endure the frowns of the King, and to strengthen my weak abilities to withstand the malice of such and so many powerful adversaries by the space of one whole summer's day. For, albeit his Majesty was sufficiently persuaded of their malice and my integrity, yet, till he had cleared all doubts by the course of strict examination, and found me in his justice guiltless, he would shew me no countenance at all, but after their malice was discovered, and all those heads and points fully answered, and clearly resolved, his Majesty then both in countenance, words, and all other Princely expressions, declared his Royal disposition towards me².”

¹ *Thomas* in MS.

² “The next day, being the 9th of May, I began to work again, every man striving to express his willingness thereunto, by reason of the great encouragement his Majesty had publicly and generously given them; and within two or three days after, the Lord Admiral, Sir Robert Mansell, Sir John [Thomas in MS.] Trevor, advising together with me, we resolved to move the Lords of the Council, to have two principal men, who were shipwrights, to be by their order appointed to repair twice at least in the week to Woolwich, to survey the provisions, and to foresee that no unserviceable materials should be wrought upon the ship, which we did to clear all suspicions of any ends of our own. This accordingly was consented to of the Lords, and Mr. Mathew Baker and Henry Reynolds were

On the 23d of May, Sir Anthony Gawdy, of Norfolk; on the 28th, Sir John Denham¹, of Berkshire; and Sir Francis Anger², of Surrey, were knighted at Greenwich.

“The first, second, and third of June, the King in person heard the differences argued between the Ecclesiasticall and Temporall Judges, touching Prohibitions out of the King’s Bench and Common Pleas³.”

On the 2d, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir John Bowcer, of Yorkshire.

“On the 7th,” says Mr. Pette, in his Life, “the Red Lion, which was newly built by Mr. Baker, of Deptford, was launched, where were present the King’s Majesty and the Prince; I attending then near the place at the great store-house end, where his Majesty had his standing, he was pleased very graciously to confer with me, and to use me with extraordinary expressions of his Princely favour.”—“The 8th,” Mr. Pette continues, “being the Thursday in Whitsun-week, his Majesty began to hear the great and general cause of the Navy, in his Presence-chamber at Greenwich, wherein three whole days were spent in several examinations of the truth and circumstances of the informations delivered by the Lord Northampton and his agents, against Sir Robert Mansel, Sir John Trevor, and Captain Button, Sir Thomas Bluther, Mr. Leggatt, and many others, together with myself. First day the Lord Northampton made the very entrance into the business, a great complaint of the dishonour he reaped by the hearing at Woolwich, insisting very maliciously in incensing his Majesty against me and others, who, as he said, traduced him in every tavern and ale-bench, to his great dishonour; and therefore humbly besought his Majesty that business might be again called in question, alledging the confidence of the informers, who were ready to maintain the truth of their former information with their lives. His Majesty, taking it ill that my Lord should dare to question his just proceedings which he had taken such pains personally to hear determined, took him short

appointed to be overseers, who, for fashion’s sake, some three or four times came to Woolwich; but finding our care to be more to perform honestly, than theirs could be to prevent with their best endeavours, they gave over the trust recommended to them, and left me to myself.” — *Archæologia*, vol. XII. pp. 244—256.

¹ Of Horsenden; where, in the Civil War, Sir John garrisoned his manor-house for the King.

² Sir Francis Aungier was Master of the Rolls in Ireland, and created Baron Aungier of Longford in that Kingdom in 1621. He was seated at East Clandon in Surrey, and died October 8, 1632, aged 70.—His grandson Francis was created Earl Longford.—See Manning’s and Bray’s Surrey, III. 47.

³ Howes’ Chronicle.—See also before, p. 210.

with a sharp reprehension, and willed him no further to insist upon that whereof his Majesty and the whole world were so sufficiently satisfied ¹."

"The 23d of June, the King, Queen, and Prince, the Lady Elizabeth, and the Duke of Yorke, with divers great Lords, and manie others, came to the Tower to see a triall of the Lyon's single valour against a great fierce Beare, which had kild a child that was negligently left in the beare-house. This fierce Beare was brought into the open yard behind the Lyon's den, which was the place for fight; then was the great Lyon put forth, who gazed awhile, but never offred to assault or approch the Beare; then were two mastife dogs put in, who past by the Beare, and boldly seized upon the Lyon; then was a stone-horse put into the same yard, who suddenly scented and saw both the Beare and Lyon, and very carelesly grazed in the middle of the yard between them both; and then were sixe dogs put in, the most whereof at the first seized upon the Lyon, but they sodainly left him, and seized upon the horse, and would have werryed him to death, but that three stout beare-wards, even as the King wished, came boldly in, and rescued the horse, by taking off the dogs one by one, whilst the Lyon and Beare stared upon them, and so went forth with their dogs; then was that Lyon suffered to go into his den againe, which he endeavoured to have done long before; and then were divers other Lyons put into that place, one after another, but they shewed no more sport nor valour than the first, and every of them so soone as they espied the trap-doores open, ran hastily into their dens; then, lastly, there were put forth together the two young lustie Lyons, which were bred in that yard, and were now grown great: these at first began to march proudly towardes the Beare, which the Beare perceiving, came hastily out of a corner to meete them, and sodainly offred to fight with the Lyon, but both Lyon and Lyonesse skipt up and downe, and fearefully fled from the Beare, and so these, like the former Lyons, not willing to endure any fight, sought the next way into their denne. And the fift of July, according to the King's commandement, this Beare was bayted to death upon a stage; and unto the mother of the murdered child was given twenty pounds out of part of that money which the people gave to see the Beare kild ²."

¹ Archæologia, xol. XII. p. 257.

² Howes' Chronicle. Of other exhibitions of this nature before his Majesty see vol. I. pp. 320, 516. See also under the date of April 20, 1610.

On the 24th, 25th, and 26th of June, were knighted, at Greenwich,
 Sir John Cage¹, of Cambridgeshire. Sir Cornelius Hofman, of Antwerp.
 Sir Edward Southcot. Sir Robert Fisher², of Warwickshire.
 Sir Adrian Manmaker, of Middlebergh.

In a Letter dated "Edenburgh, the last of June," is the following account of the Scotch Parliament:

"We have now been heere at the begining and ende of a Parliament, which began the 17th and ended the 24th of this moneth, where there was a very honorable assembly; 21 Earles, 11 Barons, and 12 Bishops. The Earles and Barons the first and last daies roode in their robes, made after our manner: so they did never before in Scotland, but the last Parliament at St. Johnstons. They say they had a prophecy that at St. Johnstons should be a reed Parliament: they expected a bloody, God turned it into a scarlet, Parliament. The Bishops rode in their gownes: the Earl Marshal, a grave and learned Nobleman, represented his Majestie's person. They were attended with at least 3000 soldiers of Edenburgh and Canigate (which is the suburbs of Edenburgh) very well appointed³."

On the 2d and 3d of July, the King knighted, at Greenwich, Sir George Hollis; Sir Thomas Cotel, *Teutonicus*; and Sir Thomas Herne⁴, of Norfolk.

On the 6th, the Ringers at St. Margaret's were paid 2s. 6d. "when the King came to Town;" and on the 7th, 9th, 10th, and 18th, the following Knights were made at Whitehall:

Sir John King, of Ireland. Sir Thomas Delves⁶, of Cheshire.
 Sir Brian Cave⁵, of Leicestershire. Sir Henry Skipwith⁷, of Lincolnshire.

¹ Sir John Cage, of Clopton, was this year Sheriff of Cambridgeshire and Huntingdonshire. This family is enumerated by Mr. Lysons among the principal families in the county early in the seventeenth century; but it is now extinct.

² Sir Robert was son of Sir Clement Fisher, noticed in vol. I. p. 465. He was created a Baronet Dec. 7, 1622, and was Sheriff of Warwickshire in 1627. The Baronetcy is now extinct.

³ Lodge, vol. III. p. 373. The letter goes on to recite "the chieftest Actes" of the Parliament.

⁴ See p. 195.

⁵ Sir Brian Cave, of Ingarsby, was Sheriff of Leicestershire in 1611. He fell into pecuniary difficulties; and some particulars not very honorable to him are printed in the History of Leicestershire, vol. IV. p. 989.

⁶ Sir Thomas Delves, of Doddington, was Sheriff of Cheshire in 1617, and created a Baronet May 8, 1621. In the subsequent struggles his estates were sequestered by the Parliament, and were compounded for at £.1484. 10s. Doddington Castle was twice occupied by the same party. Of the family see fully in Ormerod's Cheshire, pp. 265, *et seq.*

⁷ Son of Sir William Skipwith, noticed in vol. I. p. 88, as is his family, *ibid.* p. 210. He was

July 22, the King went to Windsor, where, the next day, he knighted Sir John Heyward, of Shropshire; and Sir Henry Minne¹, of Rutlandshire; and, on that day, the Earl of Worcester writes as follows "from Wyndsore" to the Earl of Salisbury, giving a curious picture of the King's reception of that Minister's despatches:

"Yesternyght we arived heare, about 9 of the clocke: the King presently repayred to the Quene's chamber, wheare tarieng somewhat long, I thought to go to supper. The King, being with child to heare from youe, sent for me to his bed-chamber, demanding what news from youe: I towld him that I had some negotiation for him, but, bycawse yt was late, I would reserve yt untill better opportunitie the next day. Being impatient of the delay, he would needs knowe what it was: I towld him somewhat I had in charge from youe to shewe him that came from Sir Thomas Edmonds, but I desiered that he wold be pleased to take som fitter tyme, because yt was late, the matter requiering longer discourse then I knew he cowld afford at that tyme. To conclude, he would needs se it, and taking owt my bundell of papers, he snatched them owt of my hand, perused the tytells of all, and finding the memoriall, tooke owt that, and read it every word; beinge well pleased with your conclusion, luffed, and sayd, 'my littell foole.' I towld hime that he saw no more than my self did knowe; that no earthly cawse but his important affayres cowld withowld yowe from the comfort of enjoying his personall presence: he sware by God he thought soe. He then gave me the papers agayn, and, leading me by the arme, asked what we had done concerning the Venetian Imbassidor. I made the hole relation of that morning's worke, and that we had sent Mr. Chanceler to the Imbassidor's howse to heare the examination of the priest, with the good lyking of the Imbassidor, which, as soone as yt was dispatched, youe would send unto him; but I find him mutche distasted with him; saying, 'he was sure that the State of Venice would never endure that withowt a severe censure.' I sweetned him what I cowld with telling him how greevous he tooke the mysfortune, and how wylling he was to have the matter sifted by examination of the priest, and withall, the course youe had created a Baronet December 20, 1622, and was Sheriff for Leicestershire in 1636. He heartily espoused the cause of Charles the First; was one of the Commissioners of Array in Leicestershire; had the honour of entertaining his Sovereign at Cotes May 28, 1645; and was fined £.1114 by the Parliamentary Commissioners. See further in Nichols's Leicestershire, vol. III. p. 367.

¹ Sir Henry Minne was Paymaster of the Band of Gentlemen Pensioners, and Sheriff of Rutlandshire in 1613.

taken to have the preest forthe coming: with that, and all your proceeding, he was exceedingly pleased, and so for that tyme wee parted¹."

In the afternoon the King proceeded to Farnham, where he staid three nights at the Bishop's Palace². From that place, on the 24th, "at 4 in the afternoon," the Earle of Worcester again writes to the Earl of Salisbury; and in this Letter the King's impatience is again to be remarked:

"Your Lordship's Letter I receyved this day, being Tewsday, at two of the cloke in the afternone, wherby I found great lasines in the posts: the King was very inquisityve all the morning what myght be the cawse, examining the hours and myles, concluding it cowlde be no other but the post was sonke. As sone as I receved them, I showed him your Letter, whearwith he was well satisfied, saying thear needed no dispatche.

"I must aquaynt you with our accidents heare, least, peradventure, the distance of place may bring to your eares dyversitie of rumors which often carieth not the trueth. Yesternyght, about 10 or 11 of the cloke, the King's stable fell on fier, by neglygence of a candell set on a post, which fell into the litter, and burnt the stable. 20 or 30 horses being in the stable, there miscaryed but four, and but two of them burnt to deathe; the other two unlyke to recover, but not dead: yf our coatche horses had miscaryed, which weare in the same place, wee had made a short Prograss. I wayghted on the King, as my duty was; hee lost a pad-horse, I lost another; hee one hunting-horse, I lost another; all our sadells, both his and myne, and the Queene's coatche harness. While this tragedee was acting, yt was a world to heare the reports heare: some sayd yt was a new powder treason; an Inglyzman said a Scotyshe man was seen thear with a lynke, and he fired the stable; some other sayd it was a devise to sett the stable on fier, to drawe all the Gard and Cowrt thether, that they myght worke some practice uppon the King; but, God be thanked, neyther King, Queen, or Prince, slept the worse, or ever waked untill the morning in due tyme.

"One word more towching your self, and so I wyll end. Youe take exceptions to be cawled foole³, and as it wylbe meynteyned, not onely so, but a parrot-monger, a monkee-monger, and twentee other names, which (fearing the isshew of future inconvenience or chaleng) I wyll forbear to speake of ayny more; ever resting your Lordship's most affectionate freend, to be comanded, E. WORCESTER.

¹ Lodge, vol. III. p. 376.

² Of a former Visit, in August 1606, see p. 95. The King was again there August 31, 1615; and August 11, 1622.

³ He was called so by the King; see the preceding Letter.

"I pray your Lordship let this Letter be conveyghed to my Lord Chamberlayn, doughting false rumours may run far¹."

In a third Letter, dated "Farnhame, 26 of July," the Earl of Worcester says to his Noble Friend: "We are now setting sayle for Basing (the King another way), where I will expect your coming²."

When at Salisbury³ the King knighted Sir Thomas Tracy; and when at Basing Sir Anthony Mayney, of Kent.

Though the King frequently honoured Southampton with his presence⁴, and probably visited it in the present Progress, no trace of his having been there is to be found in the Records of that Town, which at my request, through the kind intervention of Mr. John Bullar, have been carefully examined for that purpose by an intelligent Member of the Corporation. I have been favoured, however, from those Records with the following particulars of the King's Visit to Beaulieu⁵ (Bewley) this year, where he appears to have spent some time:

"Friday the 4th of August 1609, anno 7 et 43 Regis JACOBI.

"Sir John Drummond⁶, Knight, Gent. Usher to the Kinge, now lyeinge at Bewley, sent this daye Warrant for men to attend his Majesty's person at Bewley; the coppie whereof followeth *verbatim*:

"'Theise are in his Majestie's name straightlie to charge and commande you, uppon the receipt hereof you warne 24 able and sufficient men, well furnished with bills, holberds, and other fitt and convenient weapons, to garde his Majesty's person; and to be here at his Majesty's Court at Bewley upon the 5th daye of this present moneth of August, being Satterdaye at 8 of the clocke in the eveninge, and so forward uppon Sundaye and Mundaye at the same hower at eveninge the like number of 24; and hereof faile you not, as you will answer the contrarie at your perills. Given at the Court at Bewlie, this 3rd of August 1609.

"To the Maior, Aldermen, and Constables, and all other his Majesty's Officers within the Towne of Southampton.'

¹ Lodge, vol. III. p. 378.—From this Letter it also appears that the Earl of Salisbury was to meet his Royal Master at the place whence he tooke his title.

² Lodge vol. III. p. 381.

³ This was not the first or the last time the King was at Salisbury; see vol. I. p. 253; this Volume, p. 244; and under the dates of August 5, 1615, August 10, 1618, August 8, 1623. Though no records of these Royal Visits are to be found, yet memorials of them exist in a fine Portrait of the King in the Council-house; and on the South Gate of the Cathedral Close, one side of which presents a small Statue of his Majesty, and the other the Royal arms.—The Gate itself is of a much earlier date.

⁴ Particularly in 1603. See the Recorder's Speech in vol. I. p. 277.

⁵ Of the King's several Visits to this place see p. 95.

⁶ Of whom see vol. I. p. 208.

“Memorandum, that, uppon the receipt of this Warrant, beinge of so straunge a nature as to require soe manie men out of this Town and Countie to the Shiere, and not uppon anie espetiall or extraordinarie occasion for guardinge of his Majesty's person, but onelye the ordinarie office of his Majesty's Court Usher, aomanlye used in the Progresses of his Highness to be sufficient garde in the night season, and people enoughe knowne to be in the Shiere at large; yt was ordered by the House, that John Friar should ride to the Court with a Letter to Sir Thomas Lake¹ with this Warrant, desieringe his opinion therein. And at my cominge to his Worshipp, yt pleased both the Earle of Southampton², Sir Thomas Lake, and the said Sir John, to discharge the Towne of th' operation of the Warrant; and by his Lordshipp's order men were provided out of the Shiere.

“JOHN FRIAR³.

“Fridaye the 21st daye of August 1609. — This daye, by consent of the House⁴, the sum of 22s. is ordered to be given to John Spencer by Mr. Maior out of the Towne-purse, towards his charge he hath sustayned in carrying packettes of letters to and from the Court at Bewley on horsebacke, for which purpose he kept post horses all the time of his Majesty's being there.”

September 12, the King wrote the following Letter to the Earl of Salisbury⁵:

“MY LITTIL BEAGLE⁶; I have beene this night surprysed by the Venetian Ambassadoure, who, for all my hunting, hathe not spaired to hunt me out heir! To be shorte, his cheife errande was to tell me of a greate fraye in Venice betwixt my Ambassadoure thaire and that Staite, anent a Prohibicion that the Inquisition of Venice hathe sett foorth against the publishing of my booke thaire. He hath bestowid an houris vehement oration upon me for this purpose. My answer was, that I coulde never dreame, that ather [either] the State of Venice woulde ever giue me any juste cause of offence, or yett that ever my Ambassadoure thaire wolde do thaim any evill office; but, as to give him any particulaire ansoure, I told him, I must first heare from my own Ambassadoure, for he knew well enewgh that everie Prince or State muste have a greate truste in thaire

¹ Sir Thomas Lake, “of Derbyshire, Clark of the Signet,” was knighted May 20, 1603; see vol. I. p. 156. He was afterwards one of the Principal Secretaries of State, with a salary of £.100, and Secretary for the Latin tongue with £.80 *per annum*.

² Of the Earl of Southampton see vol. I. pp. 98, 194, 197, 204.

³ The Town Clerk's signature.

⁴ The term then used for the “Corporation.”

⁵ Sidney Papers, vol. III. p. 425; from the State Paper Office; it is (without date, but) indorsed in the Earl's hand-writing “His Majestye to me, 12 7ber 1609.”

⁶ See before p. 203.

owin Ministers. I only wryte this unto you nou, that in case this Pantalone come unto you, ye maye give him the lyke deferring ansoure; albeit, if I shoulde tell you my conscience, if all this mannis tale be trewe, my Ambassadoure hathe more fervent zeal than temperate wisdome. I now hoape to heare from you the assurance that your sonne is well; and so fair well.

September 20, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir William Lovelace¹, of Kent.

On the 3d of October, were knighted, at Hampton Court,

Sir Henry Gostery.

Sir John Kederminster.

Sir John Lidcott, of Oxfordshire.

Sir John Bleurhasset, of Norfolk.

On the 30th, the Ringers at St. Margaret's were paid 2s. 6d. "when the King, Queen, and Prince, came to Whitehall;" and on the 5th of November, Bishop Andrews preached there before the King, on Luke ix, 54—6².

On the 11th, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Anthony Terrill; soon after, at Royston, Sir James Hamilton, of Scotland; and on the 27th, at Theobalds, Sir Henry Bowyer³.

In December Prince Henry wrote the following remarkable Letter to the King:

"According to your Majesty's commandment, I made your excuse unto the Queen for not sending her a token by me; and alledged your Majesty had a quarrel unto her, for writing an answer unto your second letter written from Royston, when your foote was sore, nor making mention of the receiving of it in her next letter some ten days after; whereas in your Majesty's former journey to Royston, when you took first the pain in your feet, she sent one of purpose to visit you. Her answer was, that either she had written or dreamed it; and that upon apprehension had told first my Lord Hay, and next Sir Thomas Somerset, that she had written before. I durst not reply, that your Majesty was afraid, lest she should return to her old biass; for fear that such a word might have set her in the way,

¹ Sir William Lovelace was of Hever, Kent, the last of that name seated there; the estates descending to an only daughter. The ancient seat now stands as a farm-house. See Hasted, vol. I. p. 289.

² The Sermon is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the third "of the Gunpowder Conspiracy."

³ Sir Henry Bowyer was of Denham Court, Buckinghamshire; the son of Sir William, knighted May 11, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 117), who was one of the Tellers of the Exchequer with a salary of £31. 13s. 4d., and died in 1616. Sir Henry was, in 1610, Gentleman Extraordinary of the Privy-chamber to Prince Henry, and died in 1613, aged 23.—The family was honoured with a Baronetcy in 1660; and is still resident at Denham Court.

and made me a peace-breaker, which I would eschew, though otherwise most happy, when I shall be favoured with your Majesty's commandments, as he, who kissing your Majesty's hands, is your Majesty's most dutiful Son and obedient servant,

HENRY."

Monday, December 25, being Christmas-day, the King attended Divine Service at Whitehall, and there heard the Bishop of Ely, Dr. Andrews, on Galat. iii. 4, 5¹.

Prince Henry, says Sir Charles Cornwallis, being now "in the sixteenth year of his age, being to come to the time of his investment in the principallitie of Wales and Cornwall, did advance his owne title and right so farre as with modestie he might; which presently was gently and lovingly entertained and granted of his Majestie, with the consent of the Right Honourable the High Court of Parliament², the fourth of June following, being appointed for that solemne action; the Christmas before which his Highnesse, not onely for his owne recreation, but also that the world might know what a brave Prince they were likely to enjoy, under the name of *Meliades*³, Lord of the Isles (an ancient title due to the first-borne of Scotland), did, in his name, by some appointed for the same purpose, strangely attired, accompanied with drummes and trumpets, in the Presence, before the King and Queene, and in the presence of the whole

¹ This Sermon was much admired by the King; see Mr. Chamberlaine's letter in p. 284.—This probably was the reason that it was printed in 1610, together with that the Bishop preached on the same occasion in that year, under the following title: "Two Sermons preached before the King's Majestie at Whitehall; of the Birth of Christ; the one on Christmas-day, anno 1609, the other on Christmas-day last, anno 1610. By the Bishop of Elie, his Majestie's Almoner. Imprinted at London by Robert Barker, Printer to the King's most excellent Maiestie, anno 1610." A copy is in the British Museum. The present Discourse is in the "XCVI Sermons," the fourth "of the Nativitie."

² "This yeere," says Howes, "the Kinge had ayde of his subjects, through the Kingdome of Englande, for knighting his sonne Prince Henry, according to the law of this land, in the levying whereof the subjects were very favourably dealt withall, for whereas by the auncient law of this land, the subjects ought to have paide twelve pence in the pounce, of the yeerely value of their landes, his Majesty most graciously ordayned severall Commissioners, in the severall shires, who, according to the purpose of their commissions, did so moderately demeane themselves, as no man was compelled to pay any more then he would willingly give, being a very auncient duty due to the Kinge, and was now in a manner quite forgotten."

³ There is in the Advocates' Library at Edinburgh an ancient metrical romance, in the Scottish dialect, called the History of Clariades and Meliades. This romantic name became the poetical epithet of Prince Henry. — Drummond, of Hawthornden, in his "Tears on the death of Mœliades," printed among his Poems, observes that, "the Prince was wont to use that name in the challenges of his martial sports and masquerades, which in anagram maketh a word most worthy of such a Knight as he was, *Miles à Deo*." Ben Jonson calls him Meliadus; see p. 274.

Court, deliver a Challenge to all Knights of Great Britaine, in two Speeches; the relation whereof were out of purpose, but the summe was, that Meliades, their noble Master, burning with an earnest desire to trie the valour of his young yeares in foraigne countryes, and to know where vertue triumphed most, had sent them abroad to espy the same, who, after their long travailes in all countreyes, and returne; shewing, how no where in any continent, save in the fortunate Isle of Great Britaine, they had found his wishes; which ministring matter of exceeding joy to their young Meliades, who (as they said) could lineally derive his pedigree from the famous Knights of this Isle, was the cause that he had now sent to present the first fruits of his chivalrie at his Majestie's feete. Then, after returning with a short speech to her Majestie, next to the Earles, Lords, and Knights, excusing their Lord in this their so sudden and short warning; and lastly, to the Ladies; they, after humble delivery of their chartle concerning time, place, conditions, number of weapons and assailants, tooke their leave, departing solemnly as they entred.—Now began every where preparations to be made for this great fight, and happy did he thinke himselfe, who should be admitted for a defendant, much more assailant; at last to encounter his Highnesse, with six assailants, fifty-eight defendants, consisting of Earles, Barons, Knights, and Esquires, were appointed and chosen, eight defendants to one assailant, every assailant being to fight by turnes eight severall times fighting, two every time with push and pike of sword, twelve strokes at a time; after which the barre for separation was to be let downe untill a fresh onset¹.”

The following is a specimen² of the Summons sent to one of the Defendants:

“To our verie loving good ffreind S^r Gilbert Houghton³, Knight, geave theis wth speed:

“After our hartie commendaçons vnto you. The Prince his Highnes hath comanded vs to signifie to you that whereas he doth intend to make a challenge in his owne person at the Barriers, wth sixe other Assistants, to bee performed some tyme this Christmas; and that he hath made choice of you for one of the Defendants (whereof wee have comandement to give you knowledge) that ther-uppon you may so repaire hither to prepare yo^r selfe, as you may bee fitt to attend him. Herevnto expecting yo^r speedie answer wee rest, from Whitehall this 25th of December 1609, Yo^r very loving Freindes,

“NOTINGHAM. T. SUFFOLKE. E. WORCESTER.”

¹ Life of Prince Henry.

² Transcribed from the Original, by favour of Sir Henry Houghton, Bart. who possessed several official documents, signed by King James, on matters relative to the public business of the County Palatine of Lancaster.

³ Of whom see vol. I. p. 454.

The following Letter of Prince Henry, written this year, is so illustrative of his disposition¹, that it may (its exact date being unknown) be here appositely introduced. It is addressed to his dear Friend, Sir John Harington:

“My Good Fellow; I have here sent you certaine matters of ancienne sorte², which I gained by searche in a musty vellome booke in my Father’s closet, and as it hath great mention of your ancestry, I hope it will not meet your displeasure. It gave me some paines to reade, and some to write also; but I have a pleasure in over-reaching difficult matters. When I see you (and let that be shortlie) you will find me your better at tennis and pike³.

Good Fellow, I reeste your Friend, HENRY.

“Your Latin Epistle I much esteem, and will at leisure give answer to⁴.”

About the same time the Prince received the following short Letter from his Royal Brother Charles the Duke of York:

“Nihil possit mihi esse gratius, Frater charissime, tuo ad nos reditu; te enim frui, tecum equitare, tecum venari, summæ erit mihi voluptati. Ego jam lego Erasmi Colloquia, ex quibus et Latinæ linguæ puritatem et morum elegantiam discere posse me confido. Vale.

“Tuæ Celsitudinis frater amantissimus, CAROLUS, *Eb. et. Alb. Dux*⁵.

The East India Company, to which Queen Elizabeth had, in 1591, granted letters patent for fifteen years, and which King James had, in May 1609, incorporated by perpetual charter, having built at Deptford two ships, one of 1200 tons, and the other a pinnace of 250, on “the thirtieth of December, the King, with divers of the chiefe Nobilitie, went to Deptford to see the great shippe launched, and when they had seene every roome in the shippe, they were Royally banqueted in the chiefe cabin, and their followers were banqueted at a long table in the halfe decke, plentiously furnished with delicacies served in fine china dishes, all which were freely permitted to bee carried away by all persons. The King shewed many favours unto the marchants of that Company, and gave unto Sir Thomas Smith, Governour of that Society, a very fayre chayne of goulde⁶, with a

¹ On this subject see hereafter, under the date of March 14, 1611-12.

² “An Account of the Barons of Harington, alias Haverington;” omitted in the *Nugæ Antiquæ*, from having been printed in Dugdale’s *Baronage*, vol. II.

³ The Prince is depicted at the latter exercise before Drayton’s “*Polyolbion*.”

⁴ Five Latin Letters from Sir John Harington to his Princely correspondent may be seen in Birch’s *Life of Prince Henry*, pp. 420—5. He also frequently corresponded with the Prince in French.

⁵ Directed “*Fratri charissimo*,” and endorsed “1609.” Ellis, vol. III. p. 95.

⁶ Worth “better then £.200.” Winwood’s *Memorials*, vol. III. p. 118.

jewell wherein was the Kinge's picture, and commended his sundry good endevoures for the Company and Commonwealth; the cheife Elders of the Company kissed the Kinge's hand. The Kinge called the greateshippe the Trade's Encrease, and the pinnace the Pepper Corne¹."

In Phineas Pette's own account of this Royal Visit, he says: "I did there attend, and receive gracious public usage from his Majesty, the Prince, and the Lords. The tide was so bad that the great ship could not be launched out of the dock; and the smaller, which was built upon the wharf, was so ill struck upon the launching-ways, that she could by no means be put off, which did somewhat discontent his Majesty²!"

December 30, Mr. Chamberlaine writes as follows to Mr. Carleton:

"To-morrow, or next day, the Prince's Challenge is to be proclaimed at Court³; and then he is to keep a table for all comers till the Play is over.

"I can learn no more of the Lady Arabella, but that she is committed to the Lord Knevet, and was yesterday again before the Lords. Her Gentleman Usher and chief Woman are close prisoners since her first restraint⁴."

"The great night of Prince Henry's Barriers now approaching, his Highnesse in his own lodging, in the Christmas, did feast the Earles, Barons, and Knights, Assailants and Defendants, untill the great Twelfth appointed Night, on which this great Fight was to be performed⁵."

On the sixth of January, Sir William St. Clere was knighted at Whitehall; and in the evening the Barriers took place "at the Palace of Whitehall in the presence of the Kinge and Queene, and the Ambassadors of Spayne and Venice, and of al the Peeres and great Ladies of the land, with a multitude of others⁶. In the great Banqueting-house all these were assembled, at the upper end whereof was the King's chaire of State, and on the right hand thereof was a sumptuous

¹ A Proclamation had been issued on the 4th instant, absolutely prohibiting the importation of pepper, "except by the Society of Merchants of the East Indies." In this Proclamation it was ordained that no retailers should sell pepper for above two shillings and sixpence a pound at most.—Howes; in whose Chronicle see many curious particulars of the first proceedings of the Company.

² *Archæologia*, vol. XII. p. 258.

³ Already printed, for the sake of connexion, in p. 267, though a little before its chronological place.

⁴ Birch's MSS. 4173.

⁵ Cornwallis's *Life of Prince Henry*.

⁶ Of these the Duke of Lennox and Sir Thomas Somerset were Combatants at the Barriers in 1606, see p. 24.—They all, except the Earl of Southampton, were on the King's Day this year, and on the Prince's Creation; see hereafter.

pavilion for the Prince and his associats, from whence, with great bravery and ingenious devices, they descended into the middell of the roome, and there the Prince performed his first feats of armes, that is to say, at Barriers, against all commers, being assisted onlie with six others, *viz.* the Duke of Lenox, the Earle of Arundell¹, the Earle of Southampton², the Lord Hay³, Sir Thomas Somerset, and Sir Richard Preston, who was shortly after created Lord Dingwell⁴.

Against these gallant challengers came sixe-and-fiftie brave defendants, consisting of Earles, Barons, Knights, and Esquiers, who in the lower end of the roome had erected a very delicat and pleasant place, where in privat manner they and their traine remained, which was so very great that no man imagined that the place could have conceald halfe so many, from whence in comly order they issued, and ascended into the middell of the roome, where then sate the King and the Queene, and Ambassadors, to behould the Barriers, with the several showes and devices of each Combatant. Every Challenger fought with eight severall defendants two several combats at two several weapons, *viz.* at push of pike, and with single sword, the Prince performed this challenge with wonderous skill and courage, to the great joy and admiration of the beholders, the Prince not being full sixteene yeeres of age untill the 19th of February⁵. These feates of armes, with their triumphant shewes, began before ten a'clocke at night, and continewed there untill the next morning, being Sunday⁶."

¹ See pp. 5, 186. ² See vol. I. p. 98. ³ See pp. 5, 103, 186. ⁴ See p. 108, and vol. I. p. 471

⁵ "His Highnesse," says Sir Charles Cornwallis, "did admirably fight his part, giving and receiving that night 32 pushes of pikes, and about 360 streakes of swords, which is scarce credible in so young yeares, enough to assure the world, that Great Britaine's brave Henry aspired to immortality."

"The tilting armour," says Dr. Meyrick, "which Prince Henry and his Brother used, had jambs with ankle-plates; like those in Edward the Sixth's time, and grand-guards; in other respects it resembled the usual armour at this period, which terminated at the knees. The grand-guard was fixed on by a staple and pin in the lower part of the centre of the breast-plate. Under the auspices of this Prince the dormant spirit by which the romantic exercises of chivalry were encouraged, revived with a splendour emulous of former times; but his premature death seems to have sunk them into oblivion, never again to be awakened!" This description of the Prince's armour is from "his suit in the Round Tower of Windsor Castle, and some of those in the Tower of London, (those worn by the figures of Edward V. and Edward VI.) undoubtedly made for him." His horse's chanfron is at Windsor, and a splendid gauntlet in the armoury of Llewellyn Meyrick, Esq. Dr. Meyrick gives two inventories of his arms, in 1608 and 1612. See the Enquiry into Ancient Armour, vol. III. p. 75.

⁶ Howes' Chronicle.

THE SPEECHES AT PRINCE HENRY'S BARRIERS¹.

Written by BEN JONSON.

*The LADY OF THE LAKE discovered*².

LADY.

A silence, calm as are my waters, meet
Your rais'd attentions, whilst my silver feet
Touch on the richer shore; and to this seat
Vow my new duties, and mine old repeat.

Lest any yet should doubt, or might mistake
What Nymph I am, behold the ample Lake
Of which I'm styled; and near it Merlin's tomb,
Grave of his cunning, as of mine the womb.

By this it will not ask me to proclaim
More of myself, whose actions, and whose name
Were so full feign'd in British Arthur's Court;
No more than it will fit me to report
What hath before been trusted to our 'squire
Of me, my Knight, his fate, and my desire
To meet, if not prevent, his destiny,
And style him to the Court of Britany;
Now, when the Island hath regained her fame
Intire and perfect, in the ancient name,
And that a Monarch equal good and great,
Wise, temperate, just, and stout, claims Arthur's seat³.
Did I say equal? O too prodigal wrong
Of my o'er-thirsty and unequal tongue!
How brighter far than when our Arthur liv'd,
Are all the glories of this place reviv'd!

¹ Mr. Gifford erroneously supposes these Speeches to have been at Prince Henry's Creation; and the Tilting at Christmas to have been merely "a grand Rehearsal." This is quite his own notion, without any apparent foundation;—except an ignorance of the existence of Daniel's Tethys' Festival, and a supposition, that the "Barriers" were connected with, or performed at the same time as, the "Masque of Oberon;" which, however, was not performed till January 1, 1610-11. To reconcile the account of the Tethys' Festival in Winwood's Memorials (see hereafter) with the "Masque of Oberon," as printed in Jonson's Works, he supposes "that some introductory matter (not absolutely connected with it) has been omitted." In short, in his over-abundant zeal for Jonson, he forgets there were any contemporary Masque-writers.—But I have hitherto abstained from imitating Mr. Gifford's severity in displaying the errors of others; and, having elucidated this grand matter, shall continue to correct his in silence. N.

² Alluding to the old romance of *Sir Lancelot and the Lady of the Lake*. WHALLEY.

³ See the additions to the Masque of *Pleasure reconciled to Virtue*, "for the honour of Wales."

What riches do I see? what beauties here?
 What awe, what love, what reverence, joy, and fear?
 What ornaments of Counsel as of Court?
 All that is high, or great, or can comport
 Unto the style of majesty, that knows
 No rival, but itself, this place here shows.
 Only the House of Chivalry (howe'er
 The inner parts and store be full, yet here
 In that which gentry should sustain) decay'd,
 Or rather ruin'd seems; her buildings laid
 Flat with the Earth, that were the pride of time,
 And did the barbarous Memphian heaps out-climb.
 Those obelisks and columns broke, and down,
 That struck the stars, and rais'd the British Crown
 To be a constellation¹; shields and swords,
 Cobweb'd and rusty; not a helm affords
 A spark of lustre, which were wont to give
 Light to the World, and made the Nation live;
 When in a day of honour fire was smit
 To have put out Vulcan's, and have lasted yet.
 O, when this edifice stood great and high,
 That in the carcase bath such majesty,
 Whose very skeleton boasts of so much worth,
 What grace, what glories did it then send forth!
 When to the structure went more noble names
 Than the Ephesian Temple lost in flames;
 When every stone was laid by virtuous hands;
 And standing so,—O that it yet not stands!
 More truth of architecture there was blazed,
 Than liv'd in all the ignorant Goths have razed.
 There porticos were built, and seats for Knights
 That watch'd for all adventures, days and nights,
 The niches fill'd with statues to invite
 Young valours forth, by their old forms to fight.

¹ "There is a great similitude between these verses, and those of the Poet Bacchylides, in his delicate *Hymn to Peace* :

Ἐν δὲ σιδαροδέτοισιν πόρπαξιν αἰθᾶν Ἀράχνης
 Ἴσοι πέλονταί· ἔγχεά τε λογχῶν
 Ξίφει τ' ἀμφακκα εὐρώς δάμναται χαλκίων
 Οὐκέτι σαλπινγῶν κτυπῶ.

O'er the bright concave shield the spider spreads
 Her dusty web; and cankering rust devours
 The two-edg'd falchion, and the pointed spear;
 Nor longer heard the brazen trumpet's sound."

WHALLEY.

With arcs triumphal for their actions done,
 Out-striding the Colossus of the Sun.
 And trophies, rear'd of spoiled enemies,
 Whose tops pierc'd through the clouds, and hit the skies.

ARTHUR, *discovered as a Star above.*
 And thither hath thy voice pierc'd. Stand not mazed,
 Thy eyes have here on greater glories gazed,
 And not been frightened. I, thy Arthur, am
 Translated to a Star; and of that frame
 Or Constellation that was call'd for me
 So long before, as showing what I should be,
 Arcturus, once thy King, and now thy Star.
 Such the rewards of all good Princes are!
 Nor let it trouble thy design, fair Dame,
 That I am present to it with my flame
 And influence; since the times are now devolv'd
 That Merlin's mystic prophecies are absolv'd,
 In Britain's name, the union of this Isle,
 And claim both of my sceptre and my style.

Fair fall his virtue, that doth fill that throne,
 In which I joy, to find myself so' out-shone;
 And for the greater, wish men should him take,
 As it is nobler to restore than make.

Proceed in thy great work; bring forth thy Knight
 Preserved for his times, that by the might
 And magic of his arm he may restore
 These ruin'd seats of Virtue, and build more.
 Let him be famous, as was Tristram, Tor,
 Launcelot, and all our list of Knighthood; or
 Who were before, or have been since; his name
 Strike upon Heaven, and there stick his fame.
 Beyond the paths and searches of the sun
 Let him tempt fate; and, when a World is won,
 Submit it duly to this State and Throne,
 Till time, and utmost stay make that his own.

But first receive this shield; wherein is wrought
 The truth that he must follow; and (being taught
 The ways from Heaven) ought not to be despised.
 It is a piece, was by the Fates devised
 To arm his maiden valour, and to show
 Defensive arms th' offensive should forego.
 Endow him with it, Lady of the Lake.
 And for the other mysteries, here, awake

The learned Merlin; when thou shut'st him there,
 Thou buried'st valour too, for letters rear
 The deeds of honour high, and make them live.
 If then thou seek to restore prowess, give
 His spirit freedom; then present thy Knight:
 For Arms and Arts sustain each other's right.

LADY.

My error I acknowledge, though too late
 To expiate it; there's no resisting Fate.

Arise, great soul! fame by surreption got
 May stead us for the time, but lasteth not.

O, do not rise with storm and rage.

[*Thunder, lightning, &c.*] Forgive
 Repented wrongs¹. I'm cause thou now shalt live
 Eternally, for being deprest awhile,
 Want makes us know the price of what we avile².

MERLIN, *arising out of the tomb.*

I neither storm nor rage; 'tis Earth, blame her,
 That feels these motions when great spirits stir;
 She is affrighted, and now chid by Heaven,
 Whilst we walk calmly on, upright and even.

Call forth the fair MELIADUS³, thy Knight,
 They are his Fates that make the elements fight,
 And these but usual throes, when time sends forth
 A wonder or a spectacle of worth.
 At common births the World feels nothing new;
 At these she shakes; Mankind lives in a few.

LADY.

The Heavens, the Fates, and thy peculiar stars,
 MELIADUS, shew thee! and conclude all jars.

MELIADUS, *and his six Assistants here discovered.*

MERLIN.

Ay, now the spheres are in their tunes again.
 What place is this so bright that doth remain
 Yet undemolish'd? or but late built? O,
 I read it now; *St. George's portico!*
 The supreme head of all the world, where now
 Knighthood lives honour'd with a crowned brow.
 A noble scene, and fit to shew him in
 That must of all Worlds' fame the garland win.

¹ "All the world knows that this redoubtable conjurer was betrayed into a cavern, and shut up by the cruel craft of this Lady. There is, as the Reader must be aware, a perpetual allusion to the *Morte Arthur*, and the romances which have grown out of it." G.

² To *avale*, *availe*, *avayle*, or more commonly *vail*, is, to lower, or bring down, from the French *avaller*; and in this instance to cheapen. The word *vail* is used by Shakspeare. See Mr. Archdeacon Nares's Glossary. N.

³ The adopted name of Prince Henry; see before, p. 266.

- LADY. Does he not sit like Mars, or one that had
The better of him, in his armour clad?
And those his six Assistants, as the pride
Of the old Grecian heroes had not died?
Or like Apollo, rais'd to the World's view,
The minute after he the Python slew?
- MERLIN. 'Tis all too little, Lady, you can speak.
My thought grows great of him, and fain would break.
Invite him forth, and guide him to his tent,
That I may read this shield his Fates present.
- LADY. Glory of Knights, and hope of all the earth,
Come forth; your Fostress bids; who from your birth
Hath bred you to this hour, and for this Throne:
This is the field to make your virtue known.—
If he were now, he says, to vow his fires
Of faith, of love, of service, then his 'Squires
Had utter'd nothing for him; but he hopes
In the first tender of himself, his scopes
Were so well read, as it were no decor'm
Where truth is studied, there to practise form.
- MERLIN. No, let his actions speak him; and this shield
Let down from Heaven, that to his youth will yield
Such copy of incitement; not the deeds
Of antique Knights, to catch their fellows' steeds
Or Ladies' palfreys, rescue from the force
Of a fell giant, or some score to unhorse.
These were bold stories of our Arthur's age;
But here are other acts; another stage
And scene appears; it is not since as then:
No giants, dwarfs, or monsters here, but Men.
His arts must be to govern, and give laws
To peace no less than arms. His fate here draws
An empire with it, and describes each state
Preceding there, that he should imitate.
First, fair MELIADUS, hath she wrought an Isle,
The happiest of the Earth (which to your style
In time must add) and in it placed high
Britain, the only name made Cæsar fly.
Within the nearer parts, as apt and due
To your first speculation, you may view
The eye of justice shooting through the land,
Like a bright planet strengthen'd by the hand
Of first, and warlike Edward; then th' increase
Of trades and tillage, under laws and peace,

Begun by him, but settled and promov'd
 By the third hero of his name, who lov'd
 To set his own a-work, and not to see
 The fatness of his land a portion be
 For strangers. This was he erected first
 The trade of Clothing, by which art were nurs'd
 Whole millions to his service, and relieved
 So many poor, as since they have believed
 The golden fleece, and need no foreign mine,
 If industry at home do not decline.

To prove which true, observe what treasure here
 The wise and seventh Henry heap'd each year,
 To be the strength and sinews of a war,
 When Mars should thunder, or his peace but jar.
 And here how the eighth Henry, his brave son,
 Builds forts, made general musters, train'd youth on
 In exercise of arms, and girt his coast
 With strength; to which (whose fame no tongue can boast
 Up to her worth, though all best tongues be glad
 To name her still) did great Eliza add
 A wall of shipping, and became thereby
 The aid, or fear, of all the nations nigh.
 These, worthiest Prince, are set you near, to read
 That civil arts the martial must precede;
 That laws and trade bring honours in and gain,
 And arms defensive a safe peace maintain.
 But when your fate shall call you forth t'assure
 Your virtue more, though not to make secure,
 View here, what great examples she hath placed¹.

First, two brave Britain heroes, that were graced
 To fight their Saviour's battles, and did bring
 Destruction on the faithless; one a King,
 Richard, surnamed with a Lion's heart,
 The other Edward, and the first, whose part
 (Then being but Prince) it was to lead these wars
 In the age after, but with better stars.
 For here though Cœur de Lion like a storm
 Pour on the Saracens, and doth perform
 Deeds past an Angel, arm'd with wrath and fire,
 Ploughing whole armies up, with zealous ire,
 And walled citties, while he doth defend
 That cause that should all wars begin and end;

¹ "Jonson has omitted the machinery, which must have been very magnificent; but it is probable that Merlin pointed with his wand to some moving scenery, on which the events detailed by him, were depicted." G.

Yet, when with pride and for humane respect
The Austrian colours he doth here deject
With too much scorn, behold at length how fate
Makes him a wretched prisoner to that state ;
And leaves him, as a mark of Fortune's spite,
When Princes tempt their stars beyond their light ;
Whilst upright Edward shines no less than he,
Under the wings of golden victory,
Nor lets out no less rivers of the blood
Of Infidels, but makes the field a flood,
And marches through it, with St. George's cross,
Like Israel's host to the Egyptians' loss,
Through the Red Sea ; the Earth beneath him cold
And quaking such an enemy to behold.
For which his temper'd zeal, see providence
Flying in here, and arms him with defence
Against th' assassinate made upon his life
By a foul wretch, from whom he wrests the knife,
And gives him a just hire ; which yet remains
A warning to great Chiefs, to keep their trains
About them still, and not to privacy
Admit a hand that may use treachery.

Nearer than these, not for the same high cause,
Yet for the next (what was his right by laws
Of nations due) doth fight that Mars of men,
The black Prince Edward, 'gainst the French, who then
At Cressy field had no more years than you ;
Here his glad Father has him in the view
As he is entering in the school of war,
And pours all blessings on him from afar
That wishes can ; whilst he, that close of day,
Like a young lion, newly taught to prey,
Invades the herds, so fled the French, and tears
From the Bohemian crown the plume he wears,
Which after for his crest he did preserve
To his Father's use, with this fit word, I SERVE.
But here at Poitiers he was Mars indeed.
Never did valour with more stream succeed
Than he had there ; he flow'd out like a sea
Upon their troops, and left their arms no way ;
Or like a fire carried with high winds,
Now broad and spreading, by and bye it finds
A vent upright, to look which way to burn ;
Then shoots along again, or round doth turn,

Till in the circling spoil it hath embraced
 All that stood nigh, or in the reach to waste;
 Such was his rage that day; but then forgot
 Soon as his sword was sheath'd, it lasted not,
 After the King, the Dauphin, and French Peers,
 By yielding to him, wisely quit their fears,
 Whom he did use with such humanity,
 As they complain'd not of captivity;
 But here to England without shame came in;
 To be his captives was the next to win!

Yet rests the other thunderbolt of war,
 Harry the Fifth, to whom in face you are¹
 So like, as Fate would have you so in worth,
 Illustrious Prince! This virtue ne'er came forth,
 But Fame flew greater for him, than she did
 For other mortals; Fate herself did bid
 To save his life; the time it reach'd unto,
 War knew not how to give him enough to do.
 His very name made head against his foes;
 And here at Agincourt, where first it rose,
 It there hangs still a comet over France,
 Striking their malice blind, that dare advance
 A thought against it, lighten'd by your flame
 That shall succeed him both in deeds and name.

I could report more actions yet of weight
 Out of this orb, as here of eighty-eight,
 Against the proud Armada, styled by Spain
 The *Invincible*; that cover'd all the main,
 As if whole islands had broke loose, and swam²;
 Or half of Norway with her fir-trees came
 To join the continents;—it was so great;
 Yet by the auspice of Eliza beat;
 The dear-beloved of Heaven³, whom to preserve
 The winds were call'd to fight, and storms to serve.

¹ "The Courtiers are said to have made this observation with a view to please the Queen. This is mere ill-nature. As far as personal beauty was concerned, Henry the Fifth might have taken the compliment without offence." G.

² "Pelago credas innare revulsas
 Cycladas, aut montes concurrere montibus altas. VIRGIL. *Æneid* 8.

³ "Historians have not omitted to take notice of the violent storm, which the Spanish *Armada* met with as it drew near the English coast, which dispersed the fleet and destroyed many of its best vessels. This was at that time apprehended as a providential interposal of Heaven, nor were the Queen or Nation wanting in their just acknowledgments; for a medal was struck, which had on the reverse

One tumour drown'd another, billows strove
 T' out-swell ambition, water air out-drove;
 Though she not wanted, on that glorious day,
 An ever honour'd Howard to display
 St. George's ensign; and of that high race
 A second, both which plied the fight and chase:
 And sent first bullets, then a fleet of fire,
 Then shot themselves like ordnance; and a tire
 Of ships for pieces, through the enemy's moon,
 That waned before it grew; and now they soon
 Are rent, spoil'd, scatter'd, tost with all disease,
 And, for their thirst of Britain, drink the seas.
 The fish were never better fed than then,
 Although at first they fear'd the blood of men
 Had chang'd their element, and Neptune shook,
 As if the Thunderer had his palace took,

So here in Wales, Low Countries, France, and Spain,
 You may behold, both on the land and main,
 The conquest got, the spoils, the trophies rear'd
 By British Kings, and such as noblest heard
 Of all the Nation, which may make to invite
 Your valour upon need, but not to incite
 Your neighbour Princes; give them all their due,
 And be prepared if they will trouble you.
 He doth but scourge himself, his sword that draws
 Without a purse, a counsel, and a cause.

But all these spurs to virtue, seeds of praise,
 Must yield to this that comes. Here's one will raise
 Your glory more, and so above the rest,
 As if the acts of all mankind were prest
 In his example. Here are Kingdoms mix'd
 And Nations join'd, a strength of empire fix'd
 Con-terminate with Heaven; the golden vein
 Of Saturn's age is here broke out again.
 Henry but join'd the roses, that ensign'd
 Particular families, but this hath join'd
 The rose and thistle, and in them combined
 A union, that shall never be declined.

of it a navy in a storm with this inscription, "*Flavit ventis, et dissipati sunt.*" Our Poet has expressed this circumstance from Claudian:

"O nimium dilecte Deo, cui fundit ab antro
 Æolus armatas hyemes, cui militat æther,
 Et conjurati veniunt ad classica venti."

WHALLEY.

Ireland, that more in title, than in fact,
 Before was conquer'd, in his laurel's act!
 The wall of shipping by Eliza made,
 Decay'd (as all things subject are to fade)
 He hath new-built, or so restored, that Men
 For noble use, prefer it afore then;
 Royal and mighty JAMES, whose name shall set
 A goal for all posterity to sweat
 In running at, by actions hard and high;
 This is the height at which your thoughts must fly.
 He knows both how to govern, how to save
 What subjects, what their contraries should have;
 What can be done by power, and what by love;
 What should to mercy, what to justice move;
 All arts he can, and from the hand of Fate
 Hath he enforced the making his own date.
 Within his proper virtue hath he placed
 His guards 'gainst Fortune, and there fixed fast
 The wheel of chance, about which Kings are hurl'd,
 And whose outrageous raptures fill the World.

LADY.

Ay, this is he, Meliadus, whom you
 Must only serve, and give yourself unto;
 And, by your diligent practice to obey
 So wise a master, learn the art of sway.

Merlin, advance the shield upon his tent.
 And now prepare, fair Knight, to prove the event
 Of your bold Challenge. Be your virtues steel'd,
 And let your drum give note you keep the field. [*Drum beats.*
 —Is this the land of Britain so renown'd
 For deeds of arms, or are their hearings drown'd
 That none do answer?

MERLIN.

Stay, methinks I see
 A person in yon cave. Who should that be?
 I know her ensigns now; 'tis Chivalry
 Possess'd with Sleep, dead as a lethargy:
 If any charm will wake her, 'tis the name
 Of our Meliadus. I'll use his fame.

Lady! Meliadus, Lord of the Isles,
 Princely Meliadus, and whom Fate now styles
 The fair Meliadus, hath hung his shield
 Upon his tent, and here doth keep the field,
 According to his bold and Princely word;
 And wants employment for his pike and sword.

CHIVALRY, *coming forward.*

Were it from death, that name would wake me. Say
Which is the Knight? O, I could gaze a day
Upon his armour that hath so reviv'd
My spirits, and tells me that I am long-liv'd
In his appearance. Break, you rusty doors,
That have so long been shut, and from the shores
Of all the world, come, Knighthood, like a flood
Upon these lists, to make the field here good,
And your own honours, that are now call'd forth
Against the wish of men to prove your worth!

THE BARRIERS.

After which, MERLIN speaks to the Prince.

Nay, stay your valour, 'tis a wisdom high
In Princes to use fortune reverently.
He that in deeds of arms obeys his blood,
Doth often tempt his destiny beyond good.
Look on his throne, and in his temper view
The light of all that must have grace in you;
His equal justice, upright fortitude
And settled prudence, with that peace endued
Of face, as mind, always himself and even.
So Hercules, and good men bear up Heaven.

I dare not speak his virtues, for the fear
Of flattering him, they come so nigh and near
To wonders; yet thus much I prophesy
Of him and his. All ears yourselves apply.

You, and your other you, great King and Queen,
Have yet the least of your bright fortune seen,
Which shall rise brighter every hour with time,
And in your pleasure quite forget the crime
Of change; your age's night shall be her noon.
And this young Knight, that now puts forth so soon
Into the World, shall in your names achieve
More garlands for this State, and shall relieve
Your cares in government; while that young Lord¹
Shall second him in arms, and shake a sword,
And lance against the foes of God and you.
Nor shall less joy your Royal hopes pursue
In that most Princely maid², whose form might call
The world of war, to make it hazard all

¹ The Duke of York.

² "The Princess Elizabeth, married a few years afterwards to the Elector Palatine. The present

His valour for her beauty; she shall be
 Mother of Nations, and her Princes see
 Rivals almost to these. Whilst you sit high,
 And led by them, behold your Britain fly
 Beyond the line, when what the seas before
 Did bound, shall to the sky then stretch his shore.

The next day, Sunday January 7, Sir Charles Jones was knighted at Whitehall; and there was "a magnificke Feast at his Highnesse's house at St. James's, at which his Majestie, his Highnesse, his Brother and Sister, with all the other Earles, Lords, and Knights of the Court, were present; where, after supper (according as before they had been judged), his Highnesse gave three prizes to the three best deserving [defendants]; viz. to the Right Honourable the Earl of Montgomery¹ one, and to Sir Thomas Darcy² and Sir Robert Gourdon, Knights, the other two³."

Mr. Pette, the Shipwright, who "attended at this great Feast by commandment from the Prince's Highnesse," informs us that "the supper was not ended till ten at night; whence they all went to the Play, and, that ended, returned again to a set banquet in the gallery, where the supper was, the table being 120 feet long; and it was three o'clock in the morning before it was all finished⁴."

On the 9th, the following Gentlemen were knighted, at Whitehall:

Sir William Lygon⁵, of Worcestersh. Sir Henry Davies.

Sir James Altham⁶, of Essex. Sir John Horton, of Cheshire.

Royal Family are the descendants of that marriage. There is something interesting in the language of this prediction. Merlin is not altogether correct, it must be confessed, and yet he has not always prophesied so well. Elizabeth is now "the mother of nations;" and no sparing compliment will be paid "her Princes" by admitting them to be rivals of her Brothers; for, when every allowance is made, Henry and Charles must be confessed to be no ordinary characters." G.

¹ See p. 186. ² Only son of Lord Darcy of Chich; he died s. p. in his father's life-time.

³ Cornwallis's Life of Prince Henry.

⁴ Archæologia, vol. XII. p. 268.

⁵ A Pedigree of the Lygons is given by Dr. Nash in his "History of Worcestershire," vol. II. p. 118, with a good View of their beautiful seat at Madresfield, and a meagre account of the parish. "This worthy family," Dr. Nash observes, "came in with the Conqueror, and, having fought under the Standard of Normandy, gave the two lions passant for their arms."—Of Sir William (who was Sheriff of Worcestershire in 1590), the Doctor only says, "he sold many manors." A curious Letter from Mr. John Talbot, of Grafton, to the Earl of Shrewsbury, dated 1603, is still extant, giving an account of the manner in which this Sir William was returned M. P. for Worcestershire, and of the violence and tumults attending his election. He died in 1619, aged 52. The present Earl of Beauchamp is his descendant.

⁶ Two Knights of these names occur in pp. 122. 192.—The note in p. 122 probably applies to the present.

On the 20th, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir John Lunsford, of Sussex; and Sir George Farwell, of Somersetshire; on the 26th, at Royston, Sir Henry Tancred, of Yorkshire; and Sir John Lawrence, of London.

“The last day of January,” says Mr. Pette, “the Prince’s Highness came to Woolwich to see what forwardness the Ship¹ was in, where I gave him and his followers entertainment²;” on the first of February, the Ringers at St. Margaret’s were paid 2s. 6d. “for ringing for the King.”

In a Letter to Sir Ralph Winwood, dated “London, Feb. 13,” Mr. Chamberlaine gives the following additional particulars of the preceding Festival:

“I can make no long relation of our Christmas games, being grown such a house-dove that I stir little abroad, specially to look after such sports. The Barriers on Twelfth-night they say were well performed, and the Prince behaved himself every way very well and gracefully. The three prizes were bestowed on the Earle of Montgomery, young Darcie, son to the Lord Darcie, and Sir Robert Gordon, a Scot, more in favour of the Nation than for any due desert. Instead of a *plaudite* they had an exceeding good peale of ordnance or chambers, that graced the matter very much. The next day, the Prince with his Assistants all in a livery, and the Defendants in their best bravery, rode in a great pomp to convoy the King to St. James’s, whither he had invited him and all the Court to supper (the Queen being only absent), and there ended his table; the allowance whereof, from the publishing of his Challenge, had been £.100 a day.

“If the charge do not hinder it, he would feign undertake another Triumph or Shew against the King’s day in March, and the Queen would likewise have a Mask against Candlemas or Shrovetide³. She hath been somewhat melancholy of late about her joynture that was not fully to her liking; whereupon to give her contentment, there is £.300 a year added to it out of the Customes, with a donative of £.20,000 to pay her debts. The Lady Arbella’s busyness (whatsoever it was) is ended, and she restored to her former place and grace. The King gave her a cupboard of plate, better than £.200, for a New-year’s-gift, and 1000 marks to

¹ Of which see so much before, pp. 248—257.—The Prince again visited Woolwich, to watch the ship’s progress, on the 25th of April, the 18th of June, and again the following day with the King. September 20 the French Ambassador visited it, and the 24th it was launched in the presence of all the Royal Family and Court. See under the respective dates hereafter. ² *Archæologia*, XII. 258.

³ The Prince’s wish was accomplished (see p. 287); the Queen’s next Masque was Tethys’ Festival in June.

pay her debts, besides some yearly addition to her maintenance; want being thought the chiefest cause of her discontentment, though she be not altogether free from suspicion of being collapsed. At a supper the last week made by the Lady Elizabeth Hatton, there grew a question between the Earls of Argile and Pembroke, about place, which the Scot maintaines to be his by seniority, as being now become all Brittaines. Our Nobility now begin to startle at it (now it touches their freehold), but for ought I hear the King leaves it as he finds it, and refers it over to the Parliament. One Coeffeteau, a French Fryer, Preacher to that King, hath answered our King's Book very moderately and modestly they say; yet he is nothing satisfied with his fawning, nor takes it in better part, than if (as he says) 'he should have bid a t**d in his teeth and then cry Sir Reverence¹.'

"Dr. Abbot², Bishop of Lichfield, was elected to London the 5th of this present. The Bishop of Ely³ is set to work in reply to Cardinal Bellarmine's answer to the King's Book; whereof I perceive he makes no great account, but thinks that either the man is much crazed from what he was, or else that he did it with a contemptuous negligence. I hope we shall have his Sermon⁴ (upon the the third [chapter] to the Galatians, and 4th verse) preached on Christmas-day with great applause. The King (with much importunity) had the copy delivered to him on Tuesday last before his going towards Roiston, and says, 'he will lay it still under his pillow⁵.'"

February 15, Mr. Beaulieu⁶ thus writes to Mr. Trumbull⁷, the Resident at Brussels: "Upon Sunday Monsieur de la Boderie and the two Ambassadors of Venice, Extraordinary and Ordinary, were solemnly and magnificently feasted at Whitehall by the King, where there passed good mirth and plenty of healths between his Majesty and them. At the same table the Prince did sit with them. Upon Tuesday those of Saxony had the like Entertainment. The Lady Arbella, who (as you know) was not long ago censured for having, without the King's privity, entertained a motion of marriage, was again within a few days deprehended in the like treaty with my Lord of Beauchamp's second sonne, and both were called and examined yesterday at the Court about it. What the matter

¹ See under the date of June 7, 1610.

² Of whom see vol. I. p. 533.

³ Dr. Andrews.

⁴ See p. 266.

⁵ Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 117.

⁶ John Beaulieu was Secretary to Sir Thomas Edmonds (of whom see p. 191) in his Embassies to the Archdukes and the French King.

⁷ William Trumbull was, in 1617, one of the Clerks of the Counsel, with a salary of £.50.

will prove I know not, but those affectations of mariage in her do give some advantage to the world of imparing the reputation of her constant and virtuous disposition¹."

A short view of the state of the King's expenses at this time is thus given in part of another Letter from Mr. Beaulieu to Mr. Trumbull, dated February 23 :

"The Parliament here doth now cheifly occupy the minds of our Court and the tongues of our Exchange. My Lord Treasurer² is famous for an excellent Oration delivered to the House, whereof though the subject and end could not be very pleasant to the hearers, being especially for a new Contribution, yet the grounds and strength of his arguments were so energetical, and his speech so persuasive, as it seemeth to have given very good satisfaction both to the minds and judgments of all the House. Amongst other reasons and inducements which he used to them, he alledged (as I understand) this; that at the tyme of his coming into the charge of High Treasurer, he found the King indebted £.1,300,000, whereof part grew in the late Queen's time for supplying of the wars of Ireland under the Earls of Essex and Devonshire, and the rest since the King's coming to the Crown, specefyng particularly the manner and occasions of the expence. That since the said tyme there had been £.900,000 of the said debts acquitted, so that there remained yet £.400,000 to discharge. He shewed moreover that the ordinary expence of the King amounted to £.81,000 yearly more than his whole Revenue, besides the incidents of extraordinarys, which he said there is no man but in the supputation of his private accounts did commonly finde to amount to the fourth part of his ordinary charges. So that both for the discharging of the remainder of the King's debts, and the due supplying hereafter of his expences (whereof he did not omit to represent the new encrease coming upon him by the Installation and emancipating of the Prince), his conclusion was, that the House would yield to a yearly and perpetuall graunt, and that without necessitie of new Consents and Assemblies, of £.200,000 for a Subvention to his Majesty's charges³. And the better to incline and encourage the House to the granting this high and extraordinary demand, he willed every one of them to bring and proffer freely any such griefs as they had; and he promised, in the King's name, that his Majesty would redress the same, and give them all satisfaction therein as

¹ Winwood's Memorials.

² The Earl of Salisbury; see p. 196.

³ "He did also demand £.600,000 for the Supply." Another Letter between the same correspondents, dated March 1.

far as should lye in his power. Whereupon there has ben, and is every day, an infinit number of Bills of complaints put up to the House, and some of them, as I hear, very extravagant and strange¹.”

On the 25th and 26th of February, Sir Edward Douse, of Hampshire; and Sir Edward Bromley, of Shropshire; were knighted at Whitehall.

March 24, being the day of the King's Accession, the Ringers at St. Margaret's were paid 2s. 6d.; and on that day Mr. John More thus writes to Sir Ralph Winwood:

“The Parliament is still busy about the abrogating of the Wards and the Pourveyors; but as yet they have not brought their work into shape. Upon Wednesday last, both of the Houses being assembled in the Banqueting-house at Whitehall, his Majesty made them a Speech² of two hours long; wherein he showed great learning, admirable memory, and exceeding piety, to the great contentment of all parties; only the most strictly religious could have wished that his Highness would have been more sparing in using the name of God, and comparing the Deity with Princes' Sovereignty³. Yet withall the Speech had this plausible conclusion, that howsoever the Sovereignty of Kings was absolute in generall, yet in particular the Kings of England were restrained by their oath and the priviledges of the people, and so his Majesty condemned Dr. Cowell's⁴ opinion, who is like to be censured for his position, whereof I presume your Lordship hath heretofore understood the particulars from a better hand⁵.”

Soon after, Mr. Carleton writes as follows to Sir Thomas Edmonds:

“The Court Sermons⁶ have been well and exactly hitherto discharged, and

¹ Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 123.

² Published soon after in 4to; and re-published more than eighty years after under the title of “Vox Regis; or the difference of a King ruling by Law, and a Tyrant by his own will; with the excellency of the English Laws, Rights, and Privileges: in two Speeches of King James to the Parliament in 1603 and 1609.” Lond. 1681, 4to. Copies of both editions are in the British Museum; and a copy of the latter is in the Bodleian. The latter is partly re-printed in the Harleian Miscellany.

³ It must be evident to every observant reader, that this was James's usual fault;—see p. 253.

⁴ John Cowell, D. C. L. (of whom see Wood's Fasti, vol. I. col. 289), had printed a volume called “The Interpreter in Words and Terms in Common and Statute Laws of the Realm, &c.” which at this time was the common topic of conversation. This work, some passages in it, which related to the King's Prerogative, giving offence, was called in by Proclamation two days after the date of this letter; see Howes' Chronicle. A new edition was, however, printed in 1638, which has been followed by many others.

⁵ Winwood's Memorials.

⁶ “A Sermon preached on the first Fryday in Lent, before the Kinge at Whitehall, by Dor Maxcy [qu?], Chaplayne to his Majestie, the 2d of March 1609,” was entered at Stationers' Hall June 18 following.

our Oxford Men have proved the most prominent; Dr. King¹, Field², and Aiglionby³, to do the best; and Wright⁴ to do the worst! The sword cuts even now betwixt Papist and Puritan; prohibitions are beaten down with a club, yet rise like Hydra's heads, and prove the worse for preaching against.

"The King's Book in defence of his *Apology* (which he now avows to be his own) is in the press, whereof I have seen part; and therein he little spares the Pope or his party; which others do as frankly imitate both in books and preachings, without having courtesy or mincing the matter any longer. And this is the best effect I can foresee of the King's *great* pains, which would better become a private man.

"The King's Day passed over with the ordinary solemnity of running and ringing. The Tilters⁵ were the Duke of Lennox, the Earls of Arundel, Pembroke, and Montgomery, the Lords Chandos⁶, Compton⁷, Walden, and Hay, Sir Thomas Somerset, Sir Richard Preston, and the two Alexanders⁸. The Duke of Lennox exceeded all in Feathers; the Lord Walden in Followers; and Sir Richard Preston in a Pageant, which was an Elephant with a castle on the back; and it proved a right *partus elephantis*; for it was as long a coming till the running was well entered into, and was then as long a creeping about the Tilt-yard, all which while the running was intermitted⁹."

¹ See vol. I. p. 522.

² Ibid. p. 533.

³ Ibid.

⁴ Robert Wright, D. D. had been Chaplain to Queen Elizabeth, and was now to her Successor. He was made the first Warden of Wadham College in 1613; Bishop of Bristol in 1622; Lichfield and Coventry in 1632. He died in 1643 at his house at Eccleshall, whilst it was besieged by the Parliament Forces. See a Memoir of him in Wood's *Athenæ*, by Bliss, vol. IV. p. 800.

⁵ The first, second, eighth, ninth, and tenth of these Tilters distinguished themselves at Prince Henry's Barriers; see p. 270. All were probably engaged in them; see also p. 43. Lord Walden was a Combatant in those in 1605-6; see p. 24.—Most of them were accustomed Revellers at Court; see p. 186.

⁶ Of whom see vol. I. p. 477.

⁷ Ibid.

⁸ "The two Alexanders, *alias* Zinzan," Sir Sigismond and Mr. Henry, probably accompanied the King from Scotland. They were noticed by Lady Anne Clifford in 1603 (see vol. I. p. 189, but were not connected with the Knight mentioned in p. 210). They jointly received Free-gifts of £.100 in 1610, 1611, 1612, and 1614, as Henry did in 1613. In 1614 they also received £.1000 as an additional Free-gift. They will occur again at the various Tiltings.—There were others of the family; Andrew Zinzan, *alias* Alexander, received £.66. 13s. 4d. *per annum* "for riding the King's great horses;" Henry Zinzan £.10 *per annum* as Harness-maker to the Ordnance.

⁹ Birch's MSS. in the British Museum, 4176.—From the original among Sir Thomas Edmonds's MS State Papers, in the possession of Lord Viscount Royston.

Free Gifts in the Seventh Year of the King's Reign, 1609-10.

To Contractors for Parsonages, &c. in reward for their pains in taking up divers sums of money for the King - - -			Paid over to Merchants to be disbursed for the restitution of the Prince of Moldavia to his estate of the King's Free- gift - - - - -		
£.			£.		
1300					
More to them for the like service	1400				3000
The Earl of Downbarre ¹ -	2000		The King of Denmark's Ser-		
Sir Stephen Proctor ² -	80		vants, for bringing of Deer, in		
The Earl of Suffolke ³ , being			reward - - - -		100
an arrearage of rents due by			Henry Mynors ⁸ - - -		500
him to his Majesty - -	4386		Sir Robert Gray - - -		800
Sir Patrick Murray ⁴ and Sir			Arthur Ingram ⁹ - - -		673
James Oughterlony ⁵ , for re-			The Lord Gourdon ¹⁰ - - -		1000
linquishing their grant of			Sir Robert Drewry ¹¹ - - -		500
Concealments - - -	1500		The Earl Home ¹² - - -		1000
The Lord Obigney ⁶ , for relin-			William Shaa ¹³ for relinquis-		
quishing his grant of £.1000			ing his grant of old Debts -		480
by the year in fee simple,			Gilbert Primrose ¹⁴ - - -		200
given unto him by his Majesty	18,000		The Earl of Montgomery ¹⁵ ,		
Thomas Warwick ⁷ - - -	400		for surrendering part of his		
Sir Patrick Murray, more -	300		grant of Custodies - - -		6000

¹ See p. 191.² Sir Stephen Proctor was knighted at the Tower March 14, 1603-4 (see vol. I. p. 322). He received a Free gift of £.42 in 1610.³ See p. 153.⁴ See vol. I. pp. 223, 426.⁵ Knighted at Winchester in 1603, see vol. I. p. 278. He had Free-gifts of £.200 in 1613; £.1800 in 1615; £.500 in 1616.⁶ See p. 247.⁷ Who received £.500 in 1611.⁸ A John Mynors was, in 1611, appointed one of Prince Henry's Musicians, with a salary of £.40.⁹ A wealthy Citizen of London, who had in 1607 obtained an ample grant of lands in various counties, jointly with his friend Sir William Herrick (of whom see vol. I. p. 504). He was knighted at Theobalds July 9, 1612; was sworn Cofferer of the King's Household Feb. 25, 1614-15, *vice* Sir Robert Vernon, resigned; and in 1615 had a Free-gift of £.666 "in reward for his paines taken about the Allome businesse." He purchased the manor of Temple Newsome, &c. in Yorkshire, and was Sheriff for that county in 1619. From him descended Henry Ingram, who, for his loyalty to Charles I. and II. was created Viscount Irwine and Baron Ingram, of Irwine, co. Ayr; but the titles became extinct with him. See further in Nichols's Leicestershire, vol. III. p. 152.¹⁰ See p. 246.¹¹ See p. 25.¹² See p. 247.¹³ William Shaa received also as Free-gifts £.800 in 1605 (see p. 43), and £.500 in 1612.¹⁴ See p. 191.¹⁵ See pp. 186, 196.

	£.		David Moises ⁹ and William	£.
Sir Richard Weston ¹	1664	- - -	Dampport ¹⁰	450
Sir Charles Cornwallis ²	1000	- - -	Doctor Millward ¹¹	66
William Belon	250	- - -	John Berwick ¹²	52
George Marshall	100	- - -	Peter La Costa ¹³	100
Sir Thomas Bartlet ³	170	- - -	John Elphingstone	500
The Lord Viscount Haddington ⁴	7200	- - -	William Browne	66
Sir Robert Douglas ⁵	200	- - -	Andrew Downes	50
Sir Henry Gray ⁶	3000	- - -	The Lord Bruce of Kinlosse ¹⁴	2000
Jehu Webb ⁷	50	- - -	Sir Alexander Hay ¹⁵	500
The Lord Hoth ⁸	200	- - -		
				£57,237

¹ See pp. 124, 190.

² Sir Charles Cornwallis, of Suffolk (knighted May 11, 1603; see vol. I. p. 117), was second son of Sir Thomas, Comptroller of the Household to Queen Mary, and ancestor of the present Marquis. Sir Charles was sent Resident Ambassador to Spain in March 1605, with the Earl of Nottingham, Ambassador Extraordinary (see vol. I. p. 500); and remained there till 1609. His despatches fill a large portion of Winwood's Memorials. In 1610 he was appointed Treasurer to Prince Henry, with a salary of £.80, with "bordwages or diett." He afterwards published the *Life of his Princely Master*; see extracts from it in pp. 266, 270.—Of his family, &c. see further in Brydges's *Peerage*, vol. II. p. 546.

³ Knighted July 23, 1603; see vol. I. p. 219. He had £.100 the following year.

⁴ See p. 160.

⁵ See p. 245.

⁶ Sir Henry Gray, of Bedfordshire, was knighted at Worksop April 20, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 88). He had a Free-gift of £.2000 in 1610.

⁷ Jehu Webb was "Master of the Tennice-playes," with a salary of £.12. 13s. 4d.

⁸ Christopher St. Lawrence, twenty-second Baron Howth, and ancestor of the present Earl, succeeded his father in that title in 1606. He served as a soldier in Ireland, was present at the two Irish Parliaments held by James I. and died at Howth Oct. 24, 1619. Archdall's *Irish Peerage*, III. 199.

⁹ Who, with William Rider, had, in 1605, received "£.2000 out of Green-wax;" see p. 43.

¹⁰ Who had £.50 the following year.

¹¹ John Milward, D. D. was Chaplain to the King; and Author of (among other things) "*Jacob's Great Day of Trouble and Deliverance*; a Sermon at Paul's Cross, 5 Aug. 1607, upon his Majesty's deliverance from Gowry's treasons; on Jerem. xxx. 7. London, 1610," 4to. He was admitted Rector of St. Margaret Pattens, London, Nov. 8, 1608, and died August 1, 1609. See Wood's *Fasti*, by Bliss, vol. I. p. 224.—One of the Chaplains to Prince Henry was "Mr. Milwood."

¹² John Berwick received a Free-gift of £.48 the following year. "The Lady Barwick and John her son" had "for keeping the King's house at Thetford 12d. by the day, and for keeping the garden there 12d. by the day; in all by the year £ 36. 10s."

¹³ Peter La Costa had £.60 in 1614.

¹⁴ See vol. I. p. 109; and this Volume, p. 194.

¹⁵ Of whom see p. 197. He received £.1000 in 1607 (p. 190); and £.1500 in 1610.

The following is a curious undated Letter from Prince Henry ¹, addressed

“Monsieur et Frere,

“Le Roy mon Pere envoyant un des miens vers sa Majestie, je luy ay commandé vous salver de ma part, vous presentant deux petits bidets, lesquels j'ay pensé qu' aurez agréables pour l'amour de moy, qui vous supplie croire qu'il ny a aucun plus desireux d'estre favorisé de voz bonnes graces, et de rencontrer quelque digne subject pour les pouvoir meriter, que celuy qui s'est voué

“Vostre tres affectionné Frere à vous servir², HENRY.”

“A Monsieur le Dauphin;” with a present of a pair of horses.

On the 29th of March 1610, John Beaulieu, Esq. thus writes from London to Mr. Trumbull, the Resident at Brussels: “Here is expected this day the young Prince of Brunswick ³, who shall be lodged with the Prince at St. James's. The speech is that he cometh for a Marriage with the Lady Elizabeth, and that he will stay some months in these parts⁴.”

On the 23d of April, being St. George's-day, the loyal Citizens of Chester testified their zealous attachment to their young Prince, Henry Frederick Stuart; as appears by the “Triumph,” invented by “her ill Townsman Richard Davies,” and by him described in the following very curious Tract ⁵:

¹ Several Letters from Henry the Fourth of France to this spirited young Prince, offering his own friendship and that of the Dauphin, are mentioned in Birch's Life of Prince Henry. Of their friendship see also hereafter, on the occasion of the King's death, p. 312.

² Ellis, vol. III. p. 96.

³ Of whom and his travels in England see hereafter, p. 310.

⁴ Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 145, where follows an account of the death of “the old Lady Spencer;” which, with the account of Sir John's, from an earlier Letter between the same Correspondents, has been printed in vol. I. p. 160.

⁵ Entered at Stationers' Hall by John Browne, June 12.—My transcript of this curious Tract is from a copy in the possession of W. B. Rhodes, Esq. of Lyon's-inn, by whose favour I re-print it. A copy is marked £.25 in the Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica, and another is in the Bodleian Library, among the many other gems bequeathed by Mr. Gough to that rich repository. This “Triumph” is barely mentioned by the accurate and industrious Mr. Ormerod in the Preface to his History of Cheshire; though he does not pass unnoticed the Whitsun-plays, and other Pageants for which Chester was anciently so distinguished.

CHESTER'S TRIUMPH
IN HONOR OF HER PRINCE.

AS IT WAS PERFORMED UPON ST. GEORGE'S-DAY, 1610,

IN THE FORESAID CITTIE¹.

To the High and Mightie Prince, HENRY Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall and Rothsay, EARLE of CHESTER, Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, &c.

CHESTER TO HER PRINCE.

Unto thy boundless ocean, most dread Prince,
Of thy surmounting great magnificence,
Do we, poor Palatines, from our best hearts
(Enlarg'd with love of thy admired parts),
Blushing object to thy deepe judgement's eye,
The fruit, though poor, of rich Love's industrie.
Not that we are ambitious, or that wee
Can thinke it worthy of most worthy 'Thee;
But with our best integritie to shew
The awfull duetie which our loves doe owe
To thy great greatnesse; who, beyond compare,
Doth shine so bright in our love's hemisphere,
That, in thy sight, our hearts, lives, limmes, and swords,
Shall stretch our actions farre beyond our words.

Her ill Townsman, R^I. DAVIES.

TO THE READER.

Reader, to make a large narration of nothing, were scarce worth any thing; yet, since it hath pleased the great Giver of all things to infuse life into poore animals, as well as spirit into more worthy creatures; I have, by the importunitie of some friends, upon honest conditions, let slip this prisoner, who like a poore peregrinator, to purchase enlargement, is contented to passe the purgatorie of the printing-house; where, if by his good behaviour he doe not merit redemption, let him be prest without pity, a God's name, and, like a vituperous offender, be

¹ London: Printed for J. B. and are to be sold in St. Dunstan's Church-yard in Fleete-streete, 1610.

stamped and stared at by the severest corrector and truest compositor. To be briefe, what was done was so done, as being by the approbation of many said to bee well done; then I doubt not but it may merit the mercifull construction of some few, who may chance to sweare 'twas most excellently ill done. Zeal procured it; love devised it; boyes performed it; men beheld it; and none but fooles dispraised it. As for the further description of the businesse I referre to further relation; onely thus: the chieft part of this people-pleasing Spectacle consisted in three bees, *viz.* boyes, beasts, and bels, bels of a strange amplitude and extraordinarie proportion; beasts of an excellent shape and most admirable swiftnesse; and boys of rare spirit and exquisite performance; which glorious Triumph, with much more, was merely intended, as it was thought, for the joyfull celebration of Camber's¹ boundlesse glory.

R. D.

A Briefe Relation of the most delightfull, pleasant, and rare Shewes, the which have beene enacted, set forth, and performed within the most auncient renowned Citie Caer-leon, now named Chester, upon the Festivall of our most worthy approved English Champion S. George his day, being the 23d of April 1610, and shall remaine and continue perpetually to future ages as a memorable and worthy project, founded, devised, and erected onely by the most famous, generous, and well deserving Citizen, Mr. ROBERT EMERIE, late Sherieffe of the said Citie, redownding to the glory and praise of Almighty God for His benefits immediately and bounteously poured upon us Christians, and also in lieu of the homage, fealtie, alleagiance, and duetie which wee doe owe and attribute unto the King's most excellent and magnificent Majestie his Crowne and dignitie, and the most vertuous and hopefull heire apparent, the Prince of Wales, with that noble victor Saint George, our aforesaid English Champion.

1. A man, by strange devises, clyming to the toppe of a very high spire steeple, standing at the Market-crosse, called S. Peter's steeple, carrying an auncient² of our colours of S. George, displaying the same upon the said steeple, and fixing the same to the barre of iron that the vane hangeth upon; likewise sounding a drumme, shooting off a peece, and flourishing a sword, and standing upon the crosse of the said barre of iron, stood upon his hands with his feete into the ayre,

¹ Cambria, *i. e.* Wales. N.

² See a note in p. 57. N.

very dangerously and wonderfully to the view of the beholders, with casting fire-workes very delightfull.

2. Two disguised, called Greene-men, their habit embroydred and stiched on with ivie-leaves, with blacke sides, having hanging to their shoulders a huge blacke shaggie hayre, savage-like, with ivie-garlands upon their heads, bearing Herculian clubbes in their hands. An artificiall dragon, very lively to behold, pursuing the savages entring their denne, casting fire from his mouth, which afterwards was slaine, to the great pleasure of the spectators, bleeding, fainting, and staggering, as though hee endured a feeling paine, even at the last gasp and farewell.

3. One mounted on horsebacke, bearing the helmet and shield of St. George, attended by three; one leading his horse, a drumme sounding before him, with S. George his scutchin in the forehead of his horse.

4. FAME mounted on horsebacke, with a trumpet in her hand, pronouncing an Oration.

5. MERCURIE, descending from Heaven in a cloud, artificially winged, a wheele of fire burning very cunningly, with other fire-workes, mounting to the height of the foresaid steeple upon coardes; with most pleasant and melodious harmonie at his approach.

6. Another representing the fornamed and most worthy Citie Chester, mounted on horsebacke; two drummes sounding before him, with the armes of S. George upon a scutchin in the forehead of his horse.

7. Another with the King's armes, very richly haroldized, upon a shield; also mounted on horsebacke, with the King's armes upon a scutchin in the horse's forehead.

8. Another, making an Oration in honour of the King his Crowne and Emperiall Monarchie, likewise mounted on horsebacke, with the arms correspondent in the forehead of his horse.

9. Another, mounted on horsebacke, with a great bell double gilt, supported by foure lyons rampant, standing upon a lesser bell, with a clapper in it, the King's armes engraven thereon, caried upon a sceptre, dedicated to the King's most excellent Majestie, with many trumpets sounding cheerefully before him, with the King's armes upon a scutchin in the horse's forehead.

10. Another, with the Prince's armes upon a shield very richly haroldized, mounted on horsebacke, with the Prince's armes upon a scutchin in the horse's foretoppe.

11. Another, mounted on horsebacke, delivering an Oration in honour of the Prince his birth-right and magnificent Creation, *viz.* to the high and mightie Prince Henrie, Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornwall and Rothsay, Earle of Chester, &c. with the Prince's arms upon a scutchin in the horse's forehead.

12. Another, mounted on horsebacke with a massie bell of silver parcell-gilt, with the Prince's armes engraven upon it; likewise supported by three Lyons rampant, standing upon a lesser bell, with a clapper in it, caried upon a scepter, a noise of cornets before the bell; dedicated to the Prince, with the Prince's armes upon a scutchin in the horse's forehead.

13. Another, mounted on horsebacke, with the armes of S. George upon a shield, with the armes of Saint George upon a scutchin in the forehead of the horse.

14. RUMOR, mounted on horsebacke, pronouncing an Oration in honour of the most worthy Christian English Champion S. George, mounted on horsebacke, with the arms of S. George upon a scutchin in the forehead of the horse.

15. Another, mounted on horsebacke, with the most ancient and famous standard of S. George, with the armes of Saint George upon a scutchin in the horse's forehead.

16. Another, mounted on horsebacke, bearing upon a sceptre a great piece of plate parcell-gilt, bell-fashion, dedicated to the honour of Saint George, with the armes of S. George in the horse's forehead.

17. Another, representing S. GEORGE, accoutred and armed at all points, attended by two Squires, also in compleat armour; a noyse of drummes before them; likewise mounted on horsebacke, with the armes of S. George upon a scutchion in the horse's forehead.

18. Another, on horsebacke, representing PEACE, who made a Speech agreeable to her nature.

19. Another, on horsebacke, representing PLENTIE, made likewise a Speech, &c. a wreath of wheat-eares upon her head, with a garland of the same athwart her

body, casting and strewing wheate abroad amongst the multitude as shee roade along. Garbe or wheat-sheffe Ore in a scutchin upon her horse's forehead.

20. Another, on horsebacke, representing ENVIE, with a wreath of snakes about her head; another in her hand, her face and armes besmeared with blood.

21. After her, on horseback, came one representing LOVE, who finding Envie dismounted from horsebacke, and mounted on a stage to shew her nature, was conjured by Love to depart, and not to interrupt with her detractions that daye's Triumph, undertaken and performed through Love; which done, Love and Joye marshall the succeeding sport.

22. Lastly JOYE, mounted on horsebacke, rejoycing at so great a concourse of people, never there before seene, and praysing the good meaning of what there was undertaken and performed. Whereupon all departed for a while to a place upon the river called the Roodes¹, garded with one hundred and twentie halberders, and a hundred and twentie shotte, bravely furnished. The Mayor, Sheriffs, and Aldermen of Chester, arayed in their scarlet, having seene the said Shewes, to grace the same, accompanied and followed the Actors unto the said Roode, where the ships, barques, and pinises, with other vessels harbouring within the River, displaying the armes of St. George upon their main-toppes, with several pendants answerable thereunto; discharged many voleyces of shotte in honour of the day. The bells, dedicated as before is remembred, being presented to the Mayor, proclamation being generally made, to bring in horses to runne for the saide bells. There was runne a double race, to the great pleasure and delight of the spectators; men of great worth running also at the ring for the said cuppe, dedicated to Saint George. And those that wonne the prizes, according to the articles agreed upon in that behalfe, had the same honour thereunto belonging. The said severall prizes being with Speeches, and severall wreathes set on their heads, delivered in ceremonious and tryumphant maner, after the order of the Olimpian sportes, whereof these were an imitation.

¹ The Rood Eye, a large plain immediately under the City walls, and on the banks of the Dee, where the Chester races are still held; called Rood from a cross or rood which formerly stood there, the base of which now remains; and Eye, from its situation, that being a name for islands or banks or rivers. See Ormerod's Cheshire, vol. I. p. 291. N.

CHESTER'S TRIUMPH IN HONOR OF HER PRINCE.

FAME. From blisfull bowres of faire Elyzian fields,
 The happy harbour of Jove's deerest deere,
 From thence these Worthies, noted by their shields,
 Are, by my conduct, thus arived here.
 I Fame, that with a trice doe over-fill
 The World's wide eares with what I please to say,
 Have brought them thus, as 't were against the hill
 Of highest lets, to celebrate this Day!
 This Day, that I so farre have famouzed
 That not a nooke of Earth's huge globe but knowes
 How in Great Britaine it is solemnized
 With divine offices and glorious Showes.
 Then, for th' increase of this triumphant mirth,
 I'le invoke the God's Embassadour,
 To be the President of Heav'n to Earth;
 And from the Gods salute your Governour.
 Then come, great Nuntius of th' immortall Gods,
 From that all-swaying senate of their State;
 Come, I invoke thee, with thy charming rod
 In glory come, this Day to celebrate.
 The nine-fold orbes of Heav'n my words doe pierce;
 Descend then, Tongue's-man of the Universe!

A Song of eight voyces for the Shew in Chester on S. George's-day.

*Come down, thou mighty Messenger of Blisse,
 Come, we implore thee!
 Let not thy glory be obscur'd from us
 Who most adore thee.
 Then come, O come, great spirit!
 That we may joyfull sing,
 Welcome, O welcome to Earth,
 Jove's dearest darling.*

*Lighten the eyes, thou great Mercurian Prince,
 Of all that view thee,
 That by the lustre of their optick sense
 They may pursue thee;
 Whilst with their voyces
 Thy praise shall sing,
 Come away, come away,
 Jove's dearest darling.*

MERCURIE *comes down in a cloude, and speakes thus*¹:

Down from the throne of the immortall Gods,
 From out the glorious ever-during Heav'ns,
 And from the sacred Powres Celestiall,
 From thence I come, commanded by them all,
 To visite him whose rare report hath rung
 Within their eares, and scaled the lofty clouds;
 His erved fame on Earth hath pierc'd the skie,
 Ascending up unto the highest Heav'ns;
 And therewithall procur'd the sacred senate
 In great regard to hold his worthinesse;
 For which intent, they all with one accord,
 To manifest the love to him they owe,
 Have sent me, Mercurie, their Messenger,
 To bring him joyfull tiding of the same.
 And to this place, directed by their Powres,
 I am arived, in happy time I hope,
 To finde this happy God-beloved Man.
 And loe! behold, on suddaine where I spie
 This Favorite so favor'd of the Gods;
 I will salute him with such courtesie
 As best beseemes a wight of such account.
 All haile to thee, high Justice Officer!
 Mercurie, Nuntius to the Powres Divine,
 Hath brought thee greetings from their Deities.
 And know, deere Sir, thy deedes and good deserts,
 Thy well-disposed nature, minde, and thought,
 Thy zealous care to keep their lawes divine,
 Thy great compassion on poore wights distrest,
 Thy prudence, justice, temp'rance, and thy truth,
 And, to be brieft, thy vertues generall
 Have mov'd them all from Heav'n, with one assent,
 To send me downe to let thee understand,
 That thou art highly in their favors placed;
 And, for the more assurance of the same,
 Loe here a favour favourably sent
 From them by me, to thee, that thou maist know
 Thy vertues here shall there rewarded bee
 With endless joy and perfect happinesse.
 Receave the same, returning naught but thanks,
 Which is as much as they require of thee.

¹ It would appear from this Speech that Prince Henry was present at the time it was made; but that cannot have been the case. N.

My message done, my taske thus brought to end,
I must returne, and to the Heav'ns ascend.

CHESTER. Haile, sage Spectators! haile, yee rev'rend Sires!
Haile, yonger Brutes, whose worth self Worth¹ admires;
Whose ardent love both to the place and us
Constraines our love to entertaine ye thus.
Welcome, ten thousand times, yee blissful crew,
Whose light tends luster to the vulgar view;
Whose severall vertues, link'd with severall graces,
Deserve the best of our best love's embraces.
The Romaine Curtius, Rome's great favorite,
Whose daring death did her from scathe acquite,
Was ne're more welcome to the Romanes' sights,
Then are yourselves to these our choise delights.
To which kinde purpose our desire intends
To entertaine you as our fastest friends,
With such Olympian sports as shall approve
Our best devotion and sincearest love.
Such entertaine as best beseemes your ranks
Wee'll strive to give you with our hartiest thanks;
And, so to please your nicer appetites,
Wee'll feast your paines with pleasure's honied sweets.
The rarest viands choise it selfe affords,
Shall o're abound upon our bounteous bords;
And, in the midst of all our joviall solace,
Wee'll sucke sweet nectar from the paps of Pallas.
Wee'll cozen France of those delitious vines,
Where-hence they draine their brain-enchancing wines,
To cheere our hearts, and make you frolique so
As you shall swim in joy, though sunke in woe.
Wee'll banquet you with such variety
Of dulcet fruites, whose sweet satiety
Shall seem so pleasing, as it shall intice
The Gods themselves to surfet on their juice.
Our best pavilions, in their best attire,
Remonstrate shall how much we doe desire
To satisfie your expectation's eyes,
With all that arte can possibly devise.
Wee'll pave our streetes with that eye-pleasing sand,
Which is of powre whole Kingdoms to command;
And for your more delight perfume we will
The aire; nay, it sweete aires shall over-fill.

¹ That must mean—*Worth itself*.

Our verdant pastures three-pil'd greene in graine
 Shall weare, to honour so your entertaine;
 And round about the meadowes as yee goe,
 For peeping flowers the grasse shall scarcely show.
 What may be done, and willing hearts can doe,
 Shall be effected with advantage too.
 Wee'll furrow up those pety hills or heights,
 That lie but in the way of our delights;
 And with the surpluse of this surquedrie¹,
 Fill up the places that too lowly lie
 Within the list or prospect of that place,
 Assign'd this Triumph and triumphant Race.

Whate're our more then strained utmost, all
 Can possibly performe; performe we shall.

BRITAIN. Illustrious Britaine, stately seate of Kings,
 Whose boundlesse glories inequivalent,
 Doe so reflect on Fame's orientall wings,
 That o're the World they spread their blandishment;
 Whose influence (past compasse of conceit)
 Endarts such sun-beames to obscurer places,
 That all the World by that resplendant light
 Derives from her their most peculiar graces;
 Whose Royall, clement, chaste, and bounteous King,
 King! O too base a stile for his great worth!
 Such radiant luster to the Earth doth bring,
 That, like the sunne, it cheers the totall North.
 Then yeeld him honor, Kings that glorious be,
 Vaile to this (next the High'st) great King of Kings!
 Who by his vertues graceth your degree,
 And to the same immortall glory brings.
 Great Britaine's greatnesse, wonder of the North,
 Admir'd of all who Vertue's height admire,
 We doe ascribe unto thy matchlesse worth,
 Surmounting praise to mount thy vertues higher.
 And while me, Britaine, Neptune that embrace,
 I'll ruine those that spight thee or thy race.

CAMBRIA. Renowned Camber, Britaine's true repose!
 Whose ardent zeale to her admired Prince
 Hath ever been approv'd to friends and foes,
 To sacrifice her blood in his defence.

¹ Excess; from the old French *surcuiderie*. Chaucer, in his "Persone's Tale," defines it as follows;
 "Presumption is when a man undertaketh an emprise that him ought not to do, or elles that he may
 not do; and this is called *surquidrie*." See other examples in Nares's Glossary. N.

With high swolne words of vaunt to thunder forth
 How much we dare to doe in this respect,
 Were more then meere idle; since our worth
 Shall shew itselfe in such words' true effect.
 Our hopefull Prince, whilst Camber's race doth breathe,
 Shall they defend with fast united might;
 In his just cause will their best swords unsheathe
 Against the stout'st opposer of his right.
 We scorne that Wales such weaklings should afford,
 That dare not bravely front the eager'st foe
 At any weapon (pistoll, pike, or sword),
 And, like stout warriours, give him bloe for bloe!
 But to our Prince, Great Britaine's matchlesse Heire,
 As humbly low, as is his greatnesse high,
 Our lives wee'll prostrate with our best devoire,
 To doe what may undoe the enemie.
 Whose Grace is thought upon this present day,
 Which day Saint George hath blissfully created,
 To take his birth-right; and with such great joy,
 As such a day was never consecrated.
 To memorize which more then blissfull Feast,
 We are incited by the love we owe him,
 The same to celebrate, or at the least,
 Our great, great joy most thankfully to shew him.
 Then naught remaines but that we all doe pray,
 God blesse Prince HENRY, prop of England's joy!

RUMOR.

Saint George for England is the Patrone Knight,
 Whose ever-conquering and all-daring hand
 Did put whole hoasts of heathen foes to flight,
 That did the vigour of his strength withstand.
 He that did ever live, a Champion stout,
 With such undaunted holy-high resolve,
 That through the Earth his fame did flie about,
 Which shall not die till Heav'n and Earth dissolve.
 Against the heathen-folke his force he prov'd,
 By which he did decline their highest pride;
 For which of Heav'n and Earthe he was belov'd,
 And made a glorious Saint, when as he dide.
 Upon a hideous dragon, whose thick scales
 Like shields, that nought could pierce by force nor arte,
 Did bulwarke him, so fast his faulchion falls,
 That he through them made way unto his heart.
 Whose rare atchivements and whose rich renowne,
 Flowing from matchlesse magnanimity,

Still makes them owners of Great Britaine's Crowne,
 As in this day to crowne his memory.
 Whose Fame's bright splendor rarely to depaint
 In colours rich according to his worth,
 Would try the tongue of Hermes, sith this Saint
 Thus travels Britaine's glory to bring forth.
 Many a monster he by force subdu'de,
 And many a fiend incarnate he supprest,
 Whose sword did still mowe downe their multitude,
 So to imbarne them in hell's restlesse rest :
 When loe ! at length returning to the soile,
 Wherein he first receav'd his vitall breath,
 He spent his time religiously a while,
 Till Death had slaine him, who now conquers Death.
 So Britaines, when they fight with cheere, they say,
 ' God and Saint George for England ! ' to this day.

PEACE. To bring glad newes of future happy yeares,
 Peace is the Nuntius that such tydings beares ;
 Who while the Scotch the English faire entreat,
 And me embrace withall, I'll make them great.
 No forraigne Nation shall affront their force
 As long as I direct them in that course.
 All rash dissentions and litigious braules
 I shall expell from their unshaken walls.
 All civill mutinies shall then surcease,
 And Peace shall bring them everlasting peace.
 Inveterate hate so will I turne to love,
 As with one motion both shall jointly move.
 Brother with brother, nay, the foe with friend
 For ' mine ' and ' thine ' shall never more contend.
 No massacre nor bloody stratageme
 Shall stirre in Peace's New Jerusalem ;
 No civill discord nor domestick strife
 Shall e're annoy their peace, much lesse their life ;
 For, like to olive branches, they shall beare
 Fruit that gives Love an appetite to beare ;
 Which mutuall concord dateless shall endure
 As long as Love can peace to love procure.
 I'll binde their loves with True Love's Gordian knot,
 That rude Dissention's hands undoe it not ;
 And with a wreath of ever-during baies
 Crowne all your browes with peace-procured praise ;
 I'll rend the close-mouth'd rage of emulous Strife,
 And wound Distraction with Connexion's knife ;

And when damn'd Malice comes but once in sight,
 I, with a vengeance, will suppress her straight.
 I'll send pale Envie downe to hell with speed,
 Where she upon her snakes shall only feed;
 And with some pois'nous and invenom'd toade
 Her much more poys'nous selfe shall make abode;
 Which being done, I'll send that base infection,
 Whose only vertue is but base, Detraction,
 Her to associate; where they both shall live
 As long as hell can life with horror give.

And thus shall Peace their joy perpetuate,
 That love in love to stay this blessed state.

PLENTIE. Since Plenty still co-operates with Peace,
 Plenty shall blesse your basket of encrease;
 From whose abundant ne're-exhausted store,
 You shall receave much more then y' had before.
 I'll stuffe your barnes up to the throat with graine,
 Which shall all yours and others still sustaine;
 I'll fructifie the Earth with rarest fruites
 Of sundry shapes, and severall kinde of suites;
 So as the soile, that beares seed timely sowne,
 Under the burthen of their waight shall groane.
 In all abundance I will reare your beasts,
 Which shall maintaine your o're-abounding feasts;
 Fish, fowle, hearbes, grasse, and all things whatsoe're,
 Shall at your dore be cheape, and nothing deere.
 I'll sinke into the concaves of Earthe's molde,
 And there-hence pull and cull her purest golde;
 And then will dive into the ocean-deepes,
 To raise the treasure which their Neptune keepes.
 I'll freight your ships with such o're-fraighting store,
 That Greediness herselfe shall seeke no more.
 No scarsity shall in your land be found
 As long as I with Nature till your ground.
 What shall I say? your life-supporting staffe,
 The staffe of bread, I'll throw abroad like chaffe.
 Then see how graciously the High'st hath sent yee,
 Peace in all fulnesse, in all fulnesse Plentie!

ENVIE and LOVE.

ENVIE. Hisse!

LOVE. Why how now, Envie? do'st thou hisse at Phœbus?

ENVIE. Yes; and at Cynthia too, if she anger us.

LOVE. Your reason, Envie?

ENVIE. Why, my reason's this,
To hear a cat cry mewe, who can but hisse?

LOVE. Out, hissing scorpion!

ENVIE. Out, yee filthy foole!
Envie hath wit to set such apes to schoole.

LOVE. Malicious monster! thou incarnate devill!
Whose base condition is the source of evill.
Thou envious bandogge, speak, and do thy worst,
He that regards it is the most accurst!

ENVIE. And he that thinks that Love can e're be wise,
Hath neither judgement, wisdom, wit, nor eyes!

LOVE. Say, thou abortive men-detested slave,
Whose only vertue is but to deprave
Man's best proceedings; speake, thou squint-eiede monster,
What is the cause which makes thee still misconster?

ENVIE. Because I hate to heare a want-wit preach
Beyond wit's bounds, and wisdom's boundlesse reach;
'To see a superficiall sot make show
Of deeper skill then wit itselfe doth know!

LOVE. What is the solace Envie counteth deepe?

ENVIE. Marie [marry], to see a wolfe devoure a sheepe,
To see men-divels breeding still dissention
Is sport, methinks, beyond all comprehension!
Or else a rich man hunger-pined with want,
To see an army, when their foode is scant,
Eate their own excrements; O! this is sport
For Envie, that without this is *all amort*¹.
To see a drove of drunkards, like to swine,
Swilling their soules in soule-or'whelming wine;
To see a city burnt, or barne on fire;
To see a sonne the butcher of his sire;
To see two swaggerars eagerly to strive
Which of them both shall make the hang-man thrive;
To see a good man poore or wise man bare;
To see Dame Vertue overwhelm'd with care;

¹ Half-dead, spiritless; from the French *à la mort*. Shakspeare uses this expression:

"How fares my Kate? what, sweeting, *all amort*?" *Taming of the Shrew*, iv. 3

See other instances in Mr. Archdeacon Nares's Glossary. N.

To see a ruin'd church ; a preacher dumbe ;
 A King's childe perish in the mother's wombe ;
 To see a miser, who, to have his pelfe,
 Will take a rope, and, desp'rate, hang himselfe ;
 To see a virgine by a varlet us'd,
 Till she by him to death be so abus'd ;
 Or else to see a father sucke the blood
 Of his own spawn ; O ! these would do me good !
 But to behold a ranke of rustick boyes
 Shewing us childish people childish toyes
 To grace a day with ; O ! it grates my gall
 To hear an apish kitling catterwall.
 Is it not harsh to hear a marmeset squeake¹
 Upon a stage a most unointed speake ?
 And then to heare some ignorant baboone
 Sweare that this monky did surmount the moone ;
 Whereas the infant's best is too, too bad,
 And which to heare would make a wise man mad !

LOVE. Thou damn'd infection ; damned from thy birth,
 Abhor'd of Heav'n, and odious to the Earth !
 How canst thou ever hope to merit grace,
 When thy delight is but detraction base ?
 But since there is no signe of grace in that
 Damn'd face of thine, which hell doth wonder at,
 Love shall conjure thee that, from this time forth,
 Thou ne're frequent this Iland of the North.
 Dive to the depth of deepest Stygian flood,
 There sucke thou snakes, and snakes there sucke thy blood ;
 Or sinke thou quite to the infernall deepe,
 Where crawling scorpions may about thee creepe ;
 And there among those vermine vile beneath,
 Belk up that poison which thou here dost breath.
 Goe ! I conjure thee, least I make thee feele
 The keenest edge of wrath's revenging steele ;
 Burthen the Earth no more, thou hateful toade,
 With such a ponderous earth-annoying load.
 Goe, with a vengeance goe ! and ne're retire,
 But weare out time in everlasting fire !

ENVIE. O ! I could grind and grate thee with my teeth.

LOVE. No more, thou monster ! hence be gone forthwith.

¹ A marmoset, a small monkey, from the French *marmouset*.

ENVIE. Confusion, death, plague, pestilence, and piles¹,
 Confound their soules who at my anguish smiles.
 Yet, ere I goe, I'll bid the best farewell,
 Hoping ere long to meete their ghosts in hell!

LOVE. Goe, ugly monster, Love's misanthropos!
 Sinke downe to tortour and continuall woes.
 Heaven excludes thee; Earth abhors thy sight,
 And greeves to beare the burthen of thy weight.
 Sinke to her centre, there's thy native rest,
 And never more be seene to spot her brest;
 So hast thee hence, and henceforth I'll direct
 My Speech to those whom I doe best affect.
 Love bids you welcome that are come in love,
 To see our sports that Envie doth reprove.

Joy. Envie, avaunt! thou art no fit compeere
 T' associate these our sweet consociats heere.
 Joy doth exclude thee, who, to thy disgrace,
 Here spits defiance in thy ugly face;
 And, that is more, thy everlasting shame
 Shall be still blasted by the trumpe of Fame.
 The powerfull tongue of facund Mercury
 Shall to the World display thy infamy.
 Chester abhors thy presence; Britaine hates thee;
 And for a damned fury Camber takes thee.
 Peace as a herald shall proclaime to all,
 That thou art damn'd by justice generall.
 Plenty detests thy base society,
 Who scornes thy hell-born grosse impietie.
 And last of all my love, in Love's defence,
 In spight of envie, shall send Envie hence.
 Wherefore avaunt! that all the Isle may sing,
 ' Now Envie's gone, in peace w' enjoy our King.'

After the running of the Horses, FAME speakes:
 With rich characters of resplendant gold,
 Fame hath your names within her booke enrold;
 Which, till Time stays his course, shall glitter bright,
 Maugre detraction and fell Envie's spight.

BRITAINE, to him that wan the best Bell:
 In signe of victory which thou hast gain'd,
 This wreath by thy faire front shall be sustain'd;

¹ The disease of that name is meant. N.

Whose green-leav'd branches unto Fame shall tell,
That thou didst best deserve the better Bell.

RUMOR, *to him that wan the Ring* :
Thou that, by either cunning or by chance,
Didst take the Ring with thy thrice-happy lance;
Here take of me (to raise thy vertues up)
This wreath of balme, and pollisht Silver Cup.

All together :
And so we all, in all your severall graces,
Will with your fame o're-fill all times and places.

CHESTER's *last Speech* :
No action, though admir'd for excellence,
No practize, though of high'st preheminance,
That can escape the Poliphimian eye
Of Envie, that for ever lookes awry.
Yet, notwithstanding, on your loves depending,
Whose patient eares excludes all reprehending;
We here submit our selves in humblest wise,
Before the barre of your judicious eyes.
What we present unto your dainty eares
Is freed from scandalls; so is free from feares.
Onely your loves, which are our fairest markes,
Must muzzle Envie; when the Fury barks
Unto the best, we doubt not but our best
May purchase favour; and for all the rest
We doe expect but this poor kindnesse from them,
That they would speake but what shall well become them.
This being graunted, Chester would invite
Each noble worthy, and each worthy Knight,
To close their stomacke with a small repast,
Which may content a temperate curious tast.
Measure our ardent loves with such kinde measure,
As we afford you sport, and give you pleasure;
And so wee'll leave you with this solemn vow,
That whilst we breath, our hearts shall honour you.

If any Reader shall desire to know
Who was the Author of this pleasing show;
Let him receave advertizement hereby,
A Sheriffe late of Chester, AMERIE
Did thus performe it; who for his reward
Desires but love and competent regard.

ROBERT AMERIE¹.

¹ These last six lines were probably the composition of that Gentleman. N.

About this time Frederic Ulric, son of the Duke of Brunswick, arrived in England, and made a Tour to various places in this country¹. When in London, he was lodged and entertained by his cousin Prince Henry²; and on the 20th of April, the two Princes, “accompanied with the Duke of Lenox, the Earle of Arundell, and others, came privatly to the Tower, and caused the great Lion to be put into the yard, and four Doggs at a course to be set upon him; and they all fought with him instantly, saving such as at their first comming into the yard in their fury fell upon one another, because they saw none else with whom to fight, for the Lion kept close to the trap-doore at the further end of the yard. These were choise Doggs, and flue al at the Lion’s head, whereat the Lion became enraged, and furiously bit divers Dogges by the head and throat, holding their heads and necks in his mouth, as a cat doth hould a rat, and with his clawes he tore their flesh extreamly; al which notwithstanding, many of them would not let go their hould, untill they were utterly spoiled. After divers courses and spoyle of divers Doggs, and great likelihood of spoile of more, which yet lay tugging with the Lyon, for whose rescue there entred in three stout Beare-wards, and set a lustie Dogge uppon the mouth of the Lyon; and the last Dog got ful hould of the Lion’s tung, puld it out of his mouth, held it so fast, that the Lyon neither bitte him nor any other; whereupon it was generally imagined that these Doggs would instantly spoile the Lyon, he being now out of breath, and bard from biting; and although there were now but three Doggs upon him, yet they vexed him sore; whereupon the above mentioned young lusty Lyon and Lyonesse were both put out together, to see if they would rescue the third, but they would not, but fearfully gazed upon the Doggs. Then two or three of the worst Doggs which had left the first Lion, ran upon them, chased them up and down the yard, seeking by all meanes to avoyd the Doggs; and so soone as their trap-doore was open they both ran hastily into their den, and a Dog that pursued them ranne in with them, where they all three, like good friends, stood very peaceably without any manner of violence eyther to other; and then the three Beare-wardes came bouldly in againe, and tooke off all the Doggs but one from the Lyon, and carried them away. The Lyon having fought long, and his tongue torne, lay staring and panting a pretie while, so as all the behoulders thought hee had beene utterly

¹ See pp. 290, 310.

² *Ambassades de M. de la Boderie*, tome V. p. 222.

spoiled and spent; and upon a sodaine gazed upon that Dog which remained, and so soone as hee had spoiled him, espying the trap-doore open ranne hastilie into his den, and there never ceast walking up and downe, to and fro, untill he had brought himselfe into his former temperature¹.”

April 25, the King departed from London towards Newmarket²; and on that day Prince Henry again³ visited Woolwich Dock-yard, to observe the progress of the new ship; and dined there with all his Train in Mr. Pette's dining-room⁴.

On the 26th, Mr. Dudley Carleton writes as follows to Sir Thos. Edmonds⁵:

“The Easter holidays were spent at Court with accustomed solemnities. The Sunday was well suited with two reverend Preachers, the Bishop of Bath⁶ to the Household, and Chichester⁷ before the King. The Tuesday, whereof the afternoon was spent in bear-baiting, was as well fitted with a Chaplain, one Dr. Smith, Head of a House in Cambridge, who so well baited all the great ones, terming them *suffragatores aulæi*, for abusing the King's ear in preferment of suit, Judges for prohibitions, Patrons for impropriations and selling of benefices, and all sorts of Officers for corruption in their places, and that in so plain and broad terms that I know not how he escaped baiting himself.

“The King is at this present at Theobalds, but looked for quickly here in town, having now in hand the translation of his Book into Latin; wherein he used Sir Henry Saville and some others; and it will be yet a fortnight's work; meantime the English Book will come forth again well purged of some oversights⁸.”

“The second of May,” says Mr. Pette, “the Lady Elizabeth with her Train came to see the great ship at Woolwich, and was entertained by my wife, I being in London⁹.”

On the same day, Mr. Beaulieu writes word to Mr. Trumbull, that, upon some

¹ “Whilest he was hot hee would never offer to lie downe, but walked to and fro.” Howes.—Of similar sports at the Tower see before, p. 259.

² Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 153.

³ See p. 283.

⁴ Archæologia, vol. XII. p. 258.

⁵ Of whom see p. 191.

⁶ James Mountague, D. D. of whom see vol. I. p. 313; and this Volume, p. 66.

⁷ His Majesty's constant favourite, Dr. Andrews; who was now Bishop of Ely, having been translated to that see in the previous September (see p. 284); this Mr. Carleton had probably not heard of, or had forgotten. The Bishop's text was Job xix. 23—27; and the discourse is in his “XCVI Sermons,” the fifth on the Resurrection.

⁸ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4176. From Sir T. Edmonds's State Papers.

⁹ Archæologia, vol. XII. p. 258.

Parliamentary “difficulties, his Majesty, who did purpose to stay a fortnight or three weeks longer in the country, is now out of hand to return hither, untill when there will be nothing done in the business ¹.”

The following passage from a Letter of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Ralph Winwood, also dated the same day, gives a curious account of numerous duels about this period. Speaking of the military preparations of the King of France², he says: “The Lord Treasurer hath sent me his Secretary Kirkham to take order to furnish the Lord Cranbourn with all necessaries to follow the French King, and more of our Court Gallants talk of taking the same course if the voiage hold. Indeed it were fitter they had some place abroad to vent their superfluous valour, then to brabble so much as they do here at home; for in one week wee had three or four great quarrells; the first ’twixt the Earls of Southampton and Montgomerie that fell out at tennis, when the rackets flew about their ears; but the matter was taken up and compounded by the King without further bloodshed. But the matter was not so easily ended ’twixt young Egerton, eldest son to Sir John, and one Morgan, a Lawyer’s son of good estate; the first being left dead in the field, and the other sore hurt; and yet cannot be bailed and dispensed withall, but that he lyes still by it in Newgate. The Lord Norris likewise went into the field with Peregrine Willoughby³ upon an old reckoning, and hurt him dangerously in the shoulder.”

Mr. Chamberlain adds, “The last widow, Lady Dorset, found the way to the Fleete againe, where she lay six or seven days for pressing into the Privy-chamber, and importuning the King, contrary to commandmaunt⁴.”

“Our St. George’s Feast passed without making any new Knights, there being no place void but only that of the Lord Scroope. The next day the King went to Thetford⁵, where he now remains. The Solemnity of creating the Prince of Wales is appointed to be the day after Trinity-Sunday.”

¹ Winwood’s Memorials, vol. III. p. 153.

² The murder of Henry the Fourth took place two days after the date of this Letter.

³ For both these names the Reader is referred to the Prince’s Creation, pp. 326, 327; the latter was then made K. B.

⁴ See p. 246.—The Lady was the great heiress of Sir John Spencer, married successively to Lord Monteagle, Lord Compton, and the Duke. See Brydges’s Peerage, vol. III. p. 149.

⁵ Of the King’s Visits to Thetford see vol. I. p. 497; this Volume, p. 212; and more particularly under the date of May 4, 1616.

It has been before mentioned that Prince Frederic Ulric of Brunswick was now travelling in England. He went first probably to Oxford¹, but of his reception there we find no record. We next find him at Gloucester; and “on the 10th of May, being Good Friday, the Duke of Brunswick, Queene Anne her Sister’s Son, being 18 years of age, came to the City of Bristol from Gloucester. He was brought in with 200 horse, and twenty-five great pieces of ordinance were discharged on the Marsh² at his entry. He was met by the Mayor, the Aldermen, and Common Council at the Tolzey; and there was an Oration made unto him. Which being ended, the Mayor, &c. brought him to his lodging at the White Lyon in Brode-street, where the Mayor and many of the Council supped with him; and at supper-time sundry vollies of shot were performed by all the Trained Bands, 300 men or thereabouts. The next morning he walked round the Marsh with the Mayor and Aldermen, where the great ordinance were twice discharged. Then he dined at the Mayor’s, and in the afternoon (being Easter evening) took his journey for Bath³.”

We find him at Bath on the 13th⁴; whence he probably returned to Prince Henry, on account of the melancholy event which follows; though it had been arranged that he should visit Salisbury⁵.

“The Murder⁶ of Henry the Fourth of France,” observes Dr. Birch, “was a

¹ See Mr. Chamberlain’s Letter, p. 314.

² This Marsh is now the site of Queen-square, the most handsome part of Bristol.

³ Seyer’s Bristol, vol. II. p. 263.—On “the 10th of April in the preceding year, being Monday before Easter, the Duke of Lennox, the King’s uncle, came from Bath to Bristoll, whom the Sheriffs, with 200 horse, met in Kingswood, and brought to Sir John Young’s house, the Bishop of the City then dwelling there; where he lodged that night. And at his entering there was an Oration in Latin made unto him, and after that 30 pieces of ordinance were discharged in the Marsh. On Tuesday, in the morning, he rode with the Mayor and many others to Hungrode, and returned by water. On Wednesday he brake fast or dined at Mr. Mayor’s, and then rode away for the Court, being accompanied with the Sheriffs and like company beyond Kingswood.” Ibid.

⁴ See p. 312.

⁵ See Mr. Chamberlain’s Letter.

⁶ On this subject it were as unnecessary as foreign to the subject of this work to enlarge. — To exhibit, however, the interest excited in England by this horrible deed, the following list of some of the Tracts printed in this country at the time, is here given. They were chiefly translations from the French. The first eight are from their entries at Stationers’ Hall:

1. “May 10. A booke” was entered by John Busby, senior, “called, ‘Newes from Ffraunce containinge a true reporte of the Murther of the late Kinge Henry the Fourth, the crowninge of the Queene and Dauphine of Ffraunce, with the state of the cuntory as it now standeth.’

2. “May 14. By Will. Barrett. A booke called in Ffrenche, ‘Discours Lamentable sur l’attentat

severe shock to Prince Henry, who had always had the highest esteem of the heroic qualities of that Monarch, as the latter had a reciprocal regard for his Highness, and such a confidence in him, that one of our Historians¹ assures us, that he had seen papers, which make it more than probable that the Prince was not et parricide commis en la personne de Henry IV. Roy de Ffraunce,' to be translated into English.'—The French and Italian editions of this are in the British Museum.

3. "May 15. By William Barley. A ballad entitled, 'The wofull Complaynt of Ffraunce for the death of the late Kinge Henry the Ffowrth.'

4. "May 30. By the same. A booke called, 'The arrest of the Courte of Parliamente agaynst the most wicked parricide, Ffrauncis Ravailac.'—The French edition of this, printed at Rouen, 1610, 8vo, is in the British Museum.

5. "The same day—by the same. 'A Declaration made by the Kinge sittinge in Justice the 15th day of May 1610, with the lettres patents for the Queene's Regencye duringe his Majestie's minority. Published in the Courte of Parliament at Roane the 28th of May 1610.'

6. "Sept. 14. A booke called, 'Anticoton; or a Refutation of a narrative Letter of Father Coton, wherein is proved that the Jesuits are guyly, yea, the very authoritie of the villainous murther committed agaynst the person of the most Christian Kinge Henry the Fourth. Translated out of the Ffrench copye written by P. D. C.'

7. "Nov. 7. Nath. Butter entered under the hands of my Lord Bysshop of Bathe and Wells and the Wardens, a booke to be translated out of Ffrenche into Englishe, called, 'Remonstrance à Messieurs de la Cour de Parlement sur le parricide comis en la personne de Roy Henry le Grand.'—The French edition is in the British Museum, and the Bodleian Library.

8. "Jan. 12, 1610-11. A booke called, 'The True French Herald; or, a complaynt and earnest exhortation to all trusty Christian Princes [to a holy warre] upon the execrable murther and unfortunate death of Henry the Greate.'—A copy of this is in the Bodleian Library.

9. In Oldys's Catalogue of the Harleian Tracts is mentioned, "The terrible and deserved death of Francis Ravilliack, shewing the manner of his strange torments at his execution upon Fryday the 25th of May last past, for the Murther of the late French King, Henry the Fourth; together with an abstract out of divers proclamations and edicts now concerning the State of France. As it was printed in French in three several bookes; published by authoritie, 1610. At London:

William Barley and John Baylie, 1610," 4to, 20 pp.

The two following are in the British Museum:

10. "Sighes of Fraunce for the death of Henry IV. London, 1610," 8vo.—The French edition is in the Bodleian.

11. "Discourse to the Parliament of Paris, concerning the Murther of King Henry IV. translated by W. Crashaw. London, 1611," 4to.—This may be the same as No. 7.

The two next are in the Bodleian Library.

12. "The Funeral Pompe and Obsequies of Henry IV. of France, from the French."

13. "A Letter declaring the Manner of the Execution of Ravailac, 1610."

Five other French and one Italian Tract on this melancholy subject, besides those already mentioned, are to be found in the Catalogues of the British Museum and the Bodleian Library.

¹ Dr. Welwood, in his Memoirs, p. 19, edit. 1710.

only acquainted with the secret design of the King's vast preparations made by him some time before his death, but likewise engaged in the design. The Prince had no sooner heard of that King's assassination than he dispatched an account of it by Sir David Foulis to his Cousin Frederic Ulric; who, upon receiving this melancholy news, wrote to his Highness a Letter in French, from Bath the 13th of May, expressing his astonishment and confusion at so execrable an act, and his apprehensions of the troubles which might arise from it. He desired the Prince's excuse for not enlarging upon that subject in his Letter, which resentment and grief prevented him from being able to do, reserving it for that happy hour, when he hoped to enjoy his Highness's conversation, at his intended return within a few days to his Court¹."

Amidst the agitation excited by the Murder of the King of France, "the fourth of June, the King by proclamation, commanded all Romaine Priests, Jesuits, and Seminaries, to depart this Kingdome by the fourth day of July next, and not to returne, upon paine of severity of the Law. This Proclamation also straightly commaunded all recusants to returne home to their dwellings, and not to remaine in London, nor to come within ten miles of the Court without especiall license; but to depart from London and the Court by the last day of this moneth of June, and to remaine confined according to the tennor of the statute in that behalfe ordained.

"Presently after this Proclamation, the oth of allegiance was ministred unto all Officers, Barresturs, Atturnies, and Clarkes, belonging unto any of the Courts of Westminster Hall, the Exchequer, and Court of Requests, and also unto all Doctors of the Lawes, Advocats, and Proctours of the Spirituall Courts; this oth was also ministred unto all other sorts of Lawyers, as Students in the Innes of Court and Chancery, and unto al Students and Schollers in both the Universities; and I should have tould you before, that presently upon the Murther of the French King, all our English Lords and Commons of the Parliament of England, humbly besought his Majesty to have a more especyall care then formerly had bin, for the preservation of his Royal Person, and likewise to take speedy order for avoyding imminent daunger, and keeping his subjects in their due obedience. And forthwith the Commons of the Parliament for manifestation of their alleageance, love, and dutie, they voluntarilie, of their own accord, tooke the oth of alleageance; and after them the Lords of the Upper House did so likewise, and ministred the

¹ Birch's Prince Henry, p. 189.

same oth unto all their servants and followers; and those that refused to take this oth were put from their Lords' services.

“ And the Bishops, in their Convocation-house, ordained that every Bishop in his seaverall Visitation should administer the same oth unto all their Clergie and Officers, which they performed accordingly. After which the oth was ministred unto others, as is last before mentioned. And upon further occasion the next yeare following, *viz.* the fourth of June 1611, the King by Proclamation straightly commaunded the oth of alleageance to be then also administred unto al sorts of people, and a true certificate thereof to be made unto the great Lords of the Privie Counsell of the due administration therof, with the names of such as should refuse to take the oth, under the hands of two Justices of Peace, according to the meaning of the statute in that behalfe lately provided¹.”

On the 9th of May, Mr. Beaulieu thus writes from London to Mr. Trumbull, respecting two important new Projects: “ Much ado there is in the House about the work undertaken and far advanced already by Middleton, of the cutting of a River and bringing it to London from ten or twelve miles off, through the grounds of many men, who for their particular interests do strongly oppose themselves to it, and are like (as it is said) to overthrow it all².

“ Heretofore I did write unto you of a certain Project which was here in hand, for the erecting a Colledge at Chelsey, for the studying and handling Controversies in Religion. Which work doth now begin to go forward, the King having passed his grant of the place and lands about it, which he doth give them for the building and accommodating of the same; specially at the solicitation of the Dean of Exeter³, who doth give £.1000 out of his purse, and £.300 a year towards the building and maintaining of the same. The number of those that are to be entertained there, is (as I hear) twenty Doctors, amongst which there will be two for History, besides other Students, whereof a good number shall be entertained and instructed there for that function. This work is the more commendable for that it is most necessary⁴.”

¹ Howes' Chronicle.

² Of the early history of the New River, and its arrival at the “ Head,” on Michaelmas-day 1613, see under that date.

³ Matthew Sutcliffe, LL. D. afterwards Provost of Chelsea College. But Arthur Wilson justly attributes this design to Archbp. Bancroft, whose death, Nov. 2 in this year, put an entire stop to it.

⁴ Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 160.

On May 17, were knighted, by letters patent, the following Ambassadors from the United Provinces: Joackimy, Deputy of Zealand in the Assembly of the United Provinces, and Counsellor of Goes; Helias ab Oldenbarnevelt, Doctor of Law, Lord in Middlehern, Syndic and Counsellor of Rotterdam; John Berk¹, Doctor of Law, Lord in Godschalkoor, Syndic and Chief Counsellor of Dort; and Albert de Veer, Doctor of Law, Syndic and Counsellor of Amsterdam².

On the 24th, Mr. John Chamberlain thus writes, from London, to Sir Ralph Winwood: "The lamentable loss of the French King doth affect us here very much; and our King and whole Court have put on their habits of mourning now five or six days since. The Solemnity of creating the Prince of Wales is appointed the 4th of the next moneth, when there shall be twenty-four new Knights of the Bath made, whereof there is like to be better choise than heretofore³, for none shall be admitted but who are nobly descended. The Queen is preparing and practising a new Maske against that time, and the young Duke of Brunswick will be returned from his journey⁴ of visiting Oxford, Bath, Bristow, Salisbury, and those other Western parts⁵."

On the 27th, Whit-Sunday, Bishop Andrews again preached before the King at Whitehall; his Sermon was on John xiv. 15, 16⁶.

The Ceremony of Prince Henry's being created Prince of Wales⁷ was preceded by an aquatic spectacle, which is described in the following Tract:

¹ One of the Ambassadors entertained at Merchant Taylors' Hall in 1607; see pp. 141, 143.

² The patents are printed in Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. XVI. p. 687.—In a Letter to the Earl of Salisbury, dated "Hague, June 2, 1610, O. S.," Sir Ralph Winwood says: "The States' Ambassadors upon their return, have acknowledged with humble thanks the gracious treatment they have received from his Majesty, and in particular the many honourable favours your Lordship vouchsafed them." Winwood's *Memorials*, vol. III. p. 178.

³ This alludes to those made in 1603, see vol. I. p. 221; but the few created in 1604-5 were of no mean extraction; see vol. I. p. 477.

⁴ See p. 310.

⁵ Winwood's *Memorials*, vol. III. p. 175.

⁶ Printed in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the third on the Sending of the Holy Ghost.

⁷ Of the previous proceedings, and the Aid collected through the country, see p. 211, 266.—Two General Commissions for collecting this Aid, and two for the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge, are to be found in Rymer, vol. XVI. pp. 680—682.

LONDON'S LOVE TO THE ROYAL PRINCE HENRIE,
MEETING HIM ON THE RIVER OF THAMES,

AT HIS RETURNE FROM RICHMONDE,

WITH A WORTHIE FLEETE OF HER CITTIZENS, ON THURSDAY THE LAST OF MAY 1610.

WITH A BRIEFE REPORTE OF THE WATER-FIGHT AND FIRE-WORKES¹.

“To the Right Honorable Sir Thomas Cambell², Knight, Lord Major of this famous Cittie of London; and to all the Aldermen his worthie Bretheren, &c.

“I holde it but right and justice, honorable Lord, and you the rest of this pollitique bodie, to give you that which you have best deserved; to wit, a true taste of that daye's sollemne Triumphe in honor of so hopeful a Prince, and wherein your great love appeared not a little. Your time for preparation was verie short; and mine, for your service, much shorter; yet, of mine own knowledge, bothe of them were verie Royally and gratefully accepted, which I am sure was all your chiefest expectation, and than which nothing could be more desired by myselfe. Accepte then your owne, and me at your continuall service.”

¹ London: Printed by Edw. Alde, for Nathaniell Fosbrooke, and are to be solde at the West end of Paules, neere to the Bishop of London's gate, 1610,” 4to, pp. 29.—Only three copies of this rare Tract are known to exist. One is in the very curious Library of Francis Freeling, Esq. by whose kindness I now re-print it. This copy was formerly Mr. Gough's, and sold by him as a duplicate, he possessing a second copy, bound up with “Chester's Triumph in Honor of her Prince,” and now in the Bodleian Library (see p. 290).—Of the third a description was sent to the Gentleman's Magazine, and printed in vol. LXXVIII. p. 38, with the following introductory Letter, dated “Exeter, Oct. 6, 1807.

“Mr. Urban,

“A few days ago, in an old room in the Cloisters at the Cathedral Church of St. Peter, Exeter, I picked up an old tract, which I have never seen an account of in any catalogue; and being very small, and printed near 200 years ago, perhaps but few are now extant. I therefore presume the following description of it will not be uninteresting to the curious in rare books. Yours, &c. S. Woolmer, Printer of the Exeter Gazette.”—The only part of Mr. Woolmer's description that need be here quoted, is that that copy had a frontispiece of two curious wood-cuts representing “two men of war finely equipped, and in full sail.” On applying lately to Mr. Woolmer, I find he parted with this curiosity soon after his communication to the Magazine, to whom he does not recollect. It was probably the same as Mr. Bindley's copy which was sold, Jan. 23, 1819, to Mr. Sturt, bookseller, for £6; but further I have not been able to trace it.—A companion of this Tract, “Civitis Amor; the Citie's Love” to Prince Charles on his Creation November 4, 1616, was published in that year. This will be found under its proper date.

² See vol. I. pp. 234, 376.

London's Love to the Royall Prince Henrie, meeting him on the River of Thames (at his returne from Richmonde) with a worthie Fleete of her Cittizens, on Thursday the last of May 1610; &c.

It hath ever bin the nature of this honorable and famous Cittie, matchlesse for her love and loyaltie in all ages past and present, to come behinde none other of this worlde whatsoever, in dutie to her Soveraigne, and care, not only of common good, but also of vertuous and never-dying credit. And such hath alwayes bin the indulgent endeavour of her worthie Magistrates, from time to time, that they would never let slip any good occasion whereby so maine and especial respect might be duely and successively preserved. And so much the rather, because Plato termeth Magistracy to be the anchor, head, and soule of any Citty; and holdeth it for the same thing in any Commonwealth, as the heart is in the body of a living creature, or as reason in the soule; which being the chiefe and essentiall parts of either, the life and existence of the whole is in that power, and their cheerful motion gives courage and alacritie to all the other partes of the bodie.

Whereof no better exemplarie rule can be made than the late apparant testimonie of London's Love to the Royall Prince Henrie, appointed by our dread Soveraigne his Father to be created Prince of Wales and Earle of Chester, even now in the Assembly of the High Court of Parliament; that he might be the twelfth Prince in the Royall Creation, succeeding those eleven so long since passed.

For our chronicles and recordes doe name but eleven, that (since the Conquest) were Princes of Wales. Whereof the first was Edward, sonne to King Henrie the Third, who afterward was King Edward the First. He was created Prince at London.

The second was Edward his sonne, called also afterward King Edward the Second, and he had his creation at London likewise.

Thirdly, Edward his sonne, being after that King Edward the Third; but he had his creation at Yorke.

Fourthly, Edward, surnamed the Black Prince, who was sonne to King Edward the Third, that conquered France, and quartered their arms with ours. He also was created at London.

The fift was King Richard the Second, sonne to that worthie warriour the Black Prince, who lived not to enjoy the Crowne. He had his creation at Havering.

The sixt was Henrie the Fift, eldest sonne to King Henry the Fourth; and he had his creation at London.

The seaventh was Edward, the sonne of King Edward the Sixt, whose creation I read to be at Reading.

The eight was Edward, the sonne of King Edward the Fourth, afterward called Edward the Fift, never crowned, but made away by his cruell unckle Richard the Third. He was also created at London.

The ninth was Edward, sonne to King Richard the Third, created at London also.

The tenth was Prince Arthur, sonne to King Henrie the Seaventh, who deceasing, his brother Henrie (afterward King Henrie the Eight), who was made the eleventh, was also created Prince of Wales; and bothe of them at London.

All these fore-named Princes of Wales were created sollemnely, by and in the Court of Parliament; except three, which were Richard the Second, Edward the Fift, and Edward the sonne of Richard the Third. And those that were created out of Parliament were Princes of a hard and disaster fortune. For Richard the Second was deposed, Edward the Fifte murdered, and Richard the Third his sonne dyed within three months after, as a just judgement of God for his father's wickedness¹.

But now our Royall Henrie comming to be the twelfth Prince in this great dignitie, and London's Cheefe Magistrate the Lord Maior, with his worthie Bretheren the Aldermen, having very shorte and sudden intelligence thereof; after some small consultation, understanding that the Prince was to come from Richmonde by water, they determined to meete him in such good manner as the brevitie of time would then permit them.

Wherefore, upon Thursday, being the last day of May, about eight of the clocke in the morning, all the worshipfull Companies of the Cittie² were readie in

¹ This is not unlike what has been remarked of Prince Henry himself—that he was too good for his Father and family. N.

² The two following Precepts, which were issued on this occasion to the several Livery Companies, are now first printed from the Records of the City of London:

1. "To the Maister and Wardens of the Companie of Merchant-Taylors [and the other Companies].

"By the Maior.

"I have receaved by Lettres from the Lords of his Majestie's most honorable Privie Councell, that the Prince his Highenes is to come from Richmonde to Westminster to bee created Prince of Wales, the which Ceremonie is to bee performed with honor and tryumphe, and therefore it is required, that I, with the Companies of this Cittie, doe meete the Prince upon the water at Chelsey, accompanied in such sort as is used when the Lord Maior goeth to Westminster to take his oath; and the time appointed is upon Thursdaie morninge in Whitson weeke, beinge the last of this moneth. These are, therefore, to require you so to dispose and order althings concerninge your Companie as shalbee fit-

the bardges upon the water, with their streamers and ensignes gloriously displayed, drommes, trumpets, fifes, and other musikes attending on them, to awaite the Lord Maior and Aldermens' comming.

No sooner had his Honor and the rest taken barge, but on they rowed, with such a chearefull noyse of hermonie, and so goodlie a shewe in order and equipage, as made the beholders and hearers not meanelly delighted; beside a peale of ordinance that welcomde them as they entred on the water. To beautifie so sumptuous a shewe, and to grace the day with more matter of triumphe, it seemd that tinge, both for the credit and honor of this Cittie and your Companie, and to the good satisfaccion of his Majestie and the Prince. And that you and your Liverie bee readie in your barge, well and richlie set forth, before seaven of the clocke in the morninge, wherein you are not to faile, as you will answere the contrarie at your perilles. [Dated the 24th of Maie 1610.] SEBRIGHT."

2. "To the Maister and Wardens of the Companie of Stationers [and others].

"By the Maior.

"Whereas, by a former Precept to you directed, it was appointed that your Companie should attend mee, the Lord Maior, and my Brethren the Aldermen, at the Three Cranes by seven of the clocke in the morninge, to meete the high and mightie Prince, the Prince of Wales, on Thursdaie next at Chelsey, to waite upon his Highnes to Westminster: Now, for the better ordringe of that service, the honor of Highnes, and the credit of this Cittie, it is thought fit that you and the rest of the Companies observe theis orders followinge, *viz.* First, that the barge wherein myself and my Brethren the Aldermen doe goe, shal-bee formost in the said service, and your Companie to follow accordinge to your place, device, and degree, in order with the rest of the Companies by two and two in a rancke, reserving a distance for my said barge to passe between them at the first settinge forth, and so to goe onwards without strivinge, keepinge your rancke in a reasonable distance one from another. Secondlie, that when myself and my Brethren shall meete the Prince at Chelsey, and there make a stand, that then your barge likewise doe the same in your place till all the chambers there bee shot off; and then to turne your cowrse to Westminster in the same order backwards as you came forwards, so that the barge wherein myself and my Brethren the Aldermen are maie bee next the Prince, and the inferiour Companies formost. Thirdlie, that when in the said forme and order, the Companies have gone onwards towards Westminster, that then, at the coming neere Lambeth, in a convenient distance from Whitehall, the youngest Companie beinge formost, make a stand as you shalbee appointed, and to suffer the other Companies by degree to goe before them neerer Whitehall, and so in order one to stand before another in a double rancke, that the Prince's and Noblemens' barges, and the barge wherein myself and my Brethren the Aldermen bee, maie passe between them, and so to stand still untill such time as the Prince bee landed, myself have taken leave of the Prince, and the chambers over against Westminster bee shootinge off, and then to go homewards in their order; all which you are not to faile, as you tender so excellent a service, and the credit of the Cittie, and as you will answere the contrary.

[Dated May 28, 1610].

SEBRIGHT."

See a note on the City Barges in p. 324.

Neptune smyled thereon auspiciouslie, and would not suffer so famous a Cittie's affection to go unfurnished of some favour from him; especially because it is the Metropolis and chiefe honor of the Island, whereunto himself ever bare such endeared affection.

For, according to the affirmation of Annius de Viterbo, Diodorus Siculus, Hyginus, and Pictonius, Neptune being called King or God of the Seas, had by his Queene Amphitrita divers children, and, as Bale¹ setteth downe, each one of them he made King of a severall island.

Britayne, which himselfe tearmed to be *Insula beata*, he bestowed upon his fourth, but best affected sonne, Albion, who, subduing the Samotheans, became sole ruler thereof, according to the testimonie of Nicholaus Perottus, Rigmanus Philsius, Aristotle, and Humphrey Lloyd, and after his owne name, called it Albion².

Now it is not without good reason to be imagined, that in meere love to his sonne's memorie and for his auncient affection to this Island, no blessedness at any time can befall it, but it shall receive some especiall and regardful noate of his favour. But more especially at this time, when Heaven, Earth, Sea, and all had enterlaced love together, to honor the general rejoycing, for so fayre a fortune, so Royall a hope, and a Prince of so unusuall straine or expectation.

For, where mortalles doe consent together and sing as in a quire of setled joy, the supreamer powers can never sit as ydle spectators; but, seeing how weaker strength expresseth itselfe, they in great bountie must needs add applause unto it, and out of their riche abundance enable their meaner power by their helpe, and expresse also their owne lyking thereof by some familiar addition or other.

Wherefore let us thus thinke of Neptune, that out of his spacious watrie wildernes, he then suddenly sent a huge whale and a dolphin, and, by the power of his commanding trident, had seated two of his choicest Trytons on them, altring their deformed sea-shapes, bestowing on them the borrowed bodies of two absolute actors, even the verie best our instant time can yeeld; and personating in them the severall Genii of Corinea, the beautifull Queene of Cornewall, and Amphion, the Father of Hermonie or Musick.

In these two well-seeming and richelye appointed persons, the Dukedome of Cornewall and the Principalitie of Wales (by order of Neptune's prophet, or

¹ Script. Bri. Cent. 2.

² This fabulous history is more fully entered into in the Pageant of 1605; see pp. 564—567. N.

poet, call him whither ye will), carried some tipe or figure, and not improperly to them so applyed.

For such representations and misticall understandings have alwayes bin reputed lawfull, and are evermore allowed to holde and carrie correspondencie with such solemne shewes and triumphes; as before in elder antiquitie, so likewise in moderne and latter use.

Let it suffice then, that thus was this goodly Fleete of Cittizens accompanied, and ushered the way so farre as Chelseye; where hovering on the water untill the Prince came, all pleasures that the time's interim could afforde, were plentifully entercoursed, and no disorder or breache of arraye in the whole navie.

Upon the Prince's neere approche, way was made for his best and aptest entertainment, which by multitude of boates and bardges (of no use, but onely for desire of sight) was much impeached for a while, till order being taken for the contrarie, the Prince's barge accosted the Lord Maior's, where dutie entertayning on the one side, and Princely grace most affably accepting on the other; Corinea, mounted on her whale, presented herself in this manner to his Highness.

CORINEA, a very fayre and beautifull Nimphe, representing the Genius of olde Corineus' Queene and the Provence of Cornewall, suited in her watrie habit, yet riche and costly, with a coronet of pearles and cockle-shelles on her head, saluteth the Prince.

The Speech spoken by Corinea, riding on a whale.

"Gracious Prince, and great Duke of Cornewall, I, the good Angell or Genius of Corinea, Queen to Brute's noble companion Corineus¹, the first of fayre Britayne's regions, and your owne worthie Dukedome, in honor of this general rejoycing-day, and to expresse the endeared affections of London's Lord Maior, his Bretheren the Aldermen, and all these worthie Cittizens, Merchants that holde commerce with me and the wide worlde, in our very best and richest commodities, doe thus usher them the way, to applaude in this Triumphe, and to let you know their willing readines by all meanes possible to love and honor you.

"The shortnes of time hath been no meane bridle to their zealous forwardness, which else would have appeared in more flowing and abundant manner. Neverthelesse, out of this little limitation, let me humbly entreate you to accept their boundlesse love, which is like to Jacob's ladder, reaching from Earth to Heaven; whereon their hourelie holie and devoute desires (like to so many

¹ Old Corineus is one of the Giants now stationed in Guildhall, of whom see vol. I. p. 568. N.

blessed angelles) are continually ascending and descending, for their Royall Sovereigne your Father, his Queene your peerlesse Mother, your sacred selfe, and the reste of their illustrious race, that unpolluted soules may be ever about yee, false hearts or foule hands never come neere yee, but the Hoaste of Heaven alwayes to defend yee!"

Heere could I wishe for such a copious braine and liberall plentie of arte as might suffise to declare the Royall respect and affabilitie of the Prince, not only to my Lord Maior and his Bretheren, but to all the Companies in generall, spreading his gracious acceptaunce of their love and kindnes, like to the large extended winges of Jove's birde the eagle, even over them all; and standing in the dore of his bardge, he suffered no occasion to passe him, but still it tooke holde of his grace and liking.

And thus they set on towards White Hall, in so soft, milde, and gentle a pace as the very Thames appeared proude of this gallant burden, swelling her breaste to beare them with pompe and majestie; and not one wrinckle appeared in her brow, but as plaine and even as the smoothest yvorie. Nor durst any rude storme peepe foorth his head, or the least noise of an ungentle wind stirre; but all were whist and still, as forgetfull of those uncivill offices, and overcome with admiration of the daye's delight!

Being come neere White Hall, the bardges (according to their qualitie and degree in order and dignitie) devided themselves on either side, to make a spacious passage for the Prince and his traine between them, even untill they came neere to the Courte bridge, the Lord Major's bardge being then the formoste and neerest. Now the Prince being readie to land, Amphion on his dolphin saluteth him.

AMPHION, a grave and judicious prophet-like personage, attyred in his apte habits, every way answerable to his state and profession, with his wreathe of sea-shelles on his head, and his harpe hanging in fayre twine before him; personating the Genius of Wales, giveth the Prince this farewell:

The Speech of Amphion on a Dolphin.

"Royall Prince of Wales, in this figure of musicall Amphion upon his dolphin, we personate the carracter of Wales your Principalitie. Who having with my faire sister Corinea thus farre attended you on behalf of London's Lord Maior, his worthie Bretheren, and this goodly Fleete of well-affected Cittizens; we are all now forced to an unwilling departure.

“See how our streamers hang the head as lothe to leave you ; our bardges lagge and seem lumpishe, as greeving to forgoe you ; our trompets and other musicks appeare tongue-lesse, the worde of Farewell is so offensive to them. And, except you put spirit into them all, with a gracious acceptaunce of this their love and loyaltie, the bosome of fayre Thames shrinkes, and they feare swallowing.

“But the sunne of true-born Majestie shines in your bright eye ; and your more serious affaires calling you hence, speakes bothe your love to them, and liking of their humble dutie at their dismissal.

“Home agayne then, fayre Fleet, you have brought a Royall freight to landing, such a burden as hath made the river not meanelly proud to beare. And since we must needs parte, in our lowdest voyce of drommes, trompets, and ordenaunce, be this our last accent: Long live our Prince of Wales, the Royall Henrie.”

At which very instant off went the chambers, and such a triumphall noyse of drommes and trompets as made the very ayre to ecchoe ; which done, they returned back to London agayne, wherwith we conclude this sollemne daye's triumphe.

Upon the Sunday following, five-and-twentie Knights of the Bathe were made by his Majestie, in honor of the Prince his Sonne, and they all rode in their apte habits, with their Squires and Pages, from Durham House to White Hall, to their no little praise and commendation.

On the Monday, the King and all the Nobilitie, going by water from the Courte to Westminster ; in the Courte of Requests (which then was reputed as the Parliament House) the Prince had his Creation of Prince of Wales, Duke of Rothsaye, Earle of Chester, and Knight of the moste noble Order of the Garter, with all the due ceremonies and vestures thereto belonging, his Majestie himselve girding on his sworde. Which being ended, they returned in the like manner to the Courte againe.

In the evening of the same day, it was expected that the water-fight and fire-workes should have bin perfourmed, no meane multitude of people attending to see it ; but whether by violent storme of rayne, or other appointment of his Majestie, I knowe not (albeit Protheus, mounted on a Sea-monster, had delivered the intent of the devise to his Highnesse), yet was it deferred till the Wednesday following. Upon which day, after a most Royall and sumptuous tilting, the water-fight was worthilie perfourmed, and by such reporte as was thereof made to me, thus it was ordered.

A Turkish pirate prowling on the seas, to maintaine a Turkish castle (for so their armes and streamers described them both to be) by his spoyle and rapine of merchants and other passengers, sculking abroad to finde a bootie, he descried two merchant's shippes, the one whereof bearing to winde somewhat before her fellowe, made the pirate waite her to strike sayle and come in, which the merchant either not regarding or no way fearing, rode still boldly on. The pirate, with drawen weapons and other menaces, wafts her againe to vayne her bonnet; but, the merchant still refusing, the pirate sends a commanding shott, which the merchant answered againe, encouraged therto by her fellowe merchant, who by this time was come neere her, and spake in like language with her to the pirate. When he perceived his hope defeated and this bold resistance returned, he sent shot upon shot very fiercely, wherto they replied as resolvedly; so that betweene them grewe a verie fierce and dangerous fight. Wherein the merchants waxing to be somewhat distrassed (by reason that the castle likewise often played upon them) two men of warre happening then to be neere, made in to helpe and releeve their hard detriment.

And now the fighte grewe on all sides to be fierce indeed, the castle assisting the pirate very hotly, and the other withstanding bravely and courageously; divers men appearing on either side to be slayne and hurled over into the sea, as in such adventures it often comes to passe, where such sharpe assaultes are used indeed.

In conclusion, the merchants and men of warre, after a long and well-fought skirmish, prooved too strong for the pirate, they spoyle bothe him and blew up the castle, ending the whole batterie with verie rare and admirable fire-workes, as also a worthie peale of chambers.



THE ORDER AND SOLEMNITIE OF THE
CREATION OF THE HIGH AND MIGHTIE PRINCE HENRY,
 ELDEST SONNE TO OUR SOVERAIGNE,
 PRINCE OF WALES, DUKE OF CORNWALL, EARLE OF CHESTER, &c.
 AS IT WAS CELEBRATED IN THE PARLIAMENT HOUSE,
 ON MUNDAY THE FOURTH OF JUNE LAST PAST.

Together with the Ceremonies of the Knights of the Bath, and other matters of speciall regard, incident to the same. Whereunto is annexed the Royall Maske, presented by the Queen and her Ladies, on Wednesday at night following¹.

HIS Majestie, aswell to shew the bounty of his affection towards his dearest Sonne the Prince, as to settle in the hearts of his loving subjects a lively impression of his Royal care for continuance of the happy and peaceful government of this Land in his issue and posterity; having determined to invest his Princely Highnesse with those titles and dignities which the former Princes of this Realme have been usually adorned; it seemeth fittest, both in regard of his Highnesse' yeeres, now arriving at man's estate, and shewing rare proofes of heroicall vertue, and also for that it would be a matter most gratefull and acceptable to that honourable Assembly, to have the solemnities thereof performed in this present Parliament.

¹ "Printed at Britain's Burse, for John Budge, and are there to be sold, 1610."—The only copy I can trace of this Tract is in the Garrick Collection in the British Museum. But it has been re-printed in Somers's Tracts. The MS account of this Ceremonial in Ayscough's MSS (additional) 5765, is a transcript of part of the Tract. "A booke called, 'The Creation of the Prynce, by Mr. Danyell Price,'" was entered at Stationers' Hall, June 14, by Roger Jackson. This Daniel Price was Chaplain to Prince Henry, and made his name well-known for a Sermon he preached on the Prince's death, which hinted that he had been poisoned;—but of that in its proper place.—In the Harl. MSS 5176, is preserved a book in Camden's hand-writing, giving an account of various Creations, Funerals, Tilts, &c. which will be hereafter frequently quoted; and the second article is an account of Prince Henry's Creation; some particulars from it will be found here inserted within parentheses and in notes. He concludes with a list of all the preceding Princes of Wales. This has been done in "London's Love." In the Harl. MSS. 6141, is also a fair copy in another hand of that part of Camden's MS. which relates to the Creations of the Prince and Knights of the Bath; accompanied by a list of those made in 1603.—Howes, in his Chronicle, has evidently employed the Tract here printed; and indeed not only adopted every particular, but added much. It is, nevertheless, here retained, both for the sake of preserving the whole entire (with the Masque); and because the author certainly excels Howes in perspicuity of narration; who, like many others, "brevis esse laborans, obscurus fit." The additional particulars furnished by Howes are within brackets.—Howes likewise gives an account of the precedent Princes of Wales. N.

Wherefore the time approaching, his Majestie's pleasure signified, and preparation made accordingly, on Wednesday the 30th of May last, his Highnesse, accompanied (besides the ordinary 'Traine of his Household) with divers young Lords and Gentlemen of speciall marke, departed [about twelve of the clocke] from his house of St. James towards Richmond, where being come towards evening, he supped and reposed himselfe for that night.

Next morning, being Thursday, about nine of the clocke, he tooke water to returne againe to London, attended only with some few barges of his owne followers, and such Noblemen and others as accompanied him thither the day before.

Passing softly downe the streame, he was encountered by divers Lords, which came to meet him on the way. The Thames began soone to flote with botes and barges, hasting from all parts to meete him; and the shores on eyther side, where conveniency of place would give way to their desires, swarmed with multitudes of people, which stood wayting with greedy eyes to beholde his Triumphant Passage.

About eleven of the clocke, understanding that the tide was falne so low as there would not be convenient roome for all the barges in his 'Traine to go orderly downe, notwithstanding his first appointment was to have come to London about noone, and dinner prepared for him accordingly at Whitehall, he made stay at Barne Elmes, and there landing, refreshed himself in an arbour by the water side, and took a short repast of such sweat-meats and other things as could there be provided on the sudden.

By this time the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of London, with the several Companies of the Citie, honourably furnisht and appointed, and disposed in faire order¹, were ready attending, with a great Traine and a sumptuous Shewe, to receive his Highnesse at Chelsey; their barges² deckt with banners, streamers,

¹ See p. 317.

² Camden says that the Prince was accompanied "with diverse barges of the Nobilitie, one of the Bishoppes, all the barges of the Companies of London with the Lord Mayor;" and Howes says those Companies were in number *fifty-four*. The Companies' barges have now diminished to *seven* those who still retain them are the Grocers, Drapers, Fishmongers, Goldsmiths, Skinners, Merchant-Taylors, and Stationers; many have given them up within the memory of man. Mr. Carleton (see p. 316) compares the Procession of Prince Henry to the Lord Mayor's Show. In those days that spectacle must have been very splendid; for, besides the civic barges, the magnificent vessels of the Nobility, which then adorned the river, crowded with spectators of the higher class, must have greatly heightened the grandeur of the scene. The City State barge and a small barge for the Household, with two or three of the Companies' barges above mentioned, are all that appear on a modern Lord Mayor's-day. N.

and ensignes, and sundry sortes of loud-sounding instruments aptly placed amongst them.

There were also two artificiall Sea-monsters, one in fashion of a whale, the other like a dolphin, with persons¹ richly apparelled sitting upon them, who, at the meeting and parting of the Lord Mayor and his company with the Prince, were to deliver certaine Speeches unto him.

In this goodly manner, this well-furnisht fleet of the City received his Highnes somewhat beyond Chelsey, about two of the clocke in the afternoone; and, after the Lord Mayor and Aldermen's salutation, humbly presented, and graciously accepted by his Highnesse, they turned their stemmes, and so proceeded towards London; observing this course, that whereas at their approach the Lord Mayor's barge came foremost, and the Companies, every one in their degrees, followed after; now that order being chaunged, the Companies went before, the meanest in the place first, the rest according to their severall ranks successively ensuing; and, lastly, the Lord Mayor, attended with his two Sea-monsters on eyther syde, going immediately before the Prince, and conducting his joyfull Passage to the Citie.

Next after the Prince's barge followed his servants' and the barges of sundry Noblemen and others which had met on the way; and on every side such a confused company of botes of all sorts fraught with beholders, as it seemed the river (though then enlarged to her utmost limits by the tide's friendly advantage) was too little to containe them; as likewise the land on eyther shore, which never felt the weight of such an infinity of people upon any former occasion.

Approaching neere to Whitehall, the King and the Queene, with the young Duke of Yorke and Lady Elizabeth, stode in the Privie Gallerie window to see the order of their comming; and that his Majesty might take the better view of the Lord Mayor and the Citizens' show, they were appointed to passe along on London side, whilst the Prince in the meane while fetched a compasse about by Lambeth; and so comming to Whitehal-bridge², where the Lord Mayor and Aldermen tooke leave of his Highnesse, there landed, his landing being congratulated with a loude peale of chambers from the other side of the water; which,

¹ These were Corinea and Amphion, (see pp. 320, 321). The latter was mistaken by Howes for Neptune. The Speeches are those printed in "London's Love." N.

² The principal Stairs to the water from the Palace, called by Camden "the Comon Staires of Whitehall." N

in their thundering voyces, carried up to the skie the joy of the peoples' hearts conveyed in the issue of these happy triumphs.

At his Highnesse' comming on shore, his servants¹ attended upon the bridge to receive him, making a guard for him to pass thorow to the Hall, where he was entertained by the Lord Knolles and the Lord Wotton, Treasurer and Controller of the Household; likewise in the Great Chamber by Viscount Fenton, Captaine of the Guard; in the Presence [Chamber], by the Earl of Suffolke, Lord Chamberlaine; and, lastly, by the King and Queene in the Privy Chamber. After which his Highnesse reposed himselfe, and so ended that daye's solemnity.

On Munday following, the Lordes and Peeres of the Realme being all assembled in Parliament, his Majesty, accompanied with the Prince², who was that morning to be invested in his Principalltie, [with some of the prime Nobilitie, and attended by the Band of Pensioners] tooke water [about half an houre after ten] at the Privy-staires at Whitehal; and landing together at Westminster Bridge³, his Majesty passed directly⁴ to the Parliament House, and the Prince to the

¹ "He was received," says Howes, "by the Officers of the Kinge's Househoulde in severall places according to their offices, viz. first at the Gate where his Highnesse landed by the Knight Marshal, and the Serjeant Porter; in the Hall by the Treasurer," &c. as above. N.

² This was incorrect; the Prince should have gone alone; see p. 341. N.

³ Called "the Queene's Bridge" by Camden. They returned by "the King's Bridge," see p. 330. —The Stairs still existing in New Palace Yard were, it is likely, one of these, probably the latter. The ancient Water Gate is engraven in Smith's Antiquities of Westminster, p. 28. N.

⁴ Not so; after his arrival at the Queen's Bridge, "the rest of the Earles in the roabes of their estate and coronets, the Bishoppes and Barons in the Parliament roabes meete him, and so brought him the private waye through a stand made of the Garde and Pensioners to the Chamber att the North ende of the Parliament House, wher he staid a good space apparailing himself in his purple roabes of Majestie, with his crown." And "when they were all sett, the King came to the House with the two Heraldes Kings at Armes, Clarenceux and Norrey, the Earle Marshall, Earle of Worcester, and the Lord Chamberlaine, the Serjeants at Armes, the Ushers, Garter, the Marques of Winchester carieng the Cappe of Maintenance, and the Earle of Arundell bearing the Swords, the Vicount Cranborn and the Lord Burghley carieng the Traine. When he was composed in his Throne, and the Sword and Cap of Maintenance, with the Earles caryeng the same, on the right-hand; and the Earle of Worcester with the Rod of the Marshalsey and the Lord Chamberlaine on the left hand upon the lower degree; these two last, with Clarenceux and Norrey proceeding, passed through the House to the Courte of Wardes, where they expected to to longe for the Knights of the Bathe. When they were come, thus was the proceeding." Camden.—His phrase "expected to to longe" must mean they were detained longer than they ought to have been; and must be the "whiles tarryance" of the other author. N.

Court of Wardes (where he and such Earles as attended him apparailed themselves); from whence, after a whiles tarryance for the disposing of things in due order, his Highness proceeded in this manner to his Creation :

First went the Heralds and Officers at Armes (Clarenceux¹ and Norrey²) in their rich coates; next followed the [Earles of Worcester and Suffolk, *viz.* the Marshall and Chamberlaine;] the Knights of the Bath, twenty-five in number, appa-
relled in long roabes of purple satin, lyned with white taffata [who were placed *seniores primi*, on both sides in the Higher House above the barr]; then Garter Principall King of Armes³, bearing the Letters Patents, the Earle of Sussex the purple [velvet] robes, the train borne by the Earle of Huntingdon; the Earle of Cumberland the sword, the Earle of Rutland the ring, the Earle of Derby the rod [the vierge of gold], and the Earle of Shrewsbury the cap and coronet. His Princely Highnesse, supported by the Earles of Nottingham and Northampton [Lord Privy Seal and Lord Admiral,] came bare-headed [in his surcote of purple velvet], and so entring the Parliament-chamber⁴, where the King was set in his Throne, and the whole State of the Realme in order (divers strangers and for-
raine Ambassadors being present), he made low obeysance to his Majestie threetimes, and after the third time, when he was come neere to the King, [Master Garter kist the Letters Patent, and gave them to the Lord Chamberlaine, who presented them to the King, and the King to the Earle of Salisbury, Principall Secretary; and the Prince] kneeled downe on a rich pillar or cushion, whilst the Earle of Salisbury read his Letters Patents. Then his Majestie [with two assistants], at the reading of the words of investiture, put the robes upon him, and girded on the sword, invested him with the rod and ring, and set the cap and coronet on his head, with which ceremony the Creation being accomplished, he arose, and was, by the Earles of Worcester and Suffolke, brought and seated in his place

¹ The learned William Camden. N.

² Richard St. George, knighted Sept. 28, 1616. N.

³ Sir William Dethick, of whom see vol. I. p. 128. N.

⁴ "The White-hall, commonly now called the Courte of Requests, was for that daye appointed the Parlament House for both Houses, which were distinguished with a barre, and the Speaker and Clarke of the Lower House had their places with the King's armes accomodated for them." Camden. — This White Hall may be found in a plan of the old Palace of Westminster engraven in Smith's Antiquities of that City, p. 125. It was made use of on this occasion on account of its being larger than either the Houses of Lords or Commons; and it was this reason that, after a lapse of nearly two centuries, induced its adoption at the Union in 1801 as the permanent Court of the House of Peers; it having been till that period employed as the Court of Requests. How long it may continue to witness the proceedings of the Upper House, amid the present continual alterations, I will not venture to determine. N.

of Parliament on the left hand of his Majestie, [under the Lord Treasurer's standing, but somewhat higher. When the King being advertised that he should kisse him, rising, first reached his hand to be kissed, and afterwards kissed him. Then came the Deputie for the Clearke of the Crowne, and at the lower degree of the State, read the *Testes*, beginning with the Lord Chancellor, Lord Ellesmere; the Archbishopp of Yorke; and reading all the names of the Lordes there present, and that without the Christian names; when-as in ancient Patents onely a few of every degree were specified¹. Then the Lord Chancellor proroged the Parlament till Thursday; and the trumpetts sounded, whereupon the Lower House arose.]

¹ In the Lords' Journals the form and arrangements of the Creation are thus recorded:

“ *Die Lunæ, 4^{to} Junii 1610.*

R E X.

Archiepiscopus Ebor'.

Episc. London.

Durham.

Cum 16 aliis Episcopis.

Dominus Ellesmere, Cancellarius Angliæ.

Comes Sarisburiensis.

Cum 22 aliis Comitibus,

Uno Vicecomite, et 24 Baronibus.

“ This day the Chamber, commonly called Whitehall, or the Court of Requests, was very richly hung from the upper end more than half down towards the lower end, where was set up a strong bar of timber thwart the room; in the highest part of the room was placed, for his Majesty, a sumptuous cloth of state, and of either side scaffolds for Embassadors of foreign countries. On each side against the walls were erected seats, one above another, for strangers and noble personages, with the Lord Mayor and his Brethren in the midst. Upon forms and woollack did sit all the Lords of Parliament and Judges in their robes; and likewise the officers and attendants as on the days of sitting in Parliament. Below the bar was placed the Speaker's chair; forms on the ground, and seats on each side, one above another, fit and convenient to receive the whole House of Commons. His Majesty being set under his estate (for whose coming all the Lords in their robes and seats, except such as attended his person and the Prince, as also the Speaker and all the Lower House, did wait and attend); the Prince his Highness, honourably attended by divers Noblemen, the Knights of the Bath, officers at arms, and his own servants, entered in at the nether end of the House, and was with great state and solemnity brought up to the foot-path before the King; where, kneeling at the first, and then standing, his Highness was, with all due ceremonies, created Prince of Wales and Earl of Chester; and a patent thereof first read by the Lord Treasurer, Principal Secretary of his Majesty, and afterwards delivered to him. Which done, and all ceremonies finished which thereunto appertain, the Prince his Highness, in great state and magnificence, some little time after the King's Majesty, departed to the Court at Whitehall.”—In Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. XVI. p. 189, is the patent for creating the Prince of Wales, “ *per cincturam Gladii, traditionem et positionem Serti in capite et Annuli Aurei in digito, necnon Virgæ Aureæ in manu.*” It is signed by the Duke of York, the Peers and Bishops in full Parliament assembled, and dated at Westminster the 4th of June, the day of the Creation. The rods wherewith the Princes of Wales were antiently invested were of silver, and not of gold. N.

Having so remained a while, all ceremonies finished, his Majestie with the whole Court of Parliament, rose up, and descended into the Hall, passing forth towards the bridge in solemne and stately manner. The foremost, as they proceeded in order, were the Clerks and Masters of the Chancerie, with the King's Councell, and other Ministers of the Law; next came the Officers of Armes; [the Officers and Aldermen of London]; and then the Knights of the Bath, as before [to cleare the passage, not that it was their place]; after them the Judges, [who were willed not to proceed, but to staie in the Hall; but they staid without the Hall]; and so, successively the Barons, [Bishops], Viscounts, Earles, Marquesses, and Dukes, according to their degrees in the Parliament House and Offices of State, all in their Parliament roabes; [the Lord Mayor; the two Kings of Armes, Clarenceux and Norrey; the Archbishop of Yorke; the Lord Treasurer; the Serjeants at Arms; the PRINCE between his Assistants; the Earle of Huntingdon carieing his traine; the King's Gentlemen Huishers; Garter; the Cape; the Rode of the Marshall; the Sworde; the Lord Chamberlaine; the KING'S MAJESTIE, his traine borne by the before specified. Thus they passed through Westminster Hall to the King's Bridge, between raylés]. And lastly, the King himselfe, with the Prince, who took water together, the trumpets sounding in the row-barge all the way as they went, and the Heralds going before them in the same. At Whitehall staires they landed, where the Knights of the Bath and Noblemen being landed before, stood ready on the bridge, in goodly and gallant order, to receive them; and going all before them, conducted them in this manner up to the Great Chamber.

The King that day dined above, but the Prince dined in the Hall, and was served with great state and magnificence. [There were two tables set longeways downe the Hall; one of them stood in the middle, where the Prince himself sat at the upper-end.] He was accompanied at his table with [the Duke of Yorke, neare to him on the left hand; some three yardes lower] divers great Lords, as the Earles of Nottingham, Salisbury, Worcester, and Derby, and, namely, all those that exercised any place or office about his Creation. [The Prince was served by his owne servants.]

At another table in the same roome, on the left hand of the Prince, sat the Knights of the Bath, all upon one side, and had likewise great service and attendance [by the Guard].

About the midst of dinner, Garter Principall King at Armes, with the rest of the Heralds, approached the Prince's table, and, with a loud and audible voyce, proclaimed the King's stile, in Latine, French, and English, thrise [with three largesses as is accustomed]; and the Prince's in the like manner twice [with two largesses]. Then the trumpets sounding, the second course came in, and dinner done, that daie's solemnitie ceased.

At night a stately Maske was presented before his Majestie; the invention and manner whereof I leave to the Author, when he shall thinke good to publish.

The same day the devise of the fire-works and sea-fight upon the Thames should likewise have beene shewed, but for some respects were put off till Wednesday following, and then performed to the much content and admiration of the beholders.

The Names of such Noblemen as were imployed in several places of office or attendance at the Creation of the Prince:

The Earle of Salisbury¹.

The Earle of Northampton⁴.

The Earle of Suffolke².

The Earle of Worcester⁵.

The Earle of Notingham³.

The Earle of Derby⁶.

¹ The majority of the English Peerage of this period now follows and I shall take this opportunity of saying something of all not hitherto noticed.—The frequent notices of the Earl of Salisbury have been enumerated in p. 126.

² See pp. 141, 153, 288.

³ Charles Howard, second Lord Howard of Effingham, and first Earl of Nottingham, was early initiated into the affairs of state, being sent Ambassador to France in 1559. He was elected M. P. for Surrey in 1562 and 1572. He was made K. G. in 1574; Chamberlain of the Household and Lord High Admiral in 1584-5. He presided at the trial of the Queen of Scots, and distinguished himself in dispersing the Spanish Armada. He commanded at sea on the capture of Cadiz in 1596, and on his return was created Earl of Nottingham. His minor services need not be here enumerated. We now come to James's Reign. In 1603 he occurs as of the Privy Council in vol. I. p. 43, and in that year he met the King at Broxbourn (*ibid.* p. 107); at the Coronation he was appointed High Constable (p. 188); and at the Duke of York's Creation he bare the Prince in his arms (p. 472). His sumptuous embassy to Spain has been fully recorded (pp. 500—503). In 1607 he was made a Merchant-Taylor with Prince Henry (see this Volume, p. 141). In 1612 he led the Princess Elizabeth from the Chapel after her marriage. In 1619 he resigned his post of Lord High Admiral, being then 83. He died in 1624. See further in Brydges's Peerage, vol. IV. p. 269.

⁴ See vol. I. pp. 66, 109, 472; vol. II. p. 141.

⁵ See vol. I. pp. 43, 162; vol. II. p. 141.

⁶ William Stanley, who succeeded his brother Ferdinando as sixth Earl of Derby in 1594. He was

The Earle of Shrewsbury¹.
 The Earle of Cumberland².
 The Earle of Huntingdon³.

The Earle of Sussex⁴.
 The Earle of Rutland⁵.

Other Noblemen that were present in the Parliament House at the Prince's Creation, besides those that were employed in attendance about him :

The Earle of Arundell⁶.
 The Earle of Bathe⁷.
 The Earle of Southampton⁸.
 The Earle of Bedford⁹.
 The Earle of Pembroke¹⁰.

The Earle of Hertford¹¹.
 The Earle of Lincolne¹².
 The Earle of Exeter¹³.
 The Earle of Montgomery¹⁴.
 The Lord Vicount Mountague¹⁵.

enstalled K. G. in 1601 ; was Chamberlain of Chester ; a Privy Counsellor (see vol. I. p. 43) ; and died Sept. 29, 1642, aged 80. See Brydges, vol. III. p. 82.—Of his Countess, see p. 145.

¹ See vol. I. pp. 43, 87, 170.

² See vol. I. pp. 38, 78, 86.

³ See before, p. 145.

⁴ See vol. I. pp. 43, 167 ; and this Volume, p. 25.

⁵ See vol. I. pp. 91, 163.

⁶ See before, pp. 5, 141, 186, 270, 287.

⁷ William Bouchier, who had succeeded his grandfather as third Earl of Bath in 1560. He had fought in the Netherlands under the Earl of Leicester ; but probably lived retired in the country during the present reign ; and was brought to Court on the present occasion by his son's creation (of whom see p. 342). He died at his manor-house at Tawstock, co. Devon, July 12, 1623. See Brydges's *Memoirs of the Peers of King James*, p. 87.

⁸ See p. 264.

⁹ Edward Russell, who succeeded his grandfather as third Earl of Bedford in 1585, and died s. p. May 3, 1627. He must have led a most retired life, since we meet with no further notice of him. He was succeeded by his cousin Francis, of whom see p. 125. His accomplished Duchess, the Queen's great favourite and companion, has been frequently noticed (see pp. 10, 174, 245). Pennant says, "her vanity and extravagance met with no check under the reign of her *quiet spouse* !" She appears indeed to have quite eclipsed him. See Brydges's *Peerage*, vol. I. p. 273.

¹⁰ See pp. 141, 186, 287.

¹¹ See vol. I. pp. 256, 474.

¹² Henry Clinton, who succeeded his father as second Earl of Lincoln in 1585. He was made K. B. in 1553 ; accompanied his father on an embassy to France in 1571 ; and was a Commissioner of the respective trials of the Queen of Scots, Secretary Davison, Philip Earl of Arundel, and the Earl of Essex. In 1596 he went Ambassador to the Landgrave of Hesse. He has appeared in 1603 as one of the Lords of the Council (see vol. I. p. 43) ; and as one of the Noble Personages sent to meet the Queen (*ibid.* p. 167). He died Sept. 29, 1616. He appears to have borne no very excellent character. See Brydges's *Peerage*, vol. II. p. 206.

¹³ Of whom see vol. I. p. 95. He died Feb. 7, 1621-2, aged 80. There is a monument to this Earl in Westminster Abbey, with fine effigies of himself and one of his Countesses.

¹⁴ See pp. 141, 287, 283.

¹⁵ Anthony Browne, who succeeded his grandfather as second Viscount Montague in 1591, and died October 23, 1639. He appears to have led a private life. See Brydges's *Peers of James I.* 397.

The Lord Vicount Bindon ¹.

The Lord Viscount Lisle ².

The Lord Abergavenny ³.

The Lord Audeley ⁴.

The Lord Zouche ⁵.

The Lord Willowby ⁶.

The Lord Barkley ⁷.

The Lord Morley ⁸.

The Lord Scroope ⁹.

The Lord Dudley ¹⁰.

The Lord Herbert ¹¹.

The Lord Monteagle ¹².

The Lord Mordant ¹³.

The Lord Eure ¹⁴.

¹ Thomas Howard, grandson of Thomas third Duke of Norfolk, who succeeded his brother Henry as third Viscount Bindon about 1600; was installed K. G. May 20, 1606 (see p. 43); and died not long after the present date, when the title became extinct, and his property was principally transferred to his second cousin, the Earl of Suffolk, though the Earl of Surrey, that Nobleman's nephew, was the heir-at-law. See Brydges's *Peers of King James I.* p. 187. ² See vol. I. p. 510.

³ Edward Neville, sixth Lord Abergavenny, who had that title confirmed to him in 1603; but on claiming the title of Earl of Westmoreland in 1604, it was determined against him. He died Dec. 1, 1622. Brydges, vol. V. p. 168.

⁴ George Touchet, who succeeded his father as Lord Audley in 1595. He was some time Governor of Utrecht, and sorely wounded at the battle of Kinsale in Ireland in 1601. He resided chiefly in that Kingdom, and, for his great services, was created, in 1617, Earl of Castlehaven and Baron Orier. He died in 1617, and was succeeded by his son Mervin, noticed in p. 192.

⁵ Edward Zouche, who had succeeded his father as eleventh Baron Zouche, as early as 1569, when only 13. He had been a considerable person in the preceding reign, and appointed by Elizabeth in 1601 Lord President of Wales, in which office he was continued by James; see vol. I. p. 474. In 1615 he was made Constable of Dover Castle and Lord Warden of the Cinque Ports. He built a magnificent house at Bramshill, Hampshire, where Archbishop Abbot met with the dreadful misfortune mentioned in vol. I. p. 533. He died in 1625, leaving no male issue, and the title became extinct.

⁶ See vol. I. pp. 471, 477; vol. II. pp. 5, 25.

⁷ Henry eleventh Lord Berkeley, born after the death of his father in 1534. He lived to an advanced age, dying Nov. 26, 1613, aged 79, but appears to have led a private life. Brydges, III. 613.

⁸ Edmund Parker, the father of Lord Mounteagle, summoned to Parliament 23 Eliz. and died April 1, 1618. See Brydges's *Peers of King James*, p. 287.

⁹ Emanuel, last Lord Scrope, made in 1618-19 Lord President of the King's Council in the North, and created in 1627 Earl of Sunderland. He died without legitimate issue; but the Dukes of Bolton and Lords Howe were descended from his natural daughters.

¹⁰ Edward Sutton succeeded his father as Lord Dudley in 1586, and died June 23, 1643. His son Ferdinando, created K. B. on the present occasion, is noticed in p. 343.

¹¹ Charles Herbert, eldest surviving son of the Earl of Montgomery, who probably had a summons to Parliament as Lord Herbert of Shurland. He was made K. B. at the Coronation of Charles I. but died s. p. in his father's life-time, in January 1635. See Brydges, vol. III. p. 136.

¹² See vol. I. p. 574.

¹³ Vol. I. p. 523.

¹⁴ Vol. I. p. 43; vol. II. p. 141.

The Lord Rich ¹.
 The Lord Sheffield ².
 The Lord Paget ³.
 The Lord Effingham ⁴.
 The Lord North ⁵.
 The Lord Chandos ⁶.
 The Lord Hunsdon ⁷.

The Lord St. John ⁸.
 The Lord Burleigh ⁹.
 The Lord Compton ¹⁰.
 The Lord Norreys ¹¹.
 The Lord Knolles ¹².
 The Lord Wotton ¹³.
 The Lord Ellesmere ¹⁴.

¹ Robert Rich succeeded his father as third Lord Rich in 1581, and was with the Earl of Essex at Cadiz. He was created Earl of Warwick Aug. 6, 1618, and died 24th of March following. See Brydges's *Peers of King James*, p. 329.—Of his son and successor see vol. I. p. 222.

² Edmund Sheffield succeeded his father as third Lord Sheffield in 1568; in the reign of Elizabeth distinguished himself by many military services, and was created K. G. In 1616 he was appointed President of the Council in the North, and in 1625 was created Earl of Mulgrave. He died in 1646, aged 80.—His great-grandson was created Marquis of Normanby and Duke of Buckinghamshire.

³ William Paget succeeded his father Thomas as fourth Lord Paget in 1589, and in 1603 was restored to the lands and honours forfeited by his father's attainder in 1586. He was with the Earl of Essex at Cadiz, being then a Knight. He died Aug. 29, 1629. See Brydges, vol. V. p. 187.

⁴ William, eldest son of the Earl of Nottingham, summoned by writ to several Parliaments as Lord Effingham. He has appeared with the King at Oxford in 1605 (see vol. I. p. 555), and at Merchant-Tailors' Hall in 1607 (see this Volume, p. 141). But he died before his father in 1615, leaving an only daughter, afterwards Countess of Peterborough. See Brydges, vol. IV. p. 275.

⁵ Dudley North, who succeeded his grandfather as third Lord North in 1597. "He was a person full of spirit and flame, yet, after he had consumed the greatest part of his estate in the gallantries of King James's Court, or rather his son Prince Henry's, retired and lived more honourably upon what was left than ever he had done before." He died Jan. 16, 1666, having enjoyed life 85 years, and his title 69. See further of him in Brydges, vol. IV. p. 465.

⁶ See vol. I. p. 477.

⁷ John Carey, who in 1603 succeeded his brother (of whom see vol. I. p. 260) as third Lord Hunsdon. He had been appointed Governor of Berwick and Warden of the East Marches in 1600; and he was admitted a Merchant-Taylor with the Prince in 1607 (see p. 141). He died in 1617. See Brydges's *Peers of James*, vol. I. p. 399.

⁸ Whom the King had twice visited at Bletsoe; see vol. I. p. 523; vol. II. p. 203.

⁹ William Cecil, the eldest son of the Earl of Exeter, who succeeded his father in that title in 1621-2, was installed K. G. in 1630, being then one of the Privy Council, and died in July 1640. See further, in vol. II. p. 603.

¹⁰ See p. 287.

¹¹ See vol. I. p. 477.

¹² See vol. I. p. 560.

¹³ Ibid. pp. 119, 260.

¹⁴ Sir Thomas Egerton, the Lord Chancellor, so appointed (to omit his minor preferments) July 24, 1603, having been created Lord Ellesmere three days before (see vol. I. p. 204). In 1610 he was chosen Chancellor of Oxford, and in 1616 was Lord High Steward on the trial of the Earl of Somerset. In that year he retired from public life. The King parted with this old and faithful servant with all imaginable tenderness, and first, Nov. 7, as a mark of his Royal favour, created him Viscount

The Lord Russell¹.The Lord Grey².The Lord Petre³.The Lord Harrington⁴.The Lord Gerrard⁵.The Lord Spenser⁶.The Lord Say⁷.The Lord Denny⁸.The Lord Stanhope⁹.The Lord Carew¹⁰.The Lord Cavendish¹¹.The Lord Knivet¹².The Lord Clifton¹³.

Having thus briefly described the manner of his Highnes' Creation, I should here set a period to my discourse, but that the Knights of the Bath being a principall part and ornament of his Princely Triumphes, and my selfe particularly bound to many of them; I could not passe them over without some remembrance. Therefore, thus much out of the note of directions from the Office of Armes, and some observation of credit concerning the Order and Ceremonies of Knighthood.

Brackley. He resigned the seals on the 7th of March, and during his illness, his Majesty sent the Earl of Buckingham to signify to him that he intended to give him the title of Earl and an annual pension. But he died on the 15th, aged 77. A good memoir of this excellent man is given by Sir Egerton Brydges, vol. III. pp. 176, *et seq.*

¹ William, fourth and youngest son of Francis second Earl of Bedford, who having greatly distinguished himself in Ireland and the Netherlands, was knighted, appointed Governor of Flushing in 1587, and Lord Deputy of Ireland in 1594. In 1603 he was created Baron Russell of Thornhaugh (see vol. I. p. 205), and he died Aug. 9, 1613. See Brydges, vol. I. pp. 274—279.—His son Francis, afterwards fourth Earl of Bedford, has been noticed in this Volume, p. 125.

² So created July 21, 1603; see vol. I. p. 205. He had been a pupil of Erasmus. He died July 26, 1614. His son, Sir John, has been noticed in p. 100; his grandson was created Earl of Stamford. See Brydges, vol. III. p. 353.

³ John Petre, knighted in 1575, and chosen M. P. for Essex in 1584 and 1585. He was created a Baron with the two last-mentioned (see vol. I. p. 205), and died Oct. 11, 1613. Brydges, VII. p. 7.

⁴ See vol. I. pp. 103, 205. ⁵ Ibid. 205; vol. II. p. 25. ⁶ See vol. I. pp. 175, 176, 205, 282, 429.

⁷ Sir Richard Fiennes, who was knighted in 1592, and obtained in 1603 (on account of the discontinuance of summons to Parliament to his family) letters patent whereby the title of Say and Sele was fully confirmed. He died May 28, 1613. His son Richard was in 1624 created Viscount Say and Sele, and after the restoration of Charles was Lord Privy Seal. Brydges, vol. VII. p. 21.

⁸ See vol. I. p. 104; vol. II. p. 103.

⁹ See vol. I. pp. 449, 511.

¹⁰ See vol. I. p. 511.

¹¹ Ibid.

¹² See vol. I. p. 581; vol. II. p. 153.

¹³ Gervase Clifton (not to be confounded with another of the same name, K. B. and afterwards a Baronet, see vol. I. pp. 85, 224) was summoned to Parliament, July 9, 1608, as Baron Clifton of Leighton Bromswold, Huntingdonshire. He was committed to the Tower in 1617, for threatening the life of the Lord Keeper Bacon, "who had decreed a cause in Chancery against him;" and, in October 1618, whilst still in confinement, he destroyed himself. His only daughter married the Duke of Lenox, from whom the Barony has descended by female heirs to the O'Brien, Hyde, and Bligh families; and with the latter it at present remains.

*The manner of the Knights of the Bath, and the Ceremonies
observed in solemnizing the same :*

According to the order given from the Commissioners appointed for the oversight and direction of these Ceremonies, the Lords and others that were to receive the honourable Order of the Bath, repaired on Saturday the second of June to Durham House in the Strand¹, and there in the afternoone heard evening prayer, observing no other ceremony at that time but only passing through the hall [in their ordinary apparell²], the Heralds going before them, with their coates upon their armes, into the Chappel, from whence, after service ended, they returned into the chamber they were to supe in.

Their supper was prepared all at one table, and all sat upon one side of the same, every man having an escutcheon of his armes placed over his head, and certaine of the King's officers, [Sir Richard Conisby, Knt. John Wicksted and James Claggorus, Esquires, Gentlemen Ushers, and the King's Guardes,] being appointed to attend them. In this manner having taken their repast, the tables were removed, and severall beds made ready for their lodging, in the same place, after the same manner, all on one side, and each one as afore, right under the scutcheon of his owne armes. Their beds were pallets with coverings, testers or canopies of red say, but they used no curtaines.

The Knights in the mean while were withdrawne into the Bathing-chamber, which was the next roome to that they supped in, where for each of them were provided a severall bathing-tub, which was lined both within and without with white linnen, and covered with red say, [and a ticket of every man's name set upon his tub very orderly]. After the bath they betooke themselves to their rest.

¹ The first house beyond Ivy-bridge, and consequently, according to Stow's division, the first house in Westminster, was Durham House, originally the town mansion of the Bishops of Durham, but afterwards a Royal Palace, Bishop Tunstall having exchanged it with Henry the Eighth. It was employed much as on the present occasion in 1540, when, after a triumphant Justing at Westminster, the Challengers here feasted the King and Queen, the Court and the City. It afterwards witnessed other scenes of magnificence. See its history in Pennant's *London*, pp. 130, *et seq.* and Smith's *Antiquities of Westminster*, p. 7; in the latter work is a view of the front towards the Strand.—It was on part of the premises that Britain's Bourse was erected; see before, pp. 200, 246. The Tract we are now perusing was printed there; see p. 324. The site of the whole premises is now fully occupied by the magnificent buildings of the Adelphi. N.

² This is noted, because, according to Camden, at the Creation which took place previously to the King's Coronation they went in their hermeticalls. N.

Early the next morning they were wakened with musicke, and at their up-
 rising invested in their hermits' habits¹, which was a gowne of gray cloth girded
 close, and a hood of the same, with a linnen coyfe underneath; [with a russet
 silke girdle] and a handkercher hanging at this girdle, cloth stockings soled with
 [white] leather [called cashambles], but no shoes; and thus apparelled, their
 Esquires Governours, with the Heralds wearing the coats of armes, and [the
 Kinge's Musitions with] sundry sorte of winde instruments going before them,
 they proceeded from their lodging downe through the Hall, the meanest in order
 formost as the night before, till they came to the Chappell; where [they tooke
 their seates, with their accustomed reverences, and] after service ended, their oath
 was ministred unto them by the Earle of Worcester and the Earle of Suffolke,
 in a solemne and ceremonious manner, all of them standing forth before their
 stalles, and at their comming out making low reverence towards the altar, by which
 the Commissioners sate; then were they brought up by the Heralds [Clarentiaux
 and Norroy] by two at once, the chieftest first, and so the rest, till all successively
 had received their oath, which in substance was this: that above all things they
 should honour God and maintaine true religion, love their Sovereigne, serve their
 country, help maidens, widdowes, and orphans, and to the utmost of their power
 cause equity and justice to be observed².

¹ "There is another custom likewise, that the Knights the first day wear the gown of some Reli-
 gious Order, and the night following to be bathed; after which they take an oath never to sit in place
 where injustice should be done, but they shall right it to the uttermost of their power, and parti-
 cularly Ladies and Gentlewomen that shall be wronged in their honour, if they demand assistance;
 and many other points, not unlike the romances of Knights Errands." Life of Edward Lord Her-
 bert of Cherbury, 1770, p. 54.

² The two Earls, says Camden, read the Oath *alternis vicibus*. This Oath is given in full by Howes;
 it is as follows: "Right deere Brother, great worship be this Order unto you, and the Almighty God
 give you the praying of all Knighthood! You shall honoure God above all thinges, you shall be
 steadfast in the faith of Christ, and the same maintaine and defend to your power; you shall love
 your Sovereigne above all earthly creatures; and for your Sovereigne's right and dignity live
 and dye; you shall defend widdowes, maydens, and orphans, in their right; you shall suffer no
 extortion as farre forth as you may, nor sit in any place where any wrongful judgement shall
 be given to your knowledge. And as great honor be this noble Order unto you, as ever it was
 to any of your progenitors." — It was even yet the fashion, at least among romantic spirits, to
 hold that this Oath was binding in its utmost extent. The chivalrous Lord Herbert of Cher-
 bury (made K. B. in 1603; see vol. I. p. 224) gives, with great self-complacency, the following
 instance of his faithful adherence to this Knightly vow: "Passing two or three days here, it hap-
 pened one day that a daughter of the Dutchess of about ten or eleven years of age, going one even-

This done, whilst they were yet in the Chappell, wine and sweetmeates were brought them, and then they departed to their chamber to be disrobed of their hermits' weeds; and now re-vested againe in robes of crimson taffata, lined with white sarcenet, having white hats on their heads with white feathers, white boots on their legs, and white [leather] gloves tyed to the strings of their mantles¹. All which performed, they mount on horsebacke [in Durham-house yearde, abouting from the castle to walk in the meadows, myself with divers French Gentlemen attended her, and some Gentlemen that were with her. This young Lady wearing a knot of ribband on her head, a French chevalier took it suddenly and fastened it to his hat-band; the young Lady, offended herewith, demands her ribband, but he refusing to restore it, the young Lady, addressing herself to me, said, 'Monsieur, I pray get my ribband from that Gentleman;' hereupon, I courteously, with my hat in my hand, desired him to do me the honour that I may deliver the Lady her ribband or bouquet again; but he roughly answering me, 'Do you think I will give it you, when I have refused it to her?' I replied, 'Nay then, Sir, I will make you restore it by force;' whereupon also putting on my hat, and reaching at his, he, to save himself, ran away, and after a long course on the meadow, finding that I had almost overtook him, he turned short, and running to the young Lady was about to put the ribband on her head, when I, seizing upon his arm, said to the young Lady, 'It was I that give it.' 'Pardon me,' quoth she, 'it is he that gives it me.' I said then, 'Madam, I will not contradict you; but if he dare say that I did not constrain him to give it, I will fight with him.' The French Gentleman answered nothing thereunto for the present, and so conducted the young Lady again to the castle. The next day I desired Mr. Aurelian Townsend to tell the French cavalier, that either he must confess that I constrained him to restore the ribband, or fight with me; but that Gentleman seeing him unwilling to accept of the challenge, went out from the place: whereupon I following him, some of the Gentlemen that belonged to the Constable taking notice hereof, acquainted him therewith, who, sending for the French cavalier, checked him well for his sauciness, in taking the ribband away from his grandchild, and afterwards bid him depart his house. And this was all that I ever heard of the Gentleman, with whom I proceeded in that manner, because I thought myself obliged thereunto by the oath taken when I was made Knight of the Bath, as I formerly related upon this occasion." *Life of Lord Herbert of Cherbury*, p. 59.

¹ Howes describes these as "cardows of white silke, with tassels of the same."—"On the left sleeve," says Lord Herbert in the account of his own Creation, "is fastened certain strings weaved of white silk of gold and tied in a knot, and tassells to it of the same, which all the Knights are obliged to wear till they have done something famous in arms, or till some Lady of honour take it off and fasten it on her sleeve, saying, 'I will answer he will prove a good Knight.' I had not long worn this string, but a principall Lady of the Court, and certainly, in most men's opinions, the handsomest, took mine off, and said, 'she would pledge her honour for mine.'"—"This custom," remarks Sir Walter Scott, the editor of Somers's Tracts, "was a faint remnant of that by which maiden Knights were, in some countries, obliged to wear an iron chain, called in German, *Ketten Gelubde*, i. e. Fetters of the Vow, until they had done some deed of arms. In the curious romance of Jehan de Saintre, five Polish Palantines are introduced, wearing each a chain of gold fastened round the arm and round the ancle. They had come to the Court of King John in France, that they might be delivered by fighting in the lists with five of the French Knights."

ten of the clocke], their saddles being of blacke leather, and bridles of the same, with crosses upon their breasts and cruppers of their horses; each Knight between his two Esquires well apparelled, his footeman attending, and his Page riding before him, carrying his sword [in a white scabbard with a belt] with the hilt upward, and his spurres hanging thereon.

In this order rankte every man according to his degree, the best or chiefest first; they rode faire and softly towards the Court, the trumpets sounding, and the Heralds all the way riding before them. Being alighted at the Court gate, they were conducted by the Heralds and others appointed for that purpose into the Hall, where [being placed with their Governours and Pages in a semi-circle forme, the Kinge soone after came down accompanied with the Nobilitie but no Bishoppes; and] his Majestie, sitting under a cloth of estate, gave them their Knighthood in this manner:

First, the principall Lord that is to receive the Order comes led by his two Esquires, and his Page before him bearing his sword and spurres, and kneeleth downe before his Majestie. The Lord Chamberlaine takes the sword of the Page, and delivers it to the King, who puts the belt over the neck of the Knight aslope his brest, placing the sword under his left arme. Then two Noblemen of the chiefe about the King put on his spurres¹, and so is the ceremony performed. In this sort the Earle of Oxford, which was the principall of this number, beeing first created, the rest were all consequently knighted alike; and when the solemnity thereof was fully finished, they all returned againe in order as they came, saving some small difference, in that the youngest and meanest Knight went now foremost, and their Pages behind them.

Coming back to Durham House, their dinner was ready prepared in the same roome, and after the same fashion as their supper was the night before; but being set, they were not to taste any thing that stood before them, but with a

¹ Camden, who is doubtless correct, says "the Earle of Northampton put on the Earle of Oxford's spurres, but, when at the beginning some of the Nobilitie mistooke the left spur for the right, the King, as though it were ominous, seemed offended; and thenceforth they put on onely the right spur, the King hastning to the Sermon, and their Pages, when they came down, did putt on the other."—"I must not forget yet," remarks Lord Herbert of Cherbury, "the ancient custom, being that some principal person was to put on the right spur of those the King had appointed to receive that dignity; the Earle of Shrewsbury seeing my Esquire there with my spur in his hand, voluntarily came to me, and said, 'Cozen, I believe you to be a good Knight, and therefore I will put on your spur;' whereupon, after my most humble thanks for so great a favour, I held up my leg against the wall, and he put on my spur." *Life*, p. 54.

modest carriage and gracefull abstinence to refraine, divers kindes of sweete musicke being played the while; and, after a convenient time of sitting, to arise and withdraw themselves, leaving the table furnished to their Esquires and Pages.

About foure [six] of the clocke in the afternoone they rode againe to the Court, to heare service in the King's Chappell, keeping the same order they did at their returne from thence in the morning; every Knight riding betweene his two Esquires, and his Page following him. At their entrance into the Chappell, the Heralds conducting them, they make a solemne reverence, the youngest Knight beginning, the rest orderly ensuing; and so one after another take their standing before their stalles; where all being placed, the eldest Knight maketh a reverence, which is followed to the youngest; and then all ascend into their stalles, and take their accustomed places.

Service then beginneth, and is very solemnely celebrated, with singing of divers anthemes, and playing on the organes; and when the time of their offertory is come, [presently after the second Lesson, the musique of the Offertory being begun,] the youngest Knights are summoned forth of the stalles by the Heralds, doing reverence first within the stalles, and againe after they are descended, which is likewise imitated by the rest. And being all thus come forth, standing before their stalles, as at first, the two eldest Knights, with their swords in their handes, are brought up by the Heralds to the altar, where they offer their swords, and the Dean receives them, of whom they presently redeem them with an angell in golde, [offered into a bason held by a Minister in a coape thereby. The Deane used these wordes at the re-delivery of their swordes: By the Oath that you receaved this daye, remember to use your sworde to the glorie of God, the defence of His worde, of youre Sovereigne and Countrey, and to the maintenance of justice]. And then come downe to their former places, whilst two other are led up in like manner; so doing successively till the whole ceremony be performed; which done, and the service ended, they depart in such order as they came, with accustomed reverence.

At the Chappell doore as they came foorth, they were encountered by the King's Master-cooke, who stood there with his white apron and sleeves, and a chopping-knife [gilded about the edge] in his hand, and challenged their spurres, which were likewise redeemed with a noble in money, threatening them neverthelesse that if they proved not true and loyall to the King his Lord and Master, it must be his office to hew them from their heeles. [And so they marched through the Hall into the Court-yearde, and at the Gate tooke their

horses and returned to Durham House in the same order as they came, the trumpets sounding, the Herauldes still attending them till they came there. And then every Knight alighted and put off his robes; and then every Knight went privatly to his owne lodging; for that night they had no supper there provided.]

On Monday morning [about eight of the clock] they all met together again at the Court, where in a private roome appointed for them [the Queene's closet], they were cloathed in long robes of purple sattin with hoods¹ of the same, all lined and edged with white taffata [without any cardows².] And thus apparelled they gave their attendance upon the Prince at his Creation³, and dined that day in his presence at a side-bord, as is already declared.

The Names of such Lords and Gentlemen as were made Knights of the Bath, in honour of his Highnesse' Creation, in order as they were knighted on Sunday the third of June 1610:

The Earle of Oxford⁴.

The Lord Gourdon⁵, sonne and heire of the Marquesse Huntley.

The Lord Clifford, sonne and heire to the Earle of Cumberland⁶.

¹ Like those worn by Bachelors of Law, says Howes.

² See p. 338.

³ "But for want of good and true direction," says Howes, "the Prince who should have gone in a barge by himselfe, and their Knightes in another before him, went with the Kinge in his barge (see p. 327), and the Knightes of the Bathe staying behinde untill they were sent for, and being landed at Westminster-palace bridge, were met at the Hall gate by the Heraulds onely, and so conducted up to the dore of the Court of Wards."

⁴ Henry Vere had succeeded his father as eighteenth Earl of Oxford in 1604. Wilson describes him as being "very debauched and riotous in his youth," but after his travels in France and Italy, "so much had his noble and gallant comportment there gained, refined in every esteeme." He was with the King at Oxford in 1605 (see vol. I. p. 555). In the latter part of his life he was much abroad, and he died s. p. at the siege of Breda in the Netherlands in 1625. He was succeeded by his second cousin Robert. See Brydges's *Peers of James I.* pp. 2, 495.

⁵ See p. 246.

⁶ And grandson of the celebrated Earl. He this year married Francis, daughter of the Earl of Salisbury, and accompanied Lord Wotton in his embassy to France. He was the fifth and last Earl of Cumberland, succeeding to the title on the death of his father in 1640. "Earl Henry," says the Countess of Pembroke (Lady Anne Clifford), "was endued with a good natural wit, was a tall and proper man, a good courtier, a brave horseman, an excellent huntsman; and had good skill in architecture and mathematics. He was much favoured by King James and King Charles, and died of a burning fever, at one of the Prebends' houses in York, Dec. . . , 1643." See Whitaker's *Craven*, where much of his correspondence is printed. Nov. 28, 1616, his father writes to him: "Upon Sunday last I receaved a Letter, by packett, from his Majestie, for my repaire to London against this

Master Francis Stuard¹.

Master Ferdinand Dudley², sonne and heire to the Lord Dudley.

Master John [Henry] Carey³, sonne and heire to the Lord Hunsdon.

Master Oliver Saint John⁴, sonne and heire to the Lord Saint John.

Master Gilbert Gerrard⁵, sonne and heire to the Lord Gerrard.

Master Charles Stanhope⁶, sonne and heire to the Lord Stanhope.

Master William Stuard⁷.

Master Edward Bruse⁸, sonne and heire to the Lord Kinlosse.

Master Robert Sidney⁹, second sonne to Vicount Lisle.

¹ Second son of James second Earl Moray. He was a learned man, one of Sir Walter Raleigh's Club at the Mermaid in Friday-street, London. Wood's Douglas, vol. II. p. 258.

² Sir Ferdinando Sutton (not Dudley) died in his father's life-time, Nov. 22, 1621, leaving an only daughter, from whom Lord Dudley and Ward is descended. See Brydges, vol. VI. p. 273.—But Camden marks "abfuit" against his name.

³ This is an error for Henry, arising from his father's name being John. He had been knighted in 1599; succeeded his father as fourth Lord Hunsdon in 1617; was created Viscount Rochford in 1621, and Earl of Dover in 1627-8. Brydges's Peers of King James, p. 399.—There is another mistake respecting this Knight. He is called in Wood's Douglas (vol. I. p. 567) the Sir Henry Cary who was afterwards the celebrated Viscount Falkland.

⁴ Who succeeded his father Oliver as the fourth Baron in 1618; was created Earl of Bolingbroke in 1624; and died in 1646. Brydges, vol. VI. p. 745.

⁵ Who, in 1618, succeeded his father Thomas as second Lord Gerard, and died in 1622.

⁶ Who succeeded his father John as the second Baron in 1620. He retired beyond the seas during the rebellion, and died s. p. in 1675, aged 82, when the Barony became extinct. Brydges, III. 417.

⁷ Perhaps the same as received Free-gifts of £ 600 in 1605, £ 500 in 1613, £ 1500 in 1614.

⁸ He was a Gentleman of the King's Bed-chamber, and succeeded his father Edward (of whom see p. 289) as second Lord Kinlosse in 1610-11; but, after a most desperate and sanguinary conflict, was slain in a duel at Bergen-op-Zoom in Holland in Aug. 1613, by Sir Edward Sackville, afterwards Earl of Dorset, who was severely wounded. See Wood's Douglas, vol. I. p. 515.—His body was buried, and a monument erected to his memory in the Church of Bergen-op-Zoom; but his heart was deposited in the Abbey Church of Culross, Perthshire, where it was discovered in 1808 embalmed in a silver case of the same form, inscribed, "Lord Eduard Bruse." Two engravings, one of the case, and one of the appearance of the heart inside (for the case opens with hinges,) may be seen in the *Archæologia*, vol. XX. p. 516, accompanied with a letter from Lord Stowell, describing the circumstances of the discovery, the place where the combatants met (to which Lord Edward repaired from London, Sir Edward from Paris), and other particulars.

⁹ Sir Robert Sidney was elected M. P. in 1620, for Monmouthshire in 1623 and 1625; and succeeded his father as Earl of Leicester in 1626, being the only surviving son. He was by King James several times sent Ambassador to the King of Denmark, the States of Germany, and the Court of France; and on the removal of the Earl of Stafford, was nominated Lord Lieutenant of Ireland,

Master William Touchet¹, second sonne to the Lord Audley.

Master Peregrine Berty², second brother to the Lord Willoughby.

Master Henry Rich³, third sonne to the Lord Rich.

Master Edward [Edmund] Sheffield⁴, second sonne to the Lord Sheffield.

Master William Cavendish⁵, sonne and heire to Sir Charles Cavendish.

The Lord Commissioners for ordering the Ceremonies of the Bath were the Earle of Worcester and the Earle of Suffolk⁶.

though he never went over thither. He died at Winchester in 1677, aged nearly 82; and is characterized by Clarendon. See further in Nichols's *Leicestershire*, vol. I. p. 541.

¹ Ferdinando, says Brydges, vol. VI. p. 554.

² The ancestor of the Berties of Low Layton, Essex. He was a Gentleman in Ordinary of the Privy-chamber to Prince Henry, and died in 1640, aged 65. Brydges, vol. II. p. 12.

³ He was constituted Captain of the King's Guard in 1617; created Baron Kensington in 1622; Earl of Holland in 1624; K. G. in 1625; Constable of Windsor Castle and General of the Horse in 1639. He was a negotiator in the projected Spanish and French matches, but flourished chiefly in the reign of Charles. Of his activity in the Royal cause, and subsequent execution March 9, 1648-9, see fully in Collins's *Peerage*, 1735, vol. II. p. 131.

⁴ Of whom we find no particulars but his disastrous death. — Lord Sheffield lost all his sons by accidents, with the exception of Charles the eldest, who also died young. John, this Edmund (now the second surviving son), and Philip, were drowned in their passage over the Humber at Whitgift Ferry in December 1614; William was drowned in France; and George killed when exercising himself in a riding-house. Collins erroneously makes John the K. B., he being the second son; but Camden, whose authority is not light, confirms him Edmund. — Edmund, son of John, succeeded his grandfather (of whom see p. 334) as Earl of Mulgrave, and was ancestor of Edward Strafford, Duke of Buckinghamshire. See Collins, 1735, vol. I. p. 146.

⁵ Afterwards "the loyall Duke of Newcastle;" who enjoyed the titles of Baron Ogle of Bothal (from his mother); Baron Cavendish of Bolsover; Viscount Mansfield; Earl of Ogle; Earl, Marquis, and Duke of Newcastle-upon-Tyne. He was equally active, and suffered greatly in his estates, in the cause of Charles the First, to whom and his son he was a Privy Councillor. He held several offices of state, civil and military, was K. G. and dying Dec. 25, 1676, was buried in Westminster Abbey, where he has a superb monument. See his amiable character by Lord Clarendon, and his entertaining life by his Duchess. Brydges, vol. I p. 318.

⁶ Dugdale, in his *Warwickshire* (1656, p. 531), has given a valuable account of the more ancient manner and order of creating Knights of the Bath, translated from a French MS in the College of Arms; and it is illustrated with twenty-three very curious engravings (forming two large folding plates), delineated from a small book of the age of Edward IV., where they were drawn in colours on a much larger scale. — "That the making of Knights," observes Dugdale, "by this solemn manner of Bathing, and other sacred ceremonies (notwithstanding the originall thereof cannot now be dis-

The following is from Camden's manuscript volume :

"Fees to be payd by every Knight of the Bathe, as it was rated by the Lords in
Commission for the office of Earle Marshall. £. s. d.

To the Earle Marshall	-	-	-	-	-	-	5	0	0
To the Deane of the King's Chappell	-	-	-	-	-	-	0	10	0
To the Heraulds of Armes for the Knights' fee and redeeming of their roabes	-	-	-	-	-	-	14	0	0
To the Serjeant of the Chanorie	-	-	-	-	-	-	5	0	0
To the Cleark of the Spicery	-	-	-	-	-	-	0	6	8
To the Master Cooke	-	-	-	-	-	-	0	13	4
To the Music'ons	-	-	-	-	-	-	0	30	0
To the Gentlemen of the Chappell by every Knight	-	-	-	-	-	-	0	3	4
To the Vestrye	-	-	-	-	-	-	0	3	4
To the Trumpetts	-	-	-	-	-	-	0	40	0
To the Ewerye	-	-	-	-	-	-	0	20	0
To the Barber, for the bathes, coverings, and tubbes	-	-	-	-	-	-	3	0	0
To the comon purse	-	-	-	-	-	-	5	0	0

Somma totalis - £.38 6 8

Thus subscribed :

T. DORSETT.	NOTINGHAM.	SUFFOLK.
E. WORCESTER.	DEVONSHIRE.	H. NORTHAMPTON.

Oct. 26. Wee in Commission for this tyme doe allowe and confirme the Fees
above written, and no other.

T. SUFFOLKE.	E. WORCESTER.	LENOX.
F. ARUNDELL.	PEMBROKE."	

cerned) is of no less antiquity than the times of our ancestors the Saxons, is not, I think, to be doubted ;" and this he proceeds to prove. "Of which Courtly Ceremonies," he concludes, "most plain it is, that the use hath continued ever since, even through all ages, till towards these later times, though, perhaps, in some particulars varied."—There are in reality no further differences between the Ceremonies recorded by Dugdale and those performed in 1610, than the change of religion necessarily required, and some of them, particularly the Bath, the Bed, the Procession to Court, the Investiture by the King, the Offering of the Sword, the rencontre with the Master-cook, the Abstinence Supper, and the acceptance by a Lady, are, *mutatis mutandis*, exactly similar. Camden, in the MS. volume of his mentioned in p. 324, and which has been so often quoted, has also written an essay on the antiquity of the Knights of the Bath. N.

TETHYS' FESTIVAL; OR, THE QUEEN'S WAKE.

CELEBRATED AT WHITEHALL, THE FIFTH DAY OF JUNE 1610.

DEvised BY SAMUEL DANIEL¹,

ONE OF THE GROOMES OF HER MAJESTIE'S MOST HONOURABLE PRIVIE-CHAMBER².

THE PREFACE TO THE READER.

FOR so much as shewes and spectacles of this nature are usually registred among the memorable acts of the time, being complements of state, both to shew magnificence and to celebrate the feasts to our greatest respects; it is expected (according now of the custome) that I, being employed in the busines, should publish a description and forme of the late Mask, wherewithall it pleased the Queene's most excellent Majestie to solemnize the Creation of the high and mighty Prince Henry Prince of Wales, in regard to preserve the memorie thereof, and to satisfy their desires, who could have no other notice, but by others' report

¹ Of Daniel's personal history little is known, but he has gained a well deserved fame as a poet and historian. He was born near Taunton in 1562, the son of a music-master; was of Magdalen College, Oxford, and afterwards patronized by the Pembroke family. He became tutor to the celebrated Lady Anne Clifford, the Lady Dorset in this Masque, who erected a monument to his memory, on which she caused to be engraven that she had been his pupil, a circumstance she seems to have remembered with delight, at a distance of more than half a century after his decease. He was afterwards patronized by Queen Anne, "who took great delight in his conversation and writings;" he was made Gentleman Extraordinary and one of the Grooms of the Privy-chamber to her Majesty. He composed most of his dramatic pieces at a small house and garden in Old-street, St. Luke's, where he enjoyed the friendship of Camden, Shakspeare, Marlowe, and Chapman, as well as of many persons of rank; he afterwards retired to a farm at Beckington, near Philip's Norton, where he died Oct. 14, 1619. He enjoyed the praise of many of his contemporaries, and in later times his merit has been fully appreciated by Mr. Headley, who terms him the Atticus of his day. More minute particulars of his life, a list and criticisms of his works may be found in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. Of the latter, his Panegyric to the King at Harington Burley in 1603, has been printed in vol. I. p. 121, his Vision of the Twelve Goddesses in 1603-4, p. 305, and his Queen's Arcadia in 1605, noticed in p. 561. He wrote also "Hymen's Triumph, a pastoral tragi-comedy," for the Nuptials of Lord Roxburgh, of which see hereafter under the year 1613-4. A good Portrait of him is prefixed to the edition of his works published in 1623. N.

² "London: Printed for John Budge, 1610." It has a fresh title-page, though published with the preceding Tract.—"The deviser appears," remarks Sir Walter Scott, "to have had his eye upon the marriage of Thames and Isis, in the Faery Queen, canto iv. book 8"

of what was done; which I doe not, out of a desire to be seene in pamphlets, or of forwardness to shew my invention therein: for, I thank God, I labour not with that disease of ostentation, nor affect to be known to be the man, *digito monstrari, hic est*, having my name already wider in this kind than I desire, and more in the winde than I would. Neither doe I seeke in the divulging hereof, to give it other colours than those it wore, or to make an apologie of what I have done; knowing, howsoever, it must passe the way of censure, whereunto I see all publications (of what nature soever) are liable. And my long experience of the world have taught me this, that never remonstrances nor apologies could get over the streame of opinion, to doe good on the other side, where contrarie affection, and conceipt had to doe; but onely served to entertaine their owne partialnesse, who were fore-perswaded, and so was a labour in vaine. And it is oftentimes an argument of pusilanimitie, and may make *ut judicium nostrum, metus videatur*, and render a good cause suspected by too much labouring to defend it, which might be the reason that some of the late greatest Princes in Christendome would never have their undertakings made good by such courses, but with silence indured (and in a most wittie age) the greatest batterie of paper that could possibly be made, and never once re-charged the least ordinance of a pen against it, counting it their glorie to doe whilst other talked. And shall we, who are the poore inginers for shadowes, and frame onely images of no result, thinke to oppresse the rough censures of those, who, notwithstanding all our labour, will like according to their taste, or seeke to avoid them by flying to an army of authors as idle as our selves? Seeing there is nothing done or written, but incounters with detraction and opposition, which is an excellent argument of all our imbecillities, and might allay our presumption, when we shall see our greatest knowledges not to be fixt, but rowle according to the uncertaine motion of opinion, and controwleable by any surly shew of reason, which we find is double-edged, and strikes every way alike. And therefore I do not see why any man should rate his owne at that valew, and set so low prises upon other men's abilities. *L'homme vaut l'homme*, a man is worth a man, and none hath gotten so high a station of understanding, but he shall find others that are built on an equall floore with him, and have as faire a prospect as he, which, when al is done, is but in a region subject to al passions and imperfections.

And for these figures of mine, if they come not drawn in all proportions to the life of antiquity, (from whose tyrannie, I see no reason why we may not eman-

cipate our inventions, and be as free as they to use our owne images,) yet I know them such as were proper to the busines, and discharged those parts for which they served, with as good correspondencie, as our appointed limitations would permit.

But in these things wherein the onely life consists in shew, the arte and invention of the Architect² gives the greatest grace, and is of most importance; ours the least part, and of least note in the time of performance thereof; and therefore have I interserted the description of the artificiall part, which onely speakes Master Inigo Jones¹.

TETHYS' FESTIVALL.

WHEREIN Tethys², Queene of the Ocean, and wife of Neptune, attended with thirteene Nymphs of several Rivers, is represented in this manner:

First, the Queene's Majestie in the figure of Tethys.

The Ladies³ in the shape of Nimphes presiding over severall rivers, appropriated either to their dignities, signiories, or places of birth:

Whereof the first was the Ladie Elizabeth's grace, representing the Nymph of Thames; the Ladie Arbella, the Nymph of Trent; the Countesse of Arundell, the Nymph of Arun⁴; the Countesse of Darbie, the Nymph of Darwent⁵; the Countesse of Essex, the Nymph of Lee⁶; the Countesse of Dorset, the Nymph of Ayr⁷; the Countesse of Montgomerie, the Nymph of Severn⁸; the Viscountesse Haddington⁹, the Nymph of Rother¹⁰; the Ladie Elizabeth Gray¹¹, the Nymph of Medway¹².

¹ Jones was not yet gone abroad; see p. 217. N. ² Tethys Mater Nympharum et Fluviorum.

³ All these Ladies, with the exception of the Princess Elizabeth (whose first appearance it was), the Viscountess Haddington, and the Lady Elizabeth Gray, had before been the companions of her Majesty in one or more Masques, see pp. 174, 245. In the last Masque (that of Queens), the Lady Arbella was absent, being then in disgrace (see pp. 283, 284); and the Countess of Dorset was "the Lady Anne Clifford." The marriage of the latter has been noticed in p. 246. N.

⁴ Arun, a river that runs by Arundel Castle.

⁵ Darwent, a river that runs through Darbie.

⁶ Lee, a river that bounds Essex. ⁷ Air, a river that runs near Skipton, where this Lady was born.

⁸ Severne rises in Montgomeryshire.

⁹ Of whom, her marriage, and Ben Jonson's Masque on the occasion, see p. 176.—The river alludes to the title of her father, the Earl of *Sussex*. N.

¹⁰ Rother, a river in *Sussex*.

¹¹ Elizabeth, second daughter and coheir of the Earl of Shrewsbury, married to Henry, nephew of Henry seventh Earl of Kent, and who on the death of his father in 1625 became ninth Earl; wherefore the Kentish river. He died in 1639. N.

¹² Medway, a river in Kent.

These four rivers are in Monmouthshire:—the Lady Elizabeth Guilford, the Nymph of Dulesse; the Ladie Katherine Petre, the Nymph of Olwy; the Lady Winter, the Nymph of Wy; the Lady Winsor, the Nymph of Uske¹.

The description of the First Scene:

On the travers, which served as a curtaine for the first scene, was figured a darke cloude, interspersed with certaine sparkling starres, which, at the sound of a loud musick, being instantly drawne, the scene was discovered, with these adornements: First, on eyther side stode a great statue twelve foot high, representing Neptune and Nereus. Neptune holding a trident, with an anchor made to it, and this mot: "*His artibus;*" that is, *regendo et retinendo*, alluding to this verse of Virgil, *Hæ tibi erunt artes*, &c. Nereus holding out a golden fish in a net, with the word "*Industria;*" the reason whereof is delivered after, in the Speech uttered by Triton. These Sea-gods stood on pedestals, and were al of gold. Behinde them were two pillasters, on which hung compartments with other devises; and these bore up a rich freeze, wherein were figures of tenne foot long of Flouds and Nymphes, with a number of naked children, dallying with a draperie which they seemed to holde up, that the scene might be seene, and the ends thereof fell downe in folds by the pillasters. In the midst was a compartment, with this inscription, "*Tethyos Epinicia,*" Tethys' feats of triumph. This was supported by two winged boyes, and all the worke was done with that force and boldnesse on the gold and silver, as the figures seemed round and not painted.

The scene itself was a port or haven, with bulworkes at the entrance, and the figure of a castle commanding a fortified towne: within this port were many ships, small and great, seeming to lie at anchor, some neerer and some further off, according to perspective; beyond all appeared the horizon or termination of the sea, which seemed to moove with a gentle gale, and many sayles, lying some to come into the port, and others passing out. From this scene issued Zephyrus with eight Naydes [Naiads], Nymphs of Fountains, and two Trytons sent from Tethys to give notice of her intendement, which was the Ante-maske or first

¹ These four sisters had all appeared together in the Masque of Beauty, see p. 174; as had three of them in the Masque of Queens, see p. 245. But an error respecting Lady Windsor has crept into the former page, where she is described as her mother-in-law. She was another Katherine, the seventh and youngest daughter of the Earl of Worcester, and wife of Henry sixth Lord Windsor, now made K. B.; see p. 342. Monmouthshire rivers are given to these sisters, because the principal seat of the Worcester family was, and is, Troy House, near Monmouth. N.

shew. The Duke of Yorke presented Zephirus¹, in a short robe of green satin imbroidered with golden flowers, with a round wing made of lawnes on wyers, and hung down in labels. Behind his shoulders two silver wings. On his head a garland of flowers, consisting of all colours; and on one arme, which was out bare, he wore a bracelet of gold set with rich stones. Eight little Ladies neere of his stature represented the Naydes, and were attired in light robes adorned with flowers, their haire hanging downe, and waving with garlands of water-ornaments on their heads.

The Tritons wore skin coates of watchet taffata, lightned with silver, to shew the muscles of their bodies. From the waste almost to the knee were finnes of silver in the manner of bases²; a mantle of sea-greene, laced and fringed with golde, tyed with a knot upon one shoulder, and falling downe in folds behinde, was fastened to the contrary side; on their heads garlands of sedge, with trumpets of writhen shels in their hand; buskins of sea-greene laid with silver lace. These persons, thus attired, entered with this Song of foure parts, and a musick of twelve lutes:

*Youth of the Spring, mild Zephirus, blow faire,
And breathe the joyful ayre,
Which Tethys wishes may attend this day,
Who comes herself to pay
The vows her heart presents,
To these faire complements.*

*Breathe out new flowers which yet were never knowne
Unto the Spring, nor blowne
Before this time to bewtifie the Earth;
And as this day gives birth
Unto new Types of State³,
So let it blisse create.*

*Beare Tethys' message to the Ocean King,
Say how she joyes to bring
Delight unto his islands and his seas;
And tell MELIADES,
The offspring of his blood,
How she applaudes his good.*

¹ The figure of Zephirus might aptly discharge this representation, in respect that messages are of winde, *et verba dicuntur alata*, winged wordes: besides it is a character of youth, and of the Spring.

² This word is illustrated by a great variety of examples in Mr. Archdeacon Nares's Glossary. It appears to have been explained by different commentators as suited their peculiar purpose, but in reality to be a general term for a mantle or petticoat which covered the base or lower parts, hanging down from the waist to about the knees or lower. N.

³ i. e. new Titles. N.

The Song ended, Triton, in the behalf of Zephyrus, delivers Tethys' message with her presents, which were a trident to the King, and a rich sword¹ and skarfe to the Prince of Wales, in these words:

From that intelligence which moves the sphere
 Of circling waves, the mightie Tethys, Queen
 Of Nymphes and Rivers, (who will straight appeare,
 And in a human character be seene,)
 We have in charge to say, that e'en as seas
 And lands are grac'd by men of worth and might,
 So they returne their favours; and in these
 Exalting of the good seeme to delight.
 Which she in glory, lately visiting
 The sweete and pleasant shores of Cambria, found,
 By an unusuall and most forward Spring
 Of comfort, wherewith all things did abound,
 For joy of the Investiture at hand
 Of their new Prince, whose rites, with acts renown'd,
 Were here to be solemniz'd on this strand:
 And therefore straight resolves t' adorne the day
 With her all-gracing presence, and the Traine
 Of some choice Nymphs she pleas'd to call away
 From severall Rivers, which they entertaine;
 And first the lovely Nymph of stately Thames
 The darling of the Ocean, summon'd is;
 Then those of Trent and Arun's gracefull streames;
 Then Darwent next, with cleare-wav'd worthinesse;
 The beauteous Nymph of chrystall-streaming Lee
 Gives next attendance; then the Nymph of Ayr,
 With modest motion, makes her sweet repaire;
 The Nymph of Severne follows in degree,
 With ample streames of grace; and next to her
 The cheereful Nymph of Rother doth appeare;
 With comely Medway, ornament of Kent;
 And then foure goodly Nymphes, that beautifie
 Camber's faire shores, and all that continent;
 The Graces of cleere Uske, Olwy, Dulesse, Wy.
 All these within the goodly spacious Bay
 Of manifold unharbouring Milford meete,

¹ This is mentioned in "the Inventorie of Jewelles belonging once to the High and Mightie Prince Henry." It is there called (Archæologia, vol. XV. p. 18), "A very riche cross-sword all sett with dyamants with chap richelie sett, gevin by hir Majestie at his Creation."—"By cross-sword," says Dr. Meyrick, "is meant one with merely a cross-bar for its guard." N.

The happy Port of Union, which gave way
 To that great hero Henry and his fleete¹,
 To make the blest conjunction that begat
 A greater and more glorious far than that.
 From hence she sends her deare lov'd Zephirus,
 To breathe out her affection and her zeale
 To you, great Monarch of Oceanus,
 And to present this Trident as the seale
 And ensigne of her love and of your right.
 And therewithal she wils him, greete the Lord
 And Prince of the Iles, the hope and the delight
 Of all the Northern Nations, with this sword,
 Which she unto Astræa sacred found,
 And not to be unsheath'd but on just ground.
 Herewith, sayes she, deliver him from mee
 This skarffe, the zone of Love and Amitie,
 T' ingird the same, wherein he may survay,
 Infigur'd, all the spacious emperie²
 That he is borne unto another day.
 Which, tell him, will be world enough to yeeld
 All workes of glory ever can be wrought.
 Let him not pass the circle of that field,
 But thinke Alcides' pillars are the knot;
 For there will be within the large extent
 Of these my waves and watry governmente,
 More treasure and more certaine riches got
 Then all the Indies to Iberus brought;
 For Nereus will by industry unfold
 A chemicke secret, and turne fish to gold.
 This charge she gave, and looked with such cheere
 As did her comfort and delight bewray,
 Like cleere Aurora when she doth appeare
 In brightest roabes to make a glorious day.

The Speech ended, the Naydes daunce about Zephirus, and then withdraw
 them aside; when suddenly, at the sound of a loud and fuller musique, Tethys
 with her Nymphes appeares, with another scene, which I will likewise describe,

¹ Alluding to the landing of Henry the Seventh at Milford Haven. N.

² Dominion or empire; from the old French *empere*; thus Shakspeare:

—————“ A Lady,
 So fair, and fastened to an empery
 Would make the great'st King double.” Cymbeline, I. 7.

See other instances in Mr. Archdeacon Nares's Glossary. N.

in the language of the Archetictor¹, who contrived it, and speakes in his owne mestier² to such as are understanders and lovers of that design.

First, at the opening of the Heavens, appeared three circles of lights and glasses, one within another, and came downe in a straight motion of five foote, and then began to move circularly; which lights and motion so occupied the eyes of the spectators, that the manner of altering the scene was scarcely discerned; for in a moment the whole face of it was changed, the port vanished, and Tethys with her Nymphes appeared in their severall cavernes, gloriously adorned. This scene was comparted into five neeces [qu? niches], whereof that in the middest had some slender pillowes of whole round, and were made of moderne architecture in regard of roome; these were of burnisht gold, and bore up the returnes of an architrave, freeze, and cornish [cornice] of the same worke; on which upon eyther side was a plinth directly over the pillers, and on them were placed, for finishings, two dolphins of silver, with their tailes wreathed together, which supported ovall vases of gold. Betweene the two pillers, on eyther side, were great ornaments of relievo, the basement were two huge whales of silver. Above, in an action mounting, were two sea-horses, and above them, on each side of Tethys' seat, was placed a great trident. The seate or throne itselfe was raised sixe steps; and all covered with such an artificiall stuffe, as seemed richer by candle then any cloth of gold. The rests for her armes were two cherubimes of gold. Over her head was a great skallop of silver, from which hung the folds of this rich drapery. Above the skallop, and round about the sides, was a resplendent freeze of jewell glasses or lights, which shewed like diamonds, rubies, sapphires, emeralds, and such like. The part which returned from the two plinthes that bare up the dolphins was circular, and made a hollow over Tethys' head, and on this circle were four great chartuses³ of gold, which bore up a round bowle of silver, in manner of a fountaine, with mask-heads of gold, out of which ran an artificiall water. On the middest of this was a triangular basement, formed of scrowles and leaves, and then a rich vayle adorned with flutings and in chased worke, with a freeze of fishes and a battaile of Tritons, out of whose mouthes sprang water into the bowle underneath. On the top of this was a round globe of gold full of holes, out of

¹ Inigo Jones, see p. 348.

² *i. e.* manner; *mestier* is from the French, and it was corrupted to *myster* and *mister*. See examples in Nares. N.

³ An architectural ornament like a scroll of paper, properly spelt *cartouch*, from the Italian *cartoccio*. N.

which issued abundance of water, some falling into the receipt below, some into the ovall vase, borne up by the dolphines, and indeed there was no place in this great aquatick throne that was not filled with the sprinckling of these two naturall-seeming waters. The neeces wherein the Ladies sate were foure, with pillasters of gold, mingled with rustick stones, shewing like a minerall, to make it more rocke and cavern-like, varying from that of Tethys' throne. Equall with the heads of the pillars was an architrave of the same work; above was a circular frontispice, which rose equall with the bowle of the fountaine fore-described. On the rustick frontispice lay two great figures in rileve, which seemed to beare up a garland of sea-weeds: to which, from two antick [antique] candlesticks which stood over the pillasters, were hanging labells of gold; and these were the finishings of the top of the two neeces next to that of Tethys. In the space betweene the frontispice and the architrave stood a great concave shell, wherein was the head of a sea-god, and on either side the shell, to fill up the roome, two great mask-heads in profile. The other two neeces, which were outermost, were likewise borne up with pillasters of gold, and, for variation, had square frontispices, and against the streight architrave of the other was an arch. All these were mingled with rustic, as before. In the middle, betweene the frontispice and the arch, was a bowle or fountaine made of foure great skallops, borne up by a great maske-head, which had likewise foure aspects; and lying upon this arch (to fill up the concaves) were two figures turned halfe into fishes; these with their heads held up the sides of this bowle; above this were three great cherubines' heads spouting water into the bowle. On the middest of the square frontispice stood a great vase adorned.

The rest of the ornaments consisted of maske-heads, spouting water, swannes, festons of maritime weedes, great shels, and such like; and all this whole scene was filled with the splendor of gold and silver; onely some beautifull colours behinde to distinguish them, and to set off the rest. The whole worke came into the forme of a halfe round: there sate three Ladies in each neece, which made sixe of a side; the Queene in the middest, and the Lady Elizabeth at her feete.

Now, concerning their habite: first, their head-tire was composed of shels and corral, and from a great muriake [murex] shell, in forme of the crest of an helme, hung a thin waving vaile. Their upper garments had the boddies of sky-colored taffataes, for lightnes, all imbrodered with maritime invention. Then had they a kinde of halfe skirts of cloth, of silver imbrodered with golde, all the

ground-work cut out, for lightnes, which hung down ful, and cut in points: underneath that came bases (of the same as was their bodies) beneath their knee. The long skirt was wrought with lace, waved round about like a river, and on the bankes sedge and sea-weedes, all of gold. Their shoulders were all imbrodered with the worke of the short skirt of cloth of silver, and had cypresse spangled, ruffed out, and fell in a ruffe above the elbow. The under sleeves were all imbrodered as the bodies. Their shoes were of satin, richly imbrodered, with the worke of the short skirt.

In this habite they discended out of their cavernes one after another, and so marched up with winding meanders like a river, till they came to the tree of Victory, which was a bay erected at the right side of the state, upon a little mount there raised, where they offer their severall flowers in golden urnes which they bare in their hands; while a soft musique of twelve lutes and twelve voyces, which entertained the time, exprest as a chorus their action in this manner:

*Was ever houre brought more delight
To mortal sight
Then this, wherein faire Tethys daigns to shew
Her and her Nymphs arow¹
In glory bright?
See how they bring their flowers,
From out their watry bowers,
To decke Apollo's tree,
The tree of Victory.
About whose verdant bowes,
They sacrifice their vows,
And with an everlasting Spring
Of glory, to the Ocean's King.*

This Song and ceremony ended, they fall into their first daunce; after which, Tethys withdraws, and reposes her upon the mount, under the tree of Victory, entertained with musique and this Song:

*If joy had other figure,
Then soundes, and wordes, and motion,
To imitate the measure,
And height of our devotion,
This day it had been show'd;
But what it can, it doth performe,
Since Nature hath bestow'd*

¹ i. e. in a row; see other instances in Johnson and Nares. N.

*No other letter,
To expresse it better,
Then in this forme :
Our motions, soundes, and wordes,
Tuned to accordes,
Must shew the well-set partes,
Of our affections and our harts.*

After this, Tethys rises and with her Nymphs performs her second daunce, and then reposes her againe upon the mount, entertained with another Songe :

*Are they shadowes that we see?
And can shadowes pleasure give?
Pleasures only shadowes be,
Cast by bodies we conceive,
And are made the thinges we deeme,
In those figures which they seeme.
But these pleasures vanish fast,
Which by shadowes are exprest.
Pleasures are not if they last,
In their passing is their best.
Glory is more bright and gay,
In a flash, and so away.
Feed apace, then, greedy eyes,
On the wonder you behold;
Take it sodaine as it flies,
Though you take it not to hold :
When your eyes have done their part,
Thought must length it in the hart.*

After this Songe, Tethys againe arises and with her Nymphes taketh out the Lordes to daunce their measures, corantes, and galliardes; which done, they fall into their third and retyring daunce, wherewith they retorne againe into their severall cavernes, and sodainly vanish. When to avoid the confusion which usually attendeth the desolve of these shewes, and when all was thought to be finisht, followed another entertainment, and was a third shew no lesse delightfull than the rest, whose introduction was thus :

Zephirus marching a certaine space after Tethys and her Nymphes, attended with his Tritons, a sodaine flash of lightning causes them to stay, and Triton delivereth this Speech :

*Behold, the post of Heaven, bright Mercury,
Is sent to summon and recall againe*

Imperiall Tethys, with her company,
 Unto her watry mansion in the maine;
 And shift those formes wherein her power did daigne
 T' invest her selfe and hers, and to restore
 Them to themselves, whose beauteous shapes they wore.

And then bowing himselfe towards the state, craveth their stay, and prepareth them to the expectation of a returne of the Queen and her Ladies in their formes, in these wordes:

And now, Bright Star, the guidon¹ of this State,
 And you, great Peeres, the ornaments of power,
 With all these glittering troupes that have the fate,
 To be spectators of this blessed houre;
 Be pleased to sit awhile, and you shall see
 A transformation of farre more delight,
 And apter drawne to Nature, then can be
 Discribed in an imaginary sight.

Triton having ended his Speech, Mercury most artificially, and in an exquisite posture, descends, and summons the Duke of Yorke, and six young Noblemen to attend him, and bring back the Queen and her Ladies in their owne forme, directing him to the place where to find them, with this Speech:

Faire branch of power, in whose sweet feature here
 Milde Zephirus a figure did present
 Of youth, and of the spring time of the yeare,
 I sommon you, and six of high descent
 To attend on you (as hopefull worthyes borne
 To shield the honour and the cleare renowne
 Of Ladies) that you presently returne
 And bring back those, in whose faire shapes were showne
 The late seene Nymphes, in figures of their owne;
 Whom you shall finde hard by within a grove,
 And garden of the Spring addrest to Jove.

Hereupon the Duke of Yorke, with his attendants, departing to performe this service, the lowde musique soundes, and sodainely appeares the Queene's Majesty, in a most pleasant and artificiall grove, which was the third scene; and from thence they march up to the King, conducted by the Duke of Yorke, and the Noblemen, in a very stately manner.

And in all these shewes, this is to be noted, that there were none of inferiour

¹ A banner, or small standard. See Nares. N.

sort mixed among these great personages of state and honour (as usually there have been); but all was performed by themselves with a due reservation of their dignity. And for those two which did personate the Tritons, they were Gentlemen knowne of good worth and respect. The introducing of Pages with torches might have added more splendor, but yet they would have pestered the roome, which the season would not well permit. And thus have I delivered the whole forme of this shew, and expose it to the censure of those who make it their best show to seeme to know, with this postscript:

Pretulerim scriptor delirus inersque videri,
 Dum mea delectant mala me, vel denique fallant;
 Quam sapere et ringi! S. DANIEL¹.

In the midst of the preparations for the preceding ceremonial, Mr. Dudley Carleton thus wrote to Sir Thomas Edmonds:

“The first part of the Prince's Creation was acted on Thursday last, when he came from Richmond by water, accompanied by many of the Nobility, and was met by the way by the Lord Mayor and all the Companies much after the fashion of bringing the Lord Mayor to Westminster. The Knights of the Bath have their College, and perform their Ceremonies at Durham House, from whence they are to ride in public shew to Whitehall. All the rest of the Ceremony that belongs to the Prince shall be performed in as private a manner as may be; and altogether after the fashion of Prince Arthur, first son to Henry Seventh, who you know was a good husband². And the King in this time of necessity, which is so prest to the Parliament, is not willing to undergo any needless expense, which is the cause that makes the Creation so private; whereas otherwise there was to have been a solemn entry and passage through the City of London; which is now contracted betwixt Whitehall and Westminster, and that by water. The Court of Requests is drest up and furnished for the place of solemnity, and the Lower House have scaffolds for them.

“The Lord Mayor and Aldermen will be allowed entrance; and of others (besides the Upper House) we hear of none shall be admitted. Yet the Ambassadors make some instance to be present at it; but the competition for place betwixt the greatest is thought shall serve for excuse to the rest³.”

¹ This Masque was not re-printed in the “Works of Samuel Daniel,” published by his brother John Daniel in 1623. N.

² It is scarcely necessary to observe that Mr. Carleton means—of his money. ³ Birch's MSS. 4176.

The following is a Letter¹, relating in shorter space and more familiar style, "the formalities and shews" on this occasion:

"You shall now receive a Letter which is not short, and yet no more than only the report of three days' work. The Prince's Creation was upon Monday last, whereof a special place was provided within the Palace of Westminster, where both the Houses of Parliament being for that time assembled, his Majesty entering in his Royall robes, his Crown upon his head, did first take his place of state; his train was supported by the Viscount Cranbourne and the Lord Burleigh. After a good space of time the Prince entred at the lower end of the Great-chamber, having a surcote of purple velvet close girt unto him. The order of his coming was in this fashion; the trumpets sounding, in the first place came the Earls of Worcester and Suffolk, the one Chamberlain, the other Marshal. In the next place followed twenty-five Knights of the Bath. All these were in their robes of purple satin. Next unto these followed Garter King at Arms, and after him these great Lords; the Earl of Sussex carried the Prince's Robe, the Earl of Huntington the Traine, Cumberland the Sword, Derby the Staff of Gold, Rutland the Ring, and Shrewsbury the Crown. The Earls of Nottingham and Northampton did lead up the Prince, who presenting himself before his Father with very submissive reverence, kneeled upon the uppermost step leading to the State whilst his Patent was read by the Earl of Salisbury, until it came to the putting on of his robes, sword, and the rest, performed by the Lords which carryed them; but the Crown, the Staff, the Ring, and the Patent, were delivered unto him with the King's own hands. Which done, and the Prince with a low reverence offering to depart, the King stept to him, and, as it were by the way of welcome into that degree of greatness, took him by the hand, and then kissed him. Which done, the Prince did take his place, sitting there in his Royall robes, the Crown upon his head, staff in one hand, and the Patent in the other, while a public act was read, testifying how in the presence of such and such he had been declared Prince of Great Britain and of Wales. This done, the King, the Prince, and all the rest, in a most well-ordered stately manner returned by water to Whitehall. The King dined privately in his Privy-chamber, but the Prince was served in the

¹ From Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 179. The writer is not ascertained; but it was supposed by the Editor of Winwood to have been written to Mr. Trumbull, the Resident at Brussels (of whom see p. 284), by Mr. John Finett, afterwards Master of the Ceremonies, of whom see, when knighted, March 1615-16.

Great Hall; and that in such state, as greater could not have been done unto the King. The table, being very long, was served with two messes of meat, and he that sat nearest unto the Prince was the full distance of half the board from him. The Earl of Pembroke served the Prince as sewer, the Earl of Southampton was his carver, the Earl of Montgomery his cup-bearer, and the Lord Walden brought the glass with water. The Noblemen which did sit at the board, all in their robes as the Prince was likewise, were these, the Marquis of Worcester, the Earl of Salisbury, the Earl of Northampton, the Earl of Nottingham, the Earl of Shrewsbury, the Earl of Derby, the Earle of Cumberland, the Earl of Huntington, and the Earl of Sussex. At a long side-board did all the Knights of the Bath dine, and some other. During the whole time of dinner the Hall resounded with all kinds of most exquisite music.

“The next day was graced with a most glorious Masque, which was double. In the first came in the young Duke of York, between two great sea slaves, the cheifest of Neptune’s servants, attended upon by twelve little Ladies, all of them the daughters of Earls or Barons. By one of these men a Speech was made unto the King and Prince, expressing the conceipt of the Masque; by the other a sword, worth twenty thousand crowns at the least, was put into the Duke of York’s hands, who presented the same unto the Prince his brother, from the first of those Ladies, which were to follow in the next Masque. This done, the Duke returned into his former place in the midst of the stage, and the little Ladies performed their dance to the amazement of all beholders, considering the tenderness of their years, and the many intricate changes of the dance; which was so disposed, that which way soever the changes went, the little Duke was still found to be in the midst of these little dancers. These light skirmishers having done their devoir, in came the Princesses; first the Queen, next the Lady Elizabeth’s Grace, then the Lady Arbella, the Countesses of Arundell, Derby, Essex, Dorset, and Montgomery; the Lady Hadington, the Lady Elizabeth Grey, the Lady Winsor, the Lady Katherine Petre, the Lady Elizabeth Guildford, and the Lady Mary Wintour. By that time these had done, it was high time to go to bed, for it was within an hour of the sun’s (not setting, but) rising. Howbeit, a farther time was to be spent in viewing and scrambling at one of the most magnificent banquets that I have seen. The Ambassadors of Spaine, of Venice, and of the Low Countries, were present at this and all the rest of these glorious sights, as in truth they were.

The third and last day did not give place unto any of the former, either in stateliness of shew or sumptuousness in performance. First we had the runners at the Tilt; afterwards in the evening a gallant Sea-fight, and lastly, many rare and excellent Fire-works, which were seen by almost half a million of people. The names of the Tilters¹ were these: the Duke of Lenox, the Earls of Arundel, Pembroke, Dorset², and Montgomery; the Lords Walden, Compton, Norris³, North⁴, Hay, and Dingwell; Sir Thomas Summerset, Sir Thomas Howard⁵, Sir Henry Carey⁶, Sir Sigismond Alexander⁷, and Mr. Henry Alexander⁷. The Earl of Pembroke brought in two caparisons of peach-coloured velvet embroidered all over with fair oriental pearls, and yet the Lord Walden carried away the reputation of bravery for that day. But to speak generally of the Court, I must truly confess unto you, that in all my life I have not seen so much riches in bravery as at this time. Embroidered suits were so common, as the richest lace which was to be gotten seemed but a mean grace to the wearer. And, now as the Friar preached to the Heer Van Swartzenbourg, *this is past!*"

Howes gives the following account of the Tilt and Fire-works:

"Uppon Wednesday in the afternoone, in the Tilt-yard, there were divers Earles, Barons, and others, being in rich and glorious armoure, and having costly caparisons, wondrous curiously imbroydered with pearls, gould, and silver, the like rich habiliaments for horses were never seene before. They presented their severall ingenious devices and trophies before the King and Prince, and then ran at Tilt, where there was a world of people to behould them. And that night there were other naval triumphes and pastimes uppon the water, over against the Court, with shippes of warre and gallies fighting one against another, and against a great castle builded upon the water. After these battels then for an houre's space, there were many strange and variable fier-workes in the castle and in all the

¹ Of most of these Tilters see before, p. 287. These Tilts now grew more and more numerous, from Prince Henry's passion for them; nor did they go out of fashion at his death.

² See before, p. 246.—After this period, having travelled a year abroad, he returned April 8, 1612, to Knowle, where, at Bolebrook in Sussex, and Dorset House in London, he afterwards lived with great magnificence and hospitality. In the latter residence he died March 28, 1624, aged 35. See Brydges, vol. II. p. 149.

³ See p. 334.

⁴ Ibid.

⁵ K. B. and afterwards Earl of Berkshire, of whom see vol I. p. 478.

⁶ Doubtless the K. B., of whom see p. 343.

⁷ Usually designated "the two Alexanders;" see p. 287.

shippes and gallies, without any manner of hurt to any person, the Thamis being in a manner close covered with boates and barges full of people, besides the shoar on both sides neere thereunto was surcharged with people¹.”

The Ringers at St. Margaret's were kept in full employ at these rejoicings, and received three several half-crowns, when the Citizens met the Prince, when he was created Prince of Wales, and when the Fire-works were made.—They also received 2s. 6d. on the 9th of June, “when the Queen came from Greenwich.”

On the seventh of June, Martyn Clerke entered at Stationers' Hall, “for his cotype under hands of Mr. Do^r Overall, Deane of Paule's, and Mr. Waterson, Warden [of the Company], a booke to be translated into English, and so printed, yf my Lo. Bysshopp of Bathe and Welles and Deane of his Majestie's Chappell shall so thinke itt fitte. The booke is called, ‘Defense de la Foy Catholique contenue au livre de tres puissant et sopreme Roy Jaques, Roy de la Grand Bretagne et d'Irland, contre la response de F. N. Coeffeteau², Docteur in Theologie et Vicaire Gen'all des Freres Prescheurs, par Pierre du Moulin, Ministre de la Parole de Dieu in l'Eglise de Paris.’”

On the 11th, William Jaggard, bookseller, entered “a booke called, ‘The Trophies of Kinge James the First, of Greate Brittain, Fraunce, and Ireland Kinge, Defendour of the Fayth³.’”

On the 17th, Mr.*Carleton continues⁴ his narration to Sir Thomas Edmonds:

“The absence of the French Ambassador, who excused himself upon his mourning for his Master, took away the contention with the Spaniard; and so all the rest of the Ambassadors, with the Duke of Brunswick, were present. The Tilting, Mask, and Fire-works followed; and all this while the greatest bravery that ever I saw in this or any other Court⁵.”

“The 18th of June,” says Mr. Pette, “the Prince's Highness came to Woolwich to see the ship⁶, which was now in great forwardness, and almost ready; and the next day he came thither again, in company with the King his Father, and a great Train attending on them. In the afternoon his Majesty spent almost

¹ Howes.—See under 1612-13 a long account of the fire-works at the Princess Elizabeth's marriage.

² See p. 284.

³ This was probably suggested by a book published in Paris (a copy of which is in the Bodleian Library) entitled, “Les Triomphes du Roy de France, Henry IV. 1609,” 8vo.

⁴ See p. 358.

⁵ Birch's MSS. 4176.

⁶ See p. 283.

two hours in great content, in surveying the ship, both within and without, protesting it did not repent him to have taken such great pains in examination of the business of the work, since the fruit thereof yielded him such content. His Majesty then did me the honour to come into the house, where my wife had prepared a banquet of sweetmeats and such fruits as were then to be had, whereof he was pleased to taste plentifully, and did very graciously accept of his homely entertainment, giving me special command not to launch the ship till his Progress was ended¹."

On the 25th of June, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Thomas Cæsar (younger brother of Sir Julius), he having been made a Baron of the Exchequer on the ninth of the preceding month².

On the 4th of July, the King was at Greenwich³; and, on the 8th, the Ringers at St. Margaret's were paid 2s. 6d. "when the King came from Oteland's."

On the 25th, Mr. Dudley Carleton writes as follows, from London, to Sir Ralph Winwood:

"Yesterday the King began his Progress, and gave an audience in the morning to all Ambassadors. My Lord Wotton⁴ took leave at the same time in opinion to be gone within ten days, but his dispatch depends upon the conclusion of the treaty with France, so as he may well stay the King's coming to Windsor. My Lord Clifford⁵, who is this day married to my Lord Treasurer's daughter at Kensington, goeth with him, and afterwards continues some tyme in travayle.

"The great match which was lately stollen betwixt the Lady Arbella and young Beauchamp, provides them both of safe lodgings; the Lady close prisoner at Sir

¹ Archæologia, vol. XII. p. 258.

² Life of Sir Julius Cæsar and his family (of which see vol. I. p. 155).—Sir Thomas was a Barrister of considerable fame and practice, and had obtained this promotion, by his own merits and his brother's interest, without any intermediate steps. He died June 9, 1621, aged 60. A good portrait of him is engraved in the Life, p. 39, accompanied by a circumstantial detail of his family concerns.

³ Rymer's Fœdera, vol. XVII. p. 694.

⁴ Lord Wotton (of whom see p. 334) was "sent Ambassadoure into Fraunce to take the Oath of the young King and the Queene Regent for performance of a League newly made betweene the two Kingdomes. He came to Paris the 7th of September, and the King was sworne the 12th of the same moneth; and the Ambassador returned into England the 7th of October. This French King, Lewis the Thirteenth, was crowned at Reynes in Champaigne." Howes.

⁵ Of whom, and of his marriage, see p. 341.

Thomas Parry's house at Lambeth, and her husband in the Tower. Melvin, the Poetical Minister, welcomed him thither with this distich:

‘ Communis tecum mihi causa est carceris; Ara-
Bella tibi causa est, araque sacra mihi.’

“ Here is a Letter lately come from ‘the body of the Counsayl’ in Scotland to our Lords here, to advise them to be ‘carefull of his Majestye’s preservation¹, in regard of the late assassinate of the French King².’”

Of this Progress “which was so long deferred, in regard the Parliament could not end till then³,” the first particulars that we find are that the King spent part of August at his Palace at Holdenby; where, on the 5th, the Anniversary of the Gowry Conspiracy⁴, Dr. Andrews preached before his Majesty⁵. His text was from 1 Chron. xvi. 22. “‘Touch not mine Anointed⁶.’”

Whilst the King was there, Mr. Dudley Carleton had “an appointment to take leave, so as to be at Venice about the beginning of October⁷.” At this audience he received the honour of Knighthood⁸.

¹ See before, p. 312.

² Winwood’s Memorials, vol. III. p. 201.

³ Mr. D. Carleton to Sir T. Edmonds. Birch’s MSS. 4176.

⁴ The Ringers at St. Margaret’s were paid 5s. for ringing on this day “for his Majesty’s preservation,” as were those at Kingston-upon-Thames 2s. 4d.

⁵ As he had done that day two years; see p. 203.—Of Holdenby House see vol. I. p. 184.—We shall meet with the King again at Holdenby (if not more frequently) on Aug. 18, 1616.

⁶ The Sermon was first published in 1610, together with the Latin *Concio* which the Bishop preached on the same occasion in 1606, when the King of Denmark was present; see the title printed in p. 80. It was re-printed in the Bishop’s “XCVI Sermons,” being there the third “of the Conspiracie of the Gowries.”

⁷ Birch’s MSS. 4176.

⁸ This opportunity shall be taken to say something of the eminent Statesman, from whose correspondence we have and shall continue so much to profit. He was the eldest son of Anthony Carleton, Esq. born in 1573 at his father’s seat, Baldwin Brightwell, Oxon, and educated at Westminster school, and Christ Church, Oxford, where he was distinguished as a man of parts; after some years’ travel, he was created M. A. in 1600. In that year he was appointed Secretary to Sir Thomas Parry, Ambassador to France; in 1603 acted in that capacity to the Earl of Northumberland, and was M. P. for St. Mawes. In 1605 he accompanied Lord Norris into Spain; but was soon after summoned to return, and imprisoned, as being implicated in the Gunpowder Treason; but his innocence being proved, was honorably discharged. When resident at Court, he held the office of Gentleman-Usher. He was now sent to Venice, and he returned in 1615. In 1616 he was employed in what was then one of the most important Embassies, that to the United Provinces, and was the last English Minister who sat in their Council of State. He continued in Holland during the Reign of James. On returning in 1625, on the accession of Charles, he was appointed Vice-Chamberlain of the King’s House-

On the 24th and 25th of August, we find the King at Woodstock ¹.

On the 28th, the newly-made Knight, Sir Dudley Carleton, thus writes from London to his friend Sir Ralph Winwood;

“ I took leave of the King on Sunday was se’nnight at Holmby, and now my wife is gone to the Queen at Bissam ² for her *Benedicite*; which is grown into such a custom, that the ceremony is expected for our *women* travellers ³.”

On the 31st, Mr. Phineas Pette “ rode to Nonesuch to the Prince, that then was there in hunting; who of his nobleness promised to send me a buck to Woolwich, because he had then given all away that were fallen that day ⁴.”

On the 20th of September, the King was at Theobalds ⁵.

We now proceed with the interesting narration by Mr. Phineas Pette, of the French Ambassador’s Visit to the new Man of War ⁶, the King’s fruitless Visit, and its launching on a stormy night with the Prince on board:

“ Between Easter and Michaelmas that the Ship began to be garnished, it is incredible what numbers of people continually resorted to Woolwich, of all sorts, both Nobles, Gentry, and Citizens, and from all parts of the country round about,

hold; went Ambassador to France in that year; was M. P. for Hastings; was created Baron Carleton of Imbercourt; again resumed his character of Ambassador to Holland; on his return in 1628 was created Viscount Dorchester; was made Secretary of State and Privy Counsellor; died s. p. Feb. 15, 1631-2, aged 58, and was buried in Westminster Abbey. His correspondence is to be found in many collections of State Papers, and a volume of that which took place during his embassy to Holland was published in 1757 and 1775 by the Earl of Hardwicke; whose excellent preface contains a very minute life of this eminent man. See Chalmers’s Biographical Dictionary.

¹ Rymer’s *Fœdera*, vol. XVI. pp. 703, 704.

² Bisham in Berkshire, the seat of Sir Edward Hoby, by whose mother, then married, secondly, to John Lord Russell, Queen Elizabeth was entertained at Bisham in 1592 (see her “ *Progresses*,” vol. III. pp. 130—136). King James was also frequently there, as appears by the entries in the Register of the neighbouring parish of Great Marlow. See Nichols’s *Illustrations of Ancient Times*, and Langley’s *History of the Hundred of Desborough*; and of this Work vol. I. p. 560. That Lady died in 1609. Sir Edward Hoby, who was knighted in 1582, is noticed in “ *Queen Elizabeth’s Progresses*,” *ubi supra*.

³ Winwood’s *Memorials*, vol. III. p. 213.

⁴ MS. Life. Harl. MSS. 6279, p. 56.

⁵ Winwood’s *Memorials*, vol. III. p. 221.

⁶ This Ship, which has been so often mentioned (see pp. 248—257, 283, 308, 362), had been nearly two years in building, having been begun Oct. 20, 1608. See Pette’s Life. — Howes furnishes the following particulars of this “ most goodly Shippe for Warre,” which Mr. Pette has left unnoticed, merely because they were so familiar to himself: “ The keele was 114 feet long, and the cross beam 44 feet in length. She will carry three score and foure peices of great ordinance, and is of the burthen of 1400 tun.”

which was no small charge to me, in giving daily entertainment to all comers, which could not possibly be avoided in that place at such a time. The 9th of September, being Sunday, about six o'clock in the morning, divers London maids coming to see the Ship, brought in their company a little boy of twelve years old, the only child of his mother, a widow woman dwelling in Tower-street, who carelessly going up and down upon the main orlop, fell down into the hold of the Ship, and was thereby so bruised and broken, that he died before midnight, being the first mischance that had happened in the whole time of the Ship's building. About the middle of this month, being ready to have the Ship stricken down upon her ways, I caused twelve of the choice master-carpenters of his Majesty's Navy to be sent for from Chatham, to be assisting in her striking and launching; and, upon the 18th day, being Tuesday, she was safely set upon her ways; and this day Sir Robert Mansell dined with me at my lodgings. The 20th of this month the French Ambassador came to Woolwich to see the Ship, whom I entertained in the best manner I could; and in the time of his being with me, the Prince, my Royal Master, sent me a wonderful fat buck, which he killed with his own hand.

“Now began we on all sides for the preparation to launch the Ship, and for that purpose there was provided a rich standard of taffety very fairly gilded with gold, with his Majesty's arms to be placed on the poop, and a very large ensign of crimson rich taffety, with a canton of the Prince's crest to be placed upon the quarter-deck; and all other ornaments were carefully provided befitting that purpose. There was a standing set up in the most convenient place of the yard for his Majesty, the Queen, and the Royal Children, and places fitted for the Ladies and Council (all railed in and boarded). All the rooms, both in my own lodgings and at Mr. Lydiard's, were prepared, and very handsomely hanged and furnished with a cloth of state, chairs, stools, and other necessities. Nothing was omitted that could be imagined any ways necessary both for ease and entertainment. Upon Sunday in the afternoon, being the 23d, Sir Robert Mansel, Sir John Trevor, and Sir Henry Palmer, came to Woolwich to see how every thing was ordered; and finding all things prepared and fitted to their liking, about three o'clock they returned all to Deptford, where they lodged that night with Sir Robert Mansel. This evening, very late, there came a messenger to me from Court at Theobalds, to give me orders to be very careful to search the Ship's hold, for feare some persons disaffected might have bored some holes privily in the Ship

to sink her, after she should be launched: but my care had prevented their fears beforehand, so far as could be searched or discovered.

“On Monday morning, assisted by the help of my brother Simonson, and sundry others of my friends, we opened the dock-gates, and made all things ready against the tide; but the wind blowing very hard at South-west kept out the flood, so that it proved a very bad tide, little better than a neap, which put us afterwards to great trouble and hazard. The King's Majesty came from Theobalds, though he had been very little at ease with a scouring, taken with surfeiting by eating grapes, and landed here about eleven o'clock, Prince Henry attending him, and most of the Lords of the Council. The Lord Admiral, attended by the principal Officers of the Navy, together with myself, received him on land out of his barge, and conducted him to the place provided for him in Mr. Lydiard's house. His dinner was dressed in our great kitchen. After dinner came the Queen's Majesty, accompanied with the Duke of York, Lady Elizabeth, and divers great Lords and Ladies in her Train, the drums and trumpets placed on the poop and forecastle, and the wind instruments by them, so that nothing was wanting to so great a royalty that could be desired. When it grew towards high-water, and all things ready, and a great close lighter made fast to the Ship's stem, and the Queen's Majesty with her Train placed; the Lord Admiral gave me commandment to heave taught the crabs and screws, though I had little hope to launch by reason the wind over-blew the tide; yet the Ship started, and had launched, but the dock-gates pent her in so straight that she stuck fast between them, by reason the Ship was nothing lifted by the tide, as we expected she would; and the great lighter, by unadvised counsel, being cut off the stem, the Ship settled so hard upon the ground that there was no possibility of launching that tide; besides which, there was such a multitude of people got into the Ship, that one could scarce stir by another.

“The noble Prince himself, accompanied with the Lord Admiral and other great Lords, were on the poop, where the great standing gilt cup was ready filled with wine, to name the Ship so soon as she had been afloat, according to ancient custom and ceremony performed at such times, by drinking part of the wine, giving the Ship her name, and heaving the standing cup overboard. The King's Majesty was much grieved at the frustrate of his expectation, coming on purpose, though very ill at ease, to have done me honour. But God saw it not so good for me, and therefore sent this cross upon me, both to humble me, and to make

me know, that, howsoever we proposed, He would dispose all things as He pleased; so that about five o'clock his Majesty, with the Queen and all her Train, departed away to Greenwich, where the Household were removed. Prince Henry staid a good while after his Majesty was gone, conferring with the Lord Admiral, principal Officers, and myself, what was to be done, and leaving the Lord Admiral to stay here to see that all things were performed that were resolved on. He took horse, and rode after them to Greenwich, with promise to return presently after midnight.

“ So soon as the multitude were gone, and all things quiet, we went presently in hand to make way with the sides of the gates; and having great store of scavel men and other labourers, we had made all things ready before any flood came; which performed, every man applied himself to get victuals, and to take rest. The Lord Admiral sat up all night in a chair in his chamber till the tide was come about the Ship; and Sir Robert Mansel, Sir John Trevor, and Sir Henry Palmer, and the rest, made a shift in my lodging to rest themselves. The beginning of the night was very fair, and bright moonshine, the moon being a little past full; but after midnight the weather was sore overcast; and a very sore gust of rain, thunder, and lightning, which made me doubt that there were some indirect working among our enemies to dash our launching¹. These gusts lasted about half an hour with great extremity, the wind being at South-west. In the midst of this great gust Prince Henry and all his [Train] were taken upon the top of Blackheath in their coming to Woolwich; but his invincible spirit, daunted with nothing, made little account of it, but came through, and was no sooner alighted in the yard, but, calling for the Lord Admiral and myself, and Sir Robert Mansel, went all presently on board the Ship, being about two o'clock, almost an hour before high water, and was no sooner entered but the word being given to set all taught, the Ship went away without any straining of screws or tackles till she came clear afloat in the middle of the channel, to the great joy and comfort of the Prince's Highness, the Lord Admiral, and all the rest of my noble friends; which mercy of God to me I pray I may never forget. His Highness then

¹ Mr. Pette seems to have suspected that his implacable adversaries might have invoked the wayward sisters, “ with whom fair is foul, and foul is fair,” to exercise their spells and charms in harassing him; nor ought his credulity to be a matter of surprize, as the influence of witchcraft was a prevailing notion; and King James himself, who was by his Courtiers termed the Solomon of the age, had contributed to strengthen a belief of this superstitious opinion, by his learned and elaborate system of Demonologie. DENNE.

standing upon the poop with a selected company only, besides the Trumpeters, with a great deal of expression of Princely joy, and with the ceremony of drinking in the standing cup, threw all the wine forwards towards the half-deck; and solemnly calling her by the name of the Prince Royal, the trumpets sounding all the while, with many gracious words to me, gave the standing cup into my own hands, and would not go from the Ship till he saw her fast at her moorings. In heaving down to her moorings, we found that all the hawsers that were laid ashore for landfasts were treacherously cut to put the Ship to hazards of running ashore, if God had not blessed us better. In the interim of warping to her moorings, his Highness went down to the platform of the cock-room, where the Ship's beer stood for the ordinary company; and there finding an old can without a lid, went and drew it full of beer himself, and drank it off to the Lord Admiral, and caused him, with the rest of his attendants, to do the like. At nine the same morning, being very rainy, he took his barge, accompanied with the Lord Admiral and the rest of his Train, and giving us a Princely gracious farewell, rode against the tide to Greenwich, where he made relation of all the business and the circumstances thereof, to the King his Father. We then came ashore to refresh ourselves with victuals, and to take some rest, having toiled all the night before; and amongst the rest Sir Henry Palmer was pleased to stay dinner, where we drank Prince Henry's health round, to handsel the standing cup given at the launching¹."

On the 20th of October, Roger Jackson entered at Stationers' Hall, "Sermons preached before his Majestie, *viz.* the Bridegrome's Banquett; the Triumphe of Constancye; the Banishmente of Doggs; by Francis Rollenson, Bachelour of Divinity²."

On the 29th, "Christianus Prince of Anhalt³ arryved at Dover, and came to

¹ Archæologia, vol. XII. pp. 259—264.

² Copies are in the Bodleian and Sion College Libraries. Where are also "XII Sermons on Jacob's Blessings bestowed on his twelve sons, Gen. xlix. by Fran. Rollenson, B. D. London: by F. C. 1612."—Of the Author I know no further.

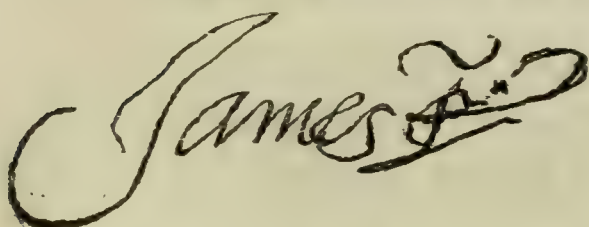
³ "This Sommer there were wars in Cleaveland; and the united Protestant Princes, with their severall forces, ayded the Marquesse of Brandenberge in his claime to that Dukedome and the Dukedome of Gulich, after the death of the olde Duke John, who dyed without heyres male; in which warres, and at the taking of Gulich, against the Emperor's forces, Christianus Prince of Anhalt was chiefe Generall of all the united forces, and Sir Edward Cecill, otherwise called Colonell Cecill, was then Lord Generall of the English and Scots armie, where the English and Scottes did great service, some whereof the King shortly after honoured with knighthood." Howes.

see the King, who entertayned him and all his Trayne very Royally. He surveyed the City of London with great pleasure and admiration, and behelde the pleasant Triumphs upon the water, and within the Cittie, which at this time were extraordinary in honor of the Lord Mayor¹ and Cittizens; and that day this Prince, with all his Germaine Trayne, were entertained at the Lord Mayor's Feast, in the Guildhall, where he manifested his former admiration, touching the greatness, scituation, state, and wealth of the Cittie, and there he observed and admired the goodly uniforme order and rich habite of the Cittizens, and sayd, there was no State nor Cittie in the world that did elect their Magistrates with such magnificence, except the Cittie of Venice, unto which the Cittie of London commeth very neere, &c.²

"By this time," says Mr. Phineas Pette, "the *Prince* was wholly rigged, and made ready to go to Chatham; of which having made Prince Henry's Highness acquainted, he was pleased to come on board her at Woolwich, on Thursday the 6th of December, where he stayed some three houres, being wonderfull desirous to have had us set saile, if we could possibly have done it without damage³."

On the 7th of December, his Majesty was at Hinchinbrook, Sir Oliver Cromwell's⁴, whence he wrote the following very curious Letter:

"To our right trustie and right wel-beloved Cousins and Counsellors the Lords and others of the Privy Councill.



"Right trustie and wel-beloved Cousins and Councillors, we greet you well. We have seen and considered your long Letter, though written upon a short and naughty subject; to which we can give no other answeare then this. That from you we first received the information of this lewd fellow's Speach, aggravated with these words, 'that he made his allusion of Jotham⁵ a King not to be desired con-

¹ Sir William Craven, Merchant-Taylor, was Lord Mayor. It would appear from what the Chronieler says, that "*extraordinary*" Pageants took place on this occasion, but I can discover no printed account of them.

² Howes.

³ Harl. MSS. 4179, p. 61. Other particulars respecting the manning and rigging this vessel here follow, and its voyage to Chatham.—See hereafter, under May 1611, of a voyage the Prince in person made to Chatham, to visit this and all the vessels there stationed.

⁴ Of some of the King's Visits to Hinchinbrook see vol. I. pp. 99, 466, 589; and of one Prince Henry made, hereafter, under August 1612.

⁵ Alluding to the 9th chapter of Judges.

ceptis verbis. And now from you again we have received a new repetition of it, though qualified and moderated as much as may be. As for our resolution what we will have to be done in this case, we will ourself tell you our pleasure at meeting; onely thus farre we thought good in the mean time to signify unto you, that we would have wished that our Councillors and servants in the Lower House had taken more heed to any Speech that concerned my honour then to keep the refusal of a subsidie; for such bold and villanous Speeches ought ever to be crushed in the cradle! And as for the feare they had, that that might have moved more bitterness in the House, not onely against themselves but also to have made the House descend into some farther complaints to our great disliking; we must to that point say thus farre, that we could not but have wondered greatly what more unjust complaint they could have found out then they have already, since we are sure that no House but the House of Hell could have found so many as they have already done! But as for my part, we should never have cared what they could have complained against us, so that lies and counfaite inventions be barred. Only we are sorry of our ill fortune in this cuntrye, that having lived so long as we did in the Kingdome where we were borne, we came out with an unstained reputation, without any grudge in the people's hearts but for wanting of us. Wherein we have misbehaved here we know not, nor we can never yet learn; but sure we are, we may say with Bellamyne in his book, that in all the Lower Houses these seven years past, especially these two last Sessions, *ego pun- gor, ego carpor*. Our fame and actions have been tossed like tennis-balls among them, and all that spite and malice durst doe to disgrace and infame us hath been used. To be short, this Lower House by their behaviour have perilled and annoyed our health, wounded our reputation, emboldened all ill-natured people, encroached upon many of our privileges, and plagued our purse with their delays! It only resteth now, that you labour all you can to do that you thinke best to the repairing of our Estate. And as to the repairing and clearing of our honour, we will ourself thinke specially thereupon, and at our return acquaint you with our thoughts thereon. Given under our signet at Hinchinbrooke the 7th of Dec. in the yeare of our raigne of Great Britaine the eighth¹."

December 15, Mr. John More writes as follows to Sir Ralph Winwood:

"A few days since, thirteen of the best moneyed men of the City, to whom his Majesty is in debt, were sent for to Whitehall, where my Lord Treasurer told

¹ Burghley's State Papers by Murden, p. 813.—It is also in Birch's MSS. Ayscough's Cat. 4106.

them their interest should be readily paid them, and prayed them to forbear the principal for a while longer, and withall to lend what more they could presently furnish upon good security. But they could not be induced to any further loan, nor very willingly to forbear that which is already out of their hands, any longer than needs they must. Since, some of the Exchequer Officers have been dealing with divers Citizens in particular, to lend upon private security, but their motions had very small effects. Here is now £.4000 more of Crown land set for sale, but I see no undertakers ready to entertaine the bargaine upon so short days of payment as here required; so I think my Lord will be in some paine even to furnish the expence of the approaching Feast; yet doth the Prince make but one Masque, and the Queen but two, which doth cost her Majesty but £.600¹; neither do I see any likelihood of any further extraordinary expence that this Christmas will bring. His Majesty will go from Royston on Tuesday next to Theobalds, and upon Thursday will come hither.—It is expected that the Marshall Laverdin should bring with him of the French King's Debt 100,000 ducats at the least, which makes us attend his coming with the better devotion. Lambeth House remains in readiness to lodge him, and the revenues of that Bishoprick may serve to entertaine him², for I see no haste made to the election of another Archbishop, now that Special Commission is granted to the Archbishop of York, and the Dean and Chapter of Canterbury, to dispatch the affairs of that See³."

¹ The Prince's Masque was the Masque of Oberon (see p. 375); and the Queen's two (as Mr. More calls them) were "Love Freed from Ignorance and Folly," and "Love Restored" (see pp. 388, 397). The last however was not a Masque of the Queen's, though it might be produced by her wish and under her superintendence. It was performed "by Gentlemen, the King's servants;" who they were does not appear. "Love Freed from Ignorance and Folly" was the last Jonson wrote for her Majesty. It is to be observed that the whole three were by that Poet, who (though he has been frequently condemned for slowness) had not long before (according to Mr. Gifford) finished the Alchemist, "the noblest effort of his Genius," and soon after, in the year 1611, produced his Cataline.

² We have no account of the Marshal's entertainment here; but, Feb. 28, 1610-11, Mr. Beaulieu thus writes from Paris to Mr. Trumbull at Brussels: "The Mareschall de Laverdin is so extraordinary well satisfied with his usage in England, as no man ever spake more in the commendation of the King and the Country than he doth, and generally all those of his Company. And to make his Majestie's liberalitie appear the better towards him, he hath openly set up his present of rich plate, which is valued at 7 or 8000 crowns, to be seen by the Queen and the whole Court." Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 262.

³ Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 239.

On the 19th, "when the King returned from Royston, the Ringers at St. Margaret's received 2s. 6d."

By Patent dated Westminster, Dec. 20, was knighted Sir Jacob Vander Eyn-den, Prefect and Governor of the City and Castle of Woerden¹.

On Tuesday the 25th, Christmas-day, the King attended Divine Service at Whitehall, where Bishop Andrews preached on Luke ii. 9, 10².

On the 31st, the Parliament was dissolved by Proclamation³.

In this month, says Howes, Prince Henry settled, or rather enlarged, his Household, and appointed his Officers of it, as well as those of his Revenues⁴. The principal of the former were: Sir Thomas Chaloner⁵, Chamberlain; Sir Charles

¹ Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. XVII. p. 707.

² This Sermon was soon after printed with that preached by the Bishop that day year; see p. 866. It is re-printed in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the Fifth on the Nativity.

³ This Proclamation is printed in Howes' Chronicle.

⁴ In Birch's *Life* are to be found the Orders for the Prince's Household, the names of his Highness's Servants with their wages, the allowance for Diet, the Bouge of his Court, his yearly Pensions, &c. Most of these are also re-printed in the "Ordinances of the Royal Household," published by the Society of Antiquaries; and are there preceded by an Account of the Lands assigned to the Prince, May 9, 1610. The arrangement in the latter work is very different to that of Dr. Birch; and it contains the whole of the Prince's Servants, (in number more than 420, not reckoning his trades-people!) whilst the Doctor omitted the least important; it also retains the old spelling. On the other hand, it must be admitted, that the Editor of the Household Ordinances would have done well to have consulted Dr. Birch (for the former was evidently unaware of the MSS. having been before printed), since the Doctor has copied, from a parchment roll which was his own property, bought at the sale of Sir Julius Cæsar's MSS. Dec. 14, 1757 (but which may be now in the British Museum), "Orders for the Prince's Household," which occupy in his Appendix, pp. 427—443, but are omitted in the other work. On these Dr. Birch remarks, "the want of a date to these Orders leaves it uncertain, whether they were not antecedent to his Highness's being created Prince of Wales." It is most probable, since Prince Henry signed his Book of Orders, May 9, 1610 (see Household Ordinances, p. 339), that all was arranged previously to the Creation, but, as Cornwallis and Howes agree, the Prince did not enter upon keeping his "Princely Court" till after that Solemnity.—An account of the Revenue, Expences, Jewels, &c. of Prince Henry, taken after his death, is printed in the fifteenth volume of *Archæologia*, from Sir Julius Cæsar's MSS.

⁵ Of whom see fully in vol. I. pp. 204, 555. — In November 1607, Sir Thomas complained, very justly, to Sir Julius Cæsar, Chancellor of the Exchequer, that Prince Henry's Household, "which was intended by the King for a courtly College or a Collegiate Court, was even then become so great, that it was ready to be overwhelmed with the charge and burden of itself." But the result of this remonstrance does not appear. Birch's *Life*, p. 97. — Sir Thomas's own wages were £.66. 13s. 4d. with "diett or bord-wages."

Cornwallis¹, Treasurer; Sir John Holles², Comptroller; Sir David Foulis³, Conferer; Sir David Murray⁴, Groom of the Stole; Sir Robert Douglas⁵, Master of the Horse; and Dr. Hammond⁶, Physician. The principal Officers of his Revenues were: Sir Edward Philips⁷, Chancellor; Mr. Adam Newton⁸, Secretary; Sir George Moore⁹, Receiver General; Sir William Fleetwood¹⁰, Surveyor General; Mr. Augustine Nicols¹¹, Sergeant; Mr. Thomas Stephens, Attorney General; and Mr. Richard Connock, Auditor. His Highness, says Sir Charles Cornwallis, made "good and strict orders through the same, both above and below staires, more like a grave, wise, and ancient Counsellour surveying, disposing, and dispatching his affaires, then so young and great a Prince. Now

¹ See p. 289.

² Sir John Holles was one of the Band of Gentlemen Pensioners under Queen Elizabeth and King James. His salary, as Comptroller to the Prince, was £.72 with "bord-wages or diett." He was created Earl of Clare in 1624, died in 1637, and was ancestor of the Duke of Newcastle. He was highly esteemed by the Prince, who once took a Progress to Sir John's house at Houghton in Nottinghamshire, where his Highness was entertained for several days. Collins's Noble Families of Cavenish, &c. p. 86.—Sir John Holles will again come under our notice.

³ See vol. I. pp. 120, 555. His salary was £.66 with "bord-wages or diett."

⁴ Who had been appointed in Scotland in 1599 the Prince's first and only Gentleman of the Bed-chamber. See other particulars of him in vol. I. pp. 427, 515, 563. In 1613 he received a Free-gift of £.2000, and in 1615 £.5200 "of Free-guift to pay his debts."

⁵ See p. 245.

⁶ See vol. I. p. 545.

⁷ Master of the Rolls, of whom see vol. I. p. 207.

⁸ See p. 43. His wages are left blank in the list. He received a Free-gift of £.2000 this year on giving up his post of Tutor. In 1628 he succeeded to the place of Secretary of the Marches of Wales, worth £.2000 *per annum*, the reversion of which had been granted to him. See Birch's Henry.

⁹ Whom the King visited at Loseley for two days in August 1603; see vol. I. p. 251. As he is barely mentioned in Queen Elizabeth's Progresses, a short memoir of him shall here be given. — Sir George More was of Exeter College, Oxford; sat in several Parliaments as M. P. for Guildford, and the county of Surrey; was knighted in 1597, being then a frequent speaker in Parliament, and much in esteem for his excellent parts; was first appointed Receiver General to Prince Henry in 1604; was with the King at Oxford in 1605 (see vol. I. p. 555); was made Chancellor of the Order of the Garter in 1610, and in 1615 Lieutenant of the Tower (with a salary of £.200). He published his Parliamentary Speeches and other works. See Wood's *Athenæ*, by Bliss, vol. II. col. 364, and Birch's Prince Henry, p. 229.

¹⁰ See vol. I. pp. 194, 555.

¹¹ Who is said to have been knighted, and became in 1612 one of the Judges of the Common Pleas. His salary in that situation was £.188. 6s. 8d. He was a man of great piety and integrity; his character is drawn to great advantage by Robert Bolton, B. D. in his Funeral Notes upon him, printed with that Divine's Discourse on the four last things. Lond. 1633, 4to.

were allotted unto him certeine lands for his revenues, which he was so farre from diminishing, that he left the same encreased, by thousands a yeare; his servants did now begin to looke which way to help themselves, since his Highnesse was every day more and more able to give; yet he being sparing to give any thing, did onely give grants unto some, with promises, hopes, and delayes unto others, because he would not (he said) dispose of any thing, untill with the gift he might perpetuate the same, which could not be untill either yeares, or the High Court of Parliament, should enable him; but this time as yet not being come, he went on his own frugall courses, suffering almost nothing to passe in his house, or other affaires, which he himself did not oversee. At last, bethinking himselfe that Wales and Cornwall, &c. his Principallitie, had a long time beene without a Prince of their owne, he thought he might the rather shew his authority in renewing and avoyding leases; wherefore having first by a writ, called *scire facias*, avoided and annihilated all their former rights and leases, he brought them unto a generall submission to compound, take, and hold new of him; which they were all ready to performe a little before his death; whereupon Surveyors and Commissioners were appointed, and dispatched to survey all his lands, and to returne a true certificate of the whole value; untill which (being but a little before his sicknesse and death) he deferred all manner of suits, because he would first be informed truely, what, and how great their demands were¹."

About the same time the Diet of the Household of Charles Duke of York² was settled; to begin from the first of January 1610-11³.

"Uppon New-yeeres night," says Howes, "the Prince of Wales being accompanied with twelve others, viz. two Earles, three Barons, five Knights, and two Esquiers⁴, performed a very stately Maske, in which was an excellent scene, ingenious speeches, rare songs, and great varietie of most delicate musique, in the beautifull roome at Whitehall; which roome is generally called the Banquetting-house, and the King new buiided it about foure yeares past⁵:"

¹ Somers's Tracts, vol. II. p. 230.

² The "Declaration" of this, communicated to the Society of Antiquaries from the papers of Sir David Foulis (who was afterwards Cofferer to Prince Charles as he had been to Prince Henry), and still in the possession of his descendant Sir William Foulis, Bart. of Ingleby in Yorkshire, is the first article in the fifteenth volume of the *Archæologia*.

³ It was at this time that those occurrences took place, which are related by Sir Robert Carey, and printed in vol. I. pp. 461—3.

⁴ Who these were does not appear; but they probably were those we have generally met with in those Masques where Gentlemen performed.

⁵ See p. 155.

OBERON, THE FAIRY PRINCE;

A MASQUE OF PRINCE HENRY'S¹,

ON NEW-YEAR'S NIGHT, 1610-11.

By BEN JONSON.

The first face of the scene appeared all obscure, and nothing perceived but a dark rock, with trees beyond it, and all wildness that could be presented; till, at one corner of the cliff, above the horizon, the Moon began to shew, and rising, a SATYR was seen by her light to put forth his head and call.

1 SATYR. Chromis²! Mnasil²! none appear?
See you not who riseth here?
You saw Silenus, late, I fear³.—
I'll prove, if this can reach your ear.

He wound his cornet and thought himself answered; but was deceived by the echo.

O, you wake then! come away,
Times be short are made for play;
The humorous Moon too will not stay.—
What doth make you thus delay?
Hath his tankard⁴ touch'd your brain?
Sure, they're fallen asleep again;

¹ This was not published at the time; but is in the first edition of Jonson's Works, folio, 1616. N.

² They are the names of two young Satyrs, I find in Virgil, Eclog. 6, that took Silenus sleeping, who is feigned to be the pædagogus of Bacchus; as the Satyrs are his *collusores*, or play-fellows. So doth Diodorus Siculus, Synesius, and Julian (in Cæsaribus), report them.

³ A proverbial speech, when they will tax one the other of drinking or sleepiness, alluding to that former place in Virgil:

“ ————— Chromis et Mnasilus in antro
Silenum, pueri, somno videre jacentem,
Inflatum hesterno venas, ut semper, Iaccho.”

⁴ Silenus is every where made a lover of wine, as in Cyclops Eurip., and known by the notable ensign, his tankard; out of the same place of Virgil: “ Et gravis attritâ pendebat cantharus ansâ.” As also out of that famous piece of sculpture, in a little gem or piece of jasper, observed by Mons. Casaubon, in his tract De Satyricâ Poësi, from Rascasius Bagarrius; wherein is described the whole manner of the scene and chori of Bacchus, with Silenus and the Satyrs,—an elegant and curious antiquity, both for the subtilty and labour; where, in so small a compass (to use his words) there is “ rerum, personarum, actionum planè stupenda varietas.”

Or I doubt it was the vain
Echo, did me entertain.
Prove again.—

Wound his cornet the second time, and found it.

I thought 'twas shee!
Idle Nymph, I pray thee be
Modest, and not follow me;
I nor love myself, nor thee¹.

*Here he wound the third time, and was answered by
another SATYR, who likewise shewed himself.*

Ay, this sound I better know;
List! I would I could hear moe.

*At this they came running forth severally, to the number of ten, from divers
parts of the rock, leaping and making antick actions and gestures; some of
them speaking, and some admiring; and amongst them a SILENE, who is ever
the Prefect of the Satyrs, and so presented in all their chori and meetings.*

- 2 SATYR. Thank us, and you shall do so.
3 SATYR. Ay, our number soon will grow.
2 SATYR. See Silenus²!
3 SATYR. Cercops too!
4 SATYR. Yes. What is there now to do!
5 SATYR. Are there any Nymphs to woo?
4 SATYR. If there be, let me have two³!
SILENUS. Chaster language⁴—These are nights,
Solemn to the shining rites

¹ Respecting that known fable of Echo's following Narcissus; and his self love.

² In the pomps of Dionysius, or Bacchus, to every company of Satyrs, there was still given a Silene for their overseer or governor. And in that which is described by Athenæus in his fifth book, “Bini Sileni non semel commemorantur, qui totidem plurium Satyrorum gregibus præsent. Erant enim eorum Epistatæ, Præsules, et Coryphæi, propter grandem ætatem.” He was also “purpureo pallio vestitus cum albis soleis, et petasatus, aureum caduceum parvum ferens.” Vide Athenæ. Dipnos. lib. 6. de pompâ Ptolemaieâ.

³ The nature of the Satyrs the wise Horace expressed well, in the word, when he called them “risores et dicaces,” as the Greek Poets, Nonnus, &c. style them “φιλόκερτομους. Nec solum dicaces, sed et proni in venerem, et saltatores assidui et credebantur et fingebantur.

“Unde Satyrica saltatio, quæ σίκινις dicebatur, et à quâ Satyri ipsi σικίνιςαι. Vel à Sicino inventore, vel ἀπὸ τῆς κινήσεως, id est, a motu saltationis Satyrorum, qui est concitatissimus.”

⁴ But in the Silenes was nothing of this petulance and lightness, but, on the contrary, all gravity

Of the Fairy Prince, and Knights;
While the Moon their orgies lights.

2 SATYR. Will they come abroad, anon?

3 SATYR. Shall we see young OBERON?

4 SATYR. Is he such a princely one,
As you spake him long ago?

SILENUS. Satyrs, he doth fill with grace
Every season, every place;
Beauty dwells but in his face;
He's the height of all our race¹.
Our Pan's father, God of Tongue²,
Bacchus, though he still be young,
Phœbus, when he crowned sung³,
Nor Mars, when first his armour rung⁴,

and profound knowledge of most secret mysteries. Insomuch as the most learned of Poets, Virgil, when he would write a poem of the beginnings, and hidden nature of things, with other great antiquities, attributed the parts of disputing them, to Silenus, rather than any other. Which whosoever thinks to be easily, or by chance, done by the most prudent writer, will easily betray his own ignorance, or folly. To this, see the testimonies of Plato, Synesius, Herodotus, Strabo, Philostratus, Tertullian, &c.

¹ Among the ancients, the kind, both of the Centaurs and Satyrs, is confounded; and common with either. As sometimes the Satyrs are said to come of the Centaurs, and again the Centaurs of them. Either of them are διφόες, but after a diverse manner. And Galen observes out of Hippocrates, Comment. 3. in 6. Epidemior. that both the Athenians and Ionians called the Satyrs φήρας, or φηρέας; which name the Centaurs have with Homer; from whence it were no unlikely conjecture to think our word *Fairies* to come. *Viderint critici.*

² Mercury, who for the love of Penelope, while she was keeping her father Icarius's herds on the mountain Taygetas, turned himself into a fair buck-goat; with whose sports and flatteries the Nymph being taken, he begat on her Pan; who was born, "Capite cornuto, barbâque, ac pedibus hircinis." As Homer hath it in Hymnis; and Lucian, in dialogo Panis et Mercurii. He was called the *giver of grace*, "χαριδοτής, φαίδρῳ, και λουκός. Hilaris et albus, nitens Cyllenius alis." As Bacchus was called, "ανθρῳ, floridus;" and "Hebo, à lanugine et molli ætate, semper virens."

³ Apollo is said, after Jupiter had put Saturn to flight, to have sung his father's victory to the harp, "purpureâ togâ decorus, et laurâ coronatus, mirificèque deos omnes qui accubuerant, in convivio delectavisse." Which Tibullus, in lib. 2. Elegiarum, points to:

"Sed nitidus, pulcherque veni. Nunc indue vestem
Purpuream, longas nunc bene necte comas.
Qualem te memorant Saturno rege fugato
Victoris laudes tunc cecinisse Jovis."

⁴ He was then lovely, as being not yet stained with blood, and called "χρυσοπήλεξ Ἄρης, quasi aureum flagellum (vel rectiùs auream galeam) habens."

Might with him be named that day ;
 He is lovelier than in May
 Is the Spring, and there can stay
 As little, as he can decay.

Omnes. O, that he would come away!

3 SATYR. Grandsire, we shall leave to play¹
 With Lyæus² now; and serve
 Only OBERON.

SILENUS. He 'll deserve
 All you can, and more, my boys.

4 SATYR. Will he give us pretty toys,
 To beguile the girls withal?

3 SATYR. And to make them quickly fall?

SILENUS. Peace, my wantons! he will do
 More than you can aim unto.

4 SATYR. Will he build us larger caves?

SILENUS. Yes, and give you ivory staves,
 When you hunt; and better wine—

1 SATYR. Than the master of the vine!

2 SATYR. And rich prizes, to be won,
 When we leap, or when we run!

1 SATYR. Ay, and gild our cloven feet!

3 SATYR. Strew our heads with powders sweet!

1 SATYR. Bind our crooked legs in hoops
 Made of shells, with silver loops!

2 SATYR. Tie about our tawny wrists
 Bracelets of the fairy twists!

4 SATYR. And, to spight the coy Nymphs' scorns,
 Hang upon our stubbed horns
 Garlands, ribands, and fine posies—

3 SATYR. Fresh as when the flower discloses!

1 SATYR. Yes, and stick our pricking ears
 With the pearl that Tethys wears!

¹ In Julius Pollux, lib. 4. cap. 19, in that part, which he entitles "de Satyricis personis," we read, that Silenus is called *πάππῶς*, that is *avus*, to note his great age; as amongst the comic persons, the revered for their years were called *πάπποι*: and with Julian (in Cæs.), Bacchus, when he speaks him [Silenus] fair, calls him *παππίδιον*.

² A name of Bacchus, Lyæus, of freeing mens' minds from cares: *παρὰ τὸ λύω, solvo*.

2 SATYR. And to answer all things else,
 Trap our shaggy thighs with bells;
 That, as we do strike a time
 In our dance, shall make a chime—

3 SATYR. Louder than the ratling pipes
 Of the Wood Gods—

1 SATYR. Or the stripes
 Of the taber; when we carry
 Bacchus up¹, his pomp to vary.

Omnes. O, that he so long doth tarry!

SILENUS. See! the rock begins to ope,
 Now you shall enjoy your hope;
 'Tis about the hour, I know.

There the whole scene opened, and within was discovered the frontispiece of a bright and glorious palace, whose gates and walls were transparent. Before the gates lay two Sylvens, armed with their clubs and drest in leaves, asleep. At this the Satyrs wondering, SILENUS proceeds:

SILENUS. Look! does not his palace show
 Like another sky of lights?
 Yonder, with him, live the Knights,
 Once the noblest of the Earth,
 Quicken'd by a second birth;
 Who, for prowess and for truth,
 There are crown'd with lasting youth;
 And do hold, by Fate's command,
 Seats of bliss in Fairy land.
 But their guards, methinks, do sleep!
 Let us wake them.—Sirs, you keep
 Proper watch, that thus do lie
 Drown'd in sloth!

1 SATYR. They have ne'er an eye
 To wake withal.

2 SATYR. Nor sense, I fear;
 For they sleep in either ear².

¹ "Erat solenne Baccho in pompâ tenerorum more puerorum gestari à Sileno et Satyris, Bacchis præcedentibus, quarum una semper erat tympanistra, altera tibicina," &c. Vide Athenæ.

² The Latin phrase is, "In utramvis aurem dormire;" and means to sleep *soundly*, without any thoughts of care. WHALLEY.

They had it from the Greek; it is rightly rendered by Whalley.

Επ' αμφοτερα νυ χ' η' πικλησθ' βατα
 Μελλυ καθυδνησιν.

Men. Frag.

G.

- 3 SATYR. Holla, Sylvans!—sure they 're caves
Of sleep these, or else they 're graves.
- 4 SATYR. Hear you, friends!—who keeps the keepers?
- 1 SATYR. They are the eighth and ninth sleepers!
- 2 SATYR. Shall we cramp them?
- SILENUS. Satyrs, no.
- 3 SATYR. Would we had Boreas here, to blow
Off their heavy coats, and strip them.
- 4 SATYR. Ay, ay, ay; that we might whip them.
- 3 SATYR. Or that we had a wasp or two
For their nostrils.
- 1 SATYR. Hairs will do
Even as well; take my tail.
- 2 SATYR. What do you say to a good nail
Through their temples?
- 2 SATYR. Or an eel
In their guts, to make them feel?
- 4 SATYR. Shall we steal away their beards?
- 3 SATYR. For Pan's goat, that leads the herds?
- 2 SATYR. Or try, whether is more dead
His club, or the other's head?
- SILENUS. Wags, no more; you grow too bold.
- 1 SATYR. I would fain now see them roll'd
Down a hill, or from a bridge
Headlong cast, to break their ridge-
Bones; or to some river take them,
Plump; and see if that would wake 'em.
- 2 SATYR. There no motion yet appears.
- SILENUS. Strike a charm into their ears.

At which the Satyrs fell suddenly into this catch:

*Buz, quoth the blue flie,
Hum, quoth the bee;
Buz and hum they cry,
And so do we.
In his ear, in his nose,
Thus, do you see?
He eat the dormouse;
Else it was he.*

[They tickle them.]

The two Sylvans starting up amazed, and betaking themselves to their arms, were thus questioned by SILENUS :

SILENUS. How now, Sylvans ! can you wake ?
I commend the care you take
In your watch ! Is this your guise,
To have both your ears and eyes
Seal'd so fast ; as these mine elves
Might have stol'n you from yourselves ?

3 SATYR. We had thought we must have got
Stakes, and heated them red-hot,
And have bored you through the eyes,
With the Cyclops¹, ere you'd rise.

2 SATYR. Or have fetch'd some trees to heave
Up your bulks, that so did cleave
To the ground there.

4 SATYR. Are you free
Yet of sleep, and can you see
Who is yonder up aloof ?

1 SATYR. Be your eyes yet moon-proof ?

1 SYLVAN. Satyrs, leave your petulance,
And go frisk about and dance ;
Or else rail upon the moon ;
Your expectance is too soon.
For, before the second cock
Crow, the gates will not unlock ;
And till then we know we keep
Guard enough, although we sleep.

1 SATYR. Say you so ? then let us fall
To a song, or to a brawl ;
Shall we, grandsire ? Let us sport,
And make expectation short.

SILENUS. Do, my wantons, what you please.
I'll lie down and take mine ease.

1 SATYR. Brothers, sing then, and upbraid,
As we use, yon seeming maid.

SONG.

*Now, my cunning Lady Moon,
Can you leave the side so soon
Of the boy you keep so hid ?*

¹ Vide Cyclopes Euripidis, " ubi Satiri Ulyssi auxilio sint ad amburendum oculum Cyclopis."

*Midwife Juno sure will say,
This is not the proper way,
Of your paleness to be rid!
But, perhaps, it is your grace
To wear sickness in your face,
That there might be wagers laid
Still by fools, you are a maid.*

*Come, your changes overthrow,
What your look would carry so;
Moon, confess then, what you are,
And be wise, and free to use
Pleasures that you now do lose,
Let us Satyrs have a share.
Though our forms be rough and rude,
Yet our acts may be endued
With more virtue; every one
Cannot be Endymion.*

Here they fell suddenly into an antick dance full of gesture and swift motion, and continued it to the crowing of the cock; at which they were interrupted by SILENUS.

SILENUS. *Stay! the cheerful chanticleer
Tells you that the time is near;—
See, the gates already spread!
Every Satyr bow his head.*

There the whole Palace opened, and the nation of Faies were discovered, some with instruments, some bearing lights, others singing; and within afar off in perspective, the Knights Masquers sitting in their several sieges; at the further end of all, OBERON in a chariot, which, to a loud triumphant music, began to move forward, drawn by two white bears, and on either side guarded by three Sylvans, with one going in front.

SONG.

*Melt earth to sea, sea flow to air,
And air fly into fire,
Whilst we in tunes, to Arthur's chair
Bear OBERON's desire;
Than which there's nothing can be high'r,
Save JAMES, to whom it flies;
But he the wonder is of tongues, of ears, of eyes!
Who hath not heard, who hath not seen,
Who hath not sung his name?*

*The soul that hath not, hath not been ;
 But is the very same
 With buried sloth, and knows not fame ;
 Which doth him best comprise ;
 For he the wonder is of tongues, of ears, of eyes !*

By this time the chariot was as far forth as the face of the scene. And the Satyrs beginning to leap, and express their joy for the unused state and solemnity, the foremost Sylvan began to speak.

1 SYLVAN. Give place and silence ; you were rude too late ;
 This is a night of greatness and of state,
 Not to be mixt with light and skipping sport ;
 A night of homage to the British Court,
 And ceremony due to Arthur's chair,
 From our bright master, OBERON the fair ;
 Who, with these Knights Attendants, here preserv'd
 In Fairy land, for good they have deserv'd
 Of yond' high throne, are come of right to pay
 Their annual vows ; and all their glories lay
 At's feet, and tender to this only great
 True majesty, restored in this seat ;
 To whose sole power and magic they do give
 The honour of their being ; that they live
 Sustain'd in form, fame, and felicity,
 From rage of fortune, or the fear to die.

SILENUS. And may they well. For this indeed is he,
 My boys, whom you must quake at, when you see.
 He is above your reach ; and neither doth,
 Nor can he think, within a Satyr's tooth ;
 Before his presence you must fall or fly.
 He is the matter of Virtue, and placed high.
 His meditations to his height are even ;
 And all their issue is akin to Heaven.
 He is a God o'er Kings ; yet stoops he then
 Nearest a man, when he doth govern men ;
 To teach them by the sweetness of his sway,
 And not by force. He's such a King as they,
 Who 're tyrants' subjects, or ne'er tasted peace,
 Would in their wishes form for their release.
 'Tis he that stays the time from turning old,
 And keeps the age up in a head of gold.
 That in his own true circle still doth run ;
 And holds his course as certain as the Sun.

He makes it ever day and ever spring,
Where he doth shine, and quickens every thing,
Like a new nature ; so that true to call
Him by his title, is to say, He's all.

- 1 SYLVAN. I thank the wise Silenus for his praise.
Stand forth, bright Faies and Elves, and tune your lays
Unto his name ; then let your nimble feet
Tread subtile circles, that may always meet
In point to him ; and figures to express
The grace of him and his great Emperess.
That all, that shall to-night behold the rites,
Perform'd by Princely OBERON and these Knights,
May, without stop, point out the proper heir
Design'd so long to Arthur's crown and chair.

SONG BY TWO FAIES.

- 1 FAIE. *Seek you majesty, to strike ?
 Bid the World produce his like.*
- 2 FAIE. *Seek you glory, to amaze ?
 Here let all eyes stand and gaze.*
- Chorus. *Seek you wisdom, to inspire ?
 Touch then at no other's fire.*
- 1 FAIE. *Seek you knowledge, to direct ?
 Trust to his without suspect.*
- 2 FAIE. *Seek you piety, to lead ?
 In his footsteps only tread.*
- Chorus. *Every virtue of a King,
 And of all, in him, we sing.*

*Then the lesser Faies dance forth their dance ; which
 ended, a full Song follows, by all the voices.*

*The solemn rites are well begun ;
 And though but lighted by the Moon,
 They shew as rich, as if the Sun
 Had made this night his noon.
But may none wonder that they are so bright,
The Moon now borrows from a greater light ;
 Then, Princely OBERON,
 Go on,
 This is not every night.*

OBERON and the Knights dance the first masque-
dance; which was followed with this Song:

Nay, nay,
You must not stay,
Nor be weary yet;
This is no time to cast away;
Or for Faies so to forget
The virtue of their feet.
Knotty legs and plants of clay¹
Seek for ease, or love delay.
But with you it still should fare
As with the air of which you are.

After which, they danced forth their second masque-
dance, and were again excited by a Song:

- 1 FAIE. Nor yet, nor yet, O you in this night blest,
Must you have will, or hope to rest.
- 2 FAIE. If you use the smallest stay,
You'll be overta'en by day.
- 1 FAIE. And these beauties will suspect
That their forms you do neglect,
If you do not call them forth.
- 2 FAIE. Or that you have no more worth
Than the coarse and country Fairy,
That doth haunt the hearth or dairy.

Then followed the measures, corantos, galliards, &c. till PHOSPHORUS the day-
star appeared, and called them away; but first they were invited home by
one of the Sylvans, with this Song:

Gentle Knights,
Know some measure of your nights
Tell the high-graced OBERON,
It is time that we were gone.
Here be forms so bright and airy,
And their motions so they vary,
As they will enchant the Fairy,
If you longer here should tarry.

PHOSPHORUS. To rest, to rest! the herald of the day,
Bright Phosphorus, commands you hence; obey!

¹ i. e. feet of clay, from the Latin *planta*. WHALLEY.

Shakspeare uses the word, with a punning allusion to the unsteady condition of his revellers, in *Antony and Cleopatra*: "Here they'll be, anon: some of their *plants* are ill rooted already." G.

The Moon is pale and spent; and winged night
 Makes headlong haste to fly the morning's sight,
 Who now is rising from her blushing wars,
 And with her rosy hand puts back the stars.
 Of which myself the last, her harbinger,
 But stay to warn you, that you not defer
 Your parting longer; then do I give way,
 As Night hath done, and so must you, to Day.

*After this, they danced their last dance into the work; and with
 a full Song the star vanished, and the whole machine closed.*

*O yet how early, and before her time
 The envious Morning up doth climb,
 Though she not love her bed!
 What haste the jealous Sun doth make
 His fiery horses up to take,
 And once more shew his head!
 Lest, taken with the brightness of this night,
 The World should last, and never miss his light.*

On the 7th of January, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Peter Osborne and Sir Edward Verney¹, of Buckinghamshire; and on the 8th, Sir William Sidney², of Kent; Sir John Leedes, of Surrey; and Sir Richard Lea³, of Shropshire.

¹ Sir Edmund Verney had lately been appointed Sewer to Prince Henry, with a salary of £20 (though according to Archdall's Irish Peerage then only 14). Having been engaged in the Low Country Wars, and travelled in France, Italy, and Spain, in the train of the several Ambassadors, he was appointed by Charles the First Knight Mareschal of his Household. He was M. P. for Aylesbury and Chipping Wycombe in 1627, 1639, and 1640. As the duty of his office, he bore the Royal Standard in the Civil War, and, on being surrounded by numbers, refusing to deliver it up, was killed at the battle of Edge Hill, Oct. 23, 1642, having that day killed sixteen with his own hand. — See more fully in Archdall's Irish Peerage, vol. II. p. 284.

² This must be the eldest son of the Viscount Lisle, whose younger brother was created K. B. at the Creation of Prince Henry (see p. 343). It is impossible to account for this preference, except by supposing the elder brother was afflicted with ill health; and this supposition is strengthened by the fact that William died unmarried, and Robert retained his precedence, succeeding his father as Earl of Leicester.

³ Sir Richard Lea was Sheriff of Shropshire in 1638.

LOVE FREED FROM IGNORANCE AND FOLLY.

A MASQUE OF HER MAJESTY'S¹, 1610-11.

By BEN JONSON.

So soon as the King's Majesty was set, and in expectation, there was heard a strange music of wild instruments. To which a SPHYNX² came forth dancing, leading LOVE bound.

SPHYNX. Come, Sir Tyrant, lordly Love,
 You that awe the Gods above,
 As their creatures here below,
 With the sceptre call'd your bow;
 And do all their forces bear
 In the quiver that you wear,
 Whence no sooner you do draw
 Forth a shaft, but it's a law;
 Now they shall not need to tremble,
 When you threaten, or dissemble,
 Any more; and, though you see
 Whom to hurt, you have not free
 Will, to act your rage. The bands
 Of your eyes, now tie your hands.
 All the triumphs, all the spoils
 Gotten by your arts and toils,
 Over foe and over friend,
 O'er your mother, here must end.
 And you now, that thought to lay
 The World waste, must be my prey.

LOVE. Cruel Sphynx, I rather strive
 How to keep the World alive,
 And uphold it; without me,
 All again would chaos be.
 Tell me, monster, what should move
 Thy despight, thus, against Love?

¹ Of this Masque there is no earlier edition than the folio 1616. The time of its performance is not exactly ascertained; but it nearly is by Mr. John More's Letter in p. 372. It was, as there remarked, the last Jonson wrote for the Queen. N.

² By this *Sphynx* was understood Ignorance, who is always the enemy of Love and Beauty, and lies still in wait to entrap them. For which Antiquity has given her the upper parts and face of a woman, the nether parts of a lion, the wings of an eagle, to shew her fierceness and swiftness to evil, where she hath power.

Is there nothing fair and good,
 Nothing bright, but burns thy blood?
 Still thou art thyself, and made
 All of practice, to invade
 Clearest Bosoms. Hath this place
 None will pity Cupid's case?
 Some soft eye, while I can see
 Who it is that melts for me,
 Weep a fit. Are all eyes here
 Made of marble? But a tear,
 Though a false one; it may make
 Others true compassion take.
 I would tell you all the story
 If I thought you would be sorry,
 And in truth, there's none have reason,
 Like yourselves, to hate the treason.
 For it practis'd was on Beauty,
 Unto whom Love owes all duty.
 Let your favour but affright
 Sphynx here, I shall soon recite
 Every passage, how it was.

SPHYNX. Do, I'll laugh, or cry, alas!
 Thinks poor Love, can Ladies' looks
 Save him from the Sphynx's hooks?

LOVE. No; but these can witness bear
 Of my candour, when they hear
 What thy malice is; or, how
 I became thy captive now;
 And it is no small content,
 Falling to fall innocent!
 Know then, all you Glories here,
 In the utmost East there were
 Eleven daughters of the morn.
 Ne'er were brighter bevvies born,
 Nor more perfect beauties seen.
 The eldest of them was the Queen
 Of the Orient, and 't was said,
 That she should with Phœbus wed.
 For which high-vouchsafed grace,
 He was loved of all their race.
 And they would, when he did rise,
 Do him early sacrifice
 Of the rich and purest gum,
 That from any plant could come;

And would look at him as far
 As they could discern his car;
 Grieving that they might not ever
 See him; and when night did sever
 Their aspects, they sat and wept
 Till he came, and never slept;
 Insomuch, that at the length
 This their fervour gat such strength,
 As they would a journey prove,
 By the guard and aid of Love,
 Hither to the farthest West;
 Where they heard, as in the East,
 He a palace, no less bright,
 Had, to feast in every night
 With the Ocean, where he rested
 Safe, and in all state invested.—

I, that never left the side
 Of the fair, became their guide.
 But behold, no sooner landing
 On this Isle¹, but this commanding
 Monster Sphynx, the enemy
 Of all actions great and high,
 Knowing, that these rites were done
 To the wisdom of the Sun,
 From a cliff surprised them all;
 And, though I did humbly fall
 At her lion's feet, and pray'd
 As she had the face of a maid,
 That she would compassion take
 Of these Ladies, for whose sake
 Love would give himself up; she
 Swift to evil, as you see
 By her wings and hooked hands,
 First did take my offer'd bands.
 Then, to prison of the night
 Did condemn those sisters bright,

¹ The meaning of this is, that these Ladies, being the perfect issue of beauty and all worldly grace, were carried by Love to celebrate the majesty and wisdom of the King, figured in the Sun, and seated in these extreme parts of the world; where they were rudely received by Ignorance, on their first approach, to the hazard of their affection, it being her nature to hinder all noble actions; but that the Love which brought them thither, was not willing to forsake them, no more than they were to abandon it; yet it was enough perplexed, in that the monster Ignorance still covets to enwrap itself in dark and obscure terms, and betray that way, whereas true Love affects to express itself with all clearness and simplicity.

'There for ever to remain,
 'Less they could the knot unstrain
 Of a riddle, which she put
 Darker, than where they are shut;
 Or, from thence, their freedoms prove
 With the utter loss of Love.

They unwilling to forego
 One, who had deserved so
 Of all beauty, in their names,
 Were content to have their flames
 Hid in lasting night, ere I
 Should for them untimely die.

I, on t' other side as glad
 That I such advantage had,
 To assure them mine, engaged
 Willingly myself, and waged
 With the Monster, that if I
 Did her riddle not untie,
 I would freely give my life
 'To redeem them and the strife.

SPHYNX. Have you said, Sir? will you try,
 Now, your known dexterity?
 You presume upon your arts,
 Of tying and untying hearts;
 And it makes you confident;
 But, anon, you will repent.

LOVE. No, Sphynx, I do not presume;
 But some little heart assume
 From my judges here, that sit
 As they would not lose Love yet.

SPHYNX. You are pleasant, Sir, 'tis good,

LOVE. Love does often change his mood,

SPHYNX. I shall make you sad agen.

LOVE. I shall be the sorryer, then.

SPHYNX. Come, Sir, lend it your best ear.

LOVE. I begin t' have half a fear.

SPHYNX. First, Cupid, you must cast about
 To find a world the world without,
 Wherein what 's done, the eye doth do;
 And is the light and treasure too.

- This eye still moves, and still is fix'd,
And in the pow'rs thereof are mix'd
Two contraries ; which time, till now,
Nor fate knew where to join, or how.
Yet, if you hit the right upon,
You must resolve these, all by one.
- LOVE. Sphynx, you are too quick of tongue ;
Say 't again, and take me along¹.
- SPHYNX. I say ; you first must cast about
To find a world the world without.
- LOVE. I say, that is already done.
And is the new world in the Moon.
- SPHYNX. Cupid, you do cast too far ;
This World is nearer by a star.
So much light I'll give you t' it.
- LOVE. Without a glass? well, I shall do 't.
Your world's a Lady, then ; each creature
Human, is a world in feature ;
Is it not ?
- SPHYNX. Yes, but find out
A world you must, the world without.
- LOVE. Why, if her servant be not here,
She doth a single world appear
Without her world.
- SPHYNX. Well, you shall run !
- LOVE. Nay, Sphynx, thus far is well begun.
- SPHYNX. Wherein what's done, the eye doth do,
And is the light and treasure too.
- LOVE. That's clear as light ; for wherein lies
A Lady's power but in her eyes ?
And not alone her grace and power,
But oftentimes, her wealth and dower.
- SPHYNX. I spake but of an eye, not eyes.
- LOVE. A one-eyed mistress that unties.
- SPHYNX. This eye still moves, and still is fix'd.
- LOVE. A rolling-eye, that native there,
Yet throws her glances every where ;

¹ Go no faster than I can go with you ; i. e. Let me understand you. The phrase is sufficiently common. G.—It is explained by various editors. See Nares's Glossary.

And, being but single, fain would do
The offices and arts of two.

SPHYNX. And in the powers thereof are mix'd
Two contraries.

LOVE. That's smiles and tears,
Of fire and frost; for either bears
Resemblance apt.

SPHYNX. Which time, till now,
Nor fate knew where to join, or how.—
How now, Cupid! at a stay?
Not another word to say?
Do you find by this, how long
You have been at fault, and wrong?

LOVE. Sphynx, it is your pride to vex
Whom you deal with, and perplex
Things most easy; Ignorance
Thinks she doth herself advance,
If of problems clear she make
Riddles and the sense forsake,
Which came gentle from the Muses,
Till her uttering, it abuses.

SPHYNX. Nay, your railing will not save you,
Cupid, I of right must have you.
Come, my fruitful issue, forth,
Dance, and shew a gladness worth
Such a captive as is Love,
And your Mother's triumph prove.

Here the Follies, which were twelve she-fools, enter and dance.

SPHYNX. Now, go take him up, and bear him
To the cliff¹, where I will tear him
Piece-meal, and give each a part
Of his raw and bleeding heart.

LOVE. Ladies, have your looks no power
To help Love at such an hour?
Will you lose him thus? Adieu!
Think, what will become of you?
Who shall praise you, who admire?
Who shall whisper, by the fire

¹ This shews, that Love's expositions are not always serious, till it be divinely instructed; and that sometimes it may be in the danger of Ignorance and Folly, who are the mother and issue; for no folly but is of born ignorance.

As you stand, soft tales? who bring you
 Pretty news, in rhymes who sing you?
 Who shall bathe him in the streams
 Of your blood, and send you dreams
 Of delight?

SPHYNX.

Away, go bear him
 Hence, they shall no longer hear him.

*Here the Muses' Priests, in number twelve, advance
 to rescue, and sing this Song to a measure¹.*

*Gentle Love², be not dismay'd.
 See, the Muses pure and holy
 By their Priests have sent thee aid
 Against this brood of Folly.
 It is true, that Sphynx their dame
 Had the sense first from the Muses
 Which in uttering she doth lame,
 Perplexeth and abuses.
 But they bid that thou should'st look
 In the brightest face here shining,
 And the same, as would a book,
 Shall help thee in divining.*

LOVE.

'Tis done! 'tis done! I've found it out—
 Britain's the world the world without,
 The King's the eye, as we do call
 The Sun the eye of this great all.
 And is the light and treasure too;
 For 'tis his wisdom all doth do,
 Which still is fixed in his breast,
 Yet still doth move to guide the rest.
 The contraries which time till now
 Nor fate knew where to join, or how,
 Are Majesty and Love³; which there,
 And no where else, have their true sphere.
 Now, Sphynx, I've hit the right upon,
 And do resolve these all by one;
 That is, that you meant Albion.

¹ i. e. to a grave and stately dance. G.

² Here is understood the power of Wisdom in the Muses' ministers; by which name all that have the spirit of prophecy, are styled, and such they are that need to encounter Ignorance and Folly; and are ever ready to assist Love in any action of honour and virtue, and inspire him with their own soul.

³ The thought taken from Ovid:

“Non bene conveniunt, nec in unâ sede morantur
 Majestas, et Amor.”

WHALLEY.

PRIESTS. *'Tis true in him, and in no other,
Love, thou art clear absolved;
Vanish, Follies, with your Mother,
The riddle is resolved!
Sphynx must fly, when Phæbus shines,
And to the aid of Love inclines.*

Sphynx retires with the Follies.

LOVE. *Appear then, you my brighter charge,
And to light yourselves enlarge,
To behold that glorious star,
For whose love you came so far,
While the monster with her elves
Do precipitate themselves.*

Here the GRACES enter, and sing this Song, crowning CUPID.

*A crown, a crown, for Love's bright head,
Without whose happy wit
All form and beauty had been dead,
And we had died with it.*

*For what are all the Graces
Without good forms and faces?
Then, Love, receive the due reward
Those Graces have prepar'd.*

Chorus. *And may no hand, no tongue, no eye,
Thy merit, or their thanks envy.*

Chorus and GRACES.

Chorus. *What gentle forms are these that move,
To honour Love?*

GRACES. *They are the bright and golden lights
That grace his nights.*

Chorus. *And shot from Beauty's eyes,
They look like fair Aurora's streams.*

GRACES. *They are her fairer daughter's beams,
Who now doth rise.*

Chorus. *Then night is lost, or fled away;
For where such beauty shines, is ever day!*

The Masque-dance followed. Which done, one of the Priests alone sung.

1 PRIEST. *O what a fault, nay, what a sin
In Fate, or Fortune had it been,
So much beauty to have lost!
Could the World with all her cost*

Have redeem'd it ?

Chorus. *No, no, no.*

PRIEST. *How so ?*

Chorus. *It would nature quite undo,
For losing these, you lost her too.*

The Measures and Revels follow.

2 PRIEST. *How near to good is what is fair !
Which we no sooner see,
But with the lines and outward air
Our senses taken be.
We wish to see it still, and prove,
What ways we may deserve ;
We court, we praise, we more than love ;
We are not griev'd to serve.*

The last Masque-dance ; and after it this full Song :
*What just excuse had aged Time,
His weary limbs now to have eased,
And sate him down without his crime,
While every thought was so much pleased !
But he is so greedy to devour
His own, and all that he brings forth,
Is eating every piece of hour
Some object of the rarest worth.
Yet this is rescued from his rage,
As not to die by time or age.
For beauty hath a living name,
And will to Heaven, from whence it came.*

Grand Chorus upon going out.

*Now, now, gentle Love is free, and Beauty blest
With the sight it so much long'd to see.
Let us the Muses' Priests and Graces go to rest,
For in them our labours happy be.
Then, then, angry¹ music, sound ! and teach our feet,
How to move in time, and measure meet ;
Thus should the Muses' Priest, and Graces go to rest
Bowing to the Sun, throned in the West.*

¹ This epithet is not very commonly applied to *music*; the Poet seems to have used it instead of *loud*. WHALLEY.—It is unquestionably a misprint (which I am unable to set right), and is one of the very few errors in this excellent old copy. G.

LOVE RESTORED,
IN A MASQUE AT COURT¹,
BY GENTLEMEN, THE KING'S SERVANTS, 1610-11.

Written by BEN JONSON.

The King and Court being seated, and in expectation,
Enter MASQUERADO.

I would I could make them a Show myself! In troth, Ladies, I pity you all. You are in expectation of a Device to-night, and I am afraid you can do little else but expect it. Though I dare not shew my face, I can speak truth under a vizard. Good faith, an't please your Majesty, your Masquers are all at a stand; I cannot think your Majesty will see any Show to-night, at least worth your patience. Some two hours since we were in that forwardness, our dances learned, our masquing attire on and attired, a pretty fine Speech was taken up of the Poet too, which if he never be paid for now, it's no matter; his wit costs him nothing. Unless we should come in like a morrice-dance, and whistle our ballad ourselves, I know not what we should do; we have neither musician to play our tunes, but

¹ The date of this Masque was not given by Jonson when first printed in the folio Edition of his Works, 1616; but (as that of the former) is nearly ascertained by the Letter of Mr. John More in p. 372, and the passage it contains respecting "the fighting Bear of last year" (see p. 401).—"This is a sprightly little piece, and Robin Goodfellow's account of the petty tricks used by the inferior orders to procure a sight of these exhibitions, and the conduct of the menial Officers of the Court, is as interesting as it is amusing, from its being a lively picture of real occurrences. We learn from many of our old dramas, that considerable bustle and confusion took place at Whitehall, whenever a Masque was presented, and that previously to the entrance of the Court, the doors were in a manner besieged by crowds of Citizens and others clamorously advancing their respective pretensions to the honour of admission. It is said by the Puritans, and probably with some approach to truth, that the galleries were used, on these occasions, as places of assignation, and that the Citizens' wives were invited to the Masques, &c. by the younger Courtiers for the purposes of gallantry. 'There is not a lobby nor chamber, if it could speak, (says Sir Edward Peyton,) but would verify this.' This was, however, after the Queen's death, and when the decorum of the Court was less strictly maintained." G.

the wild music here; and the rogue play-boy that acts Cupid is got so hoarse, your Majesty cannot hear him half the breadth of your chair!

Enter PLUTUS, as CUPID.

See, they have thrust him out, at adventure. We humbly beseech your Majesty to bear with us. We had both hope and purpose it should have been better; howsoever we are lost in it.

PLUTUS. What makes this light feather'd vanity here? away, impertinent folly! Infect not this assembly.

MASQUER. How, boy!

PLUTUS. Thou common corruption of all manners and places that admit thee!

MASQUER. Have you recovered your voice to rail at me?

PLUTUS. No, vizarded impudence! I am neither player nor masquer; but the god himself, whose deity is here profaned by thee. Thou and thy like think yourselves authorized in this place to all license of surquedry¹. But you shall find custom hath not so grafted you here, but you may be rent up, and thrown out as unprofitable evils. I tell thee, I will have no more masquing; I will not buy a false and fleeting delight so dear; the merry madness of one hour shall not cost me the repentance of an age.

Enter ROBIN GOODFELLOW.

ROBIN GOODFELLOW. How! no Masque, no Masque? I pray you say, are you sure on't? no Masque, indeed! What do I here then? can you tell?

MASQUER. No, faith!

ROBIN GOODFELLOW. 'Slight², I'll be gone again, an there be no Masque; there's a jest. Pray you resolve me. Is there any? or no? a Masque?

PLUTUS. Who are you?

ROBIN GOODFELLOW. Nay, I'll tell you that when I can. Does any body know themselves here, think you? I would fain know if there be a Masque or no.

PLUTUS. There is none, nor shall be, Sir; does that satisfy you?

ROBIN GOODFELLOW. 'Slight, a fine trick! a piece of England's Joy³, this!

¹ See a note on this word in p. 299.

² A petty oath, contracted from *by the light*. It is used by Shakspeare in *Twelfth Night*, ii. 5, "Slight! I could so beat the rogue;" and other places. N.

³ "This old piece, which was once very popular, is a kind of Pageant, comprehending in dumb shew the chief political events in Queen Elizabeth's reign, and concluding with her apotheosis in great

Are these your Court sports? would I had kept me to my gambols o' the country still, selling of fish, short service, shoeing the wild mare, or roasting of robin-redbreast. These were better, than, after all this time, no Masque; you look at me. I have recovered myself now for you, I am the honest plain country spirit, and harmless, Robin Goodfellow, he that sweeps the hearth and the house clean, riddles for the country maids¹, and does all their other drudgery while they are at hot-cockles; one that has discoursed with your Court spirits ere now; but was fain to-night to run a thousand hazards to arrive at this place; never poor goblin was so put to his shifts to get in to see nothing. So many thorny difficulties as I have past, deserved the best Masque; the whole shop of the Revels. I would you would admit some of my feats, but I have little hope of that, i' faith! you let me in so hardly.

PLUTUS. Sir, here's no place for them nor you. Your rude Good-fellowship must seek some other sphere for your admitty.

ROBIN GOODFELLOW. Nay, so your stiff-necked porter told me at the gate, but not in so good words. His staff spoke somewhat to that boisterous sense; I am sure he concluded all in a non-entry, which made me e'en climb over the wall, and in by the wood-yard, so to the terrace, where, when I came, I found the oaks of the guard more unmoved, and one of them, upon whose arm I hung, shoved me off o' the ladder, and dropt me down like an acorn. 'Twas well there was not a sow in the Verge², I had been eaten up else. Then I heard some talk of the carpenters' way, and I attempted that; but there the wooden rogues let a huge trap-door fall on my head. If I had not been a spirit, I had been mazarded³.

state, 'being crowned with the Sun, Moon, and Stars, she is taken up into Heaven.' It has lately been re-printed among the Harleian Papers." G.

The Author,

"Poor old Vennor, that plain-dealing man,
Who acted 'England's Joy' at the Old Swan,"

as Taylor the Water Poet sings, will be noticed hereafter, when some Speeches he made to the King will be printed. N.

¹ To prevent any misapprehension of an ambiguous phrase, it may be just necessary to observe that, by *riddling*, Robin means, passing the embers through a sieve. G.

² The Verge of the Court at Whitehall. N.

³ That is, *knocked on the head*. Mazzard, remarks Mr. Nares, is a word not yet quite disused in burlesque or low conversation. Though etymologists have found many learned but far-fetched derivations for it, it is very probably derived from a *Mazer*, comparing the head to a huge goblet. See Nares's Glossary. N.

Though I confess I am none of those subtle ones, that can creep though at a key-hole, or the cracked pane of a window. I must come in at a door, which made me once think of a trunk; but that I would not imitate so Catholic a coxcomb as Coryate¹, and make a case: uses². Therefore I took another course. I watched what kind of persons the door most opened to, and one of their shapes I would

¹ "This alludes," remarks Mr. Gifford, "to one of those ridiculous mishaps which befel poor Tom in his travels through Switzerland. It is thus recorded by one of those numerous wags who under the name of 'Panegyrists,' and the banners of Jonson, combined to furnish a laugh for Prince Henry at the expense of this *Catholicus comens*:"

'Yet must I say thy fortune herein was ill,
For thou went'st nak't to wash thy shirt at Basil;
And having seen cloisters, and many a monke,
Becam'st thyself a *Recluse in a trunk*.'

—After searching through a great part of this eccentric man's Travels, or, as he terms the book, his "Crudities" (which, bye-the-bye, is much more sensible than a stranger might suspect), I do not find either of these incidents mentioned by the author himself: and from the following passage in the commendatory verses of Sir Henry Goodyere, I think the trunk adventure must have occurred at home:

"If any think Tom dull and heavy, know
The Court and City's mirth cannot be so:
Who thinks him light, ask them who had the task
To beare him in a *trunk* unto the *Marke*."

This, in my opinion, pretty clearly proves that such were the means by which Tom had introduced himself to a Masque at Court on a former occasion; and that, as with "the fighting bear" which follows, Jonson alludes to a domestic occurrence.—Memoirs of Thomas Coryate, and of his father George, a Latin Poet of some note, are to be found in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. He had not, at this period, published his "Crudities;" but his adventures (at Basil, and elsewhere) were the common theme of Court chat. The "Crudities" did not appear till 1611. Dr. Birch in his Life of Prince Henry, p. 216, quotes a Letter of Coryate to Sir Michael Hickes requesting him to intercede with the Lord Treasurer Salisbury, that his book might be printed in London with some expedition. The Letter was dated from his chamber in Bow-lane, Nov. 15, 1610. Ben Jonson himself, apparently at the desire of Prince Henry, undertook to arrange that immense farrago of burlesque "testimonies to the author's merit," which accompanied the first edition of the Incubations of "the Odisseian Traveller." Mr. Gifford very justly remarks, that "Tom probably laughed more than any of them. His taste in matters of praise was not very delicate; and he had cunning enough to discern that, at the expense of some extravagant ridicule which could not effect him in his absence, he was amusing his Princely Patron, spreading the knowledge of his book, and filling his pockets for another course of adventures. Jonson wrote the distichs, and the introductory character of Thomas the Coryate on the person of 'a charitable friend,' to which he added some lines on the author's name. He procured verses from all his friends." Preface to Jonson's Works, p. xcix. N.

² The words, "and make a case: uses," (as printed in the old editions) were omitted by Mr. Whalley, and at first unintelligible to Mr. Gifford. The latter in his eighth volume, p. 197, supposes it may be an error for "and make a case (i. e. a pair) of asses."

belie to get in with. First I came with authority, and said, I was an Engineer, and belonged to the Motions. They asked me if I were *the fighting bear of last year*¹, and laughed me out of that, and said the Motions were ceased. Then I took another figure, of an old Tire-woman; but tired under that too, for none of the Masquers would take note of me, the mark was out of my mouth. Then I pretended to be a Musician; marry I could not shew mine instrument, and that bred a discord. Now there was nothing left for me that I could presently think on, but a Feather-maker of Blackfriars, and in that shape I told them, surely I must come in, let it be opened unto me; but they all made as light of me as of my feathers; and wondered how I could be a Puritan, being of so vain a vocation. I answered, We are all Masquers sometimes²; with which they knock'd Hypocrisy o' the pate, and made room for a bombard-man³, that brought bouge⁴, for a country Lady or two, that fainted, he said, with fasting for the fine sight since seven o'clock in the morning. O how it grieved me, that I was prevented of that shape, and had not touched on it in time, it liked me so well; but I thought I would offer at it yet. Marry, before I could procure my properties, alarum came that some of the whimlems⁵ had too much; and one shewed how

¹ This confirms the date here given to this Masque. The bear fought before the King and all the Royal Family at the Tower, June 23, 1609; see p. 259. N.

² "Jonson is always happy in his allusions to this anomaly in the practice and preaching of the Puritans. Many of them followed the business of tire-women, clear-starchers, feather-makers, &c. It is not a little singular that while they declaimed most vehemently against the idol Fashion, they should be amongst the most zealous in ministering to its caprice. Jonson notices this with good effect in his 'Bartholomew Fair;' and Randolph ridicules it no less successfully in the commencement of his 'Muses' Looking Glass:' 'Enter Bird and Mrs. Flowerdale, two of the *sanctified fraternity*, the one having *feathers* to the *play-house* to sell, the other pins and looking-glasses.' The opening of the dialogue is excellent. Fraud and hypocrisy have seldom been more humorously exposed:

' MRS. FLOWERDALE. See, brother, how the wicked throng and crowd
To works of vanity! not a nook or corner
In all this house of sin, this cave of filthiness,
This den of spiritual thieves, but it is stuffed,
Stuffed, and stuffed full, as is a cushion,
With the lewd reprobate!"

G.

The Puritan feather-manufacturers lived chiefly in Blackfriars, as alluded to above by Jonson; see Nares's Glossary under both *Black-friars* and *Feather-makers*. N.

³ One of the people who attended at the buttery-hatch, and carried the *huge cans* of beer to the different offices. G.

⁴ *Bouge of Court* was an allowance of meat and drink to the Officers of the Court. WHALLEY.

⁵ "A fanciful derivative," remarks Mr. Archdeacon Nares, who quotes the passage, "from *whim*,

fruitfully they had watered his head as he stood under the grices¹; and another came out complaining of a cataract shot into his eyes by a planet as he was stargazing. There was that device defeated! By this time I saw a fine Citizen's wife or two let in; and that figure provoked me exceedingly to take it; which I had no sooner done, but one of the Black-guard² had his hand in my vestry, and was groping of me as nimbly as the Christmas cut-purse. He thought he might be bold with me, because I had not a husband in sight to squeak to. I was glad to forego my form, to be rid of his hot steeming affection, it so smelt of the boiling-house. Forty other devices I had of Wiremen and the Chandrie, and I know not what else; but all succeeded alike. I offered money too, but that could not be done so privately, as it durst be taken, for the danger of an example. At last, a troop of strangers came to the door, with whom I made myself sure to enter; but before I could mix, they were all let in, and I left alone without, for want of an interpreter. Which, when I was fain to be myself, a Colossus [of] the company told me, I had English enough to carry me to bed; with which all the other statues of flesh laughed. Never till then did I know the want of an hook and a piece of beef, to have baited three or four of those goodly wide mouths with. In this despair, when all invention and translation too failed me, I e'en went back, and stuck to this shape you see me in of mine own, with my broom and my candles, and came on confidently, giving out, I was a part of the Device; at which, like *whim-wham*; it is here applied to country Ladies, but no more appropriate, I presume, than *what d' ye call 'ems*, or the like. In Beaumont and Fletcher it is *whimling*, and there used in contempt, by a boisterous woman, speaking to a delicate young girl: 'Go, whimling, and fetch two or three grating loaves out of the kitchen to make gingerbread of. 'Tis such an untoward thing.' Coxcomb, act iv." N.

¹ See vol. I. pp. 370, 380.

² "In all great houses, but particularly in the Royal residences, there were a number of mean and dirty dependants, whose office it was to attend the wood-yard, sculleries, &c. Of these (for in the lowest deep there was a lower still) the most forlorn wretches seem to have been selected to carry coals to the kitchens, halls, &c. To this smutty regiment, who attended the Progresses, and rode in the carts with the pots and kettles, which, with every other article of furniture, were then moved from Palace to Palace, the people in derision gave the name of *black guards*, a term since become sufficiently familiar. With our ancestors, colliers, I know not for what reason, lay, like Mrs. Quickly, *under an ill name*; Decker has a little treatise on them full of the grossest abuse; and a dealer in coals, an article, at that time, of no great sale perhaps, seems synonymous with every thing base and vile. Thus Marston, speaking of worthless people, says, that 'they were born naturally for a *coal-basket*.' *Malecontent*. iv. 1." G.—See other examples in Nares under the articles, *Blackguard* and *Coals, to carry*. Some further allusions to these "*servi servorum*," and other menials of the Court, will be found hereafter in Jonson's Masque of "*Mercury Vindicated*." N.

though they had little to do with wit, yet, because some on't might be used here to-night, contrary to their knowledge, they thought it fit way should be made for me;—and, as it falls out, to small purpose.

PLUTUS. Just as much as you are fit for. Away, idle Spirit; and thou the idle cause of his adventuring hither, vanish with him! 'Tis thou, that are not only the sower of vanities in these high places, but the call of all other light follies to fall and feed on them. I will endure thy prodigality nor riots no more; they are the ruins of States. Nor shall the tyranny of these nights hereafter impose a necessity upon me of entertaining thee. Let them embrace more frugal pastimes. Why should not the thrifty and right worshipful game of Post and Pair¹ content them; or the witty invention of Noddy², for counters; or God make them rich at the tables³, but masquing and revelling! Were not these Ladies and their gentlewomen more housewifely employed, a dozen of them to a light, or twenty (the more the merrier) to save charges, in their chambers at home, and their old night-gowns, at draw-gloves⁴, riddles, dreams, and other pretty purposes, rather than to wake here, in their flaunting wires and tires, laced gowns, embroidered petticoats, and other taken-up braveries⁵? Away, I will no more of these superfluous excesses. They are these make me hear so ill⁶, both in town and country, as I do; which if they continue, I shall be the first shall leave them.

MASQUER. Either I am very stupid, or this is a reformed Cupid.

ROBIN GOODFELLOW. How! does any take this for Cupid? the Love in Court?

MASQUER. Yes, is't not he?

ROBIN GOODFELLOW. Nay, then we Spirits, I see, are subtler yet, and somewhat better discoverers. No, it is not he, nor his brother Anti-cupid, the Love of Virtue, though he pretend to it with his phrase and face; 'tis that impostor

¹ Of this "worshipful game" see the Masque of Christmas, under the year 1616-17. N.

² A game at cards, as was Post and Pair. It is well illustrated in Mr. Nares's Glossary, being frequently mentioned by old writers; and appears to have been not unlike *quinze* or *vingt-un*. N.

³ *God make you rich* was the name of some game. It seems, remarks Mr. Gifford, to have been a species of backgammon. N.

⁴ A sort of trifling game, the particulars of which the learned have not yet discovered. Herrick in his *Hesperides*, has mentioned it several times, and made it the subject of the following epigram:

" At draw-gloves we'll play,	Who first to the sum
And prethee let's lay	Of twenty shall come
A wager, and let it be this;	Shall have for his winning a kiss."

In this, and the other instances quoted by Mr. Nares, it always seems to be a game between lovers. N.

⁵ Expensive dresses procured on credit. G. ⁶ *i. e.* make to be so ill-spoken of:—a Latinism. G.

Plutus, the God of Money, who has stolen Love's ensigns; and in his belied figure rules the world, making friendships, contracts, marriages, and almost religion; begetting, breeding, and holding the nearest respects of mankind; and usurping all those offices in this age of gold, which Love himself performed in the golden age. 'Tis he that pretends to tie kingdoms, maintain commerce, dispose of honours, make all places and dignities arbitrary from him, even to the very country, where Love's name cannot be razed out, he has yet gained there upon him by a proverb, *Not for Love or Money*. There Love lives confined, by his tyranny, to a cold region, wrapt up in furs like a Muscovite, and almost frozen to death; while he, in his inforced shape, and with his ravished arms, walks as if he were to set bounds and give laws to destiny. 'Tis you, mortals, that are fools; and worthy to be such, that worship him; for if you had wisdom, he had no godhead¹. He should stink in the grave with those wretches, whose slave he was; condemn him, and he is one. Come, follow me. I'll bring you where you shall find Love, and by the virtue of this majesty, who projecteth so powerful beams of light and heat through this hemisphere, thaw his icy fetters, and scatter the darkness that obscures him. Then, in despite of this insolent and barbarous Mammon, your sports may proceed, and the solemnities of the night be complete, without depending on so earthly an idol.

PLUTUS. Ay, do; attempt it; 'tis like to find most necessary and fortunate event, whatsoever is enterprised without my aids. Alas, how bitterly the spirit of poverty sprouts itself against my weal and felicity! but I feel it not. I cherish and make much of myself, flow forth in ease and delicacy, while that murmurs and starves.

Enter CUPID in his chariot, guarded with the Masquers, in number ten.

SONG.

*O, how came Love, that is himself a fire,
To be so cold?
Yes, tyrant Money quencheth all desire,
Or makes it old.
But here are beauties will revive
Love's youth, and keep his heat alive;
As often as his torch here dies,
He need but light it at fresh eyes.
Joy, joy, the more; for in all Courts,
If Love be cold, so are his sports.*

¹ "Nullam numen habes si sit prudentia, sed te
Nos facimus, Fortuna, deam."

Juv. Sat. x.

CUPID.

I have my spirits again, and feel my limbs.
 Away with this cold cloud, that dims
 My light! Lie there, my furs and charms,
 Love feels a heat, that inward warms,
 And guards him naked, in these places,
 As at his birth, or 'mongst the Graces.
 Impostor Mammon! come, resign
 This bow and quiver; they are mine.
 Thou hast too long usurp'd my rites,
 I now am Lord of mine own nights.
 Be gone, whilst yet I give thee leave.
 When thus the World thou wilt deceive,
 Thou can'st in youth and beauty shine,
 Belie a godhead's form divine,
 Scatter thy gifts, and fly to those
 Where thine own humour may dispose;
 But when to good men thou art sent¹,
 By Jove's direct commandment,
 Thou then art aged, lame, and blind,
 And can'st nor path nor persons find.
 Go, honest Spirit, chase him hence,
 To his caves; and there let him dispense
 For murders, treasons, rapes, his bribes
 Unto the discontented tribes;
 Where let his heaps grow daily less,
 And he and they still want success.
 The Majesty that here doth move,
 Shall triumph, more secured by Love,
 Than all his earth; and never crave
 His aids, but force him as a slave.
 To those bright beams I owe my life,
 And I will pay it in the strife
 Of duty back. See, here are ten,
 The spirits of Courts, and flower of men²,
 Led on by me, with flam'd intents,
 To figure the ten ornaments
 That do each courtly presence grace,
 Nor will they rudely strive for place,
 One to precede the other; but
 As music them in form shall put.
 So will they keep their measures true,
 And make still their proportions new,

¹ This and three succeeding lines are from one of Lucian's Dialogues. G.

² Who these were from no source appears. N.

Till all become one harmony,
 Of honour, and of courtesy,
 True valour and urbanity,
 Of confidence, alacrity,
 Of promptness, and of industry,
 Hability, reality.
 Nor shall those graces ever quit your Court,
 Or I be wanting to supply their sport.

Here the first dance.

SONG.

*This motion was of Love begot,
 It was so airy, light, and good,
 His wings into their feet he shot,
 Or else himself into their blood.
 But ask not how; the end will prove,
 That Love's in them, or they're in love!*

The second dance.

SONG.

*Have men beheld the Graces dance,
 Or seen the upper orbs to move?
 So these did turn, return, advance,
 Drawn back by Doubt, put on by Love.
 And now like earth themselves they fix,
 Till greater pow'rs vouchsafe to mix
 Their motions with them. Do not fear,
 You brighter planets of the sphere¹;
 Not one male heart you see,
 But rather to his female eyes
 Would die a destin'd sacrifice,
 Than live at home, and free!*

The third dance.

SONG.

*Give end unto thy pastimes, Love,
 Before they labours prove;
 A little rest between,
 Will make thy next shows better seen.
 Now let them close their eyes, and see
 If they can dream of thee,
 Since morning hastes to come in view;
 And all the morning dreams are true.*

¹ The Ladies did not join in the dance till after this song. N.

At Hampton Court, on the 10th of January, were knighted, Sir Richard Norton¹, of Hampshire; and Sir Thomas Brereton², of Cheshire; and at Theobalds, on the 15th, Sir Francis Wortley³, of Yorkshire.

At this period, "the French King sent Mounsier de la Verdyne, one of the Marshalles of France, Governour of Maine, accompanied and attended with sixscore persons, all in mourning habit, for the death of their ould Kinge. This Ambassadoure with his noble Trayne, came to Lambeth the 16th of January, and were lodged in the Archbishop's Palace, which the Kinge caused to bee very Royally furnished for that purpose, and during their abode, they were also entertayned at the Kinge's charge. The Ambassadoure had audience uppon Sunday the 20th day of January, and the next Sunday the Kinge was sworne to the new League, which was made betweene the two Kingdomes⁴."

February 3, the King knighted, at Whitehall, Sir Henry Crofts; at the same place, next day, Sir Edward Peyto⁵, of Warwickshire; and on the eighth,

Sir Richard Worceley⁶.

Sir Bernard Dias.

Sir Thomas Mewtas⁷.

Sir Henry Kingsmill.

Sir Thomas Erskyn⁸.

¹ Sir Richard Norton was Sheriff of Hampshire in 1613.

² Sir Thomas Brereton, of Ousaker, was Sheriff of Cheshire in 1625.

³ Son of Sir Richard Wortley, who was knighted at York, April 17, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 82). Sir Francis was of Magdalen College, Oxford; was Gentleman Extraordinary of the Privy-chamber to Prince Henry; was only 19 when knighted, and 20 when created a Baronet, June 29, 1611. He was "well learned in the Greek and Latin Authors, of a ready quick wit, a good speaker, and was well seen in poetry, as appears by several of his composures in print and manuscript." Collins's *Baronetage*, 1720, vol. I. p. 211. He was a Colonel for King Charles in the Civil War, and was afterwards imprisoned in the Tower, and suffered greatly in his estates. A memoir of him and his works in prose and verse is to be found in Wood's *Athenæ*, by Bliss, vol. III. col. 391, *et seq.* I have a fine copy of his "Characters and Elegies, 1646," small 4to; of which Wood says (*Fasti*, vol. II. col. 37), "The book, I doubt, is scarce to be seen or had." In the *Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica*, a copy is marked at £4. 4s. It chiefly celebrates the Loyalists who fell in the cause of Charles I.

⁴ Howes.

⁵ Sir Edward Peyto was of an ancient family seated at Chesterton (of which see Dugdale's *Warwickshire*, 1656, pp. 375—383), and not to be confounded with the Baronet family of Peyton, as erroneously done in p. 211, on the authority of Collins.

Of Appuldercombe in the Isle of Wight, created a Baronet June 29, 1611; Sheriff of Hampshire in 1616; and died in 1622.

⁷ Sir Thomas Mewtas occurs in the list of Low Country Captains, Cott. MSS. Titus, c. VII.

⁸ Sir Thomas Erskine was a Gentleman in Ordinary of the Privy-chamber to Prince Henry.

On the 19th of February, "being the Princess's birth-day," the Ringers at St. Margaret's received 3s. 4d.

During the month of February, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Francis Prince, of Shropshire; and Sir William Springe¹, of Suffolk; and at Newmarket, Sir Henry Pallavicini², of Cambridgeshire; and Sir Charles Howard.

Early in the month of March, the King was at Royston³; he knighted, at Greenwich, Sir Robert Bell⁴, of Norfolk; and, on the 14th, at Newmarket, Sir Henry Fane⁵, of Kent.

On the 24th, being Easter-day, and "also the day of the beginning of his Majestie's most gracious Reign," commonly called "the King's day⁶," Bishop Andrews preached before his Majesty at Whitehall on Psalm cxviii. 22, 23, 24. "The Stone which Builders refused, is become the Head of the Corner; this is the Lord's doing, and it is marvellous in our eyes. This is the Day which the Lord hath made, we will rejoice and be glad in it." The Preacher took occasion to introduce as "the third sense, his Majestie;" and the following extract of that part of the Discourse will be found a good specimen of the species of Pulpit Oratory in which James most delighted:

"And now to ourselves; to whom, as 'this is the day which the Lord hath made,' touching Christ our Saviour and his Resurrection; so it is likewise the day that He hath made, the second time, by making on it his Majestie Head of this

¹ Sir William Springe was Sheriff of Suffolk in 1620.

² Second son of Sir Horatio Palavicini, of whom see so fully in vol. I. p. 101. He had married in 1606 Catherine, daughter of Sir Oliver Cromwell, K. B. (his mother's second husband), and died s. p. Oct. 14, 1615. See Noble's *Memoirs of the House of Cromwell*, vol. II. p. 178.

³ Birch's MSS. 4176. ⁴ Another "Sir Robert Bell, of Norfolk," was knighted Nov. 26, 1613.

⁵ Sir Henry Fane or Vane, "the elder," was of Hadlow-place Kent, and Raby Castle, Durham. He was only 17 when knighted, afterwards travelled, and on his return was M. P. for Carlisle. "He acted a conspicuous part in the public affairs of the nation in the Reign of Charles the First," being first appointed Cofferer to that King when Prince, and afterwards Commissioner of the Admiralty; a Privy Counsellor; Comptroller and Treasurer of the Household; and Secretary of State; and also employed on several embassies. In 1633 he attended the King to Scotland, and, on the way, entertained the King and suite at Raby Castle. But the King being offended at his forwardness in the prosecution of the Earl of Strafford in 1642, he was removed from all his places, and was besieged in Raby Castle (but relieved by his son). Having passed his latter years in retirement, he died in that Castle in 1654, aged 68. A good memoir of him is given by Granger.

⁶ On this day, "being the first day of his Majesty's yere then begun," the Ringers at St. Margaret's were paid 5s.

Kingdome, the very name whereof hath affinitie and carrieth an allusion to the terme *anguli*, in the sound of it¹. And neither were your Majestie without your part of refusing, in a kinde; but did participate somewhat of it with David, though in a less degree. Good, and firme, and sure though your right were as any stone; yet allegations were studied, to subject it to question, yea in refusing. For, did nobody ever see a project drawen, wherein some other *stone* was marked out to have beene *caput anguli*? Yes; it is well knowen, titles were raised and set on foot, and bookes written to that end; and they tooke themselves for no meane work-men that were the divisers of them; that, both at home and abroad, contrived it another way, and plotted to have put you by, and to have had some other Head-stone, of their owne hewing out, in your roome. Yea, to make your case yet more like to Christ's case, even the High Priest², he that claimeth Caiaphas' place, he and his crue [crew] had their hands in it. Wee may no lesse truly say to them than St. Peter said to Caiaphas, '*Quem vos*, whom yee would have cast aside,' if yee might have had your wils; and, to that end, had your first *breves* ready drawen and sent abroad; and others in a readinesse to second them. Yet for all their *breves* and *bulls*, this Stone is the Head for all that! *Factus*, made he is, and made by God. For à *Domino*, God's doing it was, evidently; that after so much plotting so many years together, at the very time God bowed the hearts of so many thousands, as it beene the heart of one man, to agree in one, as that all that foresaw it thought it had not beene possible; and all that saw it thought it admirable; and all men said, 'This hath God done,' for they saw evidently it was His worke. The Heade you were then made, and Head not of one angle, as you were before (for *caput anguli* I hold a King to be though he have but one *Kingdom*), but *caput trianguli*, Head now of three, even of a whole triangle! So their titles were dashed, their plots disappointed, and all their devices as the potter's clay. Yours it was of right, and God hath brought you to it. So it is, and our eyes doe see it, and our hearts do joy in it, and our tongues blesse God for it, and here we are, this day, with all praise and thanks to acknowledge it and give Him thanks for it, that hath brought it to passe. And may I now further put you in minde of another *making* yet? And it is not impertinent neither, nor to this day especially, for, after the first making, looke how many after-attempts are made to unmake or displace the Head-stone againe; so many times as it heaved at, to that end, and those attempts defeated; so many

¹ The Bishop alludes, in his quibbling style, to *Anglia*.

² Alluding to the Pope.

new placings, so many new makings are we to reckon of. David was made Head, not only when Saul and Abner sought to put him downe, and were put downe themselves, which was before he came to the Crowne; but even after he had it, and had worne it long, when Absolom and Sheba refused him (being their Head) and cryed, 'No part in David,' and so sought to set him besides the Throne. And builders there wanted not in that designe; Absolom had Achitophel and Amasa, two as principall Master-builders as there were any. When God brought David back to his seat againe, and delivered him from them that sought to remove him from it, He did as good as place him in it anew. David himself saith so before, 'He was shrewdly lifted at and ready to turne over, but God stayed him and set him right in his seat againe.' And in very deed, the verse next before where he saith, 'God had heard him and was become his deliverer,' makes the Writers to thinke this Psalme was endited rather for his second than for his first placing. Now a like second *making* we may well remember, and wee cannot do it better than upon this day. This day (as wee shall see) hath an interest in it; that, since your sitting in the Seat of this Kingdom, some there were, builders one would have taken them to be, if hee had seene them with their tooles in their handes as if they had beene to have laid some foundation; where their meaning was to undermine and to cast downe foundations and all; yea, to have made a right *stone* of you, and blowne you up among the stones, you and yours, without much adoe! And master-builders they had amongst them (so they will needs be accounted) that encouraged their hearts and strengthened their hands to the worke. And that they might doe, there was no seale to hinder it; but disclose it, that they might not, for fear of breaking a seale. There was a seale for that. And thus did they, '*ædificare ad Gehennam*,' edifie their followers to Hell-ward, to set them forward and send them to their owne place. That day, which God undid that wretched designe, and brought their mischief upon their owne heads; that day did God make you *caput trianguli* the second time. That day that Hee brought you backe (if not from death itselke, yet) from death's doore, from the very gates of destruction; that day was a very Easter-day to you, though it were in November! And, *ὡς ἐν παραβολῇ*, after a sort, a very Resurrection; as very a Resurrection as Isaac's was, which the Apostle there speaketh of; that day the Destroying Angell (I am sure) past over you, and so it was truely the Feast of the Passe-over. Fit therefore to be remembered is this day, *hic est dies*, this is the day of the Passeover, this is Easter-day, the day of the Resurrection¹."

¹ Bishop Andrews's "XCVI Sermons," the Sixth on the Resurrection.

Free Gifts from the Exchequer in the Eighth Year of the King's Reign, 1610-11.

	£.		£.
To Thomas Pott ¹ - - -	100	The Earl of Emhden's ser-	
Richard Brasse ² - - -	100	vants, in reward - - -	60
William Dampport ³ - - -	50	Sir Edward Apsley ¹¹ and Ed-	
John Barkley ⁴ - - -	200	ward Woodward, out of the	
Claud Rolf, for bringing of hawks ⁵	20	same money - - -	4000
Sir Alexander Hay ⁶ - - -	1500	Sir Stephen Proctor ¹² - - -	42
John Marshall - - -	100	Sir John Hungerford ¹³ - - -	160
Henry Gibb ⁷ - - -	170	John Berwick ¹⁴ - - -	48
Sir Henry Guntrode ⁸ - - -	1300	Richard Hall - - -	160
Adam Newton ⁹ , Prince Henry's		Sir Sigismond and Henry Alex-	
Tutor - - -	2000	ander ¹⁵ - - -	100
William Tipper - - -	600	Sir Thomas Bartlet ¹⁶ - - -	100
William Stirrel - - -	50	Robert Walker ¹⁷ and Richard	
Sir Henry Gray ¹⁰ , out of Sir		Brasse ¹⁸ - - -	86
Thomas Shirley's money		Claud Russell - - -	40
paid for Debts due in King		Sir Richard Martin ¹⁹ - - -	110
Henry the Eighth's time -	2000	The total sum is -	<u>£.13,096</u>

A very curious and valuable Letter shall be now introduced²⁰, which will form a proper introduction to the article which will immediately follow it, the elevation

¹ Thomas Pott was Master of the King's Hunt, and received "for his fee 4s. per diem; for three Yeoman Prickers, to each 2s. per diem; for one Groom 12d. per diem; and for keeping twelve couple of dogs £.50 per annum; in all per annum £.250. 15s."

² See pp. 123, 246.

³ See p. 289.

⁴ See p. 247.

⁵ Probably from Denmark.

⁶ See p. 289.

⁷ We have had a John Gib before, see p. 43.

⁸ See p. 247; he was perhaps the same as "Sir Henry Contherant, *Teutonicus*," knighted Feb. 15, 1607-8; see p. 190.

⁹ See p. 374.

¹⁰ See p. 289.

¹¹ Of Sussex; knighted May 11, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 118).

¹² See p. 288.

¹³ Knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1590.

¹⁴ See p. 289.

¹⁵ See p. 287.

¹⁶ See p. 289.

¹⁷ See p. 123.

¹⁸ See p. 246.

¹⁹ He received £.300 as a Free-gift the following year.

²⁰ It is copied from the "Nugæ Antiquæ," and there dated 1611. And this is not far from the fact; it being probably written not very long before the present date, when honours were first "talked of" for the Favourite Car.—Another doubt is expressed in the *Nugæ Antiquæ* as to the Writer, which was given rise to by his signing "T. Howard" and not "Suffolk;" but this difficulty must cease, when we observe that he sends it "by my own son;" and that (as Mr. Park himself

of Robert Car to the title of a Peer of the Realm. This epistle is addressed by the Earl of Suffolk to Sir John Harington, of Kelston, his (and the Reader's) old friend; and, with the following document from the hand of Camden (now first printed) will on the one hand prove that part of the Favourite's early history which is founded on truth; and, on the other, confute many falsities, which the hand of calumny or error¹ has heaped upon it:

"My good and trusty Knight; If you have good will and good health to perform what I shall commend, you may set forward for Courte whenever it suiteth your own conveniency. The King hath often enquired after you, and would readily see and converse again with the 'merry blade,' as he hath oft called you since you was here². I will now premise certaine thinges to be observed by you toward well gaining our Prince's good affection; — he doth wondrously covet learned discourse, of which you can furnish out ample means; he doth admire good fashion in cloaths, I pray you give good heed hereunto. Strange devices oft come into man's conceit; some regardeth the endowments of the inward sort, wit, valour, or virtue; another hath, perchance, special affection towards outward thinges, cloaths, deportment, and good countenance. I woud wish you to be well trimmed; get a new jerkin well borderd, and not too short; the King saith, he liketh a flowing garment; be sure it be not all of one sort, but diversly colourd, the collar falling somewhat down, and your ruff well stiffend and bushy. We have lately had many Gallants who failed in their suits for want of due observance of these matters. The King is nicely heedfull of such points, and dwelleth on good looks and handsome accoutrements. Eighteen servants were lately discharged, and many more will be discarded, who are not to his liking in these matters. I wish you to follow my directions, as I wish you to gain all you desire.

notices) the Earl was Sir John's Correspondent, that he addresses him as an equal in age, "my good and trusty Knight," and subscribes himself "your old Friende." It is evident that "the Earl resumed his former signature."—See a Letter from Sir John to this Nobleman before his elevation to the Earldom in vol. I. p. 49.

¹ In Wood's Douglas (and other Peerages) Sir Robert Car is incorrectly stated to have attended the King into England, and have been that Sir Robert Ker who was made K. B. at the Coronation, and who in 1609 succeeded his father Mark as second Earl of Lothian (see vol. I. p. 222). Besides him, a third was Sir Robert Ker, of Ancrum, created in 1633 Earl of Ancrum. (His son William, by marrying Anne Countess of Lothian, the only child of Robert the second Earl, united in his own person the Earldoms of Lothian and Ancrum.) And as a fourth living at the same period may be enumerated Sir Robert Ker of Cesford, created Baron Roxburgh in 1600.

² Sir John's own account of his interview with the King in January 1603-4, has been printed in vol. I. pp. 49, *et seq.*

Robert Car is now most likely to win the Prince's affection, and dothe it wonderously in a little time. The Prince leaneth on his arm, pinches his cheek, smoothes his ruffled garment, and, when he looketh at Car, directeth discourse to divers others. This young man dothe much study all art and device, he hath changed his tailors and tiremen many times, and all to please the Prince, who laugheth at the long grown fashion of our young Courtiers, and wisheth for change every day. You must see Car before you go to the King, as he was with him a boy in Scotland, and knoweth his taste and what pleaseth. In your discourse you must not dwell too long on any one subject, and touch but lightly on Religion. Do not of yourself say, 'This is good or bad,' but, 'If it were your Majestie's good opinion, I myself should think so and so.' Ask no more questions than what may serve to know the Prince's thought. In private discourse the King seldom speaketh of any man's temper, discretion, or good virtues; so meddle not at all, but find out a clue to guide you to the heart and most delightfull subject of his mind. I will advise one thing,—the roan jennet, whereon the King rideth every day, must not be forgotten to be praised; and the good furniture above all, which lost a great man much notice the other day. A Noble did come in suit of a place, and saw the King mounting the roan; delivered his petition, which was heeded and read, but no answer was given. The Noble departed, and came to Courte the nexte day, and got no answer again. The Lord Treasurer was then pressed to move the King's pleasure touching the petition. When the King was asked for answer thereto, he said, in some wrath, 'Shall a King give heed to a dirty paper, when a beggar noteth not his gilt stirrups?' Now it fell out, that the King had new furniture when the Noble saw him in the Courte-yard, but he was overcharged with confusion, and passed by admiring the dressing of the horse. Thus, good Knight, our Noble failed in his suit. I could relate and offer some other remarks on these matters, but Silence and Discretion should be linked together like dog and bitch, for of them is gendred Security,—I am certain it proveth so at this place. You have lived to see the trim of old times, and what passed in the Queen's days. These thinges are no more the same. Your Queen did talk of her subjects' love and good affections, and in good truth she aimed well; our King talketh of his subjects' fear and subjection, and herein I thinke he dothe well too, as long as it holdeth good. Car hath all favours, as I told you before; the King teacheth him Latin every morning, and I think some one should teach him English too; for, as he is a Scottish lad, he

hath much need of better language! The King doth much covet his presence; the Ladies too are not behind-hand in their admiration; for I tell you, good Knight, this fellow is straight-limbed, well-favoured, strong-shouldered, and smooth-faced, with some sort of cunning and show of modesty; tho', God wot, he well knoweth when to shew his impudence. You are not young, you are not handsome, you are not finely; and yet will you come to Courte, and thinke to be well favoured! Why, I say again, good Knight, that your learning may somewhat prove worthy hereunto; your Latin and your Greek, your Italian, your Spanish tongues, your wit and discretion may be well looked unto for a while, as strangers at such a place; but these are not the thinges men live by now-a-days. Will you say the moon shineth all the summer? That the stars are bright jewels fit for Car's ears¹? That the roan jennet surpasseth Bucephalus, and is worthy to be bestridden by Alexander? That his eyes are fire, his tail is Berenice's locks, and a few more such fancies worthy your noticing? Your Lady is virtuous, and somewhat of a good huswife; has lived in a Courte in her time, and I believe you may venture her forthe again; but I know those would not quietly reste, were Car to leer on their wives, as some do perceive, yea, and like it well too they should be so noticed. If any mischance be to be wished, 'tis breaking a leg in the King's presence, for this fellow owes all his favour to that bout; I think he hath better reason to speak well of his own horse than the King's roan jennet. We are almost worn out in our endeavors to keep pace with this fellow in his duty and labour to gain favour, but all in vain; where it endeth I cannot guess, but honours are talked of speedily for him. I truste this by my own Son, that no danger may happen from our freedoms. If you come here, God speed your ploughing at the Courte!—I know you do it rarely at home. So adieu, my good Knyght, and I will always write me your truly loving old Freinde, T. HOWARD."

"The 25th of March, Sir Robert Car², sonn to Thomas Car, Laird of Fernihurst,

¹ Davies, of Hereford, seems to have been infected by this furor of flattery, when he lauds him as the 'bright Car,' which rivalled the 'coach of Phœbus.'" *Scourge of Folly*, p. 41.

² It shall be the purpose of this note to give a brief but correct account of the rise of Car, and point out the errors into which some authors have fallen respecting his history. He was, as told in Wood's *Douglas*, and confirmed by Camden above, the third son of Sir Thomas Ker, of Fernihurst, the head of a collateral branch of the same family as the Earls of Lothian and Ancrum. The following particulars of his early life are given in the *Narrative History of the first fourteen years of King James* (a work re-printed in the second volume of Somers's *Tracts*): "Amongst other accidents that happened about these times, the rising of one Mr. Car was most remarkable, a man

was created Vicount Rochester att Whitehall, being brought out of the Councell-chamber in this order to the Gallery : The Heraldes ; Garter, carieng the Patent ;

of mean parentage, inhabiting in a village near Edinburgh in Scotland, and there, through the favour of friends, was preferred to bee one of his Majestie's Pages, for hee kept twelve as long as hee was in Scotland, according to the custome of the French. Afterwards, at his coming into England, the Councell thought it much more honorable to have so many Footemen to run with his Majesty, as the Queen [Elizabeth] had before him. Whereupon these youthes had cloathes put to their backs, according to their places, and £.50 a peece in their purses, and so were dismissed the Court. This youth among the rest having thus lost his fortunes, to repair them again makes hast into France, and there continued untill he had spent all his means and money ; so that, now being bare in a strange country, without friends, or hopes to obtain his expectation, returns back for England, bringing nothing with him but the language and a few French fashions. Neverthelesse, by the help of some of his countrymen and ancient acquaintance, hee was preferred unto the Lord Haies, [some say Lord Dingwall,] a Scotchman and Favourite of the King's, to wait upon him as his Page. Not long after, amongst many others, this Lord was appointed to perform a Tilting, who bearing an affection to this young man, as well in respect hee was his countryman, as that hee found him to be of a bold disposition, comely visage, and proportionable personage, mixt with a Courtly presence, he preferres him to carry his device to the King, according to the custome of those pastimes used. Now when hee should come to light from his horse to perform his office, his horse starts back, throws him down, and *breaks his leg*. This accident being no lesse strange than suddain, in such a place, causes the King to demand who it was ; answer was made him his name was Car. He taking notice of his name, and calling to remembrance that such an one was his Page, caused him to be had into the Court, and there provides for him untill such time as he was recovered of his hurt."—On this it will be sufficient to remark that the term "*mean parentage*," by which some authors have been misled, and which others have been at some trouble to refute, may be here understood (taking *mean* in its French rather than Saxon derivation) as signifying that his parents were of *middle* rank ; but as for the "*village near Edinburgh*," it is to be observed that Fernihurst is near Jedburgh, above 40 miles from the Scottish metropolis. Sir Robert Car's father is, however, elsewhere said to have owned the Castle of Preston Grange near Edinburgh. The truth of the accident which befel this young Courtier, which has been discredited by some authors, is confirmed by the Earl of Suffolk's letter. When it occurred does not appear, but the Tilting before the King of Denmark in August 1606 (see p. 88), is the next preceding his Knighthood that we have any account of. "The King," says Wilson, "visited him often during his necessitated restraint, sometimes an hour or more conversing with him, to sound him, and know what he was ; and, though he found no great depth of literature and experience, yet such a smooth and calm outside made him think that there might be a good anchorage, and fit harbour for his most retired causes." The Favourite was knighted Dec. 24, 1607, and the same day made a Gentleman of the King's Bed-chamber (see p. 161). Hume, the Historian most generally studied, misleads in calling him a "*raw youth*," who "*arrived in London about the end of 1609*." But Hume's account of the King's being his schoolmaster (a character in which, by-the-bye, with all his boasted "*King-craft*," James would have shone brighter) is confirmed by the Earl of Suffolk.—

The Lord Knolles the mantle; the Lord Walden the cape with circulet; he [the Viscount] in his surcoat with his rapier, betweene the Earle of Shrewsbury and Vicount Lake in their roabes of estat; who stood uncovered untill the Patent was read by Sir Thomas Lake. And then they put on the said cappes, and returned to the Councell-chamber, wher they dined in their roabes. The King's style was proclaimed in the three languages, and his [the Viscount's] style in French with two largesses, wherin was specified that he was Gentleman of his Majestie's Chamber¹."

April 21, Sir Thomas Overbury², having offended his friend Car, was first imprisoned.

On the 27th, the Ringers of St. Margaret's were paid 2s. 6d. "at the King and Queen's remove from Whitehall to Greenwich."

On the 28th of February 1608-9, Sir George Chaworth writes to the Earl of Shrewsbury, "Sir Robert Car is now the especially graced man." (Lodge, vol. III. p. 366.) At this period, to recur to the old author before quoted, "no suite, no petition, no grant, no letter, but Car must have a hand in it; so that great rewards are bestowed upon him by suitors, and large sums of money by his Majesty, by which means his wealth encreased with his favour." In 1608, or early in 1609, an ample grant of lands in the counties of Dorset and Somerset was given to the Favourite. These had been the property of Sir Walter Raleigh, under grant from Queen Elizabeth, and forfeited by him. And though Lady Raleigh earnestly petitioned the King's compassion for herself and children, the land being entailed on them, it is said she obtained no other answer than "*he mun have the land, he mun have it for Car.*" That the King rejected her addresses has been mentioned in p. 99. She, "falling upon her knees, with hands uplifted to Heaven, in the bitterness of her spirit, besought God Almighty to look upon the justice of her cause, and punish those who had so wrongfully exposed her and her children to poverty. What has happened since to that Royal Family is too well known." ("A Brief Relation of Sir Walter Raleigh's Troubles," printed in the Harleian Miscellany.) The curse, however, may more truly be said to have fallen on Car.—Prince Henry's affection for Sir Walter not long after prompted him to beg these lands of his Father, he fully intending to restore them to Sir Walter. Accordingly we find that Sir Robert Car in 1611 received £.500 as a Free-gift, and "£.20,000 more for his interest in the manor of Sherborne lately given unto him;" while Lady Raleigh was silenced by "£.8000 for composition for Sherborne." But the lands having reverted to the Crown on Prince Henry's death, in 1613 Car (then Earl of Somerset) again obtained them by paying £.2000 to the King. Of all these proceedings see fully in Hutchins's Dorsetshire, vol. IV. pp. 82—84. Having thus for the first time collected the history of Sir Robert Car untill his elevation to the Peerage, an account of his further progress shall be deferred for other occasions. But, while speaking of his aggrandizing fortunes, it may be well to observe, that, after becoming a Viscount, he received another Free-gift of £.5000 this year, and the year following the sum of £.15,500!

¹ Camden's notes. Harl. MSS. 5176.

² See p. 200.

On the 6th of May, Sir William Waad¹ was removed from the Lieutenancy of the Tower, and the guilty Sir Gervase Elwes² succeeded him.

Prince Henry, whose attention to the Navy of the Kingdom was suitable to the importance of the object, being now resolved to view in person the ships and their store-houses, sent a message to Mr. Phineas Pette, to acquaint him of his intention of making a private excursion to Chatham, whither that person had removed from Woolwich a few months previously. On Monday the 29th of April, says the Shipwright in his autobiography, "I was by the Prince's Highness'

¹ Sir William Waad, son of Armigell Waad, Esq. of Belsize near Hampstead, followed the steps of his father, succeeded him as Clerk of the Council, and was employed in several embassies; to the Emperor Rodolph in 1583; to the King of Spain in 1584; to the King of France in 1586; and at other times to Portugal and Denmark. He was knighted May 20, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 156), and also held the offices of Commissary General of England; Inspector of the Irish Forces; Privy Councillor of James I.; and Muster-master General. He was sworn Lieutenant of the Tower in Aug. 1605; previously to which, March 28, Mr. Calvert writes to Mr. Winwood: "Sir W. Waad doth wait seldom, and is almost in the predicament of other old servants that are in a manner rather neglected than in the least measure countenanced. The Council-chamber, he tells me, yields little profit, and in time will be worse."—He was now dismissed by the intrigues of Viscount Rochester; who might dislike him the more from being patronized by the Earl of Salisbury. He died at Battales Waad in Essex, Oct. 25, 1623, aged 77. A copious and interesting memoir of this worthy Statesman is given in Park's History of Hampstead, accompanied by an excellent Portrait.

² Sir Gervase Elwes had been knighted at Theobalds May 7, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 112). There is the following remarkable passage in a Letter from Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton (a few days after his appointment), May 13, 1611: "One Sir Gervase Hellwise, of Lincolnshire, somewhat an unknown man, is put into the place [of Lieutenant of the Tower] by the favour of the Lord Chamberlain [the Earl of Suffolk] and his Lady. This Gentleman is of *too mild and gentle a disposition* for such an office. He is my old friend and acquaintance in France, and lately renewed in town, where he hath not lived past a year, nor followed the Court many a day."—"Having been brought up in the studie of the Laws at Lincoln's Inne," says the Author of the "First Fourteen years of King James," "and ambitious of preferment, he offered a sum of money for that honour and place. Hee being established in his office, must (to re-collect the money paid) use some kind of extortion, and, to bear out this, to be observant to such as preferred him, and so by their countenance he might use the greater liberty; for this cause he made the Earle of Northampton and [Viscount] Rochester the whole end of all his actions, fearing more the displeasure of them than the King;—and so was a fit man for their purposes." The particulars of his guilt need not be here entered into; he suffered on Tower-hill, Nov. 3, 1615, deservedly punished for his wicked cowardice and weakness in winking at the crimes of the wretch Somerset.—The family of Elwes was highly respectable; and Sir Gervase, then seated at Stoke in Suffolk, was created a Baronet June 22, 1660. See Collins, 1741, vol. III. p. 55. The name has been spelt as variously as any that can be adduced;—Mr. Chamberlain's mode of spelling it seems to contain an innate allusion to the owner's character!

command, sent for to come to London to be at Westminster with Sir Robert Mansell that night at supper. The message came to me about two or three of the clock in the afternoon; I presently caused my horses to be taken up and made ready, and presently took horse, and according to appointment came hither by seven that night; where I found Sir Robert Mansell and Sir Oliver Cromwell expecting my coming. The next morning Sir Robert Mansell and myself repaired to St. James', where I received from the Prince's own mouth his Highness' intent to make a private journey to Chatham, and to go down in his barges round about by Queensbury, giving me strict charge I should acquaint none with it, but make preparation for his lodging and diett, and his small Train in Chatham, Mr. Legat's house being appointed the place to receive his own person. So, being taught my lesson, I returned to Chatham, taking present order for the preparing of all things for his Entertainment. There was a small merchant-man bound for the East country, which was purposely sent down into Tilbury Hope, to ride there to refresh his Highness on board her, and to releive the watermen; to which purpose she was quaintly fitted with all things, and a breakfast prepared for that purpose, Sir William St. John having the charge of seeing it performed, being as Captain of the ship for the present¹.

¹ "In the 17th and 18th yeares of his age," remarks Sir Charles Cornwallis, Prince Henry "began not only to be a man in stature, but also in courage and wisdome, to the admiration of all; and, with the eyes of his spirit surveying the mighty inheritance whereunto he was heire apparent, he did also straine to be the better furnished, if ever his shoulders should undergoe so great a burthen, with furniture befitting the same, (it being wisdome, in the time of peace, to prepare for the same, knowing that peace is the harbinger of warre,) chiefly in ships, counted the brazen wall of this Isle, he in the time of our security thought thereof. And therefore did not only intreate his Majestie to cause his Officers of the Navy to build him a Ship called the Prince, then the fairest of the Isle; but also, to advance the affaires of the Navy to his power, now and then got leave of his Majesty to go in person to view the ships and store-houses, which divers times he did. Not content herewith, he did also practise tilting, charging on horsebacke with pistols, after the manner of the wars, with all other the like inventions. Now also delighting to conferre both with his owne and other strangers, and great Captaines, of all manner of wars, battailes, furniture, armes by sea and land, disciplines, orders, marches, alarmes, watches, stratagems, ambuscades, approaches, scalings, fortifications, incampings, and having now and then battailes of headmen appointed both on horse and foot, in a long table; whereby he might in a manner view the right ordering of a battaile, how every troope did aide and assist another, as also the placing of the light horsemen, vauntgaurd, maine battaile, with the assisting wings and rerewards, &c. which are out of my element to speake of. Neither did he omit, as he loved the theoricke of these things, to practise the same, entertaininge in his house a Dutch Captaine, sent unto him by his Excellence Grave Maurice, a most excellent engineer in all manner of things belonging to the wars; causing also, from time to time, new pieces of ordnance to be made, learning to shoot,

"On Monday morning the 6th of May, the Prince's Highness took his barge at Whitehall by five of the clock. He was accompanied with the Earls of Shrewsbury, Arundel, and Mar, Sir Thomas Chaloner, Sir Oliver Cromwell, Sir Robert Mansell, and some others of his household servants. About nine of the clock his Highness came on board, where we were ready to receive him after the sea manner with trumpetts and drums; and after he had refreshed himself, the Lords breakfasted, and the watermen relieved with fresh spells, we went on against the tide till we came within Queensborough water, and it was ebbd before we could get as high as Upnor; and so passing about by all the ships, his Highness landed at the Old Dock at Chatham a little before six at night; and thence walked on foot to Mr. Legat's¹ house, where his supper was ready prepared for him and his Train, to his great content. The Earl of Arundell was lodged at a boatswain's house next Mr. Legat's; the Earl of Shrewsbury and the Earl of Mar were lodged at my house; the others of the Train in other convenient places.

"Tuesday morning betimes, according to his Highness' directions over-night, barges and boats were ready to attend his Highness, who had broken fast, and was ready by seven of the clock, and took his barge and went first on board the Prince, and so from ship to ship of the Lower Reach, taking in his own table-book private information from Sir Robert Mansell and myself (none else suffered to come near), of the state and condition of each several ship. This done, he landed and went to dinner, where he was very merry and pleasant, we having placed 15 great brass chambers in the garden to be fired when his Highness drank any healths; and were carefully performed by Mr. John Reynolds, Master-gunner of his own Ship, who carefully performed his charge. Dinner done, his Highness proceeded again in viewing all the ships and pinnaces in the Upper Reach, not leaving out any one which he was not on board of, taking the same course with them as was done with the others in the forenoon, by which time the day was far spent, and his Highness returned to his lodging, supper being ready against his coming.

"On Wednesday, after his Highness had broken fast, he took his barges and went up to Stroud by water, all the ships of both Reaches giving him a Royall and level them right to the white. No lesse provident was he to have great horses, and those of the best, which were sent unto him from all countreys; so that I may truly affirme, no Prince in Christendome did exceed him therein. Thus in these, and other worldly pleasures, which stoope for acquaintance unto greatnesse, did he spend the yeares past."

¹ Who was Clerk of the Checque at Chatham; see p. 249.

farewell with their ordnance, which he commanded to be shot even over his barge, notwithstanding all persuasion to the contrary. He was landed at Stroud, where his coaches attended him; and thence went to Gravesend; whither I also waited on him; and there his Highness was received by the Magistrates of the Town with all their small shot, and the ordnance of the block-houses at his parting. In his barge he was pleased to grace me with kissing his hand, expressing how well he was pleased with his journey and entertainment ¹."

On the 8th of May, Sir Henry Wotton writes to Sir Arthur Throckmorton:

"My Lord, my Brother [Lord Wotton] is returned a day sooner than he thought, out of Kent, for that the King (who is now at Hampton Court) hath appointed all his Counsellors, and all the Judges, to meet him here [at Westminster] about matters of the Mint, as it is voiced, perhaps to cover some greater subject; and yet money is a great one ²." Accordingly, on "Thursday morning, the 9th of May, the King in person came into the Starre-chamber, and having viewed it, then went into the Receipts and other offices; his Majestie likewise went into Westminster Hall, and into the Court of Exchequer, and into the other offices, and presently after came the Prince of Wales, and surveyd all those places in like manner; and this morning the King and the Prince of Wales, being accompanied and attended with the Lord Chauncelor, the Lord Treasurer, the Lord Privie Seale, and the Lord Chamberlaine, and six other Earles, and six Barons, and Syr Julius Cæsar, Chauncelor of the Exchequer, being all in the Star-chamber, where his Majestie was then come of specyall purpose, to see his monies of gold and silver to be taken out of the pixe, and to be tried as well for their weight as for their finenesse; for which purpose Thomas Lord Knevet and Edmond Dowbleday, Esquire, Wardens of the Mint; Richard Martine, Esquire, Master and Worker of the Moneys; and Richard Rogers, Comptroller of the Mint, as the King had appointed, caused the pixe to be brought from the Mint thether, where, in the presence of the King, they with their severall keys opened the pixe and poured forth the gold and silver to be assayed and tryed by their severall standards, according to the forme of the indentures made betweene the King and the Masters and Workers of his Majestie's moneys; here were also present, Walter Williams and Andrew Palmer, Esquiers, being the Assay Masters of the Mint. This kind of tryall, though it bee usual once every year, for due examination and plaine prooffe wheather the monies bee as they ought to be or

¹ MS. Life of Phineas Pette, Harl. MSS. 6279, p. 62.

² Reliquiæ Wottonianæ, p. 276.

not, yet it is beyond all memorie and mention for an hundred yeares space, that ever any King or Queene came in proper person to see any of these tryalls; yet neverthesse at this time his Majestie in person gave a jurie of sixteene of the most honest, skilfullest, and best reputed gouldsmithes their othes, and charge for tryall of the monies, and the jury proceeded in all things according to their charg, and they gave up their verdict the same day at the Court of Whitehall, and the King shewed them great grace and favour.

“The names of the Jurors: Hugh Middelton, Alexander Prescot, Richard Lancaster, John Terry, Wardens; George Smithes, Alderman, William Beareblocke, Gayus Newman, Edmond Wheeler, John Brode, Richard Gosson, Bevell Mowls-worth, Edward Greene, Humphrey Westwood, John Williams the King’s goldsmith, John Moth, William Diniocke.

“His Majesty having dilligently viewed and examined the state of his monies and Mint, as is mentioned, he also, with like Kingly care and prudence, searched and examined the abuses of the Commonwealth practized by very many persons upon all sorts of monies; for redresse whereof his Majesty made Proclamation the 18th of May for the preservation of moneys¹.”

On the 12th of May, being Whit-sunday, Bishop Andrews preached before the King at Windsor, on John xvii. 7².

“On the 13th, “at Windsor were made Knights of the most Noble Order of the Garter, Charles Duke of Yorke, second sonne to our Sovereigne Lord the King; Thomas Earle of Arundell³; and Robert Viscount of Rochester⁴.”

The 22d of this month, is memorable for the first Creation of Baronets. This title obtained the rank of the ancient Vavasours. It was instituted with the professed purpose of defending and ameliorating the condition of the Province of Ulster; and the stipulations were that those who accepted the title “should be aiding towards the building of Churches, Towns and Castles; should proffer their lives, fortunes, and estates to hazard in the performance of this duty, and that, when any spark of rebellion or other hostile invasion should attempt to disturb the peace of this Kingdom or Province, that they themselves should be ready

¹ Howes’ Chronicle; where the Proclamation is printed, and also some regulations made soon after respecting the gold coin.—Of these see also Ruding on the Coinage, vol. II. pp. 202—204; but this particular account, by Howes, of the Trial is there overlooked.

² This Sermon is in the “XCVI Sermons” by the Bishop, the Fourth on the sending of the Holy Ghost.

³ See p. 332.

⁴ See p. 414.—His honours now came “thick upon him.”

to defend it; and that each of them maintain and keep thirty foot soldiers there¹." The patents of the first Baronets were exactly similar excepting in the names of those created; and none were at first admitted except those descended, at least, from a grandfather on the father's side, who had borne arms; and who had a clear income, in land, of £.1000 *per annum*. At the first institution it was designed that the number should not exceed 200, that number to be filled up as the titles became extinct. The Founder exceeded this number by four only; and these were to fill vacancies which had happened, though not by death or attainder, by promotion to a higher dignity; so that he did not go beyond his engagement².

The following eighteen Knights and Gentlemen were the first honoured with this Hereditary Degree:

1. Sir Nicholas Bacon³, of Redgrave, Sussex, Knight.
2. Sir Richard Molineux⁴, of Sefton, Lancashire, Knight.
3. Sir Thomas Mansel⁵, of Margam, Glamorganshire, Knight.
4. George Shirley⁶, of Staunton, Leicestershire, Esquire.
5. Sir John Stradling⁷, of St. Donat's, Glamorganshire, Knight.
6. Sir Francis Leake⁸, of Sutton, Derbyshire, Knight.

¹ Such were the ostensible motives for the creation of Baronets; but the real inducement seems to have been that this was a new mode of raising money. It is said to have originated with the Earl of Salisbury, or Sir Robert Cotton (see p. 426). Sir Anthony Weldon declares that the Earl persuaded the King to raise £.200,000 in this manner, telling him, "he should find his English subjects like asses on whom he might lay any burden; and should need neither bit nor bridle, but their own asses' ears." And when the King said it would discontent the generality of the gentry, "Tush, Sire," he replied, "you want the money, that will do you good; the honour will do them very little harm."—But this anecdote, if it is at all to be credited, seems rather to apply to the "Knights of forty pound a year" made at the Coronation.

² These particulars are taken from a long essay on Baronets, printed in Wotton's *Baronetage*, (1741,) pp. 280 *et seq.*

³ The eldest son of the Lord Keeper, knighted by Queen Elizabeth at Norwich Aug. 22, 1578, and of whom see her "Progresses," II. 224.—The title is now enjoyed by Sir Edmund, the eighth Baronet.

⁴ Sir Richard Molineux had been knighted by Queen Elizabeth June 24, 1586, being then 26.—William, second Earl of Sefton and tenth Viscount Molyneux, is the present and eleventh Baronet.

⁵ Sir Thomas Mansel had been knighted in 1591, and died Dec. 20, 1621.—The title became extinct in 1750 with Bussy, the seventh Baronet and fourth Lord Mansel.

⁶ Of whom see p. 92; but the supposition that he was knighted is wrong. — Robert seventh Earl Ferrers is the present and thirteenth Baronet.

⁷ See p. 196.

⁸ See vol. I. 323.—He was now a Gentleman Extraordinary of the Bed-chamber to Prince Henry.

7. Sir Thomas Pelham¹, of Laughton, Suffolk, Knight.
8. Sir Richard Hoghton², of Hoghton Tower, Lancashire, Knight.
9. Sir Henry Hobart³, of Intwood, Norfolk, Knight.
10. Sir George Booth⁴, of Dunham Massy, Cheshire, Knight.
11. Sir John Peyton⁵, of Isleham, Cambridgeshire, Knight.
12. Lionel Tollemache⁶, of Helmingham, Suffolk, Esquire.
13. Sir Gervase Clifton⁷, of Clifton, Nottinghamshire, K. B.
14. Sir Thomas Gerard⁸, of Bryn, Lancashire, Knight.
15. Sir Walter Aston⁹, of Tixall, Staffordshire, K. B.
16. Philip Knivet¹⁰, of Buckenham, Norfolk, Esquire.

¹ Who was elected M. P. for Sussex in 1585, and was Sheriff of Surrey and Sussex in 1588. He died Dec. 2, 1624, and was buried with great solemnity at Laughton. See further in Brydges's *Peerage*, vol. V. p. 512.—Thomas the second and present Earl of Chichester is the seventh Baronet.

² Sir Richard Hoghton was knighted by the Earl of Essex in Ireland in 1599; was Sheriff of Lancashire in 1598; and was M. P. for that county in several Parliaments. In August 1617 he entertained the King on his return from Scotland at Hoghton Tower; see hereafter under that date. Of his son and successor see vol. I. p. 464; and this Volume, p. 267.—The present Sir Henry Philip Hoghton is the seventh Baronet.

³ Of whom see vol. I. p. 207. Besides his preferments there enumerated he was Chancellor to Prince Henry.—George Robert fifth Earl of Buckinghamshire is the ninth and present Baronet.

⁴ Sir George Booth was Sheriff of Cheshire in 1597 and 1622; knighted in 1599; and died Oct. 24, 1652, aged 86. — The title became extinct about 1798 with the Rev. Sir George Booth, the sixth Baronet; the family having also enjoyed the titles of Earl of Warrington and Baron Delamere. See their history in Ormerod's *Cheshire*, vol. I. pp. 401 *et seq.*

⁵ See p. 211.—The title became extinct since 1806 with Sir Yelverton the seventh Baronet.

⁶ Sheriff of Norfolk and Suffolk in 1591, and of Suffolk in 1616, and knighted at Whitehall May 24, 1612.—This Baronetcy became extinct March 9, 1821, on the death of Wilbraham fifth Earl of Dysart, the seventh Baronet.

⁷ Of whom see vol. I. pp. 85, 224.—The present Sir Robert is the seventh Baronet.

⁸ Of whom see vol. I. p. 84.—The peculiar favour there mentioned, with which he was created a Baronet, was, that, in consideration of his father's great sufferings in the cause of Mary Queen of Scots, his fee of £.1000 was returned. A grant for perpetuating the Sheriffdom of Lancashire in his family, and some other beneficial grants, were promised him, but not performed, being alledged to be against the liberty of the subject.—The present Sir William is the eleventh Baronet.

⁹ Of whom see vol. I. p. 225.—Walter Hutchinson, the present Baron Aston, is the ninth Lord and Baronet.

¹⁰ Son of Sir Thomas Knivet, knighted at the Charter-house May 11, 1603; see vol. I. p. 115 (who was not himself Lord Knivet of Escrick as said *ibid.* p. 582, but was his cousin). Of Sir Philip we find nothing.—The title early became extinct.

17. Sir John St. John¹, of Lydiard Tregoze, Wiltshire, Knight.

18. John Shelley², of Michel-grove, Sussex, Esquire.

On the 4th of June we find the King at Greenwich³; and, on the 23d, Dr. Abbot, lately translated to the Archbishoprick of Canterbury, was there sworne a Privie Counsellor⁴.

“The 23d of June arrived Prince Otto, sonne and heire unto Morris Landgrave of Hessia, attended with thirtie persons, and accompanied with the young Countie of Nassaw. This Prince was very honourable entertained of the King, Queene, and Prince of Wales. He went unto both the Universities, and tooke great pleasure to behold the King's parkes and pallaces; he was 17 yeeres of age, and demeaned himselfe in all things very princely and bountifully. He returned the third of August. The King honoured with Knighthood two of his chiefe attendants, who were Commissioners to his Majestie, *viz.* Otto Starchedell, President of Hessia, and Gasper Widmarkter, a Colonel; next unto whom his chiefe Gentleman and director of his affaires was Maister Frauncis Seagar, an Englishman, a sworne Counsellor unto Prince Morris, the Father of this young Prince, and one of his Captaines in Ordinary⁵.”

The second Seal of Baronets, the Test of whose Patents was dated June 29, 1611, was very numerous. Their Names were as follow:

19. Sir Thomas Savage⁶, of Rocksavage, Cheshire, Knight.

20. Sir Francis Barrington⁷, of Barrington Hall, Essex, Knight.

21. Henry Berkeley⁸, of Wymondham, Leicestershire, Esquire.

22. William Wentworth⁹, of Wentworth Wodehouse, Yorkshire, Esquire.

¹ Of whom see p. 214.—George-Richard the present Viscount Bolinbroke is the seventh Baronet.

² Who was afterwards knighted April 4, 1612. — The title is now enjoyed by Sir John, the sixth Baronet.

³ Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. XVI. p. 710.

⁴ Of Dr. Abbot see vol. I. p. 533.—He had, says Howes, been “very honorably enstalled at Lambeth on the 9th of April.”

⁵ Howes' Chronicle.

⁶ Who married Elizabeth, daughter and coheir of Thomas Darcy, Earl Rivers, who was so created in 1626 with remainder to his son-in-law Sir Thomas. Sir Thomas died first, but his son John succeeded as second Lord Rivers in 1639.—The title became extinct in 1728 with John, fifth Earl and fifth Baronet.

⁷ See vol. I. p. 111.

⁸ Sir Henry Berkeley died s. p. and the title became extinct with him. Of this branch of the Berkeleys see a pedigree in Nichols's *Leicestershire*, vol. II. p. 413.

⁹ Father of the first Earl Strafford. He erected during his life-time a monument in Wentworth

23. Sir Richard Musgrave¹, of Hartley Castle, Westmoreland, K. B.
24. Edward Seymour², of Berry Pomeroy, Devonshire, Esquire.
25. Sir Moyle Finch³, of Eastwell, Kent, Knight.
26. Sir Anthony Cope⁴, of Hanwell, Oxfordshire, Knight.
27. Sir Thomas Monson⁵, of Carlton, Lincolnshire, Knight.
- (28. Charles Vavasor, of Killingthorp, Lincolnshire, Esquire, by a special clause of precedency, dated June 22, 1631.)
29. George Gresley⁶, of Drakelow, Derbyshire, Esquire.
30. Paul Tracy⁷, of Stanway, Gloucestershire, Esquire.
31. Sir John Wentworth⁸, of Gosfield, Essex, Knight.
32. Sir Henry Bellasyse⁹, of Newborough, Yorkshire, Knight.

Chapel, with three large statues of himself, wife, and son, and lesser representations of seven other sons and three daughters. See Collins's Peerage. — The Baronetcy expired August 7, 1799, with Frederick Thomas third Earl Strafford of a new creation, and sixth Baronet.

¹ Of whom see vol. I. p. 225.—The present Sir Philip Christopher is the eighth Baronet.

² Grandson of the Duke of Somerset, beheaded on Jan. 22, 1551-2. He was Sheriff of Devonshire in 1574 and 1594; was elected M. P. for the county in 1592, 1600, and 1603; and died April 11, 1613. Of his son and successor Edward see vol. I. p. 156. — Edward Adolphus eleventh Duke of Somerset is the present and ninth Baronet. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. I.

³ Of whom see vol. I. p. 196.—George, the present and eighth Earl of Winchelsea and fourth Earl of Nottingham, is the tenth Baronet. See Brydges, vol. III.

⁴ Sir Anthony Cope, who entertained the King and Queen at Hanwell in 1605, has been noticed in vol. I. p. 527; as is his brother Walter, *ibid.* p. 81; and his son and successor William, p. 115.—The title has become extinct since 1806 with the Rev. Sir Richard Cope, the ninth Baronet.

⁵ See p. 24.—The title is now enjoyed by John George the ninth Baronet and fifth Lord Monson.

⁶ Sir George Gresley was of an ancient Norman family, residing at Drakelow from the Conquest, and son of Sir Thomas Gresley, knighted by the King at Worksop, April 20, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 88). "He was a Gentleman of good parts, an encourager of learning, and Sir William Dugdale owed (in some measure) his rise to him; for Sir George, being well known to Thomas Earl of Somerset, Earl Marshal of England, introduced him to his acquaintance on his first coming to London." He was elected M. P. for Newcastle-under-Line in 1627. Sir Roger is the present and eighth Baronet.

⁷ Sir Paul Tracy had been Sheriff of Gloucestershire in 1577 and 1610. His son and successor has been noticed in vol. I. p. 217.—The Baronetcy expired with John the fifth Baronet in 1677.

⁸ Of whom see vol. I. p. 93.—He, or the Knight of the same names, noticed *ibid.* p. 214, was at this time one of the Gentlemen in Ordinary of the Privy-chamber to Prince Henry.

⁹ Sir Henry Belasyse was knighted at York, April 17, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 82). "He lived in great hospitality" in the county, and has a monument in York Cathedral, representing the effigies of himself, wife, son, and two daughters. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 29. His son Thomas was the first Viscount Fauconberg.—Charles Viscount Fauconberg is the present and sixth Baronet.

33. Sir William Constable¹, of Flamborough, Yorkshire, Knight.
34. Sir Thomas Leigh², of Stonely, Warwickshire, Knight.
35. Sir Edward Noel³, of Brook, Rutlandshire, Knight.
36. Sir Robert Cotton⁴, of Conington, Huntingdonshire, Knight.
37. Robert Cholmondeley⁵, of Cholmondeley, Cheshire, Esquire.
38. Sir John Molineux⁶, of Teversal, Nottinghamshire, Knight.
39. Sir Francis Wortley⁷, of Wortley, Yorkshire, Knight.
40. Sir George Savile⁸, of Thornhill, Yorkshire, Knight.
41. William Kniveton⁹, of Mircaston, Derbyshire, Esquire.
42. Sir Philip Wodehouse¹⁰, of Kimberly, Norfolk, Knight.

¹ Of the family of Constable see p. 154. Sir William was knighted by the Earl of Essex in Ireland in 1599; and being implicated with that Nobleman, was the next year arraigned for High Treason, though afterwards admitted to bail.—He was M. P. for Knaresborough in several Parliaments, and for Yorkshire in 1625. He was still violently opposed to his Sovereign, and signed the death-warrant of Charles I.; and, on the Restoration, would undoubtedly have suffered had not his death prevented the execution of the law. His lands were excepted in the General Pardon, and his dignity expired with him.

² Nephew to Sir Francis Leigh, created a Baronet in 1618, and afterwards Earl of Chichester, and grandfather of Thomas first Lord Leigh of Stonely.—Since the death of Edward the fifth Baron and sixth Baronet, in 1786, the titles are supposed to be dormant.

³ Who was created Baron Noel March 23, 1617; succeeded his father-in-law, Baptist Hickes, as second Viscount Campden; and died March 10, 1643. The Baronetcy became extinct in 1798 with Henry sixth Earl of Gainsborough and eighth Baronet.

⁴ The celebrated Founder of the Cottonian Library, whose history needs no repetition. He had been knighted May 11, or July 23, 1603 (see vol. I. pp. 115, 220). The invention of this new order of lesser Nobility, of which he now partook, has been attributed to Sir Robert.—Sir John, who died in 1752, was the sixth and last Baronet.

⁵ Who was created an Irish Baron by the title of Lord Cholmondeley of Kellis, Leinster, in 1628, and, for his eminent services to Charles the First, an English Baron by the title of Lord Cholmondeley of Wiche-Malbank (*vulgo* Nantwich) Sept. 1, 1645; and Earl of Leinster in Ireland March 5 following. He compounded with Parliament for his estates at no less than £.7742, and, having lived revered for his liberal hospitality, his conduct in the government of his country, and his domestic virtues, died Oct. 2, 1659, when all his titles became extinct with him.—The present Earl Cholmondeley is descended from his brother Hugh.

⁶ Of whom see p. 212.—The title became extinct Jan. 4, 1816, with Sir D'Arcy the eighth Baronet.

⁷ See p. 407.—The title expired with his son Francis the second Baronet.

⁸ Of whom see vol. I. p. 118.—The title became extinct January 10, 1784, with Sir George the seventh Baronet, the fourth and fifth Baronets having enjoyed the title of Marquess Halifax.

⁹ Who was Sheriff of Derbyshire in 1586 and 1614, and elected M. P. for that county in 1603. His son Gilbert was knighted May 29, 1605 (see vol. I. p. 515); and with his grandson Thomas the third Baronet the title is supposed to have expired. See Collins's Baronetage, vol. I. p. *220.

¹⁰ Son of Sir Roger Wodehouse, of whom see "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. II. pp. 214,

43. Sir William Pope¹, of Wilcot, Oxfordshire, Knight.
44. Sir James Harington², of Ridlington, Rutlandshire, Knight.
45. Sir Henry Savile³, of Methley, Yorkshire, Knight.
46. Henry Willoughby⁴, of Risley, Derbyshire, Esquire.
47. Lewis Tresham⁵, of Rushton, Northamptonshire, Esquire.
48. Thomas Brudenell⁶, of Dean, Northamptonshire, Esquire.
49. Sir George St. Paul⁷, of Snarford, Lincolnshire, Knight.
50. Sir Philip Tyrwhitt⁸, of Stanfield, Lincolnshire, Knight.
51. Sir Roger Dallyson⁹, of Laughton, Lincolnshire, Knight.
52. Sir Edward Carr¹⁰, of Sleaford, Lincolnshire, Knight.
53. Sir Edward Hussey¹¹, of Honington, Lincolnshire, Knight.

225. Sir Philip served Queen Elizabeth by sea and land, was knighted at the conquest of Cales; was elected M. P. for Castle Rising in 1585; was Deputy Lieutenant of Norfolk; and died in October 1623. June 27, 1603, in company with his son, he met the King and Queen at Sir George Fermor's, Easton Neston, Northamptonshire, when his son, then only 18, was knighted (see vol. I. p. 188).—John first Baron Wodehouse, is the present and sixth Baronet.

¹ See vol. I. pp. 224, 527.

² Younger brother of Lord Harington of Exton (of whom see vol. I. p. 93). He had been Sheriff of Rutland in 1592, and knighted by the King at Grimstone April 18, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 83).—Sir John Edward is the present and eighth Baronet.

³ See vol. I. p. 212.

⁴ Of whose family see Collins's Baronetage, 1720, vol. I. p. 239. He died s. p. m. and the Baronetcy became extinct with him.

⁵ Son of Sir Thomas Tresham, who was knighted at Kenilworth, July 18, 1575 (see "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. I. p. 459). This family was Popishly inclined; and Sir Lewis's eldest brother Thomas was attainted with High Treason, being connected with the Gunpowder Plot. Sir Lewis was afterwards knighted, April 4, 1612.—The dignity expired, it is supposed, with his son Thomas. See Collins, 1720, vol. I. p. 244.

⁶ Sir Thomas Brudenell was also afterwards knighted with the last-mentioned; and was in 1627 created Lord Brudenell of Stanton Wivill, Leicestershire. Having signally manifested his loyalty and suffered a tedious imprisonment in the cause of Charles the First, at the Coronation of his son, in 1661, he was created Earl of Cardigan; and he died Sept. 16, 1663, aged more than 80. See further in Brydges's Peerage, vol. III. p. 495.—Robert, the present Earl of Cardigan, is the sixth who has enjoyed the above-mentioned titles.

⁷ See p. 135.

⁸ Sheriff of Lincolnshire 1593, and knighted at Belvoir Castle, April 22, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 91); he died Feb. 5, 1624.—The title became extinct with Sir John de la Fontaine Tyrwhitt, the sixth Baronet, between 1750 and 1771.

⁹ See vol. I. p. 91.

¹⁰ Knighted with the two preceding Baronets, see vol. I. p. 93; and died Oct. 1, 1613.—The title became extinct with Edward the fourth Baronet. See Collins, 1720, vol. I. p. 254.

¹¹ Of whom see p. 192.—The title became extinct about 1750.

54. L'Estrange Mordaunt¹, of Massingham, Norfolk, Esquire.
55. Thomas Bendish², of Steeple Bumsted, Essex, Esquire.
56. Sir John Wynne³, of Gwydir, Carnarvonshire, Knight.
57. Sir William Throckmorton⁴, of Tortworth, Gloucestershire, Knight.
58. Sir Richard Worsley⁵, of Apuldercombe, in the Isle of Wight, Knight.
59. Richard Fleetwood⁶, of Caldwich, Staffordshire, Esquire.
60. Thomas Spencer⁷, of Yarnton, Oxfordshire, Esquire.
61. Sir John Tufton⁸, of Hothfield, Kent, Knight.
62. Sir Samuel Peyton⁹, of Knowlton, Kent, Knight.
63. Sir Charles Morrison¹⁰, of Cashiobury, Hertfordshire, Knight of the Bath.
64. Sir Henry Baker¹¹, of Sisinghurst, Kent, Knight.
65. Roger Appleton¹², of South Bemfleet, Essex, Esquire.

¹ This family is descended from the same noble Norman as is the Earl of Peterborough. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. III. p. 313. Sir L'Estrange was bred to arms from his youth, signalized himself in the Low Country Wars; and was several years employed against the Irish Rebels, till he succeeded to the estate of his ancestors at Massingham. He was Sheriff of Norfolk in 1606 and 1623, and died in 1627, aged about 55.—The present Sir Charles is the eighth Baronet.

² Sir Thomas Bendish afterwards greatly distinguished himself for his loyalty, and his conduct as Ambassador to Turkey, where he went in 1647 and resided about 14 years; of this see very fully in Collins's Baronetage, 1720, vol. I. pp. 276 *et seq.* He died in 1674.—The Baronetcy became extinct with Sir Henry, the third Baronet, between 1720 and 1741.

³ See p. 48.—The title became extinct with John the sixth Baronet between 1720 and 1741.

⁴ It does not appear when Sir William Throckmorton was knighted, if he was so.—The title expired with Baynam the third who enjoyed it.

⁵ Of whom see p. 407. The present Sir Leonard-Thomas Worsley Holmes is the ninth Baronet.

⁶ This title became extinct in 1802.

⁷ Sir Thomas Spencer, of the same origin as Lord Spencer, was afterwards knighted, May 24, 1612. He re-built his manor-house of Yarnton and the tower of the Church, and "was famous in his time for the great hospitality he kept, his charity to the poor, and other excellent qualities." He was Sheriff of Oxfordshire in 1616, and paid £.100 to the Parliament as a composition for his estate. The title expired in 1684-5 with Sir Thomas the third Baronet.—See Collins, 1720, vol. I. p. 334.

⁸ Of whom see vol. I. p. 114.—Sackville, the present Earl of Thanet, is the tenth Baronet.

⁹ Of whom see p. 196.—The title became extinct with his son Thomas, the second Baronet.

¹⁰ See vol. I. p. 225.

¹¹ Sir Henry Baker had been knighted at Oatlands, July 15, 1606 (see p. 53). He was nephew to Sir Thomas Baker, of Wittingham, Suffolk, knighted May 11, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 118); whose second cousin was Sir Richard Baker the Chronicler (of whom *ibid.* p. 112).—The Baronetcy was soon extinct; of the family see Collins's Baronetage, 1720, vol. I. p. *321.

¹² Sir Roger Appleton died in 1614. His son was knighted June 27, 1613.—The title was extinct in 1720, or soon after. See Collins, 1720, vol. I. p. *326.

- 66. Sir William Sedley ¹, of Ailesford, Kent, Knight.
- 67. Sir William Twysden ², of East Peckham, Kent, Knight.
- 68. Sir Edward Hales ³, of Woodchurch, Kent, Knight.
- 69. William Monyns ⁴, of Waldersham, Kent, Esquire.
- 70. Sir Thomas Mildmay ⁵, of Moulsham Hall, Essex, Knight.
- 71. Sir William Maynard ⁶, of Easton Parva, Essex, Knight.
- 72. Henry Lee ⁷, of Quarendon, Buckinghamshire, Esquire.

On the 24th of September, the following were added to the rank:

- 73. Sir Robert Napier ⁸, of Luton Hoo, Bedfordshire, Knight.
- 74. Paul Bayning ⁹, of Bently Parva, Essex, Esquire.
- 75. Sir Thomas Temple ¹⁰, of Stow, Buckinghamshire, Knight.
- 76. Thomas Penyston ¹¹, of Leigh, Sussex, Esquire.

¹ Of whom see vol. I. p. 560.—The title became extinct with his son the celebrated Sir Charles Sedley the second Baronet; whose only legitimate child was mother of two illegitimate children by James II. Collins, 1720, vol. I. p. *327.

² See vol. I. p. 115.

³ Sir Edward Hales was Sheriff of Kent in 1608, served in several Parliaments, and was opposed to Charles I. He died in October 1654, aged 78, and is buried at Tunstall, Kent, under a noble marble monument, with his effigies. The present Sir Edward is the sixth Baronet.

⁴ The Baronetcy expired with his son the second Baronet. His daughter carried the estates to her husband Peregrine, second son of Montague second Earl of Lindsey. Collins, 1720, vol. I. p. 346.

⁵ See vol. I. p. 216. — Sir Thomas was now Gentleman Extraordinary of the Privy-chamber to Prince Henry. After his death his brother claimed the Barony of Fitzwalter, the Mildmays being descended from an heiress of that family.—Of the spreading family of Mildmay see p. 134.

⁶ See p. 246.—This Baronetcy expired in 1775 at the death of Charles sixth Baronet, sixth Baron and first Viscount Maynard, his more important honours devolving on the family of the present Viscount, which had been honoured with a Baronetcy in 1681. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. VI. p. 288.

⁷ Cousin and heir to Sir Henry Lee, K. G. the Champion of Queen Elizabeth (of whom see p. 209). —The Baronetcy became extinct in 1776 with Robert fourth Earl of Lichfield and eighth Baronet.

⁸ See vol. I. p. 519.—The title was renewed in 1660, but became extinct between 1720 and 1741.

⁹ Sir Paul was son of Paul Bayning, Sheriff of London in 1593; was created, Feb. 27, 1628, Baron Bayning of Horkesby, Essex; and March 8 following, Viscount Bayning of Sudbury, Suffolk. All these titles expired in 1638 with his son Paul, the second who enjoyed them. Brydges, IX. 463.

¹⁰ Sir Thomas Temple was ancestor to the present Duke of Buckingham, and is said to have been knighted at Sir John Fortescue's in June 1603, but his name does not occur under that date in Philipot's Catalogue of Knights. Fuller, in his Worthies, with much happy humour, asserts that his Lady, who survived him, having given birth to four sons and nine daughters, lived to see *seven hundred* descended from her! She died in 1656. Sir Grenville Temple, of Moorlands, Hampshire, is the ninth Baronet.

¹¹ Of whose family see Collins's Baronetage, 1720, vol. I. p. 355.—The title became extinct with Sir Thomas's grandson Fermadow the fourth Baronet.

“Upon Sunday the 29th of September, William Earle of Pembroke was sworne a Privie Counsellor at Hampton Court.”

In the Summer of 1611 Sir Robert Sherley¹ was employed by the Emperor of Persia as Ambassador to King James.—“The 2d of October,” says Howes, “he had audience at Hampton Court, where he delivered his letters and shewed his commission, all which purported the Persian’s great love and affection unto his Majestie, with hearty desire of amity with the King of Great Britain, with franke offer of free commerce unto all his Highnesse’ subjects throughout the Persian’s dominions.”

By the 6th of October, it appears that the King had removed from Hampton Court to Theobalds².

¹ Youngest son of Sir Thomas Sherley, of Wistenston or Wiston, Sussex; and younger brother of Sir Anthony. Of both these adventurous brothers see very fully in Nichols’s *Leicestershire*, vol. III. pp. 722—727. Sir Thomas, about sixteen years before this, says Howes, “betooke himselfe to tra-vaile, and served divers Christian Princes for the space of five yeeres, but chiefly under Rodulphus the Romaine Emperor, who employed him in Embassy, wherein he so discreetly and honorablie demeaned himself, that hee was made Earl [Count] of the Empire.” He was then introduced to the Persian Court by his brother Anthony, and “served the Persian ten yeeres very faithfully and valiantly against the Turke, and was by the Emperor made General of the Artillery.” His valour drew the envy of the Persian Lords and love of the Ladies, of whom Teresia, said to be “the daughter of Ismay Hawn, Prince of the Cittie Hercassia Major, whose sister was one of the Queenes of Persia,” after some opposition was married to him. The Persian employed him as Ambassador to several Princes, particularly to Rome in 1609, where he was treated with great magnificence and distinction. His wife Teresia now accompanied him into England, and gave birth to a son in this country; see p. 423. He returned to Persia after more than a year’s stay, leaving his son in England, and Howes gives an account of the voyage. He came a second time in 1623-4, but having quarelled with the Persian Ambassador, the King sent them both off together back to Persia, accompanied by Dr. Gough, a Senior Fellow of Trinity College, Cambridge, when the Persian Ambassador poisoned himself on the voyage, and Sir Robert Sherley, having reached the Persian Court, and not being able to obtain satisfaction, died of a broken heart, July 13, 1627, aged 63. A fine full-length Portrait of Sir Robert, in Persian costume, from a painting at Petworth, is engraved in Nichols’s *Leicestershire*, where other portraits of him are mentioned. “He much affected to appear in foreign vests; and, as if his clothes were his limbs, accounted himself never ready till he had something of the Persian habit about him.”

² Winwood’s *Memorials*, vol. III. p. 295.

The entrance into office of the Lord Mayor this year was celebrated by “Chryso-thriambos: the Triumphes of Golde; at the Inauguration of Sir James Pemberton, Knight, in the dignity of Lord Maier of London, on Tuesday the 29th of October 1611; performed in the hartly love, and at the charges of the right worshipfull, worthy, and ancient Company of Goldesmithes. Devised and written by A[nthony] M[unday], Citizen and Draper of London¹.”

On the 2d of November, Mr. Chamberlaine writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“The Spanish Ambassador went the last week to the King at Newmarket without acquainting any of the Council, which is thought somewhat a strange course².”

Teresia, the wife of Sir Robert Sherley³, the Persian Ambassador, having given birth to a son, on the 4th of November, that singular Adventurer, who had received great encouragement from the congenial spirit of Prince Henry, wrote the following Letter⁴, to request his Highness to do him the honour of being godfather to his new-born child:

“Most renownede Prince; The great honnors and favors it hath pleased your Highnes to use towards me hathe imbouldede me to wright thes fewe lyns, which shal be to beseeche your Highnes to Christen a sonn which God hath geven me. Your Highnes in this shal make your servant happy, whose whole londginge is to doe your Highnes some segniolated servis worthy to be esteemed in your Prinsly brest. I have not the pen of Sissero [Cicero]⁵; yet want I not menes to sownde your Highnesse's worthy prayses into the ears of forran Nattions and mighty Princes; and I assure myselfe your high-borne sperrit thirstes after Fame, the period of great Princes' ambissiones.

“And further, I will ever be your Highnes' most humbele and observaunt servant,

“To the high and myghty Prince of Wales.

ROBERT SHERLEY.

“London, this 4th of Nov. 1611.”

¹ Printed by William Jaggard, Printer to the City.—Of this Tract Mr. Bindley had a copy, which was sold Dec. 18, 1818, to Mr. Heber for £7. I have not yet obtained a transcript, but should I be favoured with one in time, it shall be printed in the Appendix to this Volume. ² Birch's MSS. 4173.

³ See p. 430. Of this Lady see further in Nichols's Leicestershire, vol. III. pp. 723—724.

⁴ From the Harl. MSS 7008. p. 73.

⁵ Sir Robert has been called “a famous General, but a wretched Scholar;”—he here confesses and proves it at the same time. “He had,” says Herbert, “a heart as free as any man; his patience was more philosophical than his intellect, having small acquaintance with the Muses. Many Cities he saw, many hills climbed over, and tasted many waters; yet Athens, Parnassus, Hippocrene, were strangers to him:—his notion prompted him to other employments.”

The Prince complied with Sir Robert's request, and gave the child his own name Henry, the Queen being godmother¹; and when, after Prince Henry's death, Sir Robert left England² in January 1612-13, the little son was bequeathed to the favour and care of her Majesty³.

On the 10th, the King made the following Knights at Whitehall:

Sir John Hobart ⁴ , of Norfolk.	Sir Gilbert Pickring ⁶ , of Northamptonsh.
Sir Lawrence Stoughton ⁵ , of Surrey.	Sir Edward Whorwood, of Staffordsh.
Sir Richard Bingley, of Yorkshire.	Sir John Hunt, of Leicestershire.

On the 13th, Mr. John More thus writes, from London, to Sir Ralph Winwood:

"On Munday morning his Majesty gave Audience to the Savoyard Ambassador, and immediately after his Majesty departed with Monsieur de Vitry towards Royston. Yesterday the Ambassador had conference with the Lords in the Councill-chamber. This day he is gone to Theobalds, where he sups with her Majesty this night, and to-morrow it is thought he will take his leave, and so give place to the Palsgrave of the Rhine, who by the best-affected is here wished for in good devotion⁷."

On the 20th, Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King is hunting at Newmarket; and the Queen practising for a new Masque⁸. The Ambassador of Savoy followed the King to Theobalds; or, as

¹ Howes.

² Before his departure he received a Free-gift of £.666.

³ Winwood's Memorials, III. 428.

⁴ The Hobarts were a numerous family in Norfolk. Of the Baronet of the same name see p. 423.

⁵ Manning and Bray (vol. I. p. 170) say Sir Thomas was knighted at Bagshot Sept. 1. He was elected M. P. for Guildford in 1584, 1585, and 1592, and died Dec. 13, 1615, aged 62. His son George was knighted July 3, 1616. See a pedigree of the family, which was honoured with a Baronetcy in 1660-1, in the History of Surrey; where is also a quibbling epitaph on Sir Lawrence and his wife Rose, celebrating the union of the "*Laurus florida, pulchra Rosa!*"

⁶ Sir Gilbert Pickering was of Tichmersh, is said to have taken an active part in apprehending the Gunpowder Conspirators, and died in 1612.—His son John was knighted Oct. 27, 1619. His grandson, of the same name, was created a Baronet of Nova Scotia. Bridges's Northamptonshire, vol. II. p. 383.

⁷ Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 301.

⁸ This was either an erroneous report, or the Masque was given up, or it has eluded my searches. As before remarked, "*Love freed from Ignorance and Folly*" is the last Masque Jonson wrote for her Majesty. About this time Jonson went abroad; one of his former Masques might be repeated, but then Mr. Chamberlain would be wrong in calling it *new*.

some say, to Royston. For aught I could learn he had but a cold answer; and yet the Duke his master was so confident, that he offered to come in person to conduct her¹. It is thought the breaking off of the Match in Spain marred this; otherwise they might have gone hand in hand. The Ambassador brought a present of a tame ounce or leopard, which had almost committed an unpardonable fault at Theobalds, having seized a white red-deer calf, nursed up there by a woman entertained for the purpose; and much there was to save the poor suckling²."

On the 21st of November, Sir Baptist Hickes³, on whose behalf, when put in nomination for the office of an Alderman of the City of London in December 1603, the King had addressed an especial Letter of request to Sir Robert Lee, then Lord Mayor⁴, experienced a repetition of the Royal interference⁵ by desir-

¹ His daughter, offered in marriage to Prince Henry. Of the different offers from Spain, Tuscany, Savoy, and France, see Birch's Life. The present was for a double marriage, between the Prince and the eldest daughter of Savoy, and between the Prince of Savoy and the Lady Elizabeth. Against this overture, which, as represented above, was very coolly received, Sir Walter Raleigh, then prisoner in the Tower, wrote two admirable Discourses, in which he has managed the subject with great extent of political reasoning and knowledge of history. They are printed in his Works.

² Birch's MSS. 4176.

³ Baptist Hickes, the son of a Mercer in Cheapside, being bred to his father's business, and having great dealings with the Court, was knighted July 24, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 227); created a Baronet July 4, 1620; and advanced to the Peerage May 3, 1628, as Baron Hickes of Ilmington, co. Warwick; and Viscount Campden of Campden, co. Gloucester, with remainder to his son-in-law Edward Lord Noel. He died October 20, 1629, without surviving male issue, and consequently Lord Noel succeeded to the title. He was a Justice of the Peace for Middlesex, and erected in 1613 an edifice in St. John's-street to be partly a Sessions-house and partly a Prison, which was named after him, Hickes's Hall. He also founded at Campden, Gloucestershire, an hospital for six poor men and as many poor women.—His eldest brother, William, had been created a Baronet in 1619, and his posterity is still remaining.

⁴ The King's Letter in 1603 has not been preserved; but it is referred to in the Letter of 1611, copied in vol. I. p. 336, from the Lansdowne MSS. and there erroneously dated 1604.

⁵ This appears from the following Letter from Sir Roger Aston to Sir Thomas Lake, and the subsequent proceedings of the Court of Aldermen, now first printed from the City Records:

"His Maiestie's pleasure signified to the Lord Maior and Aldermen concerninge Sir Baptist Hickes."

"Sir Thomas Lake; His Maiestie is informed that the Lord Maior and Aldermen have made election of Sir Baptist Hickes, his Maiestie's servaunt, to be an Alderman, which is contrarie to a Letter his Maiestie long since wrote unto them, willinge and requesting them to forbear either to nominate or chuse him thereunto for that time present, or anie time after; which notwithstandinge since that time they have made some shewe of theire purposes in that perticuler, which was stayed by the signification of his Maiestie's pleasure vnto them by my self in that behalf to the contrarie; and after also seconded by you by his Majestie's direcc'on to yourself upon the like occasion. And nowe at

ing that Sir Baptist Hickes might be excused from serving the office either of Alderman or Sheriff.

this present, vpon the renewinge of this busines, his Maiestie beinge therewith acquainted, his Maiestie's pleasure is, that you goe to the Lord Maior and Courte of Aldermen, and lett them knowe that his will and desire is, that the said Sir Baptist Hickes shalbe no further proceeded withall at this time nor hereafter; and the rather, for that he hath not spoken or moved them for anie in that kinde heretofore, nor meanes not toe doe hereafter. Nov. 13, 1611. Your loving Frinde, ROGER ASTON."

[Then follows the Letter from the King, which has been anticipated in vol. I. p. 336].

" Court of Aldermen, 21 November 1611; PEMBERTON, Mayor.

" Item, this day Sir Baptist Hickes, Knight, late elected Alderman of the Ward of Bread-street, upon sommons made his personall appearance in Court, and did first take the oath of allegiance and then the oath of an Alderman; the which (according to ancient order being performed) the said Sir Baptist Hickes did then put the Court in remembrance of a Lettre written in his behalf by the King's most excellent Majestie in the first yeare of his Highnes' raigne of England, and directed to the Lord Mayor and Aldermen of this Citie, thereby willing and requiring them, that presentlie they should take such order, as the said Sir Baptist Hickes (being his Majestie's servant) might not onely be forborne for that present time, both in nominacion and eleccion, for the said place of an Alderman, but also after the same time when the like occasion should be offered. And the said Sir Baptist Hickes did intimate and likewise put the Court in remembrance of the King's Majestie's pleasure sythence his eleccion to the place of an Alderman, lately signified to Sir Thomas Lake, Knight, one of the Clerks of his Majestie's Signett, by Lettre from Sir Roger Aston, Knight, one of his Majestie's Servants neere attending his Highnes' person, dated at Theobalds the thirteenth day of this instant month of November, thereby requiring Sir Thomas Lake to resort to this Court, and signifie that his Highnes' will and pleasure is, that the said Sir Baptist Hickes should be no further proceeded withall at this time nor hereafter, concerning the said place of an Alderman; and the rather, for that his Majestie hath not spoken or moved this Court for any in that kynd heretofore, nor meanes not to do hereafter. And therefore the said Sir Baptist Hickes desired this Court to dispence with him and discharge him from the same place of Alderman for this time and hereafter, which he doubted not but his Majestie would graciously accept; and he, the said Sir Baptist Hickes himself, did professe that he would acknowledge it an especiall favour done unto him. After which said relacion and request made by the said Sir Baptist, albeit this Court did conceive, and were of opinion, that Sir Baptist Hickes, after the wryting of his Majestie's Lettre, did, by an act of his owne, wayve the benefitt of his Majestie's Lettre written in his behalf, yet upon due and deliberate consideracion thereunto had, and specially to his Majestie's gracious pleasure, signified by Sir Roger Aston aforesaid, wherein he signifyeth that his Majestie meanes not to write for any other hereafter; and also in the regard of the discreet and respective behaviour of the said Sir Baptist Hickes in performing the dutie of a ffreeman in making his appearance and taking his oath in form aforesaid; this Court do freelie and lovinglie leave the said Sir Baptist Hickes to his owne free choise and eleccion, whether he will continue and hold the said place of an Alderman, yea or no. Whereupon, the said Sir Baptist Hickes, rendring great thancks to this Court, humbly prayed that he might be discharged of the office of Shirivaltie both nowe and hereafter, with protestacion, though he did not presentlie manifest what he entended towards this Citie, yet he doubted not but as God had enabled him and alreadie put in his heart, so

During December the King knighted, at Royston, Sir Thomas Wentworth¹, of Yorkshire; and Sir Augustine Pettus², of Norwich; and at Theobalds, Sir Ferdinando Hebburn, of Middlesex; Sir John Leveson³, of Kent; and Sir Henry Leigh.

About the middle of this month, Prince Henry lay at Woolwich, where he was superintending the arrangements for building ships in Ireland⁴.

On Christmas-day, the King attended Divine Service at Whitehall, and Bishop Andrews preached on John, i. 14⁵.

On the 29th of January, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Prince went on Saturday to Royston, called thither by the King from his martiall sports of Tilt, Tourney, and Barriers, which he followed so earnestly, that he was every day five or six times in armour⁶. The rest of the time was spent in gaming, and every night a play; in all which exercises the Lord Cranbourne attended him, keeping an honourable table all the while they were at Greenwich, and grows daily into his favour.

God would still continue his true affeccion and love to this Citie, and to do some memorable thing for the good of the same. And thereupon it is ordered by this Court, that the said Sir Baptist Hickes shalbe discharged, and this Court doth discharge him of the said place of Alderman of the said Ward of Bread-street and of all other Wards within this Citie for ever hereafter; and this Court hath also promised him to move the Common Councell for to discharge him also of the office of Shirivaltie of this Citie and Countie of Middlesex for ever hereafter. And it is nowe further ordered, that the Lord Mayor shall proceed to the nominacion of another Alderman for the said Ward of Bread-street in the roome and stead of the said Sir Baptist Hickes."—It appears that, "at a Common Council held Feb. 28, 1611-12, representation was made to them of Eleven Persons, of whom Sir Baptist Hickes, Mercer, was one, having by the Court of Aldermen been dispenced from the place of Alderman, and were recommended to the Court of Common Council to be likewise freed and discharged 'of and from the Office of Shreevaltie;' and that after advised consideration had and taken, the Court did not think fit suddenly to grant dispensation to so many worthy persons at one time, but took respite therein till the next Common Council, appointed to be holden on the Friday following. A Court was accordingly held on that day, but no measure taken on the subject; and it was not till the 8th of November 1613, that Sir Baptist Hickes was finally discharged by the Common Council from the office of Sheriff for ever." See hereafter, under that date.

¹ Afterwards the celebrated Earl of Strafford; whose history belongs to the next reign. He was eldest son of Sir William Wentworth, Bart. noticed in p. 424, was Sheriff of Yorkshire in 1625; was created Baron Wentworth in 1626; Earl of Strafford in 1639; and died on the scaffold May 29, 1641.

² See p. 135.

³ Sir John Leveson was now Gentleman in Ordinary of the Privy-chamber to Prince Henry.

⁴ See MS. Life of Phineas Pette, and Birch's Life of Prince Henry, pp. 257—268.

⁵ This Sermon is in the Bishop's "XCVI Sermons," the Sixth on the Nativity.

⁶ On this subject see particularly p. 418.

"The King is looked for here [Whitehall] this Candlemas. During his absence he hath been somewhat busy in writing somewhat in French against Vorstius¹."

January 29, the Earl of Dunbar died at Whitehall, "when he was about to solemnize magnificently his daughter's marriage with Lord Walden²;" and soon after the Viscount Rochester³ succeeded him as Lord High Treasurer of Scotland.

On the 12th of February, Mr. Chamberlain writes from Whitehall:

"The King is expected here on Friday. His Book was finished last week, but not published till this day, and that only in French⁴, the Latin and English copies being yet in the press. One hundred of them were sent away with all speed on Saturday to Sir Ralph Winwood, by whose means I could wish you had one. The Spanish Ambassador's sister and daughter-in-law, whom you met on Barham Down, went away last week towards Brussels without taking leave, or bidding the Queen farewell.—About the middle of March⁵ the Queen meaneth to go towards the Bath, and the Lord Treasurer and the Lord Chamberlain are said to have the same purpose, which will be a great hindrance to the ordinary customers of that place⁶."

On the 15th, the Ringers at St. Margaret's were paid 2s 6d. "at the King and Queen's coming from Royston to Greenwich."

On the 16th, Mr. Chamberlain says, "Before the Judges went out of town, they were called before the King, where, among other remembrances to be observed in their Circuits, they were charged to look diligently to the Oath of Allegiance, and to certify how the Justices of the Peace in all counties had dealt in it, according to the statute. On Friday Mrs. Vaux, the Lord Vaux's mother, was called at the Sessions at Newgate, and there for refusing that oath was con-

¹ Birch's MSS. 4173.

² See vol. I. p. 248.

³ "Now all addresses," says Wilson, "are made to Car; he is the Favorite in ordinary; no suit, no reward, but comes by him; his hand distributes, and his hand restrains; our supreme power works by second causes; the Lords themselves can scarce have a smile without him. And to give the greater lustre to his power, about this time the Earl of Dunbar, the King's old trusty servant (the Cabinet of his secret Counsels) died; so that he solely now took the most intimate of them into his charge, and the office of Lord High Treasurer of Scotland, which staff the other left behind him; and though it could be no great supporter, yet the credit of it carried some."—But Car did not reach the plenitude of his power, till the death of the wily Salisbury. That event took place May 24, 1612, not long after which date Car succeeded as Secretary of State.

⁴ Entitled, "Declaration sur les Actions divers des Estats Generaux des Pays Bas unis touchant le fait de Conrad Vorstius. London, 1612," 4to.

⁵ The Queen deferred her Visit to Bath till May 1613, under which date an account will be found of her Progress.

⁶ Birch's MSS. Brit. Mus. 4173.

demned, together with two others in her company, in a *præmunire* to lose all her goods during life, and to perpetual imprisonment¹.

"The same day one Legat, an Arian, being sentenced and excommunicated in the Consistory, was delivered over to the Sheriffs; but we hear not yet of his execution; but, he continuing obstinate and holding 13 heretical positions against the divinities of our Saviour Christ, the King would have the Archbishops proceed against him, and, though some Lawyers are of opinion that we have no law to execute heretics, and that whatsoever was done in that kind in Queen Elizabeth's times, was done *de facto*, and not *de jure*, yet he will adventure to burn² him with a good conscience³."

On the 17th, Mr. John More writes, from London, to Sir Ralph Winwood:

"This day the King comes from Theobalds to dyne with the Queen at Greenwich, and from thence to Whitehall this night.—Yesterday his Lordship [Salisbury] took a clister. The last night he slept very little, having a continuall ague, or, as some will have it, a double tertian, with a great pain in his head and much sweating. His Majesty hath visited him twice, and given charge to the Physicians upon their heads to be carefull of him, and commanded all men for four days to forbear to speak to his Lordship upon any business⁴."

On the 11th of March, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Lord Treasurer is so well recovered⁴, that he walks daily in his garden, and is thought will shortly remove to Kensington. He forsook the Court to be

¹ Mr. Chamberlain says, March 11, "The Lord Vaux was lately committed to the Fleet from the Council-table for refusing the oath of allegiance, and like enough to follow his mother's fortune in the *præmunire*." — Again on the 20th of May, "On Thursday last the Lord Vaux was condemned at the King's Bench in a *præmunire* for refusing the Oath of Allegiance, whereby he loseth all his goods and fee-simple lands for ever, and intailed lands for life; and likewise his liberty, being sent from the place prisoner to the King's Bench, though he made entreaty that it might be changed to the Fleet." Birch's MSS. 4173. — On the 3d of November 1612, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Mr. Winwood: "My Lord Vaux is pardoned his *præmunire*, and delivered out of the King's Bench or Fleet to the custody of the Dean of Westminster." Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 407.

² The King did "adventure." "On Wednesday the 18th of March, Bartholomew Legat, an obstinate Arian heretique, was burned in Smithfield. He refused all favour, and contemned all ecclesiastical government. And upon Easter-eeve, the 11th of Aprill following, William Wightman, another obstinate miscreant heretique, was burned at Litchfield, having likewise more favor offred him than hee had grace to accept." Howes.—Legat, says Mr. Chamberlain, March 25, "said little, but died obstinately."—See p. 449.

³ Birch MSS. Brit. Mus. 4173.

⁴ The Earl of Salisbury was, however, now labouring under his mortal illness; he died on the 24th of May following; see hereafter, p. 444.

more private at home; but he cannot avoid the perpetual visits that still follow him. The King and Prince were with him on Sunday, and the Queen every second day the last week.

"The Duke of Bouillon is expected here shortly, who is thought to have a double errand, as well from the Palatine of Rhine as from the Queen Regent¹. His coming hastens Sir Henry Wotton away, whose company of note is a son of the Lord William Howard, two sons of Sir Charles Cavendish, one Yorke; and Sir Robert Rich tarries for him in France. The presents he carries are ten light ambling geldings, with variety of saddles and rich furniture. They went away yesterday, conducted by Sir Peter Saltonstall, one of the King's Escuyers². There is likewise a rich sword with a hilt, pommel, and chape of gold, set full of diamonds to the value of £.16,000. Certain selected jewellers have so valued it³.

"Our prentices were very unruly on Shrove-Tuesday, and pulled down a house or two of good fellowship; in which service one or two of them came short home.

"The same day, the Prince, with Viscount Rochester, Sir Thomas Somerset, Sir Thomas Howard, Sir Edward Cecil, and one Ramsey⁴, on his side, ran a match at the ring for a supper, against the Duke of Lennox, the Lord Walden, the Lord Cranbourne, the Lord Chandos, the Lord Hay, and Mr. Henry Howard. The Prince won, and the Supper and Plays were made at the Marquess of Winchester's house⁵ on the Tuesday after.

"On Monday there was a great race or running at Croydon, where, by occasion of foul play or foul words, one Ramsey, a Scotsman⁶, struck the Earl of

¹ See p. 442.

² See vol. I. p. 577.

³ On the 25th, Mr. Chamberlain says, "Sir H. Wotton went away this day se'ennight with the rich sword, which by good chance he kept better than his own, that was stolen out of his chamber the night before he went away, with full appearance, as it would seem, that it was the right one."

⁴ Probably the same person as received Free-gifts of £.600 this and the following year (see p. 440), and probably also the same as soon after mentioned.

⁵ Near Broad-street, on the site of the Augustine Friary, London Wall. See "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. III. p. 598.

⁶ All the most respectable authorities, Wood's Douglas, Lodge's Illustrations, and Brydges's Peerage, say this was Viscount Hadington (as also has been said in p. 176, where for 1622 read 1611-12); still I cannot but think, both from Mr. Chamberlain above and Osborne in his Traditional Memoirs, calling the person "Ramsey" (Sir John Ramsey having been created Viscount Hadington in 1606), that this was "one Ramsey" of inferior rank, and probably the person mentioned in note 4. It must be observed that these authorities, however respectable, of course consulted each other, while Chamberlain and Osborne never could do so.

Montgomery with his riding-rod¹. Whereupon the whole company was ready to go together by the ears, and like enough to have made a national quarrel. But for want of weapons it was pacified²."

During the absence of Prince Henry, from St. James's the 14th of March, his Brother Charles addressed the following note "to his Highness:"

"Most loving Brother;

"I long to see you, and hope that you will returne shortly, therefore I have presumed to wreat these few lynes to you that I may rest in your favour, and ever bee thought your H.' most loving Brother and obedient servant, CHARLES³."

¹ That scandalous memoir-writer Osborne, in his account of this transaction, says, the English "did, upon this accident, draw together with a resolution to make it a national quarrel; so far as Mr. John Pinchbeck, though a maimed man, having but the perfect use of two fingers, rode about with his dagger in his hand, crying, 'Let us break our fast with them here, and dine with the rest in London!' But Herbert not offering to strike again, there was nothing lost but the reputation of a Gentleman; in lieu of which, if I am not mistaken, the King made him a Knight, a Baron, a Viscount, and an Earl, in one day." Osborne was wilfully misrepresenting, and therefore his caution;—how little faith is to be given to the scandal of this and some other slanderous Writers of the age! Sir Philip was never knighted; he was created K. B. in 1603, a Baronet and Earl in 1605; *the last promotion being seven years before this rencontre* (see vol. I. p. 510). A Viscount he never was;—it was however rumoured in 1604 that he would be made one (see vol. I. p. 222).

² Birch's MSS. 4173.

³ This short Letter, and the four pleasing billets which are subjoined, are printed in Mr. Ellis's valuable Collection, from the originals in the Harleian MSS. (See also before p. 268):

1. Sweet, sweet Brother; I thank yow for your Letter, I will keep it better than all my graith; and I will send my pistolles by Maister Newton. I will give anie thing that I have to yow, both horss, and my bookes, and my pieces and my cross bowes, or anie thing that you would haive. Good Brother, loove me; and I shall ever loove and serve yow. Your looving Brother to be commanded, YORKE."

This is perhaps one of his earliest Letters; the signature only being his.

2. "Sir; Please your H.; Your trustie Douglas will witnes what sport I have. He will acquaint you with my sutte, which I pray you moove to his M. So, kissing your handes, I rest your H. most duetiefull, YORKE.—To his Hienesse."

3. "Good Brother; I hope you are in good helth and merry, as I am, God be thanked. In your absence I visit somtimes your stable, and ride your great horses, that on your return I may wait on you in that noble exercise. So committing you to God, I rest, your loving and dutifull Brother, YORK.—To my Brother the Prince."

4. "Sir; Pleas your H. I doe keepe your haire in breath (and I have very good sport). I doe wish the King and you might see it. So longing to see you, I kisse your hand, and rest yours to be commanded, YORK.—My mayde's service to you.—To his Hienesse."



Free Gifts in the Ninth Year of the King's Reign, 1611-12.

To Robert Cunningham	-	£.80	The Earl of Marre ¹⁵ , for his	
John Eldred, and others	-	690	interest in the manors of	
The Earl of Downbarre ¹ , for			Hunden and Chipley, in	
relinquishing his grant of			com. Suff. now sold to the	
Logwood - - - -	2000		Lord Cavendish for £.15000	
Sir Robert Carre - - -	500		and given to the said Earl as	
More to him, for his interest in			his Majesty's Free-gift	- 15000
the manor of Sherborne			John Vachell - - -	- 100
lately given unto him ² -	20,000		More to Viscount Roches-	
The Lady Helen M'Carty ³ -	40		ter - - - -	5000
Sir Richard Martin ⁴ - -	300		Patrick Maulde ¹⁶ - - -	600
The Earl of Essex ⁵ - -	3000		Sir John Grahame - - -	220
The Lord Viscount Hadington ⁶	8000		John Barkley ¹⁷ - - -	100
The Earl of Montgomery ⁷ -	8000		Katherine Bridges ¹⁸ - -	100
The Lord Viscount Fenton ⁸ -	8000		Patrick Abercromby - -	40
The Lord Hay ⁹ - - -	8000		Duke of Mantua's Servants	- 40
Thomas Warwick ¹⁰ - - -	500		Marquis of Brandenburg's Servants	40
Sir Sigismond and H. Alexander ¹¹	100		John Murray, the Queen's Servant ¹⁹	228
Sir John Eyre ¹² - - -	500		John Howme - - -	50
Andrew Melvin - - -	60		Christian Schonero - - -	150
The Lord Knivet ¹³ - - -	500		The Lady Raleighe, for com-	
Sir William Lane - - -	50		position for Sherborne ²⁰ -	8000
William Ramsey ¹⁴ - - -	600			
William Stockdale - - -	80			
				<u>£.190,668</u>

¹ See pp. 191, 288.² See p. 416.³ The Lady Helen was daughter of Donald O'Sullivan More, of Dunkerron, (ancestor of the present Baronet of Thames Ditton, Surrey,) by his second wife, Joan, daughter of Patrick Fitzmorice, Baron of Lixnawe, co. Kerry. She was married to Fynen M'Cartie, of Gregort, co. Cork (Betham's Baronetage, vol. V. p. 561); but what claim this Lady had on the King does not appear.⁴ See p. 411.⁵ See p. 123.⁶ See p. 160.⁷ See p. 332.⁸ Of whom see vol. I. pp. 270, 312.—He had been sworn a Privy Counsellor Jan. 31, 1609-10. Howes.—He was also, says Lodge, Groom of the Stole. ⁹ See p. 103. ¹⁰ See p. 288. ¹¹ See p. 287.¹² Sir John Eyre, of Wiltshire, was knighted March 23, 1604-5 (see vol. I. p. 496).¹³ See p. 335.—He had a Free-gift of the same sum the next year.¹⁴ Who also received the same sum the next year.—See p. 438. ¹⁵ See vol. I. pp. 107, 426.¹⁶ Patrick Maulde again received £.600 the following year.¹⁷ See p. 247.¹⁸ Edward Bridges received £.150 the next year. ¹⁹ He received £.150 in 1614. ²⁰ See p. 416.

On the 25th of March, Mr. Chamberlain thus writes to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“ Sir Edward Cecil ¹ is gone over to the Low Countries to supply the Prince’s place of Godfather to a child of the Count Ernestus of Nassau of Arnheim, and carried with him a great present of plate ; because the Lady is daughter to the Queen’s Sister.

“ The King was much displeased with the accident that fell out at Croydon ², and had the whole matter and manner examined before himself. Whereupon Ramsey was committed to the Tower, where he is more visited than all the rest, great or small.

“ Yesterday, being the King’s day [of Accession], passed with ordinary running and ringing. The Lord North ³ had a mischance the day before, in practising with the Earl of Montgomery ; who breaking a staff upon him, some of the splinters ran into his arm, and have torn out the flesh and sinews very dangerously.

“ The other day the Bishop of Ely [Dr. Andrews] told me that the King knew of Marsilio’s ⁴ death long before he imparted it to him, as it might well be ; for his Lordship was not in town for a fortnight after he came ; and his Majesty is very desirous that his Panegyric Apology for him should not be lost. I made answer, that no doubt there was order given to you to inquire after it, and that I should not fail to touch and give you a notice of it by my next.

“ The Countess of Northumberland had access yesterday to the King about her Lord’s fine ⁵, which is now of late earnestly urged, and direction given how and where to levy it ; seeing he will take no order himself for his best advantage. She had gracious audience, and is in great hope of abating the best part of it ⁶.”

¹ Sir Edward Cecil has not hitherto been often mentioned, because he was chiefly in the Netherlands. He was the third son of the Earl of Exeter, born in 1571, and was accounted one of the most famous Generals of his time. It does not appear when he was knighted ; we have met with him in p. 438 as tilting with the Prince ; and shall in p. 447 as a mourner at the funeral of his uncle the Earl of Salisbury. He was Colonel of Foot in the Low Countries, and Marshal and General of the forces sent by James I. and Charles I. against the Spaniards and Imperialists ; and commanded the English Horse at the battle of Newport. He was created Baron Cecil of Putney in 1626, and Viscount Wimbledon the following year ; was made a Privy Councillor ; Lord Lieutenant of Surrey ; and Governor of Portsmouth. He died at Wimbledon, Nov. 16, 1638, aged 67. Of his three wives and family, see Brydges’s Peerage, vol. II. p. 602.

² See p. 438.

³ Of whom see p. 334.

⁴ Who had joined with the King against Cardinal Bellarmine.

⁵ On account of the Gunpowder Plot ; see vol. I. p. 583. — The Earl was not, however, released from the Tower until July 1621 ; see hereafter, under that date.

⁶ Birch’s MSS. 4173.

On the 4th of April, the King knighted, at Whitehall, three Baronets, who had not before received that honour. They were Sir Thomas Brudenell¹, and Sir Lewis Tresham², both of Northamptonshire; and Sir John Shelley³, of Sussex.

On the 9th, Sir Thomas Mechwoud, Chief Baron of Ireland, was knighted by the King at Theobalds.

On the 18th, being Easter Sunday, the King heard Bishop Andrews preach at Whitehall, on Col. iii. 12⁴; and on the 22d, the Favourite Rochester was advanced another step in honour, being "sworne a Privie Counsellor of Estate⁵."

On the 24th, Mr. John Barlee writes as follows to Sir Thomas:

"Now last night is the Duke of Bullyon arived att Dover in the way to London; Sir Lewis Lewknor did enterteyne him⁶. The wise Carre is a Counsellor of State to his Majestie, being thought fitt att five and twentye. I pray keape your hearte coole and your stomake unbuttoned, that yt sette you not a fire with noble emulation. He is also a Knight of the Garter; God be thanked, he hath learned the lesson how in grace and vertue to proceed! You know mee, Sir Thomas, I enveye no man's advancement, so they take nothing from poore Jacke Barlee⁷!"

On the 26th, James, the eldest son and heir to Lord D'Aubigny⁸, was christened at the Royal Chapel, Whitehall. The King was his Godfather. The Officers of the Vestry had to their fees £.40⁹.

¹ See p. 427.

² Ibid.

³ See p. 424.

⁴ The Sermon is in Bishop Andrews's "XCVI Sermons," the 5th on the Resurrection. ⁵ Howes.

⁶ He came to treat for a marriage between Prince Henry and Christina, sister of the King of France, Louis XIII., and second daughter of Henry IV. It was to the same Princess that James afterwards wished to marry Prince Charles. She was finally united to the Prince of Piedmont. "He went away yesterday, presented with plate to the value of £.4000, though unsuccessful in his business." Mr. Chamberlain's Letter, May 20.

⁷ Extracted from the original letter, Brit. Mus. Ayscough's Cat. 4161.

⁸ Esme Stuart, who had married in 1607 Catherine, daughter and heiress of Lord Clifton (of whom see p. 335). He was created Earl of March in 1619, and succeeded his brother as third Duke of Lennox in February 1623-4; but enjoyed the title little more than five months, when his son James, now christened, became fourth Duke. King James, his godfather, being the nearest heir male of the family then of age, was also, by the law of Scotland, his tutor and guardian. He appointed Commissioners for the management of his estates; took a particular charge of his education, and settled several considerable pensions on him and his mother. He was first sent to the University of Cambridge, and then into France, Italy, and Spain, and was made a Grandee of the latter Kingdom. He always enjoyed the favour of King Charles, being on his return created a Privy Councillor when scarcely 21; married to the only daughter of the Duke of Buckingham with £.20,000 portion; and created Duke of Richmond in 1641. He died, as is said, of grief for his Royal Master, March 30, 1655, at the early age of 42.—See Wood's Douglas. ⁹ Malcolm's London, vol. IV. p. 275.

On the 20th of May, Mr. Chamberlain thus writes to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“ There have happened two or three accidents of late very unlucky, that made some boiling 'twixt the Scots and our Nation. Maxwell, a Sewer or Gentleman Usher, upon very small occasion, plucked or pinched by the ear one Hawley¹, a Gentleman of the Temple, at the feasting of the Duke of Bouillon, that the blood flowed freshly ; who calling him to account for it the next day, by a challenge, the matter came to the King's notice, who understanding that all Inns of Court took alarm at the abuse, caused Hawley to be sent for. But he keeping out of the way, the King sent for the Benchers of the Temple, and told them, that if the Gentleman would come forth, and refer his cause to him, he would hear the matter himself, and do him all right and justice, and that he would not maintain any servant to do wrong ; and this he willed them to tell the rest of their company. Which was done at Lincoln's Inn by Mr. Attorney, and at Gray's Inn by Sir Francis Bacon². But the Gentleman absents himself still ; and the Scottishmen pluck in their horns, and are fain to absent themselves from plays, and from the nether parts of the town, and keep close about Charing Cross ; for that they find unruly youths apt to quarrel and ready to offer ill measure. And to mend the matter, on Monday was se'ennight, Turner the fencer was suddenly slain with a pistol, as he was drinking with certain Scots belonging to the Lord Sanquire, upon the old grudge of putting out his eye in playing with him at Ricot. The fellow that did the deed got away, and is not yet heard of ; and the Lord Sanquire played least in sight for three or four days ; but understanding that there was a Proclamation coming forth for his apprehension, on Thursday about noon he rendered himself to the Archbishop of Canterbury, and stood much upon his innocency. But the Proclamation was published that afternoon about 5 o'clock, wherein the King both showed his detestation of the fact, and promiseth £.500 to whomsoever should bring the Lord Sanquire alive, or £.300 dead ; and £.100 to him that should bring Carlisle the murderer alive, or £.50

¹ Sir F. Osborne, in his “ *Memoirs*,” p. 27, says, that Mr. Hawley was his intimate acquaintance.

² On this subject Mr. Chamberlain says, on the 27th, “ Yesterday the matter 'twixt Maxwell the Scot and Hawley of the Temple should have been compounded at the Earl of Worcester's house before the Lord Chamberlain, the Earl of Pembroke, with other Noblemen and Counsellors. Hawley came accompanied with more than 40 Gentlemen of his House, being promised the other should make him satisfaction on his knees. But when that came to the jump, Maxwell offered any satisfaction in words, but no kneeling. Whereupon they broke off abruptly, and so the matter rests.”—Of its final adjustment see p. 449.

dead. Upon Sunday, one Grey, a Scottishman, was brought from Harwich, where he was stopping for Denmark, who confesseth, that he was hired long since by the Lord Sanquire to do this murder; but not having the heart to do it, was now shifting away. Upon which confession and confronting of the party, together with other manifest proofs and circumstances, the Lord Sanquire was yesterday brought to confess the whole matter before the Council, and so was delivered over to the Judges to undergo the course of law, and was by them sent to the King's Bench. The King hath been much troubled and perplexed with these matters; and gave order that Turner's body should be privately buried, to avoid a concourse of people that might breed inconvenience. It is verily thought that Sanquire shall die, being a man nothing gracious among his own nation, and may be best spared¹. He was divorced from his Lady but the Saturday before; and yet upon his sending, she came to him yesterday, and would have accompanied him to the King's Bench, taking his cause to seeming very heartily."

May 24, two other Baronets, not having been knighted, received that honour at Whitehall. These were Sir Lionel Tollemache² and Sir Thomas Spencer³.

On the 27th, Mr. Chamberlain thus described, to Sir Dudley Carleton, the last moments of that great Statesman, the Earl of Salisbury:

"I am sorry I have no better subject to write of than the loss of such a friend as I know the late Lord Treasurer was to you, though his long languishing sickness gave cause enough to any that depended upon him to prepare and provide for the worst. Sunday before he died the King sent the Lord Hay to him with a diamond of £.400 for a token; the Prince likewise sent Sir John Holles⁴; who both returned with good hope, though in the opinion of most about him, he was *deploratus* long before. He found so little good in the Bath that he made all

¹ On the 2d of July, Mr. Chamberlain says, "The Lord Sanquire was arraigned on Saturday last, and confessed the indictment. He made a long confession of his fault, whereby he had so highly offended God, the King's Majesty, his own nation, and this where he did reside, the person whom he murdered, and those who had suffered and were cast away for his offence. Upon all which points he dilated at large, and so behaved himself there and on Monday at his execution, that he moved much commiseration; and yet he professed himself a Romish Catholic, and died resolutely, and as it seemed with great remorse. His body was taken down presently after he was dead, and carried away by the Lord Roxburgh, Lord Dingwall, &c. who took order to embalm it and send it to Scotland."—Lord Sanquhar has already appeared in p. 186, as performing at the Masque at Lord Hadington's Marriage.

² See p. 423.

³ See p. 428.

⁴ See p. 374.

the haste he could out of that suffocating sulphureous air, as he called it; though others think he hastened the faster homeward, to countermine his underminers; and, as he termed it, to cast dust in their eyes. As the case stands, it was best that he gave up the world; for they say, his friends fell from him apace, and some near about him; and, howsoever he had fared with his health, it is verily thought he would never have been himself again in power and credit. I never knew so great a man so soon and so generally censured; for men's tongues talk very liberally and freely; but how truly I cannot judge¹. He died on Sunday last, the 24th of this present, at Marlborough in the Parsonage-house, between one and two in the afternoon, as he was coming hitherward, and had his memory perfect to the last gasp, and prepared himself for it. But yet he looked not to have gone so suddenly, nor at the instant that he did. The news of his death was all over this town the next morning; and the King that was ready to go to Eltham², deferred it only till after dinner; and there tarries to the end of this

¹ Friends and enemies naturally give different opinions, as is proved by this and the following Letter of Mr. Finett.—Mr. John More, writing to Sir Ralph Winwood on the preceding 27th of February, declares that, “In this short time of his Lordship's weakness, almost all our great affairs are come to a stand, and his hand is already shrewdly missed; *carendo magis quàm fruendo quod bonum est perspicimus.*” Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 338.—Again, on the other hand, the Earl of Dorset, son of his predecessor, in a Letter to Sir Thomas Edmonds, “from Dorset House, June 22, 1612,” speaks somewhat harshly of his memory. “When great men die,” says he, “such is either their desert or the malice of people, or both together, as commonly they are ill-spoken of; and so is one that died but lately, more, I think, than ever any one was, and in more several kinds; and his death has wiped away the memory of other misdeeds, and, as it were, extinguished their faults, his being, if not greater, yet fresher in every man's mouth and memory.”—In conclusion, it may be observed, that the vast abilities of Cecil, as a Statesman, must be confessed by every impartial judge, nor can his artifice and dissimulation be denied; care only should be taken against believing all the reports of the scandalous Chroniclers of the age.—The character of the Earl given by Dr. Birch in his Historical View has been admired for its truth. See Brydges's Peerage, II. 487.

² The King, when at Greenwich, doubtless frequently extended his hunting excursions to Eltham Park, as he did with the King of Denmark in 1606 (see p. 61); but this is the first record I have found of his sleeping there. On this occasion, or some other this year, the Churchwardens “paid for ryngers when the King's Majestie came to lye at Ealtham, 12*d.*” Lysons's Environs, vol. IV. p. 416.—On this Mr. Lysons remarks, p. 399, “I have not been able to find that Eltham was visited by any of the Royal Family at a later period;” nor have I yet discovered any visit of King James later than this year. It is certain however, that his Majesty passed much of the summer of 1612 at this place; see Mr. Chamberlain's Letter in p. 449. It might have been recently fitted up for his reception as a hunting-box. In the Parish Register is recorded “Mr. Cornelius Orts, a Hollander, a servant unto the King for providing hawks, under Sir Anthony Pell [see p. 197], buried May 1, 1621.” Lysons, p. 410.—The Palace

week. The corps is carried the next way to Hatfield, where it shall be buried without any great pomp by his special appointment; for he hath allotted out but £.200 for his Funerals, and as much to the poor. His debts are said to be toward £.50,000, for which there will be good order taken, and leave the young Lord about £.6000 land¹."

Mr. Finett gives a more circumstantial account of the same interesting occurrences in the following Letter written on the 28th of May, to Mr. Trumbull the Resident at Brussels. It is dated Hatfield, and the writer² appears to have been attached to the suite of the Earl:

"We left London on the 27th of April, with small hopes and less likelihood that such a journey could profit, otherwise than in his Lordship's willingness (not the least part of cure in sickness) to undertake it. By the way of our six [five] nights' baytes³, (at Ditton⁴, my Lord Chandois's; Caussam⁵, my Lord Knowles's; Newbery, Mr. Doleman's⁶; Marlborough, Mr. Daniel's⁷; and Laycock⁸, my was doubtless a convenient appendage to Greenwich when the Court there was full. In 1649 it was valued at £.2754 for the materials by the Parliamentary Surveyors, and is thus described: "The capital mansion, called Eltham House," was built of brick, wood, stone, and timber—consisting of one fair chapel, one great hall, 36 rooms and offices below stairs, with two large cellars; and above stairs, 17 lodging rooms on the King's side, 12 on the Queen's side, and 9 on the Prince's side; and 78 rooms and offices round the Court-yard, which contained one acre of ground. None of the rooms were then furnished, except the Chapel and Hall. The house was reported to be much out of repair and untenable. It was sold to Nathaniel Rich, Esq. A small view was published by Stent in 1650. On the 22d of April 1656, Mr. Evelyn (author of "Sylva") "went to see his Majesty's House at Eltham, both Palace and Chapell in miserable ruines, the noble woods and park destroyed by Rich the Rebell." Evelyn's Memoirs, vol. I. p. 290. A compendium of Eltham Place is to be found in the Gentleman's Magazine, vol. XCII. i. 9.

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

² See p. 352.

³ This account of the Progress (so to call it) which the sick Lord Treasurer made to Bath is very curious, as illustrating the mode in which our ancestors (particularly if invalids) travelled to that Bethesda—in six days journey!

⁴ Ditton, in the parish of Stoke Poges, Buckinghamshire, was, says Lysons, in possession of the Crown in the reign of Elizabeth, and was afterwards the seat of Sir Ralph Winwood, who is said to have built the house. Lord Chandos might be a tenant either of the Crown or of the Ambassador. That that Nobleman lived as a "King" at his own Castle of Sudeley has been remarked in vol. I. 477.

⁵ Where the Queen was entertained for two days in April 1613; see hereafter.

⁶ Shaw Place; of which see vol. I. p. 266.

⁷ Probably the clergyman's where the Earl died (see p. 244).

⁸ Laycock Abbey was a nunnery founded by Ela Countess of Salisbury in 1232; and much of the ancient building still remains. See the Beauties of Wiltshire. Lady Stapylton was daughter and

Lady Stapylton's), his Lordship made many stops and shifts, from his coach to his litter, and to his chair, and all for that ease that lasted no longer than his imagination. The third of May he arrived at Bath, and upon his first tryals (wherein, as the rest, he spent once a day but one hour of tyme, and entred no further then the navell) he discovered such cheerfulness of humour, riddance of pains, recovery of sleep, increase of appetite, and decrease of swellings, as made our comforts grow to the proportion of our affections, and promise ourselves a cure of that, which hath since told us was incurable. After some few days' joy for such blessed effects, the disease that had taken truce not peace, began again to discover its malignant qualities, brought new melancholly faintings and other dangerous symptoms so frequent, as the intermissions that happened are interpreted but for *lucida intervalla*. The bath was no more used (as that which had afforded the utmost virtue it had, in making a kindly issue in his leg for the drayne of the humour), but was thenceforth in the speculation of his Lordship's then attending Physicians, Dr. Atkins and Dr. Poe, held hurtfull rather than profitable. So, after some sixteen days' abode there, and three or four severall affrightings that we should there have lost him, his Lordship was resolved to return towards London with all his weakness; and so did the Thursday before the Sunday (the 24th of May) that he died at Marlborough. His sickness, that was (as your Lordship must have heard) hydropsical, or rather scorbutical¹, as they term it, had been long and painfully lingring. In all that time his incomparable judgment and memory never failed him (now and then only nearest his end, and in the extremities of his fits letting fall some wandring words, but far from distracted passion, or any way offending); his soul and mind for heavenly resolutions so settled, and his profession that way, expressed in often conferences and prayers

coheir of Sir Henry Sherrington, of Laycock, Knt. (to whose family the Abbey was granted at its dissolution), and, by marriage with John Talbot, of Salwarp, Worcestershire, Esquire, (who had been recommended as a husband to her by Queen Elizabeth in a Letter printed in that Sovereign's "Progresses," vol. II. p. 628,) had carried Laycock into that family. She was now married, secondly, to Sir Robert Stapylton, of Wighill, in the Aynsty of York, Knt. (whose grandson Sir Henry Stapylton, of Myton, Yorkshire, was created a Baronet in 1660. See Collins's Baronetage, 1741, vol. III. p. 54).—Lady Stapylton probably now held Laycock during the minority of her son Sherrington Talbot, Esq. ancestor of the present Earl Talbot. See Brydges, vol. V. p. 231. From Laycock to Bath was the Earl of Salisbury's Sabbath-day's journey, after a Sermon from Mr. Bowles (of whom next page); he again slept at Laycock on his way back the 21st and 22d of May.

¹ Dr. Mayerne pronounced it a complication of dropsy and scurvy. See Winwood, vol. III. p. 363.

with Mr. Bowles his Houshold Chaplain¹, so clear and Christian, as brought joy in our sorrow, and in our greatest discomforts full assurance of his best happiness².

"I must not forget to tell your Lordship, that the day before our departure from Bath my Lord Hay arrived there, sent purposely from his Majesty (who not long before had received some hopeful likelihood of his recovery) with a token, a fair diamond, set or rather hung square in a gold ring without a foyle, and a message accompanying it to this purpose: that the favour and affection he bore him was and should be ever, as the form and matter of that ring, endless, pure, and most perfect. From the Queen he received by the same hand another gracious message and a token, and at the same time the like remembrance from the Prince's Highness delivered by Sir John Holles; all comforts and confirmations of his never otherwise then most faithfull and best-deserving service.

"My Lord of Cranbourne (now Earl of Salisbury) posted down upon the news of his irrecoverable estate, having been in obedience of my Lord's pleasure till then absent, and had the unhappy happiness of a son, to be at the closing of the eyes of his most happy father. The body is this day brought, with the attendance all the way of some thirty or forty of us his servants, to Hatfield, where the Funerall, according to his will, is at fit time to be solempnized³."

On the 31st of May, being Whitsunday, Bishop Andrews preached before the King at Whitehall, on Acts xix. 1, 2, 3⁴.

¹ This same Mr. John Bowles, afterwards Bishop of Rochester, wrote to Dr. Mountague, then Bishop of Bath and Wells, "a plaine and true relation of those thinges I observed in my Lord's sickness, since his going to Bath." This account, which may be called an amplification of Mr. Finett's, is printed in Peck's *Desiderata*, pp. 205 *et seq.*—Soon after the Earl's death was published, "A Remembrance of the honors due to the Life and Death of Robert Earle of Salisbury, Lord Treasurer of England, &c. Imprinted at London for John Wright, and are to bee sold at his shop neere Christ Church-dore, 1612." *Black Letter*. This is written partly in prose and partly in verse; a portrait of the Earl is prefixed. A copy is in the Bodleian Library. Mr. Beloe (*Anecd. of Lit.* vol. II. p. 262) mentions an imperfect copy in the possession of the Bishop of Rochester.—The author was Richard Johnson, who published, "The Nine Worthies of London," 1592 (of which see the *Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica*); "The Pleasant Walks of Moorfields," 1607; and "A Crown Garland, or Lives of Personages of honour of this land," 1612. The two last are also in the Bodleian Library.

² He is said to have declared to Sir Walter Cope, that "Ease and pleasure quake to hear of death; but my life, full of cares and miseries, desireth to be dissolved."

³ Winwood's *Memorials*, vol. III. p. 367.

⁴ The Bishop's Discourse is in his "XCVI Sermons," the Fifth on the sending of the Holy Ghost.

On the 11th of June, Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton, giving an account of the Earl of Salisbury's Funeral, &c.:

"On Tuesday the late Lord Treasurer's Funeral was solemnized at Hatfield. The Lord Privy Seal, Lord Chamberlain, Lord of Worcester, Lord of Pembroke, Lord of Exeter, young Lord St. John, Lord Clifford, Lord Burghley, Lord Denny, Lord Hay, Sir Edward Cecil, the Master of Rolls, the Chancellor of the Exchequer, Mr. Attorney and Mr. Solicitor General, were all mourners, except [besides] the Executors and household servants.

"The King is much troubled with the multitude of competitors for the Secretaryship; but in this distraction makes no haste to nominate any, but says he is skilled in the craft himself, and till he be thoroughly weary, will execute it in person!

"On Whitsun-eve there were foure Priests hung at Tyburne, who died very confidently, and were suffered to talk their full; but whose fault it was I know not; but sure it was not well¹. They had been banished twice at least, but would take no warning. The Earl of Arundel, with his young son, were present at the execution; and the Viscount Montacute with divers Ladies and Gentlemen in coaches; and yet they were hanged early, between six and seven in the morning.

"Hawley and Maxwell² are finally made friends by the King's appointment, who sent for Hawley, and, after conference with him, gave order that it should be done in the Council-chamber before the Duke of Lennox, the Earls of Suffolk, Northampton, and Worcester; where Maxwell, because he could not read, repeated a word of satisfaction after the Earl of Northampton; and in saying he asked him forgiveness on his knees, bowed himself and his knee towards him; which was accepted, though at first with some difficulty. It seems the Scottishmen were bodily afraid, for we heard of about 300 that passed through Ware towards Scotland within ten days³!"

¹ Tolerance in religion was no part of the creed of James and his Court, as has been before displayed in p. 437.

² See p. 442.

³ Inclosed in this Letter were found the following lines upon the Scots:

"They beg our goods, our lands, and our lives;
They whip our Nobles, and lie with our Wives;
They pinch our Gentry, and send for our Benchers;
They stab our Serjeants, and pistol our Fencers.
Leave off, proud Scots, thus to undo us,
Lest we make you as poor as when you came to us!"

Birch's MSS. 4173.

An incorrect and incomplete copy of these verses is printed in Osborne's Traditional Memorials of King James. — They allude to Ramsey, (apparently to) Car, Maxwell, another unknown, and Sanquhar.

On the 17th of June, Mr. Chamberlain in another Letter to Sir Dudley says:

"The King hath been coming and going to Eltham¹ all the last week. He went thither on Saturday and came back on Monday; and yesterday went thither again; and is this night to lie at Wanstead, which house the Master of the Rolls² hath taken, and entertained him there with the charge, it is said, of £.700. From thence he goes to Havering³, which is in the custody of the Countess of Oxford⁴, who entertains him likewise at her own charge. But, for all his pleasure, he forgets not business, but hath found the art of frustrating men's expectation, and holding them in suspence. The King himself supplies the Secretary's place; and all packets are delivered to the Lord Chamberlain, and so to the King⁵."

"About the middle of June," says Mr. Phineas Pette, "by the commandment of Prince Henry, I began to make ready a frame for a small new shipp, which was to be as a pinnace to the great shipp the *Prince*, in which the Prince's Highness did purpose to solace himself sometimes into the Narrow Seas; and therefore she was appoynted to be fitted with a very roomy cabbin, and all other accommodations for that purpose. The keel of which shipp was laid in the launching place at the Old Dock at Chatham the last day of June, being in length 72 foote, in breadth 24 foot, and draw 11 foot water, of the burden of 250 tunns and tunnage, or thereabouts⁶."

The King now began an extensive Progress, the following Gests of which were previously transmitted by the Earl of Suffolk, as Lord Chamberlain, to the Mayor of Leicester, and other Towns or seats which the King intended to visit⁷:

¹ See p. 445.

² Sir Edward Philips, of whom see vol. I. p. 207.—Of a former visit of the King to Wanstead in September 1607, see p. 154.—He was very frequently there during the latter years of his reign.

³ This is only the second time we have had any account of King James visiting this favourite resort of Queen Elizabeth.—See vol. I. p. 518.—He was there again in September 1613 and July 13, 1615.

⁴ Diana, second daughter of William Earl of Exeter, widow of Edward Vere, 17th Earl of Oxford; "one of the most eminent beauties and fortunes of the time." Jan. 6, 1612-13, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Ralph Winwood: "The Countess of Oxford is dead of this New Disease [to which Prince Henry had fallen a sacrifice], and left her son [the 18th Earl, of whom see p. 341] towards £.1500 land, all her jewels and stuff, on condition he pay her legacies, which rise to £.2000, and bestow £.500 on a tomb for her father and her." Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 422.

⁵ Birch's MSS. 4173.

⁶ MS. Life of Phineas Pette, Harl. MSS. 6279.

⁷ This table I have obtained from the Records of the Corporation of Leicester, through the kindness of Mr. J. Stockdale Hardy, who has likewise favoured me with some important additional particulars respecting the King's Entertainments in that Town. Similar tables have been printed in vol. I. pp. 250, 517, and others of the Progresses of 1614, 1616, and 1617, will be found under their dates.

"THE KING'S MAJESTY'S PROGRESS.

				Nights.
" Monday, July 20.	From Theobalds to St. Alban's	-	-	1
Tuesday 21.	From St. Alban's to Wrest	-	-	3
Friday 24.	From Wrest to Bletsoe	-	-	3
Monday 27.	From Bletsoe to Ashby	-	-	3
Thursday 30.	From Ashby to Kirby	-	-	4
Monday, August 3.	From Kirby to Apthorp	-	-	3
Thursday 6.	From Apthorp to Brooke	-	-	1
Friday 7.	From Brooke to Belvoir	-	-	3
Monday 10.	From Belvoir to Newarke	-	-	1
Tuesday 11.	From Newark to Rufford	-	-	3
Friday 14.	From Rufford to Newstead	-	-	3
Monday 17.	From Newstead to Nottingham	-	-	1
Tuesday 18.	From Nottingham to Loughborough	-	-	1
Wednesday 19.	From Loughborough to Leicester	-	-	2
Friday 21.	From Leicester to Dingley	-	-	1
Saturday 22.	From Dingley to Holmby	-	-	2
Monday 24.	From Holmby to Grafton	-	-	3
Thursday 27.	From Grafton to Hanwell	-	-	1
Friday 28.	From Hanwell to Woodstock	-	-	5
Wednesday, September 2.	From Woodstock to Ricot	-	-	1
Thursday 3.	From Ricot to Bisham	-	-	1

(Signed) T. SUFFOLKE."

On the 20th of July ¹, the King left Theobalds and proceeded to St. Alban's;

¹ The following extract from the Register of St. Mary's, Reading, given in Coates's History, p. 131, must be erroneous in its date: "1612. Item, to the Ringers when the King came thc rowe the Towne, the 20 of Julie, 7s."—Though the King had stables, and what Camden calls a Royal Palace, at Reading, this is the only record I find of his being there. Queen Anne "came through the Towne" once in 1604, when the Ringers, says Coates, were paid 18s. When she was there in 1613 (see hereafter), provision was made for her stay at "the Friers." This was the same place which Camden calls a Royal Palace, it being a Franciscan Friary of Canons Minor, originally built on some waste ground near the road leading to Caversham, and "turned at the Dissolution into a Royal Palace with a fine range of stables adjoining, furnished with excellent horses for the King's use." The Church was granted to the Corporation for their Town-hall; it is now the Borough Prison. Coates says the house and premises were granted to Robert Stanshawe, one of the Grooms of the Bed-chamber, and enumerates successive possessors; who were probably all attendants on the Court. Several

but I have not discovered whether he slept in the Town¹, or at Sir Francis Bacon's at Gorhambury².

The following day, July 21, his Majesty removed to Wrest³, the seat of Henry Grey, seventh Earl of Kent⁴; where he remained three nights.

visits to Reading of Henry the Eighth and his Successors, are enumerated in "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. I. p. 599. That Princess was at least six times there, in 1568, 1572, 1575, 1576, 1592, and 1601. See Coates's Reading, p. 20, and the Queen's "Progresses," *suprà*. That the Royal stables at Reading were kept up in James's reign appears from Sparke's Declaration of his Majesty's Revenew, where we find a payment "To John Braig, Keeper of the Stables at Reading, 8*d.* by the day, by the year £.12. 3*s.* 4*d.* [Similar salaries were allowed to the Keepers of the stables at St. Alban's, and Hampton Court. The Keeper of the Mewes in London received £.24.] — The reputed owner of the Friars in the 12th of James I. was John Carleton, Esq. In 1625, when, on account of the prevalence of the Plague in London, Michaelmas Term was kept at Reading, "the Lord Treasurer and the King's Attorney were lodged at the Fryers, in Mr. John Saunders's house."

¹ Through the kindness of James Brown, Esq. of St. Alban's, I have ascertained that no mention of any Royal Visit is made in the Registers of St. Peter's, and those of the Abbey Church were burnt with the Parsonage-house about 1742. — As mentioned in the last note, there were Royal Stables at St. Alban's, whereof Ralph More was Keeper.

* It is highly probable that during the prosperity of the great Bacon the King several times visited Gorhambury, but I cannot speak with certainty of any visit.—Queen Elizabeth was frequently entertained there, particularly in 1572, 1573, 1576 (March 26 she there granted a charter to the Town of Daventry, co. Northampton), and 1577. See her "Progresses," vol. I. p. 602.

³ This house is still standing, the seat of Amabella Hume, Countess de Grey; but in its present state retains little appearance of antiquity, having at various times been altered and modernized. A view of it is engraven in Neale's Seats. "The old Dining-room, which is said to have been furnished for the reception of Anne of Denmark, is very curious, decorated with mock pilasters, finished with stripes of velvet, and worked silk festoons between each." Among the numerous and valuable paintings described in Pennant's Tour, pp. 383 *et seq.* are three very fine portraits,—of King James in his robes; Queen Anne in white, with a hoop, feather-fan, and neck exposed; and Prince Henry in rich armour, boots, and with a truncheon.

⁴ Who succeeded his brother Reginald the fourth Earl, March 17, 1572-3. That Nobleman by his frugality had been enabled to re-assume the title, which had lain dormant since his grandfather's death, and Earl Henry was equally prudent. Under these circumstances we may suppose that a Royal Visit of three days' duration could not have been very acceptable. Besides, the Earl was one of the Peers commissioned for the trial of the King's mother, and had "shewn more zeal for her destruction than befitted a person of honour." (The particulars of his violent conduct on this occasion are related in Pennant's Tour from Chester, p. 393.) Add to this he was now labouring under the infirmities of age, for, as far back as July 9, 1603, we find that he wrote from his house at Blomham to the Earl of Shrewsbury, requesting "that his attendance at the Coronation may be dispensed with, on account of his age, and other infirmities." (Unpublished Talbot Papers, K. 90.) All this accounts for his name not having hitherto been very conspicuous in these volumes. A very loyal letter which he

On the 24th, he was again ¹ received at Bletsoe; where he also slept three nights.

The next remove was on the 27th, to Castle Ashby ², the seat of Lord Compton ³; "from the Court" at which place, on the 30th, Mr. Rowland Whyte thus writes to Sir Thomas Edmonds:

"There is a purpose to put down all the great tables at Court, without any manner of allowance in lieu of it. Some speak of the meaner tables also; but men will not be able to attend without meat and drink, or some allowance for it. Men speak that there will be a cessation of the payments of all pensions and annuities for one year, and the Commission is a renewing for the creation of Baronets ⁴. All care is taken by the six Commissioners that execute the office of Lord Treasurer, to put the King out of debt, and to fill his Majestie's coffers, which God grant may be done to his Majestie's contentment!

"The Court as yet is very small; but the Prince is looked for at Belvoir Castle, which will increase his Train. The Queen and the Lords who will not be with the King, are to come to Woodstock, which will be about the end of August, at which time it is thought there will be a resolution about a Principal Secretary ⁵."

Having left Castle Ashby on the 30th, the Royal Traveller proceeded to Kirby ⁶

wrote from Wrest to the Earl of Shrewsbury, March 25, 1606, on occasion of the King's reported assassination, has been printed in p. 41. He died s. p. Jan. 31, 1614-15, and was succeeded by his brother Charles. He has a noble monument in a chapel which he built adjoining to Flitton (his parish) Church, with effigies of himself and Countess in their robes. A full-length portrait of him, dressed in black, is preserved at Wrest, at the head of a long series of his family. — See further of them in the History of Leicestershire, vol. IV. p. 457.

¹ Of former Royal Visits to Bletsoe see p. 203; and others hereafter in 1616, 1619, and 1621, always about this time in July; a similar one in July 1614 was prevented by the unexpected arrival of the King of Denmark, whom King James returned to meet;—see under that date.

² Where the King and Queen had spent three days in August 1605; see vol. I. p. 526.—The King's Visit in 1614 was interrupted by the cause assigned in the last note; but he was three days there in July 1616; three in July 1619; again in July 1621; and July 1624.

³ Of whom see vol. I. p. 477; and this Volume, p. 287.

⁴ Seventeen were created November 25 this year; see p. 490.

⁵ Birch's MSS. 1764.

⁶ Of this Elizabethan mansion, the residence of Queen Anne for three days in August 1605, see vol. I. p. 525. Kirby was formerly esteemed one of the best-furnished houses in the Kingdom; but, though still in the Hatton family, it is now dismantled and going fast to decay, the furniture, including a fine collection of paintings, statues, &c. having been sold. Among the pictures, when Bridges wrote, was a full-length of Sir Christopher Hatton the Lord Chancellor, and a view of Kirby in his time, with him in his coach returning home. Among many curious MSS. was a list of the Knights

near Rockingham, the seat of Sir Christopher Hatton, K. B.¹ Here he stayed four nights, a longer Visit than to any other place, but perhaps occasioned by the intervening Sunday.

On the first of August, Mr. George Calvert² writes, as follows, to Sir Thomas Edmonds respecting the Favourite Rochester:

“My Lord; You know the *Primum Mobile* of our Court, by whose motion all the other spheres must move, or else stand still; the bright Sun of our firmament, at whose splendour or glooming all our marygolds of the Court open or shut. In his Conjunction all the other Stars are prosperous, and in his Opposition mal-ominous. There are, in higher spheres, as great as he; but none so glorious. All this is no news to you. To leave allegories, — the King is in Progress, and we are too far from the Court now to hear certainties. It is told me that my Lord of Pembroke and my Lord of Rochester are so far out, as it is almost come to a quarrell; I know not how true this is, but Sir Thomas Overbury and my Lord of Pembroke have been long jarring, and therefore the other is likely³.”

Sir Charles Cornwallis refers the beginning of Prince Henry's fatal illness to about this period:

“In the 19th yeare of his age, whether by his continuall toil of body and minde, or some internall unknowne causes I know not, where before he was of somewhat a full round face and very pleasant disposition, his visage began to appeare somewhat paler, longer, and thinner than before, he himselfe being also more sad and retired than usuall, yet without any complaint of him, or jealousie of his followers, save that some halfe a yeare after, he would now and then complaine of a small kind of giddy lumpish heavinesse in his forehead; the paine whereof moved him, as I thinke, for the most part, ever before he would put on his hat, to stroke up with his hand his brow and forehead; he did also use to bleed at the nose often, and in great quantitie, wherein he found great ease, untill a little before his sicknesse, the passages being stopped, this helpe, to his further grieve, left him. He was now subject to many strong and extraordinary qualmes, made by James I. History of Northamptonshire, vol. II. p. 315.—The King visited Kirby again on the 29th of July 1616 and 1619; a visit he was to have paid on that day in 1614 was, with those to Bletsoe and Castle Ashby, prevented by his return to London to entertain his Danish brother-in-law.

¹ See vol. I. p. 525.

² One of the five Clerks of the Council with a salary of £.50; afterwards Secretary of State; and subsequently an Irish Peer by the title of Baron Baltimore. See under the date of Feb. 10, 1618-19.

³ Birch's MSS. 4176.—The rival favourites were reconciled some months after; see p. 490.

so that for danger and celerity they were forced many times to fetch him again with strong waters, which being onely by intermission now and then, were let passe as they came, without any suspicion of so suddaine sorrowes.

“Much about the beginning of this summer there could almost be no newes heard but of his Sister's marriage, of which many speeches went currant, according to the divers affections of Protestants and Papists; some wishing her to be married to the King of Spaine, some to the Prince of Savoy, some to the young Landsgrave, and some to his Highnesse the Palsgrave, her now husband. But he, following the streame of his father's well-settled affections for Great Britain's eternal felicity and terrour of all Papists, did onely fancy the Palsgrave's motion, shortly after advancing the same by all meanes possible at the comming of the Right Honourable the Count Hanaw¹, the Palsgrave's great Ambassador, whose errand, as the speech went, was to knit up this match, unto whose suit his Highnesse did not onely give way and second the businesse, but also in sign of love entertaine and countenance the said Count (next unto his Majesty) more than any, never resting till all was agreed, as (thankes be to God) it is now finished².

“Matters now being at rest, the Duke of Bouillon³ and Count Hanaw having returned home againe, his Highnesse removed to Richmond, where he lay untill the Progresse; the pleasure of the river running close by the house, inviting him now and then to swimme, which he endeavoured to learne in the evening, to the dislike of many, who did see him swimme after supper, his stomach being full, affirming it to be full of danger⁴, and that it was needlesse for him to adventure himselfe in the water; but no remedy, he would needs continue the same, and did untill his removing from thence. He did now also delight many times to walke late at night by the river's side in the moone-light, to heare the trumpets sound an eccho, which many suspected, because the dew then falling did him small good.”

As the Prince intended shortly to leave Richmond to join his Royal Father,

¹ The Count Hanaw was in Holland in 1612, on his way to England. Winwood, vol. III. p. 420.

² “Henry's extreme zeal for this Match arose from his hatred to Popery. He is said to have harboured some intentions of going privately abroad; and, by the aid of Count Maurice, doing some exploit against the Count Palatine's enemies. Another purpose of the expedition is said to have been a desire to see the daughter of Hesse. Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 410.”—That he intended to accompany his sister Mr. Chamberlain attests in p. 489.

³ See p. 442.

⁴ “His frequent swimming immediately after supper, was most pernicious to his health; for it stopt his bleeding at the nose; whereupon the bloud putrifying, engendered that fatall fever which followed.” Doctor Mayerne.

“ his servant Mr. Pette, the Shipwright, made a journey thither on Saturday the first of August, from Chatham, accompanied with Captain Thomas King, and Mr. John Reynolds, Master-gunner to his Highness. The next day, being Sunday, Mr. Pette waited to Chapel and to dinner upon the Prince, who had that day appointed a great deal of private conference with Mr. Pette concerning affairs of consequence. After his Highness had risen from dinner, and had talked with him for a while at the bay-window in the Presence-chamber, he gavé Mr. Pette leave to go to his dinner, which was prepared for him and his company by Mr. Alexander ¹, the Principal Gentleman Usher, at the House of Mr. Wilson, his Highness's taylor. During the dinner Mr. Pette was sent for three several times by the Prince, who wanted satisfaction in some points, and ordered him to attend again after he had finished his dinner, between two and three of the clock. At that time his Highness delivered his pleasure fully to him, with protestation of the trust which he reposed in him, and the good opinion he had of Mr. Pette's performance of what was committed to his charge, and with many expressions of his favour and intentions to provide for him, concluding with these words: ‘Go on chearfully in that which I intrust you with, and let not the care for your posterity incumber you any ways; for you shall leave the care both of yourself and them to me, who have a purpose carefully to provide for you.’ These gracious speeches made such an impression on Mr. Pette, that when he came to kiss the Prince's hand at parting, he could not avoid shedding some tears; though he then little thought that this would be the last time he should see his Highness alive, or these the last words that he should hear from his mouth ².”

¹ Walter Alexander; he had a salary of £.20 and diet.

² MS Life of Phineas Pette, Harl. MSS. 6279.—The following account of an Entertainment given by Mr. Pette soon after to the Prince's servants at Chatham, is not so irrevalent to the subject of this Work but that it may be here quoted: “At the time of our being at Richmond,” Master Phineas continues, “it was concluded by Mr. Alexander and some others of the Prince's servants (not without his Highness' knowledge) to come to Chatham [Mr. Pette had removed thither from Woolwich in Oct. 1610] with their wives to be merry; and it was agreed alsoe that we would fetch them to Chatham in our pinnaces to go round about by water; which accordingly was by us performed. Upon the 12th day of August we imbarqued them at Greenwich, about five of the clock in the morning, to the number of some twenty persons, men and women, being provided of all manner of victualls and store of wine for our passage. And by six at night we arrived at Chatham, where they were entertained at supper and lodged with me, as many as we could receive; the rest were billeted with Mr. Legatt [the Clerk of the Cheque], and other neighbours. They were entertained by none but the Prince's servants. The first day I feasted all the company; the second day they were feasted

To return to the King's Progress: On leaving Kirby on the third of August, he proceeded through the Forest of Rockingham to Sir Walter Mildmay's at Apthorp. At this hospitable and favourite mansion, to the enlargement of which he contributed ¹, he stayed three nights, including the Gowry Anniversary, of which in this year I find no particulars.

From Apthorp the Royal route was to Brooke², about two miles on the Apthorp side of Oakham. Here his Majesty was entertained by Sir Edward Noel, Baronet, whom a few years after he created a Baron³.

After one night's rest at Brooke, on the seventh of August the King rode to Belvoir Castle, where he was joined by his Son Henry the following day.

"The time of the Progresse now approaching," continues Sir Charles Cornwallis, "when Prince Henry, as he was commanded, must needs meet the King his Father at Beaver Castle in Nottinghamshire⁴, the second Saturday⁵ after the beginning of the same; which now drawing neere, his Highnesse neither considering the

with great Royalty on board the great shipp the Prince, dinner and supper, accompanied with the Principal Officers of his Majestie's Navy; where the King's, Queen's, and all their Children's healths were drank round with loud report of ordnance, a noise of musick attending us all the day. We took leave on board about ten of the clock at night, musick playing before us, and for our farewell there were 25 peices of great ordnance discharged after the watch was sett. On the Saturday, being the 11th day, all the company were feasted, dinner and supper, at Mr. Thomas Legatt's. On the Saturday, we were all invited to Rochester by Dr. Milbourne [of whom see p. 450], one of his Highness's Chaplaines, and then Dean of Rochester, who bestowed upon us a Sermon, himself preaching. With him we dined and supped, and then returned to Chatham. Monday proved so foul and rainy that the company could not take their journey towards London as was purposed. They all dined with me, and supped at Capt. King's. The next day proved very fair, so that after breakfast, some in coaches and some on horseback, rode for Gravesend, accompanied with Mr. Legatt, Capt. King, and myself, when we saw them shipped in a barge, and then took our leaves, bidding them farewell with some ordnance from both block-houses." — Dr. Milbourne appears to have been Mr. Pette's intimate friend; in the following October he baptized his daughter.

¹ See vol. I. pp. 97, 524.—We shall meet with the King a fourth time there in August 1614, and again in 1616. — His present Majesty, when Prince Regent, spent the day and slept at Apthorp Dec. 29, 1813, on his Progress to Belvoir noticed in p. 458.

² Of this "very fine house," built on the site of a small Augustinian Priory, Wright gives a curious portrait in the Additions to his History of Rutland, p. 6. Brook was "a noted seat of hospitality," during the life of Juliana Viscountess Campden, who died here in 1680; but ruins alone now mark its site. On one of the lodges, converted into a dovecot, is the coat of Noel. ³ See p. 426.

⁴ Belvoir Castle, with its immediate demesne, may be said to stand on the confines of four counties, Nottingham, Lincoln, Rutland, and Leicester; but the whole of the building is within the latter county; see vol. I. p. 90.

⁵ This was the 8th of August.

strength of his body, the greatnesse of the journey, being neere fourescore and sixteene miles, nor the extreme and wonderfull heat of the season, and notwithstanding my persuasions to the contrary, determined to ride that great journey in two dayes; according to which he set forth on Friday by one of the clock in the morning from his house at Richmond, coming to Hinchingbrooke¹ besides Huntingdon, a house pertaining to Sir Oliver Cromwell, Knight, Master of his Game, by tenne of the clock in the morning, which, as they say, is threescore miles, in nine hours' posting, where he remained all that night, the next day having six-and-thirty miles to Beaver Castle, where he met with his Father just at the time prefixed."

The Entertainment at Belvoir being a principal feature in the Progress, it is thus recorded by the Chronicler Howes: "This Sommer, the King rode Progress to the Forrest of Sherwood and Nottingham; and, the 7th of August, his Majestie and the Prince of Wales² came to Belvoire Castle³, being accompanied and attended with many Earles, Barons, and Knights, and there stayed untill the next Munday in the afternoone; during which space, Francis Earle of Rutland⁴, Lord of that Castle, gave them verie honorable Entertainement."

¹ See p. 370.

² The King arrived on the 7th, and the Prince on the 8th.

³ Of the King's first Visit to Belvoir Castle on his way to London in 1603 see vol. I. pp. 90—93. We shall find him there again in the beginning of August in the years 1614, 1616, 1619, 1621, and 1624. King Charles the First knighted there Sir Edward Hartop, of Buckminster, July 25, 1634. A custom always observed on the occurrence of a Royal Visit to Belvoir is this. The chief of the family of Staunton who holds the manor of Staunton in Nottinghamshire by Castle Guard of the chief strong hold of Belvoir Castle, called the Staunton Tower, presents its key to the Sovereign as the keys of a town are presented. On Jan. 2, 1814, when his present Majesty, then Prince Regent, was received at Belvoir Castle (see Appendix to Hist. of Leic. p. 129), in the drawing-room soon after his arrival, the key of Staunton Tower, of gold and exquisite workmanship, was, by the Rev. Dr. Staunton, delivered on a cushion of crimson velvet, to the illustrious guest, accompanied by an appropriate Speech. In feudal times by this tenure of Castle Guard it was ordained that

"Unto this Forte with force and flagge,
The Stauntons' stocke should sticke,
For to defende against the foe,
Which at the same might kicke;"

but it has long been a sinecure, for even in Thoroton's time Staunton Tower was "sufficiently guarded by the strength of its own liquor, with which the bottom of it is usually replenished."—In 1618 a writ of enquiry was issued for the Earl to shew cause why his Castle of Belvoir, &c. should not be seized into the King's hands, on account of some alienation. (See Nichols's Leicestershire, vol. II. p. 49.) This at the present day might appear an ungrateful return to the Earl for his hospitality; but it was the customary process when property held under the Crown became on any occasion alienated.

⁴ Who has been noticed as Sir Francis Manners, K. B. in vol. I. p. 478; and will occur as a

From Belvoir to Newark¹ was the ride of the 10th of August. At Newark the King² slept one night, probably in the Castle, as he had done in his Progress to London in 1603, that "being his owne house³." Hence he departed the following day, probably hunting, as before, "all the way he rode," and having renewed his acquaintance with Mr. Alderman Twentyman⁴, to Rufford Abbey⁵

Tilter on the King's day, March 24, 1612-13. He had succeeded his brother Roger the fifth Earl (of whom see vol. I. p. 91) only on the 26th of the preceding June. "That Nobleman," says Howes, "dyed at Cambridge, was thence transported to Belvoir Castle, and on the 22d of July his corps was honorablie enterred at Bottisford with his ancestors." — Thus the house of rejoicing had been a house of mourning little more than a fortnight before.

¹ See vol. I. p. 88.—The King was again at Newark for one night, Aug. 9, 1614, and Aug. 8, 1616; in his way to Scotland, April 7, 1617; and on August 8, 1624. No notices of either of these Visits occur in the Coucher Book of the Corporation, which has been attentively searched for me by Wm. Edw. Tallents, Esq. the present Town Clerk. This is probably owing to the King's coming to the Castle as "his owne house" with few or no formalities.—Mr. Tallents has, however, kindly favoured me with three curious extracts from the above-named Record, which may be seen in vol. I. under the year 1603, and hereafter in vol. III. under the years 1622 and 1623.

² The Prince, it may be presumed, accompanied his Royal Father during the whole of this month, though we do not find him noticed till the King's arrival at Leicester.

³ See vol. I. p. 88. — This massive square pile is supposed to have been erected on the basis of a Roman structure by Alexander, consecrated Bishop of Lincoln in 1123. It was seized by King Stephen; continued some time in the Crown, and was the place of King John's death. Henry the Third restored it to the see of Lincoln; and it so continued till Bishop Holbeach conveyed it again to the Crown temp. Edw. VI. In the reign of James, it was, we find, in sufficient repair and sufficiently furnished to entertain Royalty; during the Civil War, a garrison, frequently amounting to 10,000 men, was quartered here. Having been dismantled by order of the Parliament, it has since remained in ruin; and is at present used as a wharf and warehouse.

⁴ See vol. I. p. 89.

⁵ Rufford Abbey is a large edifice, erected upon and engrafted into, the remains of an ancient Cistercian Monastery. "Its situation is extremely sequestered, and the entrance front is so completely embowered in a grove of elm and beech, as to preserve much of the original character of the building." A large hall, altered to its present state in the reign of Elizabeth, marks with lofty ceiling, high-raised screen, and brick-floor, the taste of that period. It is now uninhabited, its owner, the Hon. and Rev. Lumley Saville, residing at Edwinston in the neighbourhood; but with laudable affection to the memory of his ancestors, the gardens and grounds are kept in the best state, and the paintings preserved with the greatest care. See the Beauties of England and Wales, Notts. pp. 386—391.—Thoroton says in his History, "This place hath often entertained King James and King Charles his son, being very pleasant and commodious for hunting in the Forest of Shirewood." The King slept five nights there in 1614, and five in 1616. — His present Majesty George IV. some years ago slept at Rufford in an apartment still called "the Prince of Wales's Bed-room."—At Clipstone, about two miles from Rufford, are ruins of an ancient Royal Hunting-seat, ascribed, with more reason than many others, to King John, for it was the King's demesne, temp. Stephen.

near Ollerton, on the borders of Sherwood Forest. At this mansion, a seat of Sir George Saville, of Thornhill, Yorkshire, Baronet¹, the King was entertained for three days, enjoying all the pleasures of a chase in perfection.

From London in the mean time, on the 11th of August, Mr. Chamberlain thus writes to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“The Queen begins her Progress to-morrow to Windsor; and so, by Sir Robert Dormer’s² and Sir Richard Blount’s³, to [meet the King at] Woodstock. — Signor Fabritio⁴, after five or six days’ looking about this town [London], is gone toward the King with his pictures and projects⁵.”

On the 14th of August, the King left Rufford, but not Sherwood Forest⁶. He took up his lodging at Sir John Byron’s⁷, Newstead Abbey⁸, about ten miles

¹ See p. 426. Sir George became possessed of Rufford by marrying Mary, daughter of George sixth Earl of Shrewsbury, and grand-daughter of George fifth Earl, to whom the monastery had been granted by Henry VIII.

² Ascot House in Wing, Bucks, where in 1554 Queen Elizabeth, then Princess, in her journey from Woodstock to Hampton Court as a Prisoner, was entertained for one night by Sir Robert’s father Sir William Dormer, K. B. (who is incorrectly called “Mr. Dormer” in her “Progresses,” vol. I. p. 12, on the authority of “Warton’s Life of Sir Thomas Pope;” and confounded with his father Sir Robert Dormer, who died in 1552, two years before, in Lysons’s Buckinghamshire, p. 665). The present Sir Robert had been knighted by Queen Elizabeth, Aug. 21, 1591, at Cowdray, the seat of his father-in-law, Viscount Montacute. (See “Queen Elizabeth’s Progresses,” vol. III. p. 91.) He was created a Baronet June 10, 1615; and Baron Dormer of Winge, on the 30th of that month. He died Nov. 8, 1616. See further in Brydges’s Peerage, vol. VII. p. 69. — His grandson, “a valiant Loyalist,” was created Viscount Ascot and Earl of Carnarvon.—Mr. Chamberlain wrote from “Askot” in 1608; see p. 209. The mansion had a noble apartment built by Inigo Jones; but was suffered to go to decay after 1720, and has been many years pulled down. See Lysons.

³ At Mapledereham, Oxfordshire, situated near the Thames, three miles from Caversham. This mansion is still standing, untouched by innovation, a large and venerable building of the Elizabethan age, seated on an extensive lawn, and fronted by an avenue of noble elms, more than a mile in length.—Of Sir Richard Blount see vol. I. p. 117. His son Charles fortified the house in the Royal cause, and it was taken by the Parliamentarians after a courageous defence. See the “Beauties of England and Wales,” vol. XII. p. 346.—It is still in the Blount family.

⁴ From a Letter in Winwood’s Memorials, vol. III. p. 384, written by Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Ralph Winwood, August 10, this proves Sir Henry Wotton.—See pp. 428, 468. ⁵ Birch’s MSS. 4173.

⁶ A good description of Sherwood Forest, printed by Major Rooke for private circulation, was copied in Harrod’s History of Mansfield, pp. 18 *et seq.* At the time of King James’s Visit it had been recently surveyed; and then contained,—arable land, 44,839 acres; woods, 9,486; waste, 35,080; Clipstone Park, 1583; Beskwood Park 3,672; Bulwell Park 326; Nottingham Park 129; total, 95,117 acres.

⁷ Who was knighted when he met the King at Worksop, April 21, 1603; see vol. I. p. 88.

⁸ The notoriety of the late Noble Poet of the name of Byron, has rendered Newstead also a fami-

distant across the Forest, and for three days longer explored the haunts of "Robin Hood and his merry men all."

On the 17th, the King proceeded to Nottingham¹, where the following preparations had been made for his reception:

On the 10th of July, it was "agreed that £.150 be borrowed upon interest to defray the necessary charges of his Majesty's Entertainment." A Committee was appointed "to survey the passages on the Backside towards the High Cross, and to cause them to be made conveniently for his Majesty's Passage, and to cause all block timber and other impediments and annoyances to be removed." A like Committee was also appointed "to survey the Passage from the Castle to the Bridge over the meadows, and to" do as above, "and also the Windmill Hill Passage. One hundred pounds agreed to be borrowed of Mr. Stables on a mortgage of St. George's Close, and £.40 of Mr. Alderman Freeman on the Dovecoat Close, which sums were to be furnished for the Town's wants at this time about the Entertainment of his Majesty. Mr. Freeman and Mr. Hill are requested to go to London, and, by their discretion, to provide a present for his Majesty, either by plate or in gold, as they shall think fit by conference and enquiry of others; and the value thereof is likewise left to their discretions. And they are also to enquire the manner and order of other places how his Majesty hath been entertained, that the same may be some directions for us."

On the 3d of August, "Before this Company, Mr. Freeman and Mr. Hill made their account for their London voyage last; and here they bought in three² fair

liar name. This mansion was formerly celebrated for its splendour, and the park for its picturesque beauties; but the former has been neglected, and the latter stript of all its timber, and divided into farms. Newstead, like Rufford, is in great measure built on the shell of the Priory, which was of Black Canons, and the remains of the Church are very fine. It was granted at the Dissolution to the Sir John Byron of the day, at that time Lieutenant of Sherwood Forest. A description of the apartments is given in the Beauties of England and Wales, Notts. pp. 401—405. — The King again spent two days at Newstead in August 1614:—in the Gestes for 1616 it is omitted.

¹ It has been asserted in vol. I. p. 170, on the authority of Deering, that King James was six several times at Nottingham. He was so, for I am now enabled to enumerate his Visits. The first was the present; the others took place in 1614, 1616, 1619, 1621, and 1624; always in the month of August. It is a remarkable circumstance that Deering's friend must have derived his information from the Town Books, since five Visits (only) and some resolutions passed in 1613 respecting any future Royal Visits, are there discoverable (the book for 1618-19 being lost).

² The bowls are not appropriated; but were certainly intended for the King, Queen, and Prince. The Queen, as appears in p. 460, proceeded on a different Progress; but Prince Henry accompanied the King at Belvoir and at Leicester; and most probably at Nottingham also.

gilt bowls: *viz.* one weighing $59\frac{1}{4}$ oz. at 6s. 8d. the oz. comes to £.19. 15s.; another weighing $61\frac{3}{4}$ oz. at 6s. 8d. comes to £.20. 12s.; a third weighing $63\frac{3}{4}$ oz. at 6s. 8d. comes to £.21. 5s.

	£.	s.	d.
In all -	61	12	0
And for their horse-hire and charges, and other expences	7	18	0
And for a box	0	3	4
Total -	£.69	13	4

The only account of the Royal Entertainment is the following memorandum on the outside cover of the Book: "Monday, the 17th day of August, his Majesty comes to Nottingham, and stays one night only at Thurland House¹."

On Monday the 31st of August, it appears, that "Before this Company, Mr. Mayor made his account for the charges of his Majesty's Entertainment; and it appeareth by the paper thereof that

	£.	s.	d.
That which he hath received comes to	59	2	8
That which he hath laid out comes to -	54	11	3
So remaineth -	£.4	13	5

which was paid to the Chamberlains here present, *et quietus est*²."

On leaving Nottingham, the King was to have slept the following night at Loughborough, but for some unknown reason³ that Town lost the honour and

¹ Thurland House stands in Gridlesmith Gate, opposite to the Black-a-moor's Head stables. It took its name from a family frequently mentioned by Thoroton, of which the founder was Thomas Thurland, a great Merchant of the Staple; one of the Burgesses in Parliament for Nottingham 20, 27, 28, and 29 Hen. VI.; and Mayor of the town; but Throsby describes the present mansion as "an ancient building of stone, erected by Francis Pierrepont, third son of Robert Earl of Kingston, who died in 1657." A view of the remaining part of its front (the centre and one wing), taken in 1650, is engraved in Deering's History of Nottingham; at that time it belonged to the Duke of Newcastle (the owner of Nottingham Castle), from whose family name it is sometimes called Clare Hall. The style of its architecture alone would plainly show it had not been long erected when honoured with the presence of James the First; but it is equally clear that it was then erected and inhabited by Sir John Holles. It is recorded that the King was again accommodated there in 1614 and 1616, and he probably was in all his Visits. "The rooms," continues Throsby, "are spacious but gloomy, the walls are castle-like thick. Here, on particular occasions, the Noblemen and Gentlemen of the County dine in the great room." Of Sir John Holles, the owner of Thurland Hall, see pp. 374, 448.

² For these particulars from the Hall or Year Book of the Corporation for the year 1612, I am indebted to H. Enfield, Esq. the Town Clerk, who has also favoured me with extracts respecting the King's reception in 1614, 1616, 1621, and 1624.

³ A fear of infection still hanging about the Town may have been the cause; for the Plague had broken out there in a dreadful manner in August 1609; it raged 18 months, and destroyed 500 individuals;

saved the expence. His Majesty hastened forward on the 18th, to Leicester¹, where the Corporation were not less anxious than their neighbours at Nottingham to express their zeal and affection to the Royal Travellers. We find in their Records the following notes of preparation.

His Majesty required an official certificate from the Mayor as to the Borough being free from contagious fever; and also as to the means of accommodating himself and suite. This certificate is dated the 17th of June, and directed to the Earl of Suffolk, the Lord Chamberlain.

On the 22d, the Corporation addressed a Petition to the Earl of Huntingdon, requesting him to authorise the inhabitants of the neighbouring villages to assist in repairing the streets of Leicester, and also begging boughs from the forest to stand at their street doors².

“At a Common Hall, July 17, it was agreed to send to London, to provide a fair standing-cup, with a cover, of silver and gilt, worth £.30, or thereabouts, to give to King James, on his coming to Leicester the 18th of August next; and also to have the Town's great mace mended and gilded, and to have the King's arms of new set upon the top of the said mace. It was also agreed, that Mr. Mayor, Mr. Robert Hericke³, and the three Justices, shall assess the Twenty-four at £.24, and the Commoners in town according to their abilities, towards buying the plate and mending the mace, and for fees which are to be given to the King's Officers, and other charges then to be laid forth. The Forty-eight, among themselves, have agreed to give £.24.

“At a Common Hall, July 27, it is now agreed to provide two standing-cups, but it is said to have entirely ceased in April 1611. See the History of Leicestershire, vol. III. p. 892. Whether this, or a deficiency of accommodation, was the reason, Loughborough is omitted at once in the Gest of 1614 and 1616, though we hear no more of the Plague there till 1631.—When raging at Loughborough, it visited Leicester also.—King Charles I. was at Loughborough in 1643, and again with his army, May 28, 1645, in their march from Ashby to Leicester.

¹ The King was again at Leicester for one night, Aug. 19, 1614, and for one night, Aug. 15, 1616.—Of the Queen's Visit in 1603 see vol. I. p. 171.

² This very curious document, discovered only by the repeated researches of Mr. J. Stockdale Hardy, (see pp. 450, 458,) I am compelled to defer to the Appendix of this Volume.

³ Elder brother to Sir William Herrick, Goldsmith to the King, of whom see p. 504. He was an Ironmonger, an Alderman, and had been thrice Mayor of Leicester (as his father was twice), and M. P. for the Town in 1589. He died June 14, 1618, aged 78. His benefactions were very numerous, and his portrait is still deservedly preserved in the Town-hall. See the History of Leicestershire, *sæpè*. From a copious selection of his Letters there printed, one illustrating the King's Visit to Leicester in 1614, will be found hereafter in its proper place.

with covers, of silver gilt, one for the King and the other for the Prince, worth £.30.—Ordered, that every householder, upon notice given by the Alderman and Constable of the Ward, forthwith cause the street before his door to be paved, on pain of 40s.—It is agreed, that the Twenty-four, such as have been Mayors, provide themselves to ride in scarlet, with horse and foot-cloth, to meet and attend the King, on pain of £.10; and the rest of the Twenty-four to provide themselves with gowns, citizen-fashion, garded¹ with square backs, to be likewise ready to attend the King on foot, on pain of £.10.—It is agreed, that every of the Forty-eight shall, for like attendance, provide a fair² black suit of apparel, black gowns and rough bands, on pain of £.5, against the King's coming on August 18."

On the 9th of August, Maister John Freake, the Mayor³, received the following directions from the Recorder of the Town, Sir Augustine Nicolls⁴:

"Mr. Maior; Yourself and your Brethren, as it appeared to me, were desirous that some Speech might be used to the King; and some were of opinion that your presents should not be delivered without it. Myself, differing in opinion in these things, told your Town Clerk that, if you desired any such thing, I had gone so far with Mr. Wyncoll that he would perform and draw a Speech for that purpose; whereunto if you gave liking, I would write to him accordingly. Now this giving you dislike, you shall not need any further to think thereof, nor he to

¹ Trimmed or framed; the term, remarks Mr. Archdeacon Nares, is perhaps derived from the idea that the *guards* defended the substance of the cloth. See Nares's Glossary.

² The distinction between the Red-gown Aldermen and Black-gown Aldermen, still kept up in the Corporation, perhaps commenced at this time.

³ He was a grazier resident in Applegate, not far from the Jewry Wall, a man of considerable property, and head of a large family.

⁴ Who had been made Serjeant-at-Law, May 23, 1603; see vol. I. p. 157; was Serjeant to Prince Henry; and of whom see p. 374 of this volume. He is in various authorities called a Knight, and I can only presume him to have been the person knighted Feb. 17, 1606-7, called by Philipot "Sir John Nichols" (see p. 122). Sir Augustine was born at Eckton in Northamptonshire, the son of Thomas Nicolls, Serjeant-at-law; and had been elected Recorder of Leicester, Dec. 14, 1603, probably introduced by possessing a large estate at Tilton in that county. He resigned the office soon after the present date, being appointed a Puisne Judge of the Common Pleas, Oct. 28 this year. He was freely preferred, says Fuller in his *Worthies* under Northamptonshire, "I say freely, King James commonly calling him 'the Judge that would give no money.'" The worthy Fuller proceeds to give him a most excellent character. He was promoted to be Puisne Judge of the King's Bench, Oct. 29, 1615, and dying as he went the Northern circuit, Aug. 3, 1616, "hath a fair monument in Kendall Church in Westmorland." Samuel Bolton, who wrote "Funeral Notes" on him (see p. 374), had been presented by him to the vicarage of Broughton in Northamptonshire.

trouble himself; which you may be sure he will not do without your entreaty and allowance. I had further Speech with your Town Clerk to this effect: that—whereas your place to attend the King must be at the utmost bounds of your Liberties, there to deliver up your mace unto him upon your knee (if it may be with conveniency to the place and company), and then to receive the same again from him if his pleasure be to deliver the same unto you, and so to carry it next before him through the Town unto my Lord's house, — the place near the bridge is so straight, as it is not meet there to stay the King longer than the delivery of the mace; and so to go on before the King, unless his pleasure be made known to the contrary; and then, as the King comes up by the School, some of the Scholars to deliver a short Speech in Latin containing an acknowledgement with thanks of and for the many favors which the Corporation have received from the King and his Progenitors; and the two other boys to present the one cup to the King and the other to the Prince, and so to proceed on to the King's lodgings. In which your proceeding you shall do well to observe this decency;—your Brethren to go before you in their antiquity, two and two; and next before them the forty-eight; and before them the better sort of the Commonalty, such as can furnish themselves fit for that purpose;—and so to go on until they come so near to my Lord's house¹ that the Company before you may make a stand, in order so as they that were foremost may be last and furthest from the house; divided as that yourself may attend before the King, carrying your mace through the midst of them; which order may easily be observed if they will be ruled; but I pray you let all occasions of any grievance and complaint be taken away and forborne, that no cause be given to trouble the King with petitions about any Town matters². These particulars being observed may be sufficient to excuse my presence with

¹ Situate in High-street and called the Lord's-place. In 1702, being the property of the Corporation, it was sold, with all its orchards, gardens, and appurtenances, to Simon Barwell, Gent. for £.400. In 1717 Mr. Barwell was building a street on the estate, at first called Barwell's-buildings, and now Union-street. The only remain of the mansion is a lofty hexagon turret, consisting of a winding staircase of stone, with a small apartment in each story; it is modernized with an outside coating of brick, and its top is glazed for a prospect-seat. Very recently it has been sold, and the present possessor has lately taken down a large stone chimney-piece, curiously carved.

² It is amusing to remark how few of the worthy Recorder's directions were complied with; a Speech was made by Mr. Wincoll, it was delivered at the bridge, the boys of the Free-school had nothing to do with it, and a petition on Town matters was presented to the King, all in disobedience to his admonitions. Mr. Wincoll seems to have had every thing his own way in Sir Augustine's absence.

you, which for some particular thing concerning myself I desire may be pardoned. And so I rest, wishing and hoping that all fall well. Yours, AUGUSTINE NICOLLS ¹."

The following account of the Visit is also preserved in the Corporation Records :

"Mem. On Tuesday, Aug. 18, 10 Jac. both Companies met accordingly at the Town-hall, and thence went two and two together to St. Sunday's Bridge ² foot, something on the side Southward; and between the said bridge and the little bridge, called Frogmire Bridge, did Mr. Mayor and the said Companies receive the King and the Prince, where Mr. Mayor, upon his knee, delivered his mace to the King; and he presently delivered it to Mr. Mayor again. Thereupon Mr. John Wincoll, the Town's Councillor ³, made an Oration in Latin, which was pleasing both to the King and Prince. Then Mr. Mayor presented one standing-cup to the King, and the other to the Prince. This done, the Mayor took his horse, and, bareheaded, carried the Town mace before the King, *viz.* Henry Earl of Huntingdon, Lord Lieutenant of this county, carried the sword next before the King, Mr. Mayor next before the said Earl, accompanied with the Gentlemen Ushers, with the King's two great maces; and so before them our Mayor's Brethren in scarlet, such as had been Mayors, and the rest; and also the Forty-eight attended the King and Prince to the Court-gates, *viz.* to the Earl's house."

On Thursday the 20th of August, a Petition was presented to the King on behalf of the poor inhabitants of Leicester, to restore to them some privileges which they had previously enjoyed as to the making and sale of Bread, and the following Answer was left by his Majesty :

"At the Court at Leicester, Aug. 20, 1612, his Majesty doth appoint that this Petition shall be delivered to the Mayor of Leicester, to the end that he and his Brethren may take order in the same, concerning the relief and care of the poor, as they upon the hearing and understanding of all circumstances shall think meet.

(Signed) ROGER WILBRAHAM ⁴."

Among the charges of the Town this year, was one "For repairing the streets against the coming of the King and Prince in their Progress to Leicester,

¹ With this letter I have been favoured by Mr. J. Stockdale Hardy.

² This Bridge spans the Soar at the Northern extremity of the Town.

³ This learned "Town Counsellor," who again addressed the King in the name of the Town in 1614, was descended from a family seated at Waldingfield in Suffolk, and was a Bencher of the Middle Temple. He was resident in the Newark at Leicester at the time of the Heralds' Visitation in 1619, when he entered his pedigree as printed in the History of Leicestershire, vol. I. p. 548.

⁴ Sir Roger Wilbraham, Master of Requests, in attendance in the Progress for the purpose of receiving petitions. Of Sir Roger see vol. I. p. 155; his "fee by the year" was £100.

£.26. 3s. 7½d.;" another was, "For a silver cup and cover, presented to the King Aug. 28, £.20. 5s. 1d.;" another, "For the value of a silver and gilt cup, presented to the Prince by the Mayor, £.13. 4s.;" and a fourth, "Fees to the King's Officers, £.34. 6s.¹" And the Churchwardens of St. Martin's "paid to six Ringers, for ringing three days, when the King and Prince were here, 18s. 6d.²"

On leaving Leicester³, the King and Prince appear to have separated.

Prince Henry, with a Train of Nobility, proceeded to Coventry⁴, and was worthily received by the Mayor and his Brethren with great joy. He and his company supped that evening at St. Mary's Hall. The Prince lay at Henry Breer's in Little Park-street, one of the Members for the City. On the following morning they pursued their journey. Fifty pounds were presented to the Prince. There was "Spent on the Companye at the goynge awaye of the Prynce, 18d.;" and "Pd at the same tyme to two men and for gun-powder, 16d.⁵"

It can scarcely admit of a doubt, but that the Prince, on leaving Coventry, visited Kenilworth Castle, which was at this period considered his own⁶. He probably arrived at Woodstock a day or two before his Royal Father.

¹ Nichols's History of Leicestershire, vol. I. p. 424.

² Ibid. p. 576.

³ It does not appear whether the King rested two nights at Leicester, as originally intended, or three, on account of having arrived a day sooner than proposed. The Ringers were paid for ringing *three* days; if the King had slept three nights in the Town, they would probably have rung on *four* days, —so I think he must have left on the 20th.

⁴ Coventry entertained the Princess Elizabeth in 1604 and 1605, see vol. I. p. 429; and Appendix; and King James in September 1617, see hereafter under that date.

⁵ Communicated by my Friend Thos. Sharp, Esq. from his large collections for Coventry.

⁶ "Affecting it," says Dugdale, "as the most noble and magnificent thing in the midland parts of this Realm," he had the preceding year made overture to Sir Robert Dudley, its owner, (and the illegitimate offspring of the great Earl of Leicester, though by him called his lawful son,) of his desire to obtain the title thereto by way of purchase. It is, however, to be observed by the way, that, previously to this, Sir Robert had left the Kingdom under the King's licence to travel for three years, and not returning, his estates had been seized for the Crown. At this period a Survey was taken by the King's Officers, (preserved in Cotton. MSS. Vespasian, F. ix.) in which are mentioned "roomes of great state able to receave his Majesty, the Queen, and Prince at one tyme, built with as much conveniency as any houses of later tyme, and with such stately sellars, all caried upon pillars and architecture of free-stone carved and wrought, as the like are not within this Kingdome; and also all other houses for offices aunswerable." This Survey concludes as follows: "His Majestie hath herein the meane profitts of the Castle and premisses through Sir Robert Dudley's *contempt* [*i. e.* in not returning home] during his life or his Majesties pardon. The revercion in fee being in the Lord Privy Seale." Such proceedings at the present day would certainly be thought unjust and tyrannical; but

The King, in the mean time, journeyed from Leicester to Sir Thomas Griffin's at Dingley¹; and the following day to his own palace of Holdenby², where it was intended he should sleep two nights.

On the 24th of August, his Majesty was to have renewed his acquaintance with Grafton³, the seat of the Earl of Cumberland; and having stayed there three days, on the 27th, again become the guest of Sir Anthony Cope at Hanwell⁴, near Banbury; but this part of the gests appears to have been disarranged⁵.

On Wednesday the 26th, according to Sir Charles Cornwallis, the King Queen, and Prince, with a full Court, met at Woodstock:

were, as the transactions respecting Belvoir mentioned in p. 455, the ordinary courses of the law in those days,—one of the means for raising money to the Crown. The sum really lost by Sir Robert was £.10,000, “deducted for his contempt,” and perhaps the profits of the estate for a year or two. To return to the more immediate subject,—Prince Henry had probably before seen and admired it. In consideration of £.14,500 to be paid within a twelvemonth to Sir Robert or his assigns, certain deeds had been sealed bearing date Nov. 21, 1611, and fines levied settling the inheritance of the estate upon the Prince and his heirs; with condition that Sir Robert should, during his life, hold the constablership of the Castle by Patent from the Prince. “Howbeit,” continues Dugdale, “Prince Henry departing this life, there was not above £.3000 of the sum ever paid, as I have heard, and that likewise to a merchant which broke, so that it never came to Sir Robert Dudley's hands. Nevertheless did Prince Charles, as heir to his brother, hold the possession thereof; and in 19 Jac. I. obtained a special Act of Parl. to enable the Lady Alice, wife to the said Sir Rob. in regard she had a joynture therein, to alien all her right unto him, as if she had been a *feme sole*; which accordingly she did by her deed bearing date 4 Maii 19 Jac. in consideration of £.4000 assigned to her out of the Exchequer.” In a Valuation of the Castle of Kenilworth in the British Museum, Cotton. MSS. Tiberius, E. viii. the signature and date of which are destroyed by fire, but evidently made about this period, is mentioned “The chamber of the Prince of verie curious woorke wainscotted with the doores and the portals also,” which “carved and imbossed wainscott and inlaied in chymney peecs, portals, and other playner wainscot,” was valued at £.813. 5s. 9d. See “Kenilworth Illustrated,” 4to, 1821, p. 39.—It will be found hereafter that the King visited Kenilworth “to view the manor” in 1617, and Prince Charles in 1621 and 1624.—A curious, though not quite correct, table of the numerous Royal Visits paid to this truly Princely Castle is in “Kenilworth Illustrated,” p. 44.

¹ Where the Queen and her two Children were entertained on their journey into England in 1603; see vol. I. p. 173; and the King again was, Aug. 19, 1614; Aug. 16, 1616. Sir Thomas Griffin, of whom *ubi suprâ*, was knighted at the Charter-house, May 11, 1603; vide *ibid.* p. 114.

² See p. 364, and under the dates of Aug. 20, 1614; Aug. 17, 1616. Lord Compton, the King's host at Castle Ashby (see p. 452), was Keeper of Holdenby House, for which office he received yearly £.26. 13s. 4d.

³ Of his previous visits see p. 202; he was there again for three nights in August 1614, and 1616.

⁴ Where the King and Queen had rested for one night in August 1605; see vol. I. p. 527.

⁵ The visits were probably paid, though not according to the predetermined dates.

“But the time of one thing I had almost forgot to tell you, how before his comming from Richmond, intending to feast the Court at his manor of Woodstock about the end of this Progress, it being the first time of their general meeting there since the house became his¹, he had given order to his Officers to provide a most magnifiquè feast against their comming to the foresaid house; withall having ordained a great summer-house of green boughs to be built in the parke wherein the great supper should be, all which was with speed performed. Meanwhile, although the season was exceeding hot, his Highnesse did ride many and extraordinary journeyes in the same, which, as was thought, did much incline his boyling bloud towards inflammation.

“At last, their journies being towards an end, to Woodstock they came, where his Highnesse, according to his former intention, did feast the Lords and Ladies at a long table, neere which he himselfe did beare them company from the Wednesday night of their comming [August 26] untill the Sunday night [the 30th], which (unknowne to him) he had appointed for the last great farewell unto all his friends. By this time the appointed night for this great Feast being come, his Highnesse did himselfe in person come into the Banqueting-house to see all things in good order, for great was his care to give contentment.

¹ Woodstock had been a Royal manor from the Saxon times, and Henry the First erected the Palace there which in part remained till the days of the Rebellion. Queen Elizabeth sometimes visited Woodstock; see her “Progresses.” We have before met with King James there for some time in the Autumn of 1603; see vol. I. pp. 257 *et seq.*; and also at other times, pp. 300, 529; and this Volume, p. 365. From what Lord Cecil says in September 1603 (vol. I. p. 272), it appears to have been neglected many years previously. The last known Visit of Queen Elizabeth was in 1592. It appears from what Sir Charles Cornwallis says above, that Woodstock was granted to Prince Henry; but he enjoyed it for so short a time, that this fact has hitherto escaped the notice of those scanty histories of Oxfordshire that we at present possess. Cornwallis says in his Life, “I should but increase sorrow to tell you how exceeding kindly the Vice-chancellor, Doctors, Graduates, and Students were used when they came to see the Prince at Woodstock; what care he had to give them contentment, how carefull he was and what speciall commands were generally given throughout the whole house, that they should not want the same; of his mild and grave carriage towards them, and his loving speeches in their absence.” This would seem to infer that he had often entertained them there; but Sir Charles Cornwallis may not on this subject be quite correct. — A Visit to Woodstock was doubtless a pleasure to our Monarch, from its contiguity to the learning of Oxford; we shall meet with him more than once entertained there by plays performed by the Scholars of the University. Nor were the pleasures of the chase wanting; Woodstock park was enclosed by the Royal Builder of the Palace, and was, according to John Ross, the first enclosed in England, though “*parcus bestiarum sylvaticarum*” occurs more than once in Domesday-book. See Gough’s Camden, vol. II. p. 4.

“At last, the King and Queen being set at a table by themselves at the upper end of the roome, his Highnesse with his Sister, accompanied with the Lords and Ladies, sitting at another table of thirty yards long and more by themselves, there was to be seene of the greatest and best-ordered feasts as ever was seene, nothing wanting which any way was fitting to adorn such a solemne meeting; all which, to the general joy of the whole Court, his Highnesse, like to the Princely Bridegroom, chearing and welcoming his guests, there appeared an universall contentment in all. But little knew he that it was his last great farewel to his Father, Mother, and Sister, yea, unto the whole Court, that it was his last feast of feasts, one for all! And indeed, when we looke back unto the same, therein beholding his Highnesse’s cheerfull carriage, the time, order, state, magnificence, and greatness thereof, we may behold somewhat ominous therein.

“The Monday after, [the 31st,]¹ the Court removing thence, his Highnesse, after leave obtained, hastened home again to Richmond, because of the news of the Palsegrave’s approach, whom he intended to grace with all possible honour.”

The King, on leaving Woodstock, proceeded to Rycot², the seat of Lord Norris³, where it was arranged he should sleep one night. To Sir Edward Hoby’s at Bisham Abbey⁴, was his next stage, where also a lodging for one night was provided. Hence he returned home to Windsor or Whitehall.

“In the Progresse,” but where does not appear, the King knighted Sir Edward Devereux⁵, of Warwickshire; and Sir Robert Sandy, *alias* Napier, Baronet⁶.

On the 11th of September, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“The Progress hath been so far off, and we so far out of the way, that we hear little what hath passed; only the Prince made the King an Entertainment with some devices at Woodstock.”

¹ A Commission (*per ipsum Regem*) to levy money for the Marriage of the King’s eldest Daughter, according to the statute of Edw. III. (printed in Rymer’s *Fœdera*) is dated at Woodstock, August 30.

² Which his maiden Predecessor twice visited, as a prisoner and as a Queen; see her “Progresses,” vol. III. p. 168. James was again there August 29, 1614, August 29, 1616, Sept. 11, 1617, and Aug. 27, 1619.

³ Of whom see vol. I. p. 477.

⁴ On this occasion the Churchwardens at Great Marlow “paid the Ryngers when the Kynge came through the Towne, 2s. 6d.” — See p. 365. — Aug. 30, 1614, and Aug. 30, 1616, James was again at Bisham. Charles the First was there, Aug. 7, 1627.

⁵ Perhaps the same as the Baronet noticed in p. 492, though he is called *Esquire* previously to his creation. The note in that page was printed before I received the gests of the preceding Progress, and I then imagined that the King had visited the Baronet at Castle Bromwich near Birmingham, where he built “a fair house of brick.”

⁶ So created Sept. 24, 1611; see p. 429.

In September, on the King's return to Whitehall, he there knighted Sir George Gresley, Baronet¹; Sir John Wray², and Sir Charles Howard.

"At this time," says Howes, "the corps of Queen Mary late Queen of Scotland, was translated from Peterborough to S. Peter's Church in Westminster, being thither attended by the Lorde Bishop of Coventry and Litchfield. And upon Thursday the 8th of October, the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Chancellor, the Lord Privy Seale, and the Earle of Worcester, and other Noblemen, and the Bishop of Rochester, and the Deane of Westminster, mette the corps at Clarken-well, about six a clocke in the evening, and from thence with plentie of torch-lights³, brought the bodie of the sayde Queene unto the Chappell Royall at Westminster, and on the South side thereof it was there enterred that night, where the King had builded a most Royall tombe for her, where shee now resteth⁴."

The following relation of the Count Palatine's reception into England⁵, was communicated at the time by Mr. Finett to Mr. Trumbull:

"The Count Palatine landed at Gravesend on Fryday night last, [at 11 o'clock], the 16th of this present October. He had his first welcome delivered him by my Lord Hay [and Sir Lewis Lewknor, Master of the Ceremonies,] in name of his Majesty; his second on Sunday by my Lord Duke of Lennox, attended thither by many [Lords,] Knights, and some Gentlemen [the King's Servants]. At their incounter the Count (as one surprized, and not expecting to see his Majesty till Monday) is said merrily to have told the Duke that, but to shew his obedience, he would excuse that day's appearance before his Mistress, especially

¹ So created June 29, 1611; see p. 425.

² Son of Sir William Wray, who was soon after this created a Baronet; see p. 491. Sir John succeeded to his father's title and estate at Glentworth in 1617; was Sheriff of Lincolnshire in 1625; and M. P. for Lincoln in three Parliaments of Charles I. See Collins's *Baronetage*, 1720, vol. I. p. 246.

³ The Churchwardens of St. Margaret's "paid to Michael Stockdale, for ringing when the Queen of Scots was buried in St. Peter's Church, 2s. 6d."

⁴ Engravings of this costly monument have been published in the various histories of Westminster Abbey; but a most beautiful one has lately appeared in Chalmers's *Life of Mary Queen of Scots*.—The "tombe for the late Queene, the King's two daughters, and the late Queen of Scots the King's Mother," cost altogether £.3500. "Briefe Abstract of his Majestie's Revenew," 1651.

⁵ On the 19th of October was entered at Stationers' Hall "A booke called, 'The Royal and Magnificent Entertainment of the mighty Prynce Palsgrave at the Hage and other places in his journey for England, with his Royall wellcome ashore by the most excellent Prince the Duke of Lenox and others of the Nobilitie of this land, with his coming to London the 18th of October 1611, being Sunday and St. Luke's-daie, and his great welcome.'"

whom he should not see, but *in clinquant*; his apparel being then, as in his journey, but ordinary. Passing before the Tower, four-score pieces of great ordnance gave him their loud welcome, and a warning to the Earls of Shrewsbury, Sussex, Southampton, and other Earls and Lords, to wait upon the Duke of York to the stairs at Whitehall, there to receive him at his landing, and to conduct him to the presence of his Majesty, the Queen, Prince, and Princess in the Banqueting-house. His approach, gesture, and countenance were seasoned with a well-becoming confidence, and bending himself with a due reverence before the King, he told him among other compliments, that in his sight and presence he enjoyed a great part (reserving it should seem the greatest to his mistress) of the end and happiness of his journey. After turning to the Queen, she entertained him with a fixed countenance, and though her posture might have seemed (as was judged) to promise him the honour of a kiss for his welcome, his humility carried him no higher then her hand. From which, after some few words of compliment he made to the Prince, and exchanging with him after a more familiar straine certaine passages of courtesy, he ended (where his desires could not but begin) with the Princess (who was noted till then not to turn so much as a corner of an eye towards him), and stooping to take up the lowest part of her garment to kiss it, shee most gracefully courtesying lower than accustomed, and with her hand staying him from that humblest reverence, gave him at his rising a fair advantage (which he took) of kissing her. This was the first day. The next was spent in re-visiting the King and Queen, [Prince, and Duke of York,] and twice the Lady Elizabeth; once in the afternoon at her own lodging in State, and after supper with somewhat less ceremony.

“To give you now a touch of his outward character, which may tell you his inward,—he hath most happily deceived good men’s doubts and ill men’s expectations; report of envy, malice, or weak judgment having painted him in so ill colours as the most here (especially our Ladies and Gentlewomen, who held themselves not a little interested in the handsome choice of her Grace’s husband), prepared themselves to see that with sorrow, which they now apprehend with much gladness. He is straight and well-shaped for his growing years. His complexion is brown, with a countenance pleasing, and promising both witt, courage, and judgment. He becomes himself well, and is very well liked of all, unless of those that are now sorry they did so honour him as to discommend him. His picture I have sent you here inclosed; not so short of the life as of the sweetness of his countenance; yet such as (the largeness of his limbs excepted) may pass for ill-

representation. He is well followed, the number not so great as worthy; most of them men much better fashioned then Germany usually affords them. There are in all eight Counts (besides Count Henry of Nassaw), some 86 Gentlemen, and the rest do make up about 150. His place for most usuall residence is Essex House¹; but there are lodgings appointed for his person as he shall have occasion to use them, with the Prince at St. James's, and they say there is now order given to prepare him others at Whitehall in the quarter that was my late Lord Treasurer's. No time (but by conjecture) is prefixed for his marriage; most think it will be about Easter. In the mean time we talk of Masks, Tilts, and Barriers, but they are yet under invention, not in resolution²."

September 22, Mr. Chamberlain wrote as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King came from Theobalds on Saturday, having notice of the Count Palatine's arrival at Gravesend the night before. He had a very speedy and prosperous passage; for coming from the Hague on Thursday at 11 o'clock, he embarked that evening at Maesland-sluce, and the next night about ten landed at Gravesend, where he continued all Saturday, and on Sunday morning the Duke of Lennox, with some other Noblemen and Courtiers, were sent to conduct him to the Court; where he arrived about 5, and was met at the Water-gate by the Duke of York, attended by the Earls of Shrewsbury, Worcester, and others, and so brought through the Hall, and along the Terrace to the new Great-

¹ Of this mansion, the residence of many distinguished Noblemen, and successively called Exeter, Paget, Leicester, and Essex House, the history is given in Pennant, pp. 135, 136. It was the first mansion looking to the Thames on the West side of Temple Bar; and the site of the premises is now occupied by Essex-street, Devereux-court, &c. Whether it was in 1612 in the possession of the Crown, or lent by the Earl of Essex for the present occasion, does not appear.

² Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 403. Some additions have been made from the writer's book, "Finetti Philoxenis," pp. 1, 2.—Of this work, as it is now a *liber rarus*, and as it will be very frequently quoted in the following pages, a short account shall be given. It is a small octavo volume, entitled, "Finetti Philoxenis; som choice observations of Sir John Finett, Knight, and Master of the Ceremonies to the two last Kings, touching the reception and precedence, the treatment and audience, the puntillios and contests of Forren Ambassadors in England. *Legati ligant mundum*. London: Printed by T. R. for H. Twyford and G. Bedell, and are to be sold at their shops in Vine-court, Middle Temple, and Middle Temple Gate, 1656." It was edited by James Howell, the Historiographer, and author of *Epistolæ Ho-elianæ*, and was dedicated to Philip Viscount Lisle.—The "Observations" are contained in 250 pages, and on either side is found an ample table of contents or an index.—The author, Sir John Finett, will be noticed when knighted, March 21, 1615-16.

chamber, where the King expected him. The Prince stirred not a foot; which was much noted. He had a great peal of ordnance as he passed by the Tower, and came with some disadvantage into such a presence, having been so long on the water in the coldest day that came this winter; and yet he carried himself with that assurance, and so well and gracefully, both toward King, Queen, and Prince, and especially his Mistress, that he won much love and commendation. The King is much pleased with him, and carried him presently into his Bed-chamber, and there bestowed a ring of the value of £.1800 upon him. From thence he was conveyed through the Privy-lodgings and galleries to the water, and so to Essex House, where he yet remains, but is every day at Court, and plies his Mistress so hard, and takes no delight in running at ring nor tennis, nor riding with the Prince, as Count Henry his uncle and others of his company do; but only in her conversation. On Tuesday she sent to invite him, as he sat at supper, to a Play of her own servants in the Cock-pit; and yesterday they were all day together at Somerset House, which is much beautified within this year or two¹. He hath a train of very sober and well-fashioned Gentlemen; his whole number is not above 140, servants and all, being limited by the King not to exceed."

For the Pageants on Lord Mayor's-day, Thomas Dekker² was employed, and he published an account of them, entitled, "*Troia Nova Triumphans*; London Triumphant on the solemn receiving Sir John Swinnerton³, Knt. and Merchant Taylor, into the City of London⁴."

"The Palsgrave dined in the Guildhall, accompanied with the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, the Duke of Lenox, the Lord Bishop of London, and divers Earles and Barons; and during the whole dinner, the Palsgrave and the Lord Archbishop entertained the time with sundry discourses in Latine. To this great Feast Prince Henry was also invited, and would have bin there, but he was sicke,

¹ Of Somerset House see under the King of Denmark's first visit in p. 69, and again under his second visit in 1616.

² Whose Entertainment of the King through the City in 1603-4 is printed in vol. I. p. 337 *et seq.*

³ See vol. I. p. 234.

⁴ The only copy of this Pageant that I know to exist is one which was sold at Mr. Garrick's sale, April 24, 1823. It was bound up with the City Pageants of 1626, 1631, 1679, and 1691, and other tracts, and the volume was purchased for 40 guineas by Mr. Thorpe, who has since parted with it to Mr. Heber. I have not yet obtained a transcript, but if I am favoured with one in time, it shall appear in the Appendix to this Volume.

and could not come. After dinner, the Lord Maior and his Brethren in the behalfe of the Cittie and Cittizens of London, for testimonie of hearty welcome and their love, presented the Palsgrave with a very large bason and eure of silver richly gilded and curiously wrought; and two great gilded livery pots¹."

November 3, Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Count Palatine continues in favor and liking with all, specially at Court, saving some Papists or popishly affected, whereof divers have been called *coram* for disgracefull speeches of him; and amongst the rest, as I hear, Sir Robert Drury; who (because he was not entertained by him or his, as in his vanity he expected) began to talk maliciously. But the King is much pleased in him, and so is all the Court; and he doth so address himself and apply to the Lady Elizabeth, that he seems to take delight in nothing but her company and conversation. He is now lodged in the late Lord Treasurer's lodgings. Yesterday the Lady Elizabeth invited him to a solemn supper and a Play, and they meet often at meals without curiosity of bidding. On Sunday was sevensnight he dined with the King and Prince in the Privy-chamber; but sat bare all the while; either by custom, or rather, as is thought, to bear the Prince company, who never came abroad since that day, being seized by a fever, that came upon him at first with a looseness, but hath continued a quotidian ever since Wednesday last, and with more violence than it began; so that on Sunday he was let blood by advice of most Physicians, though Butler of Cambridge was loth to consent. The blood proved foul, and that afternoon he grew very sick, so that the King, Queen, and Lady Elizabeth went severally to visit him; and Revelling and Plays appointed for that night were put off. But the next morning he was somewhat amended, and so continues every day bettering. He and the Count Palatine were invited, and had promised, to the Lord Mayor's Feast on Thursday last; and great preparations were made for them; but by this accident he failed. The Count Palatine and his company, after they had seen the Shew in Cheapside, went to Guildhall, and were there feasted and welcomed by Sir John Swinnerton, the new-made Lord Mayor, and were presented toward the end of the dinner, in the name of the City, with a fair standing cup, a curious basin and ewer², with two large livery

¹ Howes' Chronicle.

² The present is thus described in the City Records: "a bason and ewer gilt, weighing 234oz. 3grs.; one pair of dansk potts, chast and cheseld, weighing 513½oz. ½gr.; having the armes of the City and the wordes, 'CIVITAS LONDON' engraved thereon in divers places."

pots, weighing together 1200 ounces, to the value of almost £.500. The Merchant Adventurers had sent him a present of wine, the Saturday before, to the value of 100 marks. He behaved himself very courteously and in very good fashion at the Feast, and would needs go to see and salute the Lady Mayoress and her Train where she sat. The Shew was somewhat extraordinary with four or five Pageants, and other devices; and the day was fair enough on land, but great winds on the water had like to have marred all; for divers of the Companies were in great danger and pain to run their barges on ground, and some to turn back, so that my Lord Mayor with much ado came almost alone to Westminster. If the Prince's sickness do not hinder, the King means to go towards Royston on Friday; and it is thought takes the young Count along with him.

“*Signor Fabritio* is thought to be down in the wind; and I hope his business will follow the same way. The King confronted him lately with a railing book of one Schoppius (as I take it) where he cites him as a dissembler, and sent for the purpose; as having at his coming out of Italy written in a German's book, or *albo amicorum*, “*H. W. Legatus, vir bonus, missus ad mentiendum Reipublicæ causâ.*” And though he would have avoided it as a merriment, yet the King told him it was no jesting matter; and that he should answer for himself, for he would have it cleared¹. I have this from some that were by, for it fell out as the King was at dinner.”

¹ The Reader has been already apprized that “*Signor Fabritio*” was a *soubriquet* used by Mr. Chamberlain for Sir Henry Wotton. The incident mentioned above was one of no little importance to that eminent Statesman, in as much as it risked his favour with his Sovereign. That favour appears, however, to have been of firm foundation, having commenced at an early period. Its origin was as follows: In 1599, whilst Mr. Wotton was residing at Florence, in intimate acquaintance with Signor Vietta, Secretary to the Grand Duke of Tuscany, that Potentate by means of intercepted letters discovered a design to poison the King of Scotland, and was anxious to put James on his guard against the assassins. Vietta recommended Wotton to convey the intelligence; and introduced him to the Duke, from whom he received his instructions, together with such Italian antidotes against poison as had been till then unknown to the Scots. This expedition, which was secretly pregnant with the chief future events of his life, was marked by circumstances of romantic singularity. He assumed an Italian name, and, to avoid observation, particularly by any of his own country, travelled post into Norway, and thence embarked for Scotland, where he found the King at Stirling. Walton, in his Life of Sir Henry, relates his introduction to James with peculiar interest. “He used means,” says he, “by Bernard Lindsey, one of the King's Bed-chamber, to procure him a speedy and private conference with his Majesty, assuring him that the business which he was to negotiate was of such consequence as had caused the Great Duke of Tuscany to enjoin him suddenly to leave his native country of Italy to impart it to his Majesty. This being by Bernard Lindsey made known to the

We are now arrived at the period of the most melancholy event in our Annals. A very complete account of the fatal illness of Prince Henry, exhibiting his King, he, after a little wonder, mixed with jealousy, to hear of an Italian Ambassador or messenger, required his name, which he said to be Octavio Baldi, and appointed him to be heard privately at a fixed hour that evening. When Octavio Baldi came to the Presence-chamber door, he was requested to lay aside his rapier, which, Italian-like, he then wore; and being entered the chamber, he found there with the King three or four Scotch Lords, standing distant in several corners of the chamber, at the sight of whom he made a stand, which the King observing, bade him be bold, and deliver his message, for he would undertake for the secrecy of all that were present. Then did Octavio Baldi deliver his letters and his message to the King in Italian, which when the King had graciously received, after a little pause, Octavio Baldi steps to the table and whispers to the King in his own language that he was an Englishman, beseeching him for a more private conference with his Majesty, and that he might be concealed during his stay in that nation." The King acceded to Mr. Wotton's request, and having been highly entertained by him during his stay of three months, despatched him with his acknowledgements to the Duke. He had not been long returned to Florence, when the news of Queen Elizabeth's death and King James's accession to the Crown of England, arrived. He then set out for England, and, as it should seem, not sooner than welcome, for the King finding among the late Queen's servants a Sir Edward Wotton (Henry's eldest brother, on whom he presently bestowed a Barony; see vol. I. pp. 119, 260) asked him, "if he," to use again the words of Walton, "knew one Henry Wotton, who had spent much time in foreign travel. The other replied, that he knew him well, and that he was his brother. Then the King asking where then he was, was answered at Venice or Florence, but that by late letters he understood he would soon be at Paris. 'Send for him then,' said the King, 'and when he shall come into England, bid him repair to me.' The Lord Wotton, after a little wonder, asked the King if he knew him, to which the King answered, 'You must rest unsatisfied of that till you bring the Gentleman to me.' Not many months after this discourse, the Lord Wotton brought his brother to attend the King, who took him into his arms, and bade him welcome by the name of Octavio Baldi, saying he was the most honest, and therefore the best, dissembler that ever he met with; and said, 'Seeing I know you neither want learning, travel, nor experience, and that I have had so real a testimony of your faithfulness and abilities to manage an embassy, I have sent for you to declare my purpose, which is to make use of you in that kind hereafter;' and indeed the King did so most of the two-and-twenty years of his reign." Walton says the King then knighted him, but, not having found his name in the printed lists of Knights, I think it probable that honour had been conferred on him in Scotland. The King amply proved the sincerity with which he had spoken of Wotton's abilities, by giving him the choice of those three missions then considered most important—to Paris, Madrid, or Venice. He chose the latter, and left England in the spring of 1604. It was on his journey thither, not his return, that the incident mentioned in the text took place.—Perhaps, as Mr. Chamberlain's hearsay report is incorrect in more than one particular, it may be proper to tell the story more circumstantially. Passing through Germany, he stayed some days at Augsburg; where, happening to spend a social evening with some ingenious and learned men whom he had before known in his travels, one Christopher Flecamore requested him to

diurnal state during the twelve days of its duration, was published by Sir Charles Cornwallis in his *Life of the Prince*. Some of the most interesting passages¹ shall be here introduced :

“ But now, whether the continual violences of his exercises, or too frequent eating of abundance of grapes and other fruits, or some settled melancholly

write some sentence in his Album (an article which needs no description at the present day, but which my authority defines as “a paper book which the German gentry used to carry about with them for that purpose”). Sir Henry Wotton, consenting to the motion, took occasion from some incidental discourse of the company to write a definition of an Ambassador in these words : “ *Legatus est vir bonus peregre missus ad mentiendum Reipublicæ causâ,*” which Walton says he would have interpreted thus : “An Ambassador is an honest man sent to *lie abroad* for the good of his country.” The word *lie* was the hinge on which this conceit turned ; yet it was no conceit at all in Latin, and therefore could not bear the construction Sir Henry, according to Walton, wished to have put upon it. More than six years had elapsed, when the Album falling into the hands of Gaspar Scioppius, the celebrated Romanist pamphleteer, he printed this ridiculous conceit in two several invectives against King James as a principle of the religion professed by the King and his Ambassador ; and in Venice it was presently after written in several glass-windows, and spitefully declared to be Sir Henry’s. This coming, continues Walton, to the knowledge of the King, he apprehended it to be such an oversight, such weakness, or worse, that he expressed much anger against him. To appease the monarch Sir Henry wrote two apologies in Latin ; one to the King, the other to Velsar, one of the chief municipal officers at Augsburg ; both of which were dispersed over Germany. These, says Walton, gave such satisfaction that the King entirely forgave Sir Henry, declaring publicly, that “ he had commuted sufficiently for a greater offence.” Still Wotton remained unemployed for more than four years after. It may be observed both above and in p. 456 that Mr. Chamberlain rather sneers at the hero of this note ; this was to gratify his Correspondent Sir Dudley Carleton, who was Sir Henry Wotton’s rival as Ambassador to the Venetian Court. As to his “ pictures and projects,” mentioned in p. 456, it is to be remarked that Sir Henry brought over to this country many German and Italian artists, who at last became burdensome to him ; for, notwithstanding his numerous public employments, from his liberality and want of economy he was much straitened in his circumstances. As some recompense he was in 1625 appointed Provost of Eton College, a preferment which at first appears singular for one who had spent his days as a Courtier and Ambassador, yet the great Bacon was then his competitor. The office was, however, well suited to him, now desirous to pass the remainder of his days in studious pursuits, free from the bustle of life. He died in December 1639. His picture in the Bodleian Library is engraved among Lodge’s Portraits of Illustrious Personages.

¹ In continuation of what has been inserted in pp. 451—453. The rather indelicate account of the Prince’s symptoms and medicines is all that is here omitted ; the medical antiquary may peruse the treatise intire in the second volume of Somers’s Tracts. The accounts of the death and funeral of the Prince printed in Peck’s *Desiderata Curiosa*, from a MS. of John More, Bishop of Ely, are extracts from the same tract (Cornwallis’s *Life*). In the Public Library, Cambridge, is a MS. account of the Manner of the Sickness and Death of Prince Henry.

engendered by some unknown causes¹, I cannot determine, yet did he looke still more pale and thinne, from day to day, complaining now and then of a cold lazie drowsinesse in his head, which, as I think, moved him many times to aske questions of divers about him, concerning the qualitie, cure, and nature of the feaver, called, for the strange diversitie, the New Disease²; belike, fearing some such like thing by his indisposition. He often used before this now and then, and in his sicknesse, to sigh often, whereof being sometimes demanded the cause by his Physician Dr. Hammond, and others neere him, he would sometimes reply, that he knew not, sometimes that they came unawares, and sometimes also that they were not without cause.

“At the beginning of October, his continuall head-ache, lazinesse, and indisposition increasing, which notwithstanding because of the time he strove mightily to conceale, whereas oft before he used to rise early in the morning to walke the fields, he did lye a-bed almost every morning until nine of the clocke, complayning of his lazinesse, and that he knew not the cause; during which time, belike jealous of himselfe, he would many mornings before his rising ask of the Groomes of his Bed-chamber, ‘How do I looke this morning?’ And at other

¹ Cornwallis, in this and other passages seems to hint a suspicion of foul play. Weldon, Wilson, Osborne, Welwood, and other collectors of private history, have more grievously insinuated the same accusation. Rochester, afterwards Earl of Somerset, was supposed to be the perpetrator of this villainy; and some have ventured to assert that the King was privy to the murder of his son. Sir Francis Bacon, in his Speech against Somerset, is said to have hinted at the assassination of Prince Henry; and in the strange letter written by the disgraced Favourite to James, in which he obviously claims merit for not having discovered some infamous secret, he has been supposed to allude to James's connivance at the crime. But the mystery was probably of a different kind. The distinct report of so many Physicians may be safely admitted to counterbalance popular rumours, so easily founded on the general regret of a hopeful Prince, and hatred to an unworthy Favourite, who was known to have been at variance with him.

² It was of this “New Disease” that the Countess of Oxford had lately died; see p. 450. On the 29th, Mr. Newton, speaking of the Prince's illness, writes as follows, from St. James's, to Sir Thomas Edmonds: “It hath lingered upon him above a fortnight, his Highness thinking, by the vigour of his spirit and strength of his body, to overcome it in such sort, that he scarce omitted his ordinary exercises of running at ring and playing at tennis. But, since Sunday last, the Physicians, fearing that it should prove either a *bastard tertian* or the *ordinary disease of the time, wherewith all parts of the country have been much visited*, have ranged him to the observance of their prescriptions, so that he hath not had yet a convenient time to read your last.” Thomas Chapman, in his “Epicede” (of which see hereafter), says the fever was supposed by the Physicians to be brought from Hungary.

times the same question againe; which they, fearing no danger, to make his Highnesse laugh, would put off with one jest or other.

“ But he still continuing ill, the tenth of the foresaid moneth, he had two small fits of an ague, forcing him to keepe his chamber; which his Highnesse finding, had some speech with Dr. Hammond¹ his Physitian, willing belike to have taken some strong phisicke, the sooner to have removed the cause. But he not daring to be too bold with his Highnesse, without a further consent, did onely give unto his Highnesse a softening glister, which had its own good effects.

“ On the 13th of October, he having, as was thought, taken cold, was seized with a diarrhæa; yet on the morrow he finding himself, as he said, reasonably well, because of the Palsgrave's comming, he hasted from thence to Saint James's, whereupon he gave order, and would needes remove on Thursday the 15th of the same moneth, notwithstanding any perswasions whatsoever to the contrary.

“ To Saint James's he came, seeming well, but that he looked pale and ill, so that sundry did speake suspiciously of his lookes, fearing some distemper in his body; yet so strong was his minde, that, complaining of nothing, he did beare out the matter very bravely in shew, being so well that he gave his Physitian, who had waited a long time, leave to go home to his house. Meanwhile his indisposition still continuing and increasing, there might have beene perceived in him a sudden great change; for he began to be displeased almost with every thing, exceeding curious in all things, yet not regarding, but looking as it were with the eyes of a stranger upon them; for sundry things shewed him, which before he wonted to talke of, aske questions, and view curiously, he now scarce vouchsafed to looke upon, turning them away with the backe of his hand, and departing, as who would say, I take pleasure in nothing. Yet was he wonderfully busie in providing, and giving order for every thing belonging to his care, for his Sister's Marriage, advancing the same by all meanes possible, keeping also his Highnesse the Palsgrave company, so much as conveniently he could, together with Count Henrie, his Excellencie Grave Maurice his brother, whom he also much honoured and esteemed, belike because of a noble and heroicke disposition which he saw

¹ Henry his youngest son, born August 18, 1605, and well known to the learned world by his learned writings, (a long list of which is given in Wood's *Athenæ*, by Bliss, vol. III. col. 493 *et seq.*) had the honour of receiving his Christian name at the Font from the Prince, “ that great favourer of meriting servants and their relations,” as he is styled by Dr. Fell in his *Life of that divine*, p. 2 (second edit. London, 1662).

in him fitting his humour, with whom he used to play often at cardes and tennis, delighting much in his company; and, above all the rest, one great match they had at tennis¹ on Saturday the 24th of October, the day before his last sicknesse, where his undaunted courage, negligently, carelesly, and wilfully (neither considering the former weake estate of his body, danger, nor coldnesse of the season), as though his body had been of brasse, did play in his shirt, as if it had been in the heat of summer; during which time he looked so wonderful ill and pale, that all the beholders took notice thereof, muttering to one another what they feared; but he, the match being ended, carried himself so well as if there was no such matter, having all this while a reasonable good stomack to meat; yet this night, at his going to bed, complaining more than usual of his lazinesse and head-ache.

“ But oh, whither goe I now? must I againe launch out into a sea of sorrowes, adding more griefes unto our yet bleeding wounds? Oh Death! was there no remedy? When wilt thou make an end? shall the grave devour alwayes? was thy charge so strait that thou couldst shoote neither at great nor small, but at the Prince of our Israel? doe sweete-smelling flowers so much delight thy grisly ghastly sense's appetite, that thou wouldst gather none but our fairest, well-beloved, scarce-blown rose? why didst thou so soone robbe us? I know (but that thou, who scornest to reason with thy captives, disdainest to answer thy slaves) thou couldst give us many reasons; wherefore I leave to reason with thee, and, turning againe to my dolefull relation, will begin,

Quanquam animus meminisse horret, luctusque refugit;

for *Quis talia fando*
Temperet à lacrymis?

“ On Sunday morning, the 25th of October 1612, the morrow after his Highnesse's violent play at tennis, it was told him, (the custome of the house being to have the Sermon betimes in the morning, for the most part where the Court lay so neere, because he used after his owne to heare the King's also,) that Master Wilkinson, one of his Father's Chaplaines², was ready and did present his service

¹ “ Tennis and Pike” had always been the Prince's most favourite amusements; see p. 268.

² Of Mr. Wilkinson and his published Sermons see p. 103. It is there mentioned that that preached on the present occasion was published with another in 1614. Their full title was as follows: “A Pair of Sermons successively preached to a Pair of peerless and succeeding Princes; the former as an anti-funeral to the late Prince Henry, anno Dom. 1612, October 25, the first day of his last and fatal sick-

to preach that morning if it pleased his Highnesse to heare him; which he no sooner heard, but, contrary to his late usuall custome of long time, although that morning he found himselfe somewhat drousie and ill, addressed himselfe to be made ready; for he wonderfully delighted to heare the said Mr. Wilkinson, ever since the time, long before, in which he heard him preach a Sermon of Judgement, which he did so well like of that many times he did speake of the same, affirming it to have beene so excellent that he in a manner did shew them the same¹. Long it was not ere his Highnesse was ready and gone to the Chappel to heare him.

“ But ere I proceed, give me leave, I intreate you, to admire the wonderfull providence and goodnesse of God, which did so provide for him a Sermon of mortification or preparation, which you will; for the time, text, powerfull delivery, method, &c. were also fitting to our following unthought-of funerall, as though an angell had come the whole weeke before from Heaven, prefixing unto him the time, necessity, text, order, and amplifications thereof, so truly did he thunder out the mortal misery of mankind, but chiefly of Princes; the text was out of Job the xiv. ver. 1, ‘ Man that is borne of a woman is of short continuance and full of trouble.’ From which he shewed three things; first, our miserable entry into the world, and short continuance; lastly, our miserable pilgrimage and endurance in the world full of trouble; in which the misery and trouble of all estates were well shewed, but chiefly those of great ones. Sermon being ended, his Highnesse did commend the same, being very attentive all the time thereof; presently thereafter going into Whitehall, where he also did heare another Sermon with the
ness; the latter preached this present year 1614, January 16, to the now living Prince Charles, as a preserver of his life, and life to his soul.” They are dedicated to Prince Charles.

¹ “ Most ardent in his love to religion,” says Sir Charles Cornwallis in another place, “ (to which love and all the good causes thereof, his heart was bent by some meanes or other, if he had lived, to have shewed, and some way to have compounded the unkind jarres thereof,) he well shewed his love to good men and hatred of the evill, in discerning a good preacher from a vaine-glorious, in whom above all things he abhorred flattery; loving and countenancing the good, of the idle and loitering never speaking but with disdain; in which he shewed he had a heart flexible to good and all kindnesse, which, as I thinke, was the cause one day he uttered this speech of the Deane of Rochester his Chaplaine; that he thought, whereas he and others like him, at their first entry into the pulpit, did looke him in the face, there countenance did as it were say unto him, ‘ Sir, you must heare me diligently; you must have a care to observe what I say.’ As also in his constancie in observing the prayer-time duely before dinner and supper, which untill his death he never willingly omitted, whatsoever haste he had, or were it never so late.”

King his Father; which being also done, to dinner they went, his Highnesse in outward appearance eating with a reasonable good stomach, yet looking exceeding ill and pale, with hollow ghastly dead eyes perceived of a great many. After dinner, for all his great courage and strife to over-master the greatnesse of his evil, dissembling the same, the Conqueror of all, about three a clock in the afternoone, began to skirmish with a suddaine sicknesse and faintnesse of the heart, usuall unto him, whereupon followed shortly after a shaking, with great heat and head-ache, which from henceforth never left him. His Highnesse finding himself thus suddainely taken, was forced to take his leave, departing home unto his bed; where being laid he found himselfe very ill, remaining all this evening in an agony, having a great drought, which after this could never be quenched but with death; his eyes also being so dimme that they were not able to endure the light of a candle. This night he rested ill.

“ The second day, his Highness finding intermission, which continued all that day, did arise, and put on his cloaths, playing at cards that day, and the next also, with his Brother the Duke of Yorke and Count Henry. Meanwhile there were many messages sent from the Court and every where else, to know how things went, all which, no person surmising the least danger, were answered with good hopes; yet his Highness for all this looked ill and pale, spake hollow, and somewhat strangely, with dead sunk eyes, his drinesse of mouth and great thirst continuing. This night resting quietly.

“ On Tuesday the 27th, the third day of his sicknesse, he found some ease in the morning; so that all were in good hope that it would have proved but some tertian, or bastard tertian at the most, notwithstanding that his Highnesse's ghastly rowling uncoath lookes did put them in some feare. This day his Majesty did send Master Nasmith, his Surgeon¹, to attend his Highnesse during his sicknesse; unto whom, and divers others conferring of his Highnesse's sicknesse and the danger of the same, Doctor Mayerne² (his Majestie's cheife Phi-

¹ Who had received Free-gifts of £.66 in 1605 and 1607; see pp. 44, 191.

² This eminent Physician, son of Louis de Mayerne, author of a “ General History of Spain” and of the “ Monarchie aristo-democratique,” dedicated to the States General, was born at Geneva in 1572, and had for his godfather Theodore Beza. His religion only had prevented his being appointed Physician to Henry the Fourth of France. He first visited England in 1607, having had under his care an Englishman of quality, who on his recovery brought him to this country. He then had a private conference with James, but returned to Paris, and remained there till the assassination of Henry IV. in May 1610. It was in the following year, only the preceding one to the present, that

sitian) did say, that, in his judgment, the surest way for his Highnesse's safety was bleeding. But his opinion not being allowed of the rest, there was as yet no consultation for blood-letting, nor any inclination that wayes. This morning he did rise and put on his cloathes; but his fit comming about noone, first with a cold, then with a greate heate, without any sweat, continuing untill eight at night, he was forced to go to bed againe. This night resting quietly.

"On Wednesday the 28th, and fourth day of his sicknesse, in the morning came Master Butler, the famous Physitian of Cambridge, a marvellous great scholler, and of long practise and singular judgment, but withall very humerous¹; who, whatsoever he thought, comforting him with good hopes that he would shortly recover and that there was no danger, yet secretly unto others did not let to speake doubtfully, as they say his humour is, that he could not tell what to make of it, and that he did not well like of the same²; adding further, that if he did recover, he was likely to lye by it for a great while, with divers other like speeches; neither could he be perswaded all the time of his Highnesse's sicknesse to stay any longer with him than one houre or thereabouts every morning, and so in the afternoone to give his counsell and advice with the rest. What moved him I know not; whether he did mislike the French Doctor's³ company, or because the cure was not committed to him as chiefe, or being jealous and mis-

the King had caused him to be invited by his Ambassador, to become First Physician to himself and the Queen, in which capacity he continued to James, Charles the First, and Charles the Second, (though under the latter his office was merely nominal,) till his death in 1655. He was admitted Doctor at both Universities, and into the College of Physicians. His opinion on the present occasion respecting bleeding appears to have been confirmed by the melancholy event; but he incurred some obloquy at the time, which should rather have fallen on Dr. Butler. Dr. Mayerne's conduct, however, obtained the approbation of the King and Council, of which certificates, couched in the most satisfactory terms, were given him. He was knighted by the King, July 14, 1624, and was a particular favourite of Queen Henrietta Maria. See his life in the Biographical Dictionary.

¹ Master William Butler, "one of the greatest Physicians and most capricious humourists of his time," was Fellow of Clare Hall, Cambridge, and afterwards settled in that town. Among the many droll stories told of him, is one of Aubrey's, that when he was once sent for to King James at Newmarket, he suddenly turned back to go home, and the messenger was forced to drive him before him. He died in 1618, aged 82. "His sagacity in judging of distempers was very great, and his method of cure was sometimes as extraordinary; he was bold and singular in his practice, and the oddity of his manners gave him a very great character among the vulgar, who conceived that he must possess very extraordinary abilities." See the Biographical Dictionary.

² Butler is said to have made an unfavourable prognostic at first sight from the Prince's cadaverous look.

³ Dr. Mayerne.

liking his Highnesse's disease, and therefore loved not to meddle too much in the cure, which I rather imagine, or whether his health or humour impeached the same, I dare not judge, the curious may best learne from himselfe; yet having at his comming enquired what was done, he approved the same, and wished the continuance of the same proceedings untill a further judgement might be given of the same event. Yet did his Highnesse finde small or no ease, but his feaver as yet not being continuall, he did rise and put on his clothes, they all as yet conceiving reasonable good hopes.

"On Thursday the 29th, and fifth day of his sicknesse, hopes began a little to diminish; howbeit that morning his head-ache was somewhat lessened, his breath also, which before was short, being longer, which moved him to put on his cloathes, endeavouring to rise as he had done before; but his head being so giddy that he was not able to stand alone, he was forced to betake him to his bed againe; from henceforth ever keeping his bed. This evening there appeared a fatall signe, about two hours or more within the night, bearing the colours and shew of a rainbow¹, which hung directly crosse and over Saint James's House. It was first perceived about seven a clocke at night, which I my selfe did see, which divers others looking thereupon with admiration, continuing untill past bed-time, being no more seene. This night was unquiet, and he rested ill.

"On the seventh day, nature, as the day before, though not in quantity, did, as was said, shew the necessity of bleeding; for which cause, it was with more instance againe propounded and urged than ever, as the onely meanes, under

¹ A lunar rainbow. The dread of these meteorological phenomena, as presaging the death of Princes and desolation of Kingdoms, was deeply impressed upon the wisest men of the time, as appears from the following quotation: "At this time appeared a comet, which gave occasion of much discourse to all sorts of men; amongst others a learned Knight, Sir John Heydon, our countryman, confidently and boldly affirmed 'That such persons were but abusers, and did but flatter greatness, who gave their verdict that that comet was effectual, as some would have it, or signal, as others judge it, onely to Africa, whereby they laid it far enough from England. When this Knight, out of the consideration of the zodiack, which this comet measured, the inclination of his sword and blade, and to what place both the head and tail became vertical, together with other secrets,' said, 'that not onely all Europe, to the elevation of fifty-two degrees, was liable to its threatenings, but England especially; yea, that person, besides, in whose fortune we are no less embarked than the passenger with the ship is in the pilot that guides the same, the truth whereof, said he, a few years will manifest to all men.' And it was observed by Dr. Bainbridge, a famous Astronomer, that, toward the declination of it, the 11th of December, it past over London in the morning, and so hasted more northwards, even as far as the Orcades." Rushworth's Collections, vol. I. p. 8. — The Poets on Prince Henry's death, as may be imagined, did not forget to allude to so poetical an assistant as this rainbow.

God, to save his Highnesse. At length, after much adoe *pro* and *contra*, Doctor Mayerne urging and Master Butler chiefly withstanding the same, mistaking the first beginning of his Highnesse's sicknesse; in the end the three Doctors, Mayerne, Hamond, and Butler, did agree, that on the morrow, being Sunday, the eighth broken and the seventh whole day of his last sicknesse, a veine should be opened; all this while, untill the bleeding was past, they conceived good hope of his recovery, yet he remained dangerously ill. You must imagine that all this while of his sicknesse the whole world did almost every houre send unto Saint James's for newes; the better sort, who were admitted to visit him, or acquainted with those neere unto him, knowing the danger, the rest fearing nothing, imagining it onely to have been some common tertian, for which cause in many places neere unto the City he was thought dead and gone, before they knew that he was dangerously sick. This night was more cruel and unquiet unto him than any other.

"On Sunday the first of November, and the eighth day of his sicknesse, according to their former agreement, after much adoe, Master Butler resisting to consent that he should be let bloud, because, as he said, it was the eighth day, proffering to have left them, untill he was forced to stay and give his consent; Dr. Hamond and others proving unto him that it was not the eighth day, his Highnesse being ill of a long time before, howsoever he strangely, with a wonderful courage and patience, concealed the same. His Highnesse being still, after one, in the presence of the foresaid Doctors and divers others of very good worth, was drawne out of the median of his right arme, seven or eight ounces of bloud; during which time he fainted not, bleeding well and abundantly, desiring and calling to them to take more, as they were about to stop the same, finding some ease as it were upon the instant. This day after his bleeding he found great ease; and in the afternoone he was visited by his Royal Father, Mother, Brother, Sister, the Palsgrave, with others of the Court; all which conceiving good hopes departed from thence reasonably cheerful. Yet that night, though better than others, he passed unquietly.

"On Monday the second of November, the ninth day, Doctor Atkins¹, a Phisitian of London, famous for his practice, honesty, and learning, was sent by his Majesty to assist the rest in the cure; whose opinion, as they said, was that his Highnesse's disease was a corrupt putrid fever. This day and the next he was visited by the King his Father, and others of the Court, whose

¹ Dr. Atkins had attended the Earl of Salisbury during his fatal illness; see before, p. 447, and Peck's *Desiderata Curiosa*, p. 207. He died at his house in Warwick-court, near Warwick-lane, Sept. 22, 1634.

exceeding sorrow I cannot expresse; yet were they still fed with some good small hopes of his recovery. All this while, although he grew worse and worse, yet none discouraged him with any speech of death, so loath were they to thinke of his departure, he himselfe being so tormented with this and the next daye's sicknesse that he could not thinke thereof; or, if he had, yet the Physitians' courage and hope of life, which good opinion, (his unspeakable patience not any way complaining, so that he could not have beene knowne to be sicke but by his lookes,) moved them to conceive, telling him there was no danger, dashed the same. This night came upon him greater alienations of braine, ravings, and idle speeches out of purpose, calling for his cloathes and his rapier, &c. saying, he must be gone, he would not stay, and I know not what else, to the great grieve of all that heard him, whose hopes now began to vanish.

“On Tuesday November 3d, and the tenth of his sicknesse, he became worse than before, all his former accidents encreasing exceedingly, his boundings being turned into convulsions, his raving and benumbing becoming greater, the fever more violent; whereupon bleeding was againe proposed by Dr. Mayerne and the favourers thereof, who still affirmed that he did mislike the too sparing proceeding with his Highnesse; alledging, that in this case of extremity, they must, if they meane to save his life, proceed in the cure, as though it were to some meane person, forgetting him to be a Prince whom they had now in hand, otherwise he said, for ought he saw, because he was a Prince he must die, but if he were a meane person he might be saved. This day, for easing of the extreame paine of his head, the hair was shaven away, and *pigeons* and cupping glasses applied to lessen and draw away the humour and that superfluous blood from the head, which he endured with wonderfull and admirable patience, as though he had beene insensible of paine; yet all without any good, save perhaps some small seeming hope of comfort for the present. Now began the pilots who guided this fraile barque of his Highnesse's body almost to despaire to escape the ensuing tempests; some of whose lookes did now more than ever discourage the rest. For this night he became very weake, the fever augmenting, the raving becoming worse than ever, in which he began to tosse and tumble, to sing in his sleepe, profering to have leaped out of the bed, gathering the sheets together, the convulsions being more violent.

“On the following (the eleventh day) a *cocke* was cloven by the backe, and applyed unto the soles of his feet, but in vaine; the cordials also were redoubled

in number and quantitie, but without any profit. This afternoon his Majestie hearing of his undoubted danger, although more sober than at other times, came to see him; but being advertised how matters went, and were likely to go, and what addition of griefe it would be unto him to see his best-beloved Sonne in that extremity, he was at last perswaded to depart without visitation; yet giving order and command before his departure, that from thenceforth, because his Highnesse was continually molested with a number which out of their love came to visit him, no creature should be admitted to see him, save those who of necessitie must tend upon him, untill the event and issue of his disease was seene, which was accordingly done; his Highnesse, for his more ease, being removed into another longer and quieter chamber¹. But now all things appearing to be out of frame and confusedly evill, without hope of amendment, whereof the Archbishop of Canterbury hearing he made so much the more haste unto his Highnesse, when, after some discourse fitting that time, seeing so much care to be taken for the mortall body, the immortall soule being neglected², he asked his Highnesse whether there had been any prayers said in his chamber since his sicknesse, or no? To whom he answered that there had not, aleaging the cause to have beene the continuall toile of the Doctors, Apothecaries, and Surgeons about him; and further, that untill now, he was not put in minde thereof; but that for all that he had not failed to pray quietly by himselfe; which his answere pleasing them well, the Archbishop again demanded, if his Highness would now from thenceforth be contented to have prayers said in his chamber, which he willingly assented unto, asking which of his Chaplaines were there present; amongst whom finding that Doctor Milborne³, Dean of Rochester, was then present, he willed the said Deane to be called, as being one whom for his learning, good carriage, and profitable preaching, above all the rest he ever affected and respected. The Archbishop meane while, not willing too much to disquiet his Highnesse, called

¹ "Just over this chamber, wherein he dyed, did the fatall rainbowe afore-mentioned hang, as Doctor Mayerne observed."

² "Notwithstanding, the Prince was seriously remembred to commend himselfe into the hands of God, before this, by Doctor Mayerne, who found his resolution therein to be most heavenly and divine."

³ Richard Milbourne, D. D. born at London, though of a Pembrokeshire family, and educated at Winchester and Queen's College, Cambridge. He was Minister of Sevenoke in Kent; Chantor of the Cathedral of St. David's; Dean of Rochester; Bishop of St. David's 1615; Carlisle 1621; and died in 1624.—An anecdote of his preaching before the Prince has been told in p. 474.

for to say prayers that evening at his Highnesse's bed-side, where speaking somewhat low, fearing to offend his distempered eares, his Highnesse willed him to speake aloud, thereafter repeating the confession of his faith word by word after him; from henceforth the foresaid Deane continued to pray dayly with him at his bed-side untill his departure. This night was unquiet as the rest.

“ On Thursday morning the 5th of November, and the twelfth of his sickness, newes was sent to his Majesty of the undoubted danger, and that there now remained no hopes or meanes of his Highnesse's recovery, but with desperate and dangerous attempts; which his Majesty considering, gave leave and absolute power to Doctor Mayerne, his chiefe Phisitian, to do what he would of himselfe without advice of the rest, if in such an extremity it were possible to doe any thing for his Highnesse's safety; but he, weighing the greatnesse of the care and eminency of the danger, would not for all that adventure to doe any thing of himselfe, without advise of the rest, which he alwayes tooke, saying, it should never be said in after ages that he had killed the King's eldest Sonne¹. His Majesty mean while, whose sorrow no tongue can expresse, not willing nor being able to stay so neare the gates of so extreame sorrow, more like a dead than a living man, full of most wonderfull heavinesse removed to Theobalds, there to expect the dolefull event. Mean while, amongst the Doctors Mayerne, Hammond, Butler, and Atkins, bleeding was now the third time proposed; but the rest of the counsell misliking this advice did conclude to double and treble the cordials, making a revulsion from the head with a clister, whose working was to small effect, save that his Highnesse became more sensible thereafter. In the mean time the Archbishop of Canterbury, hearing of the danger, came unto his Highnesse in great haste, where, finding him in extreame danger, he thought it more than high time to goe about another kind of cure; and therefore, like a wise and skilfull Phisitian, first trying the humour of his patient before he would proceed in the cure, he addressed himselfe gently and mildly to aske how his Highnesse found himself since his departure; at whose reply, seeing every thing amisse, he began againe further to feele his mind, first preparing him his antidote against the feare of death, that the preparation thereunto, meditation and think-

¹ Had Dr. Mayerne before enjoyed the whole direction, the Prince's life would in all human probability have been saved. What the Doctor is related in p. 479, to have said, that the patient must die because he was a Prince, was equally just and like the truth; yet now we find, when the responsibility is about to be wholly placed on him, he shrinks from the burden.

ing thereof, could nor would bring death the sooner, but the contrary rather, arming himselfe so much the more against it; withall putting him in mind of the excellency and immortality of the soule, with the unspeakeable joyes prepared for God's children, and the basenesse and misery of the earth, with all the vaine, inconstant, momentary, and fraile pleasures thereof in respect of heavenly joyes, with many other most excellent meditations against the same feare of death. Having thus prepared him to heare, he went further, putting him in mind of the exceeding great danger he was in; and that although he might recover, as he hoped he should, yet he might also die; and that since it was an inevitable and irrevocable necessity that all must die once, late or soone, death being the reward of sinne, he asked, if it should so fall out, whether or no he was well pleased to submit himself to the will of God; to which he answered, yea, with all his heart. Then the Archbishop went on demanding questions of his faith; first, of the Religion and Church wherein he lived, which his Highnesse acknowledged to be the onely true Church, wherein onely, and without which there was no salvation; then of his faith in Christ onely, by Him and in Him, without any merits of his owne, being assured of the remission of all his sinnes, which he professed he did, hoping and trusting onely therein; then of the resurrection of the body, life everlasting, and the joyes of Heaven; all which he confessed and beleaved, hoping with all saints to enjoy the same. This conference, with a great deale more, the Archbishop had with him to this purpose; which may also give unto you absolute satisfaction of his soule's health, if thereunto his life be considered. After which, fearing he should too much disquiet him, with many good exhortations, he tooke leave for that time.

“ This day, being the 5th of November, a day of everlasting remembrance and thanksgiving for our deliverance from the Powder Treason, was order given every where unto all Churches to pray for his Highnesse, untill when the great danger was unknowne to the Commons, which was effectually as ever untill his death performed¹.

“ This day, and at sundry other times since his confusion of speech, he would many times call upon Sir David Murray, Knight, (the onely man in whom he had put choise trust,) by his name, ‘David! David! David!’ who when he came unto his Highnesse demanding his pleasure, in extremity of pain and stupefaction of senses confounding his speech, sighing, he did reply, ‘I would say somewhat, but

¹ See Mr. Chamberlain's Letter hereafter, p. 487.

I cannot utter it!’ which forme he still used so long as he had any perfect sense or memory. This done also, but too late to assist the rest, came Doctor Palmer and Doctor Giffard¹, famous Phisitians for their honesty, learning, and phisick, who with the former foure went all six to a consultation what now remained finally to be done; wherein by some, as they say, was againe propounded the necessity of bleeding, the opportunity whereof was now over passed. In the end, the Doctors, long before this despairing of his recovery, did at last agree upon diascordium as the onely meanes, under God, now remaining, which, tempered with cooler cordials, was given him in the presence of many honourable Gentlemen about tenne o’clock at night; the operation whereof was small or none. This night was unquiet as the rest, his accidents remaining in the same sort, but now and then speaking, but so confusedly that he could not be understood.

“Among the rest this night, about midnight, Master Nasmith, his Majestie’s Surgeon, sitting on his bed-side, his Highnesse pulled him unto him by the hand, speaking unto him somewhat, but so confusedly, by reason of the rattling of his throat, that he could not be understood; which his Highness perceiving, giving a most grievous sigh as it were in anger, turned him from him, thereafter, unless he was urged, never speaking unto him or any. In this extremity Sir David Murray, who in this one death suffered many, came unto him, entreating him, and asking him, that if he had any thing to say which troubled him, that he would betimes make knowne his mind; but his spirits being overcome, and nature weake, he was not able to say any thing, save that of all other businesse he gave order for the burning of a number of letters in a certain cabinet in his closet, which presently after his death was done.

“Not long after — as I think on Friday morning about three o’clock — his backbone, shoulders, armes, and tongue, by reason of the horrible violence of the convulsions, disjoyntly deviding themselves, the effect shewing that the retentive power was gone, the spirits subdued, the seat of reason overcome, and nature spent; in which extremity, fainting and swooning, he seemed twice or thrice to be quite gone; at which time there arose wonderfull great shouting, weeping, and crying in the chamber, court, and adjoyning streets, which was so great, together with something else which they used, that they brought him againe.

¹ Of whom see vol. I. p. 534; where he appears in the Disputation before the Prince and his Royal Father at Oxford in 1605.

This crie was so great that all those in the streets thought he had beene dead; whereupon it went for the most part current in the city and countrey that he was gone. Thus given over of all into the hands of God did his Highnesse lie in extreame paine, during which, still now and then, till two or three houres before his death, looking up, and speaking, or endeavouring to speake, which for confusion and extremity of paine, being so neere gone, could not be understood, all the world were ready in this despaire to bring cordiall waters, diaphoretick and quintessentiall spirits, to be given unto him; amongst which one in the afternoone was ministred which set that little nature remaining on worke, forcing a small sweat, which too late, was the first he had. Sir Walter Raleigh also did send another from the Tower, which whether or no to give him they did a while deliberate¹. After the operation of the first, his Highnesse rested quietly a little while, presently after falling into his former extremities; whereupon, as the last desperate remedy, with the leave and advice of the Lords of the Counsell there present, the cordial sent by Sir Walter Raleigh, after it had been tasted and proved, was given unto him, but in vaine, save that forcing that sparke of life that remained, it brought him againe into a sweate; after which, as before, he had some rest for a little while. But, no remedy, death would needs be conquerour. In vaine did they strive against the streame; for he shortly after

¹ Dr. Welwood, in his notes on Wilson's Life of James I. (in the Complete History of England, vol. II. p. 714), says, it was sent at the desire of the Queen, who had received relief from it in a fever some time before. Raleigh sent with it a Letter, expressing the most tender concern for the Prince (the sincerity of which none will doubt, but see also hereafter, p. 485); "and, boasting of his medicine, stumbled unluckily upon an expression to this purpose, that *it would certainly cure him*, or any other, of a fever, *except in case of poison*. The Prince dying though he took it, the Queen in the agony of her grief, shewed Raleigh's Letter, and laid so much weight on the expression about poison, that to her dying day, she could never be dissuaded from the opinion that her beloved Son had foul play." Raleigh's expressions probably flowed from an overweening conceit in the force of his own medicine, but are perhaps to be numbered among the circumstances which ensured his destruction. The report that the Prince was poisoned was extremely general; see pp. 471, 487. Some surmised that he was poisoned by a scent, but this Sir Charles Cornwallis, considering the premises, thought great folly.—Raleigh's cordial was afterwards celebrated, as is proved by the following extract from Evelyn's Diary, Sept. 20, 1662: "I accompanied his Majesty to Mons. Febure, his chymist, (and who had formerly been my master in Paris,) to see his accurate preparation for ye composing Sir Walter Raleigh's rare cordial; he made a learned discourse before his Majesty in French on each ingredient." *Memoirs*, vol. I. p. 340.

became wonderfull ill againe; sight and sense failing, as also all the infallible signes of death approaching.

“ In which extremity, the Archbishop of Canterbury being there present, who seeing it was now the time of times, before the last gasp, to minister some comfort unto his Highnesse, if as yet there were any sense remaining, came unto him, first speaking aloud, putting him in mind of all those things which he had spoken unto him the day before in his perfect sense, calling aloud in his eare to remember Christ Jesus, to beleieve, hope, and trust in him, with assured confidence of mercy, to lift up his heart, and to prepare him to meete the Lord Jesus, with many other divine exhortations, thereafter calling more loud than ever, thrice together in his eare, ‘ Sir, heare you mee, heare you mee, heare you mee? if you heare mee, in certaine signe of your faith and hope of the blessed resurrection, give us for our comfort a signe, by lifting up your hands;’ which he did, lifting up both his hands together; againe he desired him yet to give him another signe, by lifting up his eyes; which having done, they let him alone; for the Archbishop had, with streames of teares, poured out at his bed-side a most exceeding powerfull passionate prayer. All this while also, from three o’clock in the morning until night, there was continual prayer in the house, and in every place where the danger was knowne. His Highnesse, at last, halfe a quarter, or thereabouts, before eight a clocke at night, yielded up his spirit unto his immortall Maker, Saviour, and Restorer, being attended unto Heaven with as many prayers, teares, and strong cries, as ever soule was. The corps shortly after, as the custome is, was laide along upon a table on the floore, being the fairest, cleanest, and best proportioned, without any kinde of spot or blemish, as ever was seene.

“ On the morrow after came the Lords of the Councell, by appointment from his Majestie, to give order for the opening of his body, &c. which was the same night effected about five a clocke in the evening, in presence of the Physitians and Chirurgeons who assisted the cure, together with the Physitian of the Prince Palatine, with many other Knights and Gentlemen, in the chamber where he dyed, by the Chirurgeons of his Majestie and his late Highnesse, under all their hands¹.

“ Thus, or very neere thus, lost we the delight of mankind, the expectation of Nations, the strength of his Father, and the glory of his Mother, Religion’s second

¹ Dr. Birch, p. 359, gives the official report of the dissection, signed by the Physicians, from a MS. in the Cotton Library.—See also Mr. Chamberlain’s Letter, p. 487.

hope! Foolish people imagine that they have done enough when they railed upon the Physitians, as though they could have altered Providence, by prolonging his life, never truly beholding the Omnipotent Power bereaving him, which, although in his sicknesse, untill the blow was given, could not be seene, yet now, even of the blind, may be easily discerned. And I pray you, if we narrowly looke upon the practise of the meanes, what omission of the duty shall we find therein? Some neere his Highnesse, together with Dr. Mayerne, at first called and wished he might bleed; others againe misliked the same; both learned. The Physitians, although jarring at first in their propositions and reasons, at last did every thing by a common consent under all their hands; nothing was wanting which either art or experience could thinke thereof. Whatsoever they did they always thought safest and best. They toiled continually day and night; and if it pleased not God to give a blessing to the meanes, must they therefore be blamed? You know Paul may plant, and Apollos may water, but it is God that giveth the increase. But imagine there had been any such strife amongst them, the Physitians, as it is reported, what should we thinke thereof, but that the God of order will sometime have His will brought to passe by a kind of confusion, as He overthrew the Tower of Babel, with the hosts of Midian, &c. So in phisicke, when His will must be done, if it please Him to breake and take away the staffe of bread, not blessing the meanes; who, I say, can lett Him, whose will must be our law, to doe whatsoever He will?

“ Indeed his Highnesse's great and extraordinary patience, striving so long to over-master and hide the same in his health, in my judgment, did much wrong the Physitians, who by reason of his patience never dreamed of his danger; as also his most wonderfull and matchless patience, all the time of his sicknesse, shewing no kind of froward disposition; lying in shew, for any complaints were heard of him, as though he had never been sick nor sore.

“ The Monday after, the Lords of the Privy Councell came to St. James's, to give order for all things belonging to so wofull a business; according to which, the whole house, Chappel, Great-chamber, Presence, Lobby, Privy-chamber, and Bed-chamber, were all hung in black, with all things fitting, thick set with scutcheons of his Highnesse's divers armes; which being done under the state in the chamber where he first sickened, appointed for the coffin, there was a place erected above an ell in height, where it was to stand to be watched untill the Funerall; threescore and tenne Gentlemen of his Servants, ordinary and extra-

ordinary, (which were all he had) being appointed night and day to attend the same, tenne at a time; it being so ordered that the tenne who watched in the night did constantly wait the third day after."

On the 12th of November, Mr. Chamberlain wrote, in the following manner, the melancholy news to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"When I was closing up my last Letter I understood more of the Prince's sickness than I was willing to impart; for I knew it would be no welcome news any where, and I was in hopes the world might amend. But going the next morning, the 5th of November, to hear the Bishop of Ely preach at Court upon Lament. iii. 22¹, I found by the King and Queen's absence from the Sermon, and by his manner of praying for him, how the case stood, and that he was *planè deploratus*. For I cannot learn that he had either speech or perfect memory after Wednesday night, but laying as it were drawing on till Friday between eight and nine p. m. that he departed. The world is here much dismayed at the loss of so hopeful and likely a Prince on such a sudden; and the Physicians are much blamed, though no doubt they did their best. It is verily thought the disease was none other than the ordinary ague that hath reigned and raged almost all over England since the latter end of the summer; which by observation is found must have its ordinary course, and the less physic the better, but only sweating and an orderly course of keeping and government. The extremity of the disease seemed to lie in his head; for remedy whereof they shaved him, and applied warm cocks and pigeons newly killed; but with no success. It was generally feared he had met with ill measure, and there wanted not suspicion of poison, but upon the opening of him the next day toward night there was nothing found. His heart was sound and good; his stomach clean; his liver a little perished; his lungs somewhat mere and spotted; his gall was clean gone and nothing in it; his spleen very black; his head full of clear water; and all the veins of the head full of clotted blood. In his extreme they tried all manner of conclusions upon him, as letting him blood at the nose, and whatsoever else they could imagine; and at the last gave him a quintessence sent by Sir Walter Rawleigh, which, he says, they should have applied sooner, that brought him to some shew of sense and opening of his eyes; and some will needs say, speech; but all faded again presently. Among the rest he hath lost his greatest hope, and was grown into

¹ This Discourse is printed in Bishop Andrews's "XCVI Sermons," the Fourth on the Gunpowder Treason.

special confidence with him, in so much that he had moved the King divers times for him, and had lastly a grant, that he should be delivered out of the Tower before Christmas¹. His Funeral shall be kept the 7th of next month. His revenue was near £.60,000 a year², which returns to the Crown till the young Prince be of more years. But the Duchy of Cornwall shall not come to him at all, as the Lawyers say, by a quirk of law, that it is only entailed *primogenito Regis*; and so was adjudged against Henry VIII., being then Duke of York, after the decease of his brother Prince Arthur.

“The Archbishop of Canterbury was twice or thrice with the Prince, and dealt with him like a grave and religious Churchman, while he was in memory; and afterwards both prayed by him himself and caused others to continue in prayer while there was life. The King, when he saw no hope left, went away on Friday morning to Theobalds, and the Queen removed the same day to Somerset House. His death was exceeding grievous to them both, but specially to the King, who takes it with great impatience; and yet, somewhat to comfort him, there is an observation made, that he is the seventh Prince since the Conquest that hath been taken from us at man's estate.

“The King on Monday came from Theobalds to Kensington to Sir Walter Cope's³, whither the next morning the young Prince, the Lady Elizabeth, and

¹ Sir Walter Raleigh may be said to have been that person, whose future destiny Prince Henry's death affected more than that of any other individual. The mutual friendship of these heroic spirits is generally known. A strong proof of the Prince's regard to Sir Walter (alluded to by Mr. Chamberlain above) has been related in p. 416; and a proof of the latter's regard for the Prince mentioned in p. 433. The high-spirited Henry is reported to have once enthusiastically exclaimed: “None surely but my Father would keep such a bird in a cage!”—“That eminent Writer, Soldier, and Statesman,” says Dr. Birch, “had designed to address to the Prince a discourse ‘Of the Art of War by Sea,’ which his Highness's death prevented the author from finishing. He had written likewise to the Prince another ‘Discourse of a Maritimal Voyage, with the passages and incidents therein;’ but this is only mentioned by him in his ‘Observations concerning the Royal Navy.’ He had also intended, and, as he expresses it, *hewn out* a second and third volume of his ‘History of the World,’ which were to have been directed to his Highness; ‘but it has pleased God,’ says he in the conclusion of his first volume, ‘to take that glorious Prince out of this world, to whom they were directed; whose unspeakable and never-enough lamented loss hath taught me to say with Job, *Versa est in luctum cithera mea, et organum meum in vocem stentium!*’”

² The account, which was taken after the Prince's death, of his Revenue, Expences, and Jewels, is printed in the *Archæologia*, vol. XV. pp. 15 *et seq.* See before, p. 373.

³ Now Holland House; see p. 200. From what Mr. Chamberlain says in his next Letter, this may be presumed to have been the only time the King slept there. Indeed it was too near home to resort to on an ordinary occasion.

the Palsgrave went all together in one coach to him; and that afternoon all the Council. The Lady Elizabeth is much afflicted with this loss, and not without good cause; for he did extraordinarily affect her, and during his sickness inquired after her, and the last words he spake in good sense, they say, were, '*Where is my dear Sister?*' She was as desirous to visit him, and went once or twice in the evening disguised for that purpose, but could not be admitted, because his disease was doubted to be contagious. He meant to have conducted her on her way into Germany to the uttermost bounds of the States' dominions; which purpose he kept very secret; and it came abroad but since his death¹."

Again on the 19th of November, Mr. Chamberlain says:

"The King was quickly weary of Kensington, because he said the wind blew through the walls, that he could not lie warm in his bed. He came to Whitehall yesterday was se'ennight, and went away on Thursday last to Theobalds, and this day for Royston. He carried the Count Palatine along with him, whose marriage by this late accident is retarded, because it would be thought absurd, that foreign Ambassadors coming to condole the Prince's death should find us feasting and dancing; so that it is deferred till May-day, and the mourning for the Prince to continue till the 29th of March; but the fiancing is appointed the 27th of December; and his Counsellors hope, and do their best, to advance the marriage soon after. But the King is earnest to him to send away his Train, saving some five-and-twenty. The Prince's debts are but £.9000, his moveables amount to much more, specially his horses and pictures², which are many and rare, and his medals or antient coins of gold will yield about £.3000. His papers³ shewed him to have many strange and vast conceits and projects.

"The same day se'ennight he died there fell out a very ridiculous accident. A very handsome young fellow, much about his age and not altogether unlike him, came stark naked to St. James's, while they were at supper, saying, he was the Prince's ghost from Heaven with a message to the King; but by no manner of examination or threatening could they get more out of him, or who set him at work. Some say he is simple, others mad. He belongs to one of the Chancery.

¹ Birch's MSS. 4173.

² For his pictures, which afterwards formed part of his Brother Charles's celebrated collection, Prince Henry had a room built by Inigo Jones at Whitehall, which was called the Cabinet-room. It stood on the site of the present Melburne House, and is represented in a plate in Pennant's London, p. 89, from a drawing by Levines, a pupil of Rembrandt. In July 1612 Abraham Vander Doort was appointed Keeper of the Prince's Pictures, at a salary of £.50; he was retained in the same situation by Charles for £.40.

³ Though some had been burnt, according to Cornwallis; see p. 483.

All the penance they gave him was two or three lashes, which he endured, as it seemed, without sense, and keeping him naked as he was all night and the next day in the Porter's Lodge, where thousands came to see him. The King sent to have him dismissed without more ado or inquiry.

"One Bayly, a Chaplain belonging to the Prince, preached on Sunday last at St. Martin's, near Charing-cross, that the Prince told him not a month before he died, that Religion lay a bleeding; and no marvel, said he, when divers Counsellors hear mass in the morning, and then go to a Court Sermon, and so to the Council, and then tell their wives what passed, and they carry it to their Jesuits and Confessors, with other like stuff; for which he was called before my Lord of Canterbury the next day, and, I hear, silenced¹.

"The King on Sunday made a profession to the Council of his constancy in Religion, and how little was agreed should be allowed the Daughter of Savoy that way, if the match had gone forward. The Agents of Savoy took their leave on his going to Theobalds; and the Banquier Gabelline was knighted²."

November 23, the Earl of Dorset writes from Dorset House, to Sir T. Edmonds:

"To tell you that our Rising Sun is set ere scarce he had shone, and that all our glory lies buried, you know and do lament as well as we, and better than some do, and more truly, or else you were not a man, and sensible of this Kingdome's loss. The great Officers here stay, and we expect what will be the event. Only this is certain, that P[embroke] and R[ochester] were reconciled a day or two before the King's going to Royston; and after he had been one night at Theobalds, the warrant was signed there to make Sir Walter Cope Master of the Wards, who, I hope, did not pay so dear for it as his predecessor Cary by £.3000, for if he did and live no longer, he will have a hard bargain of it³."

On the 25th, the following seventeen were added to the rank of Baronets:

77. Sir John Portman⁴, of Orchard Portman, Somersetshire, Knight.

¹ On the 7th of December, Mr. Chamberlain again writes on this subject: "Bayly, the Prince's Chaplain, that made the suspicious Sermon at St. Martin's, was enjoined by the Council to explain himself in the same place; which he did the Sunday following, and that so soundly, that in a very great audience he made the matter much more plain; relating the whole matter as it passed at the Council-table, with justifying and offering to make proof, or bring his authors for what he said. Divers other preachers have been busy in the same kind; and how it comes to pass, or upon what grounds, I know not; but they take the alarm, and begin to speak freely, or at least so feelingly that they make themselves understood, though they keep within compass; so that I perceive it is not good *irritare crabrones*, or to meddle with these pulpit hornets, as our Doctor used to call them."

² Birch's MSS. 4173.

³ Ibid. 4176.

⁴ See vol. I. p. 495.

78. Sir Nicholas Saunderson ¹, of Saxby, Lincolnshire, Knight.
79. Sir Miles Sandys ², of Wilberton, Cambridgeshire, Knight.
80. William Gostwick ³, of Willington, Bedfordshire, Esquire.
81. Thomas Puckering ⁴, of Weston, Hertfordshire, Esquire.
82. Sir William Wray ⁵, of Glentworth, Lincolnshire, Knight.
83. Sir William Ayloffe ⁶, of Braxted Magna, Essex, Knight.
84. Sir Marmaduke Wyvell ⁷, of Burton Constable, Yorkshire, Knight.
85. John Pershall ⁸, of Horsley, Staffordshire, Esquire.
86. Francis Englefield ⁹, of Wotton Basset, Wiltshire, Esquire.
87. Sir Thomas Ridgeway ¹⁰, of Tor, Devonshire, Knight.

¹ Ancestor of James Earl of Castleton in the reign of George the First, but whose titles expired with him in 1723.

² See vol. I. p. 116.

³ Sir William Gostwick was Sheriff of Bedfordshire in 1594; died Sept. 19, 1615, and had a noble monument in the family chapel in Willington Church, representing his recumbent effigies in armour. See Collins's Baronetage, 1741, vol. I. p. 239. Of his son and successor see p. 126.—The Baronetcy became extinct with Sir William the fifth Baronet, who was living unmarried in 1771.

⁴ Son of Sir John Puckering, Speaker of the House of Commons. Dying s. p. m. the title expired with him.—Of the family see Collins's Baronetage, 1720, vol. I. p. 368.

⁵ Son of another Speaker of the House of Commons, Sir Christopher Wray, Lord Chief Justice. Sir William was M. P. for Grimsby, and the county of Lincoln, was knighted by Queen Elizabeth in 1596, and died in 1617. There is a monument in Ashby Church, Lincolnshire, representing recumbent effigies of Sir William and his second Lady, in whose right he was possessed of a seat there. Of his son and successor, see p. 463.—The title, having been enjoyed by many branches of his family, became extinct with Sir Charles Wray, the tenth Baronet, who was living in 1771.—See Collins's Baronetage, 1741, vol. I. p. 342.

⁶ See vol. I. p. 118.—The title became extinct April 19, 1781, with Sir Joseph Ayloffe, F. S. A. the seventh Baronet. Of the family, see Collins, 1741, vol. I. p. 249.

⁷ Of whom see vol. I. p. 166. There is a monument at Massam, Yorkshire, representing figures of Sir Marmaduke, his Lady, and eight children, kneeling. The Baronetcy became extinct Feb. 23, 1774, with Sir Marmaduke the sixth Baronet. Of the family, see Collins, 1741, vol. I. p. 232.

⁸ Sir John Pershall was Sheriff of Staffordshire in 1616.—The title became extinct about 1718 on the death of Sir Thos. Pershall, the fourth Baronet, s. p. m. Of the family, see Collins, 1720, I. 387.

⁹ The last of this very ancient Saxon family, an accomplished antiquary, Sir Henry Charles Englefield, F. S. A. the eighth Baronet, died March 21, 1822. (See Gent. Mag. vol. XCII. i. p. 293.)

¹⁰ Sir Thomas Ridgeway distinguished himself very eminently against the rebels in Ireland, and planted the first Protestant colony in that Kingdom. He was knighted in 1600; was in the same year Sheriff of Devonshire; and was elected M. P. for that county in 1603. Having performed many important services in Ireland, as Deputy Treasurer of that Kingdom, Commander General and Treasurer of Wars, and having been sworn a Privy Councillor, in 1616 he was created Baron Gal-len-Ridgeway; and in 1622 Earl of Londonderry (both Irish titles). — Robert, the fourth and last who enjoyed these honours, died March 7, 1713-14. See Collins, 1720, vol. I. p. 399.

88. William Essex¹, of Lambourne, Berkshire, Esquire.
89. Sir Edward Gorges², of Langford, Wiltshire, Knight.
90. Edward Devereux³, of Castle Bromwich, Warwickshire, Esquire.
91. Reginald Mohun⁴, of Boconock, Cornwall, Esquire.
92. Sir Harbottle Grimston⁵, of Bradfield, Essex, Knight.
93. Sir Thomas Holte⁶, of Aston, Warwickshire, Knight.

¹ Sir William Essex, of an ancient Saxon family, wasted his fortune by dissipation, and was compelled by want to accept the command of a company of foot in a regiment of the Parliament army of which his son was Colonel. His fate was calamitous; he was taken prisoner, and his son—his only son—killed at Edge Hill. He died soon after, when the Baronetcy became extinct. Of the family, see Collins, 1720, vol. I. p. 404.

² Sir Edward Gorges, of a family claiming the same lineage as the Russells, Dukes of Bedford, was knighted at Widdrington, April 9, 1603, being the seventh Knight the King made after his Accession; see vol. I. p. 69. He was advanced to an Irish Barony July 13, 1621, by the title of Baron of Dundalk, co. Louth. — His titles are supposed to have expired with his son Thomas (knighted at Beddington in 1603, see vol. I. p. 164). See Collins, 1720, vol. I. p. 410.

³ Son of Walter first Lord Ferrars by his second wife. The King had probably visited him this summer; see p. 460. He died Sept. 22, 1622, and was buried at Aston, Warwickshire. He was three generations earlier than the young Earl of Essex (of whom see pp. 123, 440) whom his son Walter succeeded in 1646 as fifth Viscount Hereford (the Earldom then becoming extinct).—Henry fourteenth Viscount Hereford is the present and eleventh Baronet.

⁴ Whose son John was in 1628 created Baron Mohun of Okehampton, Devon. Charles fourth Lord Mohun and fifth Baronet, dying s. p. m. in 1712, was the last who bore these titles. Of the family, see Collins's Peerage, 1714, vol. I. p. 279.

⁵ See vol. I. p. 323.—The Baronetcy expired in 1700 with Sir Samuel Grimston, the third Baronet. The present Earl of Verulam is descended from William Luckyn, Esq. nephew of Sir Samuel Grimston (his father Sir Capel Luckyn, Bart. having married Sir Samuel's sister), which William, on succeeding to his uncle's estates, changed his name to Grimston, was created Viscount Grimston, and on his brother Sir Harbottle Luckyn's death, succeeded to the Baronetcy enjoyed by the family of Luckyn. This will explain an error in vol. I. p. 323, where Sir Harbottle Luckyn is incorrectly made the fourth Baronet of the name of Grimston, he being the fourth Baronet of the name of Luckyn.

⁶ Sir Thomas Holte had been Sheriff of Warwickshire in 1599; and knighted at Grimstone, April 18, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 83). Collins describes him as learned, just, and charitable; his loyalty was conspicuous; for, though too old to follow the camp himself, he sent his son, greatly assisted King Charles with his purse, and entertained him at his mansion at Aston (which he had built) for two nights before the fatal battle of Edge Hill. "The rebels plundered his house, imprisoned him, decimated his estate, and forced such contributions that the damage he sustained was computed at £20,000." He was at one time nominated Ambassador to Spain by Charles I. but excused on account of his age. He died in 1654, aged 82, assigning by his will provisions for erecting almshouses at Aston. See more fully in Collins's Baronetage, 1720, vol. I. p. 432.—The title became extinct with Sir Clobery the fourth Baronet before 1741, when his widow died, Jan. 8.

THE FUNERALS OF THE
HIGH AND MIGHTY PRINCE HENRY,
 PRINCE OF WALES, DUKE OF CORNEWAILE AND ROTHSAÏ,
 COUNT PALATINE OF CHESTER, EARLE OF CARICK,
 AND LATE
 KNIGHT OF THE MOST NOBLE ORDER OF THE GARTER.
 WHICH NOBLE PRINCE DECEASED AT ST. JAMES' THE SIXT DAY OF NOV. 1612,
 AND WAS MOST PRINCELY INTERRED THE SEVENTH DAY OF DECEMBER FOLLOWING,
 WITHIN THE ABBEY OF WESTMINSTER, IN THE EIGHTEENTH YEERE OF HIS AGE¹.

THE body of the said Prince being bowelled, embalmed, and closed up in lead, there were foure chambers hung with blackes, *viz.* the Guard-chamber and the Presence, with blacke cloth; the Privy-chamber with finer cloth; and that which was his Highness's Bed-chamber with black velvet; in the midst whereof was set up a canopy of blacke velvet, valanced and fringed; under which, upon tressels, the coffin, with the body of the Prince, was placed; covered with a large pall of blacke velvet, and adorned with scuchions of his armes. Upon the head of which coffin was layde a cushion of blacke velvet, and his Highnesse's cap and coronet set thereon, as also his robes of estate, sword, and rod of gold; and so it remayned (being daily and nightly watched) untill two or three dayes before his Highness's Funeral. In which time every day, both morning and evening, prayers were said in his Presence or Privy-chamber, by his Chaplaines, and his Gentlemen and chiefe officers attendant thereat.

Thursday before the Funeralls, his Princely body was brought forth of his Bed-chamber into his Privie-chamber.

¹ "London: Printed by T. S. for John Budge, and are to be sould at his shop at the great South-dore of Paule's, and at Brittain's Bursse, 1613," 4to, pp. 66.—This Tract was entered at Stationers' Hall, Dec. 5. It was sold either separately, or with Chapman's *Epicede* (see p. 506). A separate copy bound with Taylor's "Great Britain all in Black" (see p. 511) was sold at Mr. Nassau's sale, March 14, 1824. — In the Harl. MSS. 5176, the order of Procession is also to be found, with some variations from the present, some of which are inserted between brackets; the remainder are too trifling to notice.

Friday, it was brought into his Presence-chamber, and set under his cloath of estate.

Satterday, the fift of December, about three of the clocke in the afternoone, it was removed into the Guard-chamber, where all his chiefe servants and officers being assembled, and the Officers of Armes in their coates, the corps was solemnly carried into the Chappell of that house, and placed under a canopy in the midst of the quire, the Bishop of Lichfield read the service, and the Gentlemen of the King's Chappell, with the children thereof, sung divers excellent anthems, together with the organs and other winde instruments, which likewise was performed the following day, being Sunday ¹.

Monday, the 7th of December (the funerall day), the Representation was layd upon the corps, and both together put into an open chariot, and so proceeded as followeth:

Poore men, in gownes, to the number of 140;—four and four.
 Gentlemen's servants; Esquires' servants; Knights' servants;
 Baronets' servants; Barons' sonnes' servants;
 Viscounts' sonnes' servants; Earles' sonnes' servants;—about 300.
 Two drummes and a fife, their drummes covered with black cloth,
 and scuchions of the Prince his armes thereupon.
 Portesmouth, Pursuivant of Armes.
 The Great Standard of Prince Henry,
 being a lyon crowned, standing on a chapeau,
 borne by Sir John Win, Knight and Baronet,
 the motto therein, *Fax mentis honestæ Gloria*.
 Prince Henry his Houshold servants,
 according to their severall offices and degrees;

¹ On this day Mr. Price preached in the Chapel at St. James's the Sermon on 2 Sam. iii. 31, which he afterwards published under the title of "Tears shed over Abner" (see p. 509); when, says Mr. Pette, "there were very few who mourned not bitterly [alluding to the text] and shed abundance of tears."—"This Sunday at night," says Cornwallis, "his Representation was brought (made in so short warning as like him as could be) and apparalled with cloathes, having his Creation robes above the same, his cap and crowne upon his head, his garter-collar with a George about his neck, his golden staffe in his right hand lying cross a little; briefly, every thing as he was apparelled at the time of his Creation; which being done, it was laid on the back in the coffin, and fast bound to the same, the head thereof being supported by two cushions, just as it was to be drawne along the streets in the funerall chariot."—Of the disposal of this Representation see p. 503.

with [Watermen, Plaiers,] Tradesmen, and Artificers that belonged unto his Highnesse;—about 306.

Trumpets.

The coronet of the Prince, being the three feathers in a crownet,
with his motto, *Juvat ire per altum*;
borne by Sir Roger Dallison, Knight and Baronet.
Barons' servants; Viscounts' servants;
Earles' Servants, as well English as Strangers;
the Duke of Lenox his servants; the Lord Chancellor's servants;
Count Henry de Nassaw his servants;—about 360.

Trumpets.

A banner of the Earldom of Carick, borne by Sir David Fowles.

A horse led by a Quirry of the Stable;
the horse was covered with blacke cloath, and armed with scuchions of that Earldom,
having his cheiffon and plumes.

Archbishops' servants; Prince Palatine his servants;—about 80.

Blew-mantle Pursuyvant of Armes.

A banner of the Earldome of Chester, borne by the Lord Howard of Effingham.

A horse led by a Quirry of the Stable, covered with blacke cloath;
and armed with scuchions of the Earldome, and his cheiffon and plumes.

Faulconers and Huntsmen; Clearkes of the Workes; Clearkes of the Poultry;
Clearkes of the Acatry; Clearkes of the Larder; Clearkes of the Spicery;
Clearkes of the Kitchen; Clearkes of the Coffery; Clearkes of the Stable;
Clearkes of the Avery; Clearkes of the Wardrobe; Master of the Workes;
Pay-master; and Clearke Comptroller;—about 40.

Serjeants of the Vestry; Children of the Chappell;

Gentlemen of the Chappell in rich copes;

Musitians; Apothecaries; and Surgions;—about 60.

Sixe Doctors of Physicke.

The Prince's Chapleyns;—24.

Portcullis Pursuyvant at Armes.

A banner of the Dukedome of Rothsay,

borne by the Lord Bruse, Baron of Kinlosse.

A horse led by a Quirry of the Stable, covered with blacke cloath,
armed with scuchions of that Dukedome, his cheiffon and plumes.

Pages of the Chamber; Gentlemen, the Prince's servants extraordinary¹; the Prince's Solicitor and Counsell-at-law; Groome-porter; Gentlemen Ushers; Quarter Waiters; Grooms of the Privy-chamber extraordinary; Groomes of the Privy-chamber in ordinary; Groomes of the Bed-chamber; Pages of the Bed-chamber; and the Prince's own Page;—about 80.

Rouge-dragon Pursuyvant.

A banner of the Dukedome of Cornewall, borne by the Lord Clifford.

A horse led by Mr. Henry Alexander,

covered with scuchions of that Dukedome, his cheiffon and plumes.

Count Henricke's Gentlemen, Count Palatine's Gentlemen, *viz.* Monsieurs Eltz, Helmstadt, Colbe, Benefer, Adolshein, Nenzkin, Walbron, Waldgrave, Factes, Carden, Berlinger, Gorode, Cawlt, Stenfels, Ridzell, Helinger, Henbell, Auckensten, Gellu, Wallyne, Pellingier, Berlipps, Shott, Weldensten, Croilese-mere, Levinsten, Dathenes, Colbe, Scultetez, Rampf, Dawnsier, Maier, Wanebach; Prince Charles his Gentlemen; Gentlemen of Prince Henrie's Privy-chamber extraordinary; Knights and Gentlemen of his Highnesse' Privy-chamber in ordinary, and of his Bed-chamber, with Sewers, Carvers, and Cup-bearers; the Prince's Secretary; the Prince his Thresorer of his Houshold; the Thresorer

¹ Among these was Mr. Pette the Shipwright, who in his Life laments the death of his Princely Patron as "the utter downfall of all my forlorn hopes, to the ruin of all my poor posterity, being now exposed to the malicious practises of my old enemies." — "The beginning of December," says he, "I had warning to attend at St. James's upon the preparation of the Funeral of our Master, and had black cloth delivered to me according to the place I was ranked in above stairs, which was of Gentleman of the Privy-chamber extraordinary."

The following account of "The Blackes allowed for the Prince for [the] severall degrees, and their prices, 23 Nov. 1612," is here first printed from the Lansdowne MSS. 160:

"The Duke of Lenox and Themselves. Under*.				Yeomen of the Guard	-	4 yards a piece
Archbishop of Canterbury	yards 14	and 32	140 poor gownes	-	-	4 yards a piece
Earles	-	12 and 24				
Viscounts, and Earles' eldest sonnes	10	and 20	Prices of severall sortes of cloth.			
Bushops and Barons	-	9 and 16	Noblemen	-	-	30s. a yard
Earles' younger sonnes, as Barons	9	and 16	Noblemen's sonnes and Principall			
Barons' eldest sonnes	-	7 and 12	Officers, and all Gownsmen			
Barons' younger sonnes	-	7 and 8	The better sort of clokes			
Knights Baronets	-	7 and 8	The meaner sort of clokes			
Knights Bachelors	-	7 and 8	The poore gownes			
Esquires	-	7 and 4				

* That is, for servants or followers; see the expences of the Funeral of Edw. VI. Archæol. XII. 356.

of his Revenewes; and the Comptroller of his Houshold together, bearing their white staves;—about 146.

Roug-croix Pursuyvant of Armes.

A banner of the Prince's Principalitie of Scotland, with a labell,
borne by the Viscount Fenton.

A horse led by Sir Sigismund Alexander, covered with blacke cloath,
armed with scuchions of that Kingdom, his cheiffon and plumes.

Baronets.

Barons' younger Sonnes.

Sir Edward Phillips, Master of the Rolls,
being the Prince his Chauncellor, going alone.

Knights, Privy-councillors to the King; *viz.*

Sir John Herbert, Secretary;

Sir Julius Cesar, Chauncellor of the Exchequer;

Sir Thomas Parry, Chauncellor of the Duchie of Lancaster.

Barons' eldest Sonnes.

Three Trumpets.

Lancaster Herald.

A banner of England, France, and Ireland, quartered with Wales,
borne by the Viscount Lisle.

A horse led by Sir William Webb, Knight,
covered with blacke cloath, his cheiffon and plumes.

Earles' younger Sonnes.

Viscounts' eldest Sonnes.

Barons of Scotland; [*viz.*

Lord Hay. Lord Kinloss. Lord Dingwall. Lord St. Levit. Lord Ochiltree.]

Barons of England; *viz.*

Lord Knevit.	Lord Russell.	Lord Wharton.
Lord Candish.	Lord Wotton.	Lord Evers.
Lord Arundell of Wardor.	Lord Knowles.	Lord Wentworth.
Lord Carewe.	Lord Norris.	Lord Windesor.
Lord Stanhop.	Lord Compton.	Lord Mouteagle.
Lord Denny.	Lord Hunsden.	Lord Dudley.
Lord Spencer.	Lord Chandos.	Lord Stafford.
Lord Garrard.	Lord Northe.	Lord Dacres.
Lord Denvers.	Lord Darcy of Chich.	Lord Morley.
Lord Harington.	Lord Sheffield.	Lord Laware.

Lord Peters.

Lord Rich.

The Bishop of Rochester; the Bishop of Coventry and Lichfield;
the Bishop of Ely; the Bishop of Oxford; the Bishop of London.

The Earl of Exeter.

The Prince his Chamberlayne, Sir Thomas Chaloner,
alone, bearing his white staffe.

The Lord Chancellor and Count Henricke.

The Archbishop of Canterbury, Preacher.

The great embrodered banner of the Union,
borne by the Earles of Montgomery and Argyle.

A horse led, called *le cheval de deul*, covered with blacke velvet,
and led by a chiefe Quirry, Monsieur Saint Antoin.

The Prince his hatchments of honour, carried by Officers of Armes; *viz.*

The Gauntlets, by Somerset.

The Targe, by Yorke.

The Spurres, by Windsor.

The Sword, by Norroy King of Armes.

The Helme and Crest, by Richmond.

The Coat, by Clarencieux King of Armes.

Three Gentlemen-Ushers to the Prince, bearing their wands.

The Corps of the Prince, lying in an open-chariot, with the Prince's Representation thereon, invested with his robes of Estate of purple velvet, furred with ermines, his Highnesse' cap and coronet on his head, and his rod of gold in his hand, and at his feet, within the said chariot, sat Sir David Murray, the Master of the Wardrobe. The chariot was covered with blacke velvet, set with plumes of black feathers, and drawne by sixe horses covered, and armed with scuchions, having their cheiffrons and plumes.

A canopy of blacke velvet borne over the Representation by sixe Baronets:

[Sir Thomas Maunsell.

Sir Thomas Gerrard.

Sir John St. John.

Sir Lionel Talmach.

Sir John Wentworth.

Sir Francis Barrington.]

Ten bannerols, borne about the body by ten Baronets; *viz.*

Sir Moyle Finch.

Sir Robert Cotton.

Sir Anthony Cope.

Sir Henry Savile.

Sir Thomas Mounson.

Sir Lewis Tresham.

Sir George Gresley.

Sir Thomas Brudenell.

Sir John Wentworth.

Sir Philip Tiruit.

Four Assistants to the Corps, that bore up the pall; *viz.*

The Lord Zouch.

The Lord Burghley.

The Lord Abergavenny.

The Lord Walden.

William Segar, Garter Principall King of Armes,
between the Gentleman-Usher of Prince Charles, and
the Gentleman-Usher of the Prince Palatine.

Prince Charles, Chiefe Mourner,
supported by the Lord Privy Seale and the Duke of Lenox.

His Highnesse' train was borne by the Lord Dawbney,
Brother to the Duke of Lenox.

Then followed the Prince Elector, Frederick Count Palatine of the Rhein.

His Highnesse' train was borne by Monsieur Shamburgh.

Twelve Earles, Assistants to the Chief Mourner; *viz.*

Earle of Nottingham.	Earle of Hartford.	Earle of Sussex.
Earle of Shrewsbury.	Earle of Dorset.	Earle of Pembroke.
Earle of Rutland.	Earle of Suffolke.	Earle of Essex.
Earle of Southampton.	Earle of Worcester.	Earle of Salisbury.

Earles Strangers, Attendants on Count Palatine:

Count Wigenstein.	Count Ringrave.	Count Isinbersh,	} Pages.
Count Lewis de Nassau.	Count Erback.	Count Solmes,	
Count LIVINGSTEN.	Count Nassaw Scarburg.	Count Zerottin,	
Count Hodenlo.	Count Le Hanow, jun.		

The Horse of Estate, led by Sir Robert Dowglass, Master of the Prince's Horse.

The Palsgrave's Privy-Counsellors; *viz.*

The Count of Solmes.	Mounsieur de Pleshau.	Mounsieur Shouburg, jun.
Mounsieur Shouburgh.	Mounsieur Helmestedt.	Mounsieur Landshat.

Officers and Groomes of Prince Henrie's stables.

The Guard.

The Knights Marshall, and twenty servants that kept order in the proceeding.

Divers Knights and Gentlemen, the King's servants, that came in voluntary in
blacke; so that the whole number amounted to two thousand, or thereabout.

Following the Order of the Procession in the Harl. MSS. 5176, are the ensuing
directions to the Heralds, and arrangements in the Abbey, the original draft of
which in Camden's autograph is in the Cotton. MSS. Vespasian, C. xiv.

“ Within the inner hearse the four Assistants to the Body; Sir David Murray
at the feete.

In the outward range.

The Prince, Principall Mourner, at the head in a chaire.

The Lord Privie Seale at the right hand, and the Duke of Lennox at the left.

The Twelve Assistants, six on each side.

The Great Banner at the West end behind the Prince; at the corners, on the right hand, the Principalltie of England, Ireland, and Wales; on the left hand the Principalltie of Scotland; the Dukedome of Cornwall at the South-east on the right hand; the Dukedome of Rothsaye to be placed on the North-east; the banner of the Earle of Chester at the South-east pillar of the outward range; the Earle of Carrick on the North-east pillar.

Without the hearse, on the East end, the Standard and Coronet upon the bench.

The six Bannerets for the cannopy on the saide bench, three on each side.

The Banneroles on the right and on the left to stand at the outward rayle on the outsyde.

The Representation uppon the palle coveringe the bodye, and to be sett uppon the table covered with a palle before, to remaine after it shalbe removed.

Eight Gentlemen to be appointed att the West dore to carry the beare [beir] with the Bodie and Representation.

The Prince Palatine in the Deane's seate; and underneath for his Nobilitie.

The West end of the quier from the pulpit for the Archbishopp and Lord Chancellor, and the rest of the Nobilitie and Councill.

The North syde and South syde unto the dores, and the pues [pews] above, for the Prince's Cheif Officers.

The Offeringe.

The Prince to offer alone with his Supporters and Assistants, Mr. Garter preceedinge and his officers, Chamberlaine, Treasurar, Controler, and Gentlemen Ushers; his traine carried.

The Prince with his two Supporters, and Mr. Garter preceedinge, to stay there.

Clarencieux to bringe up the Coate of armes, carried by the Earles of Nottingham and Sussex; Norroy to bringe the Sword, carried by the Earles of Salop and Worcester; Yorke the Targe, carried by the Earles of Rutland and Sussex; Richmond the Helmet and Creast, carried by the Earles of Southampton and Pembroke; Somerset the Gauntlet, carried by the Earles of Hertford and Essex; Windsor the Spurres, carried by the Earles of Dorsett and Salisbury.

Clarenceux to bring up the great banner, carried by the Earles of Mountgomery and Argile; Norroy the banner of the Principalitie of Brittain, carried by Vicount Lisle; Yorke that of the Principalitie of Scotland, carried by Vicount Fenton; Richmond that of the Dukedome of Cornewalle, carried by Lord Clifford; Somerset that of the Dukedome of Rothsay, caried by Vicount Hadington; Windsor that of the Earldom of Chester, carried by Lord Effingham; Lancaster that of the Earldom of Carrick, [carried by Sir David Foulis]; Knight the coronet, carried by Sir Roger Dallison; Roug Dragon the standard, borne by Sir John Win.

Portcullis with four first banneroles; Blew-mantle the four next; Portsmouth the two others.

The Prince brought down and his Supporters.

The Countie Palatine to be brought up by Mr. Garter; his traine not to be borne.

[Then follows the order in which the several Heralds in turn "brought up" the remainder of the procession, concluding with:]

Somerset the Prince's Chancellor, and Principall Officers, Chamberlain, Treasurer, Controler, and Ushers; to offer and there to breake their staffes and roddes.

The Stile to be proclaimed and trumpetts to sound."

"The Funerall," says Cornwallis¹, "was foure houres in marshalling and marching, and set forth about tenne a'clock in the morning. When they had arrived at Westminster Abbey, the dolefull musick of all sorts being ended, the coffin was set under a great stately herse, built quadrangle-wise with eight pillars, shewing three to the view on each side four square, canopy-like, rising small on the top, trimmed and set thick within and without with divers scutchions, small flagges, and pensils of his Highnesse's several armes of the Union chained, Scotland, Wales, Cornewall, Chester, Rothsay, Carrick, &c. mingled here and there, with his Highnesse's motto, *Fax mentis honestæ Gloria*, and that of the funerall herse, *Juvat ire per altum*. After which the whole assembly having taken their places, banners, bannerets, and pensills of all sorts being at rest, after an universal silence,

¹ The Accounts of Prince Henry's Death and Funerall in the Harl. MSS. 444, and the Cotton. MSS. C. vii. like that of the Bishop of Ely printed in the "Desiderata Curiosa" (see p. 470), are transcripts of part of Cornwallis's Life. It was probably much circulated in manuscript previously to its passing the press.

the Archbishop of Canterbury, who was appointed to doe his Highnesse the last duty, was seene in the pulpit, who with a grave sober countenance, shewing the inward sorrow of his heart, after a little pause and prayer, did with exceeding passion make the funerall Sermon. The text was out of the 82d Psalme, the sixth and seventh verses: "I have said yee are Gods and yee are children of the Most High: but yee shall die as a man, and yee Princes shall fall like others." Where, after he had most learnedly, by way of introduction, spoken of the authour, occasion, scope, and meaning of this Psalme, he devided the same into two maine branches. First, the exaltation of Princes: "I have said yee are Gods," &c. Secondly, in what respect they are so called. Again, in the humiliation, lest they should be out of measure exalted, he admirably proved, by infinite variety of examples, both divine and morall, the vanity and inconstancy of greatnesse, with all the shadowish toyes thereof. Thirdly, for ocular prooffe and use of all, inviting their eyes to the present dolefull spectacle of their late ever-renowned Prince, who not long agoe was as fresh, brave, and gallant as the best of them, unto whom all the delights and pleasures of the world did begge for acquaintance, lacking nothing which heart could wish for, who yet now for our sinnes lay thus low, bereaved of life and all being, was forced to prove the truth of this text, not onely to fall, but to fall as others. After which, when he had most truly and excellently shewed a part of his Highnesse's excellencies and many noble virtues, for all was not possible, chiefly his rare and singular piety both in himselfe and in the government of his household, which he so extolled, that he professed he would not be ashamed hereafter to propose the same for a rule unto himselfe; for consolation unto them all, he shewed the exceeding measure of felicity his Highnesse had attained unto by death. So with exhortation unto all to make right use thereof, with exceeding great passion and many tears, he ended¹.

"The Earls, Lords, and Barons, &c. by this time having offered up their severall banners and honours which they carryed; as also the great officers of his house, Sir Thomas Challenor, Chamberlaine; Sir Charles Cornwallis, Treasurer; Sir John Holles, Comptrouler; together with his three Gentlemen-Ushers, Walter Alexander, Anthony Abington, and John Lumley, having all by degrees (Sir Thomas Challenor beginning) broken their white staves and rods crosse-wise over

¹ It does not appear that this Sermon was printed, though Dr. Abbot the Archbishop had published in 1608 one he had preached at the Funeral of the Lord Treasurer Dorset; see note ¹ in p. 246. Of the Preacher see vol. I. p. 533.

the coffin, thereby resigning their places, the assembly dissolved; the coffin, with the Representation, as is before said, remaining still under the hearse, to be seene of all untill the 19th of the said moneth of December, when decked and trimmed with cloathes, as he went when he was alive, robes, collar, crowne, golden rodde in his hand, &c. it was set up in a chamber of the said Chappell at Westminster, amongst the Representations of the Kings and Queenes his famous predecessors, where it remaineth for ever to be seene."

The public regret on this melancholy occasion was general throughout the country:

At Bristol, upon the day of the Funeral, "the Mayor, with his Brethren and the Common Councell, and all the Companies going before them in their gowns, did so solemnize Prince Henry's Funeral, going from the Tolzey, every one in order, to Redcliff Church to hear a Sermon, maintaining thereby their love to the Prince and their sorrow for his death; and the Magistrates put themselves in mourning attire¹."

At Cambridge a Sermon "was preached by Doctor Carey, Master of Christ's Colledge, and Vice-chancellour of the Universitie, his text being out of the second of Samuel, iii. 34, the last words of the verse: 'and all the people wept againe for him.' In speaking whereof and weeping himselfe, he made all the people weepe againe and againe²."

In Wood's Annals of Oxford, one of the principal events commemorated under this year is, "that Prince Henry, the people's darling and delight of mankind, died; one as eminent in nobleness as blood; and 'whose spirit was too full of life and splendour to be long shrowded in a cloud of flesh.' So that the University being as 'twere overwhelmed with grief, (and especially for this reason, that he had once been a Student there, particularly in Magdalen College, under the tutorage of Mr. John Wilkinson, afterwards the unworthy President of that House³,) could not otherwise express itself, but, first, by the tongue of one of their Proctors, Mr. Corbet⁴, who very oratorically speeched it in Saint Mary's Church, before a numerous auditory, beginning thus: 'Quàm sit semper vobis, et proprium, justo servire dolori, sobriisque lacrymis obtemperare, ipsi mihi vos dixistis modo, qui et egregio Oratori et invido argumento fideliter cessistis, mihi tantum post consumptum humorem et historiæ meæ; fidem vestram, et suspiria

¹ Seyer's Bristol, vol. II. p. 264. The same account says, Prince Henry was "supposed to be poisoned;" such was the prevalence of that report. ² Cornwallis. ³ See vol. I. p. 547. ⁴ Ib. p. 529.

præstituri,' &c.¹ Secondly, by a book of Verses that the Members thereof published to his memory, wherein are such characters and encomiums of him as if Great Britain had never before produced the like². Much to the same purpose also did Magdalen College in a Book of Verses made by the Members thereof, printed at Oxford, 1612³."—"The Funeral Sermon in Saint Marie's, (on the day of the Funerall,) was preached by Doctor Goodwin, Deane of Christ Church Colledge there, the text being out of Esay the lvii. 1, 'The righteous perisheth, and no one considereth in his heart; and mercifull men are taken away from the evill to come.' In which he was not only exceedingly moved himselfe, but also moved the whole Universitie and City to shedde fountaines of teares⁴."

"When the women in Scotland, even unto this day," says an anonymous writer quoted in "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. III. p. 353, "do lament the death of their dearest children, to comfort them it is ordinarily said, and is past into a proverb, 'Did not good Prince Henry die?'"

TRACTS ON THE DEATH OF PRINCE HENRY.

"Posthumous testimonials to the talents and virtues of that very promising Prince, Henry Frederick, Heir Apparent to the Crown of our first James, were so numerous, that a mere enumeration of them would run on to considerable extent." Sir E. Brydges's *Restituta*, vol. III. p. 477. [Such an enumeration was partly performed in that work, vol. IV. p. 174.]

ANONYMOUS.

1. Great Brittan's Mourning Garment, given to all faithfull sorrowfull subjects at the Funerall of Prince Henry. *London: imprinted by G. Eld for Arthur Jonson, 1612, 4to, pp. 24.*

'This was entered at Stationers' Hall on the 4th of December; a copy was sold for £.4 to Mr. Rice at Mr. Bindley's sale, Aug. 5, 1820.—An analysis of this "valuable Tract" is given in the *British Bibliographer*, vol. IV. pp. 37—40. It consists of nineteen sonnets, and an address to the Prince's "sad Household."

2. A ballad called, "A Farewell to Prince Henry, or his funeral teares shed by his country for his Hynes's deare losse," &c.

Entered at Stationers' Hall on the 5th of December.

3. A ballad called, "England's Sorrowe for the death of the most vertuous and pierless Henry Frederick Prince of Wales, eldest son of our Sovereign Lord King James, who deceased the 6th of November 1612, at St. James' House."

¹ This Oration was not printed; but is extant in the Ashmolean Museum, No. 1153.

² See p. 509.

³ See p. 507.

⁴ Cornwallis.

4. A ballad called, "A Complaynt against Death; for taking away the highe and hopefull Prince Henry of Great Brittain, with the manner of his Funeral."

5. A ballad called, "The first and second partes of the Lyfe and Death of the late noble Prince Henry; with the Order of his Funeral."

These three last were entered at Stationers' Hall December 7.

6. "A Ballad of Great Brytaine's greatest comfort, or Great Brytaine's hope for the Roiall Prynce Charles, Prynce of Great Brytaine and Ireland, Duke of York and Albany," &c.

This was entered at Stationers' Hall on the 12th of the same month.

WILLIAM ALEXANDER, the Poet, afterwards Earl of Stirling. (See the Biog. Dict. &c.)

7. "An Elegy on the Death of Prince Henry, 1612."

The only copy of this Poem that is known to exist is in the University Library, Edinburgh.—The same author had published in 1604 "A Parænesis to the Prince," recommending the choice of patriotic, disinterested, and public-spirited Counsellors; it is printed in the "English Poets" by Chalmers.

CHRISTOPHER BROOKE, Esq. of Lincoln's Inn, and WILLIAM BROWNE the Poet, Author of The Inner Temple Masque in 1620, under which year he will be further noticed.

8. "Two Elegies, consecrated to the never-dying memorie of the most worthily admyred, most hartily loved, and generally bewayled Prince, Henry Prince of Wales. *London: Printed by T. S. for Richard Moore, and are to be sould at his shoppe in Saint Dunstone's Church-yard, 1613,*" 4to, pp. 34.

At the end of the first elegy appears the name of Christopher Brooke, and at the end of the second, "Deflevit W. B. Inter. Templ."—This Tract is marked £3. 13s. 6d. in the Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica, but a copy bound up with Niccols's "Three Sisters' Teares," &c. (No. 19), and "Sundry Funeral Elegies," (see No. 27,) brought only 19s. at Mr. Bindley's sale, Aug. 6, 1820. Mr. Rodd was the purchaser. Another copy is to be found in the Bodleian Library.—Browne's Elegy was re-printed in "The English Poets," from a manuscript copy in the Bodleian Library.

CAMBRIDGE UNIVERSITY.

9. "Epicedium Cantabrigiense in obitum immaturum semperque deflendum Henrici illustrissimi Principis Walliæ, &c. *Cantabrigiæ, ex officinâ Cantrelli Legge, 1612,*" 4to, pp. 116.

A copy of this is in the British Museum; another was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale Jan. 14, 1819, to Mr. Heber for 4s.—This collection of Verses are mentioned by Mr. Chamberlain in p. 512.

THOMAS CAMPION, M. D. of whom see p. 104.

10. "Songs of Mourning, bewailing the untimely death of Prince Henry, worded by Tho. Campion; and set forth to bee sung with one voyce to the Lute or Violl, by John Coprario. *London: Printed for John Browne, &c. 1613,*" folio, with musical notes, about 20 pp.

"Coprario, by the way, I would have the Reader to understand, was not a foreigner but an English-

man born, who having spent much of his time in Italy, changed his name from Cooper to Coprario (by which last he was called in Italy), being in his time much admired for his compositions of Fancies of various parts." Wood (*Fasti* by Bliss, vol. I. p. 417).—There is a copy of the "Songs of Mourning" in the Bodleian Library.—See a specimen in "Ancient Critical Essays," 1815, vol. II. p. ix, note.

GEORGE CHAPMAN, the Dramatic Writer and Translator of Homer. (See under the Masque of the Middle Temple and Lincoln's Inn, 1612-13.)

11. An Epicede or Funerall Song: on the most disastrous Death of the High-borne Prince of Men, Henry Prince of Wales, &c. With the funeralls and representation of the Herse of the same High and Mighty Prince, Prince of Wales, Duke of Cornewaile and Rothsay, Count Palatine of Chester, Earle of Carick, and late Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter; which noble Prince deceased at St. James' the sixt day of November 1612, and was most Princely interred the seventh day of December following, within the Abbey of Westminster, in the eighteenth yeere of his age. *London: Printed by T. S. for John Budge, and are to bee sould at his shop at the great South dore of Paule's, and at Brittain's Bursse, 1612,*" 4to, pp. 32.

This Tract contains a large plate of Henry on his tomb, with arms, H. P. &c. It is described in the *British Bibliographer*, vol. IV. p. 36; and also very fully in Mr. Singer's edition of Chapman's *Hymns of Homer* published in 1818.—A copy "wanting the representation of the hearse," as does another in the British Museum, is marked at £.10 in the *Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica*; but one, bound up with "Tourneur's Griefe" (see No. 29), and "Sundry Funeral Elegies" (see No. 27), was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, Aug. 8, 1820, and Mr. Rodd purchased them all for 16s.—The "Funeralls" were also published separate, and have been re-printed in pp. 493—499.

JOHN DAVIES, of Hereford, the writing-master who boasted of Prince Henry as his pupil (*Granger*, vol. II. p. 165); of whom and his works see Wood's *Athenæ*, by Bliss, vol. II. col. 260, and the *British Bibliographer*, vol. II. p. 249.

12. "The Muses' Teares for the Losse of their Hope, the heroick and ne're-too-much-praised Henry Prince of Wales, &c. Together with Time's sobs for the untimely death of his Glory in that his darling; and lastly his epitaphs. Consecrated to the High and Mighty Prince, Frederick the Fift, Count Palatine of Rheyn, &c. Whereunto is added, Consolatory Straines to wrest Nature from her bent in immoderate mourning, most loyally and humbly wisht to the King and Quene's most excellent Majesties. By John Davies, of Hereford, their Majestie's poore beademan and vassall. *At London: Printed by G. Eld for John Wright, and are to be sould at his shop neere Christ Church-dore, 1613,*" 4to, pp. 38.

This is marked £.4. 14s. 6d. in the *Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica*. Mr. Rice purchased a copy at Mr. Bindley's sale, Aug. 5, 1820, for £.3. 9s. One is in the Bodleian Library.—Davies had published in 1603, "Cambria to the High and Mighty Prince, Henry Prince of Wales, before *Microcosmos*."

JOHN DONNE, the Poet, afterwards Dean of St. Paul's. (See under 1614).—See No. 27.

WILLIAM DRUMMOND, of Hawthornden, the Poet.—(See hereafter under 1617.)

13. "Teares on the death of Mœliades. By William Drummond, of Hawthornden, 1612."

The third edition of this appeared at "Edinburgh: Printed by Andro Hart, 1614," 4to, pp. 19. At the back of the title are 14 lines "To the Author," signed "Sir W. Alexander" (see No. 7). These, as well as the "Teares," and some other verses of Drummond's which occupy the three last pages, have been frequently re-printed in Drummond's Poems and Works; also in the "English Poets."

THOMAS HEYWOOD, the very voluminous Dramatist. (See the Biographia Dramatica and Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary.)—He wrote an "Epithalamion" at the ensuing Marriage of the Princess Elizabeth.

14. "A Funerall Elegie upon the death of the most hopefull and illustrious Prince Henry Prince of Wales. Written by Thomas Heywood, 1613," 4to, pp. 22.

This is dedicated "To the Right Honourable Edward Earle of Worcester, Lord of Chepstoll, Ragland, and Gower."—A copy, with Prince Henry's "Portrait with lance in his hand" inserted, is marked £.2. 12s. 6d. in Mr. Thorpe's Catalogue for 1824.—It was also published with those of Cyril Tourneur and John Webster under the following general title, in white letters on a black ground:

15. "Three Elegies on the most lamented Death of Prince Henrie; the first written by Cyril Tourneur, the second by John Webster, the third by Tho. Heywood. London: Printed for William Welbie, 1613," 4to, pp. 60.

Thus united, they are marked at £.5. 5s. in the Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica; and are found in the British Museum.

MAGDALEN COLLEGE, OXFORD.

16. "Luctus Posthumus; sive erga defunctum illustrissimum Henricum Walliæ Principem, Collegii Beatæ Mariæ Magdalenæ apud Oxonienses Mecænatem longè indulgentissimum, Magdalensium officiosa Pietas. Oxoniæ, excudebat Josephus Barnesius, 1612," 4to, pp. 72:

At the end of this is "Oratio Funebris habita apud Magdalenenses tempore prandii exequialis, 7^o Decembris, quo die desideratissimi Principis Henrici funebri justa persoluta fuere;" by Accepted Frewen, M. A. then Fellow of Magdalen College, and afterwards Archbishop of York.—A copy of this Tract is in the British Museum; another was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, Feb. 16, 1819, for 8s. to Mr. Rice.—Prince Henry, at his Visit to Oxford in 1605, had been lodged at Magdalen College, and entered himself a student there, see vol. I. p. 547; and, if we may judge by their lamentations at his death, he really, even in this short stay, won the affections of his fellow-collegians. See p. 504, an hereafter under the names of Niccols and Wyther.

JAMES MAXWELL, M. A. Author of a Poem on the Princess Elizabeth's Marriage, and of several other works (see the Bodleian Catalogue). He was afterwards either Groom of the Bed-chamber to King Charles, and one of his last faithful servants, or the

Usher of the Upper House, who conducted Archbishop Laud to the Tower, having kept him in his custody for ten weeks. Of both see Wood's *Athenæ*.

17. "The laudable Life and deplorable Death of our late peerlesse Prince Henry, briefly represented. Together with some other Poemes in honor both of our most gracious Sovereigne King James, his auspicious entrie to this Crowne, and also of his most hopefull Children Prince Charles and Princesse Elizabeth's happy entrie into this world. By J[ames] M[axwell], Master of Artes. *London: Printed by Edw. Alde for Thomas Pavier, dwelling neere the Royall Exchange, at the signe of the Cats and Parrat 1612,*" 4to, pp. 44.

This was entered at Stationers' Hall Nov. 28.—It is marked £.10. 10s. in the *Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica*; and £.4. 14s. 6d. in Mr. Thorpe's Catalogue for 1824. A copy was sold by Mr. Saunders in 1818 for £.5. 2s. 6d.; one was bought by Mr. Heber at Mr. Bindley's sale, Aug. 5, 1820, for £.3. 9s. The British Museum possesses one, and the Bodleian Library two.—The dedication is a metrical epistle of twelve lines, addressed "To our late Peerless Prince Henrie's deere Brother and Sister, Prince Charles and Princesse Elizabeth, Infants of Albion of greatest hope, all happinesse;" on the verso of the same leaf are six lines addressed "to the Reader." The principal Poem now begins, it consists of forty-four six-line stanzas, and is succeeded by "Peerless Prince Henrie's Epitaph in his owne foure languages" (English, French, Latin, and Greek). The titles of the other pieces are, "A Poeme, shewing how that both Theologie and Astrologie doe pronounce the time of his Majestie's entring to this Crowne, to be auspicious and happy;"—"A Poeme shewing the Excellencie of our Sovereigne King James his hand, that giveth both health and wealth, instanced on his curing the King's evill by touching the same, in hanging an Angell of Gold about the neck of the diseased, and in giving the poorer sort money towards the charges of their journie;"—"King James his Mysticall May-pole;"—"Prince Charles his happie Entrie into the World;"—and "Princesse Elizabeth's happie Entrie into the World." A fuller account of this work is to be found in the *Restituta*, vol. III. pp. 477—480; and some extracts are given in the *British Bibliographer*, vol. IV. pp. 30—36.

FRANCIS NETHERSOLE, Fellow of Trinity Coll. Cambridge, Orator of the University.

18. "Memoriæ sacra illustrissimi et potentissimi Principis Henrici Walliæ Principis, Ducis Cornubiæ, &c. Laudatio Funebris Fr. Nethersole, Oratoris Academia Cantabrigiæ, Trin. Coll. Socii. *Cantebrigiæ, ex officinâ Cantrelli Legge, 1612,*" 4to, pp. 28.

This is in the British Museum. It is re-printed in Dr. William Bates's "*Vitæ selectorum aliquot virorum*," London," 4to, 1681.

RICHARD NICCOLS, B. A. of Magdalen Hall, Oxford, author of "The Cuckow," 1607, a curious and now scarce Poem; and of various other works, and Editor of the "Mirror for Magistrates," 1610. (See Wood's *Athen. Oxon.* by Bliss, vol. II. col. 166.)

19. "The Three Sisters' Teares, shed at the late solemne Funerals of the Royall deceased Henry Prince of Wales, &c. R. N. Oxon. *London: Printed by T. S. for Richard Redmer, and are to be sould at his shop neere the West dore of Paule's Church, 1613,*" 4to, pp. 40.

This poetical Tract is dedicated to Lady Hay; on whose death in 1615 the same author published, "Monodia, or Waltham's Complaint," &c. (See Brit. Bibl. vol. I. p. 363.) — The Three Sisters are Angela, Albana, and Cambera, allegorical personages. A copy is in the British Museum; another was in Mr. Bindley's collection (see No. 8).—It is marked at £.7. 7s. in the Bibliotheca Anglo-Poet.

OXFORD UNIVERSITY.

20. "Lacrymæ Oxonienses stillantes in tumulum Henrici Principis Regis Jacobi filii primogeniti. Oxon. 1612," 4to.

"Wherein," says Wood, "are such characters and encomiums of him as Great Britain before had never produced the like." There are two copies of this in the Bodleian Library.

21. "Eidyllia in obitum fulgentissimi Henrici Walliæ Principis duodecimi, Romæque ruentis Terroris maximi. *Oxonæ, excudebat Josephus Barnesius, 1612,*" 4to, pp. 160.

This alone was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, Jan. 14, 1819, for 11s. to Mr. Triphook.

The two preceding, together with the "Luctus Posthumus" of Magdalen College, were re-published in London under the general title of

22. "Justa Oxoniensium. *Londini, impensis Johannis Bill, 1612.*"

Under this form they are to be found in the British Museum, bound up with the "Epicedium Cantabrigiense," Sharpe's "Oratio Funebris," and Nethersole's "Laudatio Funebris." This collection was evidently sold by the booksellers as it is; it is lettered, "Carmina Academica, 1612."—A copy of the "Justa Oxoniensium" was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, Jan. 22, 1819, for 5s. to Mr. Heber.

DANIEL PRICE, Chaplain to Prince Henry, and afterwards Dean of Hereford; of whom see Wood's *Athenæ*, by Bliss, vol. II. col. 511.

23. "Lamentations for the Death of the late illustrious Prince Henry, and the Dissolution of his Religious Familie. Two Sermons [on Matth. xxvi. 31.] preached in his Highnesse' Chappell at Saint James', on 10th and 15th days of November, being the first Tuesday and Sunday after his decease. By Daniel Price, Chaplaine then in attendance." *London: Printed by Thos. Snodham for Roger Jackson, and are to be sould at his shop neer to Fleet-street Conduit, 1613,*" pp. 40.

Copies are in the British Museum and Bodleian Libraries.

24. "Spiritual Odours to the Memory of Pr. Henry, in four of the last Sermons preached in St. James's after his Highness's Death, the last being the Sermon before the Body the day before the burial," Oxford, 4to, 1613.

The first is entitled, "Meditations of Consolation on our Lamentations; on Psalm xc. 15. The second, which has the same title, is on 2 Sam. xv. 23. The third, which is entitled, "Sorrow for the Sinnes of the Time, preached on the third Sunday after the Prince's Death," is on Ezek. ix. 4. And the fourth, which is called, "Tears shed over Abner, preached on the Sunday before the Prince his Funerall in St. James' Chappel before the bodie," is on 2 Sam. iii. 31 (see before, p. 494). These Sermons were also sold separately, since the two last only are found in a volume in the British Museum labelled, "Price's Sermons." This volume contains also the "Lamentations" mentioned

above; Sermons entitled, "Prælium et Præmium" (preached before the King, May 3, 1608, see the Appendix to the present Volume); "The Merchant, preached at Paule's Crosse, Sunday, Aug. 24, 1607, the day before Bartholomew Faire. Oxon. 1608," pp. 42; "The Spring" (preached before Prince Henry, on Midlent Sunday 1609; see also the Appendix); "The Creation of the Prince" (vide *ibid.*); "Prince Henry his first Anniversary, Oxon. 1613;" and "A Defence of Truth against a booke falsely called 'The Triumph of Truth,' sent over from Arras, A. D. 1609, by Humfrey Leech, late Minister; which booke in all particulars is answered, and the adjoining motives of his revolt confuted, by Daniell Price, &c.—Oxon. 1610," pp. 384, dedicated to Prince Henry. Other publications by Mr. Price are mentioned in the *Athenæ Oxonienses*.

LEONEL SHARPE, S. T. D. Archdeacon of Berkshire and Chaplain to the Prince. (See Wood's *Fasti*, by Bliss, vol. I. col. 385; and Birch's *Life of Prince Henry*, p. 83.)

25. "Oratio Funebris in honorem Henrici excellentissimi Walliæ Principis, propriam atque intimam ejus effigiem præferens, bonisque omnibus et domesticis et exteris, honoris ergo dicata. Authore Leonello Sharpo, Sacræ Theologiæ Doctore. *Londini, excudebat Guilielmus Hall, 1612,*" 4to, pp. 22.

There are two copies of this Oration in the Bodleian Library and one in the British Museum. Verses are prefixed by Andrew Sharpe, Wm. Sharpe, and Edward Sharpe, brothers to the Author.

JOSHUA SYLVESTER, Poet and Translator of *Du Bartas*, &c. Chalmers's *Biog. Dict.*

26. "Lachrymæ Domesticæ, a viall of household teares shedd on Prynce Henrye's Hearse by his Highnes fyrst.....Poett and Penc'oner, Joshua Sylvester."

This Tract was entered at Stationers' Hall on the 27th of November.—A third edition appears to have been entitled:

27. "Lachrymæ Lachrymarum, or the Spirit of Teares, distilled for the on-tymely death of the incomparable Prince, Panaretus. By Josuah Sylvester. The third edition, with additions of his owne, and other Elegies." (No date), 4to. pp. 62.

The title, as above, is in white letters upon a black ground, with the Prince's arms within a garter, and surmounted by a coronet. Sylvester's Poem is printed on one side of the leaves within a border having figures of death on each side; the opposite pages are entirely black, except having the arms as described. After the eleventh leaf are verses in Latin subscribed "Jos. Hall" the Bishop, and Sylvester's translation; also two copies of English verses by Bp. Hall (these are re-printed in the *Restituta*, vol. III. p. 497, *et seq.*). Next appears a distinct title,—"*Sundry Funeral Elegies on the untimely death of the most excellent Prince, Henry late Prince of Wales, composed by several authors, 1613.*" [Two copies of this were sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, see under Nos. 8 and 11]. At the back of this title are metrical lines addressed "To the severall Authors of these surrepted Elegies," subscribed, H. L. R. S. Then follow the elegies by G. G., S. P. O., H. Holland, John Donne (printed in the "*English Poets*"), Sir W. Cornwallis (see *Brydges's Peerage*, vol. II. p. 547); Sir Edward Herbert (afterwards Lord Cherbury; his elegy is among his *Occasional Verses*); Sir Henry Goodyere (see pp. 25, 400); and Henry Burton (who had been Clerk of the Closet to Prince Henry, and was also to Prince Charles; but afterwards the coadjutor of Prynne and Bastwick. See *Biog. Dict.*)—This Tract is marked £.3. 13s. 6d. in the *Bibliotheca Anglo-Poetica*.

JOHN TAYLOR, the celebrated Water Poet.—See p. 527.

28. "Great Britain all in Blacke, for the incomparable losse of Prince Henry, our late worthy Prince. By John Taylor. *London: Printed by E. A. for J. Wright, 1612,*" 4to, pp. 16.

This has a wood-cut frontispiece of an half-length portrait of Prince Henry exercising with the pike. It is dedicated to "Sir Robert Dowgласse, Knt."—Mr. Nassau possessed a copy; see p. 493.

CYRIL TOURNEUR, author of three Tragedies. (See the *Biographia Dramatica*.)

29. "A Griefe on the death of Prince Henrie. Expressed in a broken Elegie, according to the nature of such sorrow. By Cyril Tourneur, 1613," pp. 20.

It begins with a prose dedication "to my noble Maister George Carie," and four lines of poetry to the Reader. At the end of the "Griefe" are verses "On the representation of the Prince at his Funeralls;" and, "On the Succession," each in eight lines. See under Heywood, No. 15. A copy is in the British Museum. Another was in Mr. Bindley's collection (see under No. 11); and a third was bought at Mr. Garrick's sale, April 24, 1823, by Messrs. Hurst and Co.

JOHN WEBSTER, author of several Plays, and the City Pageant of 1624 (see hereafter, under that year).

30. "A Monumental Columnne erected to the living Memory of the ever-glorious Henry, late Prince of Wales. By John Webster, 1613," pp. 18.

It is dedicated "To the Right Honourable Sir Robert Carre, Viscount Rochester, Knight of the most noble Order of the Garter, and one of his Majestie's most Honourable Privy Councell." See under Heywood, No. 15.—A copy "with a fine portrait of Prince Henry inserted, brilliant impression," was sold at Mr. Nassau's sale, March 16, 1824. It was purchased by Mr. Rodd for 14s.

DAVID WEDDERBURN, Professor at Aberdeen.

31. In Obitum summæ spei Principis Henrici, Jacobi VI. serenissimi Regis Magnæ Britanniae, Hiberniae, et Galliae, filii Lessus. Authore Davide Wedderburno, Scholæ Aberdonensis Professore. *Edinburgæ, excudebat Andreas Hart, bibliopola, 1612,*" 4to, pp. 4.

A copy of this Latin Poem is in the British Museum.

GEORGE WITHER, the Poet, another fellow-Collegian of Prince Henry at Magdalen College, Oxford. — See his Life in Chalmers's *Biographical Dictionary*; and also accompanied by a portrait and a list of all his works, in the *British Bibliographer*, vol. I.

32. "Prince Henrie's Obsequies; or, Mournfull Elegies upon his Death. With a supposed Inter-locution betweene the Ghost of Prince Henry and Great Britaine. By George Wyther. *London: Printed by Richard Badger for Robert Allot, 1613.*"

A wood-cut of the hearse that was set up in Westminster Abbey (see under No. 11) is prefixed. This Tract is re-printed in the *Restituta*, by Sir E. Brydges, vol. I. pp. 384—418; Mr. Dalrymple (*Extracts from Wither's Poems*, p. 48) remarked that these were so different from the common style of Court Funeral Elegies, that it would be unpardonable to consign them to the oblivion

which such pieces generally deserve. A copy of the original edition is in the Bodleian Library, and one was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, Aug. 6, 1820, and purchased by Messrs. Longman and Co. for £.2.

This list might have been extended to a still greater length by enumerating the numberless short elegies on Prince Henry to be found in the collections of Poems and other works of the period; as is done to a small extent in Dr. Birch's *Life of the Prince*, and in the fourth volume of *Restituta*. But the preceding list of distinct publications is sufficient to show the general grief on this lamentable occasion, — only rivalled at the death of the late equally hopeful Princess Charlotte. None of the votaries of the Muses were regardless of this inspiring subject. — The value of such publications is not a little increased since the time when the Oxford Verses on the Deaths of Sir Ph. Sidney, 1587; Sir Henry Unton, 1596; Queen Elizabeth and Accession of James, 1603; the Death of Prince Henry, 1613; the Marriage of Princess Elizabeth, 1613; the Deaths of Sir Tho. Bodley, 1613; Queen Anne, 1619; and others; sold altogether for 3s. 6d. at the sale of James West, President of the Royal Academy, March 29, 1773.

In about nine days after the melancholy solemnity Mr. Chamberlain thus writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“Monday the 7th of December, the Prince's Funeral was kept here. There was a solemn obsequy for him at Oxford, with a Sermon and a Funeral Oration at St. Mary's, and the like in the afternoon at Christ Church; both which places were hung and furnished with black. And they have set forth a book of Latin Elegies and Funeral Verses. Our Cambridge Men are nothing so forward in our afflictions; only I hear some Verses are set out and given to some few, but not publickly sold¹. But they are very busy in preparing exercises and plays against the Palsgrave's coming, who is expected there soon after Christmass.

“The King came from Royston to Theobalds on Tuesday, and is expected here [London] about the end of this week or the beginning of the next².”

“On St. Thomas'-daye was a Chapter of the honorable Order of the Garter held in the Chamber of Whitehall, Westminster; where, beside the Knights of the Order, ther were onely præsent the Chancellour, the Register, the Garter, and the Usher. By scrutinie they elected into the Order Frederick Count Palatine of the Rhene and Elector, and Count Maurice of Nassau. The Count Palatine was there sent for, and passing through the midst of them standing on each syde; they accompanied him into the Bed-chamber, where the King sitting up in his bedd, after a few wordes putt the George about his neck, and delivered the Garter to the Earle of Nottingham, Lord Admirall, the auncient of the Order, who girt

¹ See p. 505.

² Birch's MSS. 4173.

the same about his legg. In the meane while it was forgotten to have first dubbed him Knight, which should have beene formerly done according to the statutes of the said Order. But, to salve that omission, it was thought good and decreed that he should be knighted before his Installation ¹."

By an especial Patent, dated Westminster, December 22, was knighted Sir William Vander Ryt, of Brodehen, General of Horse in the service of the United Provinces²."

On Friday the 25th, Christmas-day was kept as usual at Whitehall; where the King attended Divine Service, and Bishop Andrews (as usual) preached³.

"On St. John's-day, the 27th of December, Frederick Count Palatine and Elector was affianced and contracted⁴ in the Banqueting-house att Whitehall in the presence of the King sitting in state, in this manner:

"About two yerdes below the degrees of the State was spread a large Turkie carpett, whereon they stode when they were affianced. The Nobilitie and Prince Charles brought him in appaieled in a black⁵ velvet cloake caped with gold lace. Then followed she in a black velvet gown seemè of crosletts or quatrefoiles sylver, and a small white feather on her head, accompanied with Ladies. After a short

¹ Camden's MSS. Brit. Mus. Bibl. Harl. 5176.—The Installation took place on the 7th of February; see hereafter, p. 522.

² Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. XVI. p. 735.

³ This Discourse is printed in that Prelate's "XCVI Sermons," it being his Seventh on the Nativity. The text Hebr. i. 1, 2, 3.

⁴ In the conditions and articles of settlement executed this day (of which hereafter) is an express clause: "*Quod Matrimonium verum et legitimum contrahatur inter eos in Angliâ ante initium mensis Maii, et interim Sponsalia legitima de præsentî,*" &c. "It would be no difficulty," remarks Mr. Anstis, Garter, (Leland's *Collectanea*, vol. V. p. 329,) "to shew the antient custom of such Espousalls by the Daughter of the Crown of England as distinct acts from the office of Matrimony, and that they frequently were performed some months or years before the Marriage was actually celebrated."

⁵ Mr. Anstis (*ubi supra*) observes, "that this black habit was doubtless then worn as mourning for Prince Henry; however, it is remarked that the Princess had flowers of silver in her gown, because, as it will be shewn hereafter (at the Marriage), white, the colour of virgins, was appropriated to Marriages. In the additions to Monstrelet we are informed that Lewis XII., upon the death of Anne de Bretagne his Queen, commanded that '*nul ne parlast à luy s'il n'étoit vestu de drap noir; et adonques fut le Mariage du Mons. le Duc de Valois [afterwards King Francis I.] avec la Fille du Roy, et espouserint tous en deuil vestus de drap noir;*' &c. *Chroniques Additionnées au Monstrelet*, pp. 116, 117.—In the solemnizing of Espousals and Matrimony this circumstance was generally observed, that nothing should occur which could refresh mourning and misfortune at festivals, where the marks of satisfaction and pleasure alone should be seen;—but this rule had some exceptions."

space came in the King, and when he was sett under the state, they descend to the carpett before said, where, after complimentall courtesies to each other, Sir Thomas Lake reade the formall wordes in the Booke of Common Praier, in French, *viz.* ‘I Frederick take thee Elizabeth to my wedded wiffe, to have, &c. from this day forward, for better and worse, &c.’ which he repeated *verbatim*; and she likewise, ‘I Elizabeth take thee Frederick to my wedded husband,’ &c. After which the Archbishop of Canterbury gave the Benediction, ‘The God of Abraham, the God of Isaac, the God of Jacob, blesse theis Espousales and thie servants,’ &c.—*Et sic itum est* ¹.”

December 31, Mr. Chamberlain again writes to his friend Sir Dudley Carleton:

“The Affiancing of the Palsgrave and the Lady Elizabeth was solemnized in the great Banqueting-room on Sunday (the 27th), before dinner, in the presence of the King and great store of Nobility, but the Queen was absent, being troubled, as they say, with the gout. The King was not out of his chamber for three or four days before nor since, having a spice of the same disease; and yet the last week, upon his bed, he gave hearing to a controversy ’twixt the farmers of the Customs, and the Lord Mayor [Sir John Swinnerton²], who was there present, and accused them of defrauding the King of more than £.70,000 a year. But upon ripping up the matter, they went away acquitted, and he [the Lord Mayor] commended for his good meaning to the King’s service³.”

Again, on the 3d of January, Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows:

“Our Christmas came to an end without the least shew of any alteration in Court or elsewhere; and to-morrow the King removes towards Royston. The Council have dealt with him to name new Officers; specially Secretaries, or one at least, whomsoever he should please. The King took their advice in good part, and doth acknowledge as much as they say, with promise, that he will think upon it, and resolve in good time⁴.”

The same excellent Correspondent thus writes on the 9th of January, to Sir Ralph Winwood:

“At the solemnizing of the Fiancialles on St. John’s-day, Sir Thomas Lake’s friends made account he had won ground and outstept his competitors in performing the part of a Principal Secretary, when he did *præire conceptis verbis*,

¹ Camden’s MS. volume, Harl. MSS. 5176.

² Birch’s MSS. 4173.

³ See pp. 136, 466.

⁴ Ibid.

and repeat the words of the Contract; which were so badly translated and worse pronounced, that it moved an unseasonable laughter as well in the contractors as the assistants; till the Archbishop of Canterbury very gravely interposing himself, used these very words, 'The God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, bless these nuptials, and make them prosperous to these Kingdoms and to his Church.' You are exceedingly beholden to that Prelate for his good word and opinion, which he hath not spared to make known upon divers occasions¹. The Prince Palatine (for so he is now styled, and since this Contract is usually prayed for in the Church among the King's Children) was very Royal in his presents this New-year's-tide, giving to the Lord and Lady Harington, in golden and gilt plate, to the value of £.2000; to their servants £.400; to all the women about the Lady Elizabeth £.100 a piece, and a medal with his picture; to her waiters as much; and to her chiefe Gentleman Usher a chain of £.150; to Mrs. Dudley a chain of pearls and diamonds of £.500; to the Prince a rapier and pair of spurs set with diamonds; to the King a bottle of one entire agate containing two quarts, esteemed a very rare and rich jewell; to the Queen a very faire cup of agate and a jewel; and lastly to his Mistress a rich chaine of diamonds, a tire for her head all of diamonds, two very rich pendant diamonds for her ears, and above all two pearls for bigness, fashion, and beauty, esteemed the rarest that are to be found in Christendom; insomuch that the jewells bestowed only on her are valued by men of skill above £.35,000. He was purposed to shew the like bounty towards the King's and Queen's servants and officers, but the King directly forbad it. The Queen is noted to have given no great grace nor favour to this Match, and there is no doubt will do less hereafter, for that upon these things Schomberg (that is chief about him) is said to have given out, that his master is a better man than the King of Denmark, and that he is to take place of him in the Empire, at leastwise of a greater King than he, the King of Bohemia². The Marriage is set down for Shrove Sunday, against which time it is said the Lords and Ladyes about the Courte have appointed a Maske upon their own charge;

¹ Mr. Chamberlain does not forget to whom he is writing.—He is applying his flattery in the right quarter, for Sir Ralph Winwood was the successful candidate; though not appointed till March 29, 1614. (See p. 135.) Sir Thomas Lake became Secretary Jan. 2, 1615-16.

² It is evident from many sources that the Queen at first disapproved of the Match. An idle story asserts that she used to call her daughter, in disdain of so inferior an alliance, Goody Palsgrave. — However, notwithstanding the opinion of Mr. Chamberlain, that her Majesty would still less favour it, she was more than reconciled to the Marriage before its solemnization;—see p. 524.

but I hear there is order given for £.1500 to provide one upon the King's cost, and £.100 for fire-works. The Inns of Courte are likewise dealt with for two Masks against that time, and mean to furnish themselves for the service. The Prince Palatine makes account to depart homeward some fifteen days after his Marriage; and the Lady is to follow towards Whitsuntide, conducted by four Earls, eight Barons, and I know not how many Knights; the old Lord Admirall means to make it his last service to waft her over.

"The King removes this day towards Roiston, where the Lord of Rochester shall have more leisure and commodity to negotiate this busyness that entertains every man's thought, for he pretends that the multiplicity of other affairs hindered him from moving it while the King was here; yet I will not forbear to tell you, that many are of opinion, that he is and will be content to keep it in his own hands. Indeed he is very slow of dispatch, and hath at this time many irons in the fire as well for himself as his friends; for besides the main place he shoots at, he is now about the reversion of the Lord Darcie's lands, which for want of heirs male are like to return to the Crown according to the first grant¹."

Again January 13, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The foul weather kept the King till Monday, when the air began to alter, and hath continued ever since very fair. He is gone to Royston and Newmarket, and makes account not to return till Candlemass or after. He took up a quarrel before he went between Edward Sackville, son to the last Earl of Dorset, and the Lord Bruce of Kinloss. It was to be determined beyond sea, and Sackville was gotten over; but Bruce was stayed at the sea-side².

"Garter King at Arms [William Seagar] is gone to Holland, and is in communication with Sir Ralph Winwood to deliver the order to Count Maurice, and perform the Ceremonies³."

On the 28th of January, again to the same Correspondent:

"We hear the King is still at Newmarket somewhat troubled with a humor in his great toe, that must not yet be called the gout. Presently upon his going hence the Council took their several ways, and gave themselves some liberty of recreation for a week; but are now as close at it again as ever; and indeed complain, that matters find not the ready disposal that were to be wished, for want of assistance in some secret business. So that no doubt they will importune the

¹ Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 421. ² The King did not effectually *take it up*; see p. 343.

³ Birch's MSS. 4173.—See hereafter, p. 518.

King, at his return, to resolve upon somebody [as Secretary]. For though his Majesty at first took delight to shew his readiness and ability in these causes; yet that vigour begins to relent; and he must daily more and more attend his own health and quiet."

And again on the 29th of January, to Sir Ralph Winwood:

"The day of the King's departure hence, the Lord Archbishop feasted the Palsgrave's followers, which he took so kindly that, when they were ready to sit down, himself came, though he were neither invited nor expected. The Entertainment was very great, and such as became the giver and receiver. The Prince Palatine goes to be installed at Windsor the seventh of the next month, and great preparations here are of braverie, Masques, and fire works against the Marriage. The opinion is now that they shall go away both together before St. George's-day. Yesternight the Prince Palatine feasted all the Councill at Essex House, where, in regard of the good entertainment he found with the Archbishop, he shewed more kindness and caresses to him and his followers than to all the rest put together¹."

During the month of January the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Robert Knowles²; and at Royston and Newmarket the following received that honour:

Sir Humphrey May ³ , of Sussex.	Sir Edward Ayscough.
Sir Francis Leigh ⁴ , of Warwickshire.	Sir Joseph Killegrew.
Sir Robert Wingfield.	Sir Edward Underhill ⁵ , of Warwicksh.
Sir Edmond Wyld.	Sir Nevill Pool.

On the 2d of February, his Majesty, having returned to Whitehall, there knighted Sir William Pordage, of Kent.

¹ Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. pp. 428—430.

² Sir Robert Knowles had been a Gentleman Extraordinary of the Privy-chamber to Prince Henry.

³ Sir Humphrey May became Master of the Rolls in 1629. He built a large mansion at Rawmere, Sussex. See Dallaway's Chichester, p. 113.

⁴ Son of that Sir Francis Leigh, of Newnham Regis, Warwickshire, who was made a K. B. at the Coronation (see vol. I. p. 225). It is not clear whether the father or son was the Baronet created Dec. 24, 1618; but it was the son who was created Lord Dunsmore and Earl of Chichester, and consequently to him the latter part of the note there printed rightly belongs.

⁵ Sir Edward Underhill, of Nether Eatendon, was Sheriff of Warwickshire in 1627. He had been Proctor of Oxford in 1608, being of Magdalen College in that University; and died Nov. 13, 1641. Another of this family will be found knighted Sept. 6, 1617. Of the family see Dugdale's Warwickshire, by Thomas, vol. I. p. 625.

*A Relation of the Order observed when MAURICE Prince of ORANGE was invested with the Garter, an. 11 JACOBI Regis*¹.

On the 14th of February, the Citizens of the Hague met in arms, together with the troops of Prince Maurice, of Prince Henry his brother, and the Earl of Castilion; the Citizens kept guard in the outermost court, where also several pieces of ordinance were placed; and the three afore-mentioned troops in the innermost court. From the Palace to the shambles were pitch-barrels placed, as also at the Sovereign's Ambassador's lodgings.

At three a'clock in the afternoon the States of the United Provinces assembled in the usual place, where other persons of great quality were admitted as spectators. The first that came thither was Refuge, the French King's Ambassador, who took his seat at the upper end of the table; not long after came Prince Maurice, conducted by the Sovereign's Ambassador, and those deputed by the States. Before them went twelve trumpets sounding, and after several Noblemen and persons of honor two and two, the guards attending each side. After these went Garter Principal King of Arms, vested with the arms of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland, and carrying in his hand a purse of green silk, wherein were the Garter and George; next him went Prince Maurice, and after him his brother Henry, the Prince of Portugal, and others of his kindred, as the Earls of Nassau and Lippia; then several of the Nobility, and many others of great quality.

Then Prince Maurice, taking his place where these solemnities were performed, sat at the upper end of the table, at the left hand of the French King's Ambassador; but Sir Ralph Winwood, the Sovereign's Ambassador, took his place in the middle over against the President of the States, and began a short Oration in French to this effect:

"My Lords; From those things which I have in the Convention declared, by the command of the King my Master, you have sufficiently understood his purpose of conferring the Order of the Garter upon Prince Maurice, as also the causes wherewith he thought himself moved to do it; and whereas it hath been decreed by the common suffrages of the Knights Companions of the Order, that he should be joined in companionship with the Elector Palatine, it seemed good to the Sovereign to command me to present him with the ensigns of this Order, and hath confirmed this his command by the testimony of his Commission,

¹ Inserted as a companion to the investiture of the Duke of Wirtemberg in vol I. p. 282, from Ashmole's "Order of the Garter."

under the Great Seal of England, which Commission I here deliver unto you, and pray it may be read."

Hereupon he delivered the Commission to the President, from whose hand the Secretary then taking it, read it aloud; which having finished, the Sovereign's Ambassador continued his discourse:

"Both the honor of this Order, and ancient custom require, that it be sent out of England to stranger Princes by persons of honor peculiarly deputed to this employment, and who are themselves Knights Companions of the Order, or at least deserve to be so; but because that the Ceremonies there used seem not so well to agree with the discipline of your Church, and that the conditions thereof are not altogether consistent with the state of your Commonwealth, it hath pleased the Sovereign of the Order, for the avoiding all scandal, to confer this Order without any pomp or external magnificence. We have therefore made choice of this place, in compliance with your pleasure, as the most commodious for the performance of our duty, in that we might present it in the presence of your Lordships, who as being the supream Lords of this State, will not think much to be eye-witnesses of that honor which the King of Great Britain, your best friend and allie, offers to the Chief General of your armies, and Governour of your Provinces, as also to your whole State in general, whereof each of you are a part. Nor could his Majesty have given greater testimonies, either of his affection towards the happy state of your Commonwealth, or the joy which he hath conceived for that he sees your affairs, after so many troubles and storms, brought to a haven of rest and quiet, or likewise of his most entire good will; wishing that that league of friendship which is contracted between his Kingdoms and your Provinces, may be perpetual and inviolable. Now, therefore, desiring first your good leave, we shall convert our address to Prince Maurice."

At this instant, Garter King of Arms opened the silk purse, and took out the Garter, set with rich diamonds, and laid it on the table, and then the Ambassador addrest himself to Prince Maurice in the following manner:

"To you, my Lord, we offer in the name of the King my master, the Order of the Garter, which we may say, without boasting or flattery, is the most ancient and most illustrious Order of all Europe, which in all times hath been kept inviolable, without any spot or blemish, wherewith all the greatest Emperors and Monarchs suing to be graced and adorned, have esteemed the greatest part of their felicity that they could obtain it; his Majesty judgeth the greatness of your

family, which he acknowledgeth to be most illustrious, worthy of this honor, your piety also and zeal to promote the reformed religion, likewise your warlike virtues, which the God of hosts hath blest with so many victories, but especially those high merits, whereby you have obliged these United Provinces, and by consequence his Realms, and so thereby the whole Christian world, his Majesty being altogether of opinion that the quiet of Christendom consisteth much in the happy state of these Provinces; and that the condition of these Provinces, whatever it be, and that of those Realms have a mutual dependence one upon the other; this is the motive and sole cause that hath induced his Majesty to confer upon you an honor, the greatest his Kingdoms can bestow, of which behold these the marks and ensigns [and with these words produced the Garter], which your Excellency is to receive from us, according to the commands of our King, and those altogether free from any ceremonies, except such wherein you shall voluntarily and willingly consent to be engaged."

This Speech being ended, Prince Maurice in brief gave thanks for the honor offered him, and then forthwith the Ambassador and Garter having made due obeysance, tyed the Garter about his leg; next, Garter took out of the forementioned purse, the golden medal, wherein was the effigies of St. George with the subdued dragon under his feet; this medal hanging upon a blue ribband, Garter put about the Prince's neck; after which he unfolded a parchment, wherein were contained the titles of Prince Maurice in French, which he read aloud:

"The high, mighty, and excellent Prince Maurice, Prince of Orange, Earl of Nassau, Catzenelleboge, Viand, Dietz, Meurs, Linge, Marquess of Vere and Flushing, Baron of Grave, the territory of Kuyke, Lece, and Nyervaert, Governor and Captain General of Gelderland, Holland, Zealand, Utrecht, West Friesland, Zutphen, and Overyssell, Admiral General of the United Provinces, and Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter."

As soon as he had made an end of reading these titles, presently all the trumpets sounded, and the troops in order shot off their pistols, which volley was seconded by the trained bands, after which the great guns were discharged.

These things being thus performed, and silence made, Sir John Oldenbarnevelt, Lord of Tempel, making an Oration in the name of the States General, reckoned up in brief the leagues contracted heretofore at several times between the Provinces and the Kingdom of Great Britain, and thereupon rendered humble thanks to the King for the continuance of them, specially for that by this action he went

about to manifest the same to all men ; for as much as that so remarkable an honor, which his Majesty was conferring on those Provinces in the person of Prince Maurice, their Governour and Commander both in war and peace, was an honor used to be shewn but only to the very choicest of his friends ; but most principally of all for that he was pleased to confer this honor on Prince Maurice, without enjoining any strict obligation upon the receipt of the Order. Next he gave thanks to the Ambassadors for the diligence they had employed in this affair ; and, lastly, directing his Speech to Prince Maurice, he, in the name of the States General, congratulated his new honor, assuring him on their behalf, that they conceived very great joy and satisfaction, and wisht him a very long and a happy enjoyment thereof, to the glory of God, and the enlargement of his family, and the consecration of the public liberty of the United Provinces, in which thing, as hitherto they had done, so for the time to come, they would for ever afford him their best and most faithful assistance ¹."

As soon as he had finished his Speech John Utenbogard, Minister of the Hague, as he had been ordered, standing at the end of the table, made a very admirable and learned Sermon, wherein he most devoutly praised God for what had hapned, imploring him to bless Prince Maurice in his new-obtained honor, and to endue him with His grace.'

The Sermon ended, the trumpets sounded, the muskets also and great guns were again discharged. Then Prince Maurice (accompanied by the Ambassadors and other noble persons) returned in the same order as he came, and then again the third time vollies of great and small shot were discharged ; after which the soldiers and trained bands went every one to their homes and quarters. At evening the pitcht barrels were set on fire, and bonfires kindled ; a magnificent Entertainment also was given by Prince Maurice to the Ambassadors, Princes, and great persons above-mentioned, at which, while healths were drunk to the King of France and Great Britain, all the guns were again discharged.

¹ Prince Maurice, says Howes, received the Order very acceptably, and rewarded the bringer very bountifully.—See also Mr. Chamberlain's Letter in p. 522.—Wilson says, " Prince Maurice took it as a great honour to be admitted into the fraternity of that Order, and wore it constantly ; till afterwards, some villains at the Hague, that met the reward of their demerit, (one of them, a Frenchman, being Groom of the Prince's Chamber,) robbed a jeweller of Amsterdam that brought jewels to the Prince. This Groom, tempting him into his chambers to see some jewels, there with his confederates strangled the man with one of the Prince's blue ribbons ; which being afterwards discovered, the Prince would never suffer so fatal an instrument to come about his neck."

On the 4th of January, Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows to Mrs. Alice Carleton, a maiden sister¹ of Sir Dudley :

“ On Sunday before Candlemas-day the Prince Palatine and his Lady were solemnly asked openly in the Chapel by the Bishop of Bath and Wells², and the next Sunday is the last time of asking.

“ Here are extraordinary preparations for Fire-works and Fights upon the water, with three castles built upon eight western barges, and one great castle upon land over against the Court. One or two of the pinnaces are come already from Rochester, and divers other vessels to the number of six-and-thirty are provided; some like gallies, some galleasses, and some like carracks, and other ships of war, and above 500 watermen already pressed, and 1000 musketeers of the trained bands in the shires hereabouts made ready for this service; which in all computation cannot stand the King in so little as £.5000.

“ On Tuesday I took occasion to go to Court, because I had never seen the Palsgrave, nor the Lady Elizabeth, near hand, for a long time. I had my full view of them both, but will not tell you all I think, but only this, that he owes his mistress nothing, if he were a King's son as she is a King's Daughter. The worst is, methinks, he is much too young and small-timbered to undertake such a task.

“ The Count Maurice, at the receiving of the Garter in the Low Countries, shewed himself very bountiful, and gave great rewards to the King of Heralds and his followers; as perhaps your brother may understand from Sir Ralph Winwood, though it may be he will not certify, that himself had a cup of gold for a present, worth five hundred pounds. He hath been very fortunate for such wind-falls, though he hath got no great fortune from Sir T. Bodley, where there was more reason to expect it. For dying in his house, which he bought of him about a year since, he hath left him little or nothing but his old armoury, that he could not tell to do withal, and is no way worth twenty marks³.”

On Sunday the seventh of February, the Palsgrave in person, and the Grave Maurice by his deputie Count Lodowic of Nassau, his cousin, were installed as

¹ It does not follow that she was an *old maid*; for, however young, the unmarried did not then refuse the title *Mistress*.

² Dr. James Montague; see vol. I. p. 313.

³ Birch's MSS. 4173. This Letter proceeds to relate some highly curious particulars respecting Sir Thomas Bodley's legacies, &c.; but not appropriately belonging to the present subject.

Knights of the Garter at Windsor, in the presence of the King, Prince, and Nobility. The titles of the Palsgrave are thus given by Howes: "The high and mightie Prince Frederick, by the grace of God, Count Pallatyne of the Rheyne, Arch Sewer and Prince Elector of the Holy Roman Empire, Duke of Bavyer, and Knight of the most Noble Order of the Garter." The style of the Grave Maurice has been recited in p. 520.

A Letter¹ written soon after informs us that "Count Henry should have been proxy for Grave Maurice [his brother]; but contrary winds withheld him, so that a young Gentleman of the same family, John Ludowic Nassau, was on the sudden chosen by those of the Order *sur le champ*, to stand for his deputy, which office he performed well and gracefully, being a proper young Gentleman of 21 years. The Palatine sware with an exception, "salvis legibus Sac. Rom. Imperii;" and the young Count, "salvis Constitutionibus Ordinum Provinciarum Confœderatarum." The Feast was in the Great Hall, where the King dined at the upper table alone, served in state by the Lord Gerard as Sewer, the Lord Norris as Cup-bearer, the Lord Compton as Carver. All that were of the Order sat at a long table across the Hall; the Prince by himself alone, and the Palatine a little distant from him. But the Count Nassau was ranged over against my Lord Admiral, and so took place of all after the Sovereign Princes, not without a little muttering of our Lords, who would have had him ranged according to seniority, if the King had not overruled it by prerogative.

"The time of the Count Palatine's departure hence with the Lady Elizabeth is already prefixed to be about Thursday in Easter-week, which falls out to be the 8th of April. They go accompanied by the Duke of Lennox, the Earl of Arundel, Viscount Lisle, and the Lord Zouch, who are deputed Commissioners to consign her to him there. There are allowed them 100 persons to be defrayed by the King until they come into the Prince's country. My Lord Harington and his Lady accompany them, but not on the King's purse, nor as Commissioners; and their purpose is to stay with the Lady a good while to see her settled in that country before they leave her. I cannot learn that the Lady Elizabeth carries over any Englishman of sort to continue about her, but all Scots. Sir James Sandelo is *maistre d'hostel* unto her, and Sir Andrew Keith is Master of the Horse.

¹ From Birch's MSS. 4173.—The writer is not mentioned.

"The Count de Schomberg wholly governeth the Palatine here, and in hope that his greatness will be continued and increase in his own country, Mrs. Dudley hath resolved to make the voyage with the Lady Elizabeth, in contemplation of that Count, who is her professed servant!

"The Ambassadors make frequent visits at this time, both to the Queen and Prince, hoping to be invited to the Feast. On Sunday last the Archduke's Ambassador's Lady danced before the Queen at Somerset House, and the day following the Ambassador himself had audience of her at Whitehall; which officiousness proceedeth from his concurrency with the Venetian, fearing that Foscarini may be invited, and he left out. But as yet it is resolved to invite none, though if the Spanish Ambassador continue sick, as he is at this present, perhaps another resolution may be taken, and the French may be there, when there will be no strife for place¹.

"The Queen doth discover her liking of this Match over all others; and for the more honouring of it, she exceedeth the King in new liveries that she giveth to her servants, and caresseth the Palsgrave whensoever he cometh to her, as if he were her own son².

"I understand likewise from a great Lady, that the Lady Arbella, though she be still restrained in the Tower, close as ever, yet to express her joy for this occasion, hath provided for herself four gowns, whereof one cost £.1500."

On the 11th of February, Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King, Prince, and Count Palatine came home on Tuesday from the Installation at Windsor. Count Henry of Nassau, that was to have performed the ceremony for his brother, by reason of contrary weather did not arrive till yesternight.

"The Marriage draws near, and all things are ready. On Sunday was their last time of asking openly in the Chapel. The Queen grows every day more favourable; and there is hope she will grace it with her presence. There is a band of 500 musketeers made ready by the City to guard the Court during these Triumphs; and we have extraordinary watches of substantial householders every night, and an Alderman in person to oversee them. Many searches are made, and much listening there is; which gives occasion to suspect that there is intel-

¹ On this subject see hereafter, under Mr. Chamberlain's Letter of Feb. 18.

² Both the Queen and Mr. Chamberlain had changed the opinion during the last month; see 515.

ligence of some intended treachery. Order is given out likewise of general musters throughout all England, to be finished at the end of March, and there is almost a confirmed opinion, that we are to look for troubles in Ireland.

“ The preparations for Fire-works and Fights upon the water are very great, and have already consumed above £.6000, which a man would easily believe who sees the provision of six-and-thirty sail of great pinnaces, gallies, galleasses, carricks, with great store of other smaller vessels, so trimmed, furnished, and painted, that I believe there was never such a fleet seen above the Bridge¹, besides four Floating-castles with Fire-works, and the representation of the town, fort, and haven of Argier² upon the land. This day they are to begin their prises, and so to continue and hold on to-morrow and Saturday. The tides fall out very fit, it being both spring tides and the water at the best height from three to six; so that if the weather serve as well, they can wish no more, for they

¹ “ The 6th day of January,” says Mr. Phineas Pette, “ I received a Letter from the Lord High Admiral, together with a list of those shippes that were appoynted to be made ready for the transportation of the Lady Elizabeth, with warrant to putt them presently in hand to be graned and fitted accordingly. The 11th day I was sent for from Chatham by a messenger to attend the Lord Admirall lying then at Chelsey; which accordingly I presently performed, and rode to London, where I stayed full three dayes, the Lord Admirall sitting every of those in Counsell, attended by the principal Officers of the Navy, the Masters, and Master Shipwrights, to resolve not only for the preparation of the Fleet to attend the transportation, but alsoe for preparing many vessells to be built upon long boates and barges, for shippes and gallies for a Sea-fight, to be presented before Whitehall against the Marriage of the Lady Elizabeth. The manner whereof concluded, and ordered in writing, I was licensed to go to Chatham to take order for the Disdaine, and sending up of as many long boats and sea-barges as could be spared from the Navy; which having ordered, I returned again presently to London, and did there attend dayly in overseeing those businesses, which were putt out by the great to diverse yard-keepers by reason of the shortness of time limited for the making them ready against the Marriage; by reason of this my continuall attendance, not only upon this service, but also upon the Admirall and Sir Robert Mansell principally entrusted for the ordering of the whole service, I first took a lodging at Westminster near Sir Robert’s house in St. Stephen’s-alley, where I continued many years after. Amongst many other vessells fitted for this peice of service was an old pinnace of the King’s called the Spy, of the burden of 60 tunns, having nine pieces of brass ordnance, appoynted to serve as an Argosey, whereof I was somewhat against my will (by the Lord Admirall’s persuasion) made to serve as Captain. In which jesting business I runn more danger than if it had been a sea-service in good earnest.”

² The same as we now know by the name of Algiers, where Lord Exmouth has in modern times repeated his fire-works in good earnest. It was always called Argier formerly; see other examples in Nares’s Glossary.

will have the whole river at liberty, being shut up both above and beneath with a large number of lighters, that no boats can come to trouble them. Sir Robert Mansell is Chief Commander, who takes great pains, and no doubt will do his best to shew his ability ¹.

“The King at his being at Newmarket made seven or eight Knights, whereof Sir Humphrey May was leader; the rest, Sir Robert Wingfield, that lately married a daughter of Sir Roger Aston’s; Sir Olave Lee; Sir Edward Underhill, of Hampshire, that was late Proctor of Oxford, and the last year buried his father and two elder brethren; Sir —— Clopton ²; Sir [Edmund] Wylde; and I know not who else ³.

“The Countess of Salisbury’s daughter was to be Christened this day in the King’s Chapel; but it is now put off till next week. The Queen and the Countess of Derby to be Godmothers, and the Lord Admiral Godfather ⁴.”

The rejoicings at the Marriage now began with a sumptuous and unprecedented display of Fire-works on the Thames. These were celebrated, as well in other Tracts of the day, as particularly in the following particular description ⁵:

¹ A Letter Mr. Chamberlain had written the day before to Sir Ralph Winwood, printed in Winwood’s Memorials, vol. III. p. 431, and nearly the same as the above, has the following passage at this place inserted: “There was expectation of some Creation of Noblemen at this Solemnitie, but we hear no more of it, only it is thought we shall have a new frie of Knights to the number of 40 at the least; for the Lady Elizabeth’s followers have no other means to put themselves in equipage, but make port sale, and keep it as it were open market to all commers for £.150 a man.” Neither was this report aught but Court tattle—no Knights were made; see under Feb. 23.

² No person of this name was knighted at this time. Sir William Clopton, of Norfolk, perhaps the same individual that Mr. Chamberlain alludes to, received that honour at Theobalds March 4, 1613-14.

³ These Knights have been more correctly given in p. 517.

⁴ This Christening took place on the 24th of this month; see hereafter. The godfather was the Earl of Shrewsbury; not Nottingham, the Lord Admiral.

⁵ See pp. 527 *et seq.*



HEAVEN'S BLESSING AND EARTH'S JOY;

OR, A TRUE RELATION OF THE SUPPOSED

SEA-FIGHTS AND FIRE-WORKES

AS WERE ACCOMPLISHED BEFORE THE ROYALL CELEBRATION OF THE ALL-BELOVED MARRIAGE

OF THE TWO PEERLESSE PARAGONS OF CHRISTENDOME,

FREDERICKE AND ELIZABETH.

By JOHN TAYLOR, the Water Poet ¹.

*A Description of the Sea-fights and Fireworkes, with other Royal occurrences
which were accomplished at the Princely celebration.*

I did not write nor publish this description of Fire and Water Triumphs to the intent that they should onely reade the relation that were spectators of them ; for

¹ "Imprinted at London for Joseph Hunt, and are to be solde by John Wright, 1613." It is embellished with two wood-cuts, large and small representations of two ships, very probably the same as those used in "London's Love to Prince Henry;" see p. 315. This account of the Fire-works was accompanied by "Triumphal Encomiasticke Verses, consecrated to the immortall memory of those happy and blessed Nuptials," and other Poems, by John Taylor, which for brevity's sake are here omitted. Indeed, as proved hereafter, a folio volume would scarce contain all the Epithalamia published on this occasion. A copy of the original Tract (complete) is in the collection of Mr. Rhodes, of Lyon's Inn. It is very scarce; a copy bound with Maria Franchis's "Marriage Hymne," on this occasion (see hereafter) was purchased at Mr. Bindley's sale, Jan. 15, 1819, for no less than 16 guineas and a half. Its value had greatly increased since April 21, 1773, when at the sale of the very rare Library of James West, President of the Royal Society, it obtained only 2s. 6d. —These Exhibitions on the Thames were a very appropriate subject for honest John Taylor, well known by the name of the Water Poet. He retained his veneration for the Stuart family long after their more courtly panegyrists had found other subjects of flattery; and when, in his old age, he kept an alehouse in Long Acre, he ventured to set up the sign of the Mourning Crown; but, as this gave offence to the saints of the Commonwealth, he was forced to substitute his own head, with this couplet:

"There's many a head stands for a sign,
Then, gentle reader, why not mine?"

"Heaven's Blessing and Earth's Joy" is the first on the list of Taylor's Publications, upwards of 80 in number, printed in the *Censura Literaria*, vol. VI. pp. 372 *et seq.* His *Elegy of Prince Henry* (see p. 511) must claim an earlier date.—Mr. Gough (*Brit. Top.* p. 279) says: "A Sea Fight on the Thames at the Marriage of James the First's Daughter, was engraved."

to such perhaps it will relish somewhat tedious, like a tale that is too often told; but I did write these things, that those who are farre remoted, not onely in his Majestie's dominions, but also in forraine territories, may have an understanding of the glorious pomp and magnificent domination of our high and mighty Monarch King James; and further, to demonstrate the skills and knowledges that our warlike nation hath in engines, fire-workes, and other military discipline, that thereby may be knowne, that howsoever warre seemes to sleepe, yet (upon any lawfull ground or occasion) the command of our dread Sovereaigne can rouse her to the terrour of all malignant opposers of his Royall state and dignity. But to the purpose.

In this representation of a Sea-fight there were 16 ships, 16 gallies, and six friggets; of the which Navy the ships were Christians and the gallies were supposed Turkes, all being artificially rigged and trimmed, well manned and furnished with great ordinance and musquettiers. One of the Christian fleet was a great vessel or a supposed Venetian argosey¹, and another was a tall ship, as it were appointed for the safe convoie of the argosey. And, for the avoyding of the troublesomness of boates and wherries, and other perturbations multitudes, there was a lists or bounds made with lighters, hoyes, and other great boates to the number of 250, or thereabouts; the one end of the lists was as high almost as Lambeth-bridge [stairs], and the other ende as low as the Temple-staires, and so fastened to the Sowth shore, or the upper end of the Bancke or Sowthwarke-side, in the forme of a halfe-moone or semi-circle, so that boates might passe up and downe the river betwixt London side and the lighters any way. The aforesaid Turkish gallies lying all at an anchor over against Westminster, in a haven or harbor made artificially with masts and other provisions, sixty yards into the river, (which harbor or haven was belonging to a supposed Turkish or Barbarian Castle of Tunis, Algiers, or some other Mahometan fortification, where the gallies might scowt out for purchase, and retire in againe at their pleasure,) about two of the clocke on Satterday the 13th of February, the aforesaid argosey and the other Venetian ship her convoy, set forward from the Temple, and driving up with the winde and tide till they came as high as Yorke House²; where four

¹ "An argosey is a large ship, either for merchandize or war. Of this sense there is no doubt, but the etymology is very obscure." See various conjectures on it, illustrated by examples, in Nares's Glossary. N.

² This stood where *George, Villiers, Duke, (Of Alley,)* and *Buckingham* streets now are, that Favourite afterwards possessing this ancient mansion of the Archbishops of York. The whole have

gallies met and encountred with them; where, upon a suddaine, there was friendly exchanging of small shot and great ordinance on both sides, to the great delectation of all the beholders, the drummes, trumpets, fires, weights, guns, showts, and acclamations of the mariners, soldiers, and spectators, with such reverberating echoes of joy to and fro, that there wanted nothing in this Fight, but that which was fit to be wanting, which was ships sunk and torne in pieces, men groning, rent and dismembered; some slaine, some drowned, some maimed, all expecting confusion. This was the manner of the happy and famous battell of Lepanto¹, fought betwixt the Turks and the Christians in the yeare of grace 1571; or in this bloody manner was the memorable battaile betwixt us and the invincible (as it was thought) Spanish Armada in the yeare 1588. But in the end, in this frendly fight, the ship and argosey were encompassed round by the galleies, and surprized and taken; wherupon, the whole fleet made towards them to rescue them, and revenge their received injuries.

Then there was a beacon fiered by the Turkes, which gave warning to the castle and galleyes, of the comming of the Christian fleete. Then all the ships and galleyes met in friendly opposition and imaginary hurley-burley battalions; then the lofty instruments of War's clamourous encouragements sounded; the thundring artillary roared, the musquetiers in numberless volleys discharged on all sides, the smoake, as it were, eclipsing Titan's refulgent beames, filling all the ayre with a confused cloudy mist, the castle and the land adjacent continually discharging great shot in abundance at the ships, and the ships at them againe; so that after this delightfull battaile had doubtfully lasted three houres, to the great contentment of all the beholders, the victorie inclyning to the nether side, all being opposed foes and combined friends; all victors, all triumphers, none to be vanquished, and therefore no conquerors; the drums, trumpets, flutes, and guns filling the ayre with repurcussive acclamations; upon which, for a catastrophe or period to these delightfull Royalties, command was given that the retreat should be sounded on both sides. And thus these Princely recreations were accomplished and finished.

These things could not conveniently be printed in order as they were done, by

been known by the general appellation of York Buildings; and the stairs to the river, though not used, still bear the name of York Stairs. In James's time this mansion was successively the residence of the Lords Chancellors Egerton and Bacon. See its history in Pennant, p. 120. N.

¹ On which the King had written a Poem; see vol. I. p. 9. N.

reason of the diversity of them. For heere I was faine to describe the Fight of the ships and gallyes first, which was performed last. For the Fire-workes were performed on Thursday night the 11th of February, and the Fight was upon the Satterday following. At the which Fire-workes the Maister-gunner of England on the shore did performe many skilfull and ingenious exploits with great bum-bards, shooting up many artificiall balls of fire into the ayre, which flew up in one whole fierie ball, and in their falling dispersed into divers streams like raine-bowes in many innumerable fires. After all which was discharged a great peale of chambers, to the contentment of the Royall Spectators, and the great credit of the performers.

The true Description¹ of such part of the Fire-workes as were devised and accomplished by Mr. John Nodes, Gunner and Servant to the King's most excellent Majestie.

The imperiall and beautious Lady Lucida, Queene of the feminine territories of the man-hating Amazonians, with whose bright eye-dazeling coruscancie, and whose refulgent feature, the black-sould, hell-commanding magitian Mango (a Tartarian borne) was so ensnared and captivated, that for her love, and to be assured to enjoy her, he would set all hell in an uprore, and pluck Don Belzebub by the beard, assuredly perswading himselfe that without her he could not live, and for her he would attempt any thing; but she having vowed herself ever to be one of Vesta's votaries, always kept Cupid out at the arme's end, and bad Madam Venus make much of stump-footed Vulcan, and keepe at home like a good hus-wife, for she had no entertainment for her.

Whereupon this hellish Necromancer Mango, being thus repulst, converts all his love to outrageous rigor, and immediately, with his charmes, exorcismes, and potent execrable incantations, he raises a strong impregnable pavilion, in the which he immures and encloses this beautiful Amazonian Queene with her attendant Ladies, where, though they lived in captivitie and bondage, yet they had variety of games and pleasant sports allowed by the Magitian, in hope that time would make an alteration in her faire flinty breast. And, for her sure gard in his absence, he had erected by magick another strong tower as a watch-house, wherein he had placed a fiery dragon and an invincible giant (of whom I will speake in another place hereafter).

Now to this aforesaid pavillion, wearyed with toyle and travaile, the great unre-

¹ This and the following descriptions are written in the same Quixotic style as the *Gesta Grayorum*, printed in "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses." N.

sistable Champion of the world, and the uncontrollable Patron, Saint George, comes; and seeing so bright and luculent a goddess, according as his necessities required, demanded entertainment, whereby he might be refreshed, after his laborious achievements and honorable endeavours.

The curteous Queene, although she cared not for the society of man, seeing his outward or externall feature and warlike acouterments, did presently resolve with herselfe that so faire an outside could not be a habitation for fowle trechery, and with most debonayre gesture, admits his entrance into the pavilion; where, after he had feasted awhile, she relates unto him the true manner and occasion of her unfortunate thralldom; Saint George, ever taking pleasure in most dangerous attempts, and holding it his chiefest glory to helpe wronged Ladies, vows, that as soone as Phœbus rouz'd himselfe from the Antipodes, he would quell the burning Dragon, conquer the big-boned Giant, subvert the enchanted castle, and enfranchise the Queene with her followers, or else die in the enterprise thereof. After which promise of his, the Queene, to passe away the time, delights him with these pastimes following, being all Fire-workes:

First, the pavilion is beleaged or invironed round about with fires, going out of which many fiery balls flie up into the ayre, with numbers of smaller fieres ascending; that cemicircled Cinthia is as it were eclipsed with the flashes, and the starres are hood-winckt with the burning exhalations.

Secondly, is seene a Royall hunting of bucks, and hounds, and huntsmen, flying and chasing one another round about the pavilion (as if Diana had lately transformed Acteon and his ignorant dogges ready to prey on his carcas), from whence continually is flying many fieres dispersed every way; the lower part of the pavilion alwayes flying round about, giving many blowes and great reports, with many fires flying aloft into the ayre.

Thirdly, there doth march round about the pavilion artificiall men, which shall cast out fires, as before, as it were in skirmish; another part of the pavilion is all in a combustious flame, where rackets, crackers, breakers, and such like, give blowes and reports without number.

Fourthly, the Queene of Amazonia with all hir Traine of virgin Ladyes, with fires marcheth round as the men did before, with the fire flying dispersedly divers wayes; the whilst another part of the pavilion is fired with many blowes and reports, and fieres flying aloft into the ayre, from whence it comes downe againe in streaming flakes of flashing fire.

Fifthly, aloft within the turret shall runne, whirling round, a fyerie globe, with the turret and all on fire, with many more greater blowes then before had bin heard, and divers and sundry other sorts of fires than any of the former, proceeding from thence, and flying into the ayre in great abundance.

All which things being performed, and the undanted Knight Saint George taking his leave of the Amazonian Queene Lucida, he mounts uppon his steede and adventurously rides towards the enchanted Towre of Brumond.

Now these disports being ended, wherein Saint George's entertainment was onely expressed, with the Queene's relation of her bondage, this brave Champion was seene to ride over the bridge to combat with these aforesaid monsters, the Dragon and Giant. All which was expressed in the next devise of Mr. Thomas Butler; and so I end, with my harty invocations to the Almighty to send the Bride and Bridegroom the yeares of Methushalah, the fortitude of Joshua, the wisdom of Solomon, the wealth of Cressus, and last of all an endless crowne of immortalitie in the highest Heavens.

JOHN NODES.

A true Description of the Platforme of a part of the Fire-workes devised and made by Mr. Thomas Butler, Gunner and Servant to the King's Royall Majestie.

This enchanted Castle or Tower of Brumond is in hight forty foote and thirty square, betweene which and the Pavilion of the Amazonian Queene is a long bridge, on the which bridge the valiant and heroicke Champion, Saint George, being mounted on horseback, makes towards the Castle of Brumond; which being perceived by the watchfull dragon, who was left by Mango the Conjurer as a centinell, is encountred by him; whereas Saint George, being armed at all points, but especially with an unrebated courage, having in his helmet a burning flaming feather, and in one hand a burning launce, and in the other a fiery sword, with which weapons he assailes the dreadfull Dragon with such fury and monster-quelling stroakes, as if the Cyclops had bin forging and beating thunder-bolts on Vulcan's anvile; where, in conclusion, after a terrible and long-endured combat, with his launce he gores the hell-hound under the wing, that he presently, after most hideous roring and belching of fire, is vanquished and slaine.

At which the terrible-shaped Giant rises, having sate as a spectator of this bloody battel upon a great stump of a tree at the castle-gate, and addresses himselfe towards Saint George, meaning to revenge the death of the Dragon, and to

swallow his enemy for a modicum ; but at their first encounter the blowes on both sides fell like thunder-clappes, enforcing lightning and fiery exhalations to sparkle from whence their powerfull stroakes lighted ; at last the monster, gaping wide as an arch in London Bridge, runnes furiously, intending to swallow his adversary at a bit ; which Saint George seeing, upon the suddaine thrust his sword into his greedy throat, and overthrewe him ; at which the Monster yelles and roes forth such a terrible noyse, as if the centre of the earth had crackt, that with the uncouth dinne thereof the neighbouring hills, woods, and valleyes seemed to tremble like an earthquake. The Gyant lying at the mercy of Saint George, entreats him to spare his life, and he will shew him the way how he shall conquer the Castle, and bring the Inchanter to his everlasting downfall. Upon which promise Saint George and the Gyant walke into the Castle together, where he tells Saint George that there is an enchanted fountaine, and whosoever can attaine to drinke of it shall be he whome the Fates have ordained to be the conclusion of the Castle's glory.

In the meane space, whilst these things were doing, the Magitian Mango, having intelligence of the dangerous estate of his Castle, and fearing the losse of his Lady, suddainely mounts him on a flying invisible devill, and in a moment alights within the Castle ; upon whome St. George makes a present conquest. The Castle hath on the top thereof a fiery Fountaine, which burnes and sends up rackets into the ayre, with many reports and blowes, some greate and some lesse, and fire dispearsed many wayes in great abundance, with innumerable lights round about.

Secondly, the Magitian is taken with his conjuring scepter in his hand, and bound to a pillar by Saint George, and burned with fire and lights as before, with fiers and rackets ascending and descending to and fro in the ayre.

Thirdly, the foure squares of the Tower are fiered with abundance of lights, with rackets flying into the ayre, with fiers dispearsed and scattered divers and sundry wayes, and with reports and blowes, some great and some lesse, according to their making.

Fourthly, the foure turrets are fyred with fire and innumerable lights, with abundance of rackets flying to and fro in the ayre, giving divers reports as before.

Then the maine Castle is fyred, and upon two of the corner turrets are two globes fyred, and betwixt each globe, at two other corner turrets, are two men, catching as it were at the globes which still turn from them, and they chasing and

following the globes, still burning and turning till all be extinguished with fire; alwayes rackets flying, and reports thwacking, and lights burning.

THOMAS BUTLER.

William Bettis his invention of such part of the Fire-workes as were performed by him at the Royall Celebration, which he had contrived in such sort, that if the weather had bin rainy or windy, yet his dessignments should have beene accomplished.

A Castle with divers Fier-workes, representing and assuming divers variable shapes and immaginary formes, which continued the space of an houre or thereabouts; the nature and quallity of which Fire-worke was performed as followeth:

First, there was seene thirteen great fiers to flie to and fro round about the Castle, whereby it seemed to be beleagerd and circumvolved with fires, which yeelded a most pleasing object to all the spectators.

Secondly, a flight of great store of rackets was seene to ascend into the ayre, and descend againe, which in their descending were extinguished.

Thirdly, the whole Castle was all on fire, wherein was seene many things very delightfull.

Fourthly, was seene many buttons flye, dispearsed divers wayes from the Castle, with great crackes, blowes, and reports in great number.

Fifthly, next that, was seene a stagge or hart, hunted and chased with dogges, all their bodies being artificially made and proportioned in one flame of fire; where the following hounds were plainely seene to pull downe and vanquish the stagge which they before had chased.

Sixthly, there was seene a great flight of rackets with two or three fiers a peece.

Seavently, were seene two or three hundreth fiers flying from the Castle, and then flying to and fro, in and out, many waies all together.

Eighthly, was seene a great flight of rackets with many great fires, some of the said fires breaking into many parts, divers wayes dispearsed in abundance, which fires were seene to fall burning into the water.

Ninthly, was seene many rackets flying into the ayre in great abundance, giving many blowes, crackes, or reports numberles.

Tenthly, was seene divers other rackets flying aloft into the ayre, which rackets did assimulate the shapes or proportions of men, women, fowles, beastes, fishes, and other formes and figures.

Last of all was heard one hundred blowes and reports, as loud as the report of

a reasonable chamber is able to give, and so with fires, lights, rackets, and such like, to the delight of all the beholders and the great credit of the inventor of this Fire-worke, all was extinguished and concluded. WILLIAM BETTIS.

Mr. John Tindall, Gunner and Servant to the King's Royall Majestie, the true Description of such part of the Fire-workes by him invented and performed at these Royall Triumphs.

A Castle, old and very ruinous, called the Castle of Envie, scituated and erected on a rock, all ragged and horide to behold, called the Rock of Ruine, encompassed round and drenched in a troblous sea, called the Sea of Disquiet. The Captaine of this Castle's name was Discord, with his Liefteutenant Lawless, Antient Hatred, Serjeant Malice, Corporall Contention, with his Lanesprezado Hellhound. The rocke or foundation of this Castle being all replenished with adders, snakes, toades, serpents, scorpions, and such venomous vermin, from whose throates were belched many fires, with crackers, rackets, blowes, and reports in great numbers.

To the subversion of this malevolent edifice, there came three shippes, the one of them being called Good-will, in whome Loyalty was Captaine and Zeale was Maister. The second ship was named the True-love, in whome Trust was Captaine and Perseverance was Maister. The third ship was called Assurance, in whome Circumspection was Captaine and Providence the Maister. These three shippes and Captaines with their valarous and confident associates assault this Castle of Envie, where, after halfe an houres fight or thereabouts, by the invincible prowess of the assaylants the hell-borne defendants were vanquished, their Castle utterly razed, demolished, and subverted, with rackets, breakers, blowes, and reports innumerable. JOHN TINDALL.

The Description of such part of the Fire-workes as were devised and accomplished by Mr. William Fishenden, Gunner and Servant to his Majestie.

A piramides or lofty platforme, in the forme of a triangled spire, with a globe fixed on the top thereof; the whole worke turning and burning the space almost of halfe an houre or neere thereabouts; from whence proceeded many rackets, fires, blowes, and reports in great numbers, to the great delight and contentment of the King, the Queene, the Prince, the Princesse Elizabeth, the Prince Palatine, and divers others, the Nobilitie, the Gentry, and Commons of this Kingdome¹.

¹ Notwithstanding all these eulogies of honest John Taylor, these very sumptuous Fire-works do not appear on the whole to have succeeded; see Mr. Chamberlaine's Letter hereafter. N.

THE MAGNIFICENT MARRIAGE

OF THE TWO GREAT PRINCES

FREDERICK COUNT PALATINE, &c. AND THE LADY ELIZABETH,

DAUGHTER TO THE

IMPERIAL MAJESTIES OF KING JAMES AND QUEEN ANNE,

TO THE COMFORT OF ALL GREAT BRITAIN.

Now the second time imprinted, with many new additions of the same Tryumphes, performed by the Gentlemen of the Innes of Court in the King's Pallace at Whitehall¹.

Being desirous to give satisfaction to certaine of my acquaintance in the countrey most willing to understand the manner of the Tryumphs holden at the Royal Marriage of his Majesty's Daughter, Princesse Elizabeth, I have made meanes for the true intelligences thereof; and, I hope according to the content of the reader, I have set forth here a true discourse of the same; first of the Shewes and Fireworkes upon the water before the Mariage performed upon Thursday night,

¹ "At London, printed by T. C. for W. Barley, 1613." — This was entered at Stationers' Hall Feb. 18; it has been re-printed in Somers's Tracts.—A manuscript copy of the *First* edition is in the British Museum, Ayscough's MSS. (additional) 5767.—In 1774 were published in Leland's Collectanea, narratives of the Marriages between Frederick Count Palatine and the Princess Elizabeth in 1613, and between William Prince of Orange and the Princess Mary in 1641. This article had been drawn up in 1733 by John Anstis, Esq. Garter; when the Marriage between the Prince of Orange and Anne, daughter of George the Second, was in agitation, the processions and "magnificent celebration" of which, March 14, 1734, may be seen in Gent. Mag. vol. IV. p. 160. The authorities Mr. Anstis quotes for this account of the present solemnity are Howes' Chronicle, Finett's Philoxenis, the Pamphlet here re-printed, Sandford's Genealogical History, and the Mercure François, tom. III., "for the collector of these notes hath not had the fortune to meet with a printed Narrative of this Marriage in Dutch, with cuts, Frankenal, folio, 1613, or another in French, printed at Heidelberg." In the Heralds' Office, Mr. Anstis observes, there is only to be found a short imperfect entry. The inducement to compile these narrations seems to have been that "since the form of Matrimony in the Common Prayer Book hath been established by Acts of Parliament, there have been only Two Marriages of the immediate Children of the Crown publickly solemnized within this Kingdom. The Marriage of the Prince of Orange (afterwards King William the Third) with Mary daughter of the Duke of York in 1677 was privately celebrated by the Bishop of London in her bed-chamber at St. James's about eight in the evening. The Princess Ann was married to Prince George of Denmark in the Chapel at St. James's, by the same Bishop, in the evening of July 28, 1683, in the presence of the King, Queen, Duke, and Duchess of York, and a few only of the chiefest Nobility."

being the eleventh of Februarie; then the imitation of a Sea-fight upon Saturday following; also of the Royall and Princely passage of Prince Palsegrave with his renowned Bride to his Highness' Chapel at Whitehall, where, in the presence of his Majestie and the Noble State, they were married, to make us rejoyce with a wished happines, with the Maskes and Revells following, shewes of more Royalty than ever in this age was seen in the Court of England. Therefore let the reader hereof prepare himselfe to entertaine them with extraordinarie joy, and receive the good will of the writer for a tribute to be paid as a due to his country.

The manner of the Fire-workes shewed upon the Thames, upon the Thursday before the Wedding.

To begin these Triumphant Sports, his Highnes, the Queene's Majesty, Prince Charles, Prince Frederick, with the Princess Elizabeth his Royall Bride, and the rest of the Nobilitie of England, upon Thursday the eleventh of Februarie in the evening, being placed in the galleries and windows about his Highnes' Court of Whitehall, where, in the sight of many thousands of people many artificiall conclusions in Fire-workes were upon the Thames performed, and that the pleasurable sights on the water might equall the sumptuous Showes on the land, thus they proceeded. First, for a welcome to the beholders, a peale of ordnance like unto a terrible thunder, ratled in the ayre, and seemed as it were to shake the earth; immediately upon this a rocket of fire burst from the water, and mounted so high into the element, that it dazzled the beholders' eyes to look after it. Secondly, followed a number more of the same fashion, spredding so strangely with sparkling blazes, that the skie seemed to be filled with fire, or that there had been a combate of darting starres fighting in the ayre; and all the time these continued, certaine cannons planted in the fields adjoyning made thundering musick to the great pleasure of the beholders. After this, in a most curious manner, an artificiall Fire-worke with great wonder was seene flying in the ayre, like unto a Dragon, against which another fierie vision appeared, flaming like to St. George on horsebacke, brought in by a burning Inchanter, betweene which was there fought a most strange battell continuing a quarter of an hower or more; the Dragon being vanquished, seemed to rore like thunder, and withall burst in peeces and so vanished; but the Champion, with his flaming horse, for a little time made a shew of a tryumphant conquest, and so ceased. After this was heard another ratling sound of cannons, almost covering the ayre with fire and

smoake, and forthwith appeared out of a hill of earth made upon the water a very strange fire, flaming upright like unto a blazing starre. After which flew forth a number of rockets so high in the ayre, that we could not chuse but approve by all reasons that Art hath exceeded Nature, so artificially were they performed, and still as the chambers and culverines plaide upon the earth, the Fire-workes danced in the ayre to the great delight of his Highness and the Princes. Out of the same mount or hill of earth flew another strange peece of artificiall Fire-worke, which was in the likenes of an hunted hart, running upon the waters so swiftly, as if it had bene chaced by many huntsmen. After the same issued out of the mount a number of hunting-hounds made all of fire burning, pursuing the aforesaid harte up and downe the waters, making many rebounds and turnes with much strangenes, skipping in the ayre as if it had bene a usuall hunting upon land. These were the noble delights of Princes, and prompt were the wits of men to contrive such Princely pleasures. When Kings' commands be, art is stretcht to the true depth, as the performance of these enginers have been approved. But now again to our wished sports;—when this fiery hunting extinguished, and that the elements a little cleared from the fire and smoake, there came sayling up as it were upon the seas, certaine ships and gallies bravely rigd with top and top-gallant, with their flagges and streamers waving like men of warr, which represented a Christian Navie opposed against the Turkes, where, after they had awhile hovered, preparing as it were to make an incursion into the Turkish countrey, they were discovered by two towers or castles of defence, strongly furnished to intercept all such invading purposes; so, sending forth the reports of a cannon, they were bravely answered with the like from the gallies, handing fire and powder one from another, as if the God of Battles had beene there present. There was the manner of a sea-fight rightly performed; first, by assayling one another, all striving for victorie, and pursuing each other with fire and sword. The culverines merily plaied betwixt them, and made the ayre resound with thundering ecchoes; and, at last, to represent the joyes of a victorie, the castles were sacked, burned, and ruined, and the defenders of the same forced to escape with great danger. During the time of all the tryumphant exercises, there was not a man unbusied; but every one laboured, some on land, some on water, some one way, some another, to move his Highnes and the rest of his Princely friends, a pleasing content, which he and the other Princes with a gracious acceptance applauded to the great comfort of the performers, and no litle joy to the beholders.

The next morning, Friday, his Highness, not intending to grace the following sports with his presence, gave cause of forbearance, with some rest to the engineers for their great toyle the night before. Moreover, it was thought convenient that a whole day's preparation should be made in providing against the Saturday's pastimes, which moved a more longing desire in the harts of his subjects to see the same, which at the time appointed was in this manner accomplished.

The manner of a Sea-fight, shewed upon the Thames, upon the Saturday before the Wedding.

Betweene the howers of two and three of the clock the same day in the after noone, being Shrove Saturday, the King's Majestie accompanied with the Queene, the rest of the Princes and Peers of Estate, to add the more glory to these pretended shewes, placed themselves in great Royaltie upon the Privie Staires of Whitehall, where after a while expecting the beginning of the desired Fireworkes, the Lord Admirall sent forth two or three Gentlemen in a whirrie with a flagge or banner to signifie the King and the Nobilitie's tarriance for the representations, which was answered with an intelligence by the report, from a great cannon; whereupon a certaine Venetian man of warr, and a ship called a carvell¹, came proudly with their flagges and colours sayling up, in the sight of seventeene Turkish gallies, which lay hovering upon Lambeth side, betwixt whome was a most Royall and praise-worthy imitation of a Sea-fight in such sort performed, as if the danger of such an enterprize had bene by true action attempted; all which explains the honours of martialists, and made his Majestie with many thousands of people of all sorts of many nations, eye-witnesses of the true manner of such like incounters. But, not to be troublesome in my discourses, I will briefly explaine the incounters as they passed.

There was a barre or kind of artificiall fence made upon the river Thames, with barges and lighters chained together, to keep out passengers, which otherwise with much unruliness would have hindered the pastimes and much troubled the performers; but, being thus hemde in as it were upon the maine seas, the two Venetian shippes, as I said before, falling within danger of the Turkish gallies, indured a fresh encounter, and long time most worthily defended themselves; but, by rea-

¹ A caravel, carveil, or carvell, from the French *caravelle*, is thus defined by Kersey: "A kind of light round ship, with a square prop, rigg'd and filled out like a galley, holding about six score or seven score men." It does not follow that the present contained so many.—See other examples in Nares and Todd. N.

son of the number of the gallies, they were at last boarded, taken, and carried as booty and prize under the command of a Turkish castle, which represented and bare the name of the Castle of Argeir¹, furnished with twenty-two well-approved great peeces, which was contrived and built upon Lambeth side, at a place named Stand-gates², environed with craggie rocks as the Castle is now situate in Turkie. After the gallies had taken these Venetian shippes and delivered them into the Turkish Admirall's commaund, they had sight of another argosay³ or galliaza which seemed to be of Spain, which likewise, after a fierce conflict, they made prize of, and with much triumph tendered the same up also to the Turkish Admirall. After this, upon a suddaine, was a thundering peal of ordinance or chambers placed on Lambeth Marsh, whereupon the scouts and watches of the Castle discovered an English navie, to the number of fiteene saile of the King's pinnaces, making up towards the point, with their red-crost streamers most gallantly waving in the ayre, to the great delight of all the beholders, which as then seemed to cover over the Thames in boates and barges. Near unto this place stood an high-built watch-tower or beacon of the Turkes, which at the first sight of the English Navie was set on fire, as the manner is at all such incursions, which blazing light (as it seemed) gave notice to the Castle, and caused a readiness in the same for defence. In the meane time, the King's pinnaces and the Turkish gallies joined, between whom were shown many strange attempts, even as if they had ventured their very lives for their country's safetie; they spared neither powder nor pollicie to sacke one another, but on both sides bestird themselves so bravely, that his Highnesse with all the rest of his attendants were therewith much delighted. At last the gallies, being overcharged with long and forward encounters of the English Navie, for refuge and shelter made now into the Castle, which began likewise to play bravely upon the English, and their thundering ordinance made as it were the ground to shake. The King's Navie to answere them was not backward in performance, but made the ayre gloomie with fire and smoke roreing from their loude-mouthed cannons. The fight for a time continued fiercely, the victorie leaning to neither side, either of them attempting to assault and board each other, but at last the gallies, being sore bruised and beaten, began to yeeld, whereupon the English Admirall fell down, and cast anker before the Castle, and then spared not in the best manner to thunder off their ordnance, whereat the Turks yielded both Castle and gallies, and submitted to the conquest

¹ See pp. 525, 528.² *Hodie*, Stangate. N.³ See p. 528.

of the English Admirall, who fiered many of the said gallies, sacked the Castle, and tooke prisoner the Turke's Admirall, with divers Bashawes and other great Turkes, and also recovered the Venetian and Spanish shippes before taken by the gallies. After the performance of all these aforesaid, the English Admirall, in a most tryumphant manner, carried as prisoner the Admirall of the gallies, attired in a red jacket with blue sleeves, according to the Turkish fashion, with the Bashawes and the other Turkes, guarded, to his Highness' Privie-stairs at Whitehall, where his Grace, Prince Palsegrave, and his Lady remained, which prisoners were led by Sir Robert Mansfield [Mansel] to the Lord Admiral's, and by him they were conveyed to the King's Majestie as a representation of pleasure, which to his Highness moved delight, and highly pleased all there present. All these aforesaid pastimes were most nobly performed between the howres of three and sixe in the after noone, to the great content as well of foraigne nations as of our owne countrey people, whereof, in one place and at one time, hath bene seldom seen a greater number. Also, for a farewell to the day's pleasure, a traine of chambers were discharged in St. George's Fields, of long continuance, and of such an ecchoing thunder, that they even amazed the hearers. Thus ended Saturday's shewes upon the waters, being the eve of this great Marriage-day.

The manner of the Marriage upon Shrove Sunday, with the Royall Passage of Prince Fredericke and his Bride, to his Majestie's Chapell at Whitehall.

But now to relate and make knowne the Royall Passage of the renowned Bridegroom and his faire Bride (for the satisfying many thousands) as they entred into his Highnes' Chapell at Whitehall, the next day, being Sunday, even overcomes me with a rejoycing description. The Court being placed full of people of many estates, sortes, and nations; and their eyes and hearts fixed to behold the pompous glory of this Marriage in great Royaltie, [between eleven and twelve of the clock, his Majesty, to make the Procession more solemn, and in order that it might be seen by more people, proceeded from his Privy-chamber through the Presence and Guard-chamber, and through the new Banquetting-house erected of purpose to solemnize this Feast, and so down a pair of stairs at the upper end thereof by the Court-gate, and went along upon a stately scaffold to the Great-chamber stairs, and through the Great-chamber and Lobby to the Closet down the staires to the Chapel, into which the Entry was made in this

manner: First, the Trumpets; then¹] the Palsgrave from the newe-built Banquetting-house, attired in a white sute, richly beset with pearle and gold, attended on by a number of young gallant Courtiers, both English, and Scottish, and Dutch, all in rich manner, every one striving to exceed in sumptuous habilliaments fitte for the attendance of a Princely Bridegroom². After came [preceded by Lord Harington of Exton, her Tutor], the Lady Elizabeth, in her virgin-robcs, clothed in a gowne of white sattin, richly embrodered, led between her Royal Brother Prince Charles and the Earl of Northampton [both Batchelors]; upon her head a crown³ of refined golde, made Imperiall by the pearles and diamonds

¹ Mr. Anstis's Narrative, Leland's Collectanea, vol. V. p. 331.

² The Prince, remarks Mr. Anstis, was conducted "between the Duke of Lennox and the Earl of Nottingham, who were both married Lords, which seems a difference from the ancient method, where the paranympths were unmarried; however, he was followed immediately by the 'young gallant Courtiers, English, Scottish, and Dutch,' whom Finett styles, the 'batchelery of the Nation.' There entered into the Chappel only sixteen noble young men batchelors, being as many as the Bridegroom was years of age; the rest, by the express command of his Majesty, did not enter the Chappel."

³ This coronet, Mr. Chamberlain says, the King next day valued at a million of crowns. "Princesses and other great Ladies of the Blood Royal at the time of their Marriages wore Coronets or Crowns. There will be no occasion to run back to the custom of the Jews, the Romans, and the Primitive Christians, by all whom crowns were used upon these occasions; it being my only design in this place to produce instances of the daughters of the Crown, or the near relations of the Kings and Queens of England, wearing crowns on the celebration of their Nuptials.—On the Marriage of Adeleydis or Alice, daughter of the then Marquis of Montferrat, and niece to the then Queen of England, with Albert the Great, Duke of Brunswick, which Marriage was celebrated at London in the quindenies of Easter, 1263, is this entry in the Rot. Pat. 47 Hen. III. (P. M.) "*Pro Garlandâ aureâ ad opus Markesiæ neptis Regis, quam Dux Brunswikæ ducturus est.*" The word *garlanda* here signifies a crown, not a garland; for in that age the word *garlanda* was attributed even to the crown worn by the King, as we find in Matthew Paris, p. 736, where speaking of Henry III. he says, "*Coronulâ aureâ, quæ vulgariter garlanda dicitur, redemitus.*" In Lib. Garderobæ, 25 Edw. I. in custodiâ Rem. Regis, "*Pro unâ magnâ rubettâ et unâ magnâ amerandâ empt. ad ponend. in quâdam coronellâ Comitissæ Holland. filiæ Regis, in die Nuptiarum.*"—"Ad quandam Coronam Auri pro Ducissâ Brabantiae filiâ Regis," &c. John Harding, describing the Marriage of King Edward the Third, says,

And sone thereafter the Erle's doughter Henalde,
 Dame Philip hight, that was both fayre and gode,
 He wed to wyfe, and crownde as he walde,
 With hiegh honour, according to her blode;
 All dyschevely in her heer sche stode,
 The crown of golde above in ryal wyse;
 A fayrer wight might no man then devyse.

In a Privy Seal, dated June 8, 40 Edw. III. (1365), are these words: "Comme nous eussions fait acheter pour nostre tres chere fille Isabelle Contesse de Bedford, pur son Mariage, un Corone d'or, ove

thereupon placed, which were so thicke beset that they stood like shining pinacles upon her amber-coloured haire, dependantly hanging playted downe over her shoulders to her waste; between every plaight a roll or liste of gold-spangles, pearles, rich stones, and diamonds; and, withall, many diamonds of inestimable value, embrothered upon her sleeves, which even dazzled and amazed the eies of the beholders; her traine in most sumptuous manner carryed up by fourteen or fifteene¹ Ladies, attired in white satten gownes, adorned with many rich jewells².

blanks saphyrs, dyamantz, grosses perles, et emeraudes, du pris de mille marcs." On the Marriage of John of Gaunt to Blanche daughter of the Duke of Lancaster in 1359, there was provided at the King's expense a ring with a ruby, and a *cercle* (as it is termed) garnished with rubies, emeralds, and pearls. Exit. Pell. p. 33. E. III. Catherine of Spain, at her Marriage with Prince Arthur, wore upon her head a coif of gold, pearl, and precious stones, an inch and a half broad. Ann of Cleves, on her Marriage to Henry the Eighth, had a coronet of gold replenished with great stones, and set about full with branches of rosemary. Olivier de la Marche in his Memoirs, p. 520, describing the ceremonial of the Marriage of the Duke of Burgundy with Margaret sister of King Edward the Fourth, speaking of the Bride's dress, says, "sur ces cheveux une riche *coronne*;" and Modius in his Pandectæ, p. 213, speaking of the same Marriage, says of the Bride, that "valde gratanter accepit sertum rosaceum quod vestales viniæ Brugensis illi donaverunt, illaque mox suo imposuit capiti super sponsalem coronam." Another French account of this ceremonial says of the Bride, "coronée d'or en teste;" and another in English says, "she was richly crowned." Margaret, eldest daughter of Henry the Seventh, at the celebration of her Marriage with James King of Scotland, wore a crown upon her head. At the Marriage of Mary de Medicis to Henry the Fourth of France in 1600, "la Reyne estoit vestue d'un manteau Roial, &c. portant une *Coronne à l'imperiale*." Mart. Franc. tom. II. p. 52. Elizabeth daughter of the Emperor Maximilian the Second, when married to Charles the Ninth, "fut habillée, &c. dessus sa teste ayant une *corone à l'imperiale* ornée de grands dyamentz," &c. Cerem. Franc. vol. II. p. 37. The like was also observed at the Marriage of Lewis XII. with the Infanta of Spain in 1615; "l'Epouse estoit vestue en majesté, la *corone* d'or en teste." Merc. Franc. tom. IV. p. 339. François de Lorraine, on her Marriage with Cæsar Vendosma, natural son of Henry the Fourth, wore a crown enriched with precious stones. Cerem. Franc. vol. II. p. 58. — But it is needless to produce further instances. For the manner of crowning Brides in the Eastern Churches, see Selden's Uxor Hebraica, and Zimmermanni Analecta, p. 86, &c." — This elaborate note by Mr. Anstis has been here inserted, rather because it forms a very curious list of authorities for particulars respecting Royal Marriages, than from any admiration of its argument. Both Princesses and Princes, Queens and Kings, in all ages have worn crowns—not only at marriages, but on all state occasions. Mr. Anstis appears to have been induced to compile this note by the Princess Elizabeth's coronet having been miscalled a "couronne ducale" in the Mercure François. The writer little thought of this long animadversion when the word "ducale" slipped his pen. N.

¹ "According to a manuscript narrative, with sixteen, which," Mr. Anstis remarks, "seems to be right; and that number might be fixed upon for the same reason that the Bridegroom had just so many batchelors attending upon him."

² See Mr. Chamberlain's Letter hereafter. N.

[Then followed Lady Harington]. After went a traine of Noblemen's daughters in white vestements, gloriously set forth; which virgin Bridemaids attended upon the Princess, like a skye of cælestial starres upon faire Phœbe. After them came another train of gallant young Courtiers, flourishing in several suits embrothered and pearled, who were Knights, and the sons of great Courtiers; after them came foure Heralds at Arms, in their rich coats of Heraldrie; and then followed many Earles, Lords, and Barrons, as well of Scotland as England, in most noble manner; then the King of Heralds, bearing upon his shoulder a mace of gold; and then followed the honourable Lords of his Highness' Privie Councill, which passed along after the Traine towards the Chapell; and then came foure reverend Bishops of the land in their Church-habilliments; after them foure Sarjeants of the Mace in great state, bearing upon their shoulders four rich enamelled maces. Then followed the right honourable the Earle of Arundell, carrying the King's sword; and then in great Royaltie the King's Majestie himselfe in a most sumptuous blacke¹ suit, with a diamond in his hatte of a wonderfull great value²; close unto him came the Queen, attired in white satin³, beautified with much embrothery and many diamonds; upon her attended a number of married Ladies, the Countesses and wives of Earls and Barrons, apparrelled in most noble manner, which added glory unto this triumphant time and Marriage. These were the passages of our States of England, accompanying the Princely Bride and Bridegroom to his Highnes' Chapell.

[The Chapell was in Royall sort adorned; the upper end of it was hung with very rich hangings, containing part of the History of the Acts of the Apostles⁴,

¹ The reason of this black colour, Mr. Anstis remarks, might be the recent death of Prince Henry; for that colour, and not purple, was the real mourning habit of the Crown. Mr. Chamberlain, however, (see hereafter) does not observe it was mourning, but calls it a Spanish cope. N.

² Very probably that for boring which Sir William Herrick was knighted; see vol. I. p. 504. N.

³ "It may not be easy to determine, whether the Queen was thus robed in white, with regard only to the habits used in Marriage, or with a further view to the customs of France, where all the Queens (till Anne of Bretagne) wore white for mourning."—So says Mr. Anstis. In my opinion, the mourning for the late Royal Death had been entirely thrown off before the present solemnity, or it would have been mentioned in some of our numerous authorities. As it is, it seems only to have a supposititious existence in Mr. Anstis's imagination, probably founded on the actual mourning observed at the Affiancing (see p. 513), and some of his old precedents. N.

⁴ The same as are now (Feb. 1825) being exhibited at the Egyptian Hall, Piccadilly. Their history is as follows: that celebrated patron of the arts, Pope Leo the Tenth, whilst he was adorning the pontifical apartments of the Vatican, wishing to procure tapestry of the most splendid description,

and the Communion-table was furnished with rich plate. A stately stage or scaffold was raised in the midst of the Chapel, about five feet in height and about twenty feet in length, having six or seven stairs to ascend and descend at each end of it; the same was spread underneath with rich carpets, and rayled on both

employed Raffaello Sanzio di Urbino, then in the service of his Holiness, to make designs for it, his subject being the Acts of the Apostles. The best workmen at Brussels were employed in its execution, and two sets only were made of the first class, interwoven with gold and silver, and which cost 60,000 dollars. Of the two sets thus made, one was retained at Rome, the other sent to England, either as a present from the Pope to Henry the Eighth, or, according to Peacham in his "Complete Gentleman," 1662, purchased by that King of the State of Venice. What Peacham says is this: "The fame of Raffaello di Urbino at this time (1518) was so great, that he was sought for and employed by the great Princes of Europe. Those stately hangings of Arras, containing the History of St. Paul, out of the Acts of the Apostles, than which eye never beheld more absolute art, and which long since you might have seen in the Banquetting House in Whitehall, were wholly his invention, bought (if I be not deceived,) by King Henry VIII. of the State of Venice." Thus, we find, in the time of Charles the First they were hung in the Banquetting House. After his execution, when the Royal Collection was disposed of, this set of tapestry, with many other valuable paintings, &c. was purchased by Don Alonso de Cardanas, the Spanish Ambassador, and sent by him to Spain to the Marquis del Carpio. On the death of this Nobleman in 1662, his title and estates devolved on the House of Alva; and with the Dukes of that name the tapestry remained till sold by the present Duke to an English Gentleman, who has returned them to this country, and, as before said, they now form a public exhibition in Piccadilly.—The other set have likewise their history. Hung in the Vatican, they were yearly exhibited on Corpus Christi day till 1798, when they were removed by the French army. Some time after they were discovered in the hands of a Jew in Paris, who had already burnt two of the pieces for the purpose of extracting the gold and silver contained in the texture. Fortunately, however, the circumstances became known; and the remainder were rescued from the flames by the late Pope Pius VII. and now occupy their former station in the Vatican.—The original designs of Raphael, the possession of which also our own country boasts, are well known by the name of The Cartoons, so called from being executed on *cartoni*, sheets of thick paper or pasteboard. These Cartoons laid neglected in the store-rooms of the manufactory at Brussels, having been much injured by the weavers, and cut in pieces to facilitate their labours, till the seven that remained were purchased by Rubens for Charles the First. (Fragments of the others are in different collections.) These seven were brought over to England in this tattered state, and it was owing to their remaining so, that they escaped being sold in 1649, at the sale of the Royal Collection, though they had been valued by the Parliamentary brokers at £300. They still continued unnoticed till the reign of William the Third, who ordered the pieces to be put together and appropriated a gallery at Hampton Court for their reception. Having suffered much from the dampness of their situation, they were removed, by order of George the Third, to the Queen's Palace Buckingham House, and from thence to Windsor; but were returned about thirty years since to Hampton Court, where they are now open to public inspection. N.

sides ; the rayles being covered with cloth of tissue, but open at the top, that the whole assembly might the better see all the ceremonies. Upon the sides of the Chapel, from the stalls up to the Communion-table, there had been a double row of seats made for the Gentlemen of the Chapel, arraied with tapestry. On the stage, in the chair upon the right hand sate the King, most richly arraied, his jewells being esteemed not to be less worth than six hundred thousand pounds, the Earl of Arundell, bearing the Sword, stood close by the chair. Next below the Sword sate the Bridegroom upon a stool ; and after him Prince Charles upon another stool ; and by him stood Prince Henry, who was brother to Count Maurice of Nassau, and uncle to the Palatine. On the other opposite side sate the Queen in a chair most gloriously attired ; her jewels were valued at four hundred thousand pounds¹. Near unto her sate the Bride on a stool ; the Lady Harrington her Governesse stood by her, bearing up her train ; and no others ascended this place.

The Lord Chamberlain to the King stood at the end next the altar, and the Queen's Lord Chamberlain at the other end. The Lord Privy Seal stood upon the stairs of the hautpas or stage, hard by the King. The Lords and Councillors of the King, and the Lords and Councillors of the Palatine took their seats on the left hand of the Chapel. The Ladies of Honour took the other side of the seats. The young Lords and Gentlemen of Honour, and younge Ladies and Bridewomen, with the necessary attendants upon the King and the Queen, stood all below upon the pavement. It is remarkable, that by the extraordinary care of the Earl of Suffolk, Lord Chamberlain, the Chapel was so kept, as not one person but of honour and great place came into it².

This Royall Assembly being in this sort settled in the Chappel, the organ ceased, and the Gentlemen of the Chapel sung a full anthem ; and then the Bishop of Bath and Wells, Dean of his Majesty's Chapel³, went into the pulpit, which stood at the foot of the step before the Communion-table, and preached upon the second of St. John, the Marriage of Canaa in Galilee ; and the Ser-

¹ The estimate here given of their Majesties' jewells exceeds that of Finett, who says : " The King's, Queene's, and Prince's jewells onely were valued that day by his Majesty himselfe (upon occasion of discourse happening to the braverie then appearing) at nine hundred thousand poundes sterling." N.

² None, Mr. Chamberlain says, under the degree of a Baron, but the three Lords Justices. N.

³ Dr. Montague ; of whom see vol. I. p. 313. Mr. Finett erroneously says the Preacher was Dr. King, the Bishop of London ;—but see p. 587. N.

mon being ended, (which continued not much above an half-hour,) the Choir began another anthem, which was the psalm, "Blessed art thou that fearest God," &c. While the Choir was singing the anthem, the Archbishop of Canterbury and Dean of the Chapel went into the vestry, and put on their rich copes, and came to the Communion-table, where they stood till the anthem was ended.

They then ascended the hautpas, where these Two great Princes were married by the Archbishop of Canterbury, in all points according to the Book of Common Prayer; the Prince Palatine speaking the words of marriage in English¹ after the Archbishop. The King's Majesty gave the Bride. When the Archbishop had ended the benediction, "God the Father, God the Son," &c. the Choir sung the same benediction in an anthem made new for that purpose by Doctor Bull². The anthem ended, the Archbishop and the Dean descended from the hautpas; the Bridegroom and Bride following them, kneeled before the Communion-table, while the versicles and prayers were sung by the Archbishop and answered by the Choir, which being ended, another psalm was sung³.

The Garter Principal King of Arms published the styles of the Prince and Princess to this effect: All health, happinesse, and honour be to the high and mighty Prince, Frederick the Fifth, by the grace of God, Count Palatine of the Rhine, &c.; and to Elizabeth his wife, only Daughter of the high, mighty, and right-excellent James, by the grace of God, King of Great Britain, &c.

Then joy was given by the King and Queen, and seconded with the congratulations of the Lords there present; and then divers of these Lords brought out of the Vestry bowls with wine, hippocras⁴, and wafers. After tasting the

¹ He had learnt, says Mr. Chamberlain, as much as concerned his part reasonably perfectly. N.

² Of whom see p. 139, and the Appendix to this Volume under that page.—The anthem composed by Dr. Bull on the present occasion, must have been his last production in this country, or nearly so; since he finally left in England in 1613, very probably in consequence of the Palsgrave's visit, and perhaps in his Train. He went into the service of the Archduke. N.

³ We learn from Malcolm's London, vol. IV. p. 275, that "the Gentlemen of the Chapel and Officers of the Vestry had given them for their fees £.100. in Jacobus's, whereof the Serjeant of the Vestry had four marks, the two Yeomen had between them seven Jacobus's, and the Groom 30s." N.

⁴ Hippocras was a very favourite beverage, and usually given at Weddings. It was composed generally of red wine, but sometimes white, with the addition of sugar and spices. In old books are many receipts for it, a specimen of which is given in Nares's Glossary. The name was probably derived (says Mr. Theobalds in a note on the "Scornful Lady," p. 286) from the circumstances of its being strained through Hippocrates' sleeve, as the apothecaries call the woollen bag used for

wafers ¹, an health was begun to the prosperity of the Marriage out of a great gold bowl by the Prince Palatine, and answered by the Princesse and others present, in their order ².]

After the celebration of the Marriage, contracted in the presence of the King, the Queene, Prince Charles, and the rest, aforesaide, they returned unto the Banquetting-house with great joy. The Lady Elizabeth, being thus made a wife, was led backe, not by two batchellors as before, but by the Duke of Lineux and the Earl of Nottingham, in a most reverend manner ³. Before the Palsegrave, at his return from the Chappell, went six of his owne country gallants, clad in crimson velvet, laide exceedingly thicke with gold lace, bearing in their hands sixe silver trumpets, who no sooner comming into the Banquetting-house, but they presented him with a melodious sound of the same, flourishing so delightfully, that it greatly rejoyced the whole Court, and caused thousands to say at that instant time, "God give them joy, God give them joy!" Thus preparing for dinner, they passed away certaine time.

[The King and Queen, leaving the Bride and Bridegroom in the Great-chamber, went to their Privy-lodgings; and the Bride and Bridegroom proceeded to dine in state in the new Banquetting-house with the Prince, the Ambassadors of France, Venice, and the States, Count Henry, and all the Lords and Ladies who had been attendant on the Marriage ⁴].

that purpose; and if not, at least from Hippocrates himself, who would doubtless have approved of the mixture. Some have ignorantly derived it from *ὑπο* and *κεραυνυμι*. N.

¹ Wafer-cakes occur in Shakspeare; and are described by Cotgrave as paste-cakes, sweetened with honey. A "wafer-woman" occurs in old plays as a person employed in amorous embassies. See Nares's Glossary. Wafers were sometimes used instead of bread at the Sacrament.—At the Marriage of William Prince of Orange and Mary daughter of Charles I. in 1641, the asking of the banns, the disheveling of the Bride's hair, the hippocras and wafers in the Church, were omitted; probably (as Mr. Anstis observes) that that Princess (who wanted seven months of being ten years old, her husband wanting some days of being fifteen,) might, by a protestation interposed in due time, have the power of vacating the contract; so that, upon such a refusal, all the solemnities, whatever they had been, would have been of no validity. N.

² This description of the ceremonies within the Chapel, in which the Tract here re-printed is wholly deficient, has been taken from Mr. Anstis's Essay mentioned in p. 536. N.

³ The Duke of Lennox and Earl of Nottingham had conducted the Palatine to the Marriage, and now conducted the Princess back; Prince Charles and the Earl of Northampton who had been the Princess's Conductors to the Marriage, now led the Palatine back (Leland, vol. V. p. 335). They merely changed their stations. N.

⁴ Leland's Collectanea, vol. V. p. 336.

And then fell to dancing, masking, and revelling, according to the custome of such assemblies, which continued all the day and part of the night in great pleasure¹.

The order of the Munday's Showes, with the King's running at the Ring with the Nobilitie of the Land.

The next day, being Shrove Munday, by the King and Nobilitie of England was spent in great honour, where their rich roabes of estate seconded the day before with many commendable graces; for the whole Court so gloriously shined with embroydered abilliaments, that it made even a smiling cheerefulness sit upon the countenances of many thousand beholders.

For the King's Majestie in his owne person, accompanied with his brave-spirited Sonne, Prince Charles of Great Brittain, the Royall Bridegroom Count Pallatine, the Duke of Lineux, with divers other of the Earles and Barrons of Scotland, together with the praise-worthy Peers of the Netherland Provinces, performed many famous races at the Ring, an exercise of much renowne and honour, and the Knightly sports and the Royall delights onely befitting the dignitie of Kings and Princes, and of the chiefest Nobilitie. First, about the rayles or lists in the Tylt-yard, adjoyning to Whitehall, were placed many Herolds at Armes, to beautifie the honourable atchievements of these Knightly Potentates, all in new liveries, with their staves of office, to abate the too forward unrulines of many disordered people, which otherwise would have much troubled the Turnaments; and, as an ayde unto them, many of his Highnes' Yeomen of the Guard were attendant in the listes, and withall most of the King's Trumpetters, in their rich imbrothered coates, the Pentioners and Knights of his Grace's Household, with his Knightly followers. The Queene's Majestie, with her daughter the Princess Elizabeth, attended on by many of the greatest Ladies of the land, being placed in the galleries and windowes of the Banquetting-house, in the presence of many thousands of his subjects, the King mounted upon a steed of much swiftnes, was the first who began the honourable pastimes, and (a most noble martialist) tooke the ring upon his speare three severall times together, whereat the trumpets still sounded to the great joy of the beholders. After him, the illustrious Prince,

¹ The Ringers of St. Margaret's were paid 2s. 6d. at the Lady Elizabeth her Grace's marriage. N.

Count Palatine, upon a horse of that brave courage which seemed to stand upon no ground; where, with a spirit of much forwardness, he tooke the ring upon his speare twice together, so lightly and so nimbly, that the whole assembly gave him high commendations. After him, the brave young flower and hope of England, Prince Charles, mounted as it were upon a Spanish jennet that takes his swiftnes from the nature of the winde, most couragiously and with much agilitie of hand took the ring clearly four times in five courses, which was in the eye of the King's Majestie and the Nobilitie there present a sight of much admiration, and an exceeding comfort to all the land. The Duke of Lineux, the Earle of Arundell, the Earle of Dorset, the Lord Haddindon, with divers other Barrons of England and Scotland, afterward, in honour of the magnificent Marriage, performed very worthy races, and many times tooke the ring with much strangenes, a pleasure so Princely, that even made the beholders' hearts to leape with joy. The Queen's Majestie with her daughter the Princess all the while standing in the windowes as eye-witnesses to these noble delights, smiled with much cheerfulness, graciously thanking them for all their loves, but especially the new-married Bride, in honour of whose Marriage all those courtly pastimes were performed.

Of the Masks and Revells presented by the Gentlemen of the Inns of Court, upon the Munday night.

The preceeding night's sports were as sumptuous as the passed daye's, and in as gallant a manner performed; whereof, to satisfie the desirefull reader, I must thus speake of:

The Gentlemen of the Innes of Court, in the best and rarest manner they could devise, prepared Maskes and Revells in the Court, that night to be presented; and about the houres of eight or nine they passed from the Roles in Chancery-lane to Whitehall, in as Royall manner as ever gallants did to the Court of England.

First, there rode some three score brave-spirited Gentlemen, upon great barbed-horses, most richly trapped with imbrothered furnitures, themselves attired in cloth of golde and tissue, most gloriously shining, lighted by a number of torches, to beautifie the shoue with more eye-pleasing delights. After them, some sixe-and-thirty Maskers, divided by twelves, in most strange anticke sutes, in a most

admirable and stately manner. Likewise, upon costly-trapped steedes, each of them having a blackamore page attending on horsebacke, with torch-lights burning in their hands. After them followed three charriots of Maskers and Revellers, in garments of a mervellous fashion, so artificially disguised, that they moved much wonder. Upon them attended a number of footemen, bearing burning torches, many trumpets sounding melodiously, which was a sight both to eye and eare, of an exceeding glorie. These performed many delightfull dances in his Highnes' presence, and other pastimes of pleasure, to the great comfort of all the beholders, and to the high honours of this magnificent Marriage¹.

*Of the Tryumphs and Revells upon the next night following,
being Shrove Tuesday.*

The next day being Shrove Tuesday, a day of pleasure and jollitie by custome, but farre more delightfull by reason of this magnificent Marriage, which moved many occasions of mirth in his Highnes' Court; for every day, in severall attires, were the Nobilitie of the land seene flourishing in the Chamber of Presence, and much was the cost spent in banquetting of forraigne estates, as well Princes Embassadors, as the Peers and Nobles attending upon the Palsegrave, which, upon this day was as Royally performed as upon the former. The bountie of his Majestie exceeded; for his Highnes' Court was free for all people of fashion, as well Citizens as others, and few came thither that departed without kind entertainment; for liberallitie, with spreading armes, kept open houshold, whereby the time may well be recorded for a time of Prince's pleasures, by reason Princes were the maintainers thereof.

The night proceeding, much expectation was made of a stage play to be acted in the Great Hall by the King's players, where many hundred of people stood attending the same; but it hapned contrarie, for greater pleasures were preparing, which in this manner were performed:—as upon the night before a most famous Maske came to Court, by the Gentlemen and Students of the Law, from the Roles Office, by land; so some three hundred Gentlemen more, of the same estate and calling, to equal them in statelines, came likewise up the Thames by water, with a Maske, to Whitehall, at whose setting forth from Winchester

¹ See the Masque printed hereafter.

House¹ in their barges, a peale of ordinance, placed on the Banckeside, seemed as it were thunder; the barges were beautified with many flagges and streamers, lighted with a number of burning cressets² and torches, attended on by drums and trumpets, which sounded all the way most melodiously. The Gentlemen and Maskers had most glorious and rich suits of cloth of gold and silver, with other robes of much delight and pleasure. The entertainments in Court were gracious, and their performance as curious as the skill and art of wit could devise, at which the King and all the Royall Assembly there present, took high contentment³.

The King's Majestie, in the Royaltie of his minde, and in regard of these rare devises of the Gentlemen of the Innes of Court, being most of them sonnes to great States of Land, invited them all within few daies after, to a Royall banquet, where not onely by his Highnes, but by the Palsegrave and his Bride, they had most kind and friendly thankes.

And now to conclude my discourse, the joyes hereof were declared in manie places, as well City and Court; for the bells of London rung generally in every Church, and in every street bonfires blazed abundantly; there was neither cost nor paines spared by his Highness' subjects, that any way might give signes of joy for the Marriage of his Princely Daughter to her Royal husband, whom God bless with long happiness, and thrones of angels keep and defend! Amen⁴.



The preceding Tract, as has been already shown, is far from being a complete description of these splendid festivities, nor can perfection be expected in a publication printed in the very midst of them, probably relating the greater part by anticipation. This defect will be found very amply compensated in the following pages.

¹ The well-known Palace of the Bishop of Winchester, near the Church of St. Mary Overy. N.

² See a note in vol. I. p. 331. N.

³ This performance was, however, some days after; see the Masque hereafter. N.

⁴ Since the Note in p. 536 was printed, I have found the tract here concluded described in Oldys's Catalogue of the Harleian Pamphlets, as a 4to of 16 pages, *black letter*. The title page is adorned with a wood-cut of a cavalier on horseback, attended by his page; all armed *cap-à-pie*, and gallantly accoutred at all points, to represent, says Oldys, the said Palsegrave. N.

On the morning of the 14th, after the nuptial ceremony was finished, a deputation from the Corporation of the Metropolis appears to have had an audience, when "the City of London (that with high magnificence had feasted the Prince Palatine and his Noble Retinue) presented to the fair Bride a chain of pearl, by the hand of the Lord Mayor and Aldermen (in their scarlet, and gold chain¹ accoutrements), of such a value as was fit for them to give, and her to receive²."

Of the Masques on this occasion, the first performed was "The Lords' Masque," written by Dr. Campion³.

¹ Mr. Pegge, in his "Curialia," has some curious particulars respecting gold chains, particularly those worn by the Lord Mayor and Aldermen. "The use of gold chains," he remarks, "by such as affected to be considerable Gentlemen, was grown to such a height in the reign of King Henry VIII. that the sumptuary law in his 24th year limits them to persons only who expend a clear £.200 *per annum*. This statute, if not repealed, afterwards lost its force; and chains became an ornamental part of dress, not only to those who received them from foreign Princes, but to any Gentleman who could afford to wear them, as may be seen in pictures of persons living in the 16th and 17th centuries in most families of account, and which, if they had descended for some generations, were proportionally in the higher estimation. As these became badges of gentility and dignity, they were assumed by men in every public line, particularly by Civil Magistrates; and formerly [as is said above] all the Aldermen of London wore them, though now they are only appropriated to the Lord Mayor, the Sheriffs, and such Aldermen who have passed the chair. The Lord Mayor of York has no collar but a chain only, which is worn differently from that of the Lord Mayor of London; the former being but a triple chain, each row of links longer than the other, so as to fall distinctly in three ovals of different sizes on the breast; whereas the latter consists of an assemblage of several rows of links, hanging from the neck down the breast without any division, and returning it suspended by a hook placed in one of the upper button-holes of his coat. The Lady Mayoress of London likewise at this day wears a chain of small links, which is made an ornament to the robings of her gown; as does the Lady Mayoress of York."

² From the Records of the City of London, where we find that "Two thousand pounds were paid by the Chamberlain unto the Right Honorable the Lord Chamberlain of his Majestie's most honorable Houshold in full dischargd of the price of the chayne of pearle given by the Citty to the Lady Elizabeth her Grace, wieff of the high and mightie Prince Ffrederick Count Paletine of Rheyne."—Twenty marks were paid "For ayde money for the Marriage of Lady Elizabeth his Majestie's Daughter, wief of the high and mightie Prince Ffrederick Count Paletyne of the Rheyne, for all the Cittie's lands in generall." This aid was collected throughout the Kingdom, as mentioned in numerous topographical works.

Of whom see pp. 104, 105. — Ben Jonson was now abroad, see pp. 432, 558; in his absence, Campion, whose skill in this species of composition has been before displayed, certainly shines to great advantage.

THE DESCRIPTION, SPEECHES, AND SONGS OF
THE LORDS' MASKE,

PRESENTED IN THE BANQUETTING-HOUSE ON THE MARRIAGE OF THE
 HIGH AND MIGHTIE COUNT PALATINE AND THE ROYALLY-DESCENDED THE LADIE ELISABETH,
 [ON SHROVE SUNDAY,] FEB. 14, 1612-13¹.

By THOMAS CAMPION, M.D.

I have now taken occasion to satisfie many, who long since were desirous that the Lords' Maske should be published, which (but for some private lets) had in due time come forth.

The scene was divided into two parts from the rooffe to the floore, the lower part being first discovered, upon the sound of a double consort, exprest by severall instruments, placed on either side of the roome; there appeared a wood in prospective, the innermost part being of releave, or whole round, the rest painted. On the left hand from the seat was a cave, and on the right a thicket, out of which came ORPHEUS, who was attired after the old Greeke manner; his haire curled and long, a lawrell wreath on his head, and in his hand hee bare a silver bird, about him tamely placed severall wild beasts, and upon the ceasing of the consort ORPHEUS spake:

ORPHEUS. Agen, agen, fresh kindle Phœbus sounds,
 T' exhale Mania from her earthie den;
 Allay the fury that her sense confounds,
 And call her gently forth, sound, sound, agen.

The consorts both sound againe, and MANIA, the Goddesse of Madnesse, appears wildly out of her cave. Her habit was confused and strange, but yet graceful; she as one amazed speaks:

MANIA. What powerfull noise is this importunes me,
 T' abandon darkenesse which my humour fits?
 Jove's hand in it I feele, and ever he
 Must be obai'd ev'n of the frantic'st wits.

¹ This was published in 1613, at the end of Campion's account of the Queen's Entertainment at Caversham House near Reading, on the 17th and 18th of April 1613; which will be given hereafter. "Of the Lords' Masque," Mr. Chamberlain says, "I hear no great commendation, save only for riches, their devices being long and tedious, and more like a Play than a Maske." (Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 435). Mr. Chamberlain had not been a spectator, and perhaps by mistake laid to this Masque that charge of tediousness, of which Chapman (see p. 571) confesses his to have been accused. So far from being tediously long, this is one of our shortest Masques. Its cost was £.400; see in the expences of the Marriage hereafter. N.

ORPHEUS. Mania?

MANIA. Hah!

ORPHEUS. Braine-sick, why start'st thou so?
Approch yet nearer, and thou then shalt know
The will of Jove, which he will breath from me.

MANIA. Who art thou? if my dazeled eyes can see,
Thou art the sweet enchanter, heav'nly Orpheus.

ORPHEUS. The same, Mania, and Jove greets thee thus,
Though severall power to thee, and charge he gave,
T'enclose in thy dominions such as rave
Through blood's distemper, how durst thou attempt
T'imprison Entheus, whose rage is exempt
From vulgar censure? it is all divine,
Full of celestial rapture, that can shine
Through darkest shadowes, therefore Jove by me
Commands thy power strait to set Entheus free.

MANIA. How can I? franticks with him many more
In one cave are lockt up, ope once the dore,
All will flie out; and through the world disturbe
The peace of Jove; for, what power then can curbe
Their brainlesse furie?—

ORPHEUS. Let not feare in vaine
Trouble thy crazed fancie, all againe,
Save Entheus, to thy safeguard shall retire,
For Jove into our musick will inspire
The power of passion, that their thoughts shall bend
To any forme of motion we intend.
Obey Jove's will then, go, set Entheus free.

MANIA. I willing go, so Jove obey'd must bee!

ORPHEUS. Let musicke put on Protean changes now,
Wilde beasts it once tam'd; now let franticks bow!

At the sound of a strange musicke, twelve franticks enter, six men and six women, all represented in sundry habits and humours; there was the lover, the selfe-lover, the melancholicke man full of feare, the schoole-man overcome with phantasie, the over-watched usurer, with others that made an absolute medley of madnesse, in midst of whom ENTHEUS (or Poetick Furie) was hurried forth, and tost up and downe, till by vertue of a new change in the musicke, the lunaticks fell into a madde measure, fitted to a loud phantas-ticke tune. But in the end thereof the musicke changed into a very solemne ayre, which they softly played while ORPHEUS spake:

ORPHEUS. Through these soft and calme sounds, Mania, passe
 With thy phantasticks hence; heere is no place
 Longer for them or thee; Entheus alone
 Must do Jove's bidding. Now all else be gone!

During this Speech, MANIA with her franticks depart, leaving ENTHEUS behind them, who was attired in a close curace [cuirass] of the anticke [antique] fashion, bases¹ with labels, a roabe fastned to his shoulders, and hanging downe behind; on his head a wreath of lawrell, out of which grew a paire of wings; in the one hand he held a booke, and in the other a pen.

ENTHEUS. Divinest Orpheus, oh! how all from thee
 Proceed with wondrous sweetnesse; am I free?
 Is my affliction vanish't?

ORPHEUS. Too, too long,
 Alas, good Entheus, hast thou brook't this wrong?
 What! number thee with madmen? oh mad age,
 Senselesse of thee, and thy celestiall rage!
 For thy excellling rapture, ev'n through things
 That seem most light, is borne with sacred wings;
 Nor are these musicks, showes, or revels vaine,
 When thou adorn'st them with thy Phœbean braine,
 They're pallate-sicke of much more vanitie,
 That cannot taste them in their dignitie.
 Jove therefore lets thy prison'd spright² obtaine
 Her libertie and fiery scope againe;
 And heere by me commands thee to create
 Inventions rare, this night to celebrate,
 Such as become a Nuptiall by his will
 Begun and ended.

ENTHEUS. Jove I honor still,
 And must obey. Orpheus, I feele the fires
 Are reddy in my braine which Jove enspires;
 Loe, through that vaile, I see Prometheus stand,
 Before those glorious lights which his false hand
 Stole out of Heav'n, the dull Earth to enflame
 With the affects of Love and honor'd Fame,
 I view them plaine in pomp and maiestie;
 Such as being seene might hold rivalitie
 With the best Triumphes; Orpheus, give a call
 With thy charm'd musicke, and discover all.

ORPHEUS. Flie, cheerfull voices, through the ayre, and clear
 These clouds, that yon hid beautie may appeare.

¹ See a note in p. 350. ² Spirit; always one syllable in old poetry, as has been before remarked. N.

SONG.

*Come away, bring thy golden theft,
Bring, bright Prometheus, all thy lights,
Thy fires from Heav'n bereft
Shew now to human sights.*

*Come, quickly come, thy stars to our stars straight present,
For pleasure being too much defer'd, loseth her best content ;
What fair dame's wish should swift as their own thoughts appeare,
To loving and to longing hearts each houre seems a yeare.*

*See how faire, oh how faire they shine,
What needs more pompe beneath the skies ?
Their birth is yet divine,
And such their form implies.*

*Large grow their beames, their neere approach afford them so,
By nature sights that pleasing are, can not too amply show ;
Oh might these flames in human shapes descend to grace this place,
How lovely would their presence be, their forms how full of grace !*

In the end of the first part of this Song, the upper part of the scene was discovered by the sodaine fall of a curtaine ; then in clowdes of severall colours (the upper part of them being fierie, and the middle heightned with silver) appeared eight starres of extraordinarie bignes, which so were placed, as that they seemed to be fixed betweene the firmament and the earth ; in the front of the scene stood PROMETHEUS, attyred as one of the ancient heroes.

ENTHEUS. Patron of mankinde, powerfull and bounteous,
Rich in thy flames, reverend Prometheus,
In Hymen's place aide us to solempnize
These Royall Nuptials, fill the lookers' eyes
With admiration of thy fire and light,
And from thy hand let wonders flow to-night.

PROMETHEUS. Entheus and Orpheus, names both deare to me,
In equall ballance I your third will be
In this night's honour, view the heav'n-borne starres,
Who by my health are become sublunars.
How well their native beauties fit this place,
Which with a chorall dance they first shall grace,
Then shall their formes to humane figures turne,
And these bright fires within their bosomes burne.
Orpheus, apply thy musick ; for it well
Helps to induce a courtly miracle.

ORPHEUS. Sound, best of musick, raise yet higher our sprights
While we admire Prometheus' dancing lights.

SONG.

*Advance your chorall motions now,
You musick-loving lights,
This night concludes the Nuptiall vow,
Make this the best of nights;
So bravely crowne it with your beames,
That it may live in fame,
As long as Rhenus or the Thames
Are knowne by either name.*

*Once move againe, yet nearer move
Your forms at willing view,
Such fair effects of joy and love
None can expresse but you;
Then revell midst your ayrie bowres,
Till all the clouds do sweat,
That pleasure may be powr'd in showres
On this triumphant seat.*

*Long since hath lovely Flora throwne
Her flowers and garlands here,
Rich Ceres all her wealth hath showne,
Prowde of her daintie cheare;
Chang'd then to humane shape descend,
Clad in familiar weede,
That every eye may here commend
The kinde delights you breede.*

According to the humour of this Song, the starres mooved in an exceeding strange and delightfull manner, and I suppose fewe have ever seene more neate artifice than Master Innigoe Jones¹ shewed in contriving their motion, who in all the rest of the workmanship which belonged to the whole invention

¹ Inigo Jones was also employed in the Masque of the Middle Temple and Lincoln's Inn; see p. 566. — Thus it appears that he had not yet left this country; but he did soon after this, if that is correct which is said in his "Life:"—"After the death of Prince Henry in 1612, our Architect made a second tour to Italy, and continued there some years, improving himself in his favourite art, till he was recalled by the death of the Surveyor General." — Ben Jonson had already gone abroad (as remarked in p. 553); thus Mr. Gifford's argument that the quarrel between Jones and Jonson did not occur till long after the appearance of "Jonson's Bartholomew Fair" in 1614, is strengthened (if it needs additional proof) by the certainty that they were far separated at that period, and could not have met for many years after. N.

shewed extraordinarie industrie and skill, which if it be not as lively exprest in writing as it appeared in view, robbe not him of his due, but lay the blame on my want of right apprehending his instructions for the adorning of his arte¹. But to returne to our purpose; about the end of this Song, the starres suddenly vanished, as if they had been drowned amongst the cloudes, and the Eight Maskers appeared in their habits, which were infinitely rich, befitting States (such as indeed they were), as also a time so farre heightened the day before with all the richest show of solemnitie that could be invented. The ground of their attires was massie cloth of silver, embossed with flames of embroidery; on their heads they had crownes, flames made of gold plate enameled, and on the top a feather of silke, representing a cloud of smoake. Upon their new transformation, the whole scæne, being clouds, dispersed; and there appeared an element of artificiall fires with severall circles of lights in continuall motion, representing the house of PROMETHEUS, who then thus applies his speech to the Maskers:

PROMETHEUS. So, pause awhile; and come, yee fierie sprights,
Breake forth the earth-like sparks t' attend these Knights.

Sixteene Pages like fierie-spirits, all their attires being alike composed of flames, with fierie wings and bases, bearing in either hand a torch of Virgine waxe, come forth below, dauncing a lively measure; and the daunce being ended, PROMETHEUS speakes to them from above:

[The Torch-bearers daunce.

PROMETHEUS. Wait, spirits, wait, while through the clouds we pace,
And by descending gaine a higher place.

The Pages returne toward the scæne, to give their attendance to the Maskers with their lights. From the side of the scæne was seen a bright and transparent cloud, which reached from the top of the Heavens to the Earth; on this cloud the Maskers, led by PROMETHEUS, descended with the musicke of a full Song; and, at the end of their descent, the cloud breake in twaine, and one parte of it (as with a winde) was blowne overthwart the scæne. While this cloud was vanishing, the wood, being the under part of the scæne, was insensibly changed, and in place thereof appeared foure noble women-statues of silver, standing in severall niches, accompanied with ornaments of architecture, which filled all the end of the house, and seemed to be all of goldsmithes' work. The first order consisted of pillasters all of gold set with rubies, saphyrs, emeralds, opals, and such like. The capitals were composed, and of a new invention; over this was a bastard order with cartouses² reversed, comming from the capitals of every pillaster, which made the upper part rich

¹ This, with due respect to Mr. Gifford be it said, equals in warmth the gratitude of Jonson in the Masque of Queens; see p. 243. N.

² See a note in p. 353.

and full of ornament ; over every statue was placed a history in gold, which seemed to be of base-releafe ; the conceits which were figured in them were these : in the first was PROMETHEUS, embossing in clay the figure of a woman ; in the second he was represented stealing fire from the chariot-wheele of the Sunne ; in the third he is exprest putting life with this fire into his figure of clay ; and in the fourth square, JUPITER, enraged, turnes these new-made women into statues ; above all, for finishing, ran a cornish, which returned over every pillaster, seeming all of gold and richly carved.

A FULL SONG.

*Supported now by clouds descend,
Divine Prometheus, Hymen's friend,
Lead downe the new-transformed Fires,
And fill their breasts with love's desires ;
That they may revell with delight,
And celebrate this Nuptiall night !
So celebrate this Nuptiall night,
That all which see may say ;
They never viewed so faire a sight,
E'en on the cleerest day.*

While this Song is sung, and the Maskers court the foure new-transformed Ladies, foure other statues appeare in their places.

ENTHEUS. See, see, Prometheus, foure of these first Dames,
Which thou long since out of thy purchas't flames
Did'st forge with heav'nly fire, as they were then
By Jove transform'd to Statues, so agen
They suddenly appeare by his command
At thy arrivall ; loe ! how fixt they stand.
So did Jove's wrath too long, but now at last
It by degrees relents, and he hath plac't
These Statues, that we might his ayde implore
First for the life of these, and then for more.

PROMETHEUS. Entheus, thy counsels are divine and just ;
Let Orpheus decke thy hymne, since pray we must.

THE FIRST INVOCATION IN A FULL SONG.

*Powerfull Jove, that of bright starres
Now hast made men fit for warres ;
Thy power in these statues prove,
And make them women fit for love.*

ORPHEUS. See, Jove is pleas'd, Statues have life and move;
 Goe, new-borne men, and entertaine with love
 These new-borne women; though your number yet
 Exceeds their's double, they are arm'd with wit
 To beare your best encounters; court them faire;
 When words and musicke speake let none despaire.

THE SONG.

*Woo her and win her he that can,
 Each woman hath two lovers;
 So shee must take or leave a man
 Till time more grace discovers.
 This doth Jove to shew that want
 Makes beautie most respected;
 If faire women were more scant,
 They would be more affected.*

*Courtship and musicke suite with love,
 They both are workes of passion;
 Happie is he whose wordes can move,—
 Yet sweete notes helpe perswasion.
 Mixe your wordes with musicke then,
 That they the more may enter;
 Bold assaults are fit for men
 That on strange beauties venture.*

PROMETHEUS. Cease, cease your wooing strife; see, Jove intends
 To fill your number up and make all friends;
 Orpheus and Entheus, joyn your skills once more,
 And with a hymne the Deitie implore.

THE SECOND INVOCATION TO THE TUNE OF THE FIRST.

*Powerfull Jove, that hast given fower,
 Raise this number but once more;
 That complete, their numerous feet
 May aptly in just measures meet.*

*The other foure Statues are transformed into
 Women in the time of this Invocation.*

ENTHEUS. The number's now complete, thanks be to Jove,
 No man needs feare a rivall in his love;
 For all are sped, and now begins delight
 To fill with glorie this triumphant night.

The Maskers having every one entertained his Lady, begin their first new entring dance; after it, while they breath, the time is entertained with a dialogue Song.

*Breathe now, while "Io Hymen!"
To the Bride we sing;
Oh! how many joyes and honors
From this match will spring!
Ever firme the league will prove,
Where only goodnesse causeth love.
Some for profit seeke
What their fancies most disleeke;
These love for Virtue's sake alone;
Beautie and Youth unite them both in one.*

*Chorus. Live with thy Bridegroome happy, sacred Bride,
How blest is he that is for love envi'd.*

The Maskers' second Dance.

*Breathe againe, while we with musicke
Fill the emptie space;
Oh! but do not in your dances
Yourselfes only grace.
Ev'ry one fetch out your pheare [fair],
Whom chiefly you will honor heere;
Sights most pleasure breed,
When their numbers most exceed.
Chuse then, for choice to all is free;
Taken or left, none discontent must bee.*

*Chorus. Now in thy revels frolicke, faire Delight,
To heape joy on this ever-honored night.*

The Maskers, during this dialogue, take out others to dance with them, men women and women men; and first of all the Princely Bridegroome and Bride were drawne into these solemne Revels, which continued a long space, but in the end were broken off with this short Song.

SONG.

*Cease, cease your Revels, rest a space;
New pleasures presse into this place,
Full of beautie and of grace!*

The whole scæne was now againe changed, and became a prospective with porticoes on each side, which seemed to go in a great way; in the middle was erected an obeliske, all of silver, and in it lights of severall colours; on the side of this obeliske, standing on pedestals, were the Statues of the Bride-

groome and Bride, all of gold, in gracious postures. This obeliske was of that height that the toppe thereof touched the highest cloudes, and yet SYBILLA did draw it forth with a thread of gold. The grave sage was in a roabe of gold, tuckt up to her girdle, a kirtle gathered full and of silver, with a vaile on her head, being bare-neckt, and bearing in her hand a scrole of parchment.

ENTHEUS. Make cleare the passage to Sybilla's sight,
 Who with her trophee comes to crowne this night;
 And as her selfe with musicke shall be led,
 So shall shee pull on with a golden thread
 A high vast obeliske, dedicate to Fame,
 Which immortalitie itself did frame.
 Raise high your voices now, like trumpets fill
 The roome with sounds of triumph, sweete and shrill.

SONG.

*Come triumphing, come with state,
 Old Sybilla, reverend Dame,
 Thou keep'st the secret key of fate,
 Preventing swiftest Fame.
 This night breathe only words of joy,
 And speake them plaine;—now be not coy.*

SYBILLA. Debetur alto jure principium Jovi,
 Votis det ipse vim meis, dictis fidem.
 Utrunque decoris splendet egregium jubar,
 Medio trimphus mole stat dignus suâ,
 Cœlumque summo capite dilectum petit;
 Quàm pulchra pulchro sponsa respondet viro!
 Quàm plena numinis! Patrem vultu exprimit,
 Parens futura masculæ prolis, Parens
 Regum, Imperatorum; additur Germaniæ
 Robur Britannicum; ecquid esse par potest?
 Utramque junget una mens gentem, fides,
 Deique cultus unus, et simplex amor.
 Idem erit utrique hostis, sodalis idem, idem
 Votum periclitantium, atque eadem manus.
 Favebit illis Pax, favebit Bellica
 Fortuna, semper aderit adjutor Deus!
 Sic, sic Sibilla; vocibus nec his deest
 Pondus, nec hoc inane monumentum trahit;
 Et aureum est, et quale nec flammæ timet,
 Nec fulgura;—ipsi quippe sacratur Jovi!

PROMETHEUS. The good old Sage is silenc't ; her free tongue,
That made such melodie, is now unstrung ;
Then grace her trophée with a dance triumphant,
Where Orpheus is none can fit musick want.

A Song and Dance triumphant of the Maskers.

SONG.

*Dance, dance, and visit now the shadowes of our joy,
All in height, and pleasing state, your changed forms imploy ;
And as the bird of Jove salutes with loftie wing the morn,
So mount, so flie, these trophées to adorne.
Grace them with all the sounds and motions of delight,
Since all the earth cannot express a lovelier sight ;
View them with triumph, and in shades the truth adore,
No pompe or sacrifice can please Jove's greatnesse more.*

*Turne, turne, and honor now the life these figures beare,
Loe, how heavenly natures farre above all art appeare ;
Let their aspects revive in you the fire that shined so late,
Still mount and still retaine your heavenly state.
Gods were with dance and with musick serv'd of old,
Those happie daies deriv'd their glorious style from gold ;
This pair by Hymen joyn'd grace you with measure then,
Since they are both divine, and you are more than men.*

ORPHEUS. Let here Sybilla's Trophée stand,
Leade her now by either hand,
That shee may approach yet nearer,
And the Bride and Bridegroome heare her.
Blesse them in her native tongue,
Wherein old prophetesies she sung ;
Which time to light hath brought,
Shee speakes that which Jove hath taught.
Well may he inspire her now,
To make a joyfull and true vow.

SYBILLA. Sponsam, sponse, toro tene pudicam ;
Sponsum, sponsa, tene toro pudicum.
Non hæc unica nox datur beatis,
At vos perpetuò hæc beabit una
Prole multiplici, parique amore.
Læta ac vera refert Sybilla, ab alto
Ipse Juppiter annuit loquenti.

- PROMETHEUS. So be it ever, joy and peace,
And mutuall love give you increase;
That your posteritie may grow
In fame, as long as seas doe flow.
- ENTHEUS. Live you long to see your joyes
In faire Nymphs and Princely boyes;
Breeding like the garden flowers,
Which kinde Heav'n drawes with her warm showers!
- ORPHEUS. Enough of blessing—though too much
Never can be said to such;
But night doth wast, and Hymen chides,
Kinde to Bridegroomes and to Brides.
Then singing the last dance induce,
So let "good night" prevent excuse.

SONG.

*No longer wrong the Night
Of her Hymenæan right;
A thousand Cupids call away,
Fearing the approaching day,
The cocks alreadie crow;—
Dance then and goe.*

*The last new Dance of the Maskers, which concludes all,
with a lively straine at their going out.*

Thus ended the Revels of Shrove Sunday; and on Monday evening, another Masque, written by George Chapman¹, was exhibited at Court by the Gentlemen of the Middle Temple and Lincoln's Inn:

¹ George Chapman, whose "Epicede" on the Death of Prince Henry has been noticed in p. 506, has received such ample attention both in his life and works in Mr. Singer's preface to his edition of "Chapman's Hymns of Homer," 1818, that I shall here only select from that preface a few particulars respecting his personal history. He was born in 1559, "passed two years at Trinity College, Oxford, with a contempt of philosophy, but a close attention to the Greek and Roman classics," was patronised by Sir Thomas Walsingham, and was the associate of Spenser, Marlow, Daniel, Drayton, and others of minor celebrity. It is supposed that he held some trifling place in the Court either of James or his Queen, and it appears that the Monarch had much respect for him and valued his writings; but the disgrace of Carr, who was certainly his patron, and to whom he adhered on his fall, is feared to have influenced Chapman's fate, so that he lived and died in poverty. It does not appear that he had any connection with the Inns of Court. His death happened May 12, 1634, in the 75th year of his age, and over his grave, on the South side of St. Giles's in the Fields, was erected by his beloved friend Inigo Jones, a monument built after the old Romans, inscribed, "Georgius Chapmanus, Poeta Homericus," &c. Mr. Singer gives his portrait as a frontispiece.

THE MEMORABLE MASKE
OF THE TWO HONORABLE HOUSES OR INNS OF COURT,
THE MIDDLE TEMPLE AND LYNCOLN'S INNE;

AS IT WAS PERFORMED BEFORE THE KING AT WHITEHALL ON SHROVE MUNDAY AT NIGHT,

BEING THE 15TH OF FEBRUARY 1612-13;

AT THE PRINCELY CELEBRATION OF THE MOST ROYALL NUPTIALLS OF THE

PALSGRAVE AND HIS THRICE GRATIOUS PRINCESSE ELIZABETH, &c.

With a Description of their whole Show, in the manner of their march on horse-backe to the Court from the Master of the Rolls his house; with all their right Noble Consorts and most showfull Attendants. Invented and fashioned, with the ground and speciall structure of the whole worke, by our Kingdome's most artfull and ingenious Architect Innigo Jones; supplied, aplied, digested, and written by GEO. CHAPMAN ¹.

THE EPISTLE DEDICATORIE.

To the most noble and constant combiner of honor and vertue, Sir Edward Philips ², Knight, Master of the Rolls.

This noble and magnificent performance, renewing the ancient spirit and honor of the Innes of Court ³, being especially furthered and followed by your most laborious and honored endeavors (for his Majestie's service and honour of the all-grace-deserving Nuptialls of the thrice gracious Princesse Elizabeth his Highness' daughter), deserves especially to be in this sort consecrate to your worthy

¹ "At London: Printed by G. Eld for George Norton, and are to be sould at his shoppe neere Temple-bar," 4to, pp. 54. This was entered at Stationers' Hall, Jan. 27. Copies are in the British Museum (Garrick Collection, H. 2.), and Bodleian Libraries, and in the collection of Mr. Rhodes. The Rev. Mr. Hunter, the Historian of Hallamshire, has an imperfect copy. N. ² See p. 450.

³ The principal Inns of Court were all celebrated for their ancient festivity, as has been fully shown in the "Progresses of Queen Elizabeth."—The expences of the present Masque were, according to Sir William Dugdale, no less than £.1,536. 8s. 11d. The expence of a very splendid Masque the four Inns together presented to Charles the First at Christmas 1634-5, was estimated at £.2,400.—Of the Barriers presented by the Inns of Court at the Creation of Charles Prince of Wales see under 1616. N.

memory and honor; Honor having never her faire hand more freely and nobly given to Riches (being a fit particle of this invention) than by yours, at this Nuptiall Solemnity. To which assisted and memorable ceremony, the joined hand and industry of the worthely honoured Knight, Sir H. Hubberd¹, his Majestie's Atturney Generall, deserving, in good part, a joint memory with yours, I have submitted it freely to his noble acceptance. The poore paines I added to this Royall service, being wholly chosen and commanded by your most constant and free favour; I hope will now appeare nothing neglective of their expected duties. Hearty will, and care enough, I am assured, was employed in me; and the onely ingenuous will being first and principall step to vertue, I beseech you let it stand for the performing vertue it selfe. In which addition of your ever-honoured favours you shall ever binde all my future to your most wished commandement. God send you long health, and your vertues will endue you with honor enough! By your free merits' ever-vowed honorer, and most unfainedly affectionate observant,

GEO. CHAPMAN.

*The Maske of the Gentlemen of the two combined Houses or Inns of Court,
the Middle Temple and Lincoln's Inne.*

At the house of the most worthely-honoured preferrer and gracer of all honourable actions and vertues, Sir Edward Philips, Knight, Master of the Rolls, all the Performers and their Assistants made their *rendes-vous*, prepared to their performance, and thus set forth.

Fiftie Gentlemen, richly attirde and as gallantly mounted, with foot-men particularly attending, made the noble *vant-guarde* of these Nuptiall forces.

Next (a fit distance observed betweene them) marcht a mock-maske of baboons, attired like fantasticall travailers, in Neapolitane sutes and great ruffes, all horst with asses and dwarf palfries, with yellow foot-cloathes, and casting cockle-demois about, in courtesie, by way of lardges; torches boarn on either hand of them, lighting their state as ridiculously as the rest nobly.

After them were sorted two carrs triumphall, adorn'd with great maske-heads, festones, scroules, and antick [antique] leaves, every part inricht with silver and golde. These were through-varied with different invention, and in them advanc't the choice Musitions of our Kingdome, sixe in each, attir'd like Virginean priests, by whom the Sun is there ador'd, and therefore called the Phœbades.

¹ Of Sir Henry Hobart see p. 423.

Their robes were tuckt up before, strange hoods of feathers and scallops about their neckes, and on their heads turbants, stucke with severall-coloured feathers, spotted with wings of flies of extraordinary bignesse like those of their countrie. And about them marcht two ranks of torches.

Then rode the cheife Maskers, in Indian habits all of a resemblance; the ground cloath of silver richly embroidered with golden sunns, and about every sunne ran a traile of gold, imitating Indian worke; their bases of the same stuffe and work, but betwixt every pane of embroidery, went a rowe of white estridge [ostrich] feathers, mingled with sprigs of golde plate; under their breasts they woare bawdricks of golde, embroidered high with pearle; and about their neckes ruffles of feathers, spangled with pearles and silver. On their heads high spriged feathers, compast in coronets, like the Virginian Princes they [re]presented. Betwixt every set of feathers, and about their browes, in the under-part of their coronets, shined sunnes of golde plate, sprinkled with pearle, from whence sprung rayes of the like plate, that, mixing with the motion of the feathers, shewed exceedingly delightfull and gracious. Their legges were adorn'd with close long white silke stockings, curiously embroidered with golde to the midde-legge; and over these (being on horsebacke) they drew greaves or buskins embrodered with gould, and interlac't with rowes of fethers, altogether estrangfull and Indian-like. In their hands, set in several postures as they rode, they brandisht cane darts of the finest gould. Their vizerds of olive-collour, but pleasingly visag'd, their hayre blacke and lardge, waving downe to their shoulders. Their horses for rich shew equall'd the Maskers themselves, all their caparisons being enchac't with sunnes of gould and ornamentall jewells; to every one of which was tackt a scarffing of silver, that ran sinnuously in workes over the whole caparison, even to the daseling of the admiring spectators. Their heads no lesse gracefully and properly deckt with the like light skarffing that hung about their eares wantonly dangling. Every one of these horse had two Moores, attir'd like Indian slaves, that for state sided them, with swelling wreaths of gould and watched [watchet] on their heads, which arose in all to the number of a hundred.

The Torch-bearers' habits were likewise of the Indian garb, but more strava-gant then those of the Maskers, all showfully garnisht with several-hewd [hued] fethers; the humble variety whereof strucke off the more amplie the Maskers' high beauties, shining in the habits of themselves; and reflected in their kinde a new and delightfully-varied radiance of the beholders. All these sustain'd

torches of the Virgine-wax, whose staves were great canes all over gilded; and these (as the rest) had every man his Moore attending his horse. The Maskers, riding single, had every Masker his Torch-bearer mounted before him.

The last charriot, which was most of all adorn'd, had its whole frame fill'd with moulded worke, mixed all with paintings and glittering scarffings of silver, over which was cast a canopie of golde, boarne up with antick figures, and all compos'd *a la grotesca*. Before this in the seate of it, as the chariotere, was advanc't a strange person, and as strangely habited, half French, half Swizz, his name Capriccio; wearing on his head a paire of golden bellows, a guilt spurre in one hand, and with the other managing the reignes of the fowre horses that drew it. On the seate of the same chariot, a little more elevate, sate Eunomia, the Virgine Priest of the Goddess Honor, together with Phemis, her Herald. The habit of the Priest was a robe of white silke, gathered about the necke, a pentacle¹ of silvered stuffe about her shoulders, hanging foldedly downe, both before and behind; a vestall vaile on her head, of tiffany strip't with silver, hanging with a trayne to the earth. The Herald was attyr'd in an antique cuirace [cuirass] of silver stuffe, with labells at the wings and basses, a short gowne of gould stuffe with wide sleeves cut in panes; a wreath of gold on his head, and a rod of gould in his hand. Highest of all, in the most eminent seate of the Tryumphall, sat side by side, the cælestiall Goddess Honour and the earthy Deity Plutus, or Riches. His attire, a short robe of gould, fring'd, his wide sleeves turn'd up, and out-show'd his naked armes; his head and beard sprinkl'd with showrs of gould; his buskins clinckant², as his other attire. The ornaments of Honor were these: a rich full robe of blew silke gut about her, a mantle of silver worne over-thwart, full-gathered, and descending in folds behind; a vaile of net lawne, embrodered with oo's and spangl'd; her tresses in tucks, braided with silver, the hinder part shadowing in waves her shoulders.

These, thus particularly and with proprietie adorn'd, were strongly attended with a full guard of two hundred Halberdiers; two Marshals, being choice Gen-

¹ *Pentacle* or *penticle*, signifies any covering, from the Italian *pentice*; here evidently a tippet or mantle. N.

² Shining; from the French *cliquant*, meaning tinsel:

"To-day the French,
All *cliquant*, all in gold, like heathen gods,
Shone down the English." Shakspeare's *Hen. VIII.*

Chapman uses this word more than once again in this Masque. N.

tlemen of either House, commaunder-like attir'd, to and fro coursing to keepe all in their orders; — a Showe at all parts so novell, conceitfull, and glorious, as hath not in this land (to the proper use and object it had purpos'd) beene ever before beheld. Nor did those honorable Inns of Court at any time in that kinde such acceptable service to the sacred Majesty of this Kingdome; nor were return'd, by many degrees, with so thrice gracious and Royall entertainment and honor. But, (as above sayd,) all these so marching to the Court at Whitehall, the King, Bride, and Bridegroom, with all the Lords of the most honor'd Privy Councel, and our cheif Nobility, stood in the gallery before the Tilt-yard, to behold their arrivall; who, for the more full satisfaction of his Majestie's view, made one turn about the yeard and dismounted; being then honorably attended through the gallery to a chamber appointed, where they were to make ready for their performance in the Hall.

The King beeing come forth, the Maskers ascended unseene to their scène. Then for the works: First, there appear'd at the lower end of the Hall, an artificiall rock, whose top was neere as high as the Hall it selfe. This rock was in the undermost part craggy and full of hollow places, in whose concaves were contriv'd two winding paire of staires, by whose greeces¹ the persons above might make their descents, and all the way be seene. All this rocke grew by degrees up into a gold-colour; and was run quite through with veines of golde. On the one side whereof, eminently raised on a faire hill, was erected a silver temple of an octangle figure, whose pillars were of a Compos'd order, and bore up an architrave, freese, and cornish, over which stood a continued plinthe, whereon were advanc't statues of silver. Above this was placed a bastarde order of architecture, wherein were kerv'd [carved] compartments; in one of which was written in great golde capitalls, HONORIS FANUM. Above all was a coupolo or type, which seem'd to be seal'd [ceiled] with silver plates. For finishing of all, upon a pedistall was fixt a round stone of silver, from which grew a paire of golden wings; both faign'd to bee Fortune's; the round stone (when her feet trod it) ever affirm'd to be roulung, figuring her inconstancy; the golden wings denoting those nimble powres that pompously bear her about the world, on that temple (erected to her daughter Honor, and figuring this Kingdome,) put off by her and fixt, for assured signe she would never forsake it. About this temple hung festones wreath'd with silver from one pillar's head to another. Besides, the freese was enricht with kervings,

¹ See vol. I. pp. 370, 380, 481.

all shewing greatnes and magnificence. On the other side of the rocke grew a grove, in whose utmost part appear'd a vast, wither'd, and hollow tree, being the bare receptacle of the baboonerie.

These following should in duty have had their proper places, after every fitted speech of the Actors; but being prevented by the unexpected haste of the printer, which he never let me know, and never sending me a prooffe till he had past their speeches, I had no reason to imagine hee could have been so forward. His fault is therefore to be supplied by the observation and reference of the Reader, who will easily perceive where they were to bee inserted.

After the Speech of Plutus, (who, as you may see after, first entred,) the middle part of the rocke began to move, and being come some five paces towards the King, it split in pieces with a great crack, and out brake Capriccio, as before described. The peeces of the rocke vanisht, and he spake as in his place.

At the singing of the first Song, full, which was sung by the Virginian Priests called the Phœbades, to sixe lutes (being used as an Orphean vertue, for the state of the mine's opening); the upper part of the rock was sodainly turn'd to a cloude, discovering a rich and refulgent mine of golde, in which the Twelve Maskers were triumphantly seated, their Torch-bearers attending before them; all the lights beeing so ordred that, though none were seen, yet had their lustre such vertue, that by it the least spangle or spark of the Maskers' rich habites might with ease and cleerenesse be discovered as far off as the seate. Over this golden mine, in an evening sky, the ruddy sunne was seen ready to set; and behind the tops of certaine white cliffes by degrees descended, casting up a banke of cloudes, in which a while he was hidden; but then, gloriously shining, gave that usually observed good omen of succeeding faire weather. Before he was fully set, the Phœbades (shewing the custome of the Indians to adore the sunne setting) began their observance with the song, to whose place wee must referre you for the manner and words. All the time they were singing, the Torch-bearers holding up their torches to the sun, to whome the Priests themselves and the rest did, as they sung, obeisance; which was answered by other musique and voices, at the commandement of Honor, with all observances us'd to the King, &c. as in the following places.

To answer certaine insolent objections made against the length of my speeches and narrations¹, being (for the probability of all accidents, arising from the invention of this Maske, and their aplication to the persons and places, for whome

¹ See p. 554.

and by whome it was presented) not [only] convenient, but necessary, I am enforct to affirme this, that, as there is no Poem nor Oration so generall, but hath his one perticular proposition, nor no river so extravagantly ample, but hath his never-so-narrow fountaine, worthy to be nam'd; so all these courtly and honoring inventions (having Poesie and Oration in them, and a fountaine, to be exprest, from whence the rivers flow) should expressively arise out of the places and persons, for and by whome they are presented; without which limits they are luxurious and vaine. But what rules soever are set downe to any art or act, (though without their observation no art nor act is true and worthy,) yet are they nothing the more followed, or the few who follow them credited. Every vulgarly-esteemed upstart dares breake the dreadfull dignity of antient and autenticall Poesie, and presume Luciferously to proclame, in place thereof, repugnant precepts of their own spaune. Truth and Worth have no faces to enamour the lycentious, but Vaine-glory and Humor. The same body, the same beauty, a thousand men seeing; only the man whose blood is fitted hath that which he calls his soule enamoured. And this out of infallible cause; for men understand not these of Mænander,

———“ Est morbus opportunitas
Animæ, quod ictus, vulnus accipit grave.”

But the cause of all men's being enamoured with Truth, and of her slight respect in others, is the divine Freedom; one touching with his aprehensive finger, the other passing. The Hill of the Muses (which all men must clime in the regular way to Truth) is said of ould to be forcked. And the two points of it, parting, are *Insania* and *Divinus Furor*. *Insania* is that which every ranck-brainde writer and judge of poetick writing is rapt withal, when hee presumes either to write or censure the height of Poesie, and that transports him with humor, vaine-glory, and pride, most prophane and sacrilegious; when *Divinus Furor* makes gentle and noble the never-so-truly inspired writer,

“ Emollit mores, nec sinit esse feros.”

And the mild beames of the most holy inflamer easily and sweetly enter, with all understanding sharpenesse, the soft and sincerely humane; but with no time, no study, no meanes under Heaven, any arrogant, all-occupation devourer that will, chandler-like, set up with all wares, selling Poesie's nectar and ambrosia as well as musterd and vineager. The chaste and restrain'd beame of humble Truth will never enter, but onely grase and glaunce at them, and the further fly them.

The applicable argument of the Maske.

Honor is so much respected and ador'd, that shee hath a temple erected to her like a Goddess; a Virgine Priest consecrated to her (which is Eunomia or Lawe, since none should dare accesse to Honor, but by Vertue, of which Lawe, being the rule, must needes be a cheife), and a Herrald (call'd Phemis or Fame) to proclame her institutions and commandements. To amplefie yet more the divine graces of this Goddess, Plutus (or Riches), being by Aristophanes, Lucian, &c. presented naturally blind, deformed, and dull-witted, is here, by his love of Honor, made see, made sightly, made ingenious, made liberall. And all this converted and consecrate to the most worthy celebration of these sacred Nuptialls, all issuing (to conclude the necessary application) from an honorable Temple, &c.

“Non est certa fides, quam non injuria versat,
 ————— Fallit portus et ipse fidem.”

THE NAMES OF THE SPEAKERS.

HONOUR, a Goddess.

PLUTUS, or Riches, a God.

EUNOMIA, or Law, Priest of Honor.

PHEMIS, Honor's Herrald.

CAPRICCIO, a Man of Wit, &c.

THE PRESENTMENT.

Plutus appear'd, surveying the worke with this Speech :

PLUTUS. Rockes! Nothing but rockes in these masking devices! Is invention so poore shee must needes ever dwell amongst rocks? But it may worthily have chaunc'd (being so often presented) that their vaine custome is now become the necessarie hand of Heaven, transforming into rocks some stonie-hearted Ladies, courted in former Masks; for whose loves some of their repulst servants have perisht; or perhaps some of my flintie-hearted usurers have beene heere metamorphosed; betwixt whom and Ladies there is resemblance enough; Ladies using to take interest besides their principall, as much as usurers. See, it is so; and now is the time of restoring them to their naturall shapes. It moves, opens, excellent! This metamorphosis I intend to overheare.

A rock, mooving and breaking with a cracke about CAPRICCIO, he enters with a pair of bellows on his head, a spur in one hand, and a peace of gold ore in the other, &c. He speakes, ut sequitur.

CAPRICCIO. How hard this world is to a Man of Wit! hee must eate through maine rockes for his food, or fast! A restles and tormenting stone his wit is to him; the very stone of Sisyphus in hell, nay, the Philosopher's stone, makes not a man more wretched. A man must be a second Proteus, and turne himselfe into all shapes (like Ulisses) to wind through the straites of this pinching vale of miserie. I have turn'd myselfe into a tailor, a man, a Gentleman, a Nobleman, a worthy man; but had never the witte to turne myselfe into an Alderman. 'There are manie shapes to perish in, but one to live in, and that's an Alderman's. 'Tis not for a Man of Wit to take any rich figure upon him; your bould, proud, ignorant, that's brave and clinkant, that findes crownes put into his shooes every morning by the Fayries and will never tell; whose wit is humor, whose judgement is fashion, whose pride is emptinesse, birth his full man, that is in all things something, in sum totall nothing; he shall live in the land of Spruce¹, milke, and hony flowing into his mouth sleeping.

PLUTUS. This is no transformation, but an intrusion into my golden mines. I will heare him further.

CAPRICCIO. This breach of rockes I have made, in needy pursuite of the blind Deity, Riches; who is myraculously arived here. For, (according to our rare Men of Wit,) Heaven standing and Earth moving, her motion (being circular) hath brought one of the most remote parts of the world to touch at this all-exceeding Iland; which a Man of Wit would imagine must needs move circularly with the rest of the world, and so ever maintaine an equal distance. But Poets (our chiefe Men of Wit) answer that point directly; most ingeniously affirming that this Ile is (for the excellency of it) divided from the world (*divisus ab orbe*

¹ Mr. Archdeacon Nares has clearly proved that Spruce is an old name for Prussia, probably corrupted from Pruse, which is often found. Spruce leather, says Phillips in his "World of Words," is corruptly so called for Prussian leather; the Spruce fir, says Evelyn in his *Sylva*, is the Prussian fir; Spruce beer is a beverage made from that fir; and "the adjective meaning neat, smart, &c. originated either from the Spruce leather, which was an article of finery, or from the neatness of the Spruce fir."—"The land of Spruce" Mr. Nares does not seem to have met with; it must be understood as the land where every thing was elegant and delightful. Mr. Todd has found *sprusado* as a term for a beau. N.

Britannus), and that, though the whole world besides moves, yet this Ile stands fixt on her owne feete, and defies the world's mutability, which this rare accident of the arrivall of Riches, in one of his furthest-off-scituate dominions, most demonstratively proves.

PLUTUS. This is a Man of Wit indeede, and knows of all our arrivals.

CAPRICCIO. With this dull Deity Riches, a rich Iland lying in the South sea, called Pæana (of the Pæans or songs sung to the Sun, whom they adore) being, for strength and riches, called the Navill of that South sea, is by Earth's round motion mov'd neere this Brittan shore; in which Island, beeing yet in command of the Virginian continent, a troupe of the noblest Virginians inhabiting, attended hether the God of Riches all triumphantly shyning in a mine of gould. For, hearing of the most Royal solemnity of these sacred Nuptialls, they crost the ocean in their honor, and are here arriv'd. A poore snatch at some of the goulden ore, that the feete of Riches have turn'd up as she trod here, my poore hand hath purchast; and hope the remainder of a greater worke wilbe shortly extant.

PLUTUS. You, Sir, that are miching¹ about my goulden mine here.

CAPRICCIO. What! can you see, Sir? you have heretofore beene presented blinde, like your mother Fortune and your brother Love.

PLUTUS. But now, Sir, you see I see.

CAPRICCIO. By what good meanes, I beseech you, Sir?

PLUTUS. That meanes I may vouchsafe you hereafter; meane space, what are you?

CAPRICCIO. I am, Sir, a kinde of man; a Man of Wit; with whom your worship has nothing to do, I thinke.

PLUTUS. No, Sir, nor will have any thing to doe with him. A Man of Wit! what's that? a beggar?

CAPRICCIO. And yet no divell, Sir.

PLUTUS. As I am, you meane.

CAPRICCIO. Indeede, Sir, your kingdome is under the earth.

PLUTUS. That's true, for Riches is the Atlas that holdes it up, it would sink else.

CAPRICCIO. 'Tis rather a wonder, it sinks not with you, Sir, y'are so sinfully and damnably heavy.

¹ That is going by stealth, as a truant. To *miche* is from the French, and used by Chaucer and Gower as meaning to pilfer. See Todd and Nares. N.

PLUTUS. Sinfull and damnable! what a Puritane! These bellows you weare on your head, shew with what matter your braine is pufft up, Sir? A religion-forger I see you are, and presume of inspiration from these bellows; with which yee study to blow up the setled governments of kingdomes.

CAPRICCIO. Your worship knocks at a wrong dore, Sir; I dwell farre from the person you speak of.

PLUTUS. What may you be then, beeing a Man of Wit? a buffon, a jester? Before I would take upon mee the title of a Man of Wit, and bee baff'd by every man of wisdom for a buffon, I would turne banckrout, or set up a tobacco-shop, change clokes with an alchemist, or serve an usurer, bee a watering-po[s]t to every groome, stand the push of every rascall wit, enter lists of jests with trencher-fooles, and bee foold downe by them, or (which is worse) put them downe in fooling; are these the qualities a Man of Wit should run proud of?

CAPRICCIO. Your worship, I see, has obtained wit with sight, which I hope yet my poor wit will well be able to answer; for, touching my jesting, I have heard of some Courtiers that have run themselves out of their 'states with justing; and why may not I then raise my selfe in the State with jesting? An honest shoemaker, in a liberal King's time, was knighted for making a cleane boote, and is it impossible, that I, for breaking a cleane jest, should bee advaunc't in Courte or Counsaile? or at least served out for an Ambassador to a dull climate? Jest and merriments are but wild weedes in a rank soile, which being well manured, yield the wholsom crop of wisdom and discretion at time o' th' yeare.

PLUTUS. Nay, nay, I commend thy judgement for cutting thy cote so juste to the bredth of thy shoulders; he that cannot be a courser in the field, let him learn to play the jack-an-apes in the chamber; hee that cannot personate the wise man well amongst wisards¹, let him learne to play the foole well amongst dizzards.

CAPRICCIO. 'Tis passing miraculous, that your dull and blind worship should so sodainly turne both sightfull and witfull.

PLUTUS. The riddle of that miracle I may chance dissolve to you in sequell; meane time, what name sustain'st thou? and what toies are these thou bear'st so phantastically about thee?

¹ Wizard in its original sense meant only a wise man. Of this Mr. Nares gives other examples:—Milton calls the wise men of the East *wisards*: "The star-led *wisards* rise with odours sweet." Ode on the Nativity, V. 23. N.

CAPRICCIO. These toies, Sir, are the ensigns that discover my name and qualitie; my name being Capriccio, and I wear these bellows on my head, to shew I can puffe up with glory all those that affect mee; and besides beare this spurre, to shew I can spur-gall even the best that contemne me.

PLUTUS. A dangerous fellowe! But what makest thou, poore Man of Wit, at these pompous Nuptials?

CAPRICCIO. Sir, I come hether with a charge; to doe these Nuptials, I hope, very acceptable service; and my charge is a company of accomplit travailers, that are excellent at Ante-masks, and will tender a tast of their quallity, if your worship please.

PLUTUS. Excellent well pleased; of what virtue are they besides.

CAPRICCIO. Passing grave, Sir, yet exceeding acute; witty, yet not ridiculous; never laugh at their owne jests; laborious, yet not base; having cut out the whole world in amorous quest of your gould and silver.

PLUTUS. They shall have enough; call them, I beseech thee, call them; how farre hence abide they?

CAPRICCIO. Sir, being by another eminent qualitie the admired souldiers of the world, in contempt of softness and delicacie, they lie on the naturally hard boords of that naked tree. And will your worship assure them rewards fit for persons of their freight?

PLUTUS. Dost thou doubt my reward, being pleased?

CAPRICCIO. I know, Sir, a man may sooner win our reward for pleasing you than deserving you. But you great wise persons have a fetch of State, to employ with countenance and encouragement, but reward with answers¹ and disgrace; save your purposes² and lose your honours.

PLUTUS. To assure thee of reward, I will now satisfie thee touching the miraculous cause both of my sight and wit, and which consequently moves mee to humanity and bounty; and all is onely this,—my late being in love with the lovely Goddess Honor.

CAPRICCIO. If your worshipp love Honor, indeed, Sir, you must needes be bountifull, but where is the rare Goddess you speake of to be seene?

PLUTUS. In that rich temple, where Fortune fixt those her goulden wings thou seest; and that rowling stone she used to tread upon, for signe shee would never forsake this Kingdom; there is ador'd the worthy Goddess Honor. The

¹ *i. e.* excuses. N.

² Your pockets, as we now say; perhaps a misprint for *purses*. N.

sweetnes of whose voice, when I first heard her perswasions, both to myself and the Virginian Princes arriv'd here, to doe honor and homage to these heavenly Nuptialls, so most powerfully enamoured mee, that the fire of my love flew up to the sight of mine eyes; that have lighted within me a whole firmament of bounty, which may seemingly¹ assure thee thy reward is certaine. And therefore call thy accomlisht company to their Ante-maske².

CAPRICCIO. See, Sir, the time set for their appearance being expired, they appeare to their service of themselves.

Enter the baboones, after whose dance, being anticke and delightful, they returned to their tree, when PLUTUS spake to CAPRICCIO.

PLUTUS. Gramercy³, now, Capriccio, take thy men of complement, and tra-vaile with them to other Marriages. My riches to thy wit, they will get something somewhere.

CAPRICCIO. What's this?

PLUTUS. A straine of wit beyond a Man of Wit. I have imployed you; and the grace of that is reward enough; hence, packe, with your complemental fardle⁴. The sight of an attendant for reward is abominable in the eyes of a turne-served politician, and I feare will strike me blind againe. I can not abide these bellows of thy head, they and thy Men of Wit have melted my mines with them, and consumed me; yet take thy life and begone. Neptune let thy predecessor Ulysses live after all his slaine companions, but to make him die more miserably living; gave him up to shipwrack, enchantments; Men of Wit are but enchanted, there is no such thing as wit in this world. So take a tree, inure thy souldiers to hardnes, 'tis honorable, though not clinkant.

CAPRICCIO. Can this be possible?

PLUTUS. Alas! poore Man of Wit, how want of reward daunts thy vertue? But, because I must send none away discontented from these all-pleasing Nuptialls, take this wedge of golde, and wedge thyselfe into the world with it, renouncing that loose wit of thine, 'twill spoile thy complexion.

¹ That is *clearly*. N.

² See a note on Antemaskes or Antimasques in Ben Jonson's "Mercury Vindicated" printed hereafter. N.

³ A well-known exclamation, from the French *grand merci*. See Nares. N.

⁴ A fardle is a burden or pack, from the low Latin *fardellus*, whence the Italian *fardello*, the French *fardeau*, and Dutch *fardeel*. Shakspeare uses this word; see Nares's Glossary. Herrick in his Poems, p. 298, says,

"Other men's sins we ever beare in mind,
None sees the *fardel* of his faults behind." N.

CAPRICCIO. Honor and all Argus' eyes to Earth's all-commanding Riches.
Pluto etiam cedit Jupiter.

[Exit CAPRICCIO.]

*After this lowe Induction by these succeeding degrees, the
chiefe Maskers were advanct to their discoverie.*

PLUTUS. These humble objects can no high eyes drawe,
Eunomia¹, or the sacred power of Lawe,
Daughter of Jove, and Goddess Honor's Priest,
Appear to Plutus, and his Love assist.

EUNOMIA. What would the God of Riches?

PLUTUS. Joine with Honor
In purpos'd grace of these great Nuptials;
And since to Honor none should dare accesse,
But helpt by Vertue's hand (thy selfe, chaste Love,
Being Vertue's rule, and her directfull right),
Help me to th' honor of her speech and sight.

EUNOMIA. Thy will shall straight be honour'd; all that seek
Accesse to Honor by cleer Vertue's beame,
Her grace prevents their pains, and comes to them.

*Loud musick; and HONOR appears, descending with her Herrald PHEMIS, and
EUNOMIA (her Priest) before her. The musique ceasing, PLUTUS spake:*

PLUTUS. Crowne of all merit, Goddess, and my Love!
'Tis now high time, that th'end from which we come
Should be endeavor'd in our utmost right,
Done to the sweetnes of this Nuptiall night.

HONOR. Plutus, the Princes of the Virgine land,
Whom I made crosse the Britain ocean
To this most famed Ile of all the world,
To do due homage to the sacred Nuptials
Of Law and Vertue, celebrated here,
By this howre of the holy eve I know
Are ready to perform the rights they owe
To setting Phœbus; which (for greater State
To their appearance) their first act advances,
And with songs ushers their succeeding dances,
Herrald! give summons to the Virgine Knights,
No longer to delay their purpos'd rites.

¹ Plutus calls Eunomia in the Temple-gates.

HERALD. Knights of the Virgine Land, whom Bewtie's lights
 Would glorifie with their inflaming sights;
 Keep now obscur'd no more your faire intent,
 To adde your beames to this night's ornament,
 The golden-winged Howre strikes now a-plaine¹,
 And calls out all the pompe ye entertaine;
 The Princely Bride-grome, and the Bride's bright eyes
 Sparkle with grace to your discoveries.

At these words, the Phæbades, or Priests of the Sunne, appear'd first with six lutes and sixe voices, and sung to the opening of the Mine and Maskers' discovery, this full Song.

THE FIRST SONG.

*Ope, Earth, thy wombe of golde;
 Shew, Heaven, thy cope of starres;
 All glad aspects unfolde,
 Shine out, and cleere our cares!
 Kisse, Heaven and Earth, and so combine
 In all mixt joy our Nuptiall twine.*

This Song ended, a Mount opened and spred like a skie, in which appear'd a Sunne setting; beneath which sate the Twelve Maskers, in a mine of gold, twelve Torch-bearers holding their torches before them, after which HONOR [spake as follows]:

HONOR. See now the setting sun casts up his bank
 And shoves his bright head at his seas repaire,
 For signe that all daies future shall be faire.

PLUTUS. May he that rules all nightes and dayes confirme it!

HONOR. Behold the sunne's faire Priests, the Phæbades,
 Their evening service in an hymne addresse
 To Phæbus setting; which we now shall heare,
 And see the formes of their devotions there.

The Phæbades sing the first stance [stanza] of the second Song, ut sequitur:

One alone. *Descend, faire Sun, and sweetly rest
 In Tethis' cristal armes thy toyle,
 Fall burning on her marble brest,
 And make with love her billows boyle.*

¹ The particle *a*, now used only with participles as *a-walking*, *a-fishing*, &c. was formerly used with nouns and adjectives. In Shakspeare's *Macbeth* we find another instance like the present of its being employed in poetical composition for the sake of rhythm alone: "I 'gin to be a-weary of the sun." N.

Another alone. *Blow, blow, sweet windes, oh, blow away
All vapours from the 'fined ayre,
That to his golden head no ray
May languish with the least empaire.*

Chorus. *Dance, Tethis, and thy Love's red beames
Embrace with joy; he now descends,
Burnes, burnes with love to drinke thy streames,
And on him endles youth attends.*

After this stance, HONOR [speakes as follows] :

HONOR. *This superstitious hymne, sung to the sunne,
Let us encounter with fit duties done
To our cleere Phœbus, whose true piety
Enjoyes from Heaven an earthly deity.*

*Other musique and voyces; and the second stance was
sung, directing their observance to the King.*

One alone. *Rise, rise, O Phœbus, ever rise,
Descend not to th' inconstant streame,
But grace with endles light our skyes;
To thee that Sun is but a beame!*

Another. *Dance, Ladies, in our Sunne's bright rayes,
In which the Bride and Bridegroom shine;
Cleere sable night with your eyes' dayes,
And set firme lights on Hymen's shrine.*

Chorus. *O may our Sun not set before,
He sees his endles seed arise,
And deck his triple-crowned shore
With springs of humane deities.*

This ended, the Phœbades sung the third stance :

One. *Set, set, great Sun, our rising love
Shall ever celebrate thy grace;
Whom entring the high court of Jove
Each God greetes rising from his place.*

Another. *When thou thy silver bow dost bend,
All start aside and dread thy draughtes;
How can we thee enough commend,
Commanding all worlds with thy shafts?*

Chorus. *Blest was thy mother bearing thee,
And Phœbe that delights in darts;
Thou artful Songes dost set; and shee
Winds horns, loves hounds, and high-palm'd harts.*

After this HONOR:

HONOR. *Againe our musique, and conclude the song
To him, to whom all Phœbus' beames belong.*

The other voyces sung to other musicke the third stance:

*Rise still, cleere Sun, and never set,
But be to earth her only light;
All other Kings in thy beames met
Are cloudes and darke effects of night.*

*As when the rosie morne doth rise,
Like mists, all give thy wisdoms waie;
A learned King is as in skies
To poore dimme stars the flaming day!*

Chorus. *Blest was thy mother bearing thee,
Thee only relick of her race,
Made by thy vertue's beames a tree,
Whose armes shall all the earth embrace.*

This done, EUNOMIA, spake to the Maskers, set yet above:

EUNOMIA. *Virginian Princes, ye must now renounce
Your superstitious worship of the sunne,
Subject to cloudy darknings and descents;
And of your sweet devotions turne the events
To this our Britain Phœbus, whose bright skie,
Enlightened with a christian piety,
Is never subject to black error's night,
And hath already offer'd Heaven's true light
To your darke region; which acknowledge now,
Descend and to him all your homage vow.*

*With this the Torch-bearers descended, performed another Ante-maske, dancing
with torches lighted at both ends; which done, the Maskers descended, and
fell into their Dances, two of which being past, and others with the Ladies.*

HONOR. *Musique! your voyces now tune sweet and hie,
And singe the Nuptiall Hymn of Love and Beauty¹,*

¹ The Bride and Bridegroom were figured in Love and Beauty, twinns of which Hippocrates speakes; and are called twynns being both of an age.

Twinns, as of one age, so to one desire
 May both their bloods give an unparted fire.
 And as those twinns, that Fame gives all her prize,
 Combin'd their life's power in such sympathies,
 That one being merry, mirth the other gract ;
 If one felt sorrow, th' other grieve embrac't ;
 If one were healthfull, health the other pleas'd ;
 If one were sick, the other was diseas'd ;
 And allwaies joyned in such a constant troth
 That one like cause had like effect in both ;
 So may these Nuptiall Twynnes their whole lives' store
 Spend in such even parts, ne'er grieving more
 Then may the more set off their joyes divine ;
 As after clouds the sun doth clearest shine.

This sayd, this Song of Love and Bewty was sung, single :

*Bright Panthea, borne to Pan,
 Of the noblest race of man,
 Her white hand to Eros giving,
 With a kisse join'd Heaven to Earth ;
 And begot so faire a birth,
 As yet never gract the living.*

Chorus. *A twinne that all worlds did adorne,
 For so were Love and Bewty borne.*

*Both so lov'd, they did contend
 Which the other should transcend,
 Doing either grace and kindnes ;
 Love from Bewty did remove
 Lightnes, called her staine in love,
 Bewtie took from Love his blindness.*

Chorus. *Love's sparks made flames in Bewtie's skie,
 And Bewtie blew up Love as hie.*

*Virtue then commixt her fire,
 To which Bountie did aspire,
 Innocence a crowne conferring ;
 " Mine" and " thine" were then vnusde,
 All things common, nought abusde,
 Freely Earth her frutage bearing.*

Chorus. *Nought then was car'd for that could fade,
 And thus the Golden World was made.*

This sung, the Maskers danc't againe with the Ladies, after which HONOR spake :

HONOR. Now may the blessings of the golden age
Swimme in these Nuptials, e'en to holy rage,
A hymn to Sleep prefer and all the joyes
That in his empire are of dearest choice,
Betwixt his golden slumbers ever flow
In these, and theirs in springs as endless growe.

This sayd, the last Song was sung full.

THE LAST SONG.

*Now, Sleepe, binde fast the flood of ayre,
Strike all things dumb and deafe,
And to disturbe our Nuptiall Paire
Let stir no aspen leafe.
Send flocks of golden dreames
That all true joyes presage ;
Bring in thy oyly streames
The milke and hony age.
Now close the world-round sphere of blisse,
And fill it with a heavenly kisse!*

After this, PLUTUS to the Maskers :

PLUTUS. Come, Virgine Knights, the homage ye have done
To Love and Bewty, and our Britan Sun,
Kinde Honor will requite with holy feasts
In her faire temple, and her loved guests
Gives mee the grace t' initiate, when she and I,
Honor and Riches, will eternally
A league in favour of this night combine,
In which Love's second hallowed tapers shine ;
Whose joies may Heaven and Earth as highly please
As those two nights that got great Hercules !

*The Speech ended ; they concluded with a Dance, that brought them off ; PLUTUS
with HONOR and the rest conducted them up to the Temple of Honor.*



A HYMNE TO HYMEN

*for the most time-fitted Nuptialls of our thrice gracious
Princesse ELIZABETH, &c.*

*Singe, singe a rapture on all Nuptiall eares,
Bright Hymen's torche has drunke up Parcae's tears ;
Sweet Hymen, Hymen, mightiest of Gods,
Attoning of all-taming bloods the odds ;
Two into one contracting, one to two
Dilating, which no other God can doe ;
Mak'st sure with change, and let'st the married try
Of man and woman the variety.
And as a flower halfe scorcht with daies long heate,
Thirsts for refreshing with night's cooling sweate,
The wings of Zephire fanning still her face,
No chere can add to her heart-thirsty grace ;
Yet weares she 'gainst those fires that make her fade,
Her thicke hayr's prooffe all hyd in midnight's shade ;
Her helth is all in dewes, hope all in showres,
Whose want bewailde, she pines in all her powres :
So love-scorcht virgines nourish quenchless fires ;
The father's cares, the mother's kind desires,
Their gould and garments of the newest guise,
Can nothing comfort their scorcht phantasies,
But, taken ravisht up in Hymen's armes,
His circule holds, for all their anguish, charms.
Then, as a glad graft in the spring-sunne shines,
That all the helps of Earth and Heaven combines
In her sweet growth, puts in the morning on
Her cherefull ayres, the sunne's rich fires at nocne,
At eve the sweete dewes, and at night with stars
In all their vertuous influences shares ;
So in the Bridegroom's sweet embrace the Bride
All varied joies tastes in their naked pride :
To which the richest weedes¹ are weedes to flowres.
Come, Hymen, then ; come close these Nuptial howres
With all yeares' comforts ; come, each virgin keepes
Her odorous kisses for thee ; goulden sleepes
Will in their humors never steepe an eie,
Till thou invit'st them with thy harmony.
Why staiest thou ? see each virgin doth prepare
Embraces for thee ; her white breasts laies bare
To tempt thy soft hand ; lets such glances flie
As makes starres shoote, to imitate her eye.*

¹ An error in the original ; read perhaps gems. N.

Puts Art's attire on, that puts Nature's downe :
Sings, dances, sets on every foote a crowne.
Sighes in her songs, and dancing kisseth ayre
Till, rites and words past, thou in deeds repaire !
The whole Court " Io ! " sings, " Io ! " the ayre,
" Io ! " the flouds and fields, " Io ! most faire,
Most sweet, most happy Hymen ! ' come away,
With all thy comforts come, old matrons pray
With young maides' langours ; birds bill, build, and breed,
To teach thee thy kinde, every flowre and weed
Looks up to gratulate thy long'd-for fruites,
Thrice given are free and timely-granted suites ¹.
There is a seed by thee now to be sowne,
In whose fruit Earth shall see her glories shown,
At all parts perfect, and must therefore lose
No minute's time, from time's use all fruites flows ;
And as the tender hyacinth, that growes
Where Phebus most his golden beames bestowes,
Is propt with care, is water'd every howre,
The sweet windes adding their encreasing powre,
The scatter'd drops of night's refreshing dew
Hasting the full grace of his glorious hue,
Which, once disclosing, must be gather'd straight,
Or hue and odor both will lose their height ;
So, of a virgine, high and richly kept,
The grace and sweetnes full-growne must be reap't,
Or forth her spirits fly in empty ayre,
The sooner fading the more sweet and fair !
Gentle, O gentle Hymen, be not then
Cruell, that kindest art to maids and men,
These two one twynn are, and their mutuall blisse,
Not in thy beames, but in thy bosome is.
Nor can their hands fast their harts' joyes make sweete ;
Their harts in brests are, and their brests must meete.
Let there be peace, yet murmur ; and that noise
Beget of peace the Nuptiall battaile's joyes.
Let peace grow cruell and take wrake of all,
The war's delay brought thy full festivall.

Harke, harke, oh now the sweet twyn murmur sounds,
Hymen is come, and all his heat abounds ;
Shut all dores, none but Hymen's lights advance,
No sounds styr, let dumb Joy enjoy a trance.
Sing, sing a rapture to all nuptiall eares,
Bright Hymen's torche has drunke up Parcae's teares !

¹ This exceeds the Latin proverb, " Bis dat, qui cito dat." N.

On the morning of Tuesday February 16, a Sermon¹ was preached at Whitehall by the Bishop of London, Dr. John King². On the evening of the same day, the Masque of two other Inns of Court was to have taken place. Accordingly they went by water to Whitehall; but, as described in the ensuing letter of Mr. Chamberlain, were put off for some days, the King being quite tired out. For the Water Shew, Mr. Phineas Pette was employed.

"After the Sea-fight was performed," continues he, "I was intreated by diverse Gentlemen of the Inns of Court, whereof Sir Francis Bacon was chief, to attend the bringing of a Masque by water to Whitehall, in some of the gallies. But, the tide falling out very contrary, and the company attending the Masquers very unruly, it could not be performed so exactly as purposed and expected; but yet they were safely landed at the Privy Stairs at Whitehall; for which my paines the Gentlemen gave me a faire recompence³."

The following Letter, from the valuable and often-quoted correspondence of Mr. Chamberlain to Sir Dudley Carleton, affords at once an epitome of and critique upon the preceding exhibitions. It appears to have been written on Thursday the 18th of February, two days after the Water Show last mentioned:

"On Thursday night [the 11th] the Fire-workes were reasonably well performed, all save the last Castle of fire, which bred most expectation, and had most devices; but, when it came to execution, had worst success. On Saturday likewise the Fight upon the water came short of that show and brags had been made of it. But they pretend the best to be behind, and left for another day, which was the winning of the Castle on land. But the King and all the Company took so little delight to see no other activity but shooting and potting⁴ of guns, that it is quite given over, and the Navy unrigged, and the Castle pulled down, the rather for that there were divers hurt in the former Fight, as one lost both his eyes; another both his hands; another one hand; with divers others maimed and hurt. So that, to avoid further harm, it was thought best to let it alone. And this is the conclusion of all this preparation, with so much expense of powder and money

¹ Published in 1614 under the title of "Vitis Palatina; a Sermon appointed to be preached at Whitehall upon the Tuesday after the Marriage of the Lady Elizabeth," on Psalm xxviii, 3, mentioned by Wood (Athenæ, by Bliss, vol. II. col. 295).—That Dr. King preached two days after this Marriage, accounts for Mr. Finett's error (noticed in p. 546) respecting the preacher on that occasion.

² See vol. I. p. 532; and this Volume, pp. 96, 212.

³ Harl. MSS. 6279.

⁴ This word is explained by Mr. Archdeacon Nares, as meaning the same as *capping* Latin verses; he gives the following example from Stow's Survey as the only one he had met with: "The boies of divers schooles did cap or *potte* verses."

which amounted to no less than £.9,000.; so that according to the proverb, *parturiunt montes*, &c.

“ On Sunday I was fetched from Paul's, where I was at the Sermon, to see the Bride go to Church; and though it were past 10 o'clock before we came there, yet we found a whole window reserved in the Jewel-house, which was over against her coming down a pair of stairs out of the gallery in the preaching-place to a long stage or gallery made along the Court into the Hall; so that we had as much view as a short passage could give; but the excess of bravery, and the continual succession of new company did so dazzle me, that I could not observe the tenth part of what I wished. The Bridegroom and Bride were both in a suit of cloth of silver richly embroidered with silver; her train carried up by thirteen young Ladies, or Lords' daughters at least, besides five or six more that could not come near it. These were all in the same livery as the Bride, though not so rich. The King and Queen both followed; the Queen all in white, but not very rich, saving in jewels; the King, me thought, was somewhat strangely attired, in a cap and feathers, with a Spanish cope and a long stocking¹.

“ The next morning the King went to visit these young couple that were coupled on St. Valentine's-day, and did strictly examine him whether he were a true son-in-law, and was sufficiently assured. That afternoon the King, Prince, Count Palatine, with others, ran at the ring; and when that was ended, and the King and Prince gone, the Palsgrave mounted upon a high bounding horse, which he managed so like a horseman that he was exceedingly commended, and had many shouts and acclamations of the beholders; and indeed I never saw any of his age come near him in that exercise². It were long and tedious to tell you all the particulars of the excessive bravery both of men and women, but you may conceive the rest by one or two. The Lady Wotton had a gown that cost £.50 a yard the embroidering; I hear the Earl of Northumberland's daughter was very gallant; and the Lord Montacute, that hath paid reasonably well for recusancy, bestowed £.15,000 in apparel for his two daughters. The Viscount Rochester, the Lord Hay, and the Lord Dingwall, were rich and costly; but above all they speak of the Earl of Dorset. But this extreme cost and riches makes us all poor!

“ On Monday night was the Middle Temple and Lincoln's Inn Mask presented in the Hall at Court; whereas the Lords' was in the Banqueting-room. It went from the Rolls all up Fleet-street and the Strand, and made a gallant and glorious shew that is highly commended. They had forty Gentlemen of best choice out

¹ The remainder of Mr. Chamberlain's account of this day has been already inserted in notes on the Marriage.

² Poor Prince Henry was already forgotten!

of both Houses, and the twelve Maskers with their Torch-bearers and Pages rode likewise upon horses exceedingly well trapped and furnished; besides a dozen little boys dressed like baboons that served for an anti-mask, and they say performed it exceedingly well when they came to it; and three open chariots drawn with four horses apiece, that carried their musicians and other personages that had parts to speak. All which, together with the Trumpeters and other Attendants, were so well set out, that it is generally held for the best shew that hath been seen many a day. The King stood in the Gallery to behold them, and made them ride about the Tilt-yard; and then they were received into St. James's Park, and so out all along the Galleries into the Hall, where themselves, and the devises, which, they say, were excellent, made such a glittering shew, that the King and all the Company were exceedingly pleased, and especially with their dancing, which was beyond that hath been seen yet. The King made the Maskers kiss his hand at parting, and gave them many thanks, saying, 'he never saw so many proper men together;' and himself accompanied them to the Banquet, and took care it should be well ordered, and spake much of them behind their backs, and stroked the Master of the Rolls [see p. 566] and Dick Martin¹, who were the chief doers and undertakers.

"On Tuesday it came to Gray's Inn and the Inner Temple's turn to come with their Mask, whereof Sir Francis Bacon was the chief contriver; and because the former came on horseback and open chariots, they made choice to come by water from Winchester-place in Southwark, which suited well with their device, which was the Marriage of the River of Thames to Rhine; and their shew by water was very gallant by reason of infinite store of lights very curiously set and placed; and many boats and barges with devices of light of lamps with three peals of ordnance, one at their taking water, another in the Temple-garden, and the last at their landing; which passage by water cost them better than £.300. They were received at the Privy Stairs; a great expectation there was that they should every way excel their competitors that went before them, both in devise, daintiness of apparel, and, above all, in dancing, wherein they are held excellent, and esteemed the properer men. But by what ill planet it fell out I know not; they came home as they went without doing any thing; the reason whereof I cannot

¹ The celebrated Richard Martin, who addressed the King in behalf of the City on his Majesty's first entrance into London, (see vol. I. p. 113, and the Appendix to that Volume) and by whose facetiousness his Sovereign is said to have been at all times much delighted. In a Latin character of him he is said to have been "*Amor Principum, Principum Amor*," in allusion to his having been the Prince d'Amour of the Middle Temple in the Christmas Revels.

yet learn thoroughly, but only that the Hall was so full that it was not possible to avoid it, or make room for them; besides that most of the Ladies were in the Galleries to see them land, and could not get in. But the worst of all was, that the King was so wearied and sleepy with setting up almost two whole nights before, that he had no edge to it. Whereupon Sir Francis Bacon¹ ventured to entreat his Majesty, that by this disgrace he would not as it were bury them quick; and I hear the King should answer, that then they must bury him quick, for he could last no longer; but withall gave them very good words, and appointed them to come again on Saturday. But the grace of the Mask is quite gone, when their apparel hath been already showed, and their devises vented, so that how it will fall out God knows; for they are much discouraged and out of countenance, and the world says it comes to pass after the old proverb, 'the properer men the worse luck.' One thing I had almost forgotten for haste, that all this time there was a course taken and sanctified, that no Lady or Gentleman should be admitted to any of these sights with a vardingale, which was to gain more room, and I hope may serve to make them quite left off in time². And yet there were more scaffolds and more provision made for room than ever I saw, both in the Hall and Banqueting-room, besides a new room built to dine, sup, and dance in."

On the Saturday, however, the disappointed Lawyers with great success exhibited their Masque, the production of Francis Beaumont³; and were much encouraged by permission to perform it in the Banqueting-house.

¹ A strong proof of the interest Sir Francis Bacon took in the honour of his Inn and its festivities is a Letter which is printed in "*Queen Elizabeth's Progresses*," vol. I. p. xxi. He regrets therein the failure of a joint Masque from the four Inns of Court, and informs his correspondent that (doubtless through his persuasion) a dozen gallant young Gentlemen of Gray's Inn had determined to furnish one of their own. That Masque, which was acted before Queen Elizabeth at Court in 1594, was published in the *Gesta Grayorum*, and is re-printed in "*Queen Elizabeth's Progresses*," III. 309.—See also particularly at the Earl of Somerset's Marriage in December 1613.

² The Author of the "*First Fourteen years of King James*" says, this Proclamation against Farthingales was to "little purpose, for they rather increased than diminished; for where a thing is once grown into a habit, it is hard to retrain it."

³ Francis Beaumont, the celebrated dramatic writer and fellow labourer of Fletcher, was the third son of Sir Francis Beaumont, Judge of the Common Pleas, and born at Gracedieu in Leicestershire in 1586. In 1596 he was entered a Gentlemen Commoner of Broadgate Hall, now Pembroke College, Oxford; whither he was accompanied by his brothers Henry and John, the latter afterwards a Baronet. It is remarkable that there were four Francis Beaumonts of this family all living in 1615, and of these at least three were poetical; the subject of the present note; his cousin, Master of the Charter House; and his nephew, a Jesuit. The great Francis Beaumont was a Student in the Inner Temple; he was in his twenty-sixth year at the time the Masque here re-printed was produced. His

THE MASQUE OF THE INNER TEMPLE AND GRAY'S INN, GRAY'S INN AND THE INNER TEMPLE;

PRESENTED BEFORE

HIS MAJESTY, THE QUEEN'S MAJESTY,
THE PRINCE COUNT PALATINE AND THE LADY ELIZABETH THEIR HIGHNESSES,

IN THE BANQUETING-HOUSE AT WHITEHALL ON SATURDAY THE 20TH DAY OF FEBRUARY 1612-13¹.

By MR. FRANCIS BEAUMONT.

DEDICATION.

To the worthy Sir FRANCIS BACON, his Majesty's Solicitor General; and the grave and learned Bench of the anciently-allied Houses of GRAY'S INN and the INNER TEMPLE, the INNER TEMPLE and GRAY'S INN.

You that spared no time nor travail in the setting forth, ordering, and furnishing² of this Masque, (being the first fruits of honour in this kind, which these application to the law could never have been very intense; his works show how his days were spent; the production of his numerous poems and plays must have fully occupied a life not exceeding thirty years. He died early in March 1615-16; and was buried in Westminster Abbey. I have devoted some pages in the third volume of my History of Leicestershire to the lives and poems of all the Beaumonts, and in p. *662 will be found portraits of the Dramatic Writer, and of another Francis Beaumont, whom I consider to be his nephew the Jesuit.

¹ This Masque is here taken from the edition of the works of Beaumont and Fletcher published in 1778, where it was printed from the quarto edition published at the time. It is there justly remarked that "all the other copies of it," of which that in the English Poets is one, "are extremely erroneous and imperfect. None of the descriptive parts are inserted in them; and to point out the blunders and other omissions would require almost as many notes as the Masque contains lines." The quarto edition I have not myself seen, nor can I trace the owner of a copy. The insertions within brackets in the Introduction are from Howes' Chronicle. N.

² To liquidate the charge in apparel for the actors, the Readers at Gray's Inn were assessed each man at £.4; the Ancients, and such as at that time were to be called Ancients, at £.2. 10s. apiece; the Barristers at £.2. a man; and the Students at 20s. out of which so much was to be taken as the Inner Temple did then allow. Which being performed, there was an order made 18 Maii then next following, 'That the Gentlemen who were actors in that Masque, should bring in all their Masquing Apparell, as provided at the charge of the House.' For the Masque at Christmas 1634-5 (mentioned in p. 566) which was presented to the King at the equal charges of the Four Inns of Court, every Bencher contributed £.5, every Utter Barrister of seven years standing, £.2. 10s. every Gentlemen under the Bar 20s.; besides several Officers larger sums. *Origines Juridiciales*, p. 150.

two Societies have offered to his Majesty), will not think much now to look back upon the effects of your own care and work; for that whereof the success was then doubtful, is now happily performed and graciously accepted; and that which you were then to think of in straits of time, you may now peruse at leisure. And you, Sir Francis Bacon, especially, as you did then advance it, so let your good word grace it and defend it, which is able to add value to the greatest and least matters.

INTRODUCTION.

This Masque was appointed to have been presented the Shrove Tuesday before, at which time the Masquers with their Attendants, and divers gallant young Gentlemen of both Houses as their convoy, set forth from Winchester House (which was the rendezvous), towards the Court, about seven of the clock at night [and rowed to Whitehall against the tide]. This voyage by water was performed in great triumph; the Gentlemen Masquers being placed by themselves in the King's Royal barge, with the rich furniture of state, and adorned with a great number of [great wax] lights placed in such order as might make best show. They were attended with [others in the Prince's barge and] a multitude of barges and gallies, with all variety of loud musick and several peals of ordnance¹; and led by two Admirals. Of this Show his Majesty was graciously pleased to take view, with the Prince, the Count Palatine and the Lady Elizabeth their Highnesses, at the windows of his Privy Gallery, upon the water, till their landing, which was at the Privy Stairs; where they were most honourably received by the Lord Chamberlain, and so conducted to the Vestry.

The Hall was by that time filled with company of very good fashion; but yet so as a very great number of principal Ladies and other noble persons were not yet come in, whereby it was foreseen that the room would be so scanted as might have been inconvenient; and thereupon his Majesty was most graciously pleased, with the consent of the Gentlemen Masquers, to put off the night until Saturday following, with this special favour and privilege, that there should be no let as to the outward ceremony of magnificence until that time. At the day it was presented, there was a choice room reserved for both their Houses, who coming in troop² about seven of the clock, received that special honour and noble favour as to be brought to their places by the right honourable the Earl of Northampton, Lord Privy Seal.

¹ "In three severall places," as Howes says;—see p. 589. N. ² Privately; Howes. N.

THE DEVISE, OR ARGUMENT.

Jupiter and Juno, willing to do honour to the Marriage of the two famous Rivers, Thamesis and Rhine, employ their messengers severally, Mercury and Iris, for that purpose. They meet and contend; then Mercury, for his part, springs forth an anti-masque¹ all of spirits or divine natures; but yet not of one kind or livery (because that had been so much in use heretofore); but, as it were, in consort, like to broken music. And preserving the propriety of the Devise, for that Rivers in nature are maintained either by springs from beneath, or showers from above, he raiseth four of the Naiades out of the fountains, and bringeth down fire of the Hyades out of the clouds to dance. Hereupon Iris scoffs at Mercury, for that he had devised a Dance but of one sex, which could have no life; but Mercury who was provided for that exception, and in token that the Match should be blessed both in love and riches, calleth forth out of the groves four Cupids, and brings down from Jupiter's altar four statues of gold and silver to dance with the Nymphs and Stars. In which Dance, the Cupids being blind and the statues having but half-life put into them, and retaining still somewhat of their old nature, giveth fit occasion to new and strange varieties both in the music and paces. This was the First Anti-masque.

Then Iris, for her part, in scorn of this high-flying Devise, and in token that the Match should likewise be blessed with the love of the common people, calls to Flora, her confederate (for that the months of flowers are likewise the months of sweet showers and rainbows), to bring in a May dance, or rural dance, consisting likewise not of any suited persons, but of a confusion or commixture of all such persons as are natural and proper for country sports. This is the Second Anti-masque.

Then Mercury and Iris, after this vieing one upon the other, seem to leave their contention; and Mercury, by the consent of Iris, brings down the Olympian Knights, intimating that Jupiter having, after a long discountenance, revived the Olympian Games, and summoned thereunto from all parts the liveliest and activest persons that were, had enjoined them, before they fell to their Games, to do honour to these Nuptials. The Olympian Games portend to the Match celebrity, victory, and felicity. This was the main Masque.

The fabric was a mountain with two descents, and severed with two traverses.

¹ See p. 578.

At the entrance of the King, the first traverse was drawn and the lower descent of the mountain discovered, which was the pendant of a hill to life, with divers boscaiges and grovets upon the steep or hanging ground thereof; and at the foot of the hill, from delicate fountains running with water, and bordered with sedges and water flowers.

Iris first appeared; and presently after Mercury, striving to overtake her; Iris appareled in a robe of discoloured taffeta, figured in variable colours like the rainbow, a cloudy wreath on her head and tresses; Mercury in doublet and hose of white taffeta, a white hat, wings on his shoulders and feet, his caduceus in his hand, speaking to Iris as followeth:

MERCURY. Stay, light-foot Iris, for thou striv'st in vaine,
My wings are nimbler than thy feet.

IRIS. Away,
Dissembling Mercury! my messages
Aske honest haste, not like those wanton ones
Your Thund'ring Father sends.

MERCURY. Stay, foolish maid!
Or I will take my rise upon a hill
When I perceive thee seated in a cloud
In all the painted glory that thou hast,
And never cease to clap my willing wings,
'Till I catch hold on thy discolour'd bow,
And shiver it beyond the angry power
Of your curst¹ Mistris to make up againe.

IRIS. Hermes, forbear, Juno will chide and strike;
Is great Jove jealous that I am imploy'd
On her love errands? She did never yet
Claspe weak mortality in her white armes,
As he hath often done; I only come
To celebrate the long-wish'd Nuptials
Here in Olympia, which are now perform'd
Betwixt two goodly Rivers that have mix'd
Their gentle-winding waves, and are to grow
Into a thousand streames, great as themselves!
I need not name them, for the sound is loud
In Heaven and Earth, and I am sent from her,
The Queene of Marriage, that was present here,

¹ i. e. cross, peevish; the word occurs in the *Philaster* of Beaumont and Fletcher, and several other places in their works. Ed. 1778. It was altered to "mad" in later editions. N.

And smil'd to see them joyne, and hath not chid
Since it was done. Good Hermes, let me go!

MERCURY. Nay, you must stay; Jove's message is the same,
Whose eyes are lightning, and whose voice is thunder,
Whose breath is any wind he will; who knowes
How to be first on Earth as well as Heaven!

IRIS. But what hath he to do with Nuptiall rites?
Let him keep state¹ upon his starry throne,
And fright poore mortals with his thunder-bolts,
Leaving to us the mutuall darts of eyes.

MERCURY. Alas! when ever offer'd he t'abridge
Your Ladie's power, but only now in these,
Whose Match concernes the generall government?
Hath not each God a part in these high joyes?
And shall not he, the King of Gods, presume
Without proud Juno's lycence? let her know,
That when enamour'd Jove first gave her power
To linke soft hearts in undissolving bands,
He then foresaw, and to himself reserv'd
The honour of this Marriage. Thou shalt stand
Still as a rock, while I, to blesse this Feast,
Will summon up with my all-charming rod
The Nymphs of Fountains, from whose watry locks,
Hung with the dew of blessing and encrease,
The greedy rivers take their nourishment.

Ye Nymphs! who, bathing in your loved springs,
Beheld these Rivers in their infancy,
And joy'd to see them when their circled heads
Refresh'd the aire, and spread the ground with flowers,
Rise from your wells, and with your nimble feet
Performe that office to this happy paire,
Which in these plaines you to Alpheus did,
When, passing hence through many seas unmix'd,
He gain'd the favour of his Aretheuse!

Immediately upon which Speech, four Naiades arise gently out of their several fountains, and present themselves upon the stage, attired in long habits of sea-green taffeta, with bubbles of crystal intermixt with powdering of silver resembling drops of water, blewish tresses on their heads and garlands of water-lilies. They fall into a measure, dance a little, then make a stand.

IRIS. Is Hermes grown a lover? by what power
Unknown to us calls he the Naiades?

¹ "Sit pleased" in later editions. N.

MERCURY. Presumptuous Iris, I could make thee dance
 Till thou forget'st thy Ladie's messages,
 And runn'st back crying to her! Thou shalt know
 My power is more, only my breath and this
 Shall move fix'd stars, and force the firmament
 To yield the Hyades, who governe showers
 And dewy clouds, in whose dispersed drops
 Thou form'st the shape of thy deceitfull bow:
 Ye maids, who yearly, at appointed times,
 Advance with kindly teares the gentle fouds,
 Descend and powre your blessing on these streames,
 Which rowling down from Heaven-aspiring hills,
 And now united in the fruitfull vales,
 Beare all before them, ravish with their joy,
 And swell in glory till they know no bounds!

Five Hyades descend softly in a cloud from the firmament to the middle part of the hill, appareled in sky-coloured taffeta robes spangled like the Heavens, golden tresses, and each a fair star on their head; from thence they descend to the stage, at whose sight the Naiades seeming to rejoyce, meet, and join in a dance [a while together, then make another stand as if they wanted something]:

IRIS. Great wit and power hath Hermes to contrive
 A liveless dance, which of one sex consists!

MERCURY. Alas, poore Iris! Venus hath in store
 A secret ambush of her winged boyes;
 Who, lurking long within these pleasant groves,
 First struck these lovers with their equall darts;
 Those Cupids shall come forth, and joyne with these
 To honour that which they themselves began.

Enter four Cupids from each side of the boscase, attired in flame-coloured taffeta close to their body, like naked boys, with bows, arrows, and wings of gold; chaplets of flowers on their heads, hoodwinked with tiffany scarfs; who join the Nymphs and Hyades in another dance, [until they are weary with their blind pursuing the Nymphs, and the Nymphs weary with flying them]. That ended, MERCURY speaks:

MERCURY. Behold, the statues which wise Vulcan plac'd
 Under the altar of Olympian Jove,
 And gave to them an artificiall life,
 Shall dance for joy of these great Nuptials!
 See how they move, drawn by this heavenly joy,
 Like the wild trees which followed Orpheus' harpe!

The Statues enter, supposed to be before descended from Jove's altar, and to have been prepared in the covert with the Cupids, attending their call. These Statues were attired in cases of gold and silver close to their body, faces, hands, and feet, nothing seen but gold and silver, as if they had been of metal embossed, girdles and small aprons of oaken leaves, as if they likewise had been carved or moulded out of the metal. At their coming, the musick changed from violins to hautboys, cornets, &c. and the air of the musick was utterly turned into a soft time, with drawing notes, excellently expressing their natures; and the measure likewise was fitted into the same, and the Statues placed in such several postures, sometimes all together in the centre of the Dance, and sometimes in the four utmost angles, as was very graceful, besides the novelty. And so concluded the First Anti-masque.

MERCURY. And what will Juno's Iris do for her?

IRIS. Just match this Show, or my inventions faile;
 Had it been worthier, I had invok'd
 The blazing comets, clouds, and falling stars,
 And all my kindred meteors of the aire,
 To have excelled it: but I now must strive
 To imitate confusion; therefore thou,
 Delightfull Flora, if thou ever felt'st
 Increase of sweetnesse in those blooming plants
 On which the hornes of my faire bow decline,
 Send hither all that rurall company
 Which deck the may-games with their clownish sports!
 Juno will have it so.

The Second Anti masque rusheth in, they dance their measure, and as rudely depart; consisting of a Pedant; May Lord, May Lady; Serving-man, Chamber-maid; a Country Clown or Shepherd, Country Wench; an Host, Hostess; a He-baboon, She-baboon; a He-fool, She-fool, ushering them in; all these persons appareled to the life, the men issuing out of one side of the boscase, and the women from the other. The musick was extremely well-fitted, having such a spirit of country jollity as can hardly be imagined; but the perpetual laughter and applause was above the musick. The Dance likewise was of the same strain; and the dancers, or rather actors, expressed every one their part so naturally and aptly, as when a man's eye was caught with the one, and then past on to the other, he could not satisfy himself which did best. It pleased his Majesty to call for it again at the end, as he did likewise for the First Anti-masque, but one of the Statues by that time was undressed.

MERCURY.

Iris, we strive
Like winds at liberty, who should do worst¹
E're we returne. If Juno be the Queen
Of Marriages, let her give happy way
To what is done in honour of the state
She governs !

IRIS.

Hermes, so it may be done
Meerly in honour of the state, and those
That now have prov'd it ; not to satisfie
The lust of Jupiter in having thanks
More than his Juno, if thy snaky rod
Have power to search the Heaven, or sound the sea,
Or call together all the ends of earth,
To bring thee any thing that may do grace
To us and these ; do it, we shall be pleas'd.

MERCURY.

Then know, that from the mouth of Jove himselfe,
Whose words have wings and need not to be borne,
I took a message, and I bare it through
A thousand yeelding clouds, and never staid
Till his high will was done. The Olympian Games,
Which long had slept, at these wish'd Nuptials
He pleas'd to have renewed ; and all his Knights
Are gathered hither, who within their tents
Rest on this hill, upon whose rising head
Behold Jove's altar, and his blessed Priests
Moving about it. Come, you holy men,
And with your voices draw these youths along,
'That till Jove's music calls them to their Games,
Their active sports may give a blest content
To those for whom they are againe began.

The main Masque.—The second traverse is drawn, and the higher ascent of the mountain is discovered ; wherein, upon a level, after a great rise of the hill, were placed two pavillions, open in the front of them. The pavillions were to sight as of cloth of gold, and they were trimmed on the inside with the rich armour and military furniture, hanged up as upon the walls ; and behind the tents there were represented in perfection the tops of divers other tents, as if it had been a camp. In these pavillions were placed fifteen Olympian

¹ The editors of 1778 here observe that "the sense seems to require us to read *most* for *worst* ; unless it means, which should *worst* the other." — This is scarcely worth noticing, except to prevent further misunderstanding ;—as we are told in the introduction, Mercury and Iris were striving which should do *worst* in producing what was *outrè* and ridiculous. N.

Knights, upon seats a little embowed near the form of a crescent; and the Knights appeared first, as consecrated persons, all in veils, like to copes, of silver tiffany, gathered and falling a large compass about them; and over their heads high mitres, with long pendants behind falling from them; the mitres were so high that they received their hats and feathers, that nothing was seen but veil. In the midst, between both the tents, upon the very top of the hill, being a higher level than that of the tents, was placed JUPITER'S altar gilt, with three great tapers upon golden candlesticks burning upon it; and the four Statues, two of gold and two of silver, as supporters, and JUPITER'S Priests in white robes about it. Upon the sight of the King, the veils of the Knights did fall easily from them, and they appeared in their own habit.

The Knights' attire. — Arming doublets of carnation sattin, embroidered with blazing stars betwixt; gorgets of silver mail, long hose of the same, with the doublets laid with silver lace spangled, and enriched with embroidery between the lace; carnation silk stockings embroidered all over, garters and roses suitable; pumps of carnation sattin embroidered as the doublets; hats of the same stuff and embroidery, cut like a helmet before, the hinder part cut into scallops, answering the skirts of their doublets; the bands of their hats were wreaths of silver in form of garlands of wild olives, white feathers, with one fall of carnation; belts of the same stuff, and embroidery with the doublet; silver swords, little Italian bands and cuffs embroidered with silver, faire long tresses of hair.

The Priests' habits. — Long robes of white taffeta; long white heads of hair; the High Priest a cap of white silk shag close to his head, with two labels at the ears, the midst rising in form of a pyramis; in the top thereof a branch of silver; every Priest playing on a lute; twelve in number.

The Priests descend and sing this Song following; after whom the Knights likewise descend, first laying aside their veils, belts, and swords:

THE FIRST SONG.

*Shake off your heavy trance,
And leap into a Dance
Such as no mortals use to tread:
Fit only for Apollo
To play to, for the Moon to lead,
And all the Stars to follow!*

The Knights by this time are all descended and fallen into their place, and then dance their first Measure.

THE SECOND SONG.

*On, blessed youths, for Jove doth pause,
Laying aside his graver laws
For this Device;*

*And at the wedding such a pair,
Each Dance is taken for a prayer,
Each Song a sacrifice!*

The Knights dance the second measure.

THE THIRD SONG.

*More pleasing were these sweet delights,
If Ladies mov'd as well as Knights;
Run every one of you and catch
A Nymph, in honour of this Match,
And whisper boldly in her ear,
"Jove will but laugh if you forswear!"*

Chorus. *And this day's sins he doth resolve
That we his Priests should all absolve.*

*The Knights take their Ladies to dance with them galliards, durets, corantos, &c.
and lead them to their places; then loud music sounds, supposed to call them to
their Olympian Games.*

THE FOURTH SONG.

*You should stay longer, if we durst;
Away! alas, that he that first
Gave Time wild wings to fly away,
Has now no power to make him stay;
And though these Games must needs be played,
I would these paire, when they are laid,
And not a creature nigh 'em,
Could catch his scythe as he doth pass,
And clip his wings, and break his glass,
And keep him ever by 'em!*

*The Knights dance their parting measure, and ascend to put on their swords
and belts; during which time the Priests sing the fifth and last Song.*

THE FIFTH SONG.

*Peace and silence be the guide
To the Man and to the Bride!
If there be a joy yet new
In marriage, let it fall on you,
That all the world may wonder;
If we should stay we should do worse,
And turn our blessing to a curse,
By keeping you asunder!*

“The one-and-twentieth of February, there was a great Supper prepared by the King in a roome built of purpose for the time¹ over the North Terras next the first Court of Whitehall; but it was at the cost of certain Lords, who lost it for their ill-running at the ring against his Majesty and his Party. The King and Prince onely were seated at a crosse-table placed at the end of the roome next the Banqueting-house. The Prince Palatine, the Lords, Ladies, and the Gentlemen of the Inns of Court that had been at the Marriage Maskers or Assistants to the Maske (whereof there were of both about forty) sate at another table placed longwayes the chamber².”

On the 23d, Mr. Chamberlain gave Sir Ralph Winwood a compendious account of the solemnities similar to that written by him to Sir Dudley Carleton, which is already printed; he adds, respecting the last Masque, that it “was very well performed in the new Bankqueting-house, which for a kind of amends was granted to them, though with much repining and contradiction of their emulators. The next day,” he continues, “the King made them all a solemn Supper in the new Marriage-room, and used them so well and graciously, that he sent both parties away well pleased with this great solemnity. There was no Creation of Noblemen or making of Knights, as was most assuredly expected; the reason whereof is diversly interpreted. The speech is now who shall be Commissioners to conduct the Lady Elizabeth home, and to see her and her joynture well settled. The Duke of Lenox, the Earle of Arundell, the Viscount Lisle, the Lord Zouch, and the Lord Harington are named; and Levinus [Monk] for Secretary in that service³.”

On the 25th, Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“The King went away on Monday the 22d to Theobalds, and so towards Royston and Newmarket, whence he is not expected till the 22d of March.

“The Prince and Count Palatine follow him this day, and mean the next week to visit Cambridge. And there is speech, that before Easter they will make a Progress to Oxford; which will be a good errand for the young married Gentleman, whose friends and followers wish he might oftener have occasion to visit his Uncle⁴.

“All well-affected people take great pleasure and contentment in this Match,

¹ See p. 590.

² Finetti Philoxenis, p. 11.

³ Winwood's Memorials, vol. III.

⁴ Of the Palatine's Visits to Oxford and Cambridge see hereafter, p. 606.

as being a firm foundation and stablishing of religion, which, upon what ground I know not, was before suspected to be *in transitu*: and the Roman Catholics malign it as much, as being the ruin of their hopes. The Queen likewise is well come about, and graces it all she can, and seems to take special comfort in him.

“Yesterday was the great Christening of the Earl of Salisbury’s daughter in the Chapel at Court, whence the Queen, Prince Palatine, Lady Elizabeth’s Highness, and all the Company, convoyed it home, and went by water to the Banquet¹.

“The Queen removes to-morrow to Greenwich to enjoy this fair weather, which hath been exceeding clear, sweet, and pleasant almost this fortnight.

“Our Revels and Triumphs within doors gave great contentment, being both dainty and curious in devise, and sumptuous in shew, specially the Inns of Court, whose two must have stood them in better than £.4000, besides the gallantry and expense of private Gentlemen that were but *ante-ambulatores*, and went only to accompany them; and our Gray’s Inn Men and the Inner Templers were nothing discouraged for the first day, but on Saturday last performed their part exceeding well with great applause and approbation both from the King and all the Company. The next night the King invited the Masquers with their Assistants, to the number of forty, to a solemn Supper in the new Marriage-room, where they were well treated, and much graced with kissing his Majesty’s hand; and every one having a particular *accoglienza* from him. The King husbanded the matter so well, that this Supper was not at his own cost, but he and his Company won it upon a wager of running at the ring, of the Prince and his nine Followers, who paid £.30 a man. The King, Queen, Prince Palatine, and Lady Elizabeth sat at the table by themselves; and the great Lords and Ladies with the Maskers, above four score in all, sat at another table²; so that there was not room for them that made the Feast, but they were fain to be lookers-on; which the young Lady Rich³ took no great pleasure in, to see her husband, who was one that paid, not so much as drink for his money!

¹ This Christening is recorded (but under a wrong date) in Malcolm’s London, vol. IV. p. 275. “Anne, first daughter of Robert Cecil, Earl of Salisbury, Feb, 12, 1612-13. For her Godmothers she had Queen Anne and the Countess of Derby, wife to the Lord Chancellor, and for her Godfather Gilbert Earl of Shrewsbury. The Officers of the Vestry had for their fees £.50.”—The infant was afterwards first wife of Algernon Percy, tenth Earl of Northumberland; she died Dec. 6, 1637, to the great grief of her Lord, having borne him five daughters; see Brydges’s Peerage, vol. II. p. 353.

² This arrangement of the Company does not exactly agree with Mr. Finett’s account in p. 601.

³ Wife of Sir Henry Rich (of whom see pp. 344, 609), and daughter of Sir Walter Cope.

“The Ambassadors that were at the Wedding and Shews were the French, Venetian, Count Henry, and [Sir Noel] Caron for the States. The Spanish was, or would be, sick; and the Archduke’s Ambassador being invited for the second day, made a sullen excuse, and those that were present were not altogether so pleased, but that I hear every one had some punctilio of disgust¹.

¹ This will be best illustrated from the narration of Mr. Finett, who tells his story in a style not unentertaining: “The thirteenth of February I was sent by the Lord Chamberlain (Earle of Suffolke), from his Majesty to the Archduke’s Ambassador Monsieur de Boiscot, with this formal invitation to the marriage of the Princesse: ‘That his Majesty, who desireth to perform all things with conveniency, having invited the French Ambassador and the Venetian to assist at the first daye’s solemnity, requested him to honour the second or third daye’s, either dinner or supper, or both, with his presence.’ After some time of pause, his first question was, with a troubled countenance, whether the Spanish Ambassador were invited? I answered, answerable to my instructions in case of such a demand, that hee was sick, and could not be there. He was yesterday, quoth he, so well, as that the offer might have very well been made him, and perhaps accepted. To this I replied, that his Majestie having observed that the French and Venetian Ambassadors holding between them one course of correspondence, and the Spanish and Archduke’s another, their invitation had been usually joyn’t. This he denied, saying, the French had been sundry times invited to Masques, &c. and not the Venetian, and the Venetian and not the French, the Spaniard the like; but he, the Archduke’s Ambassador, never. That for his owne particular person, as hee was Boiscot, he should think himselfe honoured to be called by his Majesty upon any termes, were it to serve up a dish to the Princesse’s table; but as he was representant of so great a Prince as the Archduke, (one would never allow, he sayd, so much as a question or thought of competition betweene him, a monarchall Sovereigne, and a meane Republique, governed by a sort of Burghers, who had but an handfull of territory in comparison of his Master, and, as would be averred, he sayd, by ancient proofes, had ever yielded precedence to the Archduke’s predecessors, when they were but Dukes of Burgundie,) hee could not be present in that solemnitie. That further, he knew not wherein he had deserved so ill of his Majesty, as not to have received from him any countenance or favour in all the time of his residing here, and the Venetian, as he himselfe had bragged, many. That for these and the like considerations, he would never be received to a second place or day, after one that should have the first bestowed on him so unworthily. In conclusion, he desired, that though this was, and should be his peremptory answer, I would from him request the Lord Chamberlaine, that time might be allowed him for consideration; and that the next morning he would, by his owne servant, send his more direct resolution, which he accordingly did in writing (seene to few more then to his Majesty and the Lord Chamberlaine) to the former purpose thus: ‘That he had never yet had the honour of being invited by his Majesty; that the invitation hee now had was in a second place to one who was farr from all colour of reason to precede him; that his Majesty had herein expressed his affection; that he was sorry he could not be there;’ &c. This written signification, re-demanded, and taken back after it was read by his servant, having beene made the Saturday; the Sundaye’s and Mundaye’s jollity and gallantry stilld all further noyse of it, till on Tuesday I was commanded to carry him a written

“ I had almost forgotten one accident at this Wedding, which was not then much noted, but is since much spoken of. Lyon, the Scottish King of Heralds, being expressly sent for, had a rich coat of arms (provided here) with the Arms declaration in French : [Sir John Finett gives the original in French ; but he having also been at the trouble to translate it, the Reader will excuse the translation being here adopted.] ‘ His Majesty perceiving that the Ambassador of the Archduke had taken some exceptions that he was not invited to the solemnities of Madame, his Majestie’s sole daughter, and of the most illustrious Prince the Elector Palatine, on Sunday the day of the Nuptials, whereas the Ambassador of the most serene Republicke of Venice was invited thereunto that day ; he hath thought good that the said Lord Ambassador and the Princes whom he serves should understand that his Majesty never intended to do any thing in prejudice to the pretences of either Prince or State in all procedures since his accesse to the Crown, but alwayes declined to comport himself as Judge of their competitions in this case, leaving them both entire in what appertaines to them, and treating them in a free generall way as his friends. Now, touching the present businesse reflecting upon the Ambassador of Venice, his Majesty lets the said Ambassador of the Archdukes to understand, that the said Ambassador of Venice, having fourteen or fifteen dayes before the wedding-day informed his Majesty that he had order from the Republicke to congratulate the said Nuptials, he desired that he might perform the said office the very day of the solemnity, and that he might do it with a better grace, as also for a more open manifestation of the honour which the said Republicke doth beare unto his Majesty, he was appointed extraordinary allowance for the pomp, and to put his men in liveries accordingly upon the public charge (an honour which his Majesty had not received of any Prince, it being extraordinary, and not usuall among Princes). Therefore his Majesty had all reason to correspond with the said Republicke in like civilities for so signall demonstration of respect. Add hereunto, that the Spanish Ambassador not finding himself in case to assist and be present the first day of their Nuptials, and his Majesty being incertain whether he would be at any other day of the solemnities, his Majestie according to former custome commanded that the said Ambassador of Venice should be joynd with him of his Most Christian Majestye, who had been invited for the same day, according to the course that was allwayes observed, to couple upon such solemnities the Ambassadors of France and Venice, as also those of Spain and the Archduke’s. And whereas it is pretended that, whereas the Ambassador of the said Archduke’s being invited upon Shrove Tuesday, the last day of the solemnity, one might inferr that a greater shew of honour was made thereby to the Republicke than to the Archduke’s, his Majesty sayeth, that he having allwayes been most curious to avoid all sorts of offences among his friends in matters of this kind, the said Ambassador, if he pleases to consider of it well, will find that this doth not carry with it any prejudice at all to his Master, in regard that the solemnity of the Marriage being but one continued act, though performed divers daies, admitted neither *prius* nor *posterius* in itselſe, but is to be understood that each day had the like dignity. Nay, if one would argumentize thereupon, it might be alledged that the last day should be taken for the greatest day, as it is understood in many other cases, and particularly upon the festivalls of Christmas, wherein the *Twelſe-day*, or the Festivall of the three Kings, which is the last, is *taken for the greatest day* ; and in many places *Tuesday* is taken for the *chiefest day of Shrovetide* ; wherefore the Mask at Court, composed of Noblemen and Ladies, was assigned for that day as being the greatest of the festivalls ; but his Majesty, who doth not undertake to be judge of differences

of Scotland before those of England; and wore it, as he said, by commandment; which is not much inquired into; but howsoever it is thought a strange affront offered at such a time, in such a place, to such a people¹."

arising in this nature 'twixt the Ministers of Princes, doth not speake this as to determine any thing on either side, but onely to shew the reasons which he hath on his behalfe in this particular, wherein he thinks not to have done any body wrong.'—This being read by the Ambassador, I demanded his answer, which he said he could little enlarge beyond the former. And then telling him, I was by command to returne the paper (suteable to his owne and his servant's proceeding with his Majesty when he last sent his mind in writing), he affirmed peremptorily that 'he neither asked nor had any paper back againe. And in this regard he must be pardoned if he returned no answere; since, quoth he, if I had received a message by word, I had answered by word; if by writeing, by writeing. But taking this message for neither, I may, I suppose, be silent.' Wherewith when I had acquainted the Lord Chamberlaine, his Lordship was somewhat moved, as for his owne personall interest; and taking Sir William Button, my colleague Assistant of the Ceremonies, to witnesse what he had said and done, his Lordship willed me to returne, and affirme to him the contrary with confidence. But half the wordes which I had to say to this purpose when I came to him were scarce uttered when he confessed the action, yet not without blaming his servant's mistaking, and forgetfulness to deliver back to him the paper.

"At this time the French and Venetian Ambassadors invited to the Marriage were not free from puntillios. That made an offer to precede the Prince. This stood upon it, that they were not to sit at the table without chaires; though the Prince (the King not present) had but a stoole (the Count Palatine and the Princess onely, for the honour of the day, having chayres), and insisting upon a formality that the Carver was not to stand above him. But neither of these prevailed in their reasonlesse pretences. Neither was the wife of the French Ambassador cleere of these disputes; for when I had ushered her up amongst the Countesses, and left her there to the ranging of the Lord Chamberlaine, he ordered shee should be placed at the table next beneath the Countesses, and above the Baronesses. But the Viscountesse of Effingham standing to her woman's right, and possest allready of her proper place, as she called it, would not moove lower, so held the hand of the Ambassatrice, till after dinner the Ambassador her husband, informed of the difference and opposition, tooke it for an indignitie; and calling for his wife's coach, that by her departure it might be seen he was sensible, she was by others' perswasions stayed, and was at supper placed beneath the Countess of Killdare, and above the Viscountesse of Haddington, who made no scruple of it, the Lady of Effingham in the interim forbearing (with rather too much than too little stommach) both her supper and the company.—The Ambassador of the United Provinces (Sir Noel Caron) kept himselfe all this while quiet, without question of *prius* or *posterius*, or thrusting for publique note, being a continually entertained guest during the solemnitie of the Marriage." Philoxenis, pp. 2—10.

¹ Nisbet tells us that the King did at first give precedency to the arms of Scotland, as the ancientest sovereignty; and, after a contest, those of England had precedence only in England. He adds that the Scots were so jealous of their ancient sovereignty that, when it was agreed that their Queen Margaret should marry Prince Edward, the eldest son of King Edward the First, it was particularly provided that the ancient arms of Scotland should be kept entire on the seals and ensigns of that

About this time the Prince Palatine visited the two Universities; but I am not able to say which was first honoured by his presence. At Oxford¹ he was sumptuously entertained; and was pleased with his own hand-writing to matriculate himself a Member of the University *sub titulo Ædis Christi*, with this symbol, “Rege me, Domine, secundum verbum tuum².”

Of his Visit to Cambridge Mr. Chamberlain affords some particulars in a Letter to Sir Ralph Winwood, dated March 14:

“We are now preparing for the Lady Elizabeth's departure. I am of opinion her Train will not be so great by many degrees as was expected; for we devise all the means we can to cut off expense, and not without cause, being come *ad fundum*, and to the very lees of our best liquor! Else should not the Palsgrave's house have been so abruptly broken up, and the most part of the company dissolved and sent away so suddenly after the King's going to Newmarket, which the Lady Elizabeth took very grievously and to heart. But necessity hath no law!

“The number and quality of her Attendants vary every day. Some say the Lords go no further than Bacharach, the first place upon the confines, and that Dr. Martin, the King's Advocate, and Mr. Levinus, are the Commissioners for settling and looking to the jointure. The time of her departure varies likewise in common report, being, they say, put off from the eighth of April till after St. George's-day, that they may have fair moonlight nights at sea. Burlanachi is appointed, and hath undertaken (I know not upon what conditions) to go the journey and furnish them from place to place.

nation. *System of Heraldry*, pp. 152, 181.—Mr. Chamberlain had not observed that on the monument which had been lately erected to Queen Elizabeth in Westminster Abbey (see p. 463), an atchievement of King James was placed on the left side, wherein the coat of Scotland occupies the dexter side of the shield, and those of France and England quartered the sinister. On the monument of the Queen of Scots the same. — Though the English Courtiers, blinded by their constant jealousy of the Scotch, were affronted at this, the Scottish King at Arms may surely now, when all prejudice has subsided, be excused for having preferred the Scottish arms.

¹ His Visit to Oxford had been some time deferred, for he had been expected previously to Prince Henry's death; “but urging occasions calling him back, he excused himself by a Latin Letter, sent to the Vice-chancellor, beginning thus: ‘*Laudatum nobis fuit, Vir reverendissime, Academiæ Oxo-niensis,*’ &c. which being publicly read in the Convocation, order was taken that an answer with a rich pair of gloves should be sent him in the name of the University. Both which he receiving as great honour done unto him, returned an answer of thanks beginning thus: ‘*Reverende et clarissime Domine Doctor, oblatas à vestrà Academiâ chyrothecas,*’ &c.” *Wood's Annals*, vol. II. p. 315.

² *Ibid.* p. 315.

"The Palsgrave hath presented the Queen with an exceeding fair carosse [coach] made in France, of pale-colloured velvet richly embroidered with gold and silver both within and without, with six horses and two coachmen all in the same livery, and the wheels and all the iron work richly gilded and curiously wrought, valued at eight or nine thousand pounds at least. He hath dealt bountifully likewise with Sir Harry Savile, and sent him two fine standing cups with a bason and ewre all gilt, to the value of better than fifty pounds, in requital of his Chrysostome¹ he presented him withall, besides five pounds to his man that brought it. He was looked for here last night, but whether he came or no I know not.

"Upon Tuesday was se'ennight [March 6], the Prince² and he went from Newmarket to Cambridge, where I hear they found great entertainment³, and had two very commendable Acts in Divinity and Philosophy⁴, besides two excellent Comedies; but they marred them with length, and made them grow tedious, the one of them lasting between seven and eight hours.

"During their being at Cambridge, the King escaped a great danger at Newmarket, by reason the foundation of the house⁵ where he lay began to sink on the

¹ This was a Greek edition of St. Chrysostom's Works, very beautifully printed in eight folio volumes, which this most learned man had just published. The curious bibliographical history of this wonderful book is given in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. Its cost is said to have amounted to £.8000; and, though soon after re-printed at Paris, the whole impression, consisting of 1000 copies, was sold.

² The King did not visit Cambridge till March 1614-15.

³ Among the MSS. in the Library of Gonville and Caius College, Cambridge, (No. 123,) is an account of "The Entertainment of Prince Charles and the Prince Elector Palatine of the Rhine at Cambridge, 1612." This has been lately communicated to the Society of Antiquaries by C. H. Hartshorn, Esq. of St. John's College, in a Letter to Thomas Amyot, Esq. Treasurer of the Society, and was read at their meetings, Jan. 13 and Jan. 20, 1825. It will probably be found in the Appendix to this Volume.

⁴ We find in the life of Lord Keeper Williams that that celebrated man was *pro more* or by special grace made B. D. towards the end of February 1612-13, in order that he become an Opponent in the Theological Disputations held at Cambridge on this occasion.—In his next Letter Mr. Chamberlain says: "The King is very angry and out of love with our Cambridge Men for their questions at the Palsgrave's being there; specially whether *electio* or *successio* were to be preferred in Kingdoms; and is out of patience that it should be so much as argued in schools."

⁵ Enough is not known of the King's lodgings at Newmarket to determine whether this was the King's own house. It is not at all improbable that the Royal hunting-seat which James I. is said to have built here (see vol. I. p. 496) was not yet erected, but owed its erection to this accident. Newmarket does not occur among the King's houses mentioned in the "Abstract of his Majestic's Revenue" attached to "The First Fourteen Years of King James;" but we find that there was paid

one side with great cracks, so that the doors and windows flew open, and they were fain to carry him out of his bed with all possible expedition, but the next day he removed to Thetford¹.

"About the same time the Lord of Rochester's chamber at Whitehall was robbed, but what he lost is not known; for they left his gay clothes and whole pieces of cloth of gold and rich stuffs.

"Here be great store of coiners apprehended in divers places, which no doubt will multiply daily, now that the Lord Harington, in recompence of £.30,000 he saith he hath spent in attending the Lady Elizabeth, hath a suit granted of coining brass farthings. It is doubted to be but a shoeing-horn to draw on more of that metal to our mint²; and you must thinke we are brought to a low ebb, when the last week the Archduke's Ambassador was carried to see the antient goodly plate of the House of Burgundy, pawned to Queen Elizabeth by the General States in 1578, and to know whether the Princes would redeem it, for otherwise it was to be melted³!"

From Thetford the King went to Royston, where he knighted, March 21:

Sir Edward Altham.

Sir John Temple⁶.

Sir William Tresham⁴, of Northamptonsh. Sir Roger James.

Sir John Woodward⁵.

Sir Edmond Cockett, of Norfolk.

"To William Marston, Keeper of the Game at Newmarket, £.45. 12s. 6d." *per annum*, and to John Banckes a salary of £.73, namely, 2s. *per diem* as Keeper of the neighbouring Warren called Wilbraham Bushes, *in com. Cantabr.* and 2s. more *per diem* for keeping the Game within ten miles circuit. The salary received by the latter was the largest paid to any of the Keepers of Warrens; and it may be here remarked that the manors of Great and Little Wilbraham, situated about eight miles West of Newmarket, had always been of some importance as to field-sports. They anciently belonged to the Knights Templars, who had a grant of free-warren, and held their estate of the King, by the service of finding every year a sore sparrow-hawk, to be brought to the King's Court by the proprietor, who had a right to his maintenance there for twelve days, with two horses, two grooms, and two hounds. See Lysons's *Cambridgeshire*, p. 283.

¹ See p. 309.

² This, says the Author of the "First Fourteen Years of King James;" was "a thing that brought with it some contempt, though lawfull; for all things lawfull are not expedient."

³ *Witwood's Memorials*, vol. III. p. 455. Some sentences in the Letter are adopted from one which Mr. Chamberlain wrote the following day to Sir Dudley Carleton, Birch's MSS. 4173.

⁴ Probably the brother of Sir Lewis Tresham, Baronet, of whom see p. 427.

⁵ Sir John Woodward had been Gentleman Extraordinary of the Privy-chamber to Prince Henry.

⁶ Second son of Sir Thomas Temple, Baronet, who has been noticed in p. 429. See *Brydges's Peerage*, vol. II. p. 412.

On the 22d of March, his Majesty knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Thomas Gourney¹, of London; and Sir John Wynne², of Carnarvonshire.

On the 25th, Mr. Chamberlain writes thus to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King came to town on Tuesday, and, by the way of Royston, drew his sword to make four or five Knights. Yesterday³ was the great Tilting at Court, where there was more gallantry both for number and bravery than hath been since the King came in⁴. These⁵ were the Duke of Lennox, five Earls, Arundel, Rutland⁶, Pembroke, Dorset, and Montgomery; six Lords, Clifford⁷, Walden, Chandos, North, Hay, and Dingwell; six Knights, Sir Thomas Somerset, Sir Thomas⁸

¹ Who was a neighbour of the King's, resident at Enfield in a mansion on the site of which Forty Hall was in 1632 built by Sir Hugh Fortee.

² Eldest son of Sir John Wynne, Bart. (see p. 428) whom he succeeded in the Baronetcy, but died unmarried.

³ "The King's-day," generally celebrated by a Tilt; see vol. I. p. 499, 500 (where for "Coronation" read "Accession"); this Volume, p. 43, (the Appendix under March 24, 1606-7,) pp. 287, 441; and almost every year hereafter.

⁴ *i. e.* to the Crown.

⁵ The majority of these Tilters have appeared in the pages above recited and p. 361; and will again.

⁶ The Earl of Rutland, of whom see p. 459, here shines in the lists for the first time.

⁷ On whom see a note in p. 341. It was on this occasion, not on the Marriage of the Earl of Essex, as Dr. Whitaker thought, (for Car had not then risen from his obscurity,) nor at Car's own Marriage, as I imagined when I wrote that note, (for he was then Earl of Somerset,) that the following summons was sent to Lord Clifford by that Favourite: "My Lord; The King will by no meanes dispense with your running at Tilt; and, for my payrt, if I might advyse you respectinge the state of your ffather's businesse, I would by no meanes have you excuse your selfe, for that, I am sure, would better please your enemies. So, promissinge to your Lordship all rednisse in me to value to his Majesty your cair to do him honnor and servise at this Marriage, I rest your Lordship's assured friend, Ro. ROCHESTER." History of Craven, p. 286.—What puts this trifling matter beyond doubt is, not only that this is the only Marriage to which this Letter could refer during the period Car continued Viscount Rochester (not twenty months), but it is also the only time that Lord Clifford appears as a Tilter at Court. His cousin, Lady Anne, (see p. 341) calls him "a good horseman," but he probably disliked the inevitable expences attending the Royal Tilt-yard. The advice which Viscount Rochester gave his young correspondent was good; the great cause of the baronies and estates of the family was now, by reference, before the King; and Rochester well knew that for Lord Clifford to offend his Majesty at this crisis were the height of folly.

⁸ Third son of the Earl of Suffolk, who has before occurred in the Tilt on Shrove Tuesday 1611-12, p. 438. He was a considerable devisee by the will of the Earl of Northampton, and married a great heiress, Elizabeth, only daughter of William Bassett of Blore in Staffordshire, afterwards united to William Cavendish, first Duke of Newcastle. Lord Henry was apparently never knighted and died young, leaving one daughter, Elizabeth, married to Sir John Harpur, of Swarkston in Derbyshire. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. III. p. 154.—Of a quarrel between him and his brother-in-law

and Harry Howard, Sir Robert¹ and Sir Henry² Rich, and Sir John Harington³; besides the two Alexanders. They all performed their parts very well especially, Sir Harry Rich with Sir Sigismund Alexander."

Free Gifts from the Exchequer in the Tenth Year of the King's Reign, 1612-13.

To Prince Henry, of Free-gift	£.8100	Sir Robert Douglas ¹⁴	-	£.2000
Roger Polkinghorne	- - 72	Sir Richard Wigmore ¹⁵	-	310
Patrick Gourdown	- - 66	Captain William Murray	-	666
The Lord Obigney ⁴	- - 2000	Robert Buchannon	- -	50
Sir Roger Aston ⁵	- - 2000	Lawrence Newmeke	- -	30
The Lord Viscount Rochester ⁶	15500	John Levingston	- - -	1000
William Ramsay ⁷	- - 600	Sir James Howme	- -	500
Edward Bridges ⁸	- - 150	Henry Smith	- - -	40
Patrick Maulde ⁹	- - 600	The Lord Viscount Lisle ¹⁶ , for		
The Lord Knivett ¹⁰	- - 500	his interest in Alton woods,		
William Shaa ¹¹	- - 500	and for his faithfull service	-	3000
William Stacy	- - 100	Sir Robert Shirley ¹⁷ , Ambassa-		
Julio Cannilla Crema	- - 100	dor from Persia	- - -	666
James Johnson	- - 400	The Marquis of Brandenburgh's		
Sir Patrick Howme ¹²	- - 200	Servants, for bringing of silks		40
Edmonde Bradshawe	- - 100			
The two Alexanders ¹³	- - 100			£.39,450
Perundine	- - 60			

the Earl of Essex, see under September this year. He, his brother Harry, and two other of his brethren, will be found Maskers at Caversham in April 1613 (see p. 629), and at the Earl of Somerset's Marriage. As a Tilter he will appear on New Year's-day 1613-14, on the King's-day in 1614-15, and on the same occasion in the two following years.

¹ See vol. I. p. 222, and this Volume, p. 438. ² See this Volume, pp. 344, 602. ³ See vol. I. p. 478.

⁴ See p. 247.

⁵ See p. 191.

⁶ See p. 416.

⁷ See p. 440.

⁸ Ibid.

⁹ Patrick Mawle was in 1605-6 one of the Grooms of the King's Bed-chamber; see vol. I. p. 600; he had received £.200 in 1611;—see p. 440.

¹⁰ See p. 440.

¹¹ See p. 288.

¹² Sir Patrick Home was "Master of the Privy Harryers," for which office he received a fee of £.120 *per annum*, and for keeping one footman, four horses, and twenty couple of dogs, £.100 *per annum*, in all £.220. Sir Patrick Howme also received "for keeping the King's house at Roiston, 12d. by the day, (£.18. 5s. *per annum*.)"

¹³ See pp. 440, 609.

¹⁴ See p. 289.

¹⁵ Sir Richard Wigmore was of Herefordshire, and knighted at Newark April 22, 1603 (see vol. I. p. 90). He was in 1608 made the first Marshal of the Field to the King (see p. 214), for his services in which office it probably was that he now received £3.10; in 1613 £.250; and in 1614 £.1000.

¹⁶ See vol. I. p. 510.

¹⁷ See this Volume, p. 432.

The Palsgrave and his Bride now began to prepare for their departure.

“The Marriage consummated, and these Royalties ended,” says Mr. Pette, “the Lord Admiral gave me a present dispatch to post to Chatham, and make all possible haste to get ready the Fleet, the Prince being appointed to go Admiral, to transport the Lady Elizabeth and the Palsgrave’s person, and the Lord Admiral to command her.”

“On Saturday the 10th of Aprill,” says Howes, “the King, the Queene, the Prince Charles, the Palsgrave, and the Lady Elizabeth, went by barge from Whitehall to Greenwich. The next Tuesday they all accompanied the Palsgrave and the Lady Elizabeth to Rochester; where the next morning they took leave of the King, Queene, and Prince, and then rode thence to Canterbury, and so to Margate in the Isle of Thanet. Here the Lord Admirall in person with nine of the King’s ships and pinnaces attended their comming, to receive and convey them and their Trayne over.

“On the 21st,” continues Mr. Pette, “they came to Margate, and were embarked in barges and the ships’ boats, and were received on board the Admiral, and lay there all night. The 22d, the wind getting easterly, and likely to be foul weather, her Highness and the Palsgrave, and most part of her Train, were carried ashore to Margate. The 25th they were all brought on board again; presently we set sail, and that night anchored without the Foreland.”

On the 28th they anchored before Flushing, whereat the following Narrative begins:



THE MAGNIFICENT, PRINCELY, AND MOST ROYALL
ENTERTAINMENTS

GIVEN TO THE

HIGH AND MIGHTIE PRINCE AND PRINCESSE,

FREDERICK,

COUNT PALATINE, PALSGRAVE OF THE RHYNE; AND

ELIZABETH,

SOLE DAUGHTER TO THE HIGH AND MIGHTY

KING OF ENGLAND, JAMES, OUR SOVERAIGNE LORD.

Together with a true Relation of all the Gifts, Presentations, Showes, Pageants, Fire-workes, and other sumptuous Triumphs in every place where the said Princes were lodged and received after their landing upon the Coasts of Germany¹.

A Journall of the whole Voyage.

Nothing can better set forth the greatnesse of Princes, nor more expresse the affection of friends, together with the dutie, love, and applause of subjects, than those solemne and sumptuous Entertainments which are bestowed on great and worthy persons, the outward face of cost and disbursements being the true and lively picture of that harty love which is locked up in the bosomes of the givers.

Behold here, therefore, a Dutch piece drawne to the life; no expences being spared to make expression of noble friends, or to give content to those Princely receivers of such love, the Palsgrave and the excellent Lady Elizabeth, Daughter to our Sovereigne; who upon the 28th of Aprill last past, in the yeere of our Lord 1613, after a short and prosperous passage over the seas, cast anchor as happily before Flushing; which arrivall of theirs being no less welcome than it was generally and heartily expected, the first honourable salutations were given to

¹ "London: Printed for Nathaniel Butter, and are to be solde at his shop at the signe of the Pide Bull, neere St. Austine's-gate, 1613." —A copy of this Tract, at the sale of the curious and extensive Dramatic Library of W. B. Rhodes, Esq. April 19, 1825, £.10. — It was copied entire in Howes' edition of Stow's Annals, 1614; but is here, by Mr. Rhodes's permission, re-printed from the original edition.—One of a similar description was entered at Stationers' Hall, June 21, 1613, as "A Book called, 'The Journall of the Journey of the Countie Palatine and the Lady Elizabeth from England to Heidelberghe in Germany, and their Entertainment by the way.'" N. -

these two Princes by Grave Maurice and Grave Henrick, who went a Dutch mile by water, and lay that night aboard, being as nobly and gladly received by the Palsgrave and his Lady.

The next day, being the 29th of Aprill, they went to land, honourably accompanied with Grave Maurice, Grave Henrick, the Duke of Lennox, the Earle of Arundell, the Lord Viscount Lisle, the Lord Harington, the Lord Effingham, Generall Cicill¹, besides divers Knights and Gentlemen; the Princesse having attending on her, the Countesse of Arundell, the Lady Harington, the Lady Cicill, Mrs. Anne Dudley, Mrs. Elizabeth Dudley², Mrs. Apseley, Mrs. Maïame, with many other English Gentlewomen; infinite multitudes of the Dutch Nation standing on the shore to behold their arrivall³.

No sooner did they set footing on the land, but (to make Heaven and Earth eccho forth the report,) the Lord Admirall sent unto them a volley of great shot, to the number of 400; the Towne of Flushing answering in the like thunder of 200 great shot. All the Captaines, with the souldiers in garison, standing in armes on the shore, to receive these Princes, and conducting them to their lodgings: the beginning of the night being spent in excellent artificiall Fire-workes, besides other Showes and Devices, which gave to the beholders admirable pleasure.

The next morning, being the 30th of Aprill, the Palsgrave having a small Traine departed from Flushing, and went to the Hage; the Princesse his wife stayed and dined in the towne⁴. In the afternoone shee went to Middleborough, being accompanied with Grave Maurice, Grave Henrick, and the rest of the English Lords and Ladies, where the Burgers of the Towne, after a warlike manner, gave her Grace a Royall and heartie Entertainement, with loud and lusty volleys of shot, and so conducted her to her lodging.

The day following, shee was magnificently feasted at the State House, no words being able to expresse the bounty, royalty, and cost of so Princely an Entertainement. And in this Towne of Middleborough she continued three daies⁵.

Upon the third of May, the Princesse (nobly accompanied as before) went to

¹ Sir Edward, ofwhom see p. 441. N. ² One of these two Ladies has been mentioned in p. 524. N.

³ "Our ships," says Mr. Pette, "anchored a little above the Rammapeers; this afternoon I went on shore to attend the Lord Admiral, and lay in Flushing, our charges being defrayed by the Town."

⁴ "This forenoon," says Mr. Pette, "divers of our retinue took coach, and rode to Camphire to see the Island." N.

⁵ On the evening of May 2, the Lord Admiral brought Mr. Pette to take leave of her Highness, and to kiss her hand. N.

a towne called Treuer, being distant a Dutch mile from Middleborough; and at this place the Lord Admirall, the Lord of Effingham, with all those who had charge in her convoy over the seas, took their leaves of the Princesse, and departed for England¹. Her Grace taking ship, went by water and passed by a towne called Tergooze, and so through Zuric seas, first by Armen, then by Old Towne, then by Plat, and at last to William-state, where shee was lodged that night, her Traine of followers lying on shipboard.

The next day the Princesse and her Company left Zealand, and went up the haven to a towne in Holland, called Dort, where she stayed but one night.

Upon Wednesday, being the fift of May, shee went by water to Rotterdam, where shee dined, and here the Palsgrave met her, both of them having Princely Entertainment fitting to their states. In the afternoone of the same day the Prince and Princesse, with their honourable friends, passed by coach through Delft, and from thence went to the Hage, being there nobly received by the Burgers of the Towne, in armes, with peales of shot; and so by them conducted to Grave Henrick his house. During their abode there, the entertainment was as Royall as his minde that freely bestowed it; nothing wanting that was in the invention of man held fit to give contentment to such Princely Guests; five dayes being spent in hunting, in Playes, and other costly Showes, still varying pleasure because it should take no loathing in satietie. And here the Palsgrave took leave of the Princesse, taking his journey before to Heidelborough.

At her departure from hence, the States Generall presented to her these gifts, *viz.* a carcanet garnished with thirty dyamonds, in faret worke; two great pearles pendant, waying thirty-five karrats and one graine; a string of pearle of twenty-five pieces; a great needle or bodkin, garnished with a rich cuble diamond, very large, and foure other diamonds about it, of which three were pendants in faret

¹ Mr. Pette gives the following account of their return: "The Lord Admiral returned in the Princess's barge from Middleburgh to on-board the Prince, where he found such a multitude of people, men, women, and children, that came from all places in Holland to see the Ship, that we could scarce have room to go up and down till very night; which confluence of people lasted from the time we anchored at Flushing till we weighed thence. The fourth day the Lord Admirall gave order we should weigh from Flushing to avoid the number of people, which accordingly was done, and we fell down to Cassant Hogut, where we anchored all that day and next night. The 7th day, the wind continuing Easterly, we weighed and set sail, and by twelve o'clock we came to anchor at Gillingham, from whence I attended the Lord Admiral in his barge to Chatham, where he lay that night at Mr. Legat's house [see p. 419]." N.

worke. All these jewels were laid in a small cabinet of cloath of gold, betweene a perfumde cushion; and, besides these, she had likewise given her a looking-glasse of silver and gilt, the work being all embossed; more, ten pieces of rich tapistry, wrought by Frauncis Spiring; with sixe other pieces of tapistrie for a cabinet, of the same worke-master; more, very rich pieces of fine linnen damaske, packed up in sixe cases, containing in all, for napkins and table-cloaths, about sixty-pieces; more, an exceeding rich furniture for a cabinet of china-worke, blacke and golde, containing a bedstead, a cupbord, a table, two great chests, one lesser chest, five small chests, two voyders ¹, twenty-four dishes, twenty-four lesser dishes, twelve fruit dishes, and sixe sawcers, all being valued at £.10,000.

Upon Tuesday the 11th of May, the Princesse went to a towne called Leyden, where in warlike manner the Burgers gave to her a glad and Royall welcome, and there she tarried onely one night.

Upon Wednesday the 12th of May, shee departed from Leyden, and went to Harloam, and lay there likewise one night.

Upon Thursday the 13th of May, from Harloam she went to Amsterdam by water, where her first welcome was a volley of 600 great shot, sent from the ships; and then being landed, the Burgers of the towne stood ready in armes, to receive her on the shore, and so conducted her to her lodging, presenting her in her passage with two rich and sumptuous Pageants erected in the streetes.

In this towne shee stayed two dayes, and then on the Saturday, being the 15th of May, she left Hollandt, departing from Amsterdam to Utrecht, which is a free-state towne of itselfe. In Utrecht lye seventeen companies of foote and two troopes of horse, who all in faire martial order marched forth, and meeting the Princesse conducted her to her lodging, and tooke their leave of her with lusty vollies of shot. In this towne she continued two dayes.

On Munday the 17th of May, the Princesse and her honorable friends passed Utrecht to a towne called Ryne in Gelderlandt, staying onely one night.

Upon Tuesday the 18th of May, shee departed from Ryne to a towne called Arnham, being there nobly entertained by Grave Vernies, and here she staid two daies.

On Thursday the 20th of May, the Princesse departed from Arnham to Embrick, where she lodged onely one night.

¹ Trays; see a note in vol. I. p. 513. N.

Upon Friday, from Embrick she went to Wesell, and there likewise stayed one night.

On Saturday following, leaving Wesell, she went to Deusbrooke, to dinner; and from thence to Thisseldorp to bed, where she continued two dayes, being magnificently entertained by the young Duke of Brandenburg. In this towne the olde Duke of Cleve lyes unburied.

From Thisseldorp upon Munday, being the 24th of May, her Grace went to a new towne called Mullame, and so crossing the water, came to Cullein, where, being worthily received, she stayed two dayes.

Upon Wednesday the 26th of May, shee went to a towne by the river side, called Boune, and there dined; where Grave Maurice and Grave Henrick tooke their leaves; and then she departed to a towne called Overwinter, where shee lodged that night. Not farre from this towne are seaven great mountaines standing close together, with three faire Castles, in one of which the people of the country report that the divell walkes, and holdes his infernall revels!

Upon Thursday the 27th of May, from Overwinter her Grace removed to Andernach, and there lodged that night in a nunnery, being there received, welcomed, and entertained by the Bishop of Cullein.

And from Andernach, on Friday the 28th of May, she went to Coblentz to dinner; and had there Princely Entertainment at the hands of the said Bishop of Cullein; and after dinner she removed to Brobgech, being there received by the Bishop of Trier, and stayed in that place that night. Here standeth that Castle in which by report a German Bishop was eaten up by the rats.

From this towne, the 29th of May, she departed, and went to Sankevore, being welcomed thither by the young Lantzgrave of Hessen, with whom shee stayed two dayes.

Upon the first of June, being Munday, shee removed to a place called Poopurd, another house of the said Lantzgrave of Hessen; and having beene lodged there one night onely, the next morrow she went to a towne not far from thence, called Baguay, this being the first towne within the Palsgrave's dominions; from whence her next remove was to a village called Cowlsome, where the Palsgrave met her, and with her went to a towne of his owne called Galsham, standing neare the river of Rhene, and there they lodged that night.

The next day following, the King's Officers, who all this while had attended the Princesse in her journey, tooke their leaves, and returned towards England. At

which time the Lady Elizabeth went to Mentz, a chiefe Citie in Higher Germany, and had there a solemne, bounteous, and Royall Entertainment from the Bishop of Mentz, being Arch-Chancelor in Germany, and an Elector in the Empire; and was by him feasted for two dayes. Sundry excellent Fire-works, helping likewise to were out the time, and to make her welcome appeare more Princely and sumptuous.

Upon the 4th of June her Grace came to a towne called Oppenham, and having lyen there one night, the next day passing through the Citie of Worms, she was joyfully received with an infinite concourse of people into Franckendal, the towne which the Palsgrave hath given to her for her joynter. The Burgers of this towne came forth to meete their Prince and Princesse in a warlike manner, attiring themselves like Turks, Poles, and Switzers, and so with a solemne and orderly march conducted them to their lodgings, being a house belonging to the Princesse. At night there was a Presentation before her of a Regall Throne; in which were lighted 100 lampes; it being a figure of that Throne of Solomon, when he entertained the Queen of Sheba.

The next night following was spent in a martiall presentation of the Siege of Troy, which was thus performed: a Castle of exceeding greatnes was strongly builded, representing Troy, and in it were placed 100 shot; another army lay before the wals, in the habits of Greekes, who after this manner began the Siege: first, the horsemen gave the onset, and they retyring, the footmen or the infantry seconded them with great courage and violence; and at last the Trojans giving them a repulse, the Greekes subtilly sounded a retreat, and seeming to retire, lay hidden in ambush, leaving a horse of extreame proportion and greatnesse before the wals, which by the Trojans being drawne into the Citie, the alarum in the night was given, Troy fired, and the Greekes remained conquerors, and in that triumph marched away.

The day following the Princesse removed to Heidelberg, being encountred in her passage by 1000 horse, all Gentlemen of the country, very richly attired, and bravely furnished with armour, and other warlike habiliments. Of the foot there were sixteen companies, which gave to their Lady and Princesse a volley of small shot, whose thunder was seconded by twenty-five pieces of great ordnance; and this being done, they marched in martiall order, conducting her to Heidelberg; where the Burgers of the towne with all expressions of love, joy, and dutie, received her with heartie welcomes, the windowes of every house being

filled with men, women, and children of all degrees; and the streetes covered with throngs of people, drawne thither by the fame of such Showes and Pageants as were builded to adde honour to this Entertainment, but especially to behold her upon whom all their eyes were fixed with love and admiration!

After she had thus in great and magnificent state passed through Heidelberg, with the like solemnitie was she conducted into the Castle, where the Palsgrave's mother, with other great Ladies and Gentlewomen, gave to the Princesse glad and loving entertainment.

The following day¹ was honoured with many Princes of the Empire, who on horsebacke gallantly entered the Tilt-yard, prepared both for Tilt and Turney. And albeit the night, envious of such Triumphs, had shut up all the glory of this first day in darknesse, yet in despite of that and night, the second day shone more glorious in Courtly Honors, Showes, and Pastimes then before; and in this magnificall manner came the Combatants into the lists aforesaid:

The first that entered into the Tilt-yard was the Palsgrave, accompanied with others; before whom, in decent and stately order, was this presentation set forth, to the admiration of the beholders, and great content of the Princesse, and the other Ladyes, who in fit places stood spectators.

Formost of all came Jupiter, riding in a very rich chariot, drawne by two griffons guided by Mercury, who sate as coachman. Next followed Juno in another chariot, drawne by peacockes, and driven by Iris. After her came the God of Husbandry, with three ploughs. After him entered Neptune, the God of the Sea, in a chariot fitted to the state and condition of such a marine deitie; the chariot drawne by three sea-horses; upon Neptune attended a Merman, sitting on a rocke, with a glasse in his hand, and behind him, on another rocke, sate three Mermaides, singing and playing on instruments. After these Mermaides, the next that entered was a Centaur, halfe a man, halfe a horse, holding in one hande a booke, and in the other a mace. Then followed Arion, playing on a lute, and sitting on a sea-unicorne. After all these came in the Seaven Deadly Sinnes², all of them chained, and driven forward by a dragon, who continually spet fire.

¹ A Sunday intervened (as we learn from the Briefe Discription of the Palatine's Country, see p. 620) which "being the eight of June, was dedicate unto God with singing of Psalmes, Prayer, Thankesgiving, and a learned Sermon, as was meete for so great mercies." N.

² Pride, Idleness, Envy, Murder, Covetousness, Lust, and Gluttony, which were constant characters in the Ancient Mysteries of our own country. See Nares's Glossary. N.

Immediately after which entered the Palsegrave, with two more, in a ship, he himselve resembling Jason, attended by sixe Squires, bearing shields and lances; in the ship was to be seene the Golden Fleece which Jason fetched from Greece; and at the sterne Envy was dragged, eating her owne heart.

The next that entered was Mars, drawne in a chariot adorned with all the ensignes of war, and attended by three Knights and sixe Squires bearing lances. After whom, in one chariot, drawne by swans, sate Venus and Cupid; before the chariot went sixe Virgines, and behinde it followed Hercules, the Sun artificially gazing on the chariot, and three Knights following Hercules. Then came Victory in an imperiall chariot, betokening soveraigntie; on the top of the chariot stood a displayed eagle; upon this chariot attended three Knights and sixe Squires bearing lances. Next unto Victory entered Diana, in a chariot made like a forrest, set out and adorned with living birds and beastes, and thus attended: first came sixe Satyres, playing on musicke wildely; after whom sixe other Satyres came leaping and dauncing antickly; then twelve more leading dogs and deere; then the woodmen, and after them Nymphes with bowes and arrowes; and then the chariot where other Nymphes sate playing and singing; after whom followed three Knights.

The day after, being the 11th of June, they repayred againe to the 'Tilt-yard; the Palsgrave with those other two came in riding on horsebacke; he himselve still resembling Jason, attended by sixe Squires, eight trumpets, seaven footemen, and seaven horses of State, lead single. After him came two others personating Apollo and Bacchus, and they were in this manner accompanied: first, three wildemen playing on strange musicke, sixe Satyres rustickely dauncing to those tunes; then followed three Nymphes on horsebacke, crowned with garlands; after them, Musæus, Orpheus, and Eumolpus, on horseback, with musicke; then Mydas setting on an asse, hee himselve having asses' eares for comparing Pan to Apollo; and next him miserable Marsyas, and a Satyre fleaing off his skinne because hee durst contend with Apollo in musicke. In a short distance from these, came in the Nine Muses, placed in several seates upon the mountaine Parnassus, and playing upon severall instruments of musicke; after whom followed closely the Three Graces, accompanied with Hercules and Mercury; then Silenus, the Steward of Bacchus, with a tunne¹ and a glasse, which as fast as he filled with

¹ The celebrated Heidelberg Tun, which the Princess had doubtless by this time seen, is represented in a plate in Coryat's Crudities, the eccentric book noticed in p. 400. N.

wine he ever and anon dranke off; and after him entered Bacchus, in a chariot drawne by dogges; and attended by these sixe: Junius, Pomona, Hymenæus, Zephirus, Flora, and Vertumnus. Then followed another person, wearing an imperiall crowne; four others bound in scarfes as prisoners, going before him, and three after him with drawne swords, besides foure Squires carrying lances. After whom entered three, being attyred in the habits of Turkes, waited upon by sixe Squires bearing lances. And last of all, one in compleate armour came riding in, being followed by three persons that ledde barbed horses single. This was the honour, glory, and triumph of the second, ending with as great state, ceremonie, and courtly performance as the day did before.

Upon the 12th of June, the Princesse went on hunting; the Palsgrave, with other Germane Princes, the Duke of Lennox, the Earle of Arundell, the Lord Viscount Lisle, and many others, hunted the deere with lances.

Upon the 13th of June, a merriment was presented to her of mad fellowes with tubs set upon their heads, apparelled all in straw, and sitting on horsebacke, did in this manner runne at Tilt one at another with staves, and made excellent pastime to the beholders.

Upon the 14th of June, the Duke of Lennox, the Earle of Arundell and his Lady, the Lord Viscount Lisle, Generall Cicill and his Lady, tooke their leaves of the Prince and Princesse.

And thus, in a few lines, you have a true relation set downe of this Noble and Princely Progresse; the Entertainements in every place, being all honourable, bounteous, magnificent, and costly, fitting such a Nation to bestow upon a person, then whom none is more worthy.

The Tract here concluded is followed in Howes' Chronicle by another entitled, "A Breefe Narration or Discription of the Countrey of the most Noble Prince Elector Palatine, Prince Frederick the Fift, Duke of Bavarya, &c. with the magnificence and estate of his Courte at Heidelberg, with other things of worthy memory. Translated out of High Dutch into English, by Doctor Medus, one of his Majestie's Chaplaynes." It begins: "Considering, indifferent Reader, how sinisterly some of ignorance and others of malice conceive of the state and dignity of the high and mighty Prince Elector Palatine," &c.—The account of the Princess's Entertainment (beginning only with the 1st of June) is pirated from the preceding Tract, the language being most ingeniously diversified.

The Palatinate is thus described : “ His Highnesse Countrey is neither so small, unfruitfull, or meane, as is by some supposed. It is in length about 200 English miles the Lower and Upper Countrey. In the Lower the Prince hath twenty-six walled Townes, besides an infinit number of good and faire villages, and twenty-two houses. The land is very fruitfull of wine, corne, and other comfortable fruits for man’s use, having the Rheine and Neckar running through it. The Upper Countrey hath not so many walled Townes and Princely houses ; but those that are, bee generally fairer than in the Lower, especially Amberg and Newmarket.” Respecting the magnificence of the Palsgrave’s Court the same Writer mentions “ one thing which setteth out the Prince Elector’s greatnesse not a little ; that besides 6000 trained footemen, who staid there all the Solemnitie, and were fed by the Prince abroad in the fields, there were every meale, during the abode of the Commissioners and the German Princes there, above 500 tables furnished, and about 6000 persons, guests and servants, fed at them. But because this was extraordinary, know that Court is ever great ; for it hath 1000 persons in ordinary, daily fed, and clothed twice a yere, at the Prince’s charge, and he keepeth 300 great horse. Besides, his Highnes hath many Governors, Lieutenants, Deputies, Receivers, Clarkes, Captains, and other Officers abroad in several governments, who have all large salarie ; and he is served in such state, that every meale a marvelous great kettle-drum striketh, and twenty-four trumpets sound the service, twelve and twelve. Wherefore let envy, malice, and ignorance cease ever henceforth to carp at that they cannot paralel, now they may know it ; and all honest mindes rest satisfied herewith.”

Here indeed, as Mr. Lodge remarks in his excellent memoir of the Princess, this Happy Couple “ for six years reigned, with equal prosperity and popularity, in the most beautiful country, and perhaps over the happiest people of Germany, untill in a moment of blind and silly ambition they sacrificed those incomparable advantages to the mere sound of a Regal Title and an ill-founded reputation of Independent Sovereignty ¹ ! ”

¹ Portraits of Illustrious Personages, folio edit. vol. III.

THE EXPENCES OF THE LADY ELIZABETH'S MARRIAGE, 1612-13.

(From the "Abstract or brief Declaration of his Majestie's Revenew," which is the fourth part of "The Narrative History of King James, for the first fourteen years.")

For the Palsgrave's diets at his standing-house [Essex House]	-	£.6000
For his diets at his Instalment into the Garter	- - -	4000
For diet at the solemnization of their Marriage	- - -	2000
For lodgings for the Palsgrave's Servants	- - -	830
To the Lord Hay to provide apparell and other necessaries for the Lady Elizabeth	- - - - -	6252
More to the Lord Hay for more necessaries for the Lady Elizabeth, and for furnishing her Marriage-chamber	- - - - -	3023
To the Lord Harington to provide apparell and like necessaries for the Lady Elizabeth	- - - - -	1829
More to him for jewells for her, and for apparell for her Servants	- - -	3914
To diverse merchants for silks and other necessaries	- - -	995
For charges about the Lords' Mask at her Marriage	- - -	400
To the Treasurer of the Navie for the Navall Fight performed on the Thames	- - - - -	4800
For the Fireworks on the Thames	- - - - -	2880
To Sir Edward Cecill, appointed Treasurer for her journey to Hedleberg, for her purse	- - - - -	2000
To certaine gentry, to take the assurance of the Lady Elizabeth's joynture, and for setling of the same	- - - - -	800
To the farmours of the great customes, to pay bills of exchange when she arrived beyond the seas, for charges of her journey	- - -	8000
For her transportation to Flushing	- - - - -	5555
Totall charge of her dyets, marriage, provisions, and transportations ¹	- - - - -	£.53,294
Paid over to the Palsgrave's Agents for her portion	- - -	£40,000

¹ The sum total or some of the items must be trivially incorrect.

The Articles in Rymer's Fœdera respecting the Princess Elizabeth's Marriage are as follow:

1. The Acta Prima, in Latin, signed by the Privy Council.
2. The Ratification of the same, by John, Administrator of the Palatinate.
3. A Commission to the Lord Chancellor, in English, for collecting the Aid, dated at Woodstock, August 30.
4. A Commission to the Sheriffs of the several counties respecting the same, in Latin.
5. Treaties between the Commissioners of England and Bavaria, in Latin, dated, Westminster, November 17.—By these it was provided that the Marriage should take place in England before the beginning of May, and the Affiancing on the 27th of December; that the King should give the Princess, as her portion, the sum of £.40,000 sterling or an equivalent in the money of Amsterdam, to be paid within two years, namely, £.10,000 every six months after the Marriage; that the Elector Palatine should settle on the Lady Elizabeth in case of widowhood the sum of £.10,000 sterling; that to secure the said sum, certain districts there named should be consigned to the King's Commissioners; that the Palaces of Frankenthal and Fridelsheim should be assigned for the residence of the Lady Elizabeth; that the Elector should allow his Bride during their married life after the first four years the sum of £.1500 beyond her household expences; that the Princess should have in her household, besides those in the stables, 36 male and 13 female servants, all appointed by herself, to be fed, clothed, and kept in her husband's Court, according to the schedule annexed; that the Princess and her Household should be at liberty to use the rites of the Church of England; that the King should pay the expenses of his Daughter to the town of Bacharach, where the Elector should meet her and thence conduct her to Heidelberg; that should the Elector die (*quod Deus diu avertat!*) the Princess should be at liberty, with or without her children, to reside in Great Britain or elsewhere "cum omnibus bonis paraphernalibus et jocalibus suis," and receiving the aforesaid annual sum of £.10,000; that, should there be children, none should be married without the advice and consent of the King of Great Britain, his heirs, and successors, and that, providing there should be no sons, the daughters should receive, besides a portion from their father, the aforesaid sum of £.40,000, and all their mother's possessions in her right; and that if, after the death of the Elector, the Lady Elizabeth should wish to contract a second Marriage, whether there be children or not, she should receive, instead of the annual sum of £.10,000, the sum of £.40,000 only; on condition that, should there be any issue of the first Marriage, they should enjoy their mother's property; but should there be issue of both Marriages, it should be divided equally; reserving to the Princess the

power of disposing by will or otherwise of her own "paraphernalia," which liberty was also reserved to her, if she died in her husband's lifetime.

6. An Account of the salaries of the Princess's Servants during her marriage.
7. The Patent of the English Commissioners, dated Westminster, Oct. 29.
8. The Elector's appointment of his Commissioners, dated Heidelberg, Sept. 6.
9. The King's Confirmation of the aforesaid Treaty. (No. 5.)
10. Ratification of the same, by John Count Palatine and Louisa Electress, dated Heidelberg, Dec. 8, and Frederick Count Palatine, at London, Dec. 20.
11. The Commission, in English, to the Earl of Nottingham, to carry the Lady Elizabeth and Count Palatine home, dated Westminster, March 31, 1613.
12. Commission, in Latin, to the Duke of Lennox and others to carry the Princess to the town of Bacharach, dated Westminster, April 10.
13. A Deed to confirm the Princess's Dowry, dated Westminster, April 10.
14. A Declaration, in French, from the Count Palatine, of the Reception of the Princess, dated Heidelberg, June 10.
15. A Confirmation, in Latin, of the Matrimonial Treaties, with an account of the Revenues assigned to the maintenance of the Princess, dated Heidelberg, June 4.
16. An Act of the Count Palatine confirming the Princess's dowry, dated Heidelberg, July 1.
17. The Elector's Receipt in full for the Princess's portion, dated Feb. 14, 1614-15.

BIBLIOGRAPHICAL LIST OF TRACTS

ON THE

PRINCESS ELIZABETH'S MARRIAGE.

Besides the various Tracts already re-printed and described (see pp. *463, 527, 536, 554, 566, 587, 591, 612, 620,) the following were other literary productions (chiefly poetical) published on this occasion. In number they cannot compare with those on Prince Henry's death; but some of the authors, it will be observed, were the same as had lately tried their skill on that melancholy subject.

ANONYMOUS.

1. "A Ballad called, 'England's Wellcome to the high and mightie Prynce Frederick, the Fifth of that name, Countie Palatine of Rhyne, first Elector of the Empire.' "

Entered in the Books of the Company of Stationers', October 23.

2. "A Ballad called, 'England's Comfort, or a joyfull newe Songe of the Ladye Elizabeth and the Count Palatine, which two Princes were betrothed together in his Majestie's Chappel at Whitehall, upon St. John's-day last, 1612, before his Majestie and divers of the Nobilitie.' "

Entered at Stationers' Hall, Jan. 14.

3. "A Book called, 'Triumphs; or, a Description of the Roiall Celebration of the Princesse Elizabeth and Prince Palatine's Nuptialls, with the true manner of the Fireworks, Sea-fight, &c. With a Ballad of the same matter.'"

Entered at Stationers' Hall, Jan. 30.

4. "Great Brittain's Generall Joyes, London's Glorious Triumphs, on the Marriage of the Elector Palatine. *London*, 1613."

Entered at Stationers' Hall, Feb. 14. It was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, Aug. 3, 1820, for 5s. to Mr. Rodd.

5. "A Ballad called, 'The honour of Englishmen drawing [during] the Glorouse Tryumphs performed by the chiefe of the English Nobilitie at Tilt, before the King and Queen's Majesties, the Paulsgrave, and the Ladie Elizabeth, at Whitehall uppon the 24 March 1612.'"

Entered at Stationers' Hall on the 25th of March.

WILLIAM FENNOR, the Rhymster, mentioned in p. 399, composed on this occasion, "A Description of the Palsgrave's Countrey," and "Cupid's Journey to Germanie, and the effects of the same," the former of which he had the honour of reciting before the King, Prince, and Lady Elizabeth at Whitehall. They were both inserted in his "Descriptions," which will be re-printed entire under 1616.

MARIA DE FRANCHIS.

6. "Marriage Hymne on the Marriage of Frederick Count Palatine and Elizabeth daughter of James I., a Poem in three books, 1613."

This and Fennor's "Descriptions" were bought by Mr. Hill for £.6. 16s. 6d. at Mr. Bindley's sale, Jan. 15, 1819.

THOMAS HEYWOOD, Author of an Elegy on Prince Henry (see p. 507), and another on the King (see under 1625).

7. "The Marriage Triumphe, solemnized in an Epithalamion in memory of the happie Nuptials of Prince Palatine and the Lady Elizabeth, solemnized the 14th of February 1612."

This was entered at Stationers' Hall, Feb. 15; and with a "Lampoon on Sir John Denham, one leaf," was bought by Mr. Rodd for 6s. at Mr. Bindley's sale, Aug. 3, 1820.

JAMES MAXWELL, M. A. another Poet on Prince Henry's death (see p. 507).

8. "A Monument of Remembrance erected in Albion in honor of the hopeful Marriage, magnificent departure from Brytayne, and honorable receaving in Germanie at Heidelberg of the two most noble Prynces Frederick and Elizabeth."

This was entered at Stationers' Hall, March 30. A copy is in the British Museum; another was sold at Mr. Bindley's sale, Feb. 17, 1819, for £.2 to Mr. Sturt; a third appeared at Mr. Garrick's sale, April 28, 1823, in a volume which sold for £.16. 16s. 6d. One with "portraits of Frederick and Elizabeth inserted" was marked £.5. 15s. 6d. in Mr. Thorpe's Catalogue for 1824.

OXFORD UNIVERSITY.

9. "Epithalamia, sive Lusus Palatini in Nuptias Friderici Comitis Palatini, et Elizabethæ Jacobi M. B. Regis Filiæ. Oxon. 1612," 4to.

Copies of this are in the British Museum and Bodleian Libraries.—The University of Cambridge does not appear to have published any Verses on this occasion.

ANDREW WILLET.

10. "Sermon on the Marriage of Frederick V., Count Palatine of the Rhine, and Elizabeth, sole daughter of our King James I., Feb. 14, 1612, on Psalm xlv. 10, 11, &c."

Copies of this Discourse are in the British Museum, Bodleian, and Sion College Libraries. In the Bodleian Catalogue it is called a "Treatise on Salomon's Marriage."

GEORGE WITHER, a third Poet on Prince Henry's death (see p. 511).

11. "Epithalamia; or Nuptiall Poemes upon the most blessed and happy Marriage betweene the high and mighty Prince Frederick the Fifth, Count Palatine of the Rhine, &c. and the most vertuous, gracious, and thrice-excellent Princesse Elizabeth, sole daughter to our dread Sovereigne James, King of Great Brittain, &c. Celebrated at Whitehall, the 14th of Feb. 1612-13." 4to, 1613; 8vo, 1620, 1622, 1633.

Wither, having been deemed over cynical in his book of "Satyricall Essayes," wrote this partly to shew that he was not wholly inclined to that vein; but more especially, as he professes, out of the love and duty which he owed to the personages celebrated. (See the Bibliographer, vol. I. p. 181.) The Epithalamia are three, and are followed by seven epigrams.—This work of Wither's, as his "Obsequies of Prince Henry," is wholly re-printed in the "Restituta," vol. I. pp. 425—426. The original edition was entered at Stationers' Hall, Feb. 10, as "to be printed when it is further authorized." A copy at Mr. Bindley's sale, Aug. 3, 1820, was purchased for 9s. by Mr. Rodd.



Upon Easter-day, the 18th of April, says Howes, "the King, the Palsgrave, and the Ladie Elizabeth¹, received the Sacrament in the King's Chappell;" Bishop Andrews, as usual, preached².

"And the next day Prince Charles was Confirmed, or Bishopped, in the same Chappell, by the Lord Archbishop of Canterbury, in the presence of the King and Queene; the Prince having bin formerly conferd withall by the Lord Archbishop and the Lord Bishop of Bath and Wells touching the principles of Religion; unto whom he manifested such Princely understanding and forwardnes,

¹ This insertion of the names of the Palsgrave and Ladie Elizabeth must be a careless error of Howes.

² His Sermon of this year is among his "XCVI Sermons," the Eighth on the Resurrection. The text is in Col. iii. 12.

and upon the sudden gave such ready answers and reasons of his faith, as drave them and all the rest that heard him into great admiration, the Prince being but twelve yeeres of age the 19th of November last."

Mr. Robert Houghton, being on the 21st of April appointed a Puisne Judge of the King's Bench¹, about the same period was knighted at Whitehall.

In this month the first beginnings of that diabolical plot which consummated the murder of Sir Thomas Overbury², and eventually the ruin of the Earl of Somerset, were put into execution³. The circumstances were thus related by Mr. Parker to Sir Ralph Winwood, in a Letter, dated London, April 22:

"Right honorable; Since I wrote to my Lady there is fallen out an accident whereof I thought fit to advertize your Lordship. Yesterday, about six of the clock, my Lord Chancellor and my Lord of Pembroke were imployed by the King to speak with Sir Thomas Overbury, and to make him an offer of an Ambassage into the Low Countries or France, which he would. Whereto he made answer, that 'he was not capable of such employment for want of language, nor able to undergoe it by reason of his weakness, being so exceedingly troubled with the spleen that if he had a long letter to write he was feign to give over; therefore he was not fit to attend any busyness, as in accepting this offer he must be forced to do. And whereas it was alleadged that his Majesty intended this for his good and preferment, he would not leave his country for any preferment in the world⁴.' Some say he added some other speach which was very ill taken, but

¹ The salaries of the three Puisne Judges of the King's Bench, Sir John Dodridge, Sir John Croke, and Sir Robert Houghton, were to each £.188. 6s. 8d. *per annum*; being "for his Fee at £.154. 19s. 8d. by the yeer, and £.33. 6s. 8d. by the yeer for his Circuits; — besides their yearly allowances for their diets in their Circuits."

² Of the rise of Sir Thomas Overbury as favourite of the Royal Favourite, see p. 200. His fall is well known to have been occasioned by his enmity to the Earl's adulterous connection with the Countess of Essex, and from his entreating the Earl to relinquish her, advice prompted rather by disinterested friendship than a prudent regard to his own interests.

³ The proceedings for the Countess of Essex's divorce were measures which quickly followed; see under July 8.

⁴ How greatly Mr. Parker and the whole Court (the King included) were deceived by the minions of Somerset! On the trial of Richard Weston, the first of those wretches that suffered for the crimes of their superiors in this dreadful case, "Sir Thomas Overbury's willingness to accept the service was proved by the deposition of two or three severall witnesses read in Court, and by the oath of Sir Dudley Diggs, who voluntarily at the arraignment, in open Court, upon his oath witnessed how Sir Thomas had imparted to him *his readinesse to be employed on an Ambassage!* The Earl, as

what it should be I cannot yet learn. But not to trouble your Lordship with length,—this report being made to the King, he sent my Lord of Pembroke for the Lords who were in Council, (my Lord Chancellor staying still with his Majesty,) to whom he declared when they were come, that he could not obtaine so much of a Gentleman and one of his servants as to accept of an honorable imployment from him. In conclusion he gave them order to send him to the Tower, where he is *close prisoner*. I leave all circumstances and preambles to your Lordship.

“Now for my Lord of Rochester, who had but newly begun to leave his chamber¹, he knew nothing till all was done and he gone, which your Lordship may imagine did much perplex him. But that evening my Lord of Pembroke and Sir Henry Nevill were with him; and so were again this morning; who have given him so good advice, that if he follows it, as I hope he will, all will be well with him and no hurt to his friend².”

Towards the end of April the Queen began her long-intended³ Progress to Bath. I have not discovered the Gests of her Progress, but her Entertainments at various places were so remarkable that they have left very copious memorials:

“She went,” says Mr. Chamberlaine⁴, “in great state; for besides the Lord Chancelour⁵, the Countess of Darby⁶, and the Countess of Dorset⁷, she hath divers other Ladys that follow her; as also the Earl of Worcester⁸, the Lord Danvers⁹, with other Noblemen. Though she made account to stay at Bath but ten days, yet it is said this journey will stand the King or her in £.30,000.

“The King brought her on her way to Hampton Court; her next remove was well abusing the King's favours in moving to shew favour where he meant the party should take no benefit, as bearing dishonest friendship in conference with Sir Thomas concerning the employment, perswaded him to refuse to serve Ambassador, where, quoth he, ‘I shall not be able to perform such kindnesse to your advantage as having you with mee; and if you be blamed or committed for it, care not, *I will quickly free you from all harm*.’ Thus betrayed by a friend, Sir Thomas refused to serve in that nature.” Truth brought to light by Time, p. 113.

¹ He appears to have kept it intentionally. ² Winwood's Memorials, III. 447. ³ See p. 436.

⁴ In a Letter to Sir Ralph Winwood, May 6, from which see other extracts hereafter. ⁵ See p. 334.

⁶ The Lord Chancellor's wife, of whom fully in p. 145. She accompanied the Queen to Wells in August this year, see p. 674.

⁷ This celebrated woman (our old acquaintance as Lady Anne Clifford, and who has been so frequently noticed in the course of this Work) we last met with in p. 348.

⁸ The Earl of Worcester, of whom see vol. I. p. 162, appeared conspicuously in the Queen's Train at Bristol (see pp. 643, 645); and at Wells in August (see pp. 674). ⁹ Of whom see p. 191.

to Windsor; then to Causham, a house of the Lord Knolles, not far from Reading¹;" at which Town, on Quarter-day, Friday 3d March, provision had been made for the Queen's stay at the Friars². It was then concluded that the Company should attend, but that no gift should be presented, "unless advised by the Lord Knolles, High Steward³." In the register of St. Mary's Parish is the following entry: "Item, to the Ringers when the Queen came through the Towne, and the 5th of August, 6s. 8d.⁴"

On the 27th of April, her Majesty was received by Lord⁵ and Lady⁶ Knollys at Caversham House, a mile and a half distant from Reading; "where she was entertained with Revells, and a gallant Masque performed by the Lord Chamberlain's four sons⁷, the Earl of Dorset, the Lord North, Sir Henry Rich, and Sir Henry Carie⁸," the talents of Dr. Campion⁹ being again brought into action:

¹ See p. 451.

² Vide *ibid.*

³ Corporation Diary, quoted in Coates's Reading, p. 20.

⁴ *Ibid.* p. 131.

⁵ Of whom see "Queen Elizabeth's Progresses," vol. III. p. 564, where he appears as "Mr. Comptroller," entertaining his Royal Mistress at Caversham in 1601; and also this Work, vol. I. p. 560, where he appears as the King's host at Rotherfield Greys, his principal seat.

⁶ Lady Knollys was Elizabeth, daughter of Thomas Earl of Suffolk. After the Earl of Banbury's (Lord Knollys) death, she was married, secondly, to Edward Lord Vaux, and having given birth to two sons a short time only previously to the Earl's decease, hence has arisen the much-disputed question respecting the legitimacy of the Earls of Banbury, as their descendants have styled themselves, they being, as has been contended, the illegitimate issue of Lord Vaux.

⁷ The four eldest of the Earl of Suffolk's seven sons;—Lord Walden, Sir Thomas, Mr. Henry, and Sir Charles, Howard. They came forward on this occasion from regard to their sister Lady Knollys, as they did again in Campion's Masque at the Marriage of their sister Frances to the Earl of Somerset.—Lord Walden, who was also a most indefatigable Tilter, as has been already shewn, has before appeared a performer in the Masques at the Marriages of the Earl of Essex, Lord Hay, and Lord Hadington (see pp. 5, 108, 186); and Sir Thomas Howard at the two former.—Mr. Henry now appears for the first time a Masquer, but he was engaged in the last Tilt (see p. 609), and will be found in that on New Year's-day 1613-14.—Sir Charles Howard was the fourth son of the Earl of Suffolk; of his wife and family see Brydges's Peerage, vol. III. p. 154. When he was knighted is not clear; as three of these names received that honour from James the First, one at the Charterhouse, May 11, 1603; one at Newmarket in February 1609-10; and a third at Whitehall in September 1612. See vol. I. p. 114; and pp. 408, *463, of this Volume.

⁸ Of these latter four Masquers, Sir Henry Carey alone has before appeared in that character, and that once only, in Ben Jonson's Masque at Lord Hadington's Marriage (see p. 186); but all had been Tilters at Court, and were engaged in the last "great Tilting;" see p. 609.—The whole eight of the present Performers were in the following December engaged in the Masque by Dr. Campion at the Earl of Somerset's Marriage mentioned in the last note.

⁹ See 104, 505, 553.

A RELATION OF THE LATE ROYAL ENTERTAINMENT,
 GIVEN BY THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE LORD KNOWLES,
 AT CAWSOME HOUSE NEAR REDDING;
 TO OUR
 MOST GRACIOUS QUEENE, QUEENE ANNE,
 IN HER PROGRESSE TOWARD THE BATHE,
 UPON THE SEVEN AND EIGHT-AND-TWENTIETH DAYES OF APRIL 1613¹.

Written by THOMAS CAMPION, M. D.

For as much as this late Entertainment hath beene much desired in writing, both of such as were present at the performance thereof, as also of many which are yet strangers both to the busines and place; it shall be convenient, in this generall publication, a little to touch at the description and situation of Cawsome seate. The house is fairely built of bricke, mounted on the hill-side of a parke, within view of Redding, they being severed about the space of two miles².

¹ "London: Printed by John Budge, and are to be sold at his shop at the South doore of S. Paule's and at Britaine's Burse, 1613." This Tract contains 16 pages, including the Lords' Masque, which has been printed in pp. 554—565. Mr. Garrick had two copies of it; one is now in the British Museum, and the other was sold at his sale, bound up with other tracts, April 30, 1823.—Mr. Dent has a third. At the sale of Dr. Farmer's Library in 1798 a copy was sold for 13s. 6d.; at that of Thomas Pearson, Esq. in 1798 for 14s.; at that of Sir M. M. Sykes in 1824 for ; and that of Mr. Rhodes, April 20, 1825, for £.10 to Mr. Leigh, who bought on the same occasion, each for £.10, Campion's Masque at Lord Hay's Marriage, printed in pp. 105—121; and his Masque at the Earl of Somerset's Marriage, which will be introduced hereafter. N.

² This fair brick house was pulled down in the reign of George the First by the then possessor, Earl Cadogan, who erected the present elegant structure, somewhat further from the Thames, and built a cedar-room for the reception of that Monarch. Capability Brown was employed in laying out the beautiful grounds. For a view and description of the modern house see Neale's Seats, new series, vol. I. It is now the seat of Colonel Marsack. N.

Before the park-gate, directly opposite to the house, a new passage was forced through earable-land, that was lately paled in, it being from the parke about two flight shots in length.

At the further end whereof, upon the Queene's approach, a CYNICK appeared out of a bower, drest in a skin-coate, with bases of greene calico, set thick with leaves and boughes; his nakednesse being also artificially shadowed with leaves; on his head he wore a false haire, blacke and disordered, stucke carelessly with flowers.

The Speech of the CYNICK to the Queene and her Traine:

CYNICK. Stay; whether you humane be or divine; here is no passage. See you not the earth furrowed, the region solitarie? Cities and Courts fit tumultuous multitudes; this is a place of silence; heere a Kingdome I enjoy without people; my selfe commands, my selfe obeyes; host, cooke, and guest my selfe; I reape without sowing, owe all to Nature, to none other beholding; my skinne is my coate, my ornaments these boughes and flowers, this bower my house, the earth my bed, herbes my food, water my drinke: I want no sleepe, nor health; I envie none, nor am envied; nether feare I, nor hope; nor joy, nor grieve; if this be happinesse, I have it; which you all that depend on others' service or command want.—Will you be happy? be private; turne pallaces to hermitages, noise to silence, outward felicitie to inward content.

A Stranger on horseback was purposely thrust into the troupe disguised, and wrapt in a cloake that he might passe unknowne; who at the conclusion of this Speech beganne to discover himselfe as a fantastick TRAVELLER in a silken sute of strange checker-worke, made up after the Italian cut, with an Italian hat, a band of gold and silke, answering the colours of his sute, with a courtly feather, long guilt spurres, and all things answerable.

The TRAVELLER's Speech on horseback.

TRAVELLER. Whither travels thy tongue, ill-nurtur'd man? thy manners shew madnesse, thy nakednesse povertie, thy resolution folly! Since none will undertake thy presumption, let mee descend, that I may make thy ignorance know how much it hath injured sacred eares.

The TRAVELLER then dismounts and gives his cloake and horse to his foot-man; in the meane time the CYNICK speakes:

CYNICK. Naked I am, and so is truth; plaine, and so is honestie; I feare no man's encounter, since my cause deserves neither excuse nor blame.

TRAVELLER. Shall I now chide or pitie thee? thou art as miserable in life, as foolish in thy opinion. Answer me; doest thou thinke that all happinesse consists in solitarinesse?

CYNICK. I doe.

TRAVELLER. And are they unhappy that abide in societie?

CYNICK. They are.

TRAVELLER. Doest thou esteeme it a good thing to live?

CYNICK. The best of things.

TRAVELLER. Hadst thou not a father and mother?

CYNICK. Yes.

TRAVELLER. Did they not live in societie?

CYNICK. They did.

TRAVELLER. And wert not thou one of their societie, when they bred thee, instructing thee to goe and speake.

CYNICK. True.

TRAVELLER. Thy birth, then, and speech, in spite of thy spleene, make thee sociable; goe, thou art but a vaine-glorious counterfeit, and, wanting that which should make thee happie, contemnest the meanes. View but the Heavens; is there not above us a sunne and moone giving and receiving light? are there not millions of starres that participate their glorious beames? is there any element simple? is there not a mixture of all things? and wouldst thou only be singular? action is the end of life, vertue the crown of action, society the subject of vertue, friendship the band of societie, solitarinesse the breach. Thou art yet yong and faire enough, wert thou not barbarous. Thy soule, poore wretch, is farre out of tune; make it musically, come, follow me, and learne to live.

CYNICK. I am conquered by reason, and humbly aske pardon for my error; henceforth my heart shall honour greatnesse and love societie; leade now, and I will follow, as good a fellow as the best.

The TRAVELLER and CYNICK instantly mount on horsebacke, and hasten to the parke-gate, where they are received by two KEEPERS, formally attired in greene perpetuana, with jerkins and long hose, all things else being in colour sutable, having either of them a horne hanging formally at their backes, and on their heads they had greene Monmouth-caps, with greene feathers, the one of them in his hand bearing a hooke-bill, and the other a long pike-staffe, both painted greene. With them stood two ROBINHOOD-MEN, in sutes of greene striped with blacke, drest in doublets with great bellies and wide sleeves,

shaped fardingale-wise at the shoulders, without wings; their hose were round with long greene stockings; on their heads they wore broad flat caps with greene feathers crosse quite over them, carrying greene bowes in their hands and greene arrowes by their sides.

In this space cornets at sundrie places intertaine the time, till the Queene with her Traine is entred into the parke; and then one of the KEEPERS presents her with this short set Speech:

KEEPER. More then most welcome, renowned, and gracious Queene! Since your presence vouchsafes to beautifie these woods, whereof I am Keeper, be it your pleasure to accept such rude entertainment as a rough Wood-man can yeeld. This is to us a high holyday, and henceforth yearly shall be kept and celebrated with our countrie sports, in honour of so Royall a Guest. Come, friends and fellows, now prepare your voices, and present your joyes in a silvan dance.

Here standing on a smooth greene, and environed with the horsemen, they present a Song of five parts, and withall a lively silvan dance of sixe persons. The ROBINHOOD-MEN faine two trebles, one of the KEEPERS with the CYNICK sing two counter-tenors, the other KEEPER the base; but the TRAVELLER, being not able to sing, gapes in silence, and expresseth his humour in antike gestures.

SONG.

*Dance now and sing; the joy and love we owe
Let chearfull voices and glad gestures shewe;
The Queene of Grace is shee whom we receive,
Honour and State are her guides,
Her presence they can never leave.
Then in a stately Silvan forme salute
Her ever flowing-grace;
Fill all the woods with ecchoed welcomes,
And strew with flowers this place;
Let ev'ry bow and plant fresh blossomes yeeld,
And all the aire refine.
Let pleasure strive to please our Goddesse,
For shee is all divine.*

*Yet once againe, let us our measures move,
And with sweet notes record our joyfull love,
An object more divine none ever had.
Beautie, and heaven-borne worth,
Mixt in perfection never fade.
Then with a dance triumphant let us sing
Her high-advanced praise;*

*And e'en to Heav'n our gladsome welcomes,
 With wings of musick raise.
 Welcome, O welcome, ever-honoured Queene,
 To this now blessed place;
 That grove, that towre, that house is happy
 Which you vouchsafe to grace.*

*This Song being sung and danced twice over, they fall instantly
 into a kinde of curranta, with these wordes following:*

*No longer delay her,
 'Twere sinne nowe to stay her
 From her ease with tedious sport;
 Then welcome still crying,
 And swiftly hence flying,
 Let us to our homes resort.*

In the end whereof the two KEEPERS carrie away the CYNICK; and the two ROBINHOOD-MEN the TRAVELLER, when presently cornets begin againe to sound in severall places, and so continue with varietie while the Queen passeth through a long smooth greene way, set on each side with trees in equall distance¹; all this while her Majestie being carried in her caroch. But because some wet had fallen that day in the forenoone, though the garden-walks were made artificially smooth and drie, yet all her foot-way was spread with broad-cloth, and so soone as her Majestie with her Traine were all entred into the Lower Garden, a GARDINER with his MAN and BOY, issued out of an arbour to give her Highnesse entertainment. The GARDENER was suted in grey, with a jerkin double jagged all about the wings and skirts, he had a paire of great slops with a cod-peece, and buttoned gamachios all of the same stuffe. On his head he had a strawne hat, pibaldly dressed with flowers, and in his hand a silvered spade. His MAN was also suted in gray with a great buttoned flap on his jerkin, having large wings and skirts, with a paire of great slops and gamachios of the same; on his head he had a strawne hat, and in his hand a silvered mattox. The GARDINER'S BOY was in a

¹ In the front of Caversham House were formerly three avenues of trees, the centre one of which was called the Queen's Walk, in memory of this Visit of Queen Anne; and another the King's Walk, in remembrance of Charles the First, who, when a prisoner at Windsor in 1647, was allowed to meet his children here. "Being to stay," says Lord Clarendon, "some time at Caversham, a house of the Lord Craven's near Reading, his children were likewise suffered to go thither and remained with him two days, which was the greatest satisfaction the King could receive."—Caversham had before been a prison; for when on the 18th of Jan. 1621-2, the guilty Earl and Countess of Somerset were released from the Tower, they were commanded to "repaire either to Grayes or Cawsham, the Lord Wallingford's houses in the county of Oxon, and remain confined to one or either of the said houses, and within three miles compasse of either of the same, untill further order be given by his Majesty." N.

prettie sute of flowrie stuffe, with a silvered rake in his hand. When they approached neere the Queene they all valed bonet, and bowing low, the GARDNER began, after his anticke fashion, this Speech :

GARDINER. Most magnificent and peerelesse Deity, loe I, the surveyer of Lady Flora's workes, welcome your Grace with fragrant phrases into her bowers, beseeching your greatnesse to beare with the late woodden entertainment of the Wood-men, for woods are more full of weeds then wits, but gardens are weeded, and Gardners witty, as may appeare by me. I have flowers for all fancies, tyme for truth, rosemary for remembrance, roses for love, harts-ease for joy, and thousands more, which all harmoniously rejoyce at your presence; but myselfe, with these my Paradisians heere, will make you such musick as the wilde Woodists shall bee ashamed to heare the report of it. Come, Sirs, prune your pipes, and tune your strings, and agree together like birds of a feather!

A Song of a treble and base, sung by the GARDINER'S BOY and MAN, to musicke of instruments, that was readie to second them in the arbour.

*Welcome to this flowrie place,
Faire Goddess and sole Queene of Grace!
All eyes triumph in your sight,
Which through all this emptie space
Cast such glorious beames of light.*

*Paradise were meeter farre
To entertaine so bright a starre;
But why erres my folly so,
Paradise is where you are,
Heaven above and Heaven below!*

*Could our powers and wishes meete,
How well would they your graces greeete,
Yet accept of our desire:
Roses, of all flowers most sweete,
Spring out of the silly brier!*

After this Song, the GARDINER speaks againe :

GARDINER. Wonder not, great Goddess, at the sweetnesse of our garden aire, though passing sweet it be; Flora hath perfumed it for you, Flora, our mistresse and your servant, who invites you yet further into her paradise. She invisibly will lead your Grace the way, and we, as our duetie is, visibly stay behinde!

From thence the Queene ascends by a few steps into the Upper Garden, at the end whereof, neere the House, this Song was sung by an excellent counter-

tenor voice, with rare varietie of division unto two unusuall instruments, all being concealed within the arbour.

*O joyes exceeding !
From love, from power of your wisht sight proceeding !
As a faire morne shines divinely,
Such is your view, appearing more divinely.*

*Your steppes ascending,
Raise high our thoughts for your content contending ;
All our hearts of this grace vaunting,
Now leape as they were moved by inchaunting.*

So ended the Entertainement without the House for that time ; and the Queene's pleasure being that night to suppe privately ; the King's violins attended her with the sollemnest musick ; as an excellent consort in like manner did the next day at dinner.

Supper being ended, her Majestie, accompanied with many Lords and Ladies, came into the Hall, and rested herselfe in her chaire of state ; the scaffoldes of the Hall being on all partes filled with beholders of worth, suddainely forth came the TRAVELLER, GARDINER, CYNICKE, with the rest of the crue, and others furnished with their instruments, and in manner following entertained the time :

TRAVELLER. A hall, a hall for men of moment, Rationals and Orationals ; but yet not all of one breeding ; for I an academicke am, refined by travell, that have learn'd what to courtship belongs, and so devine a presence as this. If we presse past good manners, laugh at our follies ; for you cannot shew us more favour than to laugh at us. If we prove ridiculous in your sights, we are gracious ; and therefore we beseech you to laugh at us ! For mine owne part, (I thanke my starres for it !) I have beene laught at in most parts of Christendome.

GARDINER. I can neither bragge of my travels, nor yet am ashamed of my profession ; I make sweet walkes for faire Ladies ; flowers I prepare to adorn them ; close arbours I build wherein their Loves unseene may court them ;—and who can do Ladies better service, or more acceptable ? when I was a child and lay in my cradle, (a very pretie child !) I remember well that Lady Venus appeared unto me, and setting a silver spade and rake by my pillow, bad me prove a Gardiner ; I told my mother of it (as became the duetie of a good child), whereupon she provided straight for mee two great platters full of pappe ; which having duetifully devoured, I grew to this portrature you see, sprung sodainely out of my cabin, and fell to my profession.

TRAVELLER. Verily by thy discourse thou hast travelled much, and I am ashamed of myselfe that I come so farre behind thee; as not once to have yet mentioned Venus or Cupid or any other of the gods to have appeared to mee. But I will henceforth boast truely that I have now seene a Deitie as farre beyond theirs as the beautie of light is beyond darknesse, or this feast (whereof we have had our share,) is beyond thy sallets!

CYNICK. Sure I am, it hath stir'd up strange thoughts in me; never knewe I the difference betweene wine and water before. Bacchus hath opened mine eyes, I now see braverie and admire it, beautie and adore it. I find my armes naked, my discourse rude; but my heart soft as waxe, ready to melt with the least beame of a faire eye; which till this time was as untractable as iron.

GARDINER. I much joy in the conversion; thou hast long beene a mad fellow, and now provest a good-fellow, let us all therefore joyne together sociably in a song, to the honour of good-fellowship.

CYNICK. A very musicall motion, and I agree to it.

TRAVELLER. Sing that sing can, for my part I will onely, while you sing, keepe time with my gestures, *à la mode du France*.

A Song of three voyces with divers instruments.

*Night as well as brightest Day hath her delight,
Let us then with mirth and musicke decke the Night;
Never did glad Day such store
Of joy to Night bequeath;
Her starres then adore,
Both in Heav'n and here beneath.*

*Love and beautie, mirth and musicke yeeld true joyes,
Though the Cynickes in their folly count them toys.
Raise your spirits nere so high,
They will be apt to fall;
None brave thoughts envie,
Who had ere brave thought at all.*

*Joy is the sweete friend of life, the nurse of blood;
Patron of all health, and fountaine of all good;
Never may Joy hence depart,
But all your thoughts attend;
Nought can hurt the heart
That retaines so sweete a friend.*

At the end of this Song, enters SILVANUS shapt after the description of the ancient writers, his lower parts like a goate, and his upper parts in an anticke habit of rich taffatie, cut into leaves; and on his head he had a false

haire, with a wreath of long boughes and lillies, that hung dangling about his necke; and in his hand a cypresse branch, in memory of his love Cyparissus. The GARDINER espying him, speakes thus:

GARDINER. Silence, Sirs, here comes Silvanus, God of these Woods, whose presence is rare, and imports some noveltie.

TRAVELLER. Let us give place, for this place is fitter for Deities then us.

They all vanish and leave SILVANUS alone, who comming neerer to the state, and making a low congee, speakes:

SILVANUS. That health which harbours in the fresh-air'd groves,
Those pleasures which greene hill and valley moves,
Silvanus, the commander of them all,
Here offers to this state imperiall;
Which as a homager he visits now,
And to a greater power his power doth bow;
Withall thus much his duetie signifies,
That there are certaine semi-deities,
Belonging to his Silvan walkes, who come
Let with the musicke of a sprightly drum,
To keepe the night awake and honour you,
Greate Queene, to whom all honours they hold due;
So rest you full of joy, and wisht content,
Which, though it be not given, 'tis fairely ment.

At the end of this Speech there is suddainly heard a great noise of drums and phifes, and, way being made, eight Pages first enter, with greene torches in their hands lighted; their sutes were of greene satten, with cloakes and caps of the same, richly and strangely set forth. Presently after them, the eight Maskers came, in rich imbrodered sutes of greene satten, with high hats of the same, and all their accoutrements answerable to such noble and Princely personages as they concealed under their visards¹. And so they instantly fell into a new Dance; at the end whereof they took forth the Ladies, and danced with them, and so well was the Queene pleased with her intertainment, that shee vouchsafed to make herselfe the head of their revels, and graciously to adorne the place with her personall dancing.

Much of thenight being thus spent with varietie of Dances, the Maskers made a conclusion with a second new Dance.

At the Queene's parting on Wednesday in the afternoon, the GARDINER with his MAN, and BOY, and three handsome COUNTRY MAIDES, the one bearing a rich bagge with linnen in it, the second a rich apron, and the third a rich mantle², appeare all out of an arbour in the Lower Garden, and meeting the Queene, the GARDINER presents this Speech:

¹ See their names in p. 629. N.

² The presents are described in Mr. Chamberlain's Letter, as "a dainty coverled or quilt, a rich carrquenet, and a curious cabinet, to the value in all of £.1500." N.

GARDINER. Stay, Goddesse, stay a little space ;
 Our poore countrie love to grace,
 Since we dare not too long stay you,
 Accept at our hands, we pray you,
 These meane presents, to expresse
 Greater love than we professe,
 Or can utter now for woe
 Of your parting hast'ned so.
 Gifts these are, such as were wrought
 By their hands that them have brought,
 Home-bred things, which they presumed,
 After I had them perfumed
 With my flowrie incantation,
 To give you in presentation,
 At your parting ; come, feate lasses,
 With fine cursies and smoth faces,
 Offer up your simple toyes
 To the Mistris of your joyes ;
 While we the sad time prolong
 With a mournfull Parting Song.

A Song of three voices continuing while the presents are delivered and received.

*Can you, the author of our joy,
 So soone depart ?
 Will you revive, and straight destroy ?
 New mirth to teares convert ?
 Oh ! that ever cause of gladnesse
 Should so swiftly turne to sadnesse !
 Now as we droupe, so will these flowers,
 Bar'd of your sight ;
 Nothing availe them heavenly showres
 Without your heavenly light.
 When the glorious sunne forsakes us,
 Winter quickly overtakes us.
 Yet shall our praiers your waies attend,
 When you are gone ;
 And we the tedious time will spend,
 Remembring you alone.
 "Welcome" here shall you heare ever,
 But the word of parting never.*

Thus ends this ample Entertainment, which, as it was most nobly performed by the Right Honourable the Lord and Ladie of the House, and fortunately executed by all that any way were actors in it, so was it as graciously received of her Majestie, and celebrated with her most Royall applause.

The places the Queen visited between Caversham House and Bath I have not ascertained¹; nor have I any other particulars of her Entertainment² in that City, but the following anecdote of her bathing:

“About the conclusion of the sixteenth century a new bath was erected by the liberality of an individual. Mr. Bellot, the great benefactor to the Church, was the author of this additional convenience to the City. He purchased a parcel of the priory land then on sale, and constructed a large cistern on the spot for the use of the poor. This cistern, which was called the New Bath, adjoined to the King's Bath, and was fed by its overflowings. It continued to bear this name, and to be appropriated to the use of the poor, till the year 1615 [1613], when both its appellation and its services were changed. The occasion was as follows:

“As Anne, the Queen of King James the First, was bathing in the King's Bath, there arose from the bottom of the cistern, just by her Majesty, a flame of fire, like a candle, which had no sooner ascended to the top of the water than it spread itself upon the surface into a large circle of light, and then became extinct. This so frightened the Queen, that, notwithstanding the Physicians assured her the light proceeded from a natural cause, yet she would bathe no more in the King's Bath, but betook herself to the New Bath, where there were no springs to cause the like phenomena; and from thence the cistern was called the Queen's Bath. It was soon enlarged, and the Citizens erecting a tower or cross in the middle of it in honour of the Queen, finished it at the top with the figure of the crown of England over a globe, on which was written in letters of gold, ANNA REGINA SACRUM³.”

On the sixth of May, Mr. Chamberlain in a long Letter to Sir Ralph Winwood sent the following interesting news:

“I doubt not but you have heard what a noble part and example my Lord of Rochester shewed here of late; for we being at a dead lift, and at our wits' end for want of money, he sent for some Officers of the Receipt, and delivering them

¹ She very probably in more instances than “Caussam” stopped at the same houses as the sick Earl of Salisbury in 1612;—see p. 446.

² There is still standing in John Street an old mansion called Barton House, the residence of John Sherston, Mayor of Bath in 1590, which enjoys the reputation of having lodged Queen Elizabeth. See her “Progresses,” vol. III. p. 251. This very probably also accommodated Queen Anne.

³ Warner's Bath, p. 320.—No authority is given.

the key of a chest, bid them take what they found there for the King's use, which they say was four or five-and-twenty thousand pounds in gold.

“Neither can you chuse but be perfect in the true cause of Sir Thomas Overbury's committing to the Tower, which was a contemptuous answer, and refusing of forreign imployments offered him in the King's name, and especially that he insisted that the King could not in law nor justice force him to forsake his country. But some say he was most urged to that of Muscovy, which drave him to that peremptory and unmannerly answer.

“Some say my Lord Rochester took Sir Thomas Overbury's committing to heart. Others talk as if it were a great diminution of his favour and credit; which the King doubting, would not have it so construed, but the next day told the Councill, that he meant him dayly more grace and favour, as should be seen in short time; and that he took more delight and contentment in his company and conversation than in any man's living ¹.

“The Duke of Lenox had a pretence to be made Duke or Earle of Richmond, and so by consequence an English Peer of Parliament; and to that purpose had procured divers Noblemen's hands to present to the King on that behalf; but finding more difficulty in the presenting of it than he expected, hath given it over for the time ².

“There was speech of a divorce to be prosecuted this Term betwixt the Earl of Essex and his Lady, and to that end he was content to confess (whether true or faigned) insufficiency in himself; but there happened an accident that hath altered the case, for she having sought out a certaine wise woman, had much conference with her, and she (after the nature of such creatures) drawing much money from her, at last cousened her of a jewell of great value, for which being apprehended and clapt up, she accused the Lady of diverse strange questions and projects; and in conclusion, that she dealt with her for the making away of her

¹ Mr. Chamberlain says in a postscript to this Letter, “I understand that Sir Robert Killegrew was yesterday committed to the Fleet from the Counsayl-table, for having some little speech with Sir Thomas Overbury, who called to him as he passed by his window as he came from visiting Sir Walter Raleigh.”

² Not for long;—he was advanced to the English Peerage on the 6th of the following October by the title of Baron Settrington of Settrington, Yorkshire, and Earl of Richmond.—He was created Earl of Newcastle-upon-Tyne and Duke of Richmond, May 17, 1623, nine months before his death.

Lord, as aiming at another mark¹. Upon which scandal and slander the Lord Chamberlaine and his friends think it not fit to proceed in the divorce.

“The Prince Palatine, before his going, made a suit to the King for the enlargement of the Lord Grey. The King told him, he marvelled how he should become suiter for a man he neither knew nor ever saw. He answered, that he was recommended to him by his unckle the Duke of Bouillon, the Prince Maurice, and the Count Henry, who had better knowledge of him. Then the King said: ‘Son, when I come into Germany, I will promise you not to importune you for any of your prisoners.’ Since that time the Lord Grey hath been restrained and kept more straight, for having had conference with one of the Lady Arbella’s women, who, being strictly examined, was faine to confess that it was only matter of love and dalliance. The Lady Arbella is likewise restrained of late, though they say her braine continues still crackt; and the Countess of Shrewsbury more close than at any time before, and not without cause, as the voice goes.

“It is thought the Prince Palatine went not away so well satisfyed, being refused in diverse suits and requests; and I hear that from Canterbury he wrote to the Archbishop, complaining that the King did not use him like a Son, but rather like a youngling or childish youth not to be regarded. It is said he presented the Archbishop, before his going, with plate to the value of a thousand pounds, and the Lord Chancellor with somewhat less value; but gave nothing else to any of the Councill. I marvail the Lady Elizabeth went away so meanly attended by Ladies; for I hear not of any but the Lady of Arundell (who hath an errand of her own into Italy), and the Lady Harington, besides her own Attendants.

“Here is the Marquess de Villa come Ambassador from the Duke of Savoy. He is a principall person, and carries a great state, and is accounted otherwise a very gallant Gentleman and of great sufficiency. He had an audience on Tuesday and yesterday, and they say will tarry the Queen’s return, having presents for her of great value. He leaves a Resident or Leidger behind him, one Gabellione, a bankquier of great dexterity.

¹ This was silenced at this time by the Countess and her guilty paramour. Yet it seems wonderful that even the powerful influence of the Favourite should have been able to suppress the public rumours.

“ The old quarrell was renewed at Canterbury by my Lord Bruce or Kinloss upon Edward Sackville, at the Prince’s being there. My Lord bare away two or three good buffets on the face, (for Sackville had no weapon, having given his rapier instantly before to the Palsgrave,) and so they were parted and made friends by the Noblemen that were present. The Lord Bruce is since gone to France, I think *to learn to fence* ¹.”

On the 13th of May, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“ Upon Easter Tuesday one Scot preached before King and Lords at Court, upon this text in one of the Gospels, ‘ Beware of Men ;’ and in the course of his Sermon spake and glanced at matters somewhat suspiciously. Whereupon he was called before the Council, and the Lord Privy Seal insisted much to know, if he had any particular meaning to him ². But he so carried himself, that there was no advantage taken against him. Only he was enjoined to explain himself better in the same place. But the King hearing of it, said, that he heard the Sermon himself, and was able to judge ; and if he had found cause, would have referred him over to the Council himself ³.”

On Whitsunday, the 23d of May, the King attending Divine Service at Whitehall Chapel, Bishop Andrews there preached before him on Ephes. iv. 30 ⁴.

The Queen having “ made her abode for some weeks within the City of Bath, purposely for the use of the waters there ⁵,” removed to Bristol:

“ On Friday the 4th of June, Queen Anne, daughter of Frederic King of Denmark and Norway, and sister to Christiern, the now King of those countries, Wife of our King James ⁶, came from Bath, where she had been for the recovery of her health and for her recreation, to this City, accompanied by the Earl of Worcester ⁷, who was in the coach with her Grace. The Mayor [Abel Kitching, Merchant,] and Council made such provision for receiving and entertaining of her Majesty, as could be accomplished upon so sudden and short warning ; where-

¹ Winwood’s Memorials, vol. III. p. 452—455.

² The Earl of Northampton was already labouring under those torments of a guilty conscience, that hastened his death. That event occurred June 15, 1614. ³ Birch’s MSS. Brit. Mus. No. 4173.

⁴ The Bishop’s Discourse is in his “ XCVI Sermons,” the sixth on the Holy Ghost.

⁵ Anthony à Wood, in his Fasti (by Bliss) vol. I. col. 270. Her Majesty returned to Bath in the beginning of August ;—see hereafter.

⁶ The welcome entertainments the Corporation of Bristol had made to the Queen’s Nephew (the Prince of Brunswick), and the King’s Uncle (as they called the Duke of Lennox), have been related in p. 310.

⁷ See p. 628.

upon he caused all the streets, where her Majesty should pass through, to be sanded, and all the Companies of Arts and Mysteries, with three bands of Trained Soldiers, to the number of 500, well apparelled and furnished, under the charge of three Captains, to be in readiness for the attending and guarding her Highness through the streets.

“ And so the Maior, Aldermen, Sheriffs, and Common Council, all in scarlet gowns, took their horses and rode two by two on foot-cloths, each one attended by a Page, and accompanied by the chiefest Masters of the several Trades with their hoods, from the Tolzey¹ to Lafford's Gate², where they met and received her Majestie, whose Herald went before her, sounding with a trumpet. Whereupon the Maior fell upon his knees, and Mr. Lawrence Hide, Esquire³, then Recorder of the City, gravely uttered a brief but very handsome Oration to her Majestie; which being ended, the Maior, using some gratulatory speeches in few words, presented to her Highness a fair purse of satten, embroidered with the two letters A. R. for her name, in which purse were 100 unites of gold, amounting to the summe of £.110⁴, as a gift from the Mayor and Commonalty of this City, which her Majestie most graciously accepted. The Maior and Recorder having taken horse again, the last Common Council-man did ride first; and the Maior, with chain of gold⁵ about his neck, being placed between two Gentlemen Ushers rode bare-headed next before the Lord Carie⁶, who rode next before her Majestie's chariot. When they came up Wine-street all the Trained Soldiers of the City stood along each side of the street, every one according to his ability, having their apparel suitable to their colours, with hats and

¹ The Tolzey at Bristol is the Town-hall. It was built in 1550, and rebuilt in 1615 on a more extensive plan, and the windows made higher.

² Situated at the end of the Old Market, at the eastern extremity of the City, in Gloucestershire.

³ “ Mr. Lawrence Hide, Esquire,” was the fourth son of Laurence Hyde of Westhatch, Wilts, Esq. whose third son was Sir Nicholas Hyde, Lord Chief Justice, and whose grandson by his second son Henry was the celebrated Sir Edward Hyde, the first Earl of Clarendon. Mr. Lawrence had been appointed Recorder of Bristol in 1604; he was afterwards Attorney to the Queen, and was knighted at Whitehall, Nov. 7, 1614. He was succeeded as Recorder of Bristol in 1615 by his brother Nicholas, mentioned above. Sir Lawrence resided at Salisbury; — his fourth son Alexander was afterwards Bishop of that See.

⁴ The Unite, the largest gold coin, had been increased in value from 20s. to 22s. by Proclamation dated May 18, 1611.

⁵ See p. 553.

⁶ Lord Carew, of whom see vol. I. pp. 208, 511, was Vice-Chamberlain to the Queen and Receiver General of her Majesty's Revenues; vide *ibid.*

feathers accordingly, one company in red hose and white doublets; another in black and white; and the third in white and scarlet; every one by his dress seeming to be a commander rather than a private soldier. And so the Maior with his Brethren and Companie brought her Majestie to the house of the Ladie Marques, sometime the house of Sir John Younge¹, Knight, no sword being then borne before the Maior (her Majestie being guarded by the souldiers as she passed through the streets), and no sound of drumme or gunne being heard as she passed. But when her Highness was placed and settled in her lodging, the bands of soldiers being all set in good order upon the Kay, they loaded their guns, and by a private notice from the Earl of Worcester, who, being at a house on the Kay, held his handkerchief out of a casement, they gave a handsome volley, and immediately thereupon 60 pieces of great ordnaunce were discharged near the Kay². Then the soldiers marched to the Green before the Queen's lodgings, and fired another volley, her Majestie beholding them forth of her chamber-window, and much commending them. Then they departed, leaving an honourable guard at her Majestie's lodgings.

"The next day, being something rainy weather, her Majestie made her abode in her house, Mr. Maior entertaining many of her servants at dinner in his house that daie.

"On Sunday following, June 6, the Maior and Council in their scarlet gowns, with their officers, went on foot to her Highnes' Court, and attended her to the College³, the Maior walking before the coach, which was drawn by four white horses; but the Sword of State was not carried by him, in honour to the Queen. Her Grace was accompanied in her coach by the Earl of Worcester and

¹ The family of Younge were very principal merchants in Bristol. One of the eight ships furnished by Bristol in the service of Henry VIII. against the French was the barque Younge of 400 tons. Sir John Young's house was situated on St. Augustine's Back; it was here Queen Elizabeth had resided for three days in 1574, on which occasion she knighted her host; see her "Progresses," vol. I. p. 398. After Sir John's death we find it still called by his name; when the Duke of Lennox was entertained there in 1609, it was the dwelling of "the Bishop of the City;"—see p. 310. "The Ladie Marques," who now inhabited it, must have been Lucy, daughter of Thomas first Earl of Exeter, and wife of William fourth Marquis of Winchester, she being the only Marchioness at this period. She died in 1614, having borne her husband six sons.—She has been mentioned in vol. I. 194.

² The Cathedral seems to have been commonly so called. Queen Elizabeth is said to have gone to "the College;" see her "Progresses," vol. I. p. 399. The open area near the Cathedral is now called College Green. ³ Another account says, "42 guns were fired from the Tower on the Quay."

the Lord Bishop of Wells¹, the Maïor going on foot next to the coach, bare-headed, with the chain of gold about his neck, and all the Council in their places before him, and the Ladies of her Court riding on horses next behind the coach; the Trained Soldiers making a guard for her Majesty unto the College. When she came out of the coach, the Lord Worcester on the right side and the Lord Bishop of Wells on the left side did lead and conduct her into the chancel, where she heard the Sermon preached by Mr. Doctor Robson², the Dean; and then she returned to the Court in the same state that she was conducted therefrom.

“Next day Mr. Mayor invited the Lords and Ladies, and other Knights, who dined at his house; and in the afternoon, to shew the Queen some diversion, there was a Shew³ made on the river at high-water against the mouth of the river at the Gibb; and there was built a scaffold in Canons' Marsh⁴ finely decorated with ivy-leaves and flowers for her Majestie to sit in and see the fight. And when the time came, the Mayor and Aldermen in their black gowns did bring her Majesty thither, they riding before in their foot-cloths; and having placed her, a ship came up under sail and cast anchor, and drew their ensigns upon their top-masts, making obeisance to the Queen. After that they spread their flag again; and up came two gallies of Turks and set upon the ship, and there was much fighting and shooting, three bands of soldiers being placed, one on each side of the two rivers, having apparel for the time. The Turks boarded the ship, and were put off again with loss of men; some of them running up the main-mast to pull down the flag, were thrown overboard into the river, while the ship's side did run over with blood⁵. At length the gallies were beaten off and fled, and some of

¹ Dr. Montague; see p. 546.—It does not appear why the Bishop of Bristol, Dr. John Thornborough, was absent on this occasion.

² Simon Robson, a native of Durham, was admitted a Fellow of St. John's College, Cambridge, in 1573. He was installed Dean of Bristol, Oct. 10, 1598, being then D. D.; and, dying in 1617, was buried in the Cathedral, but no monument was erected to him.

³ A similar Shew to that now described was exhibited before Queen Elizabeth at her Visit to Bristol in 1574. Its description by Churchyard, as well as all the Speeches he composed for that occasion, may be found in the first volume of her “Progresses,” pp. 396 *et seq.*

⁴ A large meadow on the South of the Cathedral. — “The Gibb” is the adjoining bank of the river; it is sometimes called the Gibbtaylor and in ancient records spelt Gybb Tailleür, an appellation Mr. Barrett, the Historian of Bristol, supposed might be derived from a man whose name he had met with in the course of his antiquarian researches—Gilbert le Tailor.

⁵ A note informs us, that “six bladders of bloud were powred out of the scubber-holes!”

the Turks remained prisoners and were presented to her Majesty, who laughing said, that they were not only like Turks by their apparell, but by their countenances. This Fight was so excellently formed for the time, that delighted her Majesty much; and she said, she never saw any thing so neatly and so artificially performed. The crowds which attended to see this exhibition were astonishing; not fewer by computation than 30,000 persons on the three sides of the two rivers. Her Majesty was then conducted back to her lodging by the Mayor and Council, and the Trained Soldiers gave her two vollies at parting. The same night the Ladie Drummond¹, with other Ladies and Gentlemen being her Majesty's servants, supped at Mr. Maior's house. And then the Ladie Drummond did deliver unto Mr. Maior a fair ring of gold set with diamonds very richly, supposed to be worth £.60, as a favour from the Queen's Majestie, which he wore next day about his neck, hung by a chain of gold.

"On the next day, being Tuesday, about two o'clock the Maior and Council, as they did bring her into the City at first, so they attended her on her departure, guarding her with the Trained Soldiers in their armour; and at Lafford's Gate the Maior, on his knees, and his Brethren, took their leaves of her Majestie, who gave them great thanks for her Entertainment, and promised to shew the City any favor in any thing wherein she might have occasion; and she was pleased to say, that 'she never knew she was a Queen till she came to Bristoll;' and so, thanking all the people, she departed, with tears in her eyes, to Siston in Gloucestershire, to the house of Mr. [Sir] Henry Billingsly."

Such is the account of the Queen's Entertainment at Bristol as afforded from the united labours of several old Chroniclers²; but there was one Robert Naile, an apprentice of Bristol, and one of the Trained Soldiers, who thought the subject not unworthy the Epic Muse, and soon after published the following Poem, if Poem it can be called, under the patronage of "the Mayor and Sheriffes:"

¹ Lady Jane, third daughter of Patrick third Lord Drummond, a Lady of distinguished abilities, who had been governess to the Royal Children, and of whose nuptials to Lord Roxburgh under the particular auspices of the Queen, in the February following the present date, see hereafter.

² It has been here copied from the Historical Memoirs of Bristol, by the Rev. Samuel Seyer, M. A. just published.

A RELATION
OF THE
ROYALL, MAGNIFICENT, AND SUMPTUOUS ENTERTAINMENT
GIVEN TO THE HIGH AND MIGHTY PRINCESSE
QUEEN ANNE,
AT THE RENOWNED CITIE OF BRISTOLL,

BY THE MAYOR, SHERIFFES, AND ALDERMEN THEREOF; IN THE MONETH OF JUNE LAST PAST, 1613.

TOGETHER WITH THE ORATION, GIFTS, TRIUMPHES, WATER-COMBATS,
AND OTHER SHOWES THERE MADE¹.

To the Right Worshipfull ABELL KITCHIN, Mayor; and the Worshipfull
CHRISTOPHER CARY and JOHN BARKER, Sheriffes of the Cittie of
BRISTOLL; health.

Right worshipfull and worshipfuls, considering that the libraries of the Greekes and Romaines are plentifully stuffed with the records of their owne achievements, whereby they have not onely preserved their names, but have also gotten thereby an everlasting fame unto all posterities; therefore having so fit an occasion to manifest my love, and so worthy a subject to expresse my dutie, I have thought good to tempt your acceptance in this small presentment of her Majestie's Royall Entertainment; which although it be not beautified with refined words, nor yet sufficiently adorned with poetical tearmes, as the worthinesse of the subject requireth, yet resting on your favourable censures, and therewithall desiring

¹ "London: Printed for John Budge, and are to be solde at the great South doore of Paule's, and at Britaine's Bursse, 1613."—This Tract is here printed from the original in the Bodleian Library, which, as far as I have been able to ascertain, is now a unique copy. It has hitherto been unobserved by every Bristol historian. The poem, however, has been discovered in a MS. Calendar of Bristol events written by one William Adams, who lived temp. Charles I. (which calendar is in the possession of Charles Joseph Harford, Esq.), and has been re-printed therefrom, with many errors of Adams in the copying, in the third number of the Bristol Memorialist, 1816. Many important variations will be found on comparison, and certainly the present copy gives the preferable readings, as well as several passages omitted by the Chronicler. N.

you that even as the skilfull geometritian, who at the games of Olympus by the bignes of Hercules' foot gessed of the stature of his whole body; even so by the outward view of this small treatise you would vouchsafe to measure the willingness of mine inward intent, if that power were correspondent to my ready heart. I have therefore adventured, under your favourable protection, for to lay open unto the whole world, the truth of this forepast Triumph, for three chiefe and especiall causes.

First, that such a memorable example of sincere affection, by true and loyall subjects expressed to their Sovereigne, should not be forgotten. Secondly, that it might be a meane to stirre up all succeeding ages in imitation of the like, to shew both dutifull obedience and ready service unto their gracious Prince. Thirdly, and lastly, that it might stop the slanderous mouthes of backe-biting and detracting sichophants, who by secret libels or open raylings oppose themselves alwayes against the truth; envying all those by the splendor of whose admired vertues, their hypocriticall shewes of fained pietie are eclipsed.

For, as the sunne obscures all lesser lights,
So Vertue's lustre dampes all Envie's sleights.

Finally, if you but daigne to shew a favourable aspect upon these orphan lines, I will neyther feare the distaste of the cinick, nor the sole conceite of the censorious; for, although many carpes are expected when curious eyes come a-fishing, yet our patience shall suppe up, and make roome for better services, when Zoilus with his barkings, or Momus with his detractions, waites to serve the table. Meane while, prostituting these rude lines to the sole approbation of your judicious censures, and myselfe to your service,

I rest, yours humbly devoted, ROBERT NAILE.

TO THE CHRISTIAN READER, HEALTH.

Most gentle Reader, here behold, I proffer unto thee
The prentice mitte; though simply dight, accepted let it be.—
Expect not heere refined phrase in these my Verse I sing,
My Muse hath never dranke as yet of the Castalian spring;
Nor seene Parnassus' lofty pride, as Poets now adayes,
Who by unequalized workes have wonne immortal prayse.
No self-conceite of learned skill, nor yet desire of prayse,
Hath now inforc'd my barren Muse from silent sleepe to raise
Her artlesse penne, to write this theame, the which the Muses Nine
To blaze their fame and worthy name shall all in one combine!

Here shalt thou finde the simple Truth, though clad in poore array,
 Which will not blush to shew her face when Falshoode shall decay.
 Here maist thou see that pearle of price (true Loyaltie I meane),
 With heart and hand by Bristoll-men presented to their Queene.
 A worthy subject is my taske, if that my slender skill
 Could countervaille the worth thereof according to my will.
 To courteous Readers who by chance shall these my lines peruse,
 My prentice yeares, and want of age, will want of art excuse;
 But for the scandalizing sort I passe them not a straw,
 Who, like the spider, poyson sucke, whence bees their honey draw;
 Which carping curs of Momus kinde to Æsop's dog I like,
 Who would not eate the hay, nor let the horse to taste a bite;
 But to the partiall Reader's hands these lines I recommend,
 The maiden fruits of all my workes, as to my speciall friend;
 Accept it, therefore, in good part, I humbly thee require,
 Which if thou grant, I have obtain'd the summe of my desire.

ROBERT NAILE.

TO THE AUTHOR AND HIS BOOKE.

From hidden embers of obscuritie
 The glorious lampe of light most clearly shines,
 Whose splendor bright shall still admired be
 By the survivors of succeeding times;
 Such loyall hearts adjoyned with true love
 Inspired by the God of Heaven above.

Whose worthy vertues are by thee displaid,
 And truely penn'd; for Truth no painting seekes,
 Nor Poets' skill doth shee implore for ayde;
 But for her badge simplicitie she keepes,
 For evermore she doth desire the light,
 Triumphant fearelesse over Envie's spight.

Hence! Greeks and Romaines, with your painted stiles,
 And glorious shewes of former triumphs wonne;
 For Bristoll hath outstript your fame the whiles,
 Whose prayse immortall shineth as the sunne.
 The truth hereof we with our eyes have seene,
 In entertainment of our gracious Queene.

JOHN PAYNE.

THE QUEENE'S MAJESTIE'S ENTERTAINEMENT AT BRISTOLL.

If auncient records of renowne unto our yeeres declare
 What deedes by our fore-fathers time of old atchieved were,
 If they for us such care have had, that their successors be,
 By writing of their famous acts that we the same might see;
 Shall wee to our survivors then ourselves ingratefull prove,
 By not recording things which may succeeding ages move,
 In imitation of the like to get a glorious name,
 And to enroll themselves in bookes of never-dying fame?
 The monuments so much renown'd that mighty monarchs reare,
 Piramids and colosso's great doe moulder downe and weare
 In tract of time; so that no forme nor fashion they retaine,
 Whereby the passengers may say, "here once they did remaine."
 But vertuous deedes which by the Muse preserved are for aye
 Shall still abide, when date of these is passed cleane away;
 For vertue's fame immortall is, and never shall it dye,
 Though under ground consum'd to dust a thousand yeares we lye.
 Great Pelæus' Sonne by Hector's death had never famous beene,
 Had Homer grac'd him not with his immortalizing penne¹;
 Shall I let sleepe in silence then, what these myne eyes have seene,
 Bristol's renowned prayse set forth in welcomming our Queene?

The grave and auncient Counsell first in gownes of scarlet dye,
 Attended one each by a Page, did ride triumphantly;
 With foot-cloaths were their horses deckt, no cost they thought too much,
 For to expresse their willing hearts, their love to Her was such.
 To Bristol's utmost ancient bounds marcht on this gallant traine
 To meet her Grace, for whose approach with joy they did remaine.
 Next after them the Companies, each after their degree,
 With joyfull hearts marcht on to meete her Gracious Majestie;
 Like as the drie and thirstie ground by Phœbus' burning dart, [*Simile.*
 With extreame heate for long time vext, and pierced to the hart,
 With yawning throate wide gaping seemes the moisty clouds to call,
 That with their watry drops they would into her bosome fall,
 Thereby to coole her thirsty throate and arme her breast so well,
 That Phœbus' stinging darts she may with moisture colde expell:
 Even so all sorts, both old and yong, with hearts and voyce did crave
 The wished presence of her Grace in compleat joy to have;
 And last of all, tho' last not least, chiefe subject of my verse,
 Three Bands there were whose worthy praise my Muse cannot rehearse;
 The first in white and violet clad, the second blacke and white,
 The third with white and scarlet was in martiall order dight.

¹ Our learned apprentice, who appears to have brought great stores of classic stories from the Grammar School, here seems to allude to Horace's ode, "*Ne forte credas*," &c. N.

But least that curious carping fooles objecting thus may say,
 "Renowned valour seldome lurkes where is apparell gay;"
 I answer them nay, this hath beene by flying fame enroll'd,
 That Bristoll Bands in all attempts have beene of courage bolde;
 For as to please her Princely sight they spared not their goods,
 Like so for to protect her Grace they will not spare their bloods.
 The hardy pilot never is but in a storm descride,
 The perfect gould not known from brasse but when by touchstone tride;
 Even so when storms shall threaten wrack, and blustering billowes beate,
 Then shall appeare, and not till then, where is true valour's seate.
 But haste, my Muse, for too too long the time thou hast delaid,
 To bad men more will not suffice, to good enough is said.

No sooner did her Grace's Traine approach our Citie's bownd,
 And that her Harold 'gan draw neare with blast of trumpets sound;
 Submissive, prostrate on his knees the Maior then fell downe,
 And the Recorder by his side, a man of great renowne;
 With grave aspect and perfect voyce his silence then he brake,
 These words unto her Princely Grace, or not unlike, he spake:

The Oration to her Majestie.

"The rarest jemmes that mortall men to Princes can impart,
 Renowned Lady, true love is; proceeding from the hart;
 This is the gift that God requires, this is the perfect band,
 The seale that re-unites the force and sinewes of our land.
 This Bristol's jemme, set cleerely forth in every subject true,
 On whom your Grace shall bend your face, or daigne to take a view;
 Prostrates itselfe in lowly wise unto your Grace's sight,
 To serve our Sovereaign King or Queene with all our force and might.
 Bristoll, a City of renowne, hath never traitor beene
 To soveraigne rule or regall raigne, or false to King or Queene,
 With thankfulnessse recordeth still full many a favour great
 Injoy'd by famous Kings and Queenes that ruled England's seat.
 But to your gracious Majestie, as to our Sovereaign sweet,
 For preservation of our weale we render praises meet;
 Our liberties by you preserv'd, and many other things,
 You are the fruitful root from whence our hopeful branches springs.
 Ingratefull should we then be thought, and justly be condemned
 For pretermittting duty bownd, unto your Grace descended
 From auncient Christian Kings, adorned with outward graces, blest
 With inward Princely virtues rare, which farre surpasses the rest,
 With Royall Imps blest from above, to raigne and rule this Land
 As long we hope as Sunne and Moone in Firmament shall stand.
 Yet this respect of Princely gifts could not our Citie move
 For to invite your Majestie;—was it for want of love?

Farre be it from their loyall hearts! nay, rather did they feare,
Too meane for such a Princely Guest your entertainment, here
Expected, should approve itselfe, unto their grieve of minde,
When as your Princely Grace the same should insufficient finde;
But now with double bands of love indebted to your Grace,
Wee finde ourselves most strictly bownd; since that unto this place
(Of your accord and Princely love you have approched neare,
To make our Citie by this meanes more famous to appeare;
Most humble thanks I yeeld, therefore, unto your Majestie
In name of all these Citizens, whose service till they dye
Devoted is unto your Grace as to their Sovereigne good,
Not fearing (if occasion were) to seale it with their blood;
Requiring pardon of your Grace for what amisse you finde,
Imputing it not to neglect, but to the want of time;
Accepting this our token small, a pledge of loving hearts,
Who will continue subjects true untill their lives depart;
Treading the steps of Princes great, as by records we finde,
Who never did respect so much the gift as giver's minde.
This done, Bristol, which to our joy and great content hath beene
For evermore accounted still the chamber of our Queene¹
Of England, is and ever will, as yet hath beene tofore,
Unto Queene Anne our gracious Queene, much bownd for evermore.
And I this Citie's worthlesse mowth, which tasted have full oft
Your Princely favours bountifull, on me bestowd for nought
Of worthinesse in mee you fownd, for which I will intreate
For you and all your Royall Traine, unto the mercy seate
Of God, that he may blesse you still, and send you long to raigne,
Unto his glory and our good the truth for to maintaine."

The end of the Oration.

The grave Recorder having then concluded this his Speech,
The Mayor he his Present gave, and did her Grace beseech
For to accept it in good part, as pledge of their good-will,
Which to her Sovereigne Majestie they would continue still;
A rich imbroidered Purse it was, most sumptuous to behold
In owtward shew, the inside was cramm'd full of massie gold.
In gracious wise the Queene receiv'd the present he her gave,
And render'd thanks, more thanks then they of her could wish or crave.
And lastly all the Magistrates in order passing by,
With reverence did (as dutie bownd) salute her Majestie.

When she had passed thus along unto the Citie gate,
Attended on by great and small and many a noble state;

¹ As London was styled *Camera Regis*, so the title *Camera Reginae* seems to be here claimed for Bristol as the second City in the Kingdom. N.

There first her eyes beheld what earst her heart could not conceive,
 Through sodaine admiration rapt, scarce could she credit give
 Unto her sight; for since she first set foot on English grownd,
 Such brave, couragious, hardy men at once she never fownd.
 Admiring at this sodaine sight, she viewes these martiall Bands,
 How each in his assigned place in order firmly stands;
 On eyther side of Bristoll streetes firme joyned like a wall,
 To guard her Grace unto the Court lest ought might her befall,
 Through rashnesse of the multitude, which might her Grace annoy,
 By pressing on for to behold their love, their life, their joy.
 First stood a rancke of hardy Pikes much like a thorny wood,
 Next after them the nimble Shot in order ready stood.
 Here wave the ancients in the winde, there stand the fife and drum,
 Attending when her Majestie would through their squadrons come;
 All to their Captaines' colours were, with scarfes and feathers bright
 Adorn'd, not wanting ought was fit to please her Princely sight.
 Each man for martiall discipline doth a commaunder seeme,
 As though in warres from tender yeares they exercis'd had beene,
 Like some great Princesse who intends to purchase jewels rare, [*Simile.*
 Which by some forraigne Jeweller to her presented are;
 First through his casket doth shee looke, with curious searching eye,
 Where she may to her heart's content some precious jemme descry;
 The first she sets her hand uppon seemes glorious in her sight,
 A second doth more better please her curious appetite,
 The third anone she doth behold, which doth the rest excell,
 So that each latter choyse doth seeme the former to refell;
 That quite confounded in her mind, she knows not which to chuse,
 But still shee thinkes she takes the worst and doth the best refuse:
 Even so our gracious Soveraigne Queene, as through the streets she past,
 Each severall object pleas'd her well whereon her eyes she cast;
 But as amidst these armed Troopes she passing forward went,
 Each martialist unto her view did seeme more excellent.
 So that protesting thus she did unto her Nobles say,
 Brave Bristoll men from all the Land have borne the prize away;
 For this their famous enterprise their credit I will raise,
 Renowned Fame shall spread their name, and Glory sound their praise!
 No thundring shot, noe ratling drums throughout the streets were herd,
 Whiles that her Grace to court-ward went; most strictly was observed
 The Proclamation former made, wherein did plaine appeare,
 The reverend Councel's providence, the Souldiers' love and feare:
 But when she was conducted safe with all her Noble Traine
 Unto her Royall Court, whereat with joy she did remaine,
 And in her Presence-chamber plac'd, there for to take a view
 Of all the Royall pastimes made by this brave martiall crew;

Who march'd along on Bristoll's Key with ensignes brave displai'd,
 And opposite against the Court each Band in order staid,
 Expecting when by sownd of drumme they should commaunded be
 For to discharge their rattling shot before her Majestie;
 Thus ready ranged stood these Bands, expecting nought but time,
 That temporizing space I meane, wherewith we must refine
 Our outward acts and all our deeds, whereby we shall be tride
 As perfect gold which in the fire is seaven times purified.
 Had Hannibal of Carthage knowne what triumph great he lost,
 By time's neglect when he had slaine the mighty Romaine host;
 If he forthwith had marcht to Rome with his victorious bands,
 Rome's lofty pride no doubt had stoop'd to his unconquered hands;
 But when (prevented by report) hee came too late to speede,
 An answere fit he then received for this his sloathfull deede:
 "O Hanibal! full well thou knowest a victory to get,
 But how to use it once obtain'd thou hast not learned yet."
 Musick with Time as native twinnes, afford sweet harmonie,
 Arion's harp, time not observ'd, resownds harsh melodie.
 Each hearb and plant, each fruitfull tree their times appointed know;
 A time there is for husbandmen to reape, a time to sow;
 Therefore I say attend on time, while time attends on thee,
 For time once lost, for gold nor gaine cannot attained be.
 This precious jewell time, I say, did these our Troopes attend,
 That their fore-sight no slanderous tongues in ought might discommend;
 But when at length (by tokens made) was time convenient fownd,
 Two thundering peales of shot were heard, which seem'd to shake the grownd;
 And next for halfe an howre's space the roaring cannons cry,
 With fiery smoke did seem to choake and quench bright Phœbus' eye.
 The airie regions were inflam'd, as if that Phaëton
 (As Poets faine) had rul'd againe the Chariot of the Sunne;
 But when the cannons were discharg'd, and that the skies waxt cleare,
 A joyfull shout by thowsands made which thither did repayre,
 In token of contented joy resownded in the ayre;
 The bells most joyfully did ring with musicke's symphony,
 And still these words "God save our Queene!" re-ecchoed in the skie.
 In auncient Writers doe I finde when (Rome's rare pearle of price)
 Pompey was chosen Chiefe of Seas, by Senators' advice,
 Thence to expell the roysterous rout of braving pirates' might,
 Such was his fame through triumphes wonne in all the Romaines' sight,
 That all applauding his renowne with clamourous shouts and cryes,
 So did they pierce the then vast ayre extant beneath the skies
 With horrid noyse, that flying fowles amazed fell to grownd,
 Through great astonishment and feare of this their thundering sownd.

Much more should we doe for our Queene, inflam'd with ardent love
 Of her attractive vertues rare, proceeding from above,
 And for King James our Sovereigne's sake, whom God preserve and keep
 From all detested treacheries both waking and asleepe;
 For he our Albion Thesius true, hath curb'd our enemie,
 Rome's Minotaure, a restlesse foe to Britaine's Progenie.
 Nay, mighty Jove in mercy great hath clos'd this monster's jawes
 From hurting of his Daniel deare; or tearing with his pawes
 The Holy Saints and Martyres all, whose blood did oft imbrew
 This Mouster's blacke bloud-thirsty throate (which innocents he slew)
 But now (thankes be to God therefore) we are escaped free,
 By our most gracious Sovereigne King, from this our misery,
 Who rules us with most gentle love, from all oppressions free,
 Defending us by peace, from strife, and former tyranny.
 Lycurgus-like with Argus eyes he doth prescribe his lawes,
 To free poore Codrus' innocence from Cræsus' greedy jawes;
 To all his friends he succour sends which are opprest by might,
 Protecting Irus from his foes, and doth maintaine his right.
 When glorious Titan dives in West, and hides him from our eyes,
 For to enlight the darksome night pale Cynthia doth arise:
 Like so bright Soll declin'd with us, when by impartiall death
 The vitall thred was cut in twaine of Queene Elizabeth;
 Yet did no dusky night succeed, for in Elizae's roome,
 As from the Phœnix ashes doth another Phœnix come!
 For why, no sooner Brittain had her former bright eye lost,
 But straight another did begin to shine from Northern coast;
 With hands upheld, may we therefore give thankes unto our God,
 Who like a father did forbear to strike us with his rod.
 Sending to us in mercy great, such an Athenian King,
 Whose learned fame and pietie throughout the world do ring;
 Another Cicero for wit and learned eloquence,
 A valiant Cæsar bountifull for rare magnificence.
 For, to conclude, he doth maintaine God's true and perfect word,
 Which cutteth sinne from off our soules as a two-edged sword.
 But soft, my Muse, attempt thou not so high an interprise,
 His vertues rare for to behold doth daze thy tender eyes;
 So great a taske shall rest for men of most approved praise,
 As none but eagles fix their eyes on Soll's resplendant rayes.
 The Souldiers having thus with joy this first daye's triumph done,
 Which did delight her Grace's sight and all that look'd thereon;
 Returning backe before the Court, each Band in good aray,
 With thundering shot their leaves they tooke and homewards marcht away.
 Thus did her Grace's Court excell with great renowne and fame,
 Where thowsands for to see her face to Bristoll flocking came.

Whereat her Gracious Majestie their kindnesse to requite,
 In open view herselfe did shew to all the people's sight.
 It weare too long for to rehearse the brave pastime and sport,
 Which by the Citizens were made for to delight her Court;
 Their love by proffered service shewen to guard her Majestie;—
 But mine intent is to conclude each thing with brevity.

Sunday.

And for to imitate aright in this the curious Sunne,
 Who doth intend for her delight a nosegay sweet to frame:
 Shee crops not rudely of those hearbes on which she seaseth first,
 But doth select the rarest sort, rejecting those are worst;
 Like so, few words will beautifie what doth from truth proceed,
 For too much matter, pell-mell mixt, doth a confusion breed.
 Wise Caliepie, Queene of Eloquence, assist my stammering tongue
 To finish this triumphant Shew, which now I have begun;
 Lest that my Muse for want of aide under her burden fall,
 As vines unpropped oftentimes upon the ground doe crall.
 No sooner had swift Phœbus' steeds beganne their course to runne,
 Shining with most resplendant rayes upon our horrison;
 But that each Souldier did prepare to guard her Majestie
 Unto the Temple of the Lord with great solemnity;
 Not clad in armes, as earst they weare, with thundering shot that ror'd,
 But with good harts to sanctifie the Sabaoth of the Lord;
 Who hath sixe dayes allotted us to purchase worldly wealth,
 The seaventh alone He hath reserv'd for good of our soules' health;
 That wee this day might praise His name and rest ourselves from sinne,
 As God did rest, when He had made the world and all therein.
 Quite from the Court unto the Church this worthy guard was seene
 In ranckes close standing one by one to safe conduct the Queene.
 But when the Mayor, grave and wise, in most triumphant sort,
 With all the reverend Councell came on foote unto the Court;
 In seemely wise attired all with gownes of scarlet dye,
 For to attend unto the Church her Gracious Majestie;
 Who mownted like faire Cynthia bright into her sumptuous coach
 Drawn by foure milke-white coursers brave; and next her did approach
 The Ladies on their tramping steeds, like faire Diana's traine
 Hunting in the Arcadian woods (as doe the Poets faine).
 The reverend Senats two and two all marching in a row,
 Foremost of all in their degrees unto the Church did goe;
 Lastly on foote (before her Grace with all her Noble 'Traine
 Of Lords and Knights) into the Church the worthy Mayor came,
 The Queene then set in chaire of state with all the residue,
 In their degrees, the Mayor and Shriefes and the Nobillitie;

Where learned Docter Robson did a goodly Sermon frame,
 In setting forth Gods mighty workes and lauding of his name;
 Which Sermon being finished she back return'd to Court,
 Guarded along from Church againe in most triumphant sort.

The reverend Mayor and the Shriefes, their love for to expresse,
 Did feast with most delitious cheare and dainties numberlesse
 Her Noble Trainee; who did admire, as though earth, ayre, and sea
 With all their dainties had conspir'd Bristoll to dignifie;
 Whose true affection to her Prince and peerlesse Progeny,
 Doth rest unparagon'd, as yet, unto posterity.
 With their true love set forth in part, before the world's bright eye,
 Their hearts, their hands, their life, their lands to please her Majestie;
 And to content her Princely Grace shall still ever more be prest,
 For whose most heavenly giufts divine we from above are blest
 By mighty Jove, who through his love hath sent us such a King,
 That turnes our blustering winter's blasts into a gladsome spring.

Deere mother England! with salt teares bend thou thine aged knee,
 And render thanks unto thy God who hath delivered thee;
 When most undoubted was thy feare, then did he comfort bring,
 Shrouding thee safe from tigers' pawes with his all-covering wing.
 For what a terrour had it beene unto thine heart to see
 Through sodaine strife thy streetes exempt from popularity;
 When children fatherlesse each where should in the streetes be found,
 Thy fathers childlesse sighing sore, and in deepe dolours drown'd,
 Thy trusty friends bereav'd of life, sisters rapt from the brother,
 No kinsman left for to lament, or to inter each other;
 Thy virgins bath'd in teares, thy youth amaz'd themselves to see,
 Through grieve of heart bereft of strength and of validity;
 Thy lofty towers tumbled downe, as in the Romains' ire
 Jerusalem was brought to ground by famine, sword and fire.
 But since that God hath now vouchsaft, not for our merit sake,
 But of his mercy and great love, these judgments just to take
 From us, who have by sinne deserved to taste the bitter cup,
 Fil'd with the dregges of God's just wrath, and for to drinke it up,
 Let us give thanks to God, therefore, that nought but thanks doth crave,
 Who hath us rais'd from death to life as Lazarus from grave;
 Continuing still unto our joy the perfect lampe of light,
 His Sacred Word, our spirituall food, and heavenly soules' delight.
 Now bloody Mars is tied in chains, with fierce Bellena bound,
 His armes and adamantine coate lie rusting on the ground.
 Grizely Thanattos, who did still his gastly steps attend,
 Hath lost his stinging force and might by bondage of his friend;
 Harsh Discord, thirsting after blood, with sweet concord is drown'd,
 Whiles peace with plenty in our streetes doth every where abound.

Now may the lambes securely feed from wolfe and tiger's claws,
 Since Pan our watchfull Shepheard hath shut up these monsters' jaws.
 For all these benefits therefore received by our King,
 We will expresse our thankfulness and love (we owe to him
 And to his Royall Progeny) unto our Sovereigne Queene,
 Whose like throughout the world's vast bounds cannot againe be seene.

But soft, my Muse, let anchors fall, strike sailes, thy swift course stay,
 Welcome to shore, remember that this is a Sabbath-day;
 What twixt Enterpe's mirth and sad Melpemen's tragicke stile,
 Thy sences luld, thou badst almost spleeted¹ thy barke ere-while
 Upon the rocke Oblivion cal'd; moreover haike, give eare,
 Munday's triumph implores thine ayde to make his fame appeare.

Munday.

Varietie and change doth best content man's appetite,
 Each object faire seemes fowle if still presented to our sight;
 Sweet Orpheus' musicke cloyes our eares if that it common be,
 Our nature is so apt and prone to mutability.
 By good advice, therefore, it was provided, that her Grace
 With all her Train might not dislike their tarying in this place;
 For every day she sojourned here, in most triumphant sort
 A severall pastime was ordain'd for to delight her Court;
 And as at her first entrance here she did with joy behold
 A martiall troupe of warlike men of courage stowt and bowld;
 Like so for Mundaie's pastime was prepared for her sight,
 Betwixt two gallies and a ship a bloody Water-fight;
 But yet awhile I must looke backe, ere further I proceede,
 Least that my Muse should taxed be for too too hasty speede.
 This Water-fight (by fame divulg'd) full many a thousand drew,
 Both farre and neere for to behold and take a perfect view
 Of Turkes and Turkish gallies both, describ'd in lively wise,
 By worthy Brutes who oft have seene their habit, forme, and guise;
 Nay, many a Christian Marchantman have too too often knownen
 (Though by constraint) to Christ his flocke their love and kindnesse shewen,
 When with the losse of all their goods, (O barbarous cruelty!)
 These cursed Turkes (more deere then life) from them their liberty
 With endles bondage have restrain'd, for gally-slaves condemn'd,
 There bound in chaines for to remaine till death their lives doth end.
 We Christians much more pittie shew to dumbe and sences things
 Then they to Christians will afford,—such deadly rancour stings
 Their cankered hearts, with pride puffed up, inflamed with rage and ire,
 That nothing can aswage their wrath, nor quench this burning fire,
 But Christian blood by their curst hands is powred upon the ground,
 By Christ redeem'd then, when naught else sufficient could be found.

¹ i. e. split. N.

We for our cattel houses frame against cold winter's showers,
 Naked they row when th' angry skies their stormy blasts down powers;
 We give our cattle provender of sundry sorts of graine,
 They scarcely bread and water give their lives for to maintaine;
 We do not presse our beasts with worke beyond their strength and force,
 With restles rowing they oppresse their slaves without remorse;
 And when they have their utmost done, their tiranizing Lords
 Barbarian-like torment their flesh with scourging whips and cords;
 For why no words can aught availe, neither can sighs suffice,
 To mollifie¹ their stony hearts once bent to tirannize.
 Woe worth the sinnes of Christendome which have incenst God's ire,
 In judgments just for to lay waste by famine, sword, and fire,
 Europe his chosen heritage (which doth Christ's name adore),
 By letting in proud Ottoman, that Erimanthean bore,
 Whose cursed race have rais'd their names by Christian Princes' fall,
 While 'mongst themselves they disagreed through civil strife and braule.
 Witnesse the Græcian Empire lost by Christian Kings' neglect
 To these accursed Infidels, whiles each seemes to respect
 Their severall discords and debates, not knowing that the flame
 Once kindled in our neighbour's house will make us feare the same.
 Of all things which God did create of birds, beasts, fish, and fowle,
 The Lord into man's face alone did breath a living soule,
 That he which beares the forme of God imprinted in his face
 Should frame himselfe in heart thereto as God hath given him grace;
 But man corrupted at the first by sinne through Adam's fall,
 Hath ever since a rebell beene, and proved worst of all.
 For why? each beast, observing kinde, his nature doth expresse,
 But man the laws of God above and nature doth transgresse;
 No tiger seekes a tiger's blood his greedy maw to fill,
 In nature's schoole this learn'd, they keepe inviolable still;
 But man to mankinde often proves most cruell, fierce, and fell,
 Yea, Christians unto Christians are (I tremble for to tell)
 As bad, nay, some more worse then Turks; who through their civil broyles,
 Present the Turkes occasion fit to glory in their spoyles.
 When Christian Princes disagree, and each 'gainst other rise,
 Then doe the Turkes with might and maine their ruine straight devise;
 For how can wee expect good fruit where evill is the tree?
 Or credit Turkes who mortall foes unto all Christians be?
 Ye Christian Kings and Potentates, joyne both your hearts and hands,
 To chase this off-scumme Scithian brood from you and all your lands;
 Unite your forces Christian-like from Europe to expell
 Proud Ottoman, too dangerous a neighbour neare to dwell;

¹ An exclamation purely Saxon, signifying *woe betide*; examples in Nares's Glossary. N.

Whose moony standards still attend, expecting but a prey,
 To satisfie their greedy lusts impatient of delay.
 Christ is the head of Christendome, and us the members be,
 Joyned in one, through faith in him, with perfect unitie,
 Even as the members of a man, the head, the hands, the feete,
 Each in his office doth his part, the body for to keepe
 In perfect health; like so should we yeeld helping hands to others,
 Whom God hath made through faith in Christ more near and dear then brothers.

When Amphitrite's flowing waves began to fill their banks,
 Full forty thowsand eyes at least expected when our ranckes
 From Courtward would conduct the Queene unto the River's side,
 For to behold by worthy Brutes this Water-combat tride;
 Who came accompanied at length with all her Noble Court,
 The Mayor with the Councell rode to shew her Grace this sport.
 One of the Bands in warlike wise marching triumphantly,
 Guarded unto the water side her gracious Majestie;
 The other two on eyther side were of the River placd,
 Whose thundering shot resounding shrill this famous triumph grac'd;
 Where placed in her Royall Tent bedeckt with Flora's pride,
 She did attend to see the end of this brave combat tride.

O! that I could in these my verse to Virgil's veyne aspire,
 That all ensuing ages might this glorious act admire;
 Thereby to kindle in their breast a like desire of fame,
 By loyall tokens of their love to equalize the same!
 But since that wishes are but vaine, whereby to purchase skill,
 My want of wealth in learning shall, and not my want of will,
 Condemned be; therefore, my Muse, fear not for to indite
 This worthy triumph as it was perform'd in order right.

Formost of all an English ship came stemming with the tide,
 And right before her Grace's Tent at anchor did she ride;
 Her colours were the Bloudy Crosse (to Britaine's foes well knowne),
 A worthy Captaine was her guide, whose skillfull art was shoone;
 Her Souldiers' brave resolved hearts no danger could impaire,
 Her flags and loftye pendants seem'd to beautifie the ayre;
 But while at anchor there they lay, they gan discry from far,
 Two Turkish Gallies well prepar'd, most mightie men of warre;
 They saw how close they ply'd their oares to board her if they can,
 Then every male begins to stirre, minding to play the man.
 Each one betakes him to his armes to entertain this gwest,
 In emulation which of them should guard his quarter best.
 Some runneth here, some runneth there, all wants for to supply,
 As hony-bees in Summer time, when Phœbus 'gins to fry;
 Their fights hung forth, their musket-shot and murderers each one
 Were ready prim'd, expecting nought but when the Turks would come;

Whose moony standers at the last they plainely 'gan descry,
 Full well provided both for armies and for artillery.
 Their Admirall had all her men appparelled in blew,
 The other red, so neare they did resemble Turkes in hew;
 With targs and cemitours, so that had sharpe-eyed Lincius seene,
 He would have judged that these men Turkes naturall had beene,
 But when by swiftnesse of their oares they did approach them nigh,
 'Amaine, amaine, your topsailes strike,' these fained Turkes did cry.
 'Oh hoy, so hoy, from whence your ship?' 'of England;' 'whither bownd?'
 'For Bristoll port;' 'what will yee yeeld, or else sink and be drownd.'
 'Wee'll fight it to the utmost man,' the Christians did reply,
 'We had much rather loose ourselves then lose our liberty.'
 Then did the fifes and drummes beginne death's fierce alarum sownd,
 The thundring shot with horrid noyse did all things else confownd;
 But when with musket shot they had on each part done their best,
 Their sharp-edgd cemitours they drew for to perform the rest.
 At once both gallies fell aboard (a Turkish stratagem),
 Seeking by numbers to suppress our never-daunted men,
 Who with like courage did sustaine the fierce barbarians' force,
 Confronting them with their bright swords; who, without all remorse,
 Prest on with might and maine; so that to the beholders' eye
 Each 'gainst their opposite did shew their utmost crueltie.
 Like as the waters, whose swift course is stopped by a bay,
 Which though not long, it for awhile, their fury doth delay;
 Till re-uniting of their force they cast it to the grownd,
 So that no mention of the same remaineth to be fownd;
 Even so thes Turkes were for awhile repulsed with disgrace
 By Christians, till their numbers fail'd for to supply each place;
 Whereas the Turkes on all parts did their victory beginne
 Though not by valour yet by force their chieftest hope to winne.
 On either part no slacknesse fownd, but each man firmly stood,
 That Amphitrite's silver waves were stained with crimson blood;
 This fight so bravely was maintaint that winged Victory
 Now on the Christians, then on the Turkes, did looke impartially.
 The Bands which on the river stood on each side did their best,
 With thundring shot to aid their friends by number thus opprest.
 Meanewhile the Turkes with high applause their victory pursu'd,
 Longing to see their Turkish blades with Christian blood embrou'de;
 But trust who list (untill deceived) Fortune's inconstant chance,
 Which mighty Monarches casteth downe, and meaner doth advance;
 When greatest hope of good successe, when health and wealth is highest,
 Then woful wracke, disease, and want with grieve approacheth nighest.
 For whiles upon these Turkes' attempts she sweetly seem'd to smile,
 Bending her browes, she turnes her face, intending greatest guile.

The Christians well perceiving that their forces nought avail'd,
To dawnt these proud usurping Turkes which fiercely them assail'd,
With fained feare retyring backe, they chast them cleane away,
By fiery force, deprivd of this their misconceived prey;
Like as the greedy ravening Wolfe with pinching hunger prest,
Leaving the woods through hils and dales, disdaining quiet rest,
He fearlesse rangeth up and downe, not ceasing till he finde
The harmlesse flocke of tender Lambes, the object of his minde;
Where ready prest to seize upon his long-desired prey,
And satisfie his greedy lust impatient of delay,
The mastive dog pursues his theft, when hastily he flyes
Amaz'd with feare, being dispossess of this his wished prise;
Even so thes Turkes provokt by thirst of honour and renowe,
Striving for to adorne their heads with a victorious crowne,—
Whose Laurell Branches (Fame's desert) are not by cowards gain'd,
But by true valiant noble hearts with sweaty browes obtaind,—
When that they thought all danger past which might themselves oppose,
To their designes, then were they made a spoile unto their foes,
For ofttimes when we glory most in sunshine of delights,
Then winter stormes our joyfull course with sharpe affliction's bites.
Some of these Turkes incenst with rage, not fearing the mischance,
Were mownted up into the shrowdes their prowesse to advance;
Where thirsting for to win renowe with all their force and might,
Against the fury of their foes maintain'd an eager fight:
But when their fortune once declin'd, the Christians they forsooke,
Leaping into the brinish waves, and so their gallyes tooke.
But yet these drops that cool'd their heate quench'd not the burning fire
Of fierce revenge for their disgrace, but more inflamed their ire
And wrathfull rage; remembring that how much more hard the paine,
So much more excellent shall be the triumph they obtaine.
Thus arm'd with hope (for hope is swift and flyes with swallows' wings,
Of mighty monarches it makes gods, and meaner creatures kings),
The second time they did attempt, although unto their cost,
To re-obtaine from Christian hands their former honour lost;
Then might you see the fiery bals like comets blazing bright,
The dusky smoke of powderd shot which dim'd and daz'd their sight,
The moony targs advanced on high from harme to garde their heads,
The Christians' valour in defence which nought their fury dreads,
The fierce aspect on eyther part sufficient to affright
And terrifie great Mars himselfe, the dauntlesse God of Fight;—
For to conclude, they came aboard, where entertained they were
By these brave Brutes with martiall stroakes, untill the former snare
Once more had dispossess their hopes the victory to winne,
Constraining them (to get aboard their gallyes) backe to swimme.

Amidst their fight one of these Turkes, thirsting to get renowne,
 Ere that the Christians him descri'd had tooke their colours downe;
 Wherewith unto the bowspret got, he leapt into the maine,
 And tooke his gally with triumph of this his glorious gaine.
 The valiant heart which once hath felt the utmost force and might
 Of envious Fortune, courage takes, and thrives in her despight;
 That by his resolution bold he doth abate her ire,
 Which sought to worke his overthrow by famine, sword, and fire.
 Even so these Christians having once repulst this furious foe,
 Whose first assault might seeme to threat their wrack and dreadfull woe,
 Their valiant hearts were more inflamd by Turke's disgracefull foyle,
 Hoping their trophyes for to raise by those barbarians' spoyle,
 Who foure times twice did boord their ship with lofty showts and cries,
 And foure times twice they were repulst from this their wished prise;
 So that through feare discouraged they took themselves to flight,
 And left some of their brave consorts by Christians tooke in fight;
 Which captives brought before her Grace on bended knees did crave
 For mercy, which her Majestie with pardon freely gave.

Loe! here behold by this Triumph, as in a mirror plaine,
 How mighty Jove against all foes our quarrell doth maintaine;
 Confounding all their privie plots and close conspiracies,
 Who for to undermine our state against us doe arise.
 Their vaine attempts and bowndles thoughts He turns to their decay,
 Entrapped in the self-same snare they did for others lay;
 For God, which bounds the raging Seas, hath bounded their desire,
 And turns to smoke their proud attempts whereto their thoughts aspire.

This brave exploite thus finished, the Queene with all her Traine
 Attending on her Princely Grace, to Court returnd againe.
 [Where like Neptunians, captive-like, these Turks she saw return
 With lintstock, match, targs, oares in hand, in solemn march to mourne;
 Which being acted to the life so much her Grace contents,
 As new varieties have force mixt with strange complements¹.]

By which time Phœbus 'gan to hide his Chariot in the West,
 And each thing living tooke themselves unto their wonted rest.
 But when that Philomell began her sugred notes to sing,
 At faire Auroraes first approach, which present comfort brings,
 By chasing hence the darksome night with her deluding dreames,
 And bringing in the joyfull light by Sol's all-searching beames,
 When every man with joyfull heart his sleepy bed forsakes,
 And to his daily labours eke himselfe againe betakes;
 The utmost date expired was upon this present day
 Of our most gracious Queene's abode in Bristoll for to stay;

¹ These four lines are not in the printed copy, but are found in Adams's Manuscript, and were perhaps inserted by him. N.

Wherefore the reverend Councell came unto her Princely Court,
For to attend her Majestie prepar'd in seemely sort;
Whereat our Queene most graciously vouchsafed to thanke them all,
Both Mayor, Sheriffes and Aldermen, who on their knees did fall,
And humbly kist her Royall hand, such favor did she shew,
And love for love, which to her Grace in dutie they did owe;
And furthermore for to expresse her love to loyall hearts,
And bounty by rewarding all according to deserts;
A ring with diamonds beset most graciously she sent,
Unto the Mayor as a pledge of her most kinde intent.
In ought she might for Bristol's good in rightfull cause obtaine,
By suite prefer'd unto King James our gracious Soveraigne,
Such tender love hath now possess'd her Grace's Princely breast,
That shee for Bristol's weale will be for ever ready prest;
For as the fixed stars move not within the firmament,
So love by virtuous deedes obtain'd is alwayes permanent.

In solemne wise, her farewell tooke, through Bristoll streetes she past,
Where (as at her first entrance here) a worthy guard was plac'd;
The Mayor with the Councell grave before her Grace did ride,
Her courtly guard of worthy Peeres attended by her side;
The streetes on eyther side were prest with numbers infinite,
Who in her gracious countenance had fix'd their delight;
Whose joyfull hearts expressed were, when they beheld her face,
And with lowd voyces did cry out, "The Lord preserve your Grace!"
Thus roade they with her Grace as farre as Bristol's bounds extend,
Where this their joyfull journey was compell'd to take an end;
In humble wise the Mayor then his loftie steede forsooke,
And of her Grace on bended knees prostrate his farewell tooke;
And all the rest her Subjects true did seeme to change their cheare,
And mourne her absence as the childe that loseth parents deare.
The Martiall Bands in number three, by three brave peales of shot,
Exprest their love, that curs'd hate might not their honour blot.

Thus have you here impartially presented to your view,
A patterne of most loyall hearts unto their Soveraigne true;
Who not alone in hearts, but hands, have manifested plaine
Their love unto our gracious Queene which Envy cannot staine;
Although that Vertue seldom scapes through Envy free from blame,
For why, Detraction will not spare to blot Diana's name.
Yet Vertue, by how much the more hid from the world's bright eye,
By curs'd Hate so much the more it mounteth upon high;
Whose rose-bound head for her deserts shall gaine a glorious crowne,
Incompass'd with a three-fold wreath, Love, Honour, and Renowne;
Therefore let Envy fret and fume, and spit her poisoned bane,
For vertuous deeds shall still enjoy a never-dying fame.

The MS copy of NAILE's Tract concludes with the following lines on the Author.

'Tis good to keep alive what would be dead,
 Therefore hee hits the *naile* not on the head;
 But yet he hath done the office of a naile,
 To fixe that fast, which otherwise would faile;
 As now proves true, his name matching his fate,
 In *nailing* Fame on Eaternities firme gate.

From Bristol, as some of the Chroniclers inform us, the Queen removed to Siston Court¹, only five miles distant, where she was entertained by Sir Henry Billingsley, Knight².

Between Siston and Bishop's Cannings, where we next find the Queen, she must have stopped either at Corsham House³ or Laycock Abbey⁴;—perhaps at both those mansions.

On the 10th of June, Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows from London to his friends Sir Ralph Winwood and Sir Dudley Carleton⁵:

“ Sir Thomas Overbury lyes still by it, and, for ought I hear, is like so to do.

¹ This fine old mansion is still standing. Atkyns says it was built by the family of Dennis, which held the estate from the reign of Edward III. to that of Elizabeth. It consists of an extensive front and two wings, and is ornamented with numerous quarterings of the Dennis family. A curious bird's-eye view of the house, garden, and surrounding buildings is engraved in Atkyns's Gloucestershire, and two modern views, from the pencil of Fiennes Trotman, Esq. its present possessor, are to be found in Fosbroke's History of Gloucestershire, vol. II. p. 56.

² Sir Henry Billingsley was son of an Alderman of London of the same name, who was Lord Mayor in the latter part of 1596, and who purchased the manor of Siston in 1598. Either father or son was M. P. for London in 1603; the latter was knighted at Sir John Fortescue's in that year, see vol. I. p. 192, the former during his mayoralty. On Feb. 2, 1619, Sir Henry conveyed the manor of Siston to his son and heir apparent, a third Henry, who in 1637 sold it to Lionel Earl of Middlesex.

³ Corsham was one of “ the manors within the Queen's dower.” See Lodge's Illustrations, vol. III. p. 211. It was built in 1582, probably by Sir William Halliday, Alderman and Sheriff of London, whose daughter and co-heir married Sir Edward Hungerford, Knt. The antient structure is entirely surrounded with modern additions in the pointed style. It is now the seat of Paul Methuen, Esq. See Britton's History of Corsham House.

⁴ See p. 446.

⁵ The Letters (from Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 460, and Birch's MSS. No. 4173,) being much alike, are here combined.

The Divorce between the Earle of Essex and his Lady is on foot, and hath been argued twice or thrice at Lambeth before certaine Commissioners, but *à huis clos*. The greatest difficulty is that though he be willing to confess his insufficiency towards her, yet he would have liberty to marry with any other, as being *maleficiatus* only *ad illam*. Yet some lawyers are of opinion that if she will take her oath that he is impotent towards her, it will serve the turn; whereof it is thought she will make no bones, as presuming that she is provided of a second. Which I should never have suspected, but that I know *he* was with her three hours together within these two days; which makes me somewhat to stagger, and to think that great folks, to compass their own ends, have neither respect to friends or followers.

“The Queen is not yet returned from the Bath, or thereabouts, having been at Bristol, and received great Entertainment at divers places, with which and the country sports they made her, she is so pleased that it is thought she will make more such Progresses. She is not looked for at Greenwich till Saturday come se’ennight. The King goes as far Windsor to meet her.

“In the mean time the Ambassador of Savoy¹ spends his time merrily, and is much with the King. On Sunday night Sir Robert Rich² made him a great supper, with a banquet and play, in Holbourn; and on Thursday he was at the Lord Mayor’s³, where he had likewise great Entertainment. Signor Fabritio⁴ leaves him not an inch; and indeed it is all the work he has to do; and sure I am opinion that his blowing the coals to find himself work in these matters of Savoy, hath cost the King many a fair penny, and God knows to what purpose⁵.”

On the 11th of June, as we learn from Anthony à Wood, the Queen passed through the parish of Bishop’s Cannings, very near Devizes. The Vicar of this

¹ See p. 642.

² Third son of Robert, second Lord Rich. He died s. p. His feast was probably given at Warwick House in Holborn, at it was afterwards called, where his brother Robert, the first Earl of Warwick, died March 24, 1618-19.

³ Sir John Swinnerton;—see pp. 466, 514.

⁴ Sir Henry Wotton; see p. 468.

⁵ A fortnight after Mr. Lorkin writes as follows to Sir T. Puckering, Bart. [see p. 491]: “About four or five days since the Duke of Savoy’s Ambassador took his leave, who hath been honoured with a very Royal Entertainment. The occasion of his ambassage, I suppose, is well enough knowne unto you, namely, to treat of a second motion of marriage between our Prince and one of the daughters of Savoy. His offers are very great, and such as none other cometh near to.” Birch’s MSS. 4176.—See also Mr. Chamberlain’s Letter in p. 667.

parish, George Ferebe, M. A. of Magdalen College, Oxford, "was a Gloucestershire man born, and, being well skill'd in music, did instruct divers young men of his parish in that faculty, 'till they could either play or sing their parts. On the eleventh of June, the Queen, in her return from Bath, did intend to pass over the downes at Wensdyke within the parish of Bishop's Cannings; of which Ferebe having timely notice, he composed a song of four parts, and instructed his scholars to sing it very perfectly, as also to play a lesson or two (which he had composed) on their wind instruments. He dressed himself in the habit of an old Bard, and caused his scholars, whom he had instructed, to be clothed in Shepherds' weeds. The Queen having received notice of these people, she with her retinue made a stand at Wensdyke; whereupon these musicians, drawing up to her, played a most admirable Lesson of four parts with double voices, the beginning of which was this:

"Shine, O thou sacred Shepherds' Star,
On silly shepherd swaines¹, &c."

"Which being well performed also, the Bard concluded with an Epilogue, to the great liking and content of the Queen and her Company. Afterwards he was sworn Chaplain to his Majesty², and was ever much valued for his ingenuity³."

On the 23d, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Dudley Carleton as follows:

"The Queen came on Sunday last to Greenwich, and the King the next day, where he hath continued ever since. The Progress begins about the 12th of July; from hence to Hampton Court, to Windsor, to Farnham⁴, to Basingstoke⁵, to Andover, to Salisbury⁶, and into the New Forest; then some say into the Isle

¹ This "Lesson" was published soon after, for I have found it entered in the book of the Stationers' Company under the date of June 16. It is there described as "a Thing called, 'The Shepherds' Songe before Queen Anne, in four parts complete musical, upon the Playnes of Salisbury.'"

² He published in 1615, "Life's Farewell, a Sermon at St. John's in the Devises in Wilts, Aug. 30, 1614, at the Funeral of John Drew, Gent. on 2 Sam. xiv. 14. Lond. 1615," 4to.

³ Wood's *Fasti* (by Bliss), vol. I. col. 270.

⁴ Farnham Castle, the antient residence of the Bishops of Winchester, was visited by Queen Elizabeth in 1567, 1568, and 1591; and a view of it is given in her "Progresses." We have already found King James three times here, see vol. I. p. 251, and this Volume, pp. 95, 262; some others of his Visits have been enumerated in the latter page. Dr. Bilson was still Bishop of Winchester, and till his death in 1617.—Their late Majesties George III. and Queen Charlotte annually visited Farnham Castle whilst Bishop Thomas resided there.

⁵ That is, to the Marquis of Winchester's at Basing; see vol. I. p. 252, and this Volume, p. 263.

⁶ See p. 263.

Wight, and so to the Earl of Southampton's at Beaulieu¹, where the King continues twelve nights, and so homewards by Farnham and Windsor²."

June 27, the King knighted, at Greenwich, Sir Henry Appleton, of Essex³.

On the 30th, Mr. Lorkin writes thus to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"The Prince is to-morrow to begin house-keeping at Richmond. The King is desirous to relieve his wants by making grants out of the Prince's lands, &c."⁴

On Sunday, the fourth of July, the King was at Oatlands, when he knighted Sir Lionel Cranfield⁵, of London, the after celebrated Earl of Middlesex.

About this time, two months after the beginning of Sir Thomas Overbury's confinement, the traitor Rochester wrote a Letter⁶ to that unfortunate man, begin-

¹ This was the King's fourth Visit to Beaulieu. He was there in 1606 (see p. 95); again Aug. 10, 1607 (Rymer's *Fœdera*, vol. XVI. p. 663); and for some time in August 1609 (see p. 263, where some future Visits are also enumerated). On this occasion the Earl of Southampton returned from abroad on purpose to entertain him; as appears by that Nobleman's Letter in p. 672.

² Birch's MSS. 4173.

³ Son of Sir Roger Appleton, of South Bemfleet, Baronet; see p. 428. He succeeded to the title on his father's death in 1614. See Collins's *Baronetage*, 1720, vol. I. p. *326. ⁴ Birch's MSS. 4176.

⁵ Lionel, son of Thomas Cranfield, was originally bred a Merchant. His introduction at Court was, we find by the following passage extracted from Mr. Chamberlain's next Letter, owing to the Earl of Northampton: "Sir Thomas Waller, the Lieutenant of Dover Castle, is lately dead of a burning fever, and his place they say bestowed upon one Sir Lyonell Cranfield, a Merchant of this town of Ingram's profession, who is grown in great favour of the Lord Privy Seal, and rides ordinarily in his coach with him; and by his means was knighted on Sunday last." His after rise is attributed to the favourite Villiers, with whom he was connected by their marrying two sisters. In 1616, "for his great services" (perhaps in the loan of money) he was made a Master of Requests; he was next advanced to be Master of the King's Wardrobe, and Master of the Wards; was made a Privy Councillor and joint Commissioner of the office of Treasurer with George Calvert (the Secretary of State), in 1619; was created Baron Cranfield of Cranfield, co. Bedford, in July 1621; confirmed Lord Treasurer in the following October; and created Earl of Middlesex in 1622. His fall, as his rise, was effected by the influence of Buckingham, who seconded his impeachment before the Parliament in 1624. He was found guilty of bribery, extortion, oppression, and other misdemeanors committed in his office of Treasurer. His sentence, as his crimes, was very similar to that of the great Bacon, mentioned in vol. I. p. 208; but the fine imposed on him was greater, namely, £50,000. Like Bacon, he retained his titles, which descended successively to two of his sons, and then became extinct. He survived about twenty years in peaceful retirement, and died in 1645. He was buried in Westminster Abbey, where a splendid monument is erected to his memory, with recumbent effigies of him and his second wife, Buckingham's sister-in-law.

⁶ Existing among Lord Bacon's papers in the Lambeth Library, and transcribed in Birch's

ning thus: "Sir; I have considered that my answer to you and what I have otherwise to say will exceed the bounds of a Letter, and now having not much time to use betwixt my waiting on the King and the removes we do make in this our little Progress, I thought fit to use the same man to you."

On the 8th of July, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir Ralph Winwood:

"The King and Queen are now both in Town, the one at Whitehall, the other at Somerset House, preparing for the Progress which is to begin about the 16th of this present. In the mean time the King means to entertaine himself at Wansted¹ and Theobalds, or thereabouts.

"He hath lately given audience to the Irish Commissioners sent from Parliament; they have been patiently heard and well treated, though all they could say were to little effect, the King himself still refelling and retorting their arguments upon themselves; we begin to have a better eye to Ireland, and good store of powder and munition is sent thither already, and order taken for money to follow.

"The Lords are busy in ordering the Prince's house, which is to be kept at Richmond during the King's absence.

"The Marquess de Villa, Ambassador of Savoy², went hence some fortnight since by the way of Flushing, not daring to adventure himself through France. He staid at least three weeks to present certaine toys of chrystall to the Queen, being defrayed all the time at the King's charge, at the rate of £.20 a day. He had a present of plate of £.1000 at parting, and a jewell from the Queen of £.1500. Sir Henry Wotton was never from his elbow during his being here³."

On the same day Mr. Lorkin writes as follows to Sir Thomas Puckering:

"You have heard long since, I suppose, of the great difference between my Lord of Essex and his Lady, who hath most earnestly sued for a divorce, pretending the only cause to be her husband's insufficiency, who confesseth it towards her, though he esteems himself well enough provided for any other. It was expected that a nullity of marriage should have been pronounced by my Lord of Canterbury at the end of last Term, but the sentence is deferred to the Term following, which if it be given in favour of her, it is generally believed that a match shall be concluded between my Lord of Rochester and her, thereby to

MSS. 4106. This Letter is of little interest, but it ends, "your *assured loving friend*!" It is indorsed, "My Lord Somerset's *first* Letter."

¹ See p. 676.

² See p. 667.

³ Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 468.

reconcile him and the House of Howard together, who are now far enough asunder.

“The news of the great Entertainment at the Palatine’s Court is but newly arrived here. It consists chiefly in matter of good cheer after the fashion of that country. They talk of I know not how many hundred tables, which should be every day prepared. But you will easily proportion them out yourself, when you shall hear of the number of mouths, which were no fewer every meal than 600¹. The same messenger brings tidings that her Grace is with child; and that there wants not the concurrence of all such tokens and probabilities as are usually observed in women that are in that state and condition².”

July 9, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Arthur Ingram³, of London.

On the 15th, Mr. Lorkin writes to Sir Thomas Puckering:

“The King hath signed the Book for the Prince’s Household.

“The Court is at Theobalds, where his Majesty hath been much afflicted with a flux and griping of the belly. He is much amended, and, if the occasion of this sickness alter not his purpose, begins his Progress on . . . and so to Salisbury next Saturday. The Queen likewise returns to the Bath the Saturday following⁴.”

On the 1st of August Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“The King is in Progress, and the Queen gone or going after. At their last being at Theobalds, which was about a fortnight since, the Queen shooting a deer mistook her mark, and killed Jewel the King’s most special and favourite hound; at which he stormed exceedingly awhile; but after he knew who did it, he was soon pacified, and with much kindness wished her not to be troubled with it, for he should love her never the worse; and the next day sent her a diamond worth £.2000 as a legacy from his dead dog. Love and kindness increase daily between them⁵; and it is thought they never were on better terms⁶.”

On the sixth of August the Earl of Southampton from some place abroad (where does not appear) thus sensibly writes to Sir Ralph Winwood on that most interesting topic of the day, the proceedings of the Favourite:

¹ See p. 621.

² Birch’s MSS. Brit. Mus. No. 4176.

³ Of whom see p. 288, where for 1612 read 1613.

⁴ Birch’s MSS. 4176.

⁵ The King soon after gave her Majesty Greenwich Palace; see p. 704.

⁶ Birch’s MSS. 4173.

"I think Sir Thomas Overbury shall ere long upon his submission have leave to travel, with a private intimation not to return untill his Majestie's pleasure be further known; much adoe there hath been to keepe him from a publike censure of banishment and loss of office, *such a rooted hatred lyeth in the King's heart towards him.*

"Of the Nullity I see you know as much as I can write, by which you may discern the power of a King with Judges, for of those which are now for it, I knew some of them when I was England were vehemently against it, as the Bishops of Ely [Andrews] and Coventry [Neale]. For the business itself, I protest I shall be glad, if it may lawfully, that it shall go forward; though of late I have been fearful of the consequence, and have had my fears increased by the last Letters which came to me; but, howsoever, *the way of [the King's] interposing gives me no contentment.*

"I stay here only for a winde, and purpose (God willing) to take the first for England, though till things be otherwise settled, I could be as well pleased to be any where else; but the King's coming to my house¹ imposeth a necessity of returning at this time upon me²."

On the 12th, Mr. Lorkin in a Letter to Sir Thomas Puckering, speaks of "the general absence of the Court; the King, Queen, and Prince being all in several Progresses³."

On the 20th, her Majesty was entertained by some Pageants at Wells, of which we have the following particulars from the Corporation Records⁴:

"Welles, Civitas sive Burgus in com. Somerset.

Convocac'o ib'm tent' 19^o die Julii anno r. R's Jacobi Anglie, &c. 19^o.

"Forasmuche as by a Lettre sent from the Lord Bushoppe, it appeareth that the Queene's Majestie doth intend to come to Welles, and therefore it is desired by his Lordshipp that there should be a Silver Bole given to her Majestie of the

¹ Beaulieu; see p. 669.

² Winwood's Memorials, vol. III. p. 475.

³ Birch's MSS. Brit. Mus. No. 4176. The same Letter contains a long account of a quarrel between the English and the Scots at the Palatine's Court.

⁴ Communicated to the Gentleman's Magazine in 1813 by the Rev. Thomas A. Salmon, Rector of Rodney Stoke, co. Somerset, from a neatly written folio volume, containing a large variety of curious documents relative to the City and Corporation of Wells, extracted principally from the public records of that ancient Borough.

price of £.20 ; that the streates should bee made handsome ; and the towne to be ridd of beggers and rogues.

“ It is, therefore, now ordered, that there shal be a Bole provided of silver guilt, of the price of £.20, to be given to her Majestie.

“ It is alsoe ordered, that the streetes within the towne shal be pitched where need is, and especially in Sadler-street ; and for the more better effecting hereof, it is likewise ordered, that the pitchers shall, with the Supervisors of the High-waies, take upp a stone before every man’s doore where it is needed to be pitched.

“ It is alsoe ordered, that the Conduite shal be colored and laid with oyle, which is referred to the consideracion of Mr. Mayor.

“ *Convocac’o ib’m tent’ 23^o die Julii, anno sup’d’c’o.*

“ It is ordered, for the Entertainement of the Queene’s Majestie, that the Mayor and his Brethren shall attend in their scarlet gownes neere about Browne’s-gate, and the residue of the Twenty-four to attend likewise in person in blacke gownes ; and the residue of the Burgesses to attend likewise in their gownes and best apparell ; and this to be done by the oversight of Mayor, Mr. Baron, and Mr. Smyth.

“ For the overseeinge of the armed men, Mr. Coward, Mr. Tabor, Henrie Ffosster, and William Atwell.

“ For the overseeinge of the Shewes to bee made before her Majestie, and to bee directors, Mr. Southworth, Mr. Godwyn, and Mr. Coward ; and they to give allowance for the matter of the Shewes, whether they be fit or not ; and every Companie to bee contributorie, as they have binne in tymes past, to the Shewes aforesaid.

“ *The order and manner of the Shewes by the Masters and Wardens of every trade and occupacion within the Cittie or Boroughe of Welles, as it was presented before the Queene’s Majestie in Welles, uppon Fridaie the 20th daie of Auguste, anno D’ni 1613.*

“ The ffirst Company. The Hammer-men, which were the Carpenters, Joyners, Cowpers, Mazons, Tylers, and Blackesmithes ; and they presented a streamer with their armes ; and Noath buildinge the arke ; Vulcan workinge at the fforge ; Venus carried in a charriot, and Cupid sittinge in her lapp with his bowe bent ; a morrice-daunce ; the Dragon which devoured the Virgins.

"The second Company. The Shermen and Tuckers; and they presented a streamer with their armes.

"The third Company. The Tanners, Chaundlers, and Butchers; and they presented a carte of old Virgins, the carte covered with hides and hornes, and the Virgins with their attires made of cow-tayles, and bracelettes for their neckes of hornes sawed and hanged about their neckes for rich jewelles; their charriot was drawne by men and boyes in oxe-skines, calve-skins, and other skins; St. Clement, their Saint, rode allsoe with his booke; and his Ffrier rode alsoe, who dealt almes out of his master's bagge (which he carried very full of graynes) verie plentifullie; Acteon with his huntsmen.

The fourth Company. The Cordyners, who presented St. Crispian and . . .¹, both of them sonnes to a Kinge, and the youngest a shoemaker, who married his master's daughter; they allsoe presented a morrice-daunce, and a streamer with their armes.

"The fifth Company. The Taylors, who presented a streamer; Herod and Herodias, and the daughter of Herodias, who daunced for St. John Baptistes hedd; St. John Baptiste beheaded.

"The sixth Company. The Mercers, who presented a streamer; a morrice-daunce of younge children; the giant and the giantesse; Kinge Ptolomeus, with his Queene, and daughter which was to be devoured of the Dragon; St. George with his Knightes, who slew the Dragon and rescued the Virgin; Diana and her Nymphes carried in a charriot, who turned Acteon to a harte.

"Memorand'. Allsoe, that the same day there were invited to dynner with Mr. William Bull, then Mayor of Welles, the Right Hon. the Earle of Worcester², the Earle of Tinmoth³, the Lord Bushoppe of Bath and Welles⁴, Sir Thomas Somersett⁵, the Countesse of Darbie⁶, the Lady Cary⁷, the Lady

¹ "Here," remarks Mr. Salmon, "is an hiatus in the MS. It ought, I conceive, to have been '*Crispinus and Crispianus*,' whom (as the learned Mr. Wheatly observes) 'the *Shoemakers* made choice of for their tutelar Saints.'"

² See p. 623.

³ Qu. this name? there was no Earl of Tinmouth till the Duke of Berwick was so created in 1687.

⁴ See p. 646.

⁵ The Queen's Master of the Horse; see vol. I. p. 268. See a note on him, *ibid.* p. 473. He has appeared and will in every Tilt.

⁶ See p. 628.

⁷ The wife of our old friend Sir Robert Cary, afterwards Earl of Monmouth. She was Elizabeth, daughter of Sir Hugh Trevannion of Corriheigh, Cornwall, and held some office about the Queen.

Gray¹, the Lady Winzor², the Lady Hatton³, the Lady Walsingham³, the fower Maydes of Honor, with other persons, which came accordingly, except the Earle of Worcester."

On the 29th of August, Mr. Lorkin thus writes to Sir Thomas Puckering respecting the Earl of Essex's divorce, &c.

"My Lord of Essex's cause was to rest in dependance till next Term; but the King shewed himself so affectionate in it, as the Commissioners have been forced (to give his Majesty satisfaction) to yeeld a more speedy hearing of it; which was done (though with as little effect as) upon last Wednesday. But it is believed, that unless the Commission be changed, the Nullity which his Majesty desireth will not be pronounced. For the Archbishop of Canterbury (Dr. Abbot) together with Dr. Bennett and Dr. Edwards, who are like to have the greatest sway in deciding the controversy, are directly against it; insomuch as my Lord of Canterbury being with his Majesty at Windsor for some three or four days before the hearing, fell down upon his knees twice or thrice to entreat his Majesty that he might be dispensed with from being on the Commission, which he would esteem a greater favor than all that he had received from him in being raised from a private condition (and in so short a time) to the highest dignity ecclesiastical⁴. At the last hearing my Lord of Rochester stayed here in town, as is supposed, to hear the success; and rode presently post unto the King to acquaint his Majesty thereof, who sheweth himself passionate in the businesse, only in favour of, with whom a new match would be presently concluded, if the old one were once abolished.

"Sir Thomas Overbury is like to run a short course, being sick unto death⁵. The Lieutenant of the Tower, together with the Physicians that were there with him, have subscribed their hands that they hold him a man past all recovery."

On the 9th of September, Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"Sir Ralph Winwood and his Lady are come over out of Holland, and have

¹ The Lady who was a Masquer in Tethys' Festival; see p. 348.

² Who had been engaged in several of the Queen's Masques; see p. 349.

³ Lady Hatton and Lady Windsor were both companions of her Majesty in the Masque of Beauty; see p. 174.

⁴ The Archbishop's backwardness in the procedure may be esteemed as much to his honour, as the King's forwardness to his eternal disgrace.

⁵ See p. 678.

been here these ten or twelve days. I made an errand to town on Monday to see them. I found him newly come home from Windsor, whither he went on Saturday to the King, of whom though he were graciously used, yet I cannot perceive there was any mention of the main matter ¹.

“ Though there be in shew a settled peace in these parts of the world; yet the many private quarrels among great ones prognosticate troubled humours, which may breed dangerous diseases if they be not purged and prevented. I doubt not but you have heard the success of the Combat ’twixt Edward Sackville and the Lord Bruce of Kinlos, ’twixt Antwerp and Lillo, wherein they were both hurt, the Lord Bruce to the death, so that Sackville was driven to take sanctuary, whence by corruption or connivance, I hear, he is escaped ².

“ Here is speech likewise that the Lord Norris ³ and Sir Peregrine Willoughby [Bertie] ⁴, are gone forth for the same purpose, and that Lord Chandos and Lord Hay are upon the same terms. There was a quarrell kindling ’twixt the Earls of Rutland and Montgomery; but it was quickly quenched by the King, being begun and ended in his presence. But there is more danger ’twixt the Earl of Rutland and the Lord Danvers, though I heard yesterday it was already, or upon the point of compounding. But that which most men listen after, is what will fall out ’twixt the Earl of Essex and Mr. Henry Howard, who is challenged and called to account by the Earl for certain disgraceful speeches of him ⁵. They are both gotten over; the Earl from Milford Haven ⁶, the other from Harwich, with each of them two seconds. The Earl hath his brother and one Capt. Owseley, or rather, as most affirm, Sir Thomas Beaumont, engaged in the quarrel; Mr. Howard hath one Mr. Ball and Huntington Colby, esteemed and very valiant Gentlemen. The last news of them was, that the Earl was at Calais, and the other in Zealand. The King hath sent a post to Calais to the Governor, to stay them, or either of them; and young Gib, of the Bed-chamber ⁷, is sent with commandment from the King to them both if he come in time.

¹ The office of Secretary of State; see p. 515.

² See pp. 343, 516.

³ This quarrelsome Peer fell a victim to his own unhappy temper in 1620; see vol. I. p. 477.

⁴ See p. 344.

⁵ Of Mr. Henry Howard see p. 609. It is not improbable that the “disgraceful speeches” of the Earl had reference to the most disgraceful conduct of his Countess, Howard’s sister. We learn from Mr. Chamberlain’s Letter of October 14, that the Quarrel was “compounded and taken up by the King himself.”

⁶ This absence of the Earl gave full opportunity, if at other times it was wanted, for the Viscount Rochester’s advances to the Countess.

⁷ See vol. I. p. 599.

“The main blow for the Divorce [of the Earl of Essex] will be given the 18th of this month, when the Commissioners are to give their opinions. It is very likely to go forward, which in some sort were pity, as well for the example as consequences.

“The King came to Town yesterday; and this afternoon goes to Wanstead¹; to-morrow to Havering²; and the next day to Theobalds.

“The Queen is at Bath, and here is no news yet of her return³.”

On the 29th of September, being Michaelmas-day, when Sir Thomas Myddelton⁴, brother of the celebrated Sir Hugh Myddelton, was elected Lord Mayor of London for the year ensuing, the completion of the great work of the latter, the New River, was solemnized by a ceremonial which will be found annexed to the ensuing “London Pageant.”

On the 6th of October, Lodowic Duke of Lennox was created Earl of Richmond, *sibi et hæredibus masculis de corpore*, and Baron of Settrington, *sibi et heredibus de corpore*, but without any formal investiture, because he was before a Duke⁵.

On the 9th⁶, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Charles Cæsar⁷.

¹ See p. 450. ² Ibid. ³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173. ⁴ Of whom see vol. I. p. 234.

⁵ Camden's MS. volume, Harl. MSS. 5176. On the subject see before, p. 641.

⁶ *Alias* the sixth, and *alias* the twelfth.

⁷ Sir Charles was the third son of Sir Julius Cæsar (of whom see vol. I. p. 155), and his two elder brethren having died s. p., Sir Julius's heir. He was born Jan. 27, 1589, was of All Souls' College, Oxford, LL. D. Dec. 7, 1612. Like his father he first practised in the Civil Law, and having held for some years in its Court the office of Master of the Faculties, was promoted to the now obsolete station of Judge of the Court of Audience, which then ranked with the highest in that branch of jurisprudence. Like his father also, he relinquished that profession for, or at least mingled it with, that of a Chancery Lawyer, in which Court he became a Master, Sept. 30, 1619. He rose too at length to the important office of Master of the Rolls, succeeding Sir Dudley Digges, but this was by purchase. The following memorandum was among the MSS. of his second son, Mr. Charles Cæsar, “June 14, 1640, Sir Charles Cæsar, Knt. was sworn Master of the Rolls in Chancery, or Assistant Judge to the Lord High Chancellor of England; for which high and profitable office he paid to King Charles the First fifteen thousand pounds, broad peices of old gold; and lent the King two thousand pounds more when he went to meet his rebellious Scotch army, invading England.” He enjoyed his purchase little more than two years, dying Dec. 6, 1642, of the small pox (a malady peculiarly fatal to his family, and by which he declared himself to have been previously in his youth afflicted.) More particulars of Sir Charles may be found in the Life of Sir Julius Cæsar, accompanied by his portrait and that of his second wife Jane, daughter of Sir Edward Barkham, Lord Mayor of London in 1622.

On the 14th, in a Letter to Sir Dudley Carleton, Mr. Chamberlain gives the following report of the disgraceful proceedings of the times :

“ Sir Thomas Overbury died [on the 15th of September], and is buried in the Tower. The manner of his death is not known ; for that there was nobody with him, not so much as his Keeper ; but the foulness of the corps gave suspicion, and leaves aspersion, that he should die of the pox or somewhat worse¹. He was a very unfortunate man ; for nobody almost pities him, and his very friends speak but indifferently of him.—The Marriage ’twixt the Earl of Essex and the Lady Frances Howard is dissolved, and pronounced a nullity by the Bishop of Winchester, who with the Bishop of Rochester were only supernumerary to the first Commission, and so cast the balance by weight of number, being seven to five. The morning that the matter was to be decided, the King sent an express commandment, that in opening they should not argue nor use any reason, but only give their assent or dissent. And in the sentence there is cause expressed—but in these terms, *propter latens et incurabile impedimentum*.”

At the latter end of October the King was at Royston, where, between the 22d and 29th, he made the following Knights :

Sir Francis Seymour ² , of Wiltshire.	Sir Thomas Bilson ⁴ , of Hampshire.
Sir Henry Wardeler, <i>Scotus</i> .	Sir Humphrey Lynde ⁵ , of Surrey.
Sir Edward Baynton ³ , of Wiltshire.	Sir Robert Clarke.
Sir Gerrard Harbert.	

The Inauguration of Sir Thomas Myddelton as Lord Mayor of London, was celebrated by the following Pageant :

¹ This was the report circulated by the Earl of Northampton.

² Sir Francis Seymour was Sheriff of Wiltshire in 1625.

³ Sir Edward Baynton was Sheriff of Wiltshire in 1637.

⁴ Sir Thomas Bilson was son of the Bishop of Winchester, and is said by Welden to have received this honour for his father's services in procuring the Countess of Essex's divorce. “ Therefore,” says he, “ for the bringing this bawdry to a marriage, the Bishops must be principal actors (as I know not in what bad action they would be lookers on) ; and the Bishop of Winchester, an excellent civilian and a very great scholar, must be the principal, for which his son was knighted, and will never lose that title of Sir Nullity Bilson.”

⁵ Of Cobham, the learned Author of “ *Via Tuta*,” and other works in defence of the Church of England against the Papists, of whom see Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. He was a man of considerable estate, and sat in the House of Commons ; he died June 14, 1636.

THE TRIUMPHS OF TRUTH;

A SOLEMNITY UNPARALELD FOR COST, ART, AND MAGNIFICENCE,

AT THE CONFIRMATION AND ESTABLISHMENT OF

THAT WORTHY AND TRUE NOBLY-MINDED GENTLEMAN,

SIR THOMAS MIDDLETON, KNIGHT,

IN THE HONORABLE OFFICE OF HIS MAJESTIE'S LIEUTENANT,

THE LORD MAYOR OF THE THRICE FAMOUS CITY OF LONDON.

TAKING BEGINNING AT HIS LORDSHIP'S GOING, AND PROCEEDING AFTER HIS RETURNE FROM
RECEIVING THE OATH OF MAYORALTY AT WESTMINSTER, ON THE MORROW NEXT
AFTER SIMON AND JUDE'S DAY, OCTOBER 29, 1613.

ALL THE SHOWES, PAGEANTS, CHARIOTS, MORNING, NOONE, AND NIGHT-TRIUMPHES,
DIRECTED, WRITTEN, AND REDEEM'D INTO FORME, FROM THE IGNORANCE
OF SOME FORMER TIMES AND THEIR COMMON WRITER.

By THOMAS MIDDLETON ¹.

Shewing also his Lordship's Entertainement upon Michaelmas-day last, being the day of his Election, at that most Famous and Admired Worke of the Running Streame, from Amwell Head into the Cesterne at Islington, being the sole Cost, Industry, and Invention of the worthy Mr. Hugh Middleton, of London, Goldsmith ².

To the great expectation of vertue and goodnesse, and most worthy of all those costs and honors which the Noble Fellowship and Society of Grocers, and generall love of the whole City, in full-heap'd bounties bestow upon him, the truly generous and juditious Sir THOMAS MIDDLETON, Knight, Lord Mayor of the Honorable City of London.

As often as we shall fixe our thoughts upon the Almighty Providence, so often they returne to our capacities laden with admiration, either from the divine

¹ Of whom see vol. I. p. 372.

² "London: Printed by Nicholas Okes, 1613." There were two editions of this Pageant, one containing the Entertainment at the New River Head, the other not. A copy in the British Museum

workes of His mercy, or those incomprehensible of His justice; but here to instance onely His omnipotent mercy, it being the health and preservation of all His workes; and first not onely in raising, but also in preserving your Lordship from many great and insident dangers, especially in farraine countries in the time of your youth and travels; and now with safety, love, and triumph to establish you in this yeare's honor; crowning the perfection of your daies and the gravity of your life with power, respect, and reverence. Next, in that mysele (though unworthy), being of one name with your Lordship, notwithstanding all oppositions of malice, ignorance, and envy, should thus happily live, protected by part of that mercy (as if one fate did prosperously cleave to one name), now to do service to your fame and worthinesse, and my pen onely to be employd in those bounteous and honorable Tryumphs, being but shadowes of those eternall glories that stand ready for deservers, to which I commend the deserts of your justice, remaining, ever to your Lordship in the best of my observance,

THOMAS MIDDLETON.

THE TRIUMPHS OF TRUTH.

Search all chronicles, histories, and records in what language or letter soever, let the inquisitive man waste the deere treasures of his time and eye-sight, he shall conclude his life only in this certainty, that there is no subject upon earth received into the place of his government with the like state and magnificence as is the Lord Maior of the Citty of London. This being then infallible (like the mistresse of our Triumphs) and not to be denied of any, how carefull ought those Gentlemen to be, to whose discretion and judgement the weight and charge of such a businesse is entirely referred and committed by the whole Society, to have all things correspondent to that generous and noble freenesse of cost and liberality, the streames of Art to equall those of Bounty, a knowledge that may take the true height of such an honorable solemnity; the miserable want of both which in the *impudent common Writer*, hath often forc'd from me much pitty

is of the first edition, the title ending where the Author's name occurs. Mr. Gough's copy in the Bodleian Library and that in the library of Thomas Jolley, Esq. have the full title of the second edition, but want the Entertainment they profess to embrace. Mr. Bindley's copy (I know not of which edition) was sold Feb. 17, 1819, to Mr. Triphook for £.6. Mr. Garrick's, bound with the Pageant of 1661 and other tracts, was sold April 24, 1823, to Messrs. Hurst and Co. for 40 guineas. Mr. Nassau's, sold March 8, 1824, was purchased by Mr. Thorpe for £.8. 8s. N.

and sorrow; and it would heartily grieve any understanding spirit to behold many times so glorious a fire in bounty and goodnesse offering to match it selfe with freezing art, sitting in darknesse with the candle out, looking like the picture of *Blacke Munday*¹.

But to speake truth, which many beside my selfe can affirme upon knowledge, a care that hath beene seldome equal'd, and not easily imitated, hath been faithfully showne in the whole course of this businesse, both by the Wardens and Committies, men of much understanding, industry, and carefulnesse, little weighing the greatnesse of expence, so the cost might purchase perfection, so fervent hath beene their desire to excell in that which is a learned and vertuous ambition; and so unfainedly pure the loves and affections of the whole Company to his Lordship. If any shall imagine that I set fairer colours upon their deserts, then they upon themselves, let them but reade and conceive, and their owne understandings will light them to the acknowledgement of their errors. First, they may here behold love and bounty opening with the morning, earlier then some of former yeares, ready at the first appearing of his Lordship, to give his eare a taste of the dayes succeeding glory, and thus the forme of it presents itselfe.

At Soper-lane end a Senate-house erected, upon which Musitians sit playing; and, more to quicken time, a sweet voyce married to these wordes :

THE SONG.

*Mother of many honorable Sonnes,
Thinke not the glasse too sloly runnes,
That in Time's hand is set,
Because thy worthy Sonne appeares not yet.
Lady, be pleas'd, the hower growes on,
Thy joy will be compleate anon;
Thou shalt behold
The man enroll*

¹ Middleton here alludes to Anthony Munday, his rival City Poet, who had composed the Pageants of 1605 and 1611, and perhaps others of which no copies are known to exist. Though he this year (and the last, when Dekker was employed, see p. 466) lost the office of Author, he did not lose that of supplying the apparell, &c. which was his business as a Draper (see p. 679); and to which office only Middleton seems to have considered him competent. This virulent attack, however, appears to have experienced no greater attention than such violence deserved, since Munday was employed in the three following years.—Middleton afterwards wrote four Pageants, those of 1617, 1619, 1621, and 1624. N.

*In Honour's bookes, whom Vertue raises,
 Love-circled round,
 His Triumphs crownd
 With all good wishes, prayers, and praises !*

After this sweet aire hath liberally spent itselfe, at the first appearing of the Lord Maior from Guildhall in the morning, a Trumpet plac'd upon that scaffold sounds forth his welcome; then after a straine or two of musicke a grave fæminine shape presents itself from behinde a silke curtaine, representing LONDON, attired like a reverend Mother, a long white haire naturally flowing on either side of her; on her head a modell of steeples and turrets, her habite crimson silke, neere to the honorable garment of the Citty; her left hand holding a key of gold; who after a comely grace, equally mixt with comfort and reverence, sends from her lips this motherly salutation:

THE SPEECH OF LONDON.

Honour and joy salute thee, I am rais'd
 In comfort and in love to see thee, glad
 And happy in thy blessings, nor esteeme
 My words the lesse 'cause I a woman speake,
 A woman's counsell is not always weake.
 I am thy Mother; at that name I know
 Thy heart do's reverence to me, as becomes
 A Sonne of honour, in whose soule burnes cleere
 The sacred lights of divine fear and knowledge;
 I know that at this instant all the workes
 Of motherly love in me, showne to thy youth
 When it was soft and helpelesse, are sum'd up
 In thy most gratefull minde, thou well remembrest
 All my deere pains and care, with what affection
 I cherisht thee in my bosome, watchfull still
 Over thy wayes,
 Set wholesome and religious lawes before
 The foot-steps of thy youth, show'd thee the way
 That led thee to the glory of this day.
 To which (with teares of the most fruitfull joy
 That ever Mother shed) I welcome thee.
 Oh! I could be content to take my part
 Out of felicity onely in weeping,
 Thy presence and this day's so deere to me.
 Looke on my age, my honorable Sonne,
 And then begin to think upon the office;
 See how on each side of mee hang the cares
 Which I bestowd on thee, in silver haire.

And now the faith, the love, the zealous fires
 With which I cheer'd thy youth, my age requires.
 The duty of a Mother I have showne,
 'Through all the rites of pure affection,
 In care, in government, in wealth, in honour,
 Brought thee to what thou art, thou'st all from mee,
 Then what thou shouldst be I expect from thee.

Now to thy charge, thy government, thy cares,
 Thy Mother in her age submits her yeares ;
 And though (to my abundant grief I speak it,
 Which now oreflows my joy,) some Sonnes I have
 Thanklesse, unkind, and disobedient,
 Rewarding all my bounties with neglect,
 And will of purpose wilfully retire
 Themselves from doing grace and service to me,
 When they've got all they can or hope for from mee ;
 The thankfulnesse in which thy life doth move,
 Did ever promise fairer fruits of love,—
 And now they shew themselves, yet they have all
 My blessing with them, so the world shall see
 'Tis their unkindnesse, no defect in me ;
 But go thou forward, my thrice-honor'd Sonne,
 In waies of goodnesse, glory is best wunne
 When merit brings it home, disdaine all titles
 Purchas'd with coine, of honor take thou hold
 By thy desert,—let others buy't with gold ;
 Fix thy most serious thoughts upon the weight
 Thou goest to undergo, 'tis the just government
 Of this fam'd Citty, mee, whom Nations call
 Their brightest eye; then with what care and feare
 Ought I to be oreseene to be kept cleare?
 Spots in deformed faces are scarce noted,
 Fair cheekes are stain'd if ner'e so little blotted.
 See'st thou this key of gold? it shoves thy charge,
 This place is the King's Chamber; all pollution,
 Sinne, and uncleannesse must be lock't out here,
 And be kept sweet with sanctity, faith, and feare.
 I see grace takes effect, Heaven's joy upon her,
 'Tis rare when Vertue opes the gate to Honor.
 My blessing be upon thee, Sonne and Lord,
 And on my Sonnes all, that obey my word!

*Then making her honour, as before, the Waites of the Citty there in service, his
 Lordship and the worthy Company, are lead forward toward the water-side,*

where you shall finde the river deck't in the richest glory to receive him; upon whose cristall bosome stand Five Islands artfully garnished with all manner of Indian fruited-trees, drugges, spiceries, and the like, the middle Island with a faire Castle especially beautified.

But making haste to returne to the Citty againe, where Triumph waites in more splendor and magnificence, the first then that attends to receive his Lordship off the water at Bainard's Castle, is TRUTH'S ANGELL on horsebacke, his raiment of white silke powdred with starres of gold; on his head a crowne of gold, a trumpeter before him on horsebacke, and ZEALE, the Champion of TRUTH, in a garment of flame-coloured silke, with a bright haire on his head, from which shoot fire-beames, following close after him, mounted alike, his right hand holding a flaming scourge, intimating thereby that, as hee is the manifestor of TRUTH, he is likewise the chastizer of IGNORANCE and ERROR.

THE SALUTATION OF THE ANGELL.

I have within myne eye my blessed charge,
 Haile, Friend of Truth, safety and joy attend thee!
 I am Truth's Angell, by my Mistresse sent
 To guard and guide thee; when thou took'st thy oath
 I stood on thy right hand, though to thine eye
 In visible forme I did not then appeare,
 Aske but thy soule t'will tell thee I stood neere;
 And 't was a time to take care of thee then
 At such a Marriage before heaven and men,
 Thy Faith being wed to Honor; close behind thee
 Stood Error's Minister, that still sought to blind thee,
 And wrap his subtill mists about thy oath,
 To hide it from the nakedness of Troth,
 Which is Truth's purest glory, but my light
 Still as it shone expel'd her blackest spite;
 His mists fled by, yet all I could devise,
 Could hardly keepe them from some people's eyes;
 But thine they flew from: thy care's but begun,
 Wake on, the victory is not halfe yet wun.
 Thou wilt be still assaulted, thou shalt meete
 With many dangers, that in voyce seeme sweet,
 And waies most pleasant to a worldling's eye,
 My Mistresse has but one, but that leads hye.
 To yon triumphant Citty follow mee,
 Keepe thou to Truth, Eternitie keepes to thee.

ZEALE. On boldly, Man of Honor! thou shalt win;
 I am Truth's Champion, Zeale, the scourge of sin.

The trumpets then sounding, the ANGELL and ZEALE ranke themselves just before his Lordship, and conduct him to Paul's Chaine, where in the South-yard ERROR in a chariot with his infernall Ministers attends to assault him, his garment of ash-colour silke, his head rowld in a cloud, over which stands an owle, a moale, on one shoulder ; a bat on the other ; all symbols of blinde ignorance and darknesse, mists hanging at his eyes. Close before him rides ENVY his Champion, eating of a humane heart, mounted on a rhenoceros, attired in red silke, sutable to the bloudinesse of her manners, her left pap bare, where a snake fastens, her arms halfe naked, holding in her right hand a dart tinted in bloud.

THE GREETING OF ERROR.

Art come? O welcome, my triumphant Lord,
 My glorie's sweet-heart! how many millions
 Of happy wishes hath my love told out
 For this desir'd minute; I was dead
 'Till I enjoy'd thy presence, I saw nothing,
 A blindness thicker than idolatry
 Clove to my eye-balls; now I'm all of light,
 Of fire, of joy, pleasure runs nimbly through mee;
 Let's joyne together both in state and triumph,
 And down with beggarly and friendlesse Vertue,
 That hath so long impoverish't this faire Citty;
 My beasts shall trample on her naked brest,
 Under my chariot-wheeles her bones lye prest,
 She nere shall rise againe! great power this day
 Is given into thy hand, make use on't, Lord,
 And let thy will and appetite sway the sword;
 Down with them all now whom thy heart envies,
 Let not thy conscience come into thine eyes.
 This twelve-month, if thou lov'st revenge or gaine,
 I'll teach thee to cast mists, to blinde the plaine
 And simple eye of man, he shall not know't,
 Nor see thy wrath when 'tis upon his throte;
 All shall be carried with such art and wit,
 That what thy lust acts shall bee counted fit.
 Then for attendants that may best observe thee,
 I'll picke out Serjants of my Band to serve thee;
 Here's Gluttony and Sloth, two pretious slaves,
 Will tell thee more then a whole hearde of knaves,
 The worth of every office to a haire,
 And who bids most, and how the markets are;
 Let them alone to smell, and for a need
 They'l bring thee in bribes for measures and light bread;

Keepe thy eye winking, and thy hand wide ope,
 Then thou shalt know what wealth is, and the scope
 Of rich authority. Ho! 'tis sweete and deere,
 Make use of Time then; thou'st but one poore yeare,
 And that will quickly slide, then be not nice,
 Both power and profite cleave to my advice;
 And what's he [that] lockes his eare from those sweet charmes,
 Or runs not to meet gaine with wide-stretch't armes?

There is a poore, thin, thred-bare thing, cal'd Truth,
 I give thee warning of her; if she speake,
 Stop both thine eares close, most professions breake
 That ever delt with her, an unlucky thing,
 Shee's almost sworne to nothing; I can bring
 A thousand of our parish, besides queanes,
 That ne'er knew what Truth meant, nor ever meanes.
 Some I could cull out here, e'en in this throng,
 If I would shew my children, and how strong
 I were in faction; 'lasse! poor simple stray,
 Shee's all her life-time finding out one way.
 Shee'as but one foolish way, streight on, right forward,
 And yet she makes a toyle on't, and goes on
 With care and feare forsooth, when I can run
 Over a hundred with delight and pleasure,
 Backe-waies and by-waies, and fetch in my treasure
 After the wishes of my heart by shifts,
 Deceits, and slighes, and I'll give thee those giftes;
 I'll shew thee all my corners yet untold,
 The very nookes where beldams hide their gold;
 In hollow walls and chimneies, where the sun
 Never yet shone, nor Truth came ever neere,
 'Tis of thy life I'll make the golden yeare.—Follow me then:

ENVY. Learne now to scorne thy inferiours, those must love thee,
 And wish to eat their hearts that sit above thee.

ZEALE, stird up with divine indignation at the impudence of these hell-hounds, both forceth their retirement, and makes way for the chariot wherein TRUTH his Mistresse sits, in a close garment of white sattin, which makes her appear thin and naked, figuring thereby her simplicity and neerenesse of heart to those that embrace her; a roabe of white silke cast over it, fill'd with the eies of eagles, shewing her deepe insight and height of wisdom; over her thrice-sanctified head a milke-white dove, and on each shoulder one, the sacred emblems of purity, meekenesse, and innocency; under her feete serpents, in that she treads downe all subtelty and fraud; her forehead empal'd with a diadem of stars, the witnesse of her eternall descent; on her breast a pure

round cristall, showing the brightnesse of her thoughts and actions; a sun in her right hand, then which nothing is truer; a fan filld all with starres in her left, with which she parts darkenesse, and strikes away the vapours of ignorance. If you hearken to ZEALE her Champion, after his holy anger is past against ERROR and his crue, hee will give it you in better tearmes, or at least more smoothly and pleasingly.

THE SPEECH OF ZEALE.

Bold Furies, backe! or with this scourge of fire,
 Whence sparkles out religious chast desire,
 I'll whip you downe to darkenesse; this a place
 Worthy my Mistresse, her æternall grace
 Be the full object to feast all these eies,
 But thine¹ the first, hee that feeds here is wise;
 Nor by the naked plainenesse of her weeds
 Judge thou her worth, no burnisht glosse Truth needs;
 That crowne of starres shewes her descent from Heaven;
 That roabe of white, fill'd all with eagles' eies,
 Her piercing sight through hidden mysteries;
 Those milke-white doves her spotlesse innocence;
 Those serpents at her feete her victory shoves
 Over deceite and guile, her rankest foes;
 And by that cristall mirrour at her brest,
 The clearness of her conscience is exprest;
 And showing that her deeds all darkness shun,
 Her right-hand holds Truth's symbole, the bright sunne;
 A fan of starres shee in her other twists,
 With which shee chaceth away Error's mists;
 And now shee makes to thee her so even grace,
 For to her rich and poore looke with one face.

THE WORDS OF TRUTH.

Man raysd by faith and love! upon whose head
 Honour sits fresh, let not thy heart be led
 In ignorant waies of insolence and pride
 From her that to this day hath bene thy guide;
 I never showed thee yet more pathes then one,
 And thou hast found sufficient that alone
 To bring thee hether, then go forward still,
 And having most power, first subject thy will;
 Give the first fruits of justice to thy selfe,
 Then dost thou wisely governe, though that elfe

¹ Addressing the Lord Mayor.

Of sin and darkeness still opposing mee,
 Counsels thy appetite to master thee.
 But call to minde what brought thee to this day;
 Was falsehood, cruelty, or revenge the way?
 Thy lust or pleasures? people's curse or hate?
 These were no waies could raise thee to this state,
 The ignorant must acknowledge; if then from mee,
 Which no ill dare deny or sin controule,
 Forsake mee not, that can advance thy soule.
 I see a blessed yeelding in thine eye,
 Thou'rt mine, leade on, thy name shall never dye.

These words ended, they all set forward, this chariot of TRUTH and her cœlestial hand-maids the Graces and Vertues, taking place next before his Lordship; ZEALE and the ANGELL before that; the Chariot of ERROR following as neere as it can get, all passing on till they come into Paule's Church-yard, where stand ready the Five Ilands, those dumbe glories that I spake of before upon the water; upon the height of these Five Ilands sit five persons representing the Five Sences¹, Visus, Auditus, Tactus, Gestus, Olfactus; or Seeing, Hearing, Touching, Tasting, Smelling; at their feete their proper emblemes, aquila, cervus, araneus, simia, canis; an eagle, a heart, a spider, an ape, a dogge.

No sooner can your eyes take leave of these, but they may suddenly espy a strange Ship making toward, and that which may raise greater astonishment, it having neither sailor nor pilot, onely upon a white silke streamer these two words set in letters of gold, "VERITATE GUBERNOR," I am steer'd by Truth; the persons that are contained within this little vessell are only foure: a KING OF THE MOORES, his QUEENE, and two Attendants of their own colour, the rest of their followers, people of the Castle that stands in the middle Iland, of which company two or three on the top appeares to sight; this King seeming much astonished at the many eies of such a multitude, utters his thoughts in these words:

THE SPEECH OF THAT KING.

I see amazement set upon the faces
 Of these white people, wondrings, and strange gazes.
 Is it at mee? does my complexion draw
 So many Christian eyes, that never saw

¹ The Senses were personated at the King's Entry into London in 1603, and are represented in the engraving of the Arch erected at Soper-lane end, in Harrison's Arches. See vol. I. p. 355. Jordan introduced them again in the Lord Mayor's Pageant of 1681, (see Gent. Mag. vol. XCV. i. 131) at the same time assuring the Grocers' Company in his prefatory address, "that in these Triumphs there is nothing designed, written, said, or sung, that ever was presented in any Show till this present day!" N.

A King so blacke before? no, now I see
 Their entire object, the're all meant to thee,
 Grave Citty Governour, my Queene and I
 Well honor'd with the glances that pass by;
 I must confesse many wilde thoughts may rise,
 Opinions, common murmurs, and fixt eyes,
 At my so strange arrival in a land
 Where true Religion and her temple stand,
 I being a Moore, then in opinion's lightnesse
 As far from sanctity as my face from whitenesse;
 But I forgive the judgings of th' unwise,
 Whose censures ever quicken in their eyes,
 Onely begot of outward forme and show,
 And I thinke meete to let such censurers know,
 However darknesse dwels upon my face,
 Truth in my soule sets up the light of grace;
 And though in daies of error I did runne
 To give all adoration to the sunne,
 The moone, and stars,—nay, creatures base and poore,
 Now onely their Creator I adore;
 My Queene and people all, at one time wun,
 By the religious conversation
 Of English merchants, factors, travailers,
 Whose truth did with our spirits hold commerse
 As their affaires with us, following their path
 Wee all were brought to the true Christian Faith.
 Such benefite in good example dwels,
 It oft hath power to convert infidels.

Nor could our desires rest, till wee were led
 Unto this place, where those good spirits were bred;
 And see how wee arriv'd, in blessed time,
 To do that Mistresse service, in the prime
 Of these her spotlesse Triumphs, and t'attend
 That honorable man, her late sworn friend.
 If any wonder at the safe arrive
 Of this small vessell, which all weathers drive
 According to their rages, where appeares
 Nor marriners nor pylot arm'd 'gainst feares,
 Know this came hether from man's guidance free,
 Onely by Truth steer'd, as our soules must bee;
 And see where one of her faire temples stands,
 Do reverence, Moores, bow low, and kisse your hands;
 Behold, our Queene.

QUEENE.

Her goodnesses are such
Wee cannot honour her and her house too much.

All in the Shippe and those in the Castle bowing their bodies to the Temple of Saint Paul, but ERROR smiling betwixt scorne and anger to see such a devout humility take hold of that complexion, breakes into these :

ERROR. What have my sweet-fac'st devils forsooke me too,
Nay, then my charmes will have enough to doo !

But TIME, sitting by the frame of TRUTH his daughter's chariot, attir'd agreeable to his condition, with his hower-glasse, wings, and sithe, knowing best himselfe when it is fittest to speake, goes forward in this manner :

TIME. This Time hath brought t'effect, for on thy day
Nothing but Truth and Vertue shall display
Their virgin ensignes ; Infidelity,
Barbarisme, and Guile shall in deep darkenese lye.
O ! I could ever stand still thus, and gaze,
Never turne glasse agen ; wish no more daies,
So this might ever last ; pittie, the light
Of this rich glory must be cased in night !
But Time must on ; I go, 'tis so decreed,
To blesse my daughter Truth and all her seed
With joyes immortal, triumphs never ending,
And as her hand lifts mee, to thy ascending
May it bee alwaies ready, worthy Sonne,
To hasten which my howers shall quickly run ;
See'st thou yon place¹ ? thither I'll weekely bring thee,
Where Truth's cælestial harmony thou shalt heare,
To which I charge thee bend a serious eare.
Leade on, Time's swift attendants !

Then the Five Ilands passe along into Cheapside, the Ship next after them ; the chariot of TRUTH still before his Lordship, and that of ERROR still chac'st before it, where their eies meete with another more subtile object, planting itself close by the Little Conduite, which may beare this character : the true forme and fashion of a Mount Triumphant, but the beauty and glory thereof over-spredded with a thicke sulphurous darkenese, it being a fog or mist raisde from ERROR, enviously to blemish that place which beares the title of London's Triumphant Mount,—the chiefe grace and luster of the whole Triumph. At the foure corners sit foure Monsters, ERROR's disciples, on whom hangs part of the mist of their cloathing, holding in their hands little thicke clubbes, coloured like their garments ; the names of these foure Monsters,

¹ Saint Paule's Crosse.

Barbarisme, Ignorance, Impudence, Falshood, who at the neere approuching of TRUTH's chariot, are seen a little to tremble, whilst her Deity gives life to these words :

TRUTH. What's here? the mist of Error? dare his spight
 Staine this Triumphant Mount? where our delight
 Hath been divinely fixt so many ages,
 Dare darknesse now breathe forth her insolent rages,
 And hang in poysonous vapours o're the place
 From whence wee receiv'd love and returned grace?
 I see if Truth a while but turne her eies,
 'Thicke are the mists that o're faire Citties rise;
 Wee did expect to receive welcome here,
 From no deform'd shapes, but divine and cleere,
 Instead of monsters that this place attends,
 To meete with Goodnesse and her glorious frends;
 Nor can they so forget mee to bee far,
 I know there stands no other envious bar
 But that foule cloude to darken this bright day,
 Which with this fanne of starres I'll chace away.
 Vanish, suspicious fog! that I may see
 This Cittie's grace, that takes her light from mee.

At this her powerfull command, the mists vanish and give way, the cloude suddenly rises, and changes into a bright spredding canopy, stucke thicke with starres and beames of gold, shooting forth round about it, the mount appearing then most rich in beauty and glory, the foure Monsters falling flat at the foote of the hill; that grave fæminine shape, figuring LONDON, sitting in greatest honour; next above her in the most eminent place, sits Religion, the modell of a faire temple on her head, and a burning lampe in her hand, the proper emblemes of her sanctity, watchfulnesse, and zeale; on her right hand sits Liberality, her head circled with a wreath of gold, in her hand a cornucopia, or horn of abundance, out of which rusheth a seeming floud of gold, but no way flowing to prodigality,—for as the sea is govern'd by the moone, so is that wealthy river by the eie, for bounty must bee led by judgement. and hence is artfully derived the onely difference betweene Prodigality and Bounty, the one deales her gifts with open eyes, the other blindfold; on her left side sits PERFECT LOVE, his proper seate being neerest the heart, wearing upon his head a wreath of white and red roses mingled together, the antient witnesse of peace, love, and union, wherein consists the happinesse of this Land; his right-hand holding a sphære, where in a circle of gold is contained all the Twelve Companies' armes,—and therefore call'd The Sphære of true Brotherhood, or Annulus Amoris, the Ring of Love; upon his left-hand stand two billing turtles, expressing thereby the happy condition of mutuall

love and society; on either side of the Mount are displaid the charitable and religious workes of LONDON (especially the worthy Company of Grocers) in giving maintenance to schollers, souldiers, widdowes, orphans, and the like, where are plac'd one of each number; and on the two heights sit Knowledge and Modesty; Knowledge wearing a crowne of starres, in her hand a perspective-glasse, betokening both her high judgement and deepe insight, the brow of Modestie circled with a wreath all of red roses, expressing her bashfulnesse and blushings; in her hand a crimson banner, fill'd with silver stars, figuring the white purity of her shamefacednesse; her cheeks not red with shame or guilt, but with virgin feare and honor. At the backe of this Triumphant Mount, Chastity, Fame, Simplicity, Meeknesse, have their seats; Chastity wearing on her head a garland of white roses, in her hand a white silke banner, fill'd with starres of gold, expressing the æternity of her unspotted purenesse; Fame next under her, on her head a crowne of silver, and a silver trumpet in her hand, showing both her brightnesse and shrilnesse; Simplicity with a milke-white dove upon her head, and Meeknesse with a garland of mingled flowers, in her hand a white silke banner with a red-crosse, a lambe at her feet, by which both their conditions are sufficiently exprest. The Mount thus made glorious by the power of TRUTH, and the mist expeld, LONDON thus speakes:

LONDON. Thicke scales of darknesse in a moment's space
 Are fell from both mine eyes, I see the face
 Of all my friends about me now most cleerely,
 Religion's sisters, whom I honour deerely;
 Oh! I behold the worke; it comes from thee,
 Illustrious Patronesse, thou that mad'st me see
 In dayes of blindest ignorance, when this light
 Was e'en extinguisht, thou redeem'st my sight;
 Then to thy charge with reverence I commend
 That worthy Son of mine, thy vertuous friend,
 Whom on my love and blessing I require,
 To observe thee faithfully, and his desire
 To imitate thy will, and there lye bounded,
 For power's a dangerous sea, which must be sounded
 With Truth and Justice, or man soone runs on
 'Gainst rockes and shelves of dissolution.
 Then, that thou maist the difference ever know
 Twixt Truth and Error, a few words shall show
 The many wayes that to blind Error slide
 Are in the entrance broad, hell-mouth is wide,
 But when man enters farre, he findes it then
 Close, dark, and streight, for hell returns no men;

But the one sacred way which Truth directs,
 Onely at entrance man's affection checks,
 And is there strict alone, to which place throngs
 All world's afflictions, calumnies, and wrongs.
 But having past those, then thou find'st a way
 In bredth whole heaven, in length æternall day,
 Then, following Truth, she brings thee to that way;
 But first observe what workes she here requires,
 Religion, knowledge, sanctity, chast desires,
 Then charity, which bounty must expresse
 To schollers, souldiers, widdowes, fatherlesse;
 These have beene still my workes, they must be thine,
 Honour and action must together shine,
 Or the best part's eclips'd; behold but this,
 Thy very crest shewes bounty, here 'tis put,
 Thou giv'st the open hand, keepe it not shut;
 But to the needie or deserving spirit
 Let it spread wide, and Heaven enrowles that merit;
 Do these, and prove my hopefull worthy Sonne;—
 Yet nothing's spoke, but needfully must be done.
 And so lead forward.

At which words the whole Triumph moves in his richest glory toward the Crosse of Cheape, at which place ERROR, full of wrath and mallice to see his mist so chased away, fallies into this fury:

ERROR. Heart of all the fiends in hell,
 Could her beggarly power expell
 Such a thicke and poisonous mist
 Which I set Envie's snakes to twist;
 Up, monsters, was her feeble frowne
 Of force to strike my officers downe?
 Barbarisme, Impudence, Lies, Ignorance,
 All your hell-bred heads advance,
 And once againe with rotten darknesse shroud
 This Mount Triumphant; drop downe, sulphurous cloud.

At which the mist falls againe, and hangs over all the beauty of the Mount; not a person of glory seene, onely the foure Monsters gather courage againe, and take their seates, advancing their clubs above their heads, which no sooner perceiv'd, but TRUTH in her chariot making neere to the place, willing still to rescue her friends and servants from the powers of ignorance and darknesse, makes use of these words,

TRUTH. Dare yet the workes of uglinesse appeare
 'Gainst this day's brightness, and see us so neere?

How bold is sinne and hell, that yet it dare
 Rise against us! but know, perdition heire,
 'Tis idle to contend against our power,
 Vanish againe, fowle mist, from Honor's bower.

Then the cloud dispersing itselfe againe, and all the Mount appearing glorious, it passeth so on to the Standard, about which place, by elaborate action from ERROR it falles againe, and goes so darkned, till it comes to S. Laurence Lane end, where by the former words by TRUTH utter'd being againe chac'd away, LONDON thus gratefully requites her goodnesse:

LONDON. Æternitie's bright sister, by whose light,
 Error's infectious workes still flye my sight,
 Receive thy servant's thanks; now, Perfect Love,
 Whose right-hand holds a sphære, wherein doe move
 Twelve blest Societies, whose belov'd encrease
 Stiles it the Ring of Brotherhood, Faith, and Peace;
 From thy harmonious lips let them all taste
 The golden counsell that makes health long last.

PERFECT LOVE *then standing up, holding in his right-hand a sphære, on the other two billing turtles, gives these words:*

PERFECT LOVE. First then I banish from this feast of joy,
 All excesse, epicurisme, both which destroy
 The healths of soule and body; no such guest
 Ought to be welcome to this reverend feast,
 Where Truth is Mistresse; who's admitted here
 Must come for Vertue's love more then for cheere;
 These two white turtles may example give,
 How Perfect Joy and Brotherhood should live;
 And they from whom grave order is expected,
 Of rude excesse must never bee detected;
 This is the Councell which that Lady calles
 Golden advice, for by it no man falles.
 Hee that desires dayes healthfull, sound, and blest,
 Let moderate judgement serve him at his feast.—
 And so lead on, may Perfect Brotherhood shine
 Still in this sphære, and Honor still in thine.

This Speech so ended, his Lordship and the Companies passe on to Guildhall; and at their returning backe, these Triumphs attend to bring his Lordship toward Saint Paul's Church¹, there to performe those yearly Ceremo-

¹ Thus after dinner, we find, the Lord Mayor on the day of his Installation attended St. Paul's Church. *Tempora mutantur!* .N.

niall Rites, which ancient and grave order hath determined; ERROR by the way still busie and in action to drawe darknesse often upon that Mount of Triumph, which by TRUTH is as often disperst. Then all returning homewards full of beauty and brightnesse, this Mount and Chariot of TRUTH both plac'd neere to the entrance of his Lordship's Gate, neere Leadenhall, LONDON, the Lady of that Mount, first gives utterance to these words:

LONDON. Before the day sprang from the morning's wombe
 I rose, my care was earlier then the light;
 Nor would it rest till I now brought thee home,
 Marrying to one joy both the day and night;
 Nor can we call this night, for our eyes count
 The glorious beames that dance about this Mount;
 Sure, did not custome guide 'em, men would say
 Two noones were seene together in one day;
 The splendor is so piercing, triumph seemes
 As if it sparkled, and to men's esteemes
 Threw forth his thanks wrapt up in golden flames,
 As if hee would give light to reade their names
 That were at cost this day to make him shine,
 And bee as free in thanks as they in coine;
 But see Time checkes me, and his sithe stands ready
 To cut all off, no state on earth is steady.
 Therefore, grave Sonne, the time that is to come,
 Bestow on Truth, and so thou 'rt welcome home.

TIME, *standing up in TRUTH's Chariot, seeming to make an offer with his sithe to cut off the glories of the day, growing neere now to the season of rest and sleepe, his daughter TRUTH thus meekely stayes his hand:*

TRUTH. Father, desist awhile, till I send forth
 A few words to our friend, that Man of Worth.—
 The power that Heaven, Love, and the Citie's choyce,
 Have all confer'd on thee with mutuall voyce;
 As it is great, reverend, and honorable,
 Meet it with æqual goodnesse, strive t'excell
 Thy former selfe, as thy command exceeds
 Thy last yeare's state, so let new acts old deeds;
 And as great men in riches and in birth
 (Heightning their blouds, and joyning earth to earth,)
 Bestow their best houres and most serious cares
 In chusing out fit matches for their heires;
 So never give thou over day or houre
 'Till with a vertue thou hast matcht this power.
 For what is greatnesse if not joyn'd with grace?
 Like one of high-bloud that hath married base.

Who seekes authority with an ignorant eye,
 Is like a man seekes out his enemy ;
 For where before his follies were not spread
 Or his corruptions, then they're cleerely read
 E'en by the eyes of all men ; 'tis so pure
 A cristall of itselfe, it will endure
 No poyson of oppression, bribes, hir'd law,
 But 'twill appeare soone in some cracke or flaw,
 Howe're men sooth their hopes with popular breath,
 If not in life, they'll finde that crack in death.
 I was not made to fawne or stroake sin smooth,
 Bee wise, and here me then that cannot sooth ;
 I have set thee high now, bee so in example,
 Made thee a pinnacle in Honor's Temple,
 Fixing ten thousand eyes upon thy brow,
 There is no hiding of thy actions now,
 They must abide the light, and imitate mee,
 Or bee throwne downe to fire where errors bee.
 Nor onely with these words thy eare I feede,
 But give those part that shall in time succeed,
 To thee in present, and to them to come,
 That Truth may bring you all with honour home
 To these your gates, and to those after these,
 Of which your owne good actions keepe the keyes ;
 Then as the loves of thy Society
 Hath flowde in bounties on this day and thee,
 Counting all cost too little for true art,
 Doubling rewards there where they found desert ;
 In thankfulness, justice, and vertuous care,
 Perfect their hopes,—those thy requitals are ;
 With fatherly respect embrace 'em all,
 Faith in thy heart and Plenty in thy hall,
 Love in thy walkes, but Justice in thy state,
 Zeale in thy chamber, Bounty at thy gate ;
 And so thee and these a blessed night,
 To thee, faire Citty, peace, my grace, and light.

Trumpets sounding triumphantly, ZEALE, the Champion of TRUTH, on horse-backe, his head circled with strange fires, appears to his Mistresse, and thus speakes :

ZEALE. See yonder, Lady, Error's Chariot stands,
 Braving the power of your incenst commands ;
 Emboldned by the priviledge of night
 And her blacke faction ; yet to crowne his spight

Which I'll confound, I burne in divine wrath.

TRUTH. Strike then, I give thee leave to shoote it forth.

ZEALE. Then here's to the destruction of that seate,
There's nothing seene of thee but fire shall eate.

At which, a flame shootes from the head of ZEALE, which fastening upon that Chariot of ERROR sets it on fire, and all the beasts that are joynde to it.

The fire-worke being made by Maister Humphrey Nichols, a man excellent in his art; and the whole worke and body of the Triumph, with all the proper beauties of the workemanship most artfully and faithfully performed by John Grinkin; and those furnished with apparell and porters by Anthony Monday, Gentleman.

This proud seate of ERROR lying now onely glowing in imbers, (being a figure or type of his Lordship's justice on all wicked offenders in the time of his government,) I now conclude, holding it a more learned discretion to cease of my selfe, then to have Time cut mee off rudely; — and now let him strike at his pleasure.

The Manner of his Lordship's Entertainment on Michaelmas-day last, being the day of his honorable Election, together with the worthy Sir John Swinnerton¹, Knight, then Lord Maior, the learned and juditious Sir Henry Montague, Knight, Maister Recorder², and many of the right worshipfull the Aldermen of the Citty of London, at that most famous and admired worke of the Running Streame, from Amwell Head into the Cesterne neere Islington, being the sole invention, cost, and industry of that worthy Maister HUGH MIDDLETON³, of London, Goldsmith, for the generall good of the Citty.

Perfection, which is the crowne of all invention, swelling now high with happy welcome to all the glad well-wishers of her admired maturity, the Father and Maister of this famous Worke, expressing thereby both his thankfulness to

¹ See p. 514.

² See vol. I. p. 208.

³ The family of Myddelton was of Derbigh, where Sir Hugh was born. He was a Goldsmith of London, and had considerably enriched himself by a copper or silver mine in Cardiganshire, which he farmed of the Company of Mines Royal, at the yearly rent of £400. His brother the Lord Mayor was a Grocer by Company, and probably by trade. The chief known particulars of the life of Sir Hugh are connected with the history of the New River; see the following note. He was created a Baronet, Aug. 22, 1622, when he was styled of Ruthin in Derbyshire, but at last became so exhausted by the expences of his undertaking, that he was obliged for his support to engage in the business of a Surveyor, or what is now denominated a Civil Engineer, and in that capacity ren-

Heaven and his zeal to the Citty of London in true joy of heart to see his time, travailes, and expences so successively greeted, this gives entertainment to that honorable assembly.

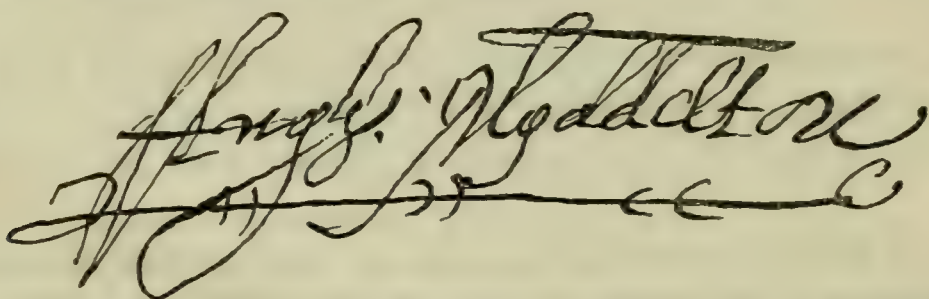
At their first appearing, the warlike musicke of drummes and trumpets liberally beates the aire, sounds as proper as in battell, for there is no labour that man undertakes but hath a warre within itselfe; and perfection makes the conquest; and no few or meane onsets of malice, calumnies, and slanders hath this resolved Gentleman borne off, before his labours were invested with victory, as in this following Speech to those honorable auditors then placed upon the Mount, is more at large related.

A troope of labourers, to the number of threescore or upwards, all in greene cappes alike, bearing in their hands the symboles of their severall imployments in so great a businesse, with drummes before them, marching twice or thrice about the Cesterne, orderly present themselves before the Mount, and after their obeysance,

THE SPEECH ¹.

Long have we labour'd, long desir'd, and praid
For this great Worke's perfection ²; and by th' aide
Of Heaven and good men's wishes 'tis at length
Happily conquer'd by cost, art, and strength;

dered essential services to his country by various schemes of mining, draining, &c. He died in 1631; his title soon became extinct, but a family whose descent from him was considered satisfactory, were some years ago petitioners for charity from the owners of that property which owed its existence to the public spirit and perseverance of their presumed ancestor,



¹ Anthony Munday, who in his edition of Stow's Survey published in 1618, has given another version of the present story, and printed "the Speech according as it was delivered to mee," says it was spoken by "one man in behalf of all the rest;" who, of course, was either some hired actor, or very probably, Thomas Middleton himself. N.

² The project of bringing a New River to London had been long in agitation. "Notwithstanding," says Howes, "sixteene common Conduits, and the great supply from that most delicate and serviceable

After five yeeres' deere expence in dayes,
 Travaile, and paines, beside the infinite wayes
 Of malice, envy, false suggestions,
 Able to daunt the spirit of mighty ones

ryver of Thames, the former provision of water would no way suffice; upon consideration whereof" an Act of Parliament was obtained as early as the tenth of Elizabeth, which enabled the Citizens of London to bring a river from any part of Middlesex and Hertfordshire, but provided that it were performed within ten yeares. During this space, as Howes continues, "many things were propounded and consulted, but nothing to any purpose concluded or attempted." On the Accession of James, "the great confluence of people being more and more encreased, and the supply of water more needed and desired," another Act was obtained, and that being found defective, a third. Still, "notwithstanding all their former survey of ryvers, springs, and ground, and due examination of all charges from head to foote," (Howes adds, in 1614,) "with certayntie that it was fesible and profitable" (but he would probably have retracted this a few years afterwards); notwithstanding this, "the worke in all respectes remayned in silence," apparently with some hope of assistance from "the Cittie or Chamber of London." At length, the public spirit of Hugh Myddelton, impatient of further delay, singly undertook the vast task, a task which now would be easily effected by a Joint Stock Company, but which was then overwhelming and unprecedented. On the first of April 1606, a day the ignorant probably thought very well adapted for the commencement of so *fool-hardy* an undertaking, the City transferred to Mr. Myddelton and his heirs the full right and powers of their Act of Parliament. Having, therefore, selected the two springs of Amwell near Hertford and Chadwell near Ware, both about 20 miles from London, he began his work Feb. 20, 1608, and carried it on for a course of 40 miles, "through ground of extreame different quallity, in some place ooze and muddie, in other places extreame hard and rocky." Many difficulties there were, indeed, which were overcome by excessive (and what we might now term unnecessary) ingenuity and expence. In more than one place the stream was conveyed through wooden troughs; of the principal of which, at Bush Hill, two views are engraved in *Gent. Mag.* vol. LIV. pp. 643, 723. The number of bridges, great and small, which crossed the river on its formation was, says Howes, about 800 (but this is probably an error for 200); many drains were made to carry off land-springs and common sewers, sometimes over and sometimes under the channel. Besides these necessary difficulties, Mr. Myddelton had, as may easily be imagined, many others to struggle with; the malice and derision of the vulgar and curious, the hindrances and complaints of persons through whose grounds the channel was to be cut, &c. (See the Letter of Mr. Beaulieu in p. 313.) When Mr. Myddelton had brought the water into the neighbourhood of Enfield, almost his whole fortune was spent; upon which he asked assistance of the City, but they refusing to interest themselves in the concern, he applied to the King, who, though perhaps less able than the Citizens, did by indenture under the great seal, dated May 2, 1612, covenant to pay half the expense of the whole work, past and to come; and thus the design was happily effected. It would be lengthening this note too much to relate the after history of the New River; suffice it to say that, though the King had borne so great a part of the expence and did afterwards, in 1612, grant his Letters Patent to Sir Hugh Myddelton; Sir Henry Montague, then Chief Justice of the King's Bench; Sir Thomas Myddelton, the Alderman; Ralph Myddelton, son of Hugh; five others of the same surname, and eighteen others, incorporating them by the name of "The

In wealth and courage, this, a Worke so rare,
 Onely by one man's industry, cost, and care,
 Is brought to blest effect, so much withstood,
 His only aime the Cittie's generall good.
 And where, before, many unjust complaints,
 Enviously seated, hath oft caus'd restraints,
 Stoppes, and great crosses, to our Maister's charge
 And the Worke's hinderance, favour now at large
 Spreads itselfe open to him, and commends
 To admiration both his paines and ends,
 The King's most gracious love; perfection draws
 Favour from Princes, and from all applause!

Then, worthy Magistrates, to whose content,
 Next to the State, all this great care was bent,
 And for the publick good, which grace requires,
 Your loves and furtherance chiefly he desires
 To cherish these proceedings, which may give
 Courage to some that may hereafter live,
 To practise deedes of goodnesse and of fame,
 And gladly light their actions by his name.

Governors and Company of the New River brought from Chadwell and Amwell to London, empowering them to chose a Governor, Deputy Governor, and Treasurer, and to grant leases, &c. its profit was at first very inconsiderable. There was no dividend till 1633, when £.11. 19s. 1d. was paid on each share; the second dividend amounting to only £.3. 4s. 2d. and, instead of a third, a call being expected, King Charles I. by a deed under the Great Seal, Nov. 18, 1636, re-conveyed the royal moiety aforesaid to Sir Hugh in consideration of Sir Hugh's securing to the Crown a fee-farm rent of £.500 out of the profits of the Company, clear of all reprises. Sir Hugh charged that sum on the King's shares, as this moiety, when divided into thirty-six portions, was called. These proprietors, it is to be observed, have, as their Royal predecessors, no participation in the direction of the Company's affairs, the management being, by the charter of 1619, wholly vested in twenty-nine holders of the thirty-six "Adventurers' shares;" and it is also to be remarked, that the original cost of the shares was not a definite sum advanced, as is the case with the present numerous Joint Stock Companies, but the risque and expense was thus divided. That expense (though Lysons in his *Environs* says it is not known,) must have been £.212. 3s. 4d. a share, since we find in the "Declaration of his Majesty's Revenew," attached to "Truth brought to Light by Time," that the King's charge for half was £.7856. The reliance at length placed in the establishment, the prodigious number of new buildings, and the alteration of the value of money, in the course of a century and a half increased the income a hundred-fold — The shares are seldom parted with, but one share, about fifteen years since, was sold for £.15,000. Since that time, however, the success of other projects have reduced the value of the New River shares full one half. In 1809 the dividend of a share was £.472. 5s. 8d. exclusively of the property tax.—Much of the modern history of the New River is to be found in Lysons's *Environs of London*. N.

Clarke of the Worke, reech me the booke, to show
How many arts from such a labour flow ;

These lines following are read in the Clearke's Booke :

First, here's the Overseer, this try'd man,
An antient souldier and an artizan ;
The Clearke; next him the Mathematitian ;
The Maister of the Timber-worke takes place
Next after these ; the Measurer in like case ;
Brickelayer ; and Enginer ; and after those
The Borer ; and the Pavier ; then it shoves
The Labourers next ; Keeper of Amwell Head ;
The Walkers last ;—so all their names are read.
Yet these but parcels of six hundred more,
That, at one time, have beene imployd before ;
Yet these in sight and all the rest will say
That all the weeke they had their Royall pay !

The Speech goes on :

Now for the fruits then ;—flow forth, pretious Spring,
So long and deerely sought for, and now bring
Comfort to all that love thee ; loudly sing,
And with thy christall murmur strucke together,
Bid all thy true well-wishers welcome hither !

At which words the floud-gate opens, the Streame let into the Cesterne¹, drummes and trumpets giving it triumphant welcomes, and, for the close of this their honorable Entertainment, a peale of chambers.

¹ The site of the New River Head had always been a pond, "an open idell poole," says Howes, "commonly called the Ducking Pond; being now by the Master of this worke reduced into a comly pleasant shape, and many wayes adorned with buildings, &c." The Bason is now thrice its original size. The adjoining house, belonging to the Company, was built in 1613, but having been new fronted in 1782, and recently much enlarged, has lost all external appearance of antiquity. N.



"The fourth daye of November 1613, and the eleventh yeare of the raigne of King James, Syr Robert Kerr, Vicount Rochester, was created Baron of Branspeth, by the specification onely in the patent, for that he was formerly a Baron *implicative* by the dignitie and stile of a Vicount; and therefore not invested in the roabes of a Baron. But [the following was the Ceremony of his Creation as Earl of Somerset. He was] brought oute of the Councell-chamber over the tarras [terrace] into the Banqueting-house in this order:

The Drummes and Trumpetts, but not sounding.

The Pursevants and Heraldes of Armes, Clarenceux, and Norroy.

Garter carieng the Patent.

The Earle of Montgomery carieng the Mantle,

The Earle of Pembrok the Sworde with the pomell upward,	} in their roabes and cappes of estate.
The Earle of Southampton the Cappe of Estate,	
The Earle of Worcester the Coronett,	

The Vicount Rochester in his surcoate and hode of crymosin velvet, in an ordinary hatt, with his rapier, between the Earle of Northampton and the Earle of Nottingham, in their roabes of estate and coronetts; and by them presented to the King (who satt in state with the Queene and Prince) with due reverence.

Garter delivered the Patent to the Lord Chamberlane, he to the King, and the King to Sir Th[omas Lake], who reade it, the Lordes then holding their cappes of estate in their hands; and att the wordes "*investuimus per cincturam gladii, et positionem cappæ et circuli*," they were putt on accordingly by the King, and then the Earles did putt on their cappes of estate. When the created Earle had rendered thanks, and the King had used a short speache to him, the trumpetts sounded and drummes strake, and so [they] returned to the Councell-chamber, where they all dined in their roabes, with their cappes of estate, he sitting att the table's ende uppermost. Sir Edward Coke, lately made Lord Cheif Justice of England, and this day sworn Councillor, was admitted to sitt at table with them. The King's stile was proclaimed in the three languages, and the Earle's in French with two largesses¹."

November 5, the eighth Anniversary of the Gunpowder Treason, was kept with the accustomed solemnity at Whitehall. Bishop Andrews, as usual, preached before the King there; his text was Proverbs, viii. 15, "By mee Kings reigne²."

¹ From Camden's MS. Bibl. Harl. 5176. p. 29. The patent for the Creation is in the same, p. 31.

² This Discourse is printed in his "XCVI Sermons," the Fifth on this occasion.

On the 8th of November, Mr. Henry Yelverton, having been lately appointed the King's Solicitor General ¹, was knighted at Whitehall.

On the same day, Sir Baptist Hickes, who had twice before been excused by the Royal interference from the office of an Alderman of London ², was in like manner discharged, by the Court of Common Council, from the office of Sheriff.

On the 11th of November, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Thomas

¹ The main features of this distinguished Lawyer's life form an article which might be advantageously enlarged in Chalmers's Biographical Dictionary. He was son of Sir Christopher Yelverton, Judge of the King's Bench (of whom see vol. I. p. 206); and father of Sir Christopher who was knighted May 6, 1623) see under that date). He was educated at Oxford, and was, as his father, of Gray's Inn, where he served as Lent Reader in 1606, being then accounted, says A. Wood, "a religious Gentleman, and a person well read in the municipal laws." He is said to have owed his present preferment to the favourite Car, but his oratory in the House of Commons seems to have chiefly occasioned it, if we trust the following passage in a Letter of Mr. Chamberlain's dated Oct. 14: "Yelverton is in speech to be Solicitor for his good service to the King in the Parliament; and for the disgrace he seemeth to sustain thereby. And some say his pleading against the Hospital is not the least cause of his preferment." Accordingly he was appointed Solicitor General on the 29th of October. It is, by the way, very worthy of remark, that his Parliamentary eloquence had only three years before brought him under the King's displeasure; for he had been a principal leader of the Opposition of the day. His own Narrative of what passed on his being restored to his Majesty's favour on that occasion, including his several interviews with Lord Dunbar, the King, and the Earl of Salisbury, and a long Speech of his Majesty, is printed in the *Archæologia*, vol. XV. pp. 27—52, and some extracts will be found in the Appendix to the present Volume. His offence seems to have principally consisted in opposition to the King's views with respect to the Scottish matters;—to use his Majesty's own words, he had not duly "conformed to the wisdom of the King and his Councillors of State!" Having, however, expiated his offence, (and his Narrative of the expiation is certainly worth perusal,) he seems to have so far dedicated his powers to the King as to have obtained his subsequent advance by "his good service in the Parliament." He next step was to the office of Attorney General, March 17, 1616. Again he had the misfortune or the folly to give offence, and he was accused by the Favourite Buckingham in the Star-chamber of illegal proceedings in his office, and by a sentence of that court June 27, 1620, sequestered from his place, imprisoned in the Tower, and heavily fined; and being afterwards brought before the Lords, he made a speech so offensive to the King and his Favourite, that he was fined 10,000 marks for the reflections cast on the one, and 5000 for the insult offered to the other. But again was he destined to rise, and having acquired the favour of the very man whose enmity had cost him so dear, he was, through his interest, made a Serjeant-at-Law, April 30, constituted a Puisne Judge of the King's Bench, May 10, 1625, is said to have been advanced to the Common Pleas, and, had not the Duke been untimely cut off, would in all probability have been made Lord Keeper. He closed his eventful life, Jan. 24, 1630, aged 63. Of his Reports and other publications see the *Biog. Diet.* ² See p. 433.

Wroth¹; on the 13th and 14th, at Royston, Sir William Steward², *Scotus*; and Sir William Uvedall.

On the 25th, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"All the talk now is of masking and feasting at these towardly Marriages, whereof the one [the Earl of Somerset's] is appointed on St. Stephen's-day in Christmass; the other [Lord Roxburgh's] for Twelfth-tide³. The King bears the charge of the first, all saving the apparel; and no doubt the Queen will do as much on her side, which must be a Masque of Maids, if they may be found⁴; and that is all the charge she means to be at, saving the Bride's wedding-gown and the marriage-bed, wherein she will not exceed £.500, for she saith her Maid Drummond is rich enough, as well in wealth as in virtue and favour.

"The Queen by her late pacification⁵ hath gained Greenwich into jointure⁶.

"The Maskers, besides the Lord Chamberlain's four sons⁷, are named to be the Earls of Rutland, Pembroke, Montgomery, Dorset, Salisbury, the Lords Chandos, North, Compton, and Hay. Edward Sackville, that killed the Lord Bruce, was in the list, but put out again⁸; and I marvel he would offer himself, knowing how little gracious he is, and that he hath been assaulted once or twice since his return.

"The Lady Burgh, with allowance of £.500 a year, is to go and reside about the Lady Elizabeth at Heidelberg; and carries a midwife with her; whereby the rumour of her miscarriage seems to be false.

¹ The Wroths were neighbours of the King at Wroth's-place, Enfield. Lysons's *Environs*, II. 316.

² Either this person or the K. B. mentioned in p. 343, received Free-gifts from the Exchequer of £.600 in 1605; £.500 in 1613; and £.1500 in 1614. ³ It was deferred till February 2.

⁴ They were not found; Daniel's Pastoral which was exhibited on this occasion, was probably performed by actors from the theatres. ⁵ See p. 671.

⁶ Upon this acquisition the Queen built the brick-work towards the garden; and she laid the foundation of the "House of Delight" in the park, afterwards the Ranger's Lodge. This building was finished by Inigo Jones by order of Queen Henrietta Maria. "It was completed in 1635, as appears by a date still to be seen on the front; the cieling was painted by Horatio Gentileschi, and the whole house was furnished so magnificently, as Philipott says in his Survey of Kent, as to surpass all others of the kind in England." Walpole's *Anecdotes of Painting*—By an Act of Parliament passed in 1807, his Majesty was empowered to grant the Palace in Greenwich Park commonly called the King's House, Queen's House, or Ranger's Lodge, to the Commissioners of the Royal Naval Asylum. Lysons's *Environs*. ⁷ See before, p. 629.

⁸ Mr. Chamberlain's information was not exactly correct; by reference to the list at the end of the Masque, it will be found that the Earl of Rutland and Lord Chandos were also "put out again."

"The first of this month the Lord Chancellor [Ellesmere] was at Lincoln's Inn, as he said, to take leave, and sung and danced about the fire-side, after their laudable custom¹."

On the 26th of November, the King, being still at Royston, knighted there:
 Sir William Selby, of Northamptonsh. Sir Charles Gaudey, of Norfolk.
 Sir Thomas Brook, of Leicestershire. Sir Thomas Walshingham, of Kent.
 Sir Robert Bell², of Norfolk. Sir John Gill.

On the 30th, the Ringers of St. Margaret's, Westminster, were paid 2s. 6d. when the King returned to Whitehall.

December 9, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Dudley Carleton, as follows:

"The King is at Royston, somewhat ill-disposed by the falling down of his uvula, which was painful and troublesome to him for two or three days. He returns about the beginning of next week, to further the preparations of this magnificent Marriage. Sir Francis Bacon prepares³ a Mask which will stand him in above £.2000, and though he has been offered some help by the House [Gray's Inn], and specially by Mr. Solicitor, Sir Henry Yelverton⁴, who would have sent him £.500, yet he would not accept it, but offers them the whole charge with the honour. Marry, his obligations are such, as well to his Majesty as to the great Lord, and to the whole House of Howards, as he can admit no partners. In the mean time his House at Gorhambury by St. Alban's is gone, some say to the Earl of Somerset, and others to the Earl of Suffolk. But his bounty is no whit abated, for he feasts the whole University of Cambridge this Christmass, and hath warrants to his friends and acquaintance far and near to furnish him with venison to bestow on the College. He carries a great port as well in his Train, as in his apparel and otherwise, and lives at a great charge; and yet he pretends he will take no fees, nor intermeddle in mercenary causes, but wholly apply himself to the King's affairs⁵.

¹ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) No. 4173.

* See p. 408.

² With his wonted readiness, it might be added; see p. 590.

⁴ See p. 703.

⁵ These particulars of the great Bacon's life are too curious to pass without remark. The report that he had parted with Gorhambury was erroneous, though I have not the means of determining whether well or ill-founded. As to his love of stately attendance, he seems in this to have somewhat resembled his great predecessor in the paths of ambition, the haughty Wolsey. Even after his fall, he could not wholly lay it aside, if we credit the following anecdote. At that period, having been released from the Tower, he was residing in retirement at Gorhambury, when the Prince on his way to London, saw at a distance a coach followed by a considerable number of people upon horseback,

“ The King hath been all this week at Hampton Court.

“ Your Cousin Carleton ¹ the preacher was with the King on Sunday, and had many good and gracious words for a new work ² of his. But because meeting him yesterday he told me he had written to you himself, I shall not need to say more, but that if he could now, *recenti merito*, light upon any thing that were to be given, he might easily obtain it.

“ I have seen your Nephew but once since his coming from Royston ; and this week he hath been abroad with the King. He told me he was like to be sent into Spain toward the spring with certain horses and geldings, and seemed to dislike the journey ; but I encouraged him all I could, seeing it may turn to his benefit many ways.”

On the 15th of December, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir Thomas Trenchard ³, of Dorsetshire ; and Sir Thomas Hewet ⁴, of London.

Saturday the 25th, being Christmas-day, was kept with the usual solemnities ; the King attended Divine Service at Whitehall, and Bishop Andrews preached ⁵.

On the 26th, was unfortunately consummated the Marriage between the Earl of Somerset and the divorced Countess of Essex ⁶. “ This Wedding,” says Howes, “ was solemnized at the Courte at Whitehall, and was honored with the Royal presence of the King, the Queene, Prince Charles, most of the Nobilitie, and divers reverend Bishops. The Lord Bishop of Bath and Welles married them, and Doctor Mountaine, Deane of Westminster, made the Nuptial Sermon ⁷. And that night there was a gallant Maske of Lords :”

and upon enquiry was told that it was the Lord St. Alban's, attended by his friends ; on which his Highness said with a smile, “ Well, do what you can, this man scorns to go out like a snuff !”

¹ George Carleton, second son of Thomas Carleton, of Carleton Hall, Cumberland, educated at Edmund Hall, Oxford ; Fellow of Merton ; promoted to the Bishoprick of Landaff in 1618 ; and the year following translated to Chichester.

² Probably “ *Consensus Ecclesiæ Catholicæ contra Tridentinos*. London, 1613,” 8vo.

³ Of Wolveton, and Sheriff of Dorsetshire in 1634. See a long pedigree of the family in Hutchins's History, vol. III. p. 22.

⁴ Probably of the family noticed in p. 100.

⁵ The Sermon, on John, viii. 56, is in the Bishop's “ XCVI Sermons,” the eighth on the Nativity.

⁶ In Donne's Poems is an Eclogue of 233 lines, dated Dec. 26, 1613, in which “ Allophanes finding Idios in the country in Christmas time, reprehends his absence from Court, at the Marriage of the Earl of Somerset.”

⁷ The fees at the Chapel, as we learn in Malcolm, vol. IV. p. 276, were £.40. See further particulars of the Marriage in Mr. Chamberlain's Letter, p. 725.

THE DESCRIPTION OF A MASKE,
 PRESENTED IN THE BANQUETTING-ROOME AT WHITEHALL,
 ON SAINT STEPHEN'S NIGHT LAST,
 AT THE MARRIAGE OF
 THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE OF SOMERSET,
 AND
 THE RIGHT NOBLE THE LADY FRANCES HOWARD.

Written by THOMAS CAMPION, M. D.¹

WHEREUNTO ARE ANNEXED DIVERS CHOYSE AYRES COMPOSED FOR THIS MASKE
 THAT MAY BE SUNG WITH A SINGLE VOYCE TO THE LUTE OR BASE VIAL².

Pulchro pulchro datur, sociali fœdere amanti
 Tandem nubit amans; ecquid amabilius?

Veræ ut supersint nuptiæ,
 Præite duplici face;
 Prætendat alteram necesse
 Hymen, alteram, par est, Amor.

Uni ego malle placuisse docto,
 Candido, et fastu sine judicanti,
 Millium quam millibus imperitorum
 Inque videntum.

In ancient times, whether any man sought to shadowe or brighten his invention, he had store of feyned persons readie for his purpose; as Satyres, Nymphes, and their like; such were then in request and beliefe among the vulgar. But in our dayes, although they have not utterly lost their use, yet finde they so little credit, that our modern writers have rather transferd their fictions to the persons of Enchaunters and Commaunders of Spirits, as that excellent Poet Torquato

¹ See pp. 104, 629.

² "London: Printed by E. A. for Laurence Lisle, dwelling in Paulc's Church-yard, at the signe of the Tyger's head, 1614." This Masque is here printed from a copy lent me by Mr. Rhodes, at whose sale, April 20, 1824, it was bought, as mentioned in p. 630, for £.10 by Mr. Leigh. The "Ayres" printed at the end are the musical notes (here omitted) to the four Songs contained in the Masque. A fifth, "made by Th. Campion, and sung in the Lord's Masque at the Count Palatine's Marriage," is added "to fill up these emptie pages;" it has been already printed in p. 361. N.

Tasso hath done, and many others. In imitation of them (having a presentation in hand for persons of high state), I grounded my whole invention upon enchantments and severall transformations; the workmanship whereof was undertaken by M. Constantine, an Italian, Architect to our late Prince Henry.¹; but he being too much of himself, and no way to be drawne to impart his intentions, fayled so farre in the assurance he gave, that the mayne invention, even at the last cast, was of force drawne into a farre narrower compasse then was from the beginning intended. The description whereof, as it was performed, I will as briefly as I can deliver.

The place wherein the Maske was presented being the Banquetting-house at Whitehall, the upper part, where the State is placed, was theatred with pillars, scaffolds, and all things answerable to the sides of the roome. At the lower end of the Hall, before the sceane, was made an arch tryumphall, passing beautifull, which enclosed the whole workes.

The sceane itselfe, the curtaine being drawne, was in this manner divided. On the upper part there was formed a skye with clowdes very arteficially shadowed. On either side of the sceane belowe was set a high promontory, and on either of them stood three large pillars of golde; the one promontory was bounded with at rocke standing in the sea, the other with a wood; in the midst betweene them appeared a sea in perspective with ships, some cunningly painted, some arteficially sayling. On the front of the sceane, on either side was a beautifull garden, with sixe seates a peece to receave the Maskers; behinde them the mayne land, and in the midst a paire of stayres made exceeding curiously in the forme of a schalop-shell. And in this manner was the eye first of all entertained.

After the King, Queene, and Prince were placed, and preparation was made for the beginning of the Maske, there entred foure SQUIRES, who as soone as they approached neare the Presence, humbly bowing themselves, spake as followeth:

1 SQUIRE. That fruite that neither dreads the Syrian heats,
Nor the sharp frosts which churlish Boreas threats,
The fruite of Peace and Joy, our wishes bring
To this high State, in a perpetuall spring!
Then pardon, sacred Majestie, our grieffe
Unseasonably that presseth for reliefe;
The ground whereof, if your blest cares can spare
A short space of attention, we'll declare.

¹ To "Constantine de Servi" Prince Henry assigned a yearly pension of £.200 in July 1612; Inigo Jones had been in 1610 nominated the Prince's "Surveyor of the Works." N.

Great Honor's herral'd, Fame, having proclaym'd
 This Nuptiall Feast, and with it all inflam'd,
 From every quarter of the earth three Knights
 (In courtship seene, as well as martiall fights,)
 Assembled in the continent, and there
 Decreed this night a solemne service here.
 For which by sixe and sixe embarqu'd they were
 In severall keeles; their sayles for Britaine bent,
 But (they that never favour'd good intent,)
 Deformed Errour, that enchaunting fiend,
 And wing-tongu'd Rumor, his infernall friend,
 With Curiositie and Credulitie,
 Both sorceresses, all in hate agree
 Our purpose to divert, in vaine they strive,
 For we in spight of them came neere to arrive,
 When sodainly (as heaven and hell had met,)
 A storme confus'd against our tackle beat,
 Severing the ships; but after what befell
 Let those relate, my tongue's too weake to tell.

2 SQUIRE. A strange and sad ostent¹ our Knights distrest,
 For while the tempest's fierye rage increast,
 About our deckes and hatches, loe! appeare
 Serpents, as Lerna had beene pour'd out there
 Crawling about us, which feare to eschew
 The Knights the tackle climb'd, and hung in view;
 When violently a flash of light'ning came,
 And from our sights did beare them in the flame;
 Which past, no serpent there was to be seene,
 And all was husht, as storme had never beene.

3 SQUIRE. At sea their mischiefes grewe, but ours at land,
 For being by chance arriv'd, while our Knights stand
 To view their storm-tost friends on two cliffes neere,
 Thence loe! they vanish'd, and sixe pillars were
 Fixt in their footsteps, pillars all of golde,
 Faire to our eyes, but wofull to beholde!

4 SQUIRE. Thus with prodigious hate and crueltie,
 Our good Knights for their love afflicted be;
 But oh! protect us now, majesticke Grace,
 For see, those curst Enchanters presse in place
 That our past sorrowes wrought; these, these alone
 Turne all the worlde into confusion.

¹ A prodigy; see Nares's Glossary. N.

Towards the end of this Speech, two Enchanters and two Enchanteresses appeare: ERROR first, in a skin-coate scaled like a serpent, and an antick habit painted with snakes, a haire of curled snakes, and a deformed visard; with him RUMOR in a skin-coate full of winged-tongues, and over it an antick robe, on his head a cap like a tongue, with a large paire of wings to it; CURIOSITY in a skin-coate full of eyes, and an antick habit over it, a fantastick cap full of eyes; CREDULITY in the like habit painted with eares, and an antick cap full of eares.

When they had whispered a while as if they had rejoyced at the wrongs which they had done to the KNIGHTS, the musick and their Dance began; strait forth rusht the Foure Windes confusedly: the EASTERN WINDE in a skin-coate of the colour of the sun-rising, with a yellow haire, and wings both on his shoulders and feete; the WESTERNE WINDE in a skin-coate of darke crimson, with crimson haire and wings; the SOUTHERNE WINDE in a darke russet skin-coate, haire and wings sutable; the NORTHERN WINDE in a grisled skin-coate, with haire and wings accordingly.

After them, in confusion, came the Foure Elements: EARTH, in a skin-coate of grass-greene, a mantle painted full of trees, plants, and flowers, and on his head an oke growing; WATER, in a skin-coate waved, with a mantle full of fishes, on his head a dolphin; AYRE, in a skye-coloured skin-coate, with a mantle painted with fowle, and on his head an eagle; FIRE, in a skin-coate, and a mantle painted with flame; on his head a cap of flame, with a salamander in the midst thereof.

Then entred the Foure Parts of the Earth in a confused measure: EUROPE in the habit of an Empresse, with an emperiall crowne on her head; ASIA in a Persian Ladie's habit, with a crowne on her head; AFRICA like a Queene of the Moores with a crown; AMERICA in a skin-coate of the colour of the juice of mulberies, on her head a large round brim of many-coloured feathers, and in the midst of it a small crown.

All these having daunced together in a strange kinde of confusion, past away by foure and foure. At which time ETERNITY appeared in a long blew taffata robe, painted with starres, and on her head a crowne; next come the THREE DESTINIES, in long robes of white taffata, like aged women, with garlands of narcissus flowers on their heads, and in their left hands they carried distaffes, according to the descriptions of Plato and Catullus, but in their right hands they carried altogether a Tree of golde.

After them came HARMONY with nine Musitians more, in long taffata robes and caps of tinsell, with garlands guilt, playing and singing this Song:

Chorus ¹. *Vanish, vanish hence, Confusion,
Dimme not Hymen's goulden light*

¹ "Made and exprest by Mr. Nicholas Lanier," an Italian, who with others of the family was in the band of the King's Musicians; see vol. I. p. 598. Nicholas was a man of considerable merit, not

*With false illusion,
The Fates shall doe him right,
And faire Eternitie,
Who passe through all enchantements free.*

ETERNITIE sings alone:
*Bring away this sacred tree,
That Tree of Grace and Bountie;
Set it in Bel-Anna's eye,
For she, she, only she
Can all knotted spels untye;
Pull'd from the stocke let her blest hands convey
To any suppliant hand a bough,
And let that hand advance it now
Against a charm, that charm shall fade away.*

*Toward the end of this Song, the THREE DESTINIES
set the tree of golde before the Queene.*

Chorus. *Since knightly valour rescues Dames distressed,
By vertuous Dames let charm'd Knights be released.*

After this Chorus one of the SQUIRES speakes:

SQUIRE. *Since Knights by valour rescue Dames distrest,
Let them be by the Queene of Dames releast;
So sing the Destinies, who never erre,
Fixing this Tree of Grace and Bountie here,
From which, for our enchaunted Knights we crave
A branche, pull'd by your sacred hand, to have;
That we may beare it as the Fates direct,
And manifest your glory in th' effect.
In vertue's favour then and pittie now,
Great Queene, vouchsafe us a divine-touch't bough.*

*At the end of this Speech the Queene pul'd a branch from the Tree, and
gave it to a Noblemen who delivered it to one of the SQUIRES.*

only a Musician, but as a Painter, Engraver, and skilful Connoisseur. He will be found mentioned hereafter in Ben Jonson's Masque of Lethe, as singing the whole Masque after the Italian manner, *stylo recitativo*, having ordered and made both the scene and music. "He was employed many years after," says Walpole, "in a very different and more melancholy manner—in a vocal accompaniment to a Funeral Hymn on his Royal Master [Charles I.], written by Thomas Piercy." As an artist he was of great assistance in arranging that Royal Master's gallery of pictures. See Walpole's *Painters*. He died at the age of 78, and was buried in St. Martin's in the Fields, Nov. 4, 1646. His Portrait is engraved in Hawkins's *History of Music*, vol. III. p. 381. N.

*A Song*¹ while the SQUIRES descend with the bough toward the scene.

Goe, happy man, like th' Evening Starre,
Whose beames to Bridegroomes wellcome are;
May neither hagge nor fiend withstand
The powre of thy victorious hand;
The uncharm'd Knights surrender now,
By virtue of thy raised bough.

Away, unchauntements, vanish quite,
No more delay our longing sight;
'Tis fruitlesse to contend with Fate,
Who gives us powre against your hate;
Brave Knights in courtly pompe appeare,
For now are you long look't for heere.

Then out of the ayre a cloude descends, discovering sixe of the KNIGHTS alike, in strange and sumptuous attires, and withall on either side of the cloud, on the two promontories, the other sixe Maskers are sodainly transformed out of the pillars of golde, at which time, while they all come forward to the dancing place, this Chorus is sung, and on the sodaine the whole sceane is changed; for whereas before all seemed to be done at the sea and sea-coast, now the promontories are sodainly remooved, and London with the Thames is very arteficially presented in their place.

The SQUIRE lifts up the bough.

Chorus. Vertue and grace, in spight of charmes,
Have now redeem'd our men-at-armes;
There's no inchauntement can withstand,
Where Fate directs the happy hand!

The Maskers' first Dance.

*The third Song of three partes, with a Chorus of five partes,
sung after the first Daunce.*

While dancing rests, fit place to musicke graunting,
Good spells the Fates shall breath all envy daunting,
Kind cares with joy enchaunting, chaunting.

Chorus. Io, Io, Hymen!

Like lookes, like hearts, like loves are linck't together,
So must the Fates be pleas'd, so come they hether
To make this joy persever, ever.

Chorus. Io, Io, Hymen!

¹ This and the two following "ayres" were "composed by Mr. Coprario [of whom see p. 505], and sung by Mr. John Allen and Mr. Lanier."

*Love decks the spring, her buds to th' ayre exposing,
Such fire here in these bridall breasts reposing,
We leave with charmes enclosing, closing.*

Chorus. *Io, Io, Hymen!*

The Maskers' second Daunce.

The fourth Song, a Dialogue of three with a Chorus after the second Daunce:

1. *Let us now sing of Love's delight,
For he alone is Lord to-night;*
2. *Some friendship between man and man prefer,
But I th' affection between man and wife.*
3. *What good can be in life,
Whereof no fruites appeare?*
1. *Set is that tree in ill houre,
That yeilds neither fruite nor flowre.*
2. *How can man perpetuall be
But in his own posteritie?*

Chorus. *That pleasure is of all most bountiful and kinde,
That fades not straight, but leaves a living joy behinde.*

After this Dialogue the Maskers daunce with the Ladies, wherein spending as much time as they held fitting, they returned to the seates provided for them. Straight in the Thames appeared foure barges with skippers in them, and withall this Song was sung:

*Come ashore, come, merrie mates,
With your nimble heeles and pates;
Summon ev'ry man his Knight,
Enough honour'd is this night.*

*Now let your sea-born Goddesse come,
Quench these lights and make all dumbe;
Some sleepe, others let her call,
And so god-night to all, god-night to all.*

At the conclusion of this Song arrived Twelve Skippers in red capps, with short cassocks and long slopps wide at the knees of white canvass striped with crimson, white gloves and pomps, and red stockings; these twelve danced a brave and lively Daunce, shouting and tryumphing after their manner. After this followed the Maskers' last Daunce, with which they retyred. After the embarking of the Knights, the SQUIRES approach the State, and speak:

THE FIRST SQUIRE.

*All that was ever askt by vow of Jove,
To blesse a state with plentie, honor, love,*

Power, triumph, private pleasure, publique peace,
 Sweete springs and autumns fill'd with due increase,
 All these,—and what good else thought can supplie,
 Ever attend your Triple Majestie!

THE SECOND SQUIRE.

All blessings which the Fates propheticke sung
 At Peleus' Nuptialls, and whatever tongue
 Can figure more, this night and aye betide,
 The honour'd Bridegroome and the honour'd Bride.

ALL THE SQUIRES TOGETHER.

Thus speakes in us th' affection of our Knights,
 Wishing you health, and miriads of good-nights.

*The SQUIRES' Speeches being ended, this Song is
 sung while the boates passe away.*

*Hast aboard, hast now away,
 Hymen frownes at your delay;
 Hymen doth long nights affect,
 Yeild him then his due respect.*

*The sea-borne Goddess straight will come,
 Quench these lights and make all dombe;
 Some sleepe, others she will call,
 And so god-night to all, god-night to all.*

THE NAMES OF THE MASKERS¹.

THE DUKE OF LENNOX.	THE LORD SCROOPE ³ .
THE EARLE OF PEMBROKE.	THE LORD NORTH.
THE EARLE OF DORSET.	THE LORD HAYES.
THE EARLE OF SALISBURIE ² .	SIR THOMAS HOWARD.
THE EARLE OF MOUNTGOMERIE.	SIR [MR.] HENRY HOWARD.
THE LORD WALDEN.	SIR CHARLES HOWARD.

¹ Of these twelve noble Maskers eight have before appeared in that character either at the Marriages of the Earl of Montgomery in 1604-5, the Earl of Essex in 1605-6, Lord Hay in 1606-7, Lord Hadington in 1607-8, or in the Entertainment at Caversham in the present year; the Duke of Lennox at the fourth only; the Earl of Pembroke at the first and fourth; the Earl of Montgomery and Lord Hay at the second and fourth; Lord Walden at the second, third, fourth, and last; Sir Thomas Howard at the second, third, and last; the Earl of Dorset, Lord North, Mr. Henry, and Sir Charles

On the day after the Marriage, the King, Prince, Bridegroom, and others ran at the Ring, and, as a prelude to the Tilt¹ on the ensuing New-year's day, the following scene, devised by Ben Jonson, was exhibited :

Howard at the last only. All these, except Sir Charles Howard, were also engaged in the last Tilt (see p. 609), and will be found in the next on New-year's Day, 1613-14. N.

¹ The Earl of Salisbury appears to have been no frequent Masquer or Tilter; he came forward on the present occasion from regard to the Bride his sister-in-law, he having married Dec. 1, 1608, Catharine, the Earl of Suffolk's youngest daughter. He has before appeared as K. B. at the Creation of Charles Duke of York (see vol. I. p. 478). Of the Christening of his eldest daughter, see pp. 526, 602; and that of his eldest son, hereafter in June 1616. N.

² Of Lord Scroope see p. 333. He will occur in the Tilts on the ensuing New-year's day, and on the King's day 1622. N.

¹ It is easily explained why the title of this production, "A Challenge at Tilt at a Marriage," is so vague. It was published in 1616, in the first folio collection of Jonson's Works, at the very period that the public indignation against the guilty pair now so disgracefully allied, was at its height. At that period the Author was naturally and very properly unwilling to affix names either to the Hymenæi, exhibited at the Countess's first Marriage in 1605-6, to the present production, or to the Irish Masque, which soon followed. That acute critic Mr. Gifford, after having discovered the names of "Robert, Earle of Essex, and the Lady Frances, second daughter of the most noble Earle of Suffolk," explicitly detailed on the title-page of the first edition, was enabled to determine the date and circumstances under which the Hymenæi were performed, and having made this wonderful discovery, he could triumphantly glory in his superior penetration over Chetwood; see his note in p. 1; which note, however, I regret having re-printed. Now it certainly is surprising that with the similarity of title which the Hymenæi and the present Challenge possess, both being said to be performed "at a Marriage," it is certainly surprizing, I repeat, particularly when the internal evidence possessed by the Irish Masque is considered, that Mr. Gifford should congratulate himself and his readers that Jonson was *not* employed at all in the celebration of the present ill-omened Marriage. Yet Mr. Gifford does, and that in more than one place, make this erroneous and very needless boast. Here, indeed, as elsewhere, his partiality to Jonson seems to have blinded his eyes to what is as clear as the sun. For, on the one hand his error is extreme, since Jonson was doubly employed, that is, both in the Challenge and the Masque; and on the other hand, his boast was most needless, since, at this time, when Somerset was at the very summit of his power, and basking in the very noon-beams of his Royal Master's favour, when all around were smiling on him, and the symmetry of his form and the gallantry of his manners were the admiration of the whole Court, and when moreover his guilt was as yet unveiled, and none knew of the murderous transactions at the Tower but the perpetrators themselves, how could Jonson, or any other poor poet, refuse, or even have the smallest shadow of hesitation to afford his services. — In the same unreasonable strain Mr. Gifford laments that "the Lord Chancellor Bacon" (he was, by the bye, now only Attorney General,) eagerly promoted this adulterous Marriage. How does the reader suppose that Bacon promoted it? By his activity in furthering the divorce? no, the King and his Bishops bear all the credit of that. The manner in which Bacon, says Mr. Gifford, *promoted* the Marriage was by per-

A CHALLENGE AT TILT AT A MARRIAGE,

DECEMBER 27, 1613.

Written by BEN JONSON.

Enter two CUPIDS striving, the day after the Marriage.

1 CUPID. It is my right, and I will have it.

2 CUPID. By what law or necessity? Pray you come back.

1 CUPID. I serve the Man, and the nobler creature.

2 CUPID. But I the Woman, and the purer; and therefore the worthier. Because you are a handful above me, do you think to get a foot afore me, Sir? No; I appeal to you, Ladies.

1 CUPID. You are too rude, Boy, in this presence.

2 CUPID. That cannot put modesty in me, to make me come behind you, though; I will stand for mine inches with you, as peremptory as an Ambassador¹; Ladies, your sovereignties are concerned in me; I am the Wife's page.

1 CUPID. And I the Husband's.

2 CUPID. How!

1 CUPID. Ha!

2 CUPID. One of us must break the wonder; and therefore I that have best cause to be assured of mine own truth, demand of thee, by what magic thou wear'st my ensigns? or hast put on my person?

1 CUPID. Beware, young ladies, of this impostor; and mothers, look to your daughters and nieces; a false Cupid is abroad; it is I that am the true, who to do these glad solemnities their proper rites, have been contented, not to put off,

suading the Society of Gray's Inn to present a Masque in its celebration eleven days after it had taken place! Bacon's anxiety, as has been before shewn in pp. 590, was as much or more for the credit of his Inn as for the honour of the occasion.—Bacon, it may be added, was still Attorney General, when, in May 1616, he conducted the prosecution of the Earl and Countess of Somerset before the House of Peers. N.

¹ Sir John Finett, in his *Philoxenis*, under the head of "Passages at the Marriage of the Earle of Summerset," gives a curious account of the contests for precedency which took place among the Foreign Ambassadors on the present occasion; but, as it affords no particulars of the Marriage Entertainment itself, and, as a specimen of similar bickerings at the Prince Palatine's Marriage has been already given in pp. 603—605, it is sufficient to refer to it in this place. N.

but to conceal my deity, and in this habit of a servant do attend him who was yesterday the happy Bridegroom, in the compliment of his Nuptials, to make all his endeavours and actions more gracious and lovely.

2 CUPID. He tells my tale, he tells my tale; and pretends to my act. It was I that did this for the Bride; I am the true Love, and both this figure and those arms are usurped by most unlawful power; can you not perceive it? do not I look liker a Cupid than he? am I not more a child? Ladies, have none of you a picture of me in your bosom? is the remembrance of Love banished your breasts? Sure they are these garments that estrange me to you! if I were naked, you would know me better; no relick of love left in an old bosom here! what should I do?

1 CUPID. My little shadow is turned furious.

2 CUPID. What can I turn other than a fury itself, to see thy impudence? If I be a shadow, what is substance? was it not I that yesternight waited on the Bride into the Nuptial-chamber, and, against the Bridegroom came, made her the throne of love? had I not lighted my torches in her eyes, planted my mother's roses in her cheeks? were not her eye-brows bent to the fashion of my bow, and her looks ready to be loosed thence, like my shafts? had I not ripened kisses on her lips, fit for a Mercury to gather, and made her language sweeter than his upon her tongue? was not the girdle about her, he was to untie, my mother's¹, wherein all the joys and delights of love were woven?

1 CUPID. And did not I bring on the blushing Bridegroom to taste those joys, and made him think all stay a torment? did I not shoot myself into him like a flame, and made his desires and his graces equal? were not his looks of power to have kept the night alive in contention with day, and made the morning never wished for? Was there a curl in his hair, that I did not sport in, or a ring of it crisped, that might not have become Juno's fingers? his very undressing, was it not Love's arming? did not all his kisses charge? and every touch attempt? but his words—were they not feathered from my wings, and flew in singing at her ears, like arrows tipt with gold?

¹ That girdle had scarcely more charms in it than the Poet's language in these sprightly and gallant little pieces; but the allusion of Cupid is to this beautiful passage:

Η, και απο σθηθοςφιν ελυσατο κεινον ιμαντα,
Ποικιλον, ενθα δε οι θεκληρηια παντα τετυκτο·
Ενθ' ενι μεν φιλοτης, εν δ' ιμερος, εν δ' οαριςυς,
Παρφασις, η τ' εκλεψε νοον πυκα περ φρονεοντων.

Homer, Il. xiv. 214.

2 CUPID. Hers, hers did so into his; and all his virtue was borrowed from my powers in her, as thy form is from me. But, that this Royal and honoured assembly be no longer troubled with our contention, behold I challenge thee of falsehood; and will bring, upon the first Day of the New Year, into the lists before this Palace, ten Knights armed, who shall undertake against all assertion, that only I am the child of Mars and Venus; and, in honour of that Lady (whom it is my ambition to serve), that that Love is the most true and perfect that still waiteth on the Woman, and is the servant of that sex.

1 CUPID. But what gage gives my confident counterfeit of this?

2 CUPID. My bow and quiver, or what else I can make.

1 CUPID. I take only them; and in exchange give mine, to answer and punish this thy rashness, at thy time assigned, by a just number of Knights, who, by their virtue, shall maintain me to be the right Cupid and true issue of Valour and Beauty; and that no Love can come near either truth or perfection, but what is Manly, and derives his proper dignity from thence.

2 CUPID. It is agreed.

1 CUPID. In the mean time, Ladies, suspend your censures which is the right; and, to entertain your thoughts till the day, may the Court hourly present you with delicate and fresh objects, to beget on you pretty and pleasing fancies! may you feed on pure meats, easy of concoction, and drink that will quickly turn into blood, to make your dreams the clearer, and your imaginations the finer!

*So they departed*¹.

“Uppon Wednesday night,” the 29th, continues Howes, “there was a Maske of the Prince’s Gentlemen; which pleased the King so well, that hee caused them to performe it againe uppon the Monday following².”

This was the following Masque by Ben Jonson:

¹ They appeared again on New-year’s Day; see p. 727. N.

² Not “the Monday following,” but Monday se’nnight following, January 10; see Mr. Chamberlain’s Letter of January 5.

³ James was probably delighted with the imitation of the Irish dialect which it contains, as well as with the sentiments it expresses, for we find that, when in 1619 Ben Jonson’s Masque of “Pleasure reconciled to Virtue” was repeated by the King’s command, additions were made to it “for the honour of Wales,” wherein three Welshmen converse in their dialect much in the same strain as the four Irishmen in this Masque. See hereafter, under the year 1619. N.

THE IRISH MASQUE AT COURT,
BY GENTLEMEN, THE KING'S SERVANTS,

DECEMBER 29, 1613, AND JANUARY 10, 1613-14.

Written by BEN JONSON.

The King being set in expectation, out ran a fellow attired like a Citizen; after him, three or four footmen, DENNIS, DONNELL, DERMOCK, and PATRICK.

PATRICK. For Chreeshes sayk, phair ish te King? phich ish he, an't be? show me te shweet faish, quickly. By Got, o' my consence, tish ish he! an't tou be King Yamish, me name is Dennish, I sherve ti Mayesties owne cashtermonger, bee mee trote; and cry peep'sh and pomwatersh i' ty Mayesties shervice, 'tis five yeere now. Ant tou vilt not trush me now, call up ti Clarke o' ti Kitchen, be an't be, shall give hish wort, upon hish booke ish true.

DONNELL. Ish it te fashion, to beate te Imbasheters here, and knocke 'hem o'te heads phit te phoit [white] stick²?

DERMOCK. Ant make ter meshage run out a ter mouthsh, before tey shpeake vit te King?

DENNIS. Peash, Dermock, here ish te King?

DERMOCK. Phair ish te King?

DONNELL. Phich ish te King;

DENNIS. Tat ish te King.

¹ This Masque, as the preceding "Challenge," was first published in Jonson's Works, folio, 1616. No date is there affixed to it, but, not to plead Mr. Chamberlain's Letters in p. 725, 733, its internal evidence sufficiently proves the period of its exhibition. The plot is remarkably simple: news having arrived in Ireland of the great Bridal of one of the King's Lords, his "man Robyne," "a doshen of their besht Mayshters" determined to come over to "daunsh a fading at te Vedding." They come, accompanied by their twelve footmen, four of whom are the chief speakers. After a dialogue between these four, and a dance performed by all twelve by way of Antimasque, the principal Masquers appear, and go through their first dance in Irish mantles, having lost their fine clothes in "tey villainous vild Irish sheas." The presence of the King is, however, found equal to work miracles, and after a Song by an Irish Bard, they, letting fall their sloughs, "come forth new-born creatures" in their masquing apparel. Thus simple was the device of the present Masque, but, simple as it is, it has not, as I have shewn in p. 715, been understood by former editors of Jonson. N.

² The Lord Chamberlain's wand; see next page. N.

DERMOCK. Ish tat te King? Got blesh him!

DENNIS. Peash, ant take heet, vat tou shaysht, man.

DERMOCK. Creesh blesh him, I shay. Phat reason I tayk heet, for tat?

DONNELL. Creesh blesh ti shweet faish, King Yamish; and my Mistresh faish too; pre tee, hear me now. I am come a great vay of miles to shee tee now, by my fayt and trote, and graish o' Got!

DENNIS. Phat ish te meaning o' tish, Donnell? didsh tou not shay, a Gotsh name, I should tell ti tale for tee? ant entrayt me come to te Court, and leave me vare at shixe ant seven? by Got, ish true now.

DONNELL. Yesh. But I tanke Got I can tell my tayle my shelfe, now I be here, I varrant tee; pre dee hear me, King Yamish.

DENNIS. Pre dee heare me, King Yamish; I can tell tee better ten he.

PATRICK. Pre dee heare neder noder on 'hem; here'sh Dermock vill shpeake better ten eder oder on 'hem.

DERMOCK. No fayt, shweet hart, tow lyesht. Phatrick here ish te vesht man of hish tongue, of all de foure; pre tee now heare him.

PATRICK. By Chreesh shave me, tow lyesht. I have te vorsht tongue in de company at thy shervish. Vill shomebody shpeak?

DONNELL. By my fayt, I vill not.

DERMOCK. By my goship's hand, I vill not.

PATRICK. Speake, Dennish, ten.

DENNIS. If I speake, te divell tayke me. I vill give tee leave to cram my mout phit shamrokes and butter, and vayter-creeshes instead of pearsh and peepsh [pipes].

PATRICK. If no body will shpeake, I vill shpeake. Pleash ty shweet faish, wee come from Ireland.

DERMOCK. Wee be Irishmen, an't pleash tee.

DONNELL. Ty good shubsheets of Ireland, an't pleash ty Mayesty.

DENNIS. Of Connough, Leymster, Ulster, Munster. I mine one shelfe vash born in te English Payle¹, an't pleash ty Mayesty.

¹ "The English Pale was those parts of Ireland extended about Dublin, which in the reign of Henry II. were possessed by the English. This district was sometimes larger and sometimes less, in different ages, as the English or Irish power prevailed. But the counties of Louth, Dublin, Meath, Kildare, and Carlow, being for the most part obedient to the English laws, went under the more immediate denomination of 'The Pale.'" WHALLEY.

PATRICK. Sacrament o' Chreesh ! tell ty tale ty shelfe, and be all tree.

DENNIS. An't pleash ty Graish, I vill tell tee; tere vash a great newesh in Ireland of a great Brideall of one o' ty Lords here, an't be.

PATRICK. Ty man Robyne, tey shay.

DONNELL. Marry ty man Toumaish hish daughter, tey shay.

DERMOCK. Ay, ty good man, Toumaish o'Shuffolke.

DONNELL. He knoke ush o'te payt here, ash we come by, by a good token.

DERMOCK. I' fayt, tere ish very mush phoyt stick here stirring to-night. He takes ush for no Shquires, I tinke.

PATRICK. No, he tinksh not ve be Imbasheters.

DONNELL. No fayt, I tinke sho too. But tish Marriage bring over a doshen of our besht Mayshters, to be merry perht tee shweet faish, an't be; and daunsh a fading¹ at te Vedding.

DENNIS. But tey vere leeke to daunsh naked, an't pleash ty Mayesty; for tey villainous vild Irish sheas have casht away all ter fine cloysh, as many as cosht a towsand cowes and garraves, I warrant tee.

DERMOCK. And te prishe of a cashtell or two upon teyr backs.

DONNELL. And tey tell ty Mayesty, tey have ner a great fish now, nor a shea-moynshter to shave teyr cloyth alive now.

PATRICK. Nor a devoish vit a clowd to fesh 'hem out o' te bottom o' te vayter.

DERMOCK. But tey musht eene come and daunsh in teyr mantels now; and show tee how teye can foot te fading and te fadow, and te phip a' Dunboyne, I throw.

DONNELL. I pree dee now, let not ty sweet-faysht Ladies make a mocke on 'hem and scorn to daunsht vit 'hem now, becash tey be poore.

PATRICK. Tey drinke no bonny clabbe, i' fayt, now.

DONNELL. It ish better ten usquebagh to daunsh vit Phatrick.

PATRICK. By my fater's hand, tey vill daunsh very vell.

DERMOCK. I [aye], by St. Patrick, vill tey; for tey be nimble men.

DENNIS. And vill leap ash light, be Creesh save me, ash he tat veares te biggest fether in ty Court, King Yamish.

¹ " This word, which was the burden of a popular Irish song, gave name to a dance frequently noticed by our old dramatists. Both the song and the dance appear to have been of a licentious kind, and merit no further elucidation. G.

DERMOCK. For all tey have no good vindsh to blow tem heter, nor elementsh to presherve 'hem.

DONNELL. Nor all te four cornersh o' the world, to creep out on.

PATRICK. But tine owne Kingdomes.

DONNELL. Tey be honesht men.

PATRICK. And goot men; tine own shubshects.

DERMOCK. Tou hast very good shubshects in Ireland.

DENNIS. A great goot many, o' great good shubshects.

DONNELL. Tat love ty Mayesty heartily.

DENNIS. And vill run trough fire and vater for tee, over te bog and te ban-noke, be te graish o' Got, and graish o' King.

DERMOCK. By Got, tey vill fight for tee, King Yamish, and for my Mistresh tere.

DENNIS. And my little Maishter¹.

PATRICK. And te vfrow, ty Daughter, tat is in Tuchland².

DONNELL. Tey vill spend ter heart in ter belly for tee, as vell as ter legs in ter heelsh.

DERMOCK. By Creesh, tey vill shpend all teyr cowesh for tee.

DENNIS. Pre tee make mush on t'em.

PATRICK. Pre tee, sweet faysh, do.

DONNELL. Be not angry vit te honesh men, for te few rebelsh and knavesh.

PATRICK. Nor beleeve no tayles, King Yamish.

DERMOCK. For, by Got, tey love tee in Ireland.

DONNELL. Pray tee, bid 'em velcome, and Got make 'em rish for tee.

DERMOCK. Tey vill make temselves honesht.

DENNIS. Tou hasht not a hundret tousand sush men, by my trote.

PATRICK. No, not forty, by my hand.

DONNELL. By Justish Delounes³ hant, not twenty.

¹ Prince Charles. G.

² The Princess Elizabeth. G.

³ Of the very ancient, noble, and wide-spreading family of Dillon there were many eminent Irish lawyers; Sir Bartholomew, of Riverston, died Chief Justice of the King's Bench in 1533; Sir Robert, his grandson, died Chief Justice of the Common Pleas in 1597; Sir Robert, of Newtown, was appointed Chief Justice of the Common Pleas in 1558, and was afterwards Speaker of the Irish House of Commons; Sir Lucas, his son, was appointed Chief Baron of the Exchequer in 1572; and Thomas, of Clonbrock, died Chief Justice of Connaught in 1606. See Archdall's Irish Peerage,

DERMOCK. By my Lord Deputish¹ hant, not ten, in all ti Great Britayne.
Shall I call hem to tee?

DONNELL. Tee shit like poore men i' te porsh yonder.

PATRICK. Shtay, tee peepe ish come! [*Bagpipe, &c. enter.*] harke, harke!

DERMOCK. Let ush daunsh ten. Daunsh, Dennish.

DENNIS. By Creesh sa' me, I ha' forgot.

DONNELL. A little, till our Mayshtersh be ready.

Here the Footmen had a Dance, being six men and six boys, to the bagpipe, and other rude music; after which they had a Song, and then they cried,

Peash! Peash! Now room for our Mayshters! Room for our Mayshters!

Then the Gentlemen² dance forth a dance in their Irish mantles, to a solemn music of harps; which done, the Footmen fall to speak again.

DERMOCK. How like'tou tish, Yamish? and tey had fine cloyshs now, and liveries, like tine own men, an't be!

DONNELL. But te rugs make t'em shrug a little.

DERMOCK. Tey have shit a great phoyle i' te cold, an't be.

DONNELL. Isht not pity te cloysh be drown'd now?

PATRICK. Pree tee, shee anoter daunsh, and be not veary.

Here they were interrupted by a civil GENTLEMAN of the Nation; who brought in a BARD.

GENTLEMAN. He may be of your rudeness. Hold your tongues,
And let your coarser manners seek some place
Fit for their wildness; this is none; be gone!
Advance, immortall Bard, come up and view
The gladding face of that great King, in whom
So many prophecies of thine are knit.
This is that James of which long since thou sung'st,
Should end our Country's most unnatural broils;
And if her ear, then deafen'd with the drum,
Would stoop but to the music of his peace,
She need not with the spheres change harmony.

1789, vol. IV. pp. 138, 142, 144, 154, 155. But of these five the only one that could be living at this period is the fourth, and that does not appear probable. Perhaps the phrase "by Justice Dillon's hand" had become of proverbial use. N.

¹ The King's Representative in Ireland has at different periods held that high trust under various titles; at the present æra he was a Lord Deputy, and by name Sir Arthur Chichester; see III. 1. N.

² Of some of the Performers in this Irish Masque, who were half English and half Scotch, and called "the lofty dancers," see Mr. Chamberlain's Letters in pp. 725, 733. N.

This is the man thou promis'd'st should redeem,
 If she would love his counsels as his laws,
 Her head from servitude, her feet from fall,
 Her fame from barbarism, her state from want,
 And in her all the fruits of blessing plant¹.
 Sing then some charm, made from his present looks,
 That may assure thy former prophecies,
 And firm the hopes of these obedient spirits,
 Whose love no less than duty hath call'd forth
 Their willing powers; who, if they had much more,
 Would do their all, and think they could not move
 Enough to honour that, which he doth love.

Here the BARD sings to two harps this Song :

*Bow both your heads at once and hearts ;
 Obedience doth not well in parts.
 It is but standing in his eye,
 You'll feel yourselves chang'd by and by.
 Few live that know how quick a spring
 Works in the presence of a King ;
 'Tis done by this,—your slough let fall,
 And come forth new-born creatures all.*

*During this Song, the Masquers let fall their mantles, and
 discover their masquing apparel. Then they dance forth².*

After the Dance the BARD sings this Song :

*So breaks the sun earth's rugged chains,
 Wherein rude winter bound her veins ;
 So grows both stream and source of price,
 That lately fetter'd were with ice.
 So naked trees get crisped heads,
 And colour'd coats the roughest meads,
 And all get vigour, youth, and spright,
 That are but look'd on by his light.*

¹ The Plantation of Ireland with Citizens of London was at this time going forward, and it had been in the preceding July, that an Alderman of London with proper assistants had gone over thither to fortify the City of Londonderry. Jonson's present device was therefore judiciously founded on passing events. N.

² Taking partners from the Ladies, as was customary. N.

The day after the Irish Masque was first exhibited, Mr. Chamberlain thus reports the progress of the Festivities to Mrs. Alice Carleton, Sir Dudley's sister:

"The Marriage was on Sunday, without any such bravery as was looked for. Only some of the Earl's followers bestowed cost upon themselves; the rest exceeded not either in number or expence. The Bride was married in her hair¹; and led to the Chapel by her Bridemen, a Duke of Saxony that is here, and the Earl of Northampton, her great-uncle. The Dean of Westminster preached, and bestowed a great deal of commendation on the young couple, on the Countess of Salisbury [the Bride's sister], and on the mother-vine, as he termed her, the Countess of Suffolk². The Dean of the Chapel³ coupled them; which fell out strangely that the same man should marry the same person in the same place, upon the self-same day (after eight years), the former party yet living. All the difference was, that the King gave her the last time, and now her father. The King and Queen were both present, and tasted wafers and ypocrass as at ordinary weddings⁴.

"I hear little or no commendation of the Masque made by the Lords that night, either for device or dancing, only it was rich and costly⁵.

"The next day the King, Prince, Bridegroom, and others ran at the Ring; and yesterday there was a medley Masque of five English and five Scots, which are called the high Dancers, among whom Serjeant Boyd⁶, one Abercrombie⁷, and Auchmouty, that was at Padua and Venice⁸, are esteemed the most principal and lofty; but how it succeeded I know not⁹.

¹ That is, with her hair hanging loosely down, as the Princess Elizabeth had been; see p. 543.

² The Dean of Westminster at this period was George Mountaigne, D.D. who held the Deanery from 1610 to 1617, and was afterwards Bishop of Lincoln, London, Durham, and Archbishop of York. He is said to have obtained the favour of the King by "his ready wit and entertaining conversation;" and he was one of the Royal Chaplains. It is worthy of remark that this eulogizer of the Earl of Somerset, was in 1614 for a few weeks his gaoler, from the 18th of October till the Earl was sent to the Tower, Nov. 2.—See a life and portrait of Dean Mountaigne in Neale's and Brayley's Westminster Abbey.

³ Dr. Montague; see p. 546.

⁴ See pp. 547, 548.

⁵ It is remarkable that Mr. Chamberlain gave an exactly similar opinion of the Masque by the same author (Dr. Campion) produced for the Lords on the Princess Elizabeth's Marriage;—see p. 554.

⁶ Probably the same as "Serjeant Bowy," mentioned in the New-year's Gifts of 1605-6; see vol. I. p. 598.

⁷ Perhaps Patrick Abercromby, who received Free Gifts from the Exchequer of £.40 in 1611, and of £.100 with Sir James Sandilands in 1614.

⁸ One of the Grooms of the King's Bedchamber; see vol. I. p. 599.

⁹ For its success see Mr. Chamberlain's next Letter, p. 733.

“The Archbishop of Canterbury was at the Marriage, but not the Bishop of London¹. Sir Ralph Winwood was there likewise, and had a very fair pair of gloves of three pounds price, which he well deserved; for he made a suit of apparel against this Wedding, only doublet, hose, and cloak, all black, without any kind of gold, silver, or embroidery, that cost about *fourscore pounds*, which I write, that you may see how unreasonably things are risen here, and what a chargeable world we live in. He presented a very fair basin and ewer of 225 ounces, that was given him by the States, and of so excellent workmanship, that the goldsmiths here offered 20s. an ounce for it. The presents indeed were more in number and value than ever, I think, were given to any subject in this land. It were too long, neither could I, if I would, set down the tenth part; but for a taste of all, you shall have some few that come newly to hand. The City, the Merchant Adventurers, the East Indian Company, the Farmers of the Customs, sent all their several presents of plate to a great value; which belike was well taken, for the Lord Mayor and Sheriffs had rich gloves sent in requital. Sir Thomas Lake gave six goodly candlesticks, that cost about 1000 marks. Sir Robert Cary and Sir Robert Mansell lighted upon one invention, which was fire-shovel, tongs, and irons, creepers, and all furniture of a chimney, of silver. Another gave a cradle of silver to burn sea-coal. Sir Fulk Grevile gave a cup of gold; Sir Charles Wilmot a warming-pan of gold; the Countess of Shrewsbury a basin, ewer, two pots, and some vessel, all of gold. The Lord Coke was more moderate; for he gave but a fair basin and ewer of silver and guilt; and his Lady a cup of fourscore pounds value. The Earl of Exeter gave a basin and ewer of gold, and his Lady a pot of gold. The Lord Burghley [the Earl's son], his Lady, and both his daughters, had very fair gloves; and yet I cannot learn that he gave any thing. Belike he thinks his father's bounty may stand for both. The Lord Admiral gave a very rich basin and ewer of gold set with stones, that was given him by the King of Spain. The Lord Privy Seal's present was plate to the value of £.1500, besides a sword to the Bridegroom, the hilt and all the furniture of gold curiously wrought and enamelled; the very workmanship cost a hundred marks; and the sword £.500. The Earl of Salisbury gave one suit of hangings, that cost his father £.1500; and another suit of £.800. You may guess at the rest by this scantling².”

¹ These two Prelates, Dr. Abbot and Dr. King, to their immortal honour, had been the chief opposers of the shameless divorce. ² Birch's MSS. Brit. Mus. No. 4173.

We now proceed with Ben Jonson's Challenge at Tilt:

On New-year's Day, he that before is numbered the Second CUPID came now the FIRST, with his ten Knights attired in the Bride's colours, and lighting from his chariot, spake :

1 CUPID. Now, Ladies, to glad your aspects once again with the sight of Love, and make a Spring smile in your faces, which must have looked like Winter without me, behold me, not like a servant now, but a champion, and in my true figure, as I used to reign and revel in your faces, tickling your soft ears with my feathers, and laying little straws about your hearts, to kindle bonfires that shall flame out at your eyes, playing in your bloods like fishes in a stream, or diving like the boys in the bath, and then rising on end like a monarch, and treading humour like water, bending those stiff pickardils of yours under this yoke my bow; or, if they would not bend, whipping your rebellious vardingales with my bow-string, and made them run up into your waists (they have lain so flat) for fear of my indignation. What! is Cupid of no name with you? have I lost all reputation, or, what is less, opinion, by once putting off my deity? Because I was a Page at this Solemnity, and would modestly serve one, for the honour of you all, am I therefore dishonoured by all? and lost in my value so, that every juggler that can purchase him a pair of wings and a quiver, is committed with me in balance, and contends with me for sovereignty? Well, I will chastise you, Ladies; believe it, you shall feel my displeasure for this; and I will be mighty in it. Think not to have those accesses to me you were wont; you shall wait four of those galleries off, and six chambers, for me; ten doors locked between you and me hereafter, and I will allow none of you a key; when I come abroad, you shall petition me, and I will not hear you; kneel, and I will not regard you; I will pass by like a man of business, and not see you, and I will have no Master of Requests for you! There shall not the greatest pretender to a state-face living put on a more supercilious look, than I will do upon you. Trust me—ha! what's this? *Enter SECOND CUPID, with his Company of ten Knights.*

2 CUPID. O, are you here, Sir! you have got the start of me now, by being Challenger, and so the precedency, you think. I see you are resolved to try your title by arms then; you will stand to be the right Cupid still? how now! what ails you that you answer not? are you turned a statue upon my appearance? or did you hope I would not appear, and that hope has deceived you?

1 CUPID. Art thou still so impudent to belie my figure? that in what shape soever I present myself, thou wilt seem to be the same; not so much as my chariot, but resembled by thee? and both the doves and the swans I have borrowed of my mother to draw it? the very number of my champions emulated, and almost their habits! what insolence is this?

2 CUPID. Good little one, quarrel not, you have now put yourself upon others' valour, not your own, and you must know you can bring no person hither to strengthen your side, but we can produce an equal. Be it Persuasion you have got there, the peculiar enchantress of your sex, behold we have Mercury here to charm against her, who gives all lovers their true and masculine eloquence; or are they the Graces you presume on, your known clients, Spring, Beauty, and Cheerfulness, here are Youth, Audacity, and Favour, to encounter them, three more manly perfections, and much more powerful in working for Love; child, you are all the ways of winning too weak, there is no thinking, either with your honour or discretion kept safe, to continue on a strife, wherein you are already vanquished; yield, be penitent early, and confess it.

1 CUPID. I will break my bow and quiver into dust first (restore me mine own arms), or be torn in pieces with Harpies, marry one of the Furies, turn into chaos again, and dissolve the harmony of nature.

2 CUPID. O, most stiffly spoken, and fit for the sex you stand for! Well, give the sign then; let the trumpets sound, and upon the valour and fortune of your champions put the right of your cause.

1 CUPID. 'Tis done.

Here the Tilting took place¹.

¹ The Names of the Twenty noble and gallant Combatants are not given either by Ben Jonson or his former Commentators; but the list is here inserted from the MS. volume in Camden's autograph, Bibl. Harl. 5176.—The Heralds in the days of James, though perhaps not at the height of full employment, and not actually resident at the Court, had very frequent calls for their attendance. It was quite a strained point, when a Peer was created without investiture (though the barrier of custom having been once passed, there were several instances in the latter part of the reign); at the funerals of the Nobility and greater Gentry their attendance was seldom, if ever dispensed with; in short they were present at every solemnity, and solemnities were many times more numerous than at present. At the Tilts, as at the ancient Tournaments, they were always employed; they had to arrange who were to be combatants, and, like the Master of the Ceremonies with the Foreign Ambassadors, were frequently troubled with bickerings for precedence. "In this reign," in what year Noble does not inform us, "there was a regulation made, stating what fees were due to the Officers at Arms, of all estates of the Nobility, from the Prince downwards, at their first entrance of the Tylte." Noble strangely

THE TILTERS.

MURREY AND WHITE.	GREENE AND YELLOW.
DUKE OF LENNOX ¹ .	EARL OF RUTLAND.
EARL OF PEMBROKE.	EARL OF DORSETT.
EARL OF MONTGOMERY.	LORD WALDEN.
LORD NORTH.	LORD SCROOPE.
LORD CHANDOS.	LORD COMPTON.
LORD NORRIS.	LORD HAY.
LORD DINGWELL.	SIR THOMAS SOMERSETT.
MR. EDWARD SACKVILE ² .	SIR THOMAS HOWARD.
SIR SIGISMOND ZINZEN.	MR. HENRY HOWARD.
MR. HENRY ZINZEN.	SIR HENRY CARY ³ .

After which,

2 CUPID. Now, Sir, you have got mightily by this contention, and advanced your cause to a most high degree of estimation with these spectators! have you not?

1 CUPID. Why, what have you done, or won?

2 CUPID. It is enough for me who was called out to this trial, that I have not lost, or that my side is not vanquished.

Enters HYMEN to them.

HYMEN. Come, you must yield both; this is neither contention for you, nor time fit to contend; there is another kind of tilting would become Love better continues, "These costly warlike Pageantries almost expired with the Tudors; one only is noticed, I think, in this reign!" This was on March 24, 1620; from which an inference is drawn that "Henry Prince of Wales, had a very martial spirit; his brother Charles was more inclined to the arts;" yet Mr. Noble should have known that the Prince in 1620 was not the martial Henry, but the gentle Charles. To recur from this sad blunder to the subject under consideration, the reader need only turn to the Index of these volumes to find notices of nearly fifty Tilts. So fashionable indeed was the Tilt in this reign, that Chapman in his *Masque of the Middle Temple and Lincoln's Inn* makes Capriccio say that he has "heard of some Courtiers that have run themselves out of their 'states with justing;" see p. 476.

¹ Almost all these Tilters have before appeared in the lists in p. 361 or p. 609; and ten of them in the last *Masque* by Campion, in p. 714.

² See pp. 676, 704.

³ The Master of the Jewel House, of whom see vol. I. p. 599. He will occur as one of the Judges or umpires of the Tilts on the King's Day in 1615-16, 1616-17, and 1618-19.

than this; to meet lips for lances; and crack kisses instead of staves; which there is no Beauty here, I presume, so young, but can fancy, nor so tender, but would venture. Here is the palm for which you must strive; which of you wins this bough is the right and best Cupid; and whilst you are striving, let Hymen, the President of these Solemnities, tell you something of your own story, and what yet you know not of yourselves. You are both true Cupids, and both the sons of Venus by Mars, but this the first born, and was called Eros; who upon his birth proved a child of excellent beauty, and right worthy his mother; but after his growth not answering his form, not only Venus, but the Graces who nursed him, became extremely solicitous for him; and were impelled out of their grief and care to consult the Oracle about him. Themis (for Apollo was not yet of years), gave answer, "there wanted nothing to his perfection, but that they had not enough considered, or looked into,—the nature of the infant, which indeed was desirous of a companion only; for though Love, and the true, might be born of Venus single and alone, yet he could not thrive and encrease alone. Therefore if she affected his growth, Venus must bring forth a brother to him, and name him Anteros, that with reciprocal affection might pay the exchange of Love." This made that thou wert born her second birth. Since when, your natures are, that either of you, looking upon other, thrive, and by your mutual respects and interchange of ardor, flourish and prosper; whereas if the one be deficient or wanting to the other, it fares worse with both. This is the Love that Hymen requires, without which no Marriage is happy; when the contention is not, who is the true Love, but, being both true, who loves most; cleaving the bough between you, and dividing the palm. This is a strife wherein you both win, and begets a concord worthy all married minds' emulation, when the lover transforms himself into the person of his beloved, as you two do now; by whose example, let your Knights (all honourable friends and servants of Love,) affect the like peace, and depart the lists equal in their friendships for ever, as to-day they have been in their fortunes. And may this Royal Court never know more difference in humours; or these well-graced Nuptials more discord in affections than what they presently feel, and may ever avoid!

BOTH CUPIDS. To this Love says, Amen!

At a Special Court of Aldermen, Dec. 31, a Letter was received, "directed to the Lord Maior, from Sir Thomas Vavasor, Knight Marshall, intymating that the King's Majesty himself¹, with all his Court, purpose to supp with his Lordshipp on Tuesday night next: And forasmuch as Mr. Recorder did also informe the like, therefore it was put to voyces, whether the expence should be defrayed out of the Lord Maior's particular purse, or out of the generall stock of the Citty; and by most voyces it was agreed, and so ordered and decreed by this Court, that the whole expence of the Supper, with the Solempnitie thereof, should be disbursed by Mr. Chamberlen; and this order to be his warrant. And it is further ordered by this Court, that Sir William Craven and Sir John Swinnerton, Knights and Aldermen, Mr. Alderman Elwes, Mr. Alderman Cokayn, Mr. Alderman Smythes, and Mr. Alderman Prescott, shall this afternoone meete together in the Councill-chamber of the Guildhall, and advise and consider how and in what manner the entertaynement shalbe given, and what solempnities, sports, and triumphes shalbe prepared for the great honor of the Feast; and to give speedy direccion for the effecting thereof. And Mr. Recorder and the two Sheriffs are appointed and intreated by this Court, to invite the Earle of Somerset and his Lady, and the rest of the Lords and Ladyes, and others of the King's Court, to that Supper. And Mr. Robert Smyth and Mr. Hamlett Clarke² are appointed Stewards for the Feast; and . . . Sotherne and . . . Landsdale to be the Caters; and Richard Jenney and Marshall are commanded to attend the Committees for the speedier dispatch of the busines. And, lastly, because the Lord Maior's house is not held spacious enough to receave so great a Trayne as is expected will attend the King, therefore it is agreed and so ordered, that the Marchauntailors' Hall shalbe prepared and made ready against that night for this Solempnitie³."

"Upon Tewsday the 4th of January 1613-14, the Bride and Bridegroom being accompanied with the Duke of Lenox, the Lord Privie Seale, the Lord Chamberlayne, the Earles of Worcester, Pembroke, Mountgomery, and others, and with many honorable Barons, Knights, and Gentlemen of qualitie, came to Mar-

¹ The King seems to have afterwards given up going himself, for what reason does not appear.

² This Hamlett Clarke was an Attorney; and an appraisement which he made in 1612 of the goods of "George Hitchcocke of the Mouthe Taverne without Bishoppsgate," was printed, from a file of his records, in *Gent. Mag.* vol. LVIII. pp. 581—583.

³ These Resolutions are here first printed from the Records of the Corporation.

chant Taylers' Hall, where the Lord Maior and Aldermenne of London, in their scarlet robes, entertayned them with hearty welcome, and feasted them with all magnificence.

“ At their first entrance into the Hall they were received with ingenious speeches and pleasant melody ; at this Princely Feast all the meate was served to the table by choyse Cittizens of comeliest personage, in their gownes of rich foynes, selected out of the Twelve honorable Companies.

“ After supper, and being risen from the table, these noble guests were entertayned with a wassaile, two severall pleasant Maskes, and a Play ¹, and with other pleasant dances. All which being ended, then the Bride and Bridegroom, with all the rest, were invited to a princely banquet, and about three o'clock in the morning they returned to Whitehall ².”

“ On the 18th of January following, an order was made in the Court of Aldermen, that Thomas Middleton, Gent. shalbe forthwith allowed upon his Bill of particulers such recompence and chardges as the Committees lately appointed for the ordering of the late Solempnities at Marchauntailors's Hall shall thinck meete for all his disbursements and paynes taken by him and others in the last Mask of Cupids, and other Shewes lately made at the aforesaid Hall by the said Mr. Middleton ³.”

On the fifth of January, Mr. Chamberlain thus proceeds with his account of the festivities, in a Letter addressed to Sir Dudley Carleton :

“ The Marriage still continues in gallantry and triumph, and the presents of plate and jewels increase daily ⁴, and yet I cannot learn that they rise to such a sum as was supposed ; for they are not valued by the Goldsmiths above £.12,000. The Queen gave certain silver dishes curiously enamelled ; the Spanish Ambassador a jewel, they say, of £.500, if it hold good,—for the Lord Admiral's basin and ewer given him in Spain is said not to prove pure metal, now it comes to the touch. Sir Arthur Ingram gave a whole furniture or implements of a kitchen of silver, besides two pearls to the Bride that cost him £.300. It were to little purpose to go on further in this course ; and therefore I will conclude with a curious Bride-cake that cost £.5, given by the Bishop of Bristol's ⁵ wife.

¹ These were the contrivance of Thomas Middleton, the City Poet, as we learn from the following paragraph that he was afterwards paid for them. I cannot find that they were ever published.

² Howes' Chronicle.—See further particulars in the following Letters of Mr. Chamberlain.

³ From the City Records.

⁴ The list of them is here continued from p. 726.

⁵ John Thornborough, D. D.

"The lofty Maskers were so well liked at Court the last week, that they are appointed to perform it again on Monday; yet this Device, which was a mimical imitation of the Irish, was not so pleasing to many, which think it no time, as the case stands, to exasperate that nation by making it ridiculous¹.

On the New-year's day was the Tiltings of ten against ten. The bases, trappings, and all other furniture of the one party was murrey and white, which were the Bride's colours; the other green and yellow for the Bridegroom. There were two handsome chariots or pageants that brought in two Cupids, whose contention was, whether were the truer, his or hers, each maintained by their champions. But the current and prise, you must think, ran on her side. The whole shew, they say, was very fair and well set out. I do not readily remember all their names, nor how they were sided; but beside the Duke of Lennox, there were the Earls of Rutland, Pembroke, Montgomery, Dorset, the Lords Chandos, Scrope, Compton, North, Hay, Dingwell, the Lord Walden and his brethren, Sir Harry Cary, and I know not who else save the Lord Norris, who, when the Nullity was on foot and in forwardness, not knowing she was so well provided, made tender of himself to the Lord Chamberlain for his daughter, if he might be rid of his Lady, which he thought an easy matter to do; but was rejected *non sine risu* of all that heard of it!²

"The Lord Mayor was sent to by the King, to entertain this new-married couple with their friends and followers; but he making an excuse that his house was too little to receive them, it was not accepted, but word sent back, that he might command the biggest Hall in the Town. Whereupon calling a Council, it was resolved to do it at the charge of the City in the Merchant Taylors' Hall upon four days' warning, and thither they went yesternight about six o'clock, through Cheapside, all by torch-light, accompanied by the Father and Mother of the Bride, and all the Lords and Ladies about the Court. The Men were all mounted and richly arrayed, making a goodly shew; the women all in coaches. I do not hear how all things passed there; for I have not been abroad; only I

¹ Those who entertained this opinion could not be aware of the spirit in which Jonson's Masque is written. It was calculated to gratify, rather than exasperate the feelings of the Irish. At the same time it was not probable that they would ever hear of it.

² What degree of credit is to be attached to this scandalous story we cannot now determine. Lord Norris (of whom see p. 676) was married to Bridget, daughter of Edward seventeenth Earl of Oxford, by whom he had an only daughter.

understand, that after supper they had a Play and a Masque, and after that a Banquet. The Bride had a goodly new rich coach, which could not be furnished with four horses to their mind; so that Sir Ralph Winwood was moved on Sunday night to lend his; those that you may remember he had four or five years ago, and are as fair or fairer than ever they were. He made answer it was not for such a Lady to use any thing borrowed; and therefore the next morning he presented them to the great Lord, who made some difficulty at first to receive them of gift, but only as lent for this solemnity of going through the City; but in the end took them in very good part.

“Mr. Attorney’s Masque is for to-morrow, and for a conclusion of Christmas and their shews together; for the King says he will be gone towards Royston upon Friday¹.”

On the following evening, being Twelfth-night, the Gentlemen of Gray’s Inn, under the patronage of Sir Francis Bacon, exhibited their “Masque of Flowers” in the Banquetting House at Whitehall:

¹ Birch’s MSS. (Brit. Mus.) No. 4173.



THE MASKE OF FLOWERS,
BY THE GENTLEMEN OF GRAIE'S INNE,
AT THE COURT OF WHITEHALL, IN THE BANQUETTING HOUSE,
UPON TWELFE NIGHT, 1613-14.
BEING THE LAST OF THE SOLEMNITIES AND MAGNIFICENCES WHICH
WERE PERFORMED AT THE MARRIAGE OF
THE RIGHT HONOURABLE THE EARLE OF SOMERSET AND THE LADY FRANCES,
DAUGHTER OF THE EARLE OF SUFFOLKE, LORD CHAMBERLAINE¹.

To the Verie Honorable Knight, Sir FRANCIS BACON,
 his Majestie's Attorney Generall.

Honourable Sir; This last Maske, presented by Gentlemen of Graie's Inne, before his Majestie, in honor of the Marriage and happy alliance betweene two such principall persons of the Kingdome, as are the Earle of Suffolke and the Earle of Sommerset, hath received such grace from his Majestie, the Queene, and Prince, and such approbation from the generall, as it may well deserve to bee repeated to those that were present, and represented to those that were absent, by committing the same to the presse as others have been.

The dedication of it could not be doubtfull, you having beene the principall, and in effect the only person that did both encourage and warrant the Gentlemen to shew their good affection towards so noble a Conjunction in a time of such magnificence, wherein we conceive without giving you false attributes, which little need where so many are true, that you have graced in generall all the Societies of the Innes of Court, in continuing them still as third persons with the Nobilitie and Court, in doing the King honor. And particularly Graie's Inne, which as you have formerly brought to flourish both in the auncienter and younger

¹ "London: Printed by N[icholas] O[kes] for Robert Wilson, and are to be sold at his shop at Graie's Inne new-gate, 1614."—A copy of this is in the Garrick Collection in the British Museum; another in the Gough Collection in the Bodleian Library; and a third (formerly the Duke of Roxburghe's) was sold at the sale of Mr. Rhodes's Dramatic Library, April 18, 1925, and purchased for £2. 6s. by Mr. Thorpe, the bookseller.

sort, by countenancing vertue in every qualitie; so now you have made a notable demonstration thereof in the later and lesse serious kind, by this, that one Inne of Court by itselfe in time of a vacation, and in the space of three weeks could performe that which hath beene performed, which could not have been done, but that every man's exceeding love and respect to you gave him wings to overtake Time, which is the swiftest of things. This which we alledge for our honor, we may alledge indifferently for our excuse, if any thing were amisse or wanting, for your times did scarce afford moments, and our experience went not beyond the compass of some former imployment of that nature, which our graver studies ought have made us by this time to have forgotten. And so, wishing you all encrease of honour, we rest, humbly to doe you service, J. G. W. D. T. B.

THE DEVICE OF THE MASKE.

The Sunne, willing to doe honour to a Marriage betweene two noble persons of the greatest island of his universal empire, writeth his Letter of Commission to the two seasons of the year, the Winter and the Spring, to visite and present them on his part, directing the Winter to present them with sports, such as are commonly called by the name of Christmasse sportes, or Carnavall sportes; and the Spring with other sportes of more magnificence.

And more especially, that Winter for his part take knowledge of a certaine Challenge which had beene lately sent and accepted betweene Silenus and Kawasha upon this point, that Wine was more worthy then Tobacco, and did more cheere and relieve the spirits of man. This to be tried at two weapons, at Song and at Dance, and requiring the Winter to give order that the same Challenge be performed in the dayes of the solemnitie of the same Marriage.

The same Letter containeth a second speciall direction to the Spring, that whereas of ancient time certaine beautifull youths had bin transformed from Men to Flowers, and had so continued till this time, that now they should be returned againe into men, and present themselves in Maske at the same Marriage.

All this is accordingly performed, and first the two Seasons Invierno and Primavera come in, and receive their dispatch from the Sunne, by Gallus, the Sunne's Messenger; thereupon Winter brings in the Challenge, consisting of two Anticke-makes, the Anticke-maske of the Song, and the Anticke-maske of the Dance.

Then the SPRING brings in the Maske itselfe, and there is first seene in the fabrique a faire garden upon a descending ground, and at the height thereof there is a stately long arbour or bower arched upon pillars, wherein the Maskers are placed, but are not discovered at the first, but there appeare onely certaine great tufts of flowers betwixt the collumnes. Those flowers upon the charm doe vanish, and so the Maskers appeare every one in the space inter-columne of his arch.

THE MASKE.

At the entrance of the King, at the lower end of the Banquetting House appeared a travers painted in perspective, like the wall of a Cittie with battlements, over which were seene the tops of houses. In the middle whereof was a great gate, and on either side a temple, the one dedicated to SILENUS, and the other to KAWASHA, in either of which opened a little gate.

Out of the great gate, in the middle of the Cittie, entered INVIerno or WINTER, attired like an old man, in a short gowne of silke shagge, like withered grasse all frosted and snowed over, and his cappe, gowne, gamashes¹, and mittens, furred crimson, with long white haire and beard, hung with iceicles. He marcheth up to the middle of the Hall, and looks round about him.

INVIerno. Why thus it should be ; such a night as this
 Puts downe a thousand weary longsome dayes
 Of Sommer, when a sunne, and moone, and stars
 Are mette within the pallace of a King,
 In severall glory shining each on other,
 With raies of comfort and benigne aspects ;
 When heartes are warme, 'tis for the seely² birds
 To sacrifice their pipes unto the Spring,
 And let the Pilgrim blesse the Summer's day ;
 But Courts, and Youth, and Ladies needs must praise
 The Winter's raine [reign].

While INVIerno was thus speaking, entreth the SPRING or PRIMAVERA, attired like a Nymph, a high tire on her head, antike with knottes of faire haire and cobweb lawnes rising one above another, garnished with flowers to some height, and behind falling downe in a pendant ; an upper-body of cloth of silver florie ; naked necke and breast, decked with pearls ; a kertle of yellow cloth of gold, brancht with leaves ; a mantle of greene and silver stuffe cut out in leaves ; white buskins, with greene ribands fringed with flowers. She overtaking INVIerno, clappes him on the shoulder.

PRIMAVERA. Well overtaken, Winter.

¹ A northern word, says Grose, for " short spatterdashes worn by ploughmen." N.

² Happy, from the Saxon *jæl*, season. See Johnson's Dictionary by Todd. N.

INVIERNO.

Primavera !

What's that I see? why, how dare you approach
 In Janus' month? D'ye mean to give the lie
 To all the almanackes that are come forth,
 As if they had not lide [lied] enough besides?
 Provoke me not; flie hence, you wanton gerle [girl],
 Stay not one minute!

PRIMAVERA.

Good olde lad; I know you are a merry one
 Within doores, bluster not, I'll chose thee for
 My Valentine, and tell thee tales and riddles
 These livelong nights. Thou'rt ever borrowing
 Some dayes of me, then let this one day passe,
 Good frost-beard, now. But stay, methinks, I see
 The trumpet of the Sun, hee'l stint this strife.

GALLUS comes in post, attired like a Post in yellow damaske doublet and bases;
*the doublet with close wings, cut like feathers; a powch of carnation sattin,
 wherein was his packet hong in a bawdricke of the same; a paire of yellow
 bootes; spurres with one long pricke like a cocke; a little hatte of yellow
 damaske, with a plume of red feathers like a crest.*

INVIERNO.

Gallus, mine owne brave Bird! welcome in troth!
 Thou art no peeping creature that attends
 This gawdy wench, thou wakest the feathered hours,
 And call'st to labour; tell us, what's the newes?

PRIMAVERA.

What, Crest-and-spurre! welcome, thou com'st in time,
 Winter hath almost giv'n me the agew, faith,
 He is so bitter; but thou shalt end our quarrel.

GALLUS.

Seasons both, God save you in your times,
 I know you both so well, as if I should
 Give leave for you to chirpe, and you to chat,—
 How you make all things greene,
 And you make all things fat,—
 Time would away; peace, then, read this dispatch,
 For I must backe to my accustomed watch.

WINTER reads the Letter. *The Letter superscribed:*

To our faithfull and never-fayling Quarter-waiters, Invierno and Primavera.

We have taken knowledge of a Marriage to bee solemnized betweene two
 noble persons, in the principall Island of our universall Empire, unto which we
 are pleased to doe honour, and thereupon have directed our several Letters to you
 the Seasons of the yeare to visit and present them on your part. To this pur-

pose we would have you, Invierno, to present them with such sports as are commonly knowne by the name of Christmasse sports, or Carnaval sports; and you, Primavera, with sports of a more delicate nature; either of you according to your qualitie. And for your better instruction and enablement towards the due execution of this your Commission, we require you, Invierno, that, whereas we understand that Silenus hath lately sent a Challenge to Kawasha upon this point, to maintaine, That Wine is more woorthie then Tobacco, and cheereth man's spirit more, the same to be tried at two severall weapons, Song and Dance; which Challenge the said Kawasha hath also accepted; you take order that the said Challenge be performed at this Marriage, taking your convenient time. And we require you, Primavera, for your part, that whereas of auncient time there were certaine faire Youthes turned into Flowers, which have so continued until this time, that you deale with Flora by vertue of this Commission, that they be now re-turned to Men, and present a Dance at this Marriage. Heerof faile you not.

Given at our Pallace, your Lord and Master, I the SUNNE.

Postscript. We have also directed our Letters to the Summer and the Harvest, the one to present them with length of dayes, and the other with fruite, but those Letters come with the next dispatch.

ANTICKE-MASKE OF THE SONG.

Hereupon they depart all three, and presently entred SILENUS at a little gate on the right-hand, mounted upon an artificiall asse, which sometimes being taken with straine of the musicke, did bow done his eares, and listen with great attention; the trappings were of iwie, attended by a Satyre for his palfreveir, who led the asse.

At the same instant entred KAWASHA at the other little gate, riding upon a kowle-staffe¹, covered with a foote-cloth of pide stuffe, borne upon two Indians' shoulders attired like Floridans.

SILENUS, an old fat man, attired in a crimson sattin doublet, without wings, collar, or skirts; a great panch, so as his dublet, though drawne with a lace, would not meete together by a handfull; sleeves of cloth of golde, bases and gamashaes of the same; a red swolne face with a bunched nose, grey-beard, bald-head, pricke-eares, and little hornes.

KAWASHA had on his head a night-cap of red-cloth of gold, close to his skull,

¹ A cowl-staff, more usually written colstaff, was a staff, on which a burden was carried by two on their shoulders. Cotgrave calls it "a colestaff or stang," an old word for a long pole. Ben Jonson uses the word in his Tale of a Tub:

"Instead of bills with colstaves come, instead of spars with spits." N.

tied under his chin, two holes cut in the toppe, out of which his eares appeared, hung with two great pendants; on the crowne of his cappe a chimney; a glasse chaine about his necke; his body and legges of olive-colour stuffe, made close like the skinne; bases of tobacco-colour stuffe, cut like tobacco-leaves, sprinkled with orcedure; in his hand an Indian bow and arrowes.

Before either of these went a Sergeant. The Sergeant of SILENUS carried a copper Mace, and a bunch of grapes carved at the upper end; the Sergeant of KAWASHA carried on his shoulder a great tobacco-pipe as bigge as a caliver.

Before SILENUS marched foure singers, and behind him five fiddlers; before and behinde KAWASHA as many of each kinde. The Singers on SILENUS' part were a Miller, a Wine Cooper, a Vintner's Boy, a Brewer. His musicke, a taber and a pipe, a base violin, a trebble violin, a sagbut, a mandora¹. KAWASHA's Singers, a Skipper, a Fencer, a Pedlar, a Barber. His musicke, a bobtaile, a blinde harper and his boy, a base violin, a tenor cornet, a sagbut.

Upon their entrance, the musicke on both sides played till they came to the middle of the stage. Then SILENUS' Singers beganne his Catch, and so marched forward towards the State.

THE CATCH.

SILENUS. *Ahay for and a hoe,
Let's make this great Potan²
Drinke off Silenus' kan;
And when that he well drunke is,
Returne him to his munkies
From whence he came.*

Then KAWASHA's side answered:

KAWASHA. *Ahay for and a hoe,
Wee'l make Silen fall downe,
And cast him in a sowne [swoon],
To see my men of ire,
All snuffing, puffing, smoke, and fire,
Like fell dragon.*

THE FREEMAN'S SONG.

SILENUS. *Kawasha comes in Majestie,
Was never such a God as he;
He is come from a farre countrey
To make our nose a chimney.*

Chorus. *Silenus' asse doth leere to see
His well-appointed companie.*

The Fiddlers of SILENUS frumpled over the last verses.

¹ A mandora, or mandura, was a kind of lesser lute; one is engraved in Hawkins's History of Music, vol. IV. p. 112. N.

² Qu. a potentate? N.

KAWASHA. *The Wine takes the contrary way,
To get into the hood;
But good Tobacco makes no stay,
But seizeth where it should.
More incense hath burned
At great Kawashae's foote,
Than to Silen and Bacchus both,
And take in Jove to boote.*

Chorus. *Therefore doe yeeld,
And quit the field,
Or else I'll smoake yee!*

These verses frumpled¹ over by the musicke of KAWASHA.

SILENUS. *The Worthies they were nine, 'tis true,
And lately Arthur's Knights I knew;
But now are come up Worthies new,
The roaring boyes, Kawashae's crew.*

Chorus. *But if Silenus' asse should bray,
'T would make them roare and run away!*

KAWASHA. *Silenus toppes the barrell, but
Tobacco toppes the braine,
And makes the vapours fine and soote,
That man revives againe.*

*Nothing but fumigation
Doth chase away ill spirits,
Kawasha and his nation
Found out these holy rites.*

Chorus. *Therefore doe yeeld,
And quit the field,
Or else I'll smoke yee!*

*This Song all joyne and sing:
Ahay for and ahoe,
The asse still lookes askance-a;
But strife in Song,
It is too long,
Let's end it in a Daunce-a.*

*After the Song ended, they marched all out in the
same order they came in, their musicke playing.*

¹ To frump or frumple is to mock, from the Dutch *frumpelen*, to curl up the nose in contempt.
See Nares's Glossary. N.

ANTICKE-MASQUE OF THE DAUNCE.

Then entred the Anticke-maske of Daunce, consisting, on SILENUS' side, of Pantaloon, Curtezan; Swisse and his Wife; Usurer, Midwife; Smugge, and his Wench. On KAWASHA's, of Fretelyne, Bawde; Roaring Boy, Citizen; Mountebanke, Jewesse of Portugall; Chimney Sweeper, and his Wench.

The Daunce ended, the lowd musicke sounded. The travers being drawne, was seene a garden of a glorious and strange beauty, cast into four quarters, with a crosse-walke and allies, compassing each quarter. In the middle of the crosse-walke stood a goodly fountaine raised on foure columnes of silver; on the toppes whereof stode foure statues of silver, which supported a bole [bowl], in circuite containing foure-and-twenty foote, and was rayzed from the ground nine foote in height; in the middle whereof, upon scrowles of silver and gold, was plac'd a globe, garnished with foure golden maske-heads, out of the which issued water into the bole; above stood a golden Neptune, in height three foote, holding in his hand a trident, and riding on a dolphin so cunningly framed that a river seemed to streame out of his mouth.

The garden-walls were of bricke artificially painted in perspective, all along which were placed fruite-trees with artificiall leaves and fruite.

The garden within the wall was rayled about with rayles of three foote high, adorned with ballesters of silver, betweene which were placed pedestalls, beautified with transparent lights of variable colours; upon the pedestalls stood silver columnes, upon the toppes whereof were personages of golde, lions of gold, and unicornes of silver; every personage and beast did hold a torchet burning, that gave light and lustre to the whole fabrique.

Every quarter of the garden was finely hedged about with a low hedge of cipresse and juniper; the knottes within set with artificiall greene hearbs, embellished with all sortes of artificiall flowers. In the two first quarters were two piramides garnished with golde and silver, and glistering with transparent lights, resembling carbuncles, sapphires, and rubies. In every corner of each quarter were great pottes of jilliflowers, which shadowed certaine lights placed behind them, and made a resplendent and admirable lustre.

The two further quarters were beautified with tulipes of divers colours, and in the corners of the said quarters were set great tufts of severall kindes of flowers, receiving lustre from severall lights placed behind them.

At the further end of the garden was a mount raised by degrees, resembling bankes of earth covered with grasse; on the top of the mount stood a goodly arbour substantially made, and covered with artificiall trees and with arbour-flowers, as eglantine, honysuckles, and the like.

The arbour was in length three-and-thirtie foote, in height one-and-twenty, supported with termes of gold and silver; it was divided into sixe double arches, and three doores answered to the three walks of the garden. In the middle part of the arbor rose a goodly large turret, and at either end a smaller.

Upon the toppe of the mount on the front thereof was a banke of flowers curiously painted, behind which, within the arches, the Maskers sate unseene. Behind the garden over the toppe of the arbour were set artificiall trees, appearing like an orchard joyning to the garden, and over all was drawne in perspective a firmament like the skies in a cleere night. Upon a grassy seate under the arbor sate the Garden-gods, in number twelve, apparrelled in long roabes of greene rich taffata, cappes on their heads, and chaplets of flowers. In the midst of them sate PRIMAVERA, at whose intreaty they descended to the stage, and marching up to the King, sung to lutes and theorboes¹, the Song that induced the Charme :

CANTUS 1.

*Give place, you ancient Powers,
That turned Men to Flowers ;
For never writer's pen
Yet tolde of Flowers re-turn'd to Men.*

Chorus.

*But miracles of new event
Follow the great Sun of our firmament.*

THE CHARME.

*Hearken, ye fresh and springing Flowers,
The Sunne shines full upon your earth ;
Disclose out of your shady bowers,
He will not blast your tender birth.
Descend you from your hill,
Take spirit at his will,
No Flowers, but flourish still.*

The Charme ended, the Gods retire to their places, the lowd musicke againe sounding. The bankes of flowers softly descending and vanishing, the Maskers, in number Thirteene, appeared, seated in their arches, apparrelled in doublets and round hose of white sattin ; long white silke stockings ; white sattin pumphes ; the doublet richly imbroidered in curious panes with imbossed flowers of silver, the panes bordered with imbroidery of carnation silke and silver ; the hose cut in panes answerable to the embroidery of the doublets ; the skirtes of the doublets embroidered and cut into lillies-flowers, and the wings set forth with flowers of severall colours, made in silke and frosted with silver ; ruffe-bands edged with a lace of carnation silke and silver, spangled very thicke and stucke full of flowers of severall kindes ; faire vizards and tresses ; delicate cappes of silke and silver flowers of sundry kindes, with

¹ The theorbo was an improvement on the simple or French lute, and was called the Cithara Bijuga (because it had two necks), or in Italian, *Tiorba*. It is fully described in Hawkins's History of Music, vol. III. p. 162, and one is engraved in that work, vol. IV. p. 110. N.

plumes of the same, in the toppe whereof stucke a great bunch of egrets; every Masker's pump fastned with a flower sutable to his cappe; on their left armes a white scarfe fairly embroidered sent them by the Bride, and on their hands a rich paire of embroidered gloves, sent them by the Bridegroome.

The lowd musicke ceasing, the Maskers descend in a gallant march through three severall doores of the arbor to the three severall allies of the garden, marching till they all met in the middle allie under the fountaine, and from thence to the stage, where they fell into their first measure.

That ended, the Priests descend againe, and sing the Second Song, referring to the Device of the Transforming.

CANTUS 2.

*Thrice happy Flowers!
Your leaves are turned into fine haire,
Your stalkes to bodies streight and faire,
Your sprigges to limmes, as once they were,
Your verdure to fresh bloud, your smell
To breath, your bloomes your seedy cell,
All have a lovely parallel.*

Chorus. *The Nymphs that on their heads did weare you,
Henceforth in their hearts will beare you.*

*That done, they daunce their second Measure, after which
followes the Third Song, referring to the Ladies:*

CANTUS 3.

*Of creatures are the Flowers, faire Ladies,
The prettiest, if we shall speak true;
The earth's coronet, the sunne's babies,
Enamil'd cuppes of Heaven's sweet dew;
Your fairer hands have often blest them,
When your needles have exprest them.*

Chorus. *Therefore though their shapes be changed,
Let not your favours be estranged.*

This ended, they tooke their Ladies, with whom they daunced measures, corantoos, durrettoes, morascoes, galliards. Then was sung the Fourth Song, having reference to the King.

CANTUS 4.

*All things retorne with Time,
But seldom do they higher clime;
Yet vertue soveraigne
Mends all things as they come againe.*

*This Isle was Brittain in times past,
But then was Brittain rude and waste;
But now is Brittain fit to be
A seate for a fift monarchie.
Offer me to his high deserts,*

Chorus. *Praises of truth, incense of hearts,
By whom each thing with gaine reverts.*

*Then they daunced their parting measure, at the end whereof followed
this last Song, having reference to the married couple:*

*Lovely couple, Seasons two
Have performed what they can doe;
If the Gods inspire our Song,
The other two will not stay long.
Receive our Flowers with gracious hand,
As a small wreath to your garland;
Flowers of honour, Flowers of beautie,
Are your owne; we onely bring
Flowers of affection, Flowers of duetie.*

*The Maske ended, it pleased his Majestie to call for the Anticke-maske of Song
and Daunce, which was againe presented; and then the Maskers uncovered
their faces, and came up to the State, and kissed the King's, and Queene's, and
Prince's hands with a great deale of grace and favour, and so were invited
to the Banquet.*

[Here follow, in the Original Edition, ten pages of Music, applicable to the
Catch in pp. 740, 741.]



On the 8th of January, the Ringers at St. Margaret's, Westminster, were paid 2s. 6d. "when news came that the Lady Elizabeth was brought to bed."

On the 9th, says Howes, "the Citizens of London were very joyful, and manifested the same by ringing of bells and making bonfires, on account of the birth of Prince Henry Frederick¹, the first-born son of the Palsgrave and Princess Elizabeth, which had taken place on that day week, Sunday the 2d of January, between the houres of twelve and one in the morning."

On the 10th, Ben Jonson's Irish Masque was performed for the second time².

On the 16th, the King knighted, at Royston, Sir Humphrey Tufton³, of Kent, and Sir John Clavering.

On the 20th, Mr. Chamberlain writes as follows to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The King is at Audley End⁴, where some alteration or creation of new officers is expected; but I presume the issue will be as in other things and times

¹ This Prince, the ceremony of whose Christening will be related under the date of March 5, was drowned or rather frozen to death, in his fifteenth year, in Haërlem Meere, Holland, Jan. 7, 1628-9, in the sight of his unfortunate father. ² See pp. 718, 733.

³ Sir Humphrey Tufton, of Bobbing and of the Mote near Maidstone, was the third son of Sir John Tufton, Bart. of whom see p. 428, and younger brother of the first Earl of Thanet, noticed in vol. I. p. 71. He was himself created a Baronet in 1641, and died in Oct. 1659, aged 76. His descendants are extinct. See Brydges's Peerage, vol. III. p. 439.

⁴ Where Queen Elizabeth had been entertained in 1571, and received the University of Cambridge in 1578 (see her "Progresses"); but where, since those Royal Visits, the Earl of Suffolk, assisted by his uncle the Earl of Northampton, had erected, on the site of the ancient monastic buildings, the noble mansion still in part remaining. With the full intent of making it the largest and most magnificent residence in England, £.190,000 was expended in its erection. The architect is not ascertained, but John Thorpe and Bernard Jansen have both been mentioned as such; the Earl of Northampton is supposed to have in great measure superintended it in person. Part of the model, of wood, which is said to have been procured from Italy, is still preserved. The house had originally two quadrangular courts; the rooms were large, but not lofty in proportion. The Gallery, 226 feet long, which formed the eastern side of the inner court, was pulled down in 1750, and three sides of the principal court had been previously destroyed by the injudicious advice of Sir John Vanbrugh. But, notwithstanding these extensive reductions, the mansion, as it now remains, is on a considerable scale, and the hall and saloon are still worthy of notice, as fine specimens of the architecture of the seventeenth century. A view is to be found in Neale's Seats.—The commencement of this stately pile is fixed at 1603, and its completion at 1616; in that case it was, at the period of the present Royal Visit, still unfinished. The King was, however, again there about six months after the present date, in July 1614; see vol. III. p. 12.

before¹. There is a general voice and almost certain expectation of Parliament 'twixt this and Easter, and the great Colonels of the Militia muster themselves already, and begin to shew about town. But the certain and final resolution of that business is said to be now in hand at Audley End, whence the oracle must come 'twixt this and Sunday²."

On the 3d of February, Mr. Chamberlain again writes thus :

"The King came to town on Tuesday, met by the Queen and the Lords almost as far as Theobalds. He makes no longer stay here than till Monday next at furthest.

"Yesterday was a solemn day at Court to end Christmas.

"This day the Lord of Roxburgh³ marries Mrs. Jane Drummond⁴ at Somerset

¹ Mr. Chamberlain seems to have been right ; but see vol. III. p. 9. ² Birch's MSS. 4173.

³ This was Sir Robert Ker, of Cessford, born about 1570. His first public appearance was in 1585, when he joined the army of the banished Lords to drive the Earl of Arran from the Council of James VI. which they happily effected. In 1590 he was engaged in the murder of William Kerr, of Ancrum, father of Robert Kerr the first Earl of that name, the dispute respecting the seniority of the two families at that time running high. A remission for this crime was in the following year granted under the Great Seal to him and nine others. Sir Robert Carey, in his Memoirs, characterizes Sir Robert Ker, who was his opposite Warden of the Marches, as a brave active young man, and mentions several interesting particulars of the emulation betwixt them. For his services in that office he was created Baron Roxburgh in 1600. He accompanied the King to England in 1603 ; and was one of the Commissioners of the Union, appointed by Parliament July 11, 1604. He was served heir to his father in 1606, to his grandfather in 1629. In 1616, Sir Robert Carey tells us, Lord Roxburgh highly offended the Queen, in this manner. The Creation of Charles Prince of Wales being in contemplation, he obtained from the King, without the Queen's knowledge, a promise of the office of the Prince's Chamberlain, which was to be conferred on that occasion. Sir Robert Carey, who was his rival, and eventually successful, candidate, having heard a rumour of this, after it had been some time kept secret, informed the Queen and implored her interposition. Her Majesty was so irritated, that she bade Sir Robert trouble himself no further ; " her wrong was more than his, and she would right both herself and him." Presently she made known both to Roxburgh and his friend, in what disdain she took it, that they durst undertake such a business without acquainting her ; and vowed they should buy the neglect of her at a dear rate. She kept her word ; for Roxburgh was presently sent into Scotland, in her high disgrace, and never after saw her. This is Sir Robert Carey's story ; but it was in 1616 that Lord Roxburgh was advanced to the title of Earl. He was appointed Keeper of the Privy Seal of Scotland in 1637, and confirmed in that office by Parliament in 1641 ; but deprived by the same authority in 1649, for his efforts in the Royal cause. He died Jan. 18, 1650 ; and, his two sons having deceased before him, Sir William Drummond, fourth son of his eldest daughter, by John second Earl of Perth, succeeded, according to his grandfather's direction, to the Earldom of Roxburgh. See Wood's Douglas, vol. III. pp. 447—449.

⁴ This was Lord Roxburgh's second wife. His first had been Margaret, only daughter of Sir Wil-

House, whither the King is invited to lie this night, and shall be entertained with shews and devises, specially a Pastoral that shall be represented in a little square paved court. So that you see what little time is reserved for business; and yet the Parliament must be resolved on *pro* or *contra*¹."

The "Pastorall Tragicomædie" produced by Daniel on this occasion is a regular Play of Five Acts, similar to "The Queene's Arcadia" of the same author, which was performed with such applause before her Majesty at Oxford in 1605². It is too long for insertion here; but I shall introduce the Dedication, the Masque-like Prologue, and the Songs, which latter were set to music by the author's friend Laniere, who had in 1610 contributed his assistance to the Author's "Tethys' Festival," and who has been recently noticed³:

liam Maitland. She died in April 1588, leaving one son who died v. p., and three daughters, to the fourth son of the eldest of whom the title descended. Jane, the Earl's second Lady, whose Nuptials were now celebrated, was the third daughter of Patrick third Lord Drummond, and sister to the Earl's son-in-law John second Earl of Perth. As has been mentioned in p. 647, where she has occurred as the Queen's principal female attendant at Bristol, she had been governess to the Royal Children. "The Lady Raxboroughe, formerly Lady Dormond," received a Free Gift of £.3000 in 1617. She died in October 1643, when her funeral was appointed for the rendezvous of the Royalists projecting the massacre of the Covenanters, but they found their numbers too small for the attempt. She had issue an only child, Henry Lord Ker, whose eldest daughter was married to her cousin-german before mentioned, the second Earl, and whose second daughter married Sir James Innes, Bart. from whom the late and present Dukes are descended. — The Earl married, thirdly, Lady Isabel Douglas, fifth daughter of William Earl of Morton, but had no issue by her. She was united after his death to James second Marquess of Montrose, a man sixty years younger than the Earl of Roxburgh, and was mother of the third Marquess of Montrose.

¹ Birch's MSS. 4173.

² See vol. I. p. 561.

³ See p. 710.



HYMEN'S TRIUMPH,

A PASTORALL TRAGICOMÆDIE,

PRESENTED AT THE QUEEN'S COURT IN THE STRAND, AT HER MAJESTIE'S

MAGNIFICENT ENTERTAINMENT OF THE KING'S MOST EXCELLENT MAJESTY,

BEING AT THE NUPTIALS OF THE LORD ROXBOROUGH,

FEBRUARY 3, 1613-14¹.

By SAMUEL DANIEL.

To the Most Excellent Majesty of the highest-borne Princesse,
ANNE of DENMARK, Queene of England, Scotland, France, and Ireland.

Here, what your sacred influence begat,
Most lov'd and most respected Majesty,
With humble heart and hand I consecrate
Unto the glory of your memory,
As being a piece of that Solemnity
Which your magnificence did celebrate
In hallowing of those roofes (you rear'd of late²)
With fires and chearefull hospitality;
Whereby, and by your splendent worthines,
Your name shall longer live than shall your walls;
For that faire structure goodnesse finishes,
Beares off all change of times, and never falls.
And that is it hath let you in so farre
Into the heart of England as you are;
And worthily, for never yet was Queene
That more a people's love hath merited
By all good graces, and by having beene
The meanes our State stands fast established,
And blest by your blest wombe, who are this day
The highest-borne Queene of Europe, and alone

¹ The first edition of this Masque was published at the time of its performance. It is registered in the books of the Stationers' Company, Jan. 13, 1613-14. N.

² From this it would appear that some additions or improvements had been recently made at "the Queen's Court," Somerset House. See a note on that palace in p. 69. N.

Have brought this land more blessings every way,
 Than all the daughters of strange Kings have done;
 For we by you no claimes, no quarrells have,
 No factions, no betraying of affaires;
 You do not spend our blood, nor states,—but save,
 You strength us by alliance and your haire [heirs];
 Not like those fatall Marriages of France¹,
 For whom this Kingdome hath so dearely paid,
 Which onely our afflictions did advance,
 And brought us far more miseries than aid.
 Renowned Denmarke! that hast furnished
 The world with Princes! how much do we owe
 To thee for this great good thou didst bestow,
 Whereby we are both blest and honoured!
 Thou didst not so much hurt us heretofore,
 But now thou hast rewarded us farre more.

But what do I on this high subject fall,
 Here in the front of this low Pastorall?
 This a more grave and spacious roome requires
 To shew your glory and my deepe desires.

Your Majestie's most humble Servant,

SAM. DANIEL.

THE PROLOGUE.

HYMEN, *opposed by* AVARICE, ENVY, and JEALOUSIE, *the disturbers of quiet Marriage, first enters.*

HYMEN. In this disguise and pastorall attire,
 Without my saffron robe, without my torch,
 Or other ensignes of my deity,
 I, Hymen, am come hither secretly,
 To make Arcadia see a worke of glory,
 That shall deserve an everlasting story.

Here shall I bring you two the most entire
 And constant lovers that were ever seene,
 From out the greatest sufferings of annoy,
 That fortune could inflict, to their full joy;
 Wherein no wild, no rude, no antique [antick] sport,
 But tender passions, motions soft and grave,
 The still spectators must expect to have.

For these are only Cynthia's recreatives
 Made unto Phœbus, and are feminine;

¹ The most fatal of which in all the English History was yet to come, in the union of the Queen's son with Henrietta-Maria. N.

And therefore must be gentle like to her,
Whose sweet affections mildely moove and stirre.
And here with this white wand will I effect
As much as with my flaming torch of love,
And with the power thereof affections move
In these faire nymphes and shepherds round about.

ENVY. Stay, Hymen, stay ; you shall not have the day
Of this great glory, as you make account ;
We will herein, as we were ever wont,
Oppose you in the matches you addresse,
And undermine them with disturbances.

HYMEN. Now do thy worst, base Envy, thou canst do,
Thou shalt not disappoint my purposes.

AVARICE. Then will I, Hymen, in despite of thee,
I will make parents crosse desires of love
With those respects of wealth as shall dissolve
The strongest knots of kindest faithfulnessse.

HYMEN. Hence, greedy Avarice, I know thou art
A hagge that dost bewitch the mindes of men,
Yet shalt thou have no part at all herein.

JEALOUSIE. Then will I, Hymen, do thou what thou canst ;
I will steale closely into linked hearts,
And shake their veines with cold distrustfulnessse ;
And ever keepe them waking in their feares
With spirits which their imagination reares.

HYMEN. Disquiet Jealousie, vile fury, thou
That art the ougly monster of the mind,
Avant, be gone, thou shalt have nought to do
In this faire worke of ours, nor evermore
Canst enter there where Honour keepes the doore.
And therefore, hideous Furies, get you hence ;
This place is sacred to integrity
And cleane desires ; your sight most loathsome is
Unto so well-dispos'd a company.
Therefore be gone, I charge you by my powre,
We must have nothing in Arcadia sowre !

ENVY. Hymen, thou canst not chase us so away,
For looke, how long as thou mak'st Marriages,
So long will we produce incumbrances,

And we will in the same disguise as thou,
 Mixe us among the Shepheards, that we may
 Effect our worke the better being unknowne;
 For ill shew other faces than their owne.

THE SONG OF THE FIRST CHORUS.

*Love is a sicknesse full of woes,
 All remedies refusing;
 A plant that with most cutting growes,
 Most barren with best using.*

Why so?

*More we enjoy it, more it dyes;
 If not enjoy'd, it sighing cries*

Hey ho!

*Love is a torment of the minde,
 A tempest everlasting;
 And Jove hath made it of a kinde
 Not well nor full nor fasting.*

Why so?

*More we enjoy it, more it dies;
 If not enjoy'd, it sighing cries*

Hey ho!

THE SONG OF THE SECOND CHORUS.

*Desire that is of things begot,
 See what travaile it procureth,
 And how much the mind endureth
 To gaine what it gaineth not!
 For never was it paid,
 The charge defraide,
 According to the price of thought.*

THE SONG OF THE THIRD CHORUS,
Which conducted a Rurall Marriage.

*From the Temple to the Boord,
 From the Boord unto the Bed,
 We conduct your maidenhead,
 Wishing Hymen to affoord
 All the pleasures that he can
 'Twixt a Woman and a Man.*

THE SONG OF THE FOURTH CHORUS.

Question. *Were ever chast and honest hearts
Expos'd unto so great distresses?*

Answer. *Yes; they that act the worthiest parts
Most commonly have worst successes.
Great fortunes follow not the best,
It's vertue that is most distrest.*

*Then, Fortune, why do we admire
The glory of thy great excesses?
Since by thee what men acquire,
Thy worke, and not their worth, expresses.
Nor dost thou raise them for their good,
But t' have their illes more understood.*

THE SONG OF THE FIFTH CHORUS.

*Who ever saw so faire a sight?
Love and Vertue met aright;
And that wonder, Constancy,
Like a comet to the eye,
Seldome ever seene so bright.
Sound out aloud so rare a thing,
That all the hilles and vales may ring!*

*Looke, Lovers, looke, with passion see,
If that any such there be;
As there cannot but be such
Who doe feele that noble touch
In this glorious company.
Sound out aloud so rare a thing,
That all the hilles and vales may ring!*



On the 10th of February, Mr. Chamberlain wrote thus to Sir D. Carleton:

"This day se'nnight the Lord Roxburgh married Mrs. Jane Drummond at Somerset House, or Queen's Court, as it must now be called. The King tarried there till Saturday after dinner. The Entertainment was great, and cost the Queen, they say, above £.3000. The Pastoral by Samuel Daniel was solemn and dull¹; but perhaps better to be read than represented. The Lord Mayor and all the Aldermen were invited for the next day after the Marriage, and had rich gloves. They went thither in pomp, and were graciously used; and besides their great cheer and many healths, had a Play. They presented the Bride with a fair cup, and 200 Jacobus pieces or double Sovereigns in it.

"At the Wedding there fell out a brabble or quarrell 'twixt the Earl of Essex and young Heyden with one hand²; which was to be decided presently, but that while the other went to fetch his sword, the Earl was stayed upon the water by the Archbishop of Canterbury. The Queen took this as an affront to her feast; so there is great fault laid on Heyden, who is committed to the Fleet; and if he find not the better friends, may pay dear for it. The day was dismal to him and his house; for in the morning there was a decree in Chancery, that the Sheriff and Justices of Norfolk should raise the county, and thrust his father out of the possessions (which he kept by force) of all he hath.

"The King went away on Monday; and thought it long till he was gone; for he went through that night to Royston, and so to Newmarket. He is not expected till toward his Day, the 24th of March³."

On the 17th, Mr. Chamberlain again wrote to Mrs. Alice Carleton:

"Yesterday the Queen feasted all that gave presents to the last Bride; [at least all the Nobility, of which there was so great an assembly that the Lady Roxburgh, the Bride, was the lowest at the Table. That night she likewise feasted

¹ If this was the general opinion, the success of this Pastoral must have disappointed the author, after his former effort had been so approved as Mr. Chamberlain says it was in vol. I. p. 562. The following judgment is passed upon the present piece in the *Biographia Dramatica*: "Not many passages in our most admired plays can exceed the tenderness, passion, and distress of the speech of Thyrsis, in the first scene, where he is advised by Palæmon, not to mourn for his lost Sylvia, from the consideration that he might find another—

"As lovely, and as fair, and sweet as she.

"To which Thyrsis replies:

"As fair and sweet as she? Palæmon, peace!"

² Probably son of Sir Christopher Heyden, of Baconsthorp, in Norfolk, knighted by the Earl of Essex at Cadiz in 1596, and author of the "Defence of Judicial Astrology," printed at Cambridge in 1603, in 4to. He died in 1623.

³ Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

all the Gentlemen belonging to the Earls of Pembroke, Worcester, Southampton, and others, that had waited on the Marriage, and gave them thanks and her hand to kiss; for she would not be served by any of the King's servants¹.] On Shrove Sunday she marries another of her Maids, one of the Lady Somerset's daughters, to Rodney, a man of good living in Somersetshire²."

On the 19th of February, "from the Court at Newmarket," Sir Thomas Lake, the Royal Secretary, wrote by the King's command, to some Nobleman unknown, the following account of his Majesty's forebodings of an independent Parliament:

"His Majesty is this morning gone to a house of Sir Nicholas Bacon's to hawk³, but, before his going forth, calling for me to receive direction to my Lord Chancellor, for passing the Patent for Glass, which his Lordship had stayed, he commanded me to signify to you that, now he hath given warrant for calling his Parliament, he thinketh fit to acquaint your Lordship with his gnosticks (that was his phrase), that is, that he hath been enformed from some of his servants here, who have laboured for places, that they have received answer from the Gentlemen of the country of good quality, that they think all the shires are disposed to take care that none of his Majesty's servants be chosen. If this be true, and so prove in other places, his Majesty can foresee the success, and much better it were for him to put it off then to see an assembly composed of men, who before hand discover their disposition, and are not willing to have his servants in their company; for that cannot be a good sign for him⁴. Wherefore he recommendeth to your Lordship's special care to do your endeavour with other of my Lords of the Council, to whom (in his Majestie's name) your Lordships are to recommend the same providence in places where you have credit or power, that the House be furnished of men of good disposition, and apt to have due consideration of him and his estate, or else his Majesty shall have little comfort in the Assembly⁵!"

¹ This is inserted from Mr. Chamberlain's next Letter, dated Feb. 24.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) No. 4173.

³ This could scarcely be Redgrave in Suffolk, that being 30 miles from Newmarket, and too far for a morning's excursion. It was doubtless some less distant intermediate mansion-house, as Sir Nicholas inherited several estates from his father; one of which was Barnham, about 12 miles from Newmarket and three from Thetford, now the Duke of Grafton's.

⁴ The following passage in a Letter written by Mr. Chamberlain soon after (March 3), forms a very proper comment on the above: "Here is much bustling for places in Parliament; and letters fly from grave personages extraordinarily, wherein methinks they do the King no great service, seeing the world is apt to conceive, that it is a kind of partaking." Birch's MSS.

⁵ From the Original in the Lansdown MSS. No. 487.

On the 20th of February, the King, at Royston, knighted Sir Michael Everard.

On the third of March, Mr. Chamberlain again writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

“ Sir Thomas Edmondes went on Monday toward the King, who lay this last night at Chesterford Park (where the Lord of Somerset keeps his Lady)¹, and comes this day to Theobalds; and this afternoon, by his deputy the Earl of Pembroke, together with the Lord Chamberlain [the Earl of Suffolk], and the Lady Lisle, christens Sir Robert Wroth's son². ”

On the 4th, the King knighted, at Theobalds, Sir John Steed³, of Kent; and Sir John Clopton, of Norfolk.

At Heidelberg, on the fifth of March, which was the day before the young Prince⁴ was christened, his Highness the Prince Palatine met the Prince of Anhalt with 200 great horse, and received him as Ambassadour from the King's Majesty of Great Britaine, and was in like manner so received by the Administratour, the Duke of Deuponts, by another trope of great horse, and so conducted unto the Castle, and lodged in that place which is called the Emperor's Quarter, and served by Earles and Barons, subjects to the Palatine. The same day there arrived also Prince Henrye, with fourescore men in his companie, and was also received by his Highness and the two young Dukes of Deuponts, and lodged in a place by himself according to his quality. Also there arived the same day the deputies of the Nobilitie and Knighthood of Swevia, Franconia, and the Rhyne, with 60 great horse.

¹ The maner and mansion of Great Chesterford, a few miles from Audley End, belonged to the owner of that palace, the Earl of Suffolk, who seems to have either given it in dowry with his daughter to her newly-married husband, or to have lent it them to enjoy their honey-moon. It was built or begun, says Morant, by William Marquess of Berkeley, (the then Lord of the Maner, who died in 1491,) “ a mile northward from the town, in the middle of a park. Some remains of it were visible within a little more than a century; now all is turned to arable.” In the Roman Camp at Chesterford was standing in Dr. Stukeley's time a “ hunting-tower of brick,” which, says Mr. Gough, “ was a warren-house or belvedere to Audley Inn.”—The King was again at Chesterford, November 6, 1624, and Feb. 24, 1624-5.

² Doubtless James, buried at Enfield, July 16, 1616; see Lysons, vol. II. p. 317. Of his parents, Sir Robert Wroth, of Durants, Enfield, and Lady Mary, the poetess, see vol. I. p. 489.—Of his Sponsors, the Earl of Pembroke, the King's proxy, was by marriage the infant's great-uncle, having married Mary, daughter of Sir Henry Sydney, K. G. sister of the immortal Sir Philip, and of Viscount Lisle (afterwards Earl of Leicester), and aunt to Lady Wroth; Lady Lisle, the Godmother, was maternal grandmother to the infant.

³ See a Sir William Steed of Steed Hall, Kent, in vol. I. p. 218.

⁴ See p. 746.

“ The next day, being the 6th of March, in the morning there was sounding of trumpets, sagbots, and sundry other instruments of musique, which attended the coming of the Princes unto the Sermon, where the said musique, with organs and voices, exprest the joyfulness of that happy day. After the great bell had rung three times, the Prince of Anhalt, as his Majestie's Ambassadour, came into the Church, having before him the High and Under Marshalls, with Earles, Barons, and divers Gentlemen, accompanied with the Administrator on his right hand, and his Highness the Prince Palatine on his left hand, with a very rich canapie carried over him, so as the said Prince as his due kept his state and place, having his chaire advanced three feet higher then the others, and was attended by M. Tho. Leviston, Esquier, Cup-bearer to the Princess Palatine. After this the Princess Electrix Dowager and the Administratrix, Mother and Sister unto his Highness, came in, conducted between the Prince Henry, with the former ceremony of Marshalls with others, &c. and were placed under a canapie right against the Prince of Anhalt. Master Scultetus, his Highness' Chaplaine, preached; and he having ended his Sermon, the Marshalls and the Nobility conducted the young Prince into the Chappell, and in the meane time there was musique in the Church, as organs, cornets, and voyces, besides trumpets and sagbots which were without it.

“ At this time there was a new gallery built, over which was carried the young Prince, conducted by the Marshalls, Earles, Barons, and Gentlemen aforesayd, being carried by the Princess Kathrine, second Sister unto his Highness, conducted by the two young Dukes of Deu-ponts, and the traine of the covering, which was wonderous rich, was borne up by the two Countesses of Danaw, and over him a canapie borne by four Gentlemen. Being come into the Chappell, the Prince of Anhalt alone presented the Childe at the font, who was named Frederick Henry. The ceremony being ended, the young Prince was presented unto Madam Electrix Dowager, as Godmother, and whilst she held him, came and bear up the infant; and afterwards it was delivered unto the Deputies before mentioned, and the Child with the former state and traine returned in the same manner as it was brought unto the Chappell. The

Prince of Anhalt made a brief Speech before his Highness and the rest, shewing the affection, love, and great respect the King's Majestie hadde unto the little Babe.

"Afterwards there were great presents given; namely, from his Majestie a wonderous large bason and ewer all of pure gold, weighing full six hundred ounces; the Princess Electrix Dowager, the Administrator and Administratrix gave presents; Prince Henry presented from Grave Maurice unto her Highness a shippe of christall, valued at £.900; and from the States to the young Prince two cupps of gold, valued at £.1300, in which there was a pension of £.400 a year during the Prince's life; and from the Nobilitie a substantial goblet of gold, valued at two thousand duckets, with assurance of a thousand horse at neede, and to his Highness' sister £.1000 in jewells, to Mistriss Ann Dudley¹ £.200 in jewells; and to the rest of the Gentlewomen of her Highness' Chamber there were jewels given to the like value; the Duke of Deupontz gave a bason and ewer and a standing-cup of £.200 value; the Princess Dowager gave four-and-twentie faire boles, valued at £.300, and to every Gentlewoman of her Highness' Chamber a standing-cuppe and cover; the Free Gentlemen of the country presented her Highness with a carkanet of £.800 value.

"The Earle of Solmes and the Chancellor made a Speech of Congratulation in French and high Dutch, which being ended, they went to their feast, when they drancke unto his Majestie's health, at which there was instantly a great peale of ordinance; and after that day they spent the residue in sundry pleasant entertainments of time, as in seeing Playes, Masks, and Hunting, with sundry other pastimes which continued eight daies after, during which time there was almost 1000 horse at his Highness' charge²."

On the 17th of March, Mr. Chamberlain writes to Sir Dudley Carleton:

"The Saturday after my last the King came to town, and tarried here all that Shroving week, till the 14th of this present, that he went to Oking³, but is expected here again before Sunday; and then it is likely he will not stir till the Parliament be settled.

¹ See p. 613.

² Howes' Chronicle.

³ This is the first time we have met the King at Oking or Woking, since the false report was circulated that he was assassinated there in 1605-6; see p. 37. We shall find him there again March³, 1614-15; March 20, 1617-18; March 11, 1623-4; and he was probably there about that³ in almost every year.

"A day or two before he went he was to visit the Lord Chancellor [Ellesmere] and Lord Privy-seal [Northampton], who are both crazy¹ and keep house²."

On the 24th of March, the Anniversary of the King's Accession, his Majesty witnessed at Whitehall a Tilt between the following Combatants:

"TILT AT WESTMINSTER, ANNO DUODECIMO REGIS JABOBI ³ .	
DUKE OF LENNOX. <i>Plus restat.</i>	EARLE OF PEMBROKE. <i>Index sui et obloqui.</i>
EARLE OF DORSETT. <i>Substantia pendit ab umbrâ.</i>	EARLE OF MONTGOMERY. <i>Rex Rex.</i>
LORD WALDEN. <i>Plus inest quàm apparet.</i>	LORD HAY. <i>Sperat et ardet.</i>
LORD DINGWALL. <i>Sedulitate meâ claudor.</i>	SIR THOMAS SOMERSETT. <i>Dant sortem prima secundis.</i>
SIR THOMAS HOWARD. <i>Hanc certam attingere metam.</i>	SIR SIGISMUND ALEXANDER. <i>Dum placeo pereoo.</i>
SIR HENRY RICHE. <i>I pour lo veniero.</i>	MR. HENRY ALEXANDER. <i>My sufferan [sovereign] remedy.</i>
JUDGES.—SIR ROBERT KNOLLES.	SIR THOMAS KNOLLES."

Free Gifts in the Eleventh year of the King's Reign, 1613-14.

To William Pinches - - £.120	Shirley for debts due in King £.
Henry Zinzan, alias Alexander ⁴ 100	Henry the Eight's time - 1014
David Dormond ⁵ - - 100	The Earl of Northampton - 6000
Jeronimo Cavalasco - - 60	Sir David Murray ⁶ , being part
Sir James Areskin, out of the	of the Lord Viscount Mon-
money brought by Sir Thos.	tague's fine ⁷ - - - 2000

¹ The word "crazy" is to be here understood, not in its usual modern sense as applied to persons, but as it is still applied to things, signifying "weak, feeble, ailing, out of order." See Todd's Johnson; and in vol. III. p. 79.

² Birch's MSS. (Brit. Mus.) 4173.

³ The list is taken from Camden's MS. volume in Harl. MSS. no. 5171. It is the only one I have found to which the mottoes of the Combatants are annexed. It is of similar mottoes that Sylvanus Morgan speaks in his Sphære of Gentry, when he says: "Prince Henry besides that device which is appropriate to the Princes of Wales, made use of this motto with a figure: 'Fas est aliorum quærere regna.' And [Prince Charles] his Majesty that now is, that other of 'Christo auspice regno.'" The latter appears on some of the coins of Charles the First. — All the present Tilters had appeared in that character on the same day in the preceding year; see p. 609.

⁴ See pp. 287, 729.

⁵ See vol. III. p. 50.

⁶ See p. 374.

⁷ Levied on him, I presume as a Recusant. He was committed to the Tower, or reported to be

The Earl of Clanricarde ¹	£.3000	Thomas Wilson, out of the money reserved for the King's Bounty	£. 300
Charles Chambers, for relinquishing a grant of £.3000 out of Recusants	- - 750	Sir James Oughterlony ⁷ , out of Bounty	- - - 200
The Lord of Loreston, for the like grant of £.6000	- 1500	Sir Francis Steward ⁸ , out of Bounty	- - - 200
Sir William Waade ² , for the like for £.2000	- - 500	Sir Wm. Constable ⁹ , of Bounty	133
Ralph Bowes ³ , for the like for £.1000	- - - 250	Ellis Rothwell, out of Bounty	200
Sir Richard Wigmore ⁴ , for the like for £.1000	- - 250	Capt. Wm. Steward ¹⁰ , of Bounty	666
Sir James Simple and Thomas Lee ⁵ , for the like for £.4000	1000	Sir John Shaa ¹¹ , out of Bounty	200
Sir Hugh Beeston ⁶ , for the like grant for £.3000	- 750	Sir Wm. Steward ¹² , out of Bounty	500
		Archibald Napper	- - 200
			<u>£.19,993</u>

so, at the time of the Gunpowder Plot (see vol. I. p. 588); but was present at the Creation of Henry Prince of Wales (see this volume, p. 332).

¹ See p. 124.

² See p. 417.—On “the dividend of £.13,000 distributed amongst the Governors and Officers of the Townes of Vlushing and Brill, in recompence of the losse of their places, upon surrender of the Townes to the Lordes of the States of the United Provinces,” was awarded “to Sir Will. Waade and Clement Edmonds (see vol. III. pp. 259, 437), in recompence of the reversions of Offices they had there, to each of them, £.400; and to Sir Wm. Waade, due to him upon a former warrant, payable out of the Checks, £.600.” Abstract of his Majestie's Revenew, published in 1651.

³ A person of this name was Queen Elizabeth's hatter; see his New-year's Gifts in her “Progresses,” vol. III. pp. 77, 261.

⁴ See p. 610.

⁵ The same couple received £.310 in 1616.

⁶ See vol. I. p. 112.

⁷ See before in this volume, p. 288.

⁸ See p. 191.

⁹ Knighted in Ireland in 1599. He received £.500 in 1614, and £.200 in 1616.

¹⁰ Thomas was a nephew of the arrogant and rapacious Earl of Arran (otherwise called Captain James Stewart), who for a few years, during the youth of the King, tyrannized over Scotland under the title of Lieutenant or Viceroy. This odious Nobleman, on his first advancement to the Royal favour in 1580, obtained, as is well known, the downfall and execution of the Regent Morton; after his own fall, Sir James Douglas of Parkhead, nephew of that Earl, in 1596 waylaid and slew him. In the year 1608, Captain William Steward, who now received £.666 from the King, in his turn revenged the death of his uncle, running Sir James Douglas through the body in the High-street, Edinburgh.

¹¹ Of a “William Shaa” see p. 288.

¹² See pp. 343, 704.

